THE ROGVE:

OR,

THE LIFE OF GVZMAN

DE *ALFARACHE.*

WRITTEN IN SPANISH
by MATHEO ALEMAN,

Servant to his Catholike Majestie,
and borne in SEVILL.

UNIVERSITY LIBRARY
AU 3
1900

OXFORD,
Printed by WILLIAM TVRNER, *for* ROBERT ALLOT,
and are to be sold in Pauls *Church-yard,*
Ann. Dom. 1630.

AL

ILLVSTRE SENNOR DON IVAN ESTRANGWAYES ESPEIO DE LA VIRTVD Y NOBLEZA,

Cauallero Titulado, y gentilhombre de la Camara de Su Sereniſſima Ma-geſdad de *la gran Bretanna.*

SEnnor mio; No he querido encomendar mi *Picaro* á la protecion de los Reyes, y Principes. Porque, demas que no conuienen tales perſonas à ſus Mageſdades y Grandezas, an hecho particulares Leyes muy rigoroſas, y Pragmaticas ſeveras coutra los que lo hazen.

Ni tampoco a los Conſejeros de Eſtado. Porque, aunque à caſo los tengan, no ſe ſiruen, ni guſtan dellos, ſi no por ſu proprio interes, ò razon de Eſtado.

A los Iuezes, menos. Porque ſon enemigos mortales de la pobreza, y de los, que no tienen dineros.

Pero, à vueſtra Sennoria ſi; (aunque no ſin reſelo) por amor de los grillos, y ſien aſotes bien pagados. Siendo vueſtra Sennoria Gouernador principal en ſu tierra, y vno de los Corregidores de *Loſanos*, y *Picaros*. Yo ſe muy bien, que vueſtra Sennoria puede echar mano à mi *Picaro*, y agarrarle, paralleuarle à la Carcel, y detenerle en ella Yo confieſſo, que era todo quanto malo ſe puede dezir. Arrojado, y

desuanecido,inconsiderado, descuydado, confuso, desordenado,indiscreto.Era roboltoso,y amigo de nouedades.Tenia sutilezas,inuenciones,y engaños.Era importuno,y porfiado, semejante al nauio, que anda dando bordes en la ribera, y nunca acaba de tomar puerto. Era como vna pared, que cada momento estaua para desmoronarse, y caer en tierra. No tenia firmeza en su voluntad; no tomaua resolucion, en lo que auia de hazer; No Sabia refrenar sus passiones; Hinchosele la cabesa de viento, desuanesio en embelecos;Dando consejo à los otros,no sabiendo los tomar para si.Donde llegò à triste fortuna, y suerte, a Lazeria, mezquindad, desarrapamiento, estrema miseria, y necessidad,y en fin,à las Galeras.

Con todo esso,como los *Picaros* tienen entrada en las Casas de Señores,no desconfio, que este niño de la Piedra,serà bien recebido de vuestra Señoria, y en toda verdad, deue estimarse en mucho.

Porque, aunque habla mucho,pero no sin sustancia. No se puede dezir ser todo hoja, y no tener fruto. O,que nuestro *Picaro* es gran *Charlatan;* que tiene muchas pelabras,y en ellas poco de que echar mano, que sea de consideracion.Tira à dos hitos,por diuersos caminos,dando à entender vna cosa con sus palabras, y haziendo lo contrario en sus obras. Hallarà vuestra Señoria(como dizen)entre Col, y Col, Lechuga.Variedad de cosas para entretener,y recrear, para que no nos enfademos,tratando siempre vna cosa. Trayendo tanta variedad de razones, quantas colores tiene vn Pintor. No es como Elecho,yerua sin tallo, sin flor,y sin simiente. Las rasuras, que salen de las piesas de asofar, quando se tornean, en si valen poco, y quando las recogen, hazen bulto; pero echadas à derretir, se bueluen en muy poco. Tales son las palabras vanas de los *Charlatanes*, y Habladores. Que, si los apurais, tienen poca sustancia.

Pero este *Picaro*,no es holgasan,que esta papando viento, como los fuelles.Grande es el prouecho,la vtilidad, y ganancia,que del se saca.Estremado es en sus dichos,y donayres,y comprehende, y encierra muchas moralidades, vnas dentro de otras. Es muy grasioso: Es(como dizen) vna sal.

Diran

Diran algunos; Que es todo intricado, confuso, mal digesto, reuesado. Mienten. Antes todo al contrario.

Por el hilo, se saca el ouillo: y por la muestra, y principio de vna cosa, se conose lo demas della.

O que natural fuersa de entendimiento! O, como da en el blanco! Como tira à punteria. No tira, (como otros) à tiento, à troche moche, de donde diere, si no con orden, y buen concierto. Advertiendo à todos, que no ensucien sus manos en cosas viles, ni hagan cosa fea, O indecente; si no, que se recojan, y que paren, y obedescan al freno de la razon.

Mi *Picaro*, es hombre de bien. No es de aquellos Vellacos de Madrid, que pregonan vino, y venden vinagre. De los, que prometen cosas buenas y altas, y despues son ordinarias y frivolas.

No digo mas, sino que me he engolfado en vn negocio muy dificultoso. Perdone me vuestra Sennoria. No pude menos. Quales las cadenas, quales las ataduras de es labones nigeridos vnos en otros, son la importunidad de los Amigos, y la propria promesa? Estando desta manera empennado, me fue menester para satisfazer con mi obligacion; y auiendome engargantado el pie en el estriuo, no pude tan facilmente sacarlo.

Yo me he puesto las faldas en cinta, para passar mi Carrera; Se my poco valor, y flaqueza, y que alo menos, si no he errado, he tropesado. Pero, si vuestra Sennoria sera seruido de tenerla por buena, y suficiente, y que he hecho mi deuer sin falta, O Fealdad, el Torneo no sera malo, teniendo *Padrino* tan noble para abonarme.

El que buelue las palabras y conceptos de vna lengua en otra à menester tener fidelidad, prudencia, y sagacidad, y ygual noticia de ambas Lenguas, y lo que en ellas se dize por alusiones, y terminos metaforicos, y mirar lo, que en esta otra Lengua se puede corresponder. Muchos vierten; y las mas vezes, peruierten.

El *Picaro*, esta trasladado. Plega à Dios, que di mi mano no sea mal tradado. Traducido, si; Si trasslucido, bien esta. El *Picaro* de *Aleman* ha mudado su Vestido, su Traje, no es

al modo de Eſpaña, ſi no de Inglaterra. Si yo le he pueſto en ſu punto y ſer, muy venturoſo ſoy. Guarde me Dios, *de mala noche, y parir hija.* Ay tal deſconſuelo en el mundo como trabajar mucho en vn negocio, y alcabo no ſuceder como ſe deſeaua.

En algunos lugares, hallo mi *Guzmanico* eſcuro como la noche. Pero, yo he hecho algunos *Eſcolios*, para quitar los *Eſcollos*. Eſpero buen puerto. Pero, ſi à caſo ſe em braueſe la *Mar de Mandiſion*, ſi las Olas creſen, con la eſpuma de los Deſlenguados, ſi eſte mi pobre Vaxel no tiene fuerſa para contraſtar las Tempeſtades amenazadas, me deſnudare, y arrojare con impetu y furia en la Mar, dexandole à la inclementia deſtos *Toruellinos*, y eſpiritus turbulentos. Confiando, que vueſtra Señoria me dara la mano, para Sacarme fuera de vn Abiſmo tan peligroſo, no ſufriendo ſe anegue y perezca en la Mar, ahogandoſe en ella, vno que es tan

Aficionado à vueſtra Señoria; como
Don Diego Puede--Ser; de Santa
Maria Magdalena.

TO

TO

DON FRANCISCO DE ROIAS, MARQVESSE DE POZA, LORD OF THE HOVSE DE MONCON,

Preſident of the Councell de HAZIEMDA to *his Maieſty, and the Courts belonging thereunto.*

OF all thoſe things in this world, which are wont amongſt men to cauſe the greateſt feare, I know not any that may be greater, or of equall compare to that of an evill intention, & ſecret ill meaning. And by ſo much truely the more, by how much it ſhall be the more deeply rooted in thoſe that are of obſcure Blood, humble Birth, and baſe mindes. For in ſuch it is vſually more forcible, and leſſe corrigible. But both of them, the one and the other, are like vnto Hunters; *who (taking vp ſome cloſe ſtanding ſhadowed over with boughes) lie in wait for our diſtruction, and even then, after we haue receiued our deaths wound, we are never awhit the neerer in diſcovering whence our hurt came. Theſe are* Baſilisks, *whom if we view them firſt, their poyſon loſeth it's force, and is of ſo much the leſſe preiudice; but if they once gaine the hand of vs (by getting a kinde of dominion over vs) they bring vs in danger of our vtter vndoing. They are a ſcandall to a Common-wealth, the promoting Knaues of* Innocence, *and the very executioners of* Vertue; *againſt whom the wiſedome of man is not of power to prevaile, or able to guard it ſelfe. Of theſe kinde of men, from whoſe ſubtill gins (as traps tending to death) no perſon liues ſecure, I (for mine owne part) haue ever been more afraid then of any other beaſts, how fierce or hurtfull ſoever. And more eſpecially in this preſent occaſion, wherin a large field is laid open vnto them, wherein they may ſow the ſeed of their venome, calumniating me (at*

the

the leaſt) *with the reprochfull attribute of an over-bold and raſh-headed fellow, that I ſhould preſume to offer to ſo powerfull a* Prince, *ſo poore a gift. Not conſidering, that this my boldneſſe firſt grew from that neceſſitie, where-into their feare had put me. For, as thoſe Cities that are weakely fortified, meanely mann'd, and of ſmall force for defence, haue ſo much the greater need of braue and worthy Captaines to maintaine them, by reſiſting the furious violence, and ſharpe aſſaults of their enemies: So in like manner was it needfull for me, to helpe my ſelfe, and make vſe of your Lordſhips protection, in whom, with ſo much ſplendour and glory, are made manifeſt to the worlds view, thoſe three parts* (Vertue, Bloud, *and* Power) *whereof true* Nobleneſſe *is compoſed. And becauſe it is a peculiar propertie belonging therevnto, to favour and protect thoſe, who (as to a Sacred place) with-draw themſelues thither for their better ſafety, I reſt ſo ſecure vnder the ſhadow of your Lordſhips protection, and rely ſo much vpon your noble diſpoſition, that you ſtretching forth the wings of your accuſtomed clemency, my booke ſhall vnder them (as Chickens vnder the Hens wing) remaine free from thoſe that ſhall ſeeke to wrong it: And together therewith obtaine this happineſſe, that you making that great, which in it ſelfe is little, admitting a poore* Picaro, *to become a Courtier, ſhall giue a beeing to that which had none before, a worke of ſuch Greatneſſe and Excellencie, as ſhall make your Lordſhip to appeare the more. VVhoſe long and happie life is deſired of no man more then*

MATHEO ALEMAN.

TO

To the Vulgar:

TO mee it is no new thing (though perhaps it be to thee) to ſee (O thou vertue-hating Vulgar) the many bad friends that thou haſt; that little, which thou deſerueſt, and that leſſe, which thou vnderſtandeſt: To behold, how biting, how envious, how covetous thou art; how quicke in defaming, how ſlow in honoring; how certaine in ill, how vncertaine in good; how facile to fly out, and how hard to be curbed in. What Diamond is there ſo hard, which thy ſharpe teeth do not grind to powder? What vertue ſcapes free from thy venemous tongue? What piety doe thy actions protect? What defects doth thy cloake cover? What Treacle doe thy eyes behold, which doe not like the *Baſiliske* impoyſon? What Flower, though never ſo cordiall, euer entred through thy eares, which in the Hiue of thy heart thou didſt not convert into poyſon? What ſanctitie haſt thou not calumniated? What innocencie haſt not thou perſecuted? What ſingleneſſe of heart haſt not thou condemned? What juſtice haſt not thou confounded? What truth haſt not thou profaned? In what greene field haſt thou ſet thy foot, which thou haſt not defiled with thy filthy luxuries? And if it were poſſible to paint forth to the life the true faſhion of hell, and the torments thereof, thou onely, in my judgement, mightſt (and that truly) be its perfecteſt counterfet. Thinkeſt thou (peradventure) that paſſion blindeth mee, that anger moueth mee, or that ignorance violently thruſts me on? No verily. And if thou couldſt but be capable of ſeeing thy owne errour, but ſuffer thy ſelfe to be informed, (onely but with turning thy head aſide) thou ſhouldſt finde thy actions eternized, and even from *Adam* reproued, as thou thy ſelfe art already condemned. But alas, what amendment may be expected from ſo inveterated a Canker? or who is hee, that can be ſo happy; as to vnclue himſelfe from this Labyrinth, or to vnſeaze himſelfe from thy griping talons? I fled from the confuſed Court, and thou followedſt mee into a poore Village; I with-drew my ſelfe into ſolitary Shades, and there thou madeſt a ſhot at mee, and drew'ſt thy venemous ſhafts at me; never letting me alone, but ſtill vexing and purſuing me, to bring me vnder thy rigid Iuriſdiction, and tyrannicall Empire. I am well aſſured that the protection which I carry with me, will not correct thy crooked diſpoſition, nor giue that reſpect, which in good manners thou oweſt, to his noble quality, nor that in confidence thereof I ſhould get free from thy arreſting hand. For thou diſpiſing all goodnes and civilitie, (which are things that never yet came within the reach of thy better conſideration) haſt raſhly & vnadviſedly bitten ſo many illuſtrious & worthy perſons, extolling ſome for their wit, (though idle) accuſing others for their lightneſſe, and defaming a third of lyes and falſe-hoods. Thou

art

art *Mus campestris*, a very Field mouſe, and no better. Thou art ſtill nibbling on the hard rinde of the ſowre and vnſavorie *Melons*, but when thou commeſt to thoſe that are ſweet and wholeſome, and fitter for nouriſhment, thy ſtomacke falls into a loathing, thou canſt not feed on them without ſurfetting. Thou imitateſt that importunate, troubleſome, and eare-offending Fly (through his vntuneable buzzing) the *Scarabee*, who not dwelling on the ſweeter ſort of Flowers, flyes from forth the delicate Gardens, and pleaſant Woods, for to ſettle on a Cowe-ſheard, fall vpon a dunghill, and other ſuch like noyſome places. Thou doeſt not make any ſtay vpon the high moralities of diviner wits, but onely content'ſt thy ſelfe with that which the Dogge ſaid, and the Foxe anſwered; this cleaues cloſe vnto thee, this, when thou haſt read it, remaineth ſtill with thee, and hauing made it once thine owne, is never againe forgotten. O vnfortunate Foxe, that thou muſt be likened to one of theſe, and muſt, like theſe, be reviled and perſecuted, like an vnprofitable and miſchievous member in a Commonwealth! I will not enjoy the priviledge of thy honours, nor the freedome of thy Flatteries, though thou wouldſt enrich me with all the wealth of thy prayſes. For the commendation of wicked men, is but ſhame and diſhonour. And I rather deſire the reprehenſion of the good; becauſe the end for which they doe it, is like vnto themſelues, then thy depraued eſtimation, which cannot be but bad. Thou takeſt too much libertie vnto thee, thou art an vnbridled beaſt, a head-ſtrong Iade; and, if occaſion of matter be offered vnto thee, thou runn'ſt away with it, thou kick'ſt, and fling'ſt, thou trampleſt mens good names vnder thy feete, thou breakeſt all bounds of modeſtie, and teareſt all in pieces that ſtands in thy way, and whatſoever elſe ſhall ſeeme good vnto thee. But theſe faire Flowers, which thou ſo ſcornefully treadeſt vnder thy feete, crowne the Temples of the vertuous, and giue a fragrant and odoriferous ſmell in the noſtrils of thoſe that are noble. The deadly razour-wounding flaſhes of thy ſharpe tuskes, and the mortall ſtrokes made by thy hands, ſhall heale the man that is diſcreet, vnder whoſe warme ſhade, I ſhall happily be defended from the ſtormes and tempeſts of thy bluſtring malice.

TO

To the discreete Reader.

IT is vsuall with some, that are troubled in their sleepe with sad and melancholly dreames, to striue so strongly with their imagination (that without being otherwise moued at all) after they are awakened and come to themselues, remaine so broken and tyred out, as if they had wrestled and tugged hand to hand with some braue fierce Bull. And such a one for all the world doe I finde my selfe in getting out of my former Proeme, my minde still beating vpon the Barbarisme, and dis-equall number of those ignorant Dolts, to whose censure I submitted my selfe, it faring therein with me, as with him, who thrust himselfe into a voluntary exile, having not the power afterwards in his owne hands to reverse his banishment. I did ingage my selfe by promise to compose this booke, and now I am inforced to hold my honest word. I must confesse I made a false Vie, and did set vp my rest in jest, but now I am driuen to see it in earnest. For it is the word, that binds the Player. I knew full well (considering the rudenesse of my wit, and shortnesse of my studies) that it had beene very fit in mee to feare the Carreere that I am to make; and that this liberty and licence of mine is more then needed, and might well haue beene spared. But considering with my selfe, that there is not any Booke so bad, out of which some good may not be drawne, it may be possible, that in that wherein my wit was wanting, the Zeale which I had to profit others, may supply that defect, by working so vertuous effects; which happinesse if I light vpon, it shall be a sufficient reward of my greater paines, and make this my boldnesse, more worthy your pardon. I shall not need with the discreet to vse long Proemes nor prolixe circumlocutions. For neither can the eloquence of words vainely worke him, nor the force of speech dotingly perswade him to more then what is just; nor doth his felicity consist in the procuring of his fauourable Censure. I remit my selfe to his correction; I craue his helping hand to vphold my weakenesse, and put my selfe wholly vnder his faire protection.

And thou, (O Reader) that art desirous to profit hereby, if thou wilt but truly consider me, when I wrote this Booke, and that common good, to which I had then an eye, thou wilt not conceit, that which hath beene done therein, was haply performed by mee for private Interest, or vndertaken for ostentation of wit; for I did neuer so much pretend it, nor could I finde that sufficient worth in mee, to put my selfe vpon my wings in so vaine a flight.

Some perhaps will say, That hauing (like vnto Watermen) turn'd my backe and eyes the contrary way (who looke one way and row another) I direct this little Barke of mine, where I haue most desire to land. But vpon mine honest word, hee is deceiued that so thinketh. For it was my sole purpose, to guide the prow for the publike good, if I might be worthy to obtain so great a blessing, & that my labour might serue to so good a vse. Thou shalt find many things not

so cleare enough, but like Painters first colours, laid on with a carelesse hand, and [illegible] which did omit to polish and florish ouer for some conceit, that could haue come thereunto. Others are somewhat more refined, and better shadowed, which I did willingly auoid to follow, and was loth to finish them to the full, being as fearefull as carefull of committing some vnaduised error, or vnconceiued offence. Others I boldly vnmasked and laid open to discouery, as worthy to be drawn without a vayle, and fit to be presented to publike view. I haue much to say vnto thee, and desire so to do, yet may not tell it thee. I haue written vnto thee, yet haue I left out much of what I would haue writte. Reade so, as it becomes thee to reade, and doe not scoffe at my Fable; and if it shall receiue intertainment at thy hands, accept these lines, which I giue thee, and with them, the minde wherwith they offered vnto thee. Do not be cast them, as dust and sweepings of the house, vpon the dunghill of oblivion; consider that there may be some filings & parings of price; take them out, gather them into a heape, and when they come to a conuenient quantitie, put the into the crisole of thy consideration, giue to them the fire of the Spirit, and I assure thee, thou shalt extract some gold from them, where withall to inrich thy selfe. These Arrowes are not all of mine owne Quiuer, nor this honey that I set before thee, all of mine owne hiue; much of their sweetnesse did I sucke from holy and learned men; this is merchantable ware, well-conditioned; and for such I recommend it vnto thee. And because there is no good thing, which doth not proceed from the hands of God, nor any thing so bad, whereof some glory doth not result to his diuine Majesty (as hauing a part in euery thing) imbrace & giue a friendly reception to that which may be profitable for thee, rejecting that which is otherwise, or whatsoeuer else is bad, as meerely mine: Albeit I am very confident, that those things which cannot hurt, are wont many times to doe much good.

In this Discourse, thou maist moralize things, as they shall be offered vnto thee; Thou hast a large margent left thee to doe it; That, which thou shalt find lesse grauе, or discomposed, presents it selfe in the person of a Picaro, or Rogue: which is the Subiect of this Booke. Such things as these (which are not very many) sport thy selfe a while with them, jest and play the wagge, and afterwards shake hands with them. For at great Feasts, we must haue meats for all mouthes, and dishes for all tastes: Pleasant and sweete wines, which must cheere the heart, and helpe digestion: and musicke for to please and delight the eare.

Vale, Amice.

A Declaration for the better vnderſtanding of this BOOKE.

HAuing written this Poëticall Hiſtorie, with purpoſe to haue it printed in one onely Volume, in the diſcourſe whereof thoſe doubts might be cleared, which now (being deuided) might offer themſelues; it appeared (to my ſeeming) a very juſt thing, to remoue this inconuenience, ſeeing it might eaſily be done, and this in very few words. For which purpoſe, it is to be pre-ſuppoſed, that *Guzman de Alfarache*, our *Picaro*, hauing (by his ſtudy) come to be a good Latiniſt, Rhetorician, and Grecian (as we ſhall deliver vnto you in this firſt Part) after that he had returned out of *Italy* into *Spaine*, he went forward in his Studies, with purpoſe to profeſſe the ſtate of Religion, and to make himſelfe a Church-man. But by reaſon of his often relapſings to his Vices, he left that courſe, after he had ſpent ſome yeares therein. Now himſelfe writeth his owne life from a-boord the Gallyes, where hee remayned, and was put to the Oare, for the faults which he had committed, hauing beene a moſt famous Thiefe, and notorious Offender; as you ſhall ſee more at large in the ſecond Part. Nor is it any improprietie, or beyond our preſent purpoſe, if in this firſt Part I ſhall ſet before you ſome Tracts of Doctrine: But rather ſeemeth agreeable vnto reaſon to preſent vnto you a man of a cleare vnderſtanding, holpen by Learning, and puniſhed by Time, making benefit of that idle time, which he had in the Gallyes; Being that we like wiſe ſee many ignorant ſoules ſentenced to death, who being to ſpend the remainder of their time in thinking on their ſoules health, divert their thoughts from all other worldly things, for to make a ſhort ſtudied ſpeech when they come to the Ladder.

This Booke devides it ſelfe into three parts: In the firſt, is treated of *Guzman de Alfarache* going forth of his mothers houſe, and the ſlender conſideration of young men in thoſe indeavours which they attempt: And how, though their eye-ſight be cleare, they will not ſee, precipitated and blinded with their falſe pleaſures. In the ſecond, the life of a *Pinaver* or *Lacque*, which hee vnder-went, and the lewd tricks which he was led into by ill company, and the time which he idly miſ-ſpent. In the third, the calamities, and extreme povertie, whereunto he grew, and the inconſiderate courſes which hee ran into, becauſe he would not take vp himſelfe in time; and his obſtinacie in not ſuffering himſelfe to be ruled by thoſe, who were both able and deſirous to doe him good. In that which I ſhall write hereafter, I ſhall (God willing) giue an end to this Story.

AN ELOGIVM.

Of ALFONSO de BAROS, Chamberlaine to KING PHILIP the third, in praise of this Booke, and of MATHEO ALEMAN the Author thereof.

IF wee owe somewhat to those Painters, who in a Treasurie, as it were, of Moniments, or some faire Store-house, haue reserued and lapt vp in their linnen clothes (though vnder lines and dumbe colours) the pictures of those, who for their Heroicall Actions, merited their Tables; As also of those, who by their vnworthy carriage gaue motion to their Pensils; for that with the pleasing portrayture of the one, and the abhorred aspect of the other, they awaken and stirre vp our Spirits, through the ones fame, to imitation; and through the others infamie, to feare, and advisement: Much more obligation (without all comparison) haue we vnto those, who to their full life represent these things vnto vs in their Histories; who doe vs more good in what they haue written, and haue this advantage of the others limming, that their reports and relations doe worke so strongly, and with that perswasiue power vpon our imagination, as if we had really and in truth seene both them and all that they did, with these our bodily eyes.

In these, and all the rest (if there resteth any obligation that may be greater) wee haue both the light and the life, from this our Author: For in this his Historie, which he now hangs forth (as Painters doe their pictures) in the open street, to the eye of all the world, he hath portrayted so to the life, a sonne of idlenes, a loytering Rogue; that there is not any man (though never so ignorant) but will know him at the first sight, for that he is so like his father: Who as he is the parent of all Vices, so this his childe came to be the Center and Gulfe of them all, suffering them to imbosome themselues within him, receiuing in (as sinkes doe) infinite gatherings, not of waters, but of filth and myre. And being now so farre impreened in them, that he might serue for an example and patterne vnto those, who should dispose themselues to enjoy the like kinde of life, the Authors drift is, that no man should adorne himselfe with such robes as these: For there is not any one so abhorring himselfe, that at so deare a rate will cloath himselfe with his Linerie, seeing that he payd with a shamefull end the punishment of his offences, and the disordinate actions, which his licentious desires did commit. Whose merited and exemplary chastisement, is expressed with Categoricall and strong tearmes, and with an argument ex contrario; to wit, the reward, & fortunate successes which shall follow him; who liuing vprightly, and spending his time well, shall in his course of life, apply himselfe to a certaine and determined end, and make himselfe the opposite, and Antipodes, as it were, of the inconstant Figure of this ensuing discourse. Wherein, for his admirable order, and good observations, bearing in the face of it the resemblance of a Historie, the Author hath happely attayned the name and office of an Historian, and a Painter; as well in those representations, that are to be seene a farre off, as in those shadowes, wherewith he hath disguised his instructions, and those his so necessary rules and advertisements, appertayning to a politicall life, and to Morall Philosophie, whereunto hee principally aymed; shewing plainely, that which Licurgus expressed, by the example of those two Whelps of one litter; whereof the one, through good teaching, and a habit he had gotten, followed the hunting of the Hare, till he had kill'd him; and the other, because he had not beene so well bred, in stead of falling to hunting, fell a gnawing the bone which he found in the way: Giuing vs to vnderstand by infallible demonstrations, the knowne danger, wherein those children stand, who in their child-

child-hood are trayned vp without obedience and good education by their parents. For without this we be, they runne into the errours of their youth, [illegible] Horse of their vnruliness and vntamednesse, [illegible] and precipitate them into a thousand [illegible] so many Rocks, till there is not one bone left vnbroken, [illegible] their life & goods. He likewise sheweth vnto vs, that [illegible] like misfortunes, who, being destitute of some noble Science, or some speciall mysterie, grounds his hopes vpon the vntided doctrine of Natures schoole: For without exercising his Talent, or employing his wit, or without putting himselfe into some profession, (hauing experimented that Art, to which he is most inclinable) he vsurpeth offices quite contrary to his owne inclination, omitting none which he not imbraceth, attempting to make triall of all, losing in all of them both himselfe, and his time, pretending by his inconstancie and vnsetled disposition, to seeme not to be idle, that man being notwithstanding more idle, who puts his Sickle into another mans Corne, and venters vpon a profession that belongs not vnto him, than he that sleepeth and takes his ease, or leades the most retyred life. This our Transferer, Matheo Aleman, hath also well defended himselfe from the like objections, by those just occupations of his life, wherein he busied himselfe; who doth teach vs as well thereby, as by his booke, finding therein the opposite of this his Historie, which he pretendeth to imply: For being bred vp in his tender yeares in the studie of humane learning, they could not challenge him of keeping (*) residencie in idlenesse. Much lesse, that in this his Historie, hee hath thrust himselfe into another mans profession: for that it is so properly his owne, and so annexed to his studies, that the desire he had to write it, withdrew and distracted his thoughts from the honourable entertainment of those his Majesties papers; (being at that time his Contador) wherein (albeit he were very) sufficient for the exercising of that office) yet it seemeth that he was haled thereunto by violence, and against his will; in that he returned afterwards to his former exercise; in the continuation whereof, and by his watchfull endeavours, he hath formed this booke for vs, mixing it with that [illegible] sweet harmony of delight and profit, which Horace requireth; inuiting vs with it's pleasure, and instructing vs with it's gravity, taking for it's scope, the publicke good, and for it's reward, the common benefit. And because young men shall finde in him, the obligation which they haue to their parents, who by a good and carefull education, haue drawne them out of the darkenesse of ignorance, by showing them that North-Starre, which ought to guide them in this confused Sea of their troublesome life, (being as long to the idle, as it is short to those that are well occupied) it shall (in point of good manners) be very vnfitting, that the Readers, who are the children of this Bookes Learning, should shew themselues vnthankfull to their Master, by not throughly esteeming his just zeale. And if this shall not saue him from their rigorous censure, the fault must then be in the inevitable contradiction of the diversity of opinions. Nor is it a thing to be wondred at, but rather naturall, and that cannot be avoyded: For most certaine it is, that a man cannot so write, as that he shall please all; And that whosoever should endeavour it, should but goe about to take from Nature her greatest miracle. Nor doe I know which is the greater beauty, either that which she placed in that diversity, from whence proceed so many diverse opinions; or that of the diverse formes of mens faces. For, for the rest, it were but to say, that all the world were but one man, and one taste.

(*) [illegible]

AD
GVZMANVM DE ALFARACHE
Vincentij SPINELLI Epigramma.

Spinellus. *QVis te tanta loqui docuit* Guzmanule? *Quis te*
Stercore ſubmerſum, duxit ad aſtra modò?
Muſca modò, & lautas epulas, & putrida tangis
Vlcera; jam trepidas frigore, jamque cales.
Iura doces, ſuprema petis, medicamine curas,
Dulcibus & nugis ſeria mixta doces.
Dum carpiſque alios, alios virtutibus auges,
Conſulis ipſe omnes, conſulis ipſe tibi.
Iam ſacræ Sophiæ virides amplecteris umbras,
Tranſis ad obſcœnos ſordibus inde jocos.
Et modò divitijs plenus, modò paupere cultu,
Triſtibus & miſeris dulce levamen ades.

Guzman. *Sic ſpeciem humanæ vitæ, ſic præfero ſolus*
Proſpera complectens, aſpera cuncta ferens.
Hac Aleman *variè picta me veſte decorat,*
Me lege deſertum, tuque diſertus eris.

GVZMAN DE ALFARACHE

vpon his owne life.

BOrne without Parents, which in my Cradle
Should haue sowne such seeds, as might inable
Me to good; My *Youth* chose *Vice* for'ts *Father*,
Whose Step-dame, *Fortune*, quickly did inslaue her.
My Travels, and my Studies found eft soone
More Formes and Changes, then are in the *Moone*.
But now my building being ruin'd quite,
Like to a Pillar, I onely stand in sight,
Others to for-warne what course they runne,
Least, like my selfe, they chance to be vndone.
With this Story, my life now liu's againe,
Which in *Oblivions* pit did dead remaine.
Whose blurres are now in such faire letters writ,
As *Time* no more shall triumph over it.
An vn-hewne peece of wood, I long haue beene,
Knotty, and rugged, tinded vp in sinne.
But polish't now by this neat Worke-mans hand,
And, on the *Altar* set, as a *Memoriall* stand
To lesson others, how their liues to leade,
While I to them, mine owne misfortunes reade.

Hernando de Soto, to the Authour.

TWo great things I see
In this wise booke contained be:
A notable Knaue,
And yet the Authours Subject, graue.
In it I discerne,
By others harmes, how men may learne
Their owne faults t'amend,
And shape their course to some good end
Likewise we may know,
What loue to goodnesse we must owe.
To teach more, none can:
Nor more be learn'd of any man.
'Tis the Common voice,
So good on either side's the choice.
Picaro honour gaines,
Aleman immortall remaines.

In GVZMANVM d' ALFARACHIA *nobilem Erronem & Prædonem publicum, à clariſſ. reiq; militaris expertiſſ. Duce Don Diego Puede-Ser captum, vinculis conſtrictum, nec ſine ovatione in Britannias perductum.*

ESte procul Elegi:
Nil hic Dolente dignum,
Vocem premant Epica:
Non hic celebratur Heros.
Flebilis nil opus Lyrâ:
Facilis hic proſtat Venus.
Sed nec Tubâ Mantuana:
Bella canuntur bellula.
Grande nimis reboantes
Davum dedecent Cothurni.
Nec Iambi turbet furor
Hilares Lyæi jocos.
Multoque minùs laripes.
Fugitivum dicat Scazon.
Quale jam dic Metri genus.
Nobilis, Guzmane, *prædo,*
Te tuoſque mores ſonet
Expertes Legis, Ordinis:
Nam Marini more Dei,
Vitijs nunc irritatus
Leo fremis: Nunc remulcens
Caudam Canis adularis:
Colubrinâ ſæpe linguâ
Immane quiddam ſibilas:
Sæpè Sophi meditantis
Pendulâ ſeverus togâ
Vitæ prædicas maandros.
Vafer ſic, & fallus Omnes,
Et Teipſum multiformis:
Vt ſtupore plenum ſuat,
Quibus hamis & catenis
Illigavit Verſipellem,
Et hoc Monſtrum cicuravit;
Voce Qui donat Anglicâ:
Aureis catenis nempe,
Quibus vinciuntur aures:
Nempe Circeo poculo,
Tumidos quod ſapit angues:
Nempe Thracis *plectro Lyræ,*
Quæ ſequaces reddit urſas.
Hiſce comprenſus artibus,
Retrò manibus revinctis,
Curru poſitus ſuperbo,
Per Britanna *regna*, (Guzman)
Prodis in pompam publicam.

I. F.

To the exact Tranſlator of the famous *Hiſtory of infamous* GVZMAN.

WHen *Guzmans* Legend was allow'd in *Spaine*,
And, though a *Rogue*, found Prince-like entertaine,
He did o're *Alpes* and *Pyrene* Hils advance
To tell his Tale in *Italy* and *France*:
With which their natiue cares being ſweetly ſtung,
He theeuiſh ſtole their heart, and bound their tongue
To ſpeake his praiſe. At laſt on *Gallicke* ſhore
(Standing like *Cæſar*) thence he did implore
Some *Pegaſus*, or winged *Argoes* ayde,
To croſſe the *Brittaine* Seas: Shall they (he ſaid)

Want

Want onely my thrice-ſeven times printed ſtory?
Nor know my *Origin*? Nor [illegible]
Our Poeticy feet? I name no Sect, nor take
A Factious part; No ſound or Warre I make,
But againſt ſinne, I land no forraine mates,
For Vertues Schooles ſhould free be in all ſtates.
Straight-wayes thy Gentler ſpirit (without thirſt,
Or Fame or Fare) wafts him a-ſhore, and firſt
Shewes him the preſent garbe, the parle, and guiſe,
In a few weekes; whoſe Quill both writes and flyes
With equall ſpeed: Then ſhapes him quaint and rare,
That he ſeemes *Engliſh*, nay a *Courtier*.
Would you know his Diſcourſe? Hee biting laughs,
A Comicke Satyre, at ſmall faults hee ſcoffes,
But ſtabs the impudent: Now in amorous ſtraine
He ſighes a *Lover*: Now in buſie gaine
Hee acts a *Merchant*; Then in learned weedes
Hee lookes a *Student*: *Ibis*-like he feedes
On publike venome, and deſerues a Shrine
(Sooner then he that ſtiled was Divine)
For purging humours. Now his wiſhes are
Out-ſtript by fauour; Then in Gallies bare
He honours beggery: His whole theame is *Man*,
On which nor *Cranior* nor *Chryſippus* can
More wiſedome comment, for his life alone,
Is Precept with Example; So that none
Can better teach by worſe meanes; who by ſtrange
Bifronted poſture, ill, to good doth change.
So Vipers fleſh, the Vipers cure hath bin:
And ſinfull ſurfets, Antidotes for ſin.
So an old Bawdes face, Chaſtneſſe doth ſuggeſt:
Vices true picture, makes vs Vice deteſt:
More then Graue *Platoes* wiſh, For vertues ſight
Can leſſe allure, then villany affright.
Deare Country, then harbour a weary wight,
Be thou a *Delas*, to this errant knight:
Giue the kinde *Parabien*, and gracious eye
To various mirth: And (Reader) if thou ſpy
Thy owne ſelfe in this Magicke glaſſe, refuſe
No Surgeons hand, but (gainſt the common vſe)
Let the Booke cenſure thee: And thanke his paine,
Whoſe Pen, ſo gently prickt thy maſſes vaine:
And thanke his faithfull conuoy, if [illegible]
Who ſcornes baſe fawning, [illegible]
More is but Due: for as my Scale deſignes,
This is the Baſe, to large and worthy Lines.

Yours *I. F.*

The

To

To *Don Diego Puede-Ser*, and his Tranſlation of GVZMAN.

AS, few, French *Rablais* vnderſtand, and none
Dare in our Vulgar Tongue once make him knowne:
No more our Plodding Linguiſts could attaine
(By turning *Minſhewe*) to this *Rogue* of *Spaine*,
So crabbed Canting was his Authors Pen
And phraſe, ev'n darke to his owne Countrey-men;
Till, thankes and praiſe to this Tranſlators paine,
His Margent, now makes him ſpeake Engliſh plaine.

Leo: Diggs.

On the Author, VVorke, and Tranſlator.

WHo tracks this Authors, or Tranſlators Pen,
Shall finde, that either hath read Bookes, and Men:
To ſay but one, were ſingle. Then it chimes,
When the old words doe ſtrike on the new times,
As in this *Spaniſh Proteus*; who, though writ
But in one tongue, was form'd with the worlds wit:
And hath the nobleſt marke of a good Booke,
That an ill man dares not ſecurely looke
Vpon it, but will loath, or let it paſſe,
As a deformed face doth a true glaſſe.
Such Bookes deſerue Tranſlators, of like coate
As was the *Genius* wherewith they were wrote;
And this hath met that one, that may be ſtil'd
More then the Foſter-father of this Child;
For though *Spaine* gaue him his firſt ayre and Vogue,
He would be call'd, henceforth, the *Engliſh-Rogue*,
But that hee's too well ſuted, in a cloth,
Finer then was his *Spaniſh*, if my Oath
Will be receiu'd in Court; If not, would I
Had cloath'd him ſo. Here's all I can ſupply
To your deſert, who'haue done it, Friend. And this
Faire Emulation, and no Envy is,
When you behold me wiſh my ſelfe, the man
That would haue done, that, which you onely can.

Ben. Ionſon.

The

A Table of the Chapters and matter contained in the three Bookes of the first Part.

Chap. I.

Guzman de Alfarache *recounteth who was his Father, and shewes in what manner occasion learnedly to discourse of Detractours, and evill speakers, of unprofitable Merchants, of Iudges, of bad Clarkes, of Lives, and Lawyers, and shewes much neatnesse in cloathes and nice dressing, ill in a Woman, and worse in a Man.*

Chap. II.

Guzman de Alfarache *goes on, in recounting who were his Parents, and declareth withall who his Mother was; and for our better instruction, describes the evill condition and bad qualities of a lewd woman, of Murders, of a sensuall and lasciuious man, and that the end of dishonest Loue, is the losing of a mans honour, of his wealth, and of himselfe.*

Chap. III.

How Guzman *departed from his Mothers House upon a Friday towards the Euening, discouring by the way the torments of hunger, & shame which befell him with his Hostesse, recounting many notable examples of some Rules of ill Conversation.*

Chap. IV.

Guzman de Alfarache *recounteth to a Carrier what befell him with his Hostesse: And discourseth of Laughing. After that, he tels two short Tales, one of a coueteous Physician; the other of two young men, how they vsed the said Hostesse. And upon the necke of that, falls into a learned discourse, touching the pardoning of injuries.*

Chap. V.

How Guzman *and the Carrier did ease of a young Mule. Thinking it had been a Veale, being cozened by his Host in Castillana, and discourseth by the way of the cozening tricks, which bad Hosts vse vpon poore Trauellers.*

Chap. VI.

Guzman *goes on, in recounting what succeeded him with his Host of Castillana, and how he had given him to ease of his young Mule, and of the entertainment which he found there. And how it is not good vprore to goe with* Guzman *And how it is not good vprore to goe with an Host.*

Chap. VII.

Mans misfortune is here discoursed of, and of those purples & purchases of Gentlemen of the gods of those ancient times: And how Guzman, *being thought to be a Theefe, was apprehended, but afterwards being knowne to be innocent, was set at liberty. One of the Clergy-men pretended to rob him by, in company of some time with all, vpon the way.*

Chap. VIII.

Wherein Guzman de Alfarache *relateth the story of those two Lovers, Gomez and* Dorana.

The Argument.

How Ferdinand *and* Isabell, *King and Queen of the Moores, whereof one* Dorana *a Moore was one, whom Queene* Isabell *brought vp in custodie of* Don Luys de Padilla, *and how he married with Gomez, the inheritour of his Lord. Dorana* [illegible] *were accidents that happened during their Loues.*

A Table of the Chapters and matter contained in the Second BOOKE.

CHAP. I.

How Guzman de Alfarache, *going out of* Caçalla *towards* Madrid, *proues the quality and condition of a miserable man, and vpon this occasion, gravely discourseth of the effects of Want, of Shame, and of Castles in the ayre: And how he came to serue an Host; and of the wicked disposition of such kinde of men.*

CHAP. II.

How Guzman de Alfarache *leauing his Host, went begging to* Madrid; *& cõming thither, how hee set himselfe to learne to play the Rogue, and to beare a Basket; where, by the way hee discourseth of Hunger, of Beggery, and of Honour which hurteth the soule.*

CHAP. III.

Guzman de Alfarache *goes on in his Discourse against vaine Honours. where, by the way he offers vnto Mans consideration, what manner of person he ought to be, how to beare himselfe in his office, and to gouerne himselfe in those high places, whereunto he is called.*

CHAP. IV.

Guzman de Alfarache *deliuereth a learned and witty discourse, conceiued by himselfe, against the vanity of Honour: touching by the way vpon the vices of Seruants, of Shop-keepers, of Notaries, of Proctors, of Iudges, of Artificers, of Apothecaries, of Physicians, and of Lawyers.*

CHAP. V.

How Guzman de Alfarache *lighted on a Cookes seruice, and with faire Sentences, & good Lessons, sheweth what he should be that serueth. He blameth gaming, & Gamesters. He declareth a pretty theft performed by him; he relateth the vices of Despenseros, Cookes, Butlers, and other the like officers. Of Lords, abused by their seruants. Of Kings, and their miserable condition. Of the vanity of Inferiours, contesting with their Superiours. Hee condemneth those Masters, that ill intreat their seruants: And how they ought to carry themselues towards them.*

CHAP. VI.

Guzman de Alfarache *prosecutes that which past betwixt him and his Master, till being dismist, he departed from him: And takes occasion hereupon to condemne Idlenesse and euill Company; and those inueterated vices in rich men. He recounteth the spoyles, and Trophees of Cookes; and tels a merry Story, that past between himselfe, and the Cookes wife, his Mistresse.*

CHAP. VII.

How Guzman de Alfarache *being put from the Cooke his Master, turnes* Picaro, *and proues a notable cunning Rogue. How hee hauing a great desire to see* Italy, *was offered vnto him to effect his purpose, by the helpe of a theft done vpon a Grocer, and how he went sheere away with it, and left* Madrid.

CHAP. VIII.

How Guzman de Alfarache *cloathing himselfe like a Gallant in* Toledo, *makes loue to certaine Gentlewomen: He telleth how things past betweene them, and how there, and in* Malagon *they scorned him; hee discourseth of youthfull iollity, and of the craft and subtilty of your Spanish women; which may serue for an instruction, and warning to all young men.*

CHAP. IX.

How Guzman de Alfarache *lists himselfe for a Souldier. He telleth whence that ill phrase grew:* En Malagon, en cada casa vn ladron; y en lo del Alcalde, hijo y padre: *In* Malagon, *every house a Thiefe; and in that of the* Alcalde *two: The father.*

father and the ſonne. How in a ſhort time, through ill gouernment, all Guzmans money is gone; How to his griefe he is forced to ſerue a Captaine. Some leſſons giuen to young men. To theſe are added the faults of bad Miniſters in matters of warre and peace.

CHAP. X.

Guzman de Alfarache *declareth the mis-fortunes: And the wants of one that is decayed in his fortunes: And how he followed a Captaine, till hee came into* Italy; *exerciſing himſelfe in all kinde of theefts great and ſmall, for the releife and helpe of his Maſter.*

A Table of the Chapters and matter contained in the third BOOKE.

CHAP. I.

GVzman *diſcourſeth of pouerty, and of the wrongs and outrages, which a poore man indureth; As alſo of Riches, & of the honours that are done vnto the rich: As likewiſe of the naughtineſſe of this preſent world: And how not finding his Kindred, which he ſought for in* Genoa, *he went to* Rome; *and of a jeſt that was put vpon him, before he left that Citie.*

CHAP. II.

Guzman *diſcourſeth of the vnhappineſſe, greatneſſe, and commendation of Neceſſitie and Want; And how after he was gone from* Genoa, *he fell a begging. And how keeping company with other poore beggers, hee was inwrufted by them, of their Statutes, and lawes.*

CHAP. III.

How Guzman de Alfarache *was not only reprehended by a learned Rogue, & Doctor in his facultie; but likewiſe how he learned of him ſome new Orders & Capitulations, concerning this his roguiſh kinde of life, and that which hapned vnto him in this his vpright courſe; And of many Precepts and Leſſons, delivered vnto him vpon this point by a* Cordoueſe, *an old cunning Croſſe-biter.*

CHAP. IV.

Guzman de Alfarache *diſcourſeth of the Charity that wee are to vſe towards our neighbour; Hee recounteth what befell him with a Gentleman: And of the free life, and great libertie which a Begger injoyes.*

CHAP. V.

Guzman de Alfarache *diſcourſeth of the quality of mens conſciences, & recounteth what hapned in his time to a notable rogue, and famous begger in* Florence, *who at his death made the great Duke his heire. He treats of the ambitious man; And delivers in the end, how he was thruſt out of* Gaeta *for his counterfetting.*

CHAP. VI.

Guzman de Alfarache *diſcourſeth of Almes: And being returned to* Rome, *he falls afreſh to his old Trade of begging. Hee feignes himſelfe to haue a ſore legge. A Cardinall taking compaſſion of him, takes order, to haue him cured in his owne houſe, and to be laid in his owne bed. Hee diſcouers the knauery of Surgeons, haning a bad conſcience: And how being cured, he became a Cardinals Page.*

CHAP. VII.

Guzman de Alfarache *diſcourſeth, how all things haue had their time of Empire. He deliuereth ſtrange things, touching* Truth *and* Lying. *As being Page to the Cardinall, he declareth the Vertues, and the Vices, wherein your Pages exerciſe themſelues. He relateth a pleaſant Story of his ſtealing ſome Conſerues, and how he was puniſhed for it.*

CHAP. VIII.

Chap. VIII.

Guzman de Alfarache *revenges a tricke which the Secretarie had put vpon the Chamberlaine, whom hee then attended. Hee tels a tale of Shame and Feare; What is it, and how painted forth. Hee is receiued againe into the Cardinals seruice. And how finely he coozened him of a Burrell of Conserues.*

Chap. IX.

Guzman de Alfarache *treats of Charity: Discourseth of Masters kinde and vnkinde: Telleth of another theft of Conserues. His exercises, and distastes being a Page. He recounteth the tricks he vsed at* Primera. *That it is good to know play; but better not to vse any gaming at all. And how for playing hee was put out of the Cardinals seruice. And how proud ignorance is the cause of all evill.*

Chap. X.

Guzman de Alfarache *discourseth of ill Company; of Hospitality; of Patience; and how being put out of the Cardinals house, hee placed himselfe with the Embassador of France, where he plaid some Knauish prankes. Hee relates a Story, which he heard from a Gentleman of* Naples. *And ending with that, he giues an end to the first part of his life.*

AN

Singula quæque locum tenent.

The first part, the first figures shew the Page, the latter, the line; and *m* stands for the margent.

THe Hyena, *and her qualities.* p.1.l.24.
Of selling the naked truth, with a tale of a Gentle-man, that had two horses painted. 2.34.
The effects of detractors. 3.16.
Guzmans *Father.* 5.8.
Against vsurers. ibid. 22.
Guzmans *fathers devotion, and whole life.* 6.1.
The condition of his kindred. ib. 21.
Against bankerupture, a cunning tricke of some Merchants. 7.
A discourse of a Preacher against Notaries. 8.
Of buying offices, a saying of Aristotle. 9.40.
A bad Iudge, and his conditions. 9.50.
A saying of a Countrey fellow concerning Iustice. 11.23.
Against painting the face. 12.25.
A strange monster. 13.25.
Guzman *his mother, and her condition.* 14.50.
Women lone to be lookt on. 15.m.
A bawd and her condition. ib.
Novelties please women. 16.m.
The difference betweene the poore and rich master. 18.m.
The difference betweene lone friendship and good will. 21.m.
What true lone is. ibid.
Time weares away. 22.34.
Rich men die of hunger, and poore men of surfets. 23.m.
Looke on the matter not the speaker. 24.21.
Guz. *had two fathers by vertue of his mother.* 24.m.
It is the ruine of poore men, to keepe places of pleasure. 25.m.
Guz. *his fathers death.* 26.m.
Whence Guz. *had his name.* 28.m.
He departs from Sevill. 29.m.
Misfortunes seldome come alone. ib.
Hunger. 29.40.
Sleepe cracks care, with a conceit of a Mountanese. 30.m.
A tale of an ignorant Physitian. ibid.
Afflictions come from God, &c. 31.m.
The roguerie of an hostesse. ibid.
Guz. *eates demi-chickins in egges.* 32.
Against ill governours. 33.1.
Rich men are like whales. 34.m.
Guz. *meetes with a Carryer.* 36.1.
Of laughter. 36.m. 38.m.
A Physitian hath three faces. 37.m.
A tale of a Physitian, that loued money too well. ibid.
A jest put vpon an hostesse. 39.m.
A large discourse of the pardoning of injuries. 40.m.
Guz. *his hoste in Castilana where hee did eate of a young mule instead of a young calfe.* 45. &c.
A jest of a Countrey fellow. 46.m.
A guilty conscience. 48.m.
The Spaniards fashion of admiring. 49.m.
The knauery of Interpreters. 50.1.
Guz. *bitten by fleas.* 51.m.
He loseth his cloake. 52.47.
He that hath right hath courage, the faulty turne coward. 53.54.m.
Mans life, what it is. 57.m.
A morall fable of the gods of old time. ibid.
No true content on earth. 59.46.
Strange alterations in the world. 60.m.
Morall lessons. 61.m.
Guzman *apprehended for a thiefe.* ib.

Of Sergeants, and Catch-poles. 62.
The pleasant Storie of Ozmin *and* Daraxa. 64.
Guz. *comes to* Cacalla. 103. 1.
Want and it's effects. 104. 1.
To be ashamed out of modesty, to doe what is good, is a cause of great hurt. ibid.
Of shamefastnes. 105. m.
To thinke on a thing, and to doe it, what like to. 106. m.
Good company, what effects. 107. m.
Guz. *travells with two covetous men.* 107. *&c. He is releeued by a* Franciscan. 107. 54.
Hee serues an Inne-keeper. 109. 1.
The knauery of hostlers. ibid.
Guz. *leaues his hoste and turnes begger, but soone leaues it.* 111. m.
He begins to turne rogue. 112. 16.
He beares a basket. 113. 10.
Of honour. 113. m. 114. 115.
Christian honour, what it ought to be. 114. m.
A discourse vpon Matth. 5. 16. p. 118.
Clergy-men, charitably reproued. ib.
Guz. *his miserable condition.* 119. m.
Every man is bound to be vertuous. ib.
How light ought to be in those that beare offices. ibid.
Concerning officers good, and bad. 120. m.
A good lesson for those that haue a desire to liue well. 121. m.
Why Preachers reproue not sinne. ibid.
Honour, what a thing. 122. m.
Liberty, how pleasant a thing it is. 125. m.
The poore may liue happily. 126. m.
Honour, how troublesome. ibid.
A bad man-servant and maid-servant described. ibid.
Falshood in selling of wares, Notaries, Scriueners, Attourneys, and Lawyers, Iudges, Taylers, Masons, Smiths, Carpenters, Apothecaries, Doctors of Physicke. 127. 128. m.
Liberty, a great Iewell. 129. m.
Guz. *made Sentlion.* 129. 20. *and how he behaued himselfe.* 130.
Good vsage of the Master, a spurre to the seruant. 130. m.
Gaming, a hurtfull thing. 131. m.
Goodnesse, what like to. } ibid.
All vices in a gamster. }
A pretty theft done by Guz. 132. m.
The knauery of kitchin-boyes. 135. 10.
Scandalous persons, what like to ib. m.
A Kings condition & hierogliffe. 138. m
The miserable condition of great Lords and Gentle-men. ib.
Profitable lessons for poore and rich, and Masters of families. 139. m.
A tale of a miserly Gentle-man. 140. m.
Ill company, the author of ill. 142. m.
Idlenesse, what kinde of thing. ibid.
The knauery of Cookes. 143. 20. *their Trophees.* ib. m.
A jest betweene Guz. *and his Mistris.* 145. m.
Guz. *steales egges, and is taken in it.* 147. m. *Taken in a fault by his Mistris, is put away.* 148. m.
Wisdome, better then riches. 149. m.
Fortune, how deciphered. ibid.
Of orderly dyet, and drinking. 151. m.
A lesson for Church-men against drinking. 152. 10.
Guz. *turnes to his basket.* ib. 23.
Porters talke of State-matters. ib. m.
Guzman *desires to goe to* Italy. 153. m. *Hee steales money.* 154. m. *hee comes to* Toledo. 157. 29. *his idle humour.* 158. m. *caught with a looke.* 159. m *& what befell him.* 160. *&c. he departs, and comes to* Orgaz, *then to* Malagon. 165. 53. *A jest betweene him and a wench.* 166. m.
The reason of a proverbe in Malagon. 168.
Hee comes to Almagro, *and what befell him.* 170.
Angers effects. 171. 1.
His money all gone. 173. m.
Hee serues a Captaine. 174. m.
A tricke of a proud Courtier. 175. m.
Against pride. ib. 15.
He comes to Barcelona. 176. 53.
He cozens a Gold-smith, an vsurer. 177.
He comes to Italy. 181. 7.
The nature of flatterers. 183. 15.
The poore mans epithies. ib. m.
The condition of the rich. 184. m.
A tricke put vpon Guzman *at* Genoa. 186. m. *He leaues* Genoa, *and goes for* Rome. 189. m.
Angers effects. ibid.
Necessity, twofold. 190. m.
Hee begges. 191. 2. *his Tutour.* 191. 34.
The lawes of Beggers. 193.

The INDEX.

Morcon *the king of Beggers.* 198. m.
Guz. *scalded.* 199. 6. *and taught many things by a* Cordoveſe. ib.
The faſhion of Beggers in asking an almes. 202. m.
Charity, of what force. 203. m.
Riches like ſugar. 204. m.
Guz. *his cloake, what a one.* ibid.
The priviledge of Beggers. 205. m.
Every man loues his owne. 206. m.
Of Conſciences. 209.
Wholſome leſſons for them. 210. m.
The ſtory of Pantalon *begger.* 211. m.
Detraction. 214. 3.
Guz. *counterfeits a ſore head at* Gaeta. 214. 37. *then a ſore legge.* ib. *and is taken.* 215. 8.
Of Almeſdeeds effects. 217. m.
Of the manner of giuing. 218.
He comes to Rome, *begges with a ſore legge, a Cardinall pitties him.* 219. m.
The qualitie of bad Surgeons. 220. m.
He is cured, and made a Page. 223. 6.
All things haue their time. ib. m.
A ſtorie of truth and lying. 224.
How they are compared. 227. m.
His courſe of life, while he was a Page. ibid.
Of Pages. 228. m.
His tricks, when he was a Page. 230. 5.
He ſteales ſweetmeats. 231. m. *is taken and puniſhed.* 232. *cryes quit with the Secretary.* ib. m. *baniſhed the Cardinalls chamber, admitted vnder the Chamberlaine, with whom the Secretarie playes the knaue.* 235. m. Guz. *requites the Secretary.* 237. m. *receiued againe of the Cardinall.* 238. m.
A fable of modeſtie. ibid.
Feare, what a thing. ib.
Guz. *plots to ſteale a barrell of Conſerues.* 239.
Charity, and it's fruits. 242. m.
His other theft of Conſerues. 243. m.
His tricks at Primera. 245. m
Gaming muſt be onely for recreation. 246. m.
Guz. *playes away his cloathes.* 248. m.
He hath new cloathes, and turned out of doores. ibid.
Selfe will hurteth young men. ib.
Ill company deſtroyeth the ſoule. 250. m.
Hoſpitalitie, and it's lawes. 251. 1.
Guz. *ſerues the French Embaſſadour, and how he behaued himſelfe.* 252. m.
A tale of an Engliſh-man. ibid.
A tale of a Spaniard. 253. m.
The tragicall hiſtorie of Dorido *and* Clorinia. 355. *&c.*

The ſecond part.

Againſt tale-bearers. 5. 5.
A tale of a couetous Spaniard. 6. m.
No writer can pleaſe all. 7. m.
Why great Lords fauour flatterers. 10. m.
Guz. *is become a Ieſter.* 11. 5.
Neceſſary things for a Ieſter. ib. m.
A tale of a Noble-man giuen to lying. 14. m.
An anſwere of a foole to a great Prince. ibid.
The vanity of great men in rewarding fooles and Ieſters. 15. m.
For what vſe Guzman *ſerued the French Embaſſadour.* 16. m.
A tale of a cryer. 17. m.
A tale of a Doctor of Salamanca. 17. m.
Concerning loue. 18. m.
Guz. *his courſe of life in* Rome. 19. m.
A leſſon to widowes and parents. 20. m.
Guz. *is his maſters bawd.* ibid.
Loue hardly remoued. 21. m.
Of deceiuing and lying. 23. m.
Foure wayes of deceiuing. 24. m.
A tale of a Scholler of Alcala. ibid.
A paſſage betweene the Prince of Italy *and a Poet.* 26. m.
Many other deceits, proud-fellowes. ibid.
Swaggerers, talking ſchollers, Stationers, Printers, old men. 27. m.
Old women, young-folke. 28. m.
Old age neceſſary, yet not regarded. ibid.
A pretty tale of Iupiter, *the Aſſe, the dogge, the ape, and man.* ib.
A tale of two gentlemen, that dined with the French Embaſſadour. 32.
Guz. *puts a tricke vpon a Doctor and a Captaine.* 33. m.
A tale of ſundrie accidents of loue. 37. m.
The nature of lightning. 44. m.
The violence of youth. ib.
A ſtorie of the French Embaſſadours loue. 45. m.
A faire womans entrailes. ibid.

Guz. *notably mocks by* Fabia. 48.m.
Hee is carryed away vpon the boores backe. 51.30.
A tale of a woman, slasht over the face. 56.1.
The effects of a lyer. 61.m.
Notable instructions for great men. 61.m.
Death's sentence, what a thing it is. 62.m.
Lessons for young gallants. ib.
None liue for ever. 63.m.
Man is but dust, and what kinde of dust. 64.m.
Guz. *a notable lyer.* 65.m.
How a wise man may turne foole. 66.m.
He is persecuted by boyes. ib.
Of deceit. 69.m.
All vse deceit, birds, beasts, &c. 70.m.
The qualities of a cnuning thiefe. ib.
Sayavedra's *plot to cozen* Guz. 71. *with the storie of it.* 72. *&c.*
Guz. *departs from the Embassadour, with an intent to travell.* 75.m.
Hee comes to Siena *to* Pompeyo, *and findes himselfe cozen'd.* 76.28.
One of the theeues taken. 77.20.
The effects of sorrow. ib.m.
A tale of a stout Iudge, and a foolish Attourney. 78 m.
Of the small punishment vpon theeues. 79. 80. *&c.*
Why banishment first invented. 80 m.
with the names of many famous men, that were banished. 80. 81. *&c.*
A just punishment on a little young thiefe. 81.m.
Phocion *and* Dyonisius. 85.m.
Of friends. 86.m.
Bookes are true friends. 87.m.
The earth our truest friend. ibid.
A feigned friend like an Eele. &c. 89.m.
Guz. *goes to* Florence. 90.m.
Hee meets with Sayavedra ib.
He takes him to be his servant. 91.m.
A discourse of Florence. 91.92.
He scoffes at the beggers in Florence. 94.
A tale of a roguish wench. 95.m.
Guz. *sells his horse, and is loath to leaue* Florence. 98.m.
A good discourse of Guzmans. 100.m.
Youth, what a thing. ibid.
Good intentions must haue good actions to follow. 101.m.
Guz. *goes to* Bologna. 103.m.
Hee findes Alexandro *wearing the cloathes, that hee had stolne from* Guzman. 104.m.
Truthes enemies. 106.m.
The weakest to the wall: a tale of an Alcalde. 107.m.
Guz. *clapt in prison. Might ouercomes right.* 108.m.
No good comes of going to law. 111.m.
Good counsell for those that goe to law. 112.m.
Of Alguazils, *and Serjeants.* 113.m.
Prisons and their keepers. 114.m.
A horrible sentence of a Iudge of Sevill. 116.m.
Guz. *released.* 118.
The nature of a stander by at gaming. 118.m.
Against needlesse curiositie. 119.
The effects of gaming. 120.m.
Guz. *meanes to venter all his money at play.* 121.m.
Cheating tricks vsed in gaming. 123.m.
Guz. *goes towards* Millayn. 124.36.
The condition of feare, and fearefull men. ib.m.
His crafty dealing. 125.m.
All seeke to make their best advantage. 126.m.
A short tale. ib.
Sayavedra's *life.* 128. *&c.*
A tale of a drunkard. 138.m.
The misery of souldiers. 140.40.
Theeuing full of trouble. 141.m.
A tale of three Countrey fellowes. 242.
Guz. *comes to* Millayn. 143.m.
Aguilera, *a famous thiefe.* 144.m.
The plot of robbing the Merchant of Millayn. 145. *&c.* 151.
The tale of the Asse; and the Legacies. 150.m.
The share the money. 159.m.
Guz. *plots a new deceit.* 160.m.
Of deferring repentance. 162.
Against the enemies of vertue. 162.m.
The thiefe, murmurer, hypocrite, dissembler. 163.m.
False witnes, with a tale of one. 164.m.
Of theeues, and who be braue theeues indeed. 165.m.

Guz.

Guz. *goes out of* Milayn. 168. m.
Good cloathes commend a man more then knowledge. ibid.
Guz. *arrives at* Genoa. 169. m.
Hee gives money to a Captaine, that was to be the needle to knit his net. 170. 20.
Hee thinkes how to revenge his kinsmen. 171. m.
Riches compared to fire. ibid.
Of Revenge. 176. m. 180. m.
A storie how a wronged Gentlewoman revenged an injurie done her. 176. m.
A tale of Fuctillos *the foole.* 177. m.
A tale of a miracle, wrought by forgiving an enemie. ib.
Guz. *goes about his plot to cozen his kinsmen at* Genoa. 183. m.
Of Marriage. 184. m.
Guz. *leaves* Genoa, *and carryes with him his kinsmens goods.* 190.
A tempest. 191. 120.
Sayavedra *falls sea-sicke, turnes mad and drownes himselfe.* 193. m.
A strange storie of a Merchant in Sevill. 194. m.
Guz. *lands at* Barçelona *in* Spaine. 209. 6.
Of Riches. 212. m.
How heaven gate is to be opened. 313. m.
How Guzman *fared, now being rich he goes out of* Barçelona. 213. m.
He comes to Saragosa. 214. m.
The Custome there concerning widowes. ibid.
Guzman *discourseth of women.* 215. m.
The statutes of Gotam Colledge. 217.
Guz. *walkes the streets by night, and is cozened by a wench.* 222. m.
How he was besmeared. 224. m.
The Spanish posture, when they court their Mistresse. 226. m.
Guzman *leaves* Saragosa, *and goes for* Madrid, *through* Alcala de Henares. 227. m.
At Madrid *he turnes gallant.* 228. m.
Hee makes love to a wench, and is cozen'd. 228. *&c.*
The inconvenience of Law-suites. 231. m
The fashion of Spanish queanes. ib.
A tale of a cunning queane. 232. m.
A tale of a Countrey Clowne. 233.
Another like it. ibid.
Of rapes. 236. m.
Guz. *buyes a house.* 237. m.
He alters the fashion of his iewels, and turnes Merchant. 238. *then marries.* 239. m.
His father-in-lawe's advice. 239. m.
He begins to sinke. 240. m. *is put in prison.* 241. *released.* 242. m.
Against fraudulent conveyances. ib.
Lessons for those that will marrie. 245. m.
Against the greedie desire of Riches. 248. m.
A merry tale by a preacher. 251. m.
Of good and bad women. 252. m.
Concerning marryage, and the severall ends leading to it. 256. *&c.*
Guzmans *wife dyes.* 264. m.
A tale of one that threw his wife over-boord. ibid.
Simonides *his coffers.* 266. m.
God is alwayes at hand to helpe vs. 267. m.
Guz. *as poore as* Iob. ibid.
A tale of a little boy. ibid.
Guz. *resolves to goe to the Vniversitie.* 268. m.
What ends divines should propose to themselves. 269.
An abuse about the rates of houses in Spaine, *set downe at large.* 270. m.
Guzman *his dyet, being a Scholler.* 274. m.
A tale of a student. 275. m.
How Schollers are cheated. 276. *&c.*
Guz. *his servants, when he was a single-man.* 278. 53.
The commendations of a Schollers life. 280. m.
Guz. *withdrawne from his studies, and how.* 282. m.
A discourse of Love. 287. m.
His happines. 291. m. *his miserable state.* 292. m.
A tale of a poore fellow, that loved to fare well. ibid.
Hee studies physicke. 293. m.
Women apt to take too much liberty. ibid.
Guz. *is driven to base courses.* ibid.
Wenches have better trading in the Court, then in the Vniversitie. 294. m.
A broaker insinuates himselfe into

Guzman *and his wifes acquaintance.* 296. m.
Whores like meale. 297. 37.
Hee ſhakes off the broaker, to entertaine a gallant. 299. m.
The Courtiers court his wife. 301. m.
A Iudge falls in lone with Guzmans *wife.* 302. m.
Of a Iudge giuen to wantonneſſe. 303. m.
Of a Iudge, a deſtroyer of Virgins. ib.
Guz. *imployed in commiſſion.* 304. m.
He is baniſhed from Madrid. 305. m.
A diſcourſe of thoſe, that make their wiues whores. 306. m.
Muſicke in a woman, a bewitching thing. 307. m.
Guz: *leaues* Madrid, *and comes to* Sevill. 308. m.
Of Ladyes little dogges. 308. 10.
He hath newes of his mother, they dwell together. 310. m.
Beauties frailty. ib.
A whores beſt Cuſtomers. 311.
Guzmans *wife, and his mother fall out.* 312. m. *His wife hates him, and leaues him.* ibid. *Hee ſells all and falls to ſtealing.* 313. m. *His mother and he part.* ibid.
Theeues cunning carriage. 314. m.
Guz: *ſells a Gentlewomans tyles off her houſe.* ibid.
He Picks a pocket. 315 m. *His craft in cozening a holy Preacher.* 316.
Cuſtome. 319. m.
His hypocriſie. 320. 30. *Entertain'd into ſervice by a gentlewomã.* 322. m. *lyes with her maid.* ibid. *Arreſted and carried to priſon.* 323. m.
What a priſon is. 325.
Of laylers, and priſon-keepers. ib.
The faſhion of Attourneys. &c. 326. m.
His wench writes a letter to him. 328.
He ſeekes to breake priſon, and is condemned to the Gallies during life. 330. m.
The condition of Galley-ſlaues. 331.
A tale of a Ruffian. ib. m.
Guzman *and the reſt delivered over to the Commiſſary.* 332. m. *they rob a man of his pigges.* 333. m. Guzman *dreſſeth his for the Commiſſary, and filcheth two fardells out of a travellers portmantua.* 334.
Soto (Guzmans *companion*) *hates him,* Guz. *cryes quit with him.* 335. m.
What Guzman *endured in the Gallyes.* 337. m.
A tale of a new Chriſtian, that had one of the inquiſition to his neighbour. 340. m.
Another to that effect. ib.
The exerciſe of Galley-ſlaues. 341. m.
Guzman *rob'd by them.* 342. m.
Their manner of being beaten. ibid.
He recovers his money againe. 343. m.
Guzmans *converſion.* 344. m.
Troubles, ſignes of Gods lone. 345. m.
A ſtory of a Painter. 346. m.
Guzman *in the Galley, ſerues the Captaines kinſman.* 347. 40.
Of Marriage. 349. m.
A tale of a man willing to be rid of his wife. 350. m.
A tale of Thruſhes. ibid.
Sotoe's *plot to diſgrace* Guz. 351. m.
How grievouſly Guzman *was beaten.* 353. 10. *and his great miſery. &c.* ib.
Guzman *ſet at liberty for diſcovering of* Sotoe's *plot againſt the Captaine, and* Soto *drawne in peeces.* 357

FINIS.

A Catalogue of the Proverbs, The firſt part.

pag. lin.

THrough too much haſte, I forgate to ſhut the doore. 1. 10.
Blond is by inheritance, but vice is adventitious. 5. 4.
Once a knaue, and ever a knaue: Nam qui eſt, ſemper præſumitur eſſe malus. 7. 6.
The pawne is already forfeited. 6. 35.
Their cloake is fallen from off their ſhoulders. 7. 54.
To ſpeake againſt this, is to crie out upon the wolfe, when there is none. to helpe me; to ſtop the Sunne in it's courſe, or to preach in the wilderneſſe. 7. 56.
Loaues goe aſide, if they be not well ſet into the oven. 15. 46.
Two is one, one none, and three roguerie. 25. 16.
A foole vnderſtands more in his owne, then a wiſe man in another mans houſe.

house. 25.39.
A guilty conscience carries evermore his beard vpon his shoulder, and is afraid of his owne shadowe. 48.51.
The skeane breakes there soonest, where the thred is finest. 54.40.
They smiled vpon him: but as dogges doe grin at waspes, they longed to haue a snap at him. 81.32.
The sonne of a widow is well fed, and ill taught. 104.32.
To fish with a pole is no certain rent. 107.1.
I began to vnbinde the booke, and to divide it into leaues. 111.39.
He that will revenge all wrongs, shall sooner end himselfe then them, he that will liue long must not be too short. 136.27.
I am too crafty a curre to be taken with this bone. ib.43.
They commend him, to make him let fall his cheese, and then laugh at him. 139.36.
The good-man is the last that knowes what things are amisse at home. 143.6.
If the wine be new the vessell will runne ouer. 153.26.
If thou mindest to be Pope thou must haue him writ in thy forehead. 153.49.
Counsell without a cure, is a body without a soule. 156.22.
As I finde you, so I take you. 156.48.
Vnder a thred bare cloake lyes many times much learning, and beggerly bottles oftentimes hold rich wines. ib.50.
An ape, though hee be clad in gold, will be an ape still. 157.36.
Every thing there smelt of broomes, and the soles of old shooes. 165.51.
I enlarged my hand like a Prince, as if I had for every Tuesday a new paire of eares. 170.24.
He is often cast behind that is first in the saddle. 173.23.
As a man brewes so let him bake. 173.56.
The crow cannot be blacker then his wings. 188.41.
Happy is that sonne whose father goes to hell. 211.14.
Too much couetousnesse makes the bagge to breake. 214.46.
The more honour a man hath the more hee desires. 228.7.
Let every man betake himselfe to that, wherein hee hath beene train'd, and bred vp. 228.10.
Like with like doth well, let every man meddle with his match. 236.52.
Hee that feares death doth not enjoy life. 238.30.
Where the wedge nought prevailes, we must make vse of our nailes. 239.41.
I brewed ill, and baked worse. 248.51.
Thinking to goe forth to fetch wooll, I was faine to come home with my fleece shorne. 254.28.

The second part.

It is a thousand pitties that all sackes should be alike. 2.19.
Hee that made thee rich made thee likewise to open thy beake, that then thou mightest be ready to receiue a blessing. 3.17.
It stands with good reason, that a light mother should breed a loose daughter; and if shee loue to haue her traine plaid withall, that her daughter will proue a wagtaile. 20.13.
Ill is that ill that neuer can be good. 20.34
There may well be suspition where deedes make confession. 21.28.
There is no scourge of wit or learning can lash a wantō louer out of his lust. 21.48
He recals himselfe in time that returnes at last. 29.1.
The mouth that will be filled with laughter must not haue its belly empty. 33.30
We were not so blinde, that wee could not see through the holes of a fine. 45.26.
A man may be deceiued when he thinkes himselfe most sure. 45.39.
All the fat was in the fire. 49.44.
Out of the frying pan into the fire. 49.47.
They caught mee with my fingers in the creame-pot. ib.52.
I made a wedge out of the same peece of wood.
By different wayes we hapned to meete at one and the same place. 57.17.22.
I brake my legge, and it may be it was all for the best. 58.3.
The deuils clouen foote brake out at his shooe. 65.36.
He is an vnwelcome guest that is a mans guest against his will. 89.36.
The sonne of a cat will kill a rat, eat to his kinde. 94.17.
There is no yron so foule, that will not be guilded. 95.44.
What is newest, that we still like best 98.20.

Hath

How heauy is the heart when the purse is light. 99.29.

Pull from your heape and put nothing to it:
You, or your heape, if not both, may rue it. 102. 25.

One bird in the hand is better then two in the bush; and a bad accord is better then a good plea. 105.28.

I went away with the wrong & the blowes too; first made Cuckold, and then knockt for my prating. 107.47.

Those jests are vnsavoury that turne to a mans hurt, it is no sporting with edg-tooles. 112.17.

Let vs suppe well, or else goe to bed with a jarre of water; either be a man or a mouse. 121.36

Let vs either hang together for company, or else let vs haue our dinners serued in with trumpets; let vs dye like dogs or liue like men. 128.1.

All moneths are alike, euery one hath 30. dayes and no more. ib.6.

In the darke all cats are blacke, and Ioane is as faire as my Lady. ib.8.

One wolfe will not bite another. ib.13.

The fearefull man neuer makes good surgeon. 133.30.

Let no man thinke to chewe his meat on both sides his chaps at once. 135. 26.

They will haue the bread and the meate too. ib.37.

That merchant that vnderstands not his trade let him shut vp his shop. 142.47.

A crooked cucumber neuer made straight rafter; hee that is naturally giuen to knauery will hardly or neuer leaue it. 145.27.

Thinkest thou to saue thine owne fingers frō burning: to take the cat by the foot and therewith to rake the coales out of the ouen. 167.3.

He that sowes well reapes well. 170.30.

The more fire the more heat. 171.48.

The wolfe is in the midst of our flockes. 175.8.

The hare oftentimes starts out of that bush where wee did least dreame of her sitting. 176.13.

Hee does ill to sleepe that hath an enemy. 179.30.

The time of my reckoning was now neere at hand if not past, my nine moneths was fully expired. 180.55.

Into an Inne bring nothing in. 184.8.

Now the sop is falne into the hony-pot. 201.24.

The deuill neuer yet made that pye whereof himselfe did not eat the greatest part. 205.34.

They crept to their beds as a cat doth vp a wall, vpon all foure. 206.8.

Here to day, and to morrow in France. 214.4.

That apple is in great danger that stickes on the prickles of an hedge-hog. 213.5.

I was resolued to let flye another arrow, to see if I could finde the former that I had lost. 214.43.

Where there's neuer a white apron, ther's no good order, the meat ill drest, and the table sluttish. 216.10.

A paire of sleeues will not doe amisse after Easter. 223.34.

The flesh needed not to haue hung vpon the hookes for want of a cat. 227.27.

It was no discretion to forgoe the Sea for a riuer. 228.7.

Match thy daughter with thy neighbours sonne. 238.53.

Birds of a feather will still flocke together. 239.6.

No man knowes (saue who by proofe doth tast)
What a good house, and a bad wife doth wast. 240.45.

To beare a good burden, a man had need haue a good backe. 245.34.

Hee that buyes that hee needes not, must sell those things hee hath neede of. 245.45.

A wise man will goe further with a peny, then a foole will with a pound. 252.4.

Doe well for other, yet looke to thy selfe. 266.26.

You must not change bridles lest you spoile the horses mouthes. Euery horse must haue his owne bitt: what need a continent man to marry, or a lasciuious wanton be made a Priest. 270.2.

Hee that is not blest with a mother-in-law knowes not what a blessing hee wants. 291.11.

No man so great an enemy vnto thee as he that is on thine owne trade. 293.6.

Men must sell according to the season. 298.25.

Better is stale bread then none at all. ib.55.

No kingdome will admit of two heads, neither will two birds make their nests together in one hole. 299.25.
Hee tooke a wrong sowe by the eare. 305.36.
Two white kercheifes in one kitchin never yet made good sire. 318.18.
Like Midsommer raine, which quites all prosit and yelds no gaine. 311.5.
Three soules in one dish, and a blackhead cast out in soppes. 322.17.
Better be alone then ill accompanied. 312.53.
S. Iohn and Corpus Christi happened to come both in one day, both ends were now met together. 323.28.
By the Vespers we come to know the feasts of the Saints. 341.11.

FINIS.

---Hic quoque talia ponas,
Quæ tibi si obserues, occurrant multa legenti.

An Alphabeticall Table of the chiefest things. The first figure shewes which part, the second what page, the third what line. &c.

A

Afflictions come from God. 1.21.m.
They are signes of Gods loue. 2.345.
Alguasils. 2.113.m.
Almesdeeds and their effects, and the manner of giuing. 1.217.&c.
Angers effects. 1.117.1.1.189.m.
Alterations in the world. 1.60.m.
Apothecaries falshood. 1.128.m.
Attorneyes & lawyers falshood. 1.127.m.
Their trickes. 2.326.m.

B

Banishmēt why ordain'd, with the names of many famous mē banished. 2.80.81.&c.
Bankrupture a tricke vsed of some merchants. 1.7.
A bawds conditions. 1.15.m.
Beauties frailty. 2.310.m.
Beggers, their lawes. 1.193.198.
Their fashion in begging. 1.202.
Their priuiledges. 1.205.m.
Why it grieues a man to begge. ib.
Bookes are true friends. 2.87.m.

C

Charity of what force. 1.243.m.
The effects of it. 1.242.m.
Clergy man charitably reproued. 1.118.
Cloathes commend a man better thē knowledge. 2.168.m.
Cookes knauery and their trophees. 1.143.20.
Good Companies effects. 1.107.m.
Bad Company is the author of ill. 1.142.m.1.250.m.
Consciences. 1.209.
Good lessons for them. 1.211.m.
A guilty Conscience. 1.48.m.
Content gone out of the world. 1.59.46.
Curiosity. 2.119.m.
Custome. 2.319.m.

D

Deaths sentence what a thing it is. 2.62.m.
Of Deceiuing and lying. 2.23.m.
Foure wayes of deceiuing. 2.24.m.
Deceit. 2.69.m.
All things vse deceit. 2.70.m.
Detractours. 1.3.16.
Detraction. 1.214.3.
A Discourse of a Preacher against Notaries. 1.8. *Of pardoning injuries.* 1.40.m. *On Matth.* 5.16. 1.118.m. *Of many good things.* 2.100.m. *Of Florence.* 2.98.m. *Of women.* 2.215.m. *Of loue.* 2.287.m. *Of those that prostitute their wiues.* 2.306.m.
The Dissembler. 2.163.m.
Diuines what ends they should propose to themselues. 2.269.m.
Dyet and drinking must be orderly and moderate. 1.151.m.
A lesson for Churchmen against Drinking. 1.152.10.

E

Earth our truest friend. 2.87.m.
Enemies of vertue. 2.162.m.
Enemies of a faire woman. 2.45.m.
Every one for himselfe, or every one seeks his owne aduantage. 2.126.m.
Every one loues his owne. 1.206.m.

F

Falsenesse, with a tale of a false witnesse. 2.164.m.
Falshood in many trades. 1.127.&c.

Feare what a thing. 1.238.m.
Of Feare and Feareſull men. 2.124.m.
The nature of Flatterers. 1.183.1.
Why favourd by great Lords. 2.10.m.
Fortune how deciphered. 1.149 m.
Florence. 2.91.92.m.
Of Friends. 2.86.m.
Who be trueſt friends. 2.87.m.
A faigned Friend like an Eele. 2.89.m.
Fraudulent conueyances. 2.242.m.
Of the rewarding of Fooles. 2.15.m.

G

Gaming hurtfull. 1.131.m.
All vices in a Gameſter. ibid.
Gaming onely for recreation. 1.246.m.
The effects of Gaming. 2.120.m.
Cheating trickes in Gaming. 2.123.m.
The nature of ſtanders by at Gaming. 2.118.m.
Gally-ſlaues, their condition. 2.331. m. *Their exerciſe.* 2.341.m. *Their manner of being beaten.* 2.342.m.
Gods great goodneſſe. 1.219.m.
God is alwaies at hand to helpe vs. 2.267.m.
Goodneſſe, what like too. 1.131.m.
Gotham Colledge lawes. 2.217.
Bad Gouernours. 1.33.1.
Great Lords and Gentlemens miſerie. 1.130.m.

H

Heauen how to be opened. 2.213.m.
The Hyena's qualities 1.1.24.
Honour, 1.113.m.114.115.
Chriſtian honour what it ought to be. 1.114.m.
Honour what a thing. 1. 122. m. *How troubleſome.* 1.126.m.
Hoſpitalities lawes. 1.251.1.
The roguery of an Hoſteſſe. 1.31.m.
Hoſtlers, their knauery. 1.109.
Hunger. 1.29.40.
The Hypocrite. 2.163.m.

I

Iailers and priſon keepers. 2.325.m.
Idleneſſe. 1.142.m.
Injuries to be pardoned. 1.40.m.
Things neceſſary for a Ieſter. 2.11.m.
Inne-keepers knauery. 1.50.1.
Iudges bad. 1.9.50.
A ſtout Iudge and a fooliſh Atturney. 2.78.m.
A horrible ſentence of a Iudge of Scuill. 2.116.m.
A ſaying of a Country fellow concerning Iuſtice.. 1.11.23.
Good Intentions muſt haue good actions to follow. 2.101.m.

K

A Kings condition and his hieroglipick. 1.138.m.
The Knauery of Kitchin-boys. 1.135.10. *Cookes.* 1.143.20. *Innekeepers.* 1.50.1. *An Hoſteſſe.* 1.31.m. *Hoſtlers.* 1.109.

L

Of Ladies little dogges. 2.308.10.
Laughter. 1.36.m. 1.38.m.
Leſſons Morall. 1.61.m. *For thoſe that deſire to liue well.* 1.121.m. *For poore, rich, and maſters of families.* 1.130.m. *For Church-men againſt drinking.* 1.152.10. *For our Conſciences.* 1.210. m. *For widowes, & parents.* 2.20.m. *For great men.* 2.61.m. *For yong gallants.* 2.62.m. *For thoſe that goe to Law.* 2.112.m. *For thoſe that will marry.* 2.245.m.
No good of going to lawe. 2.111.m.
The inconvenience of law-ſuits. 2.231.m.
Liberty. 1.125.m. 1.129.m.
Of Lying and truth. 1.224.m.
Lying and deceiuing. 2.23.m.
A Lyers effects. 2.61.m.
Lightning. 2.44.m.
Mans Life, what it is. 1.57.m.
True Loue. 1.21. m. *The difference betweene loue, friendſhip and goodwill.* ib.
Of Loue. 2.18.m. 2.287.m.
Loue hardly removed. 2.21.m.

M

Man bound to be vertuous. 1. 119. m.
Man but duſt, and which kind. 2.64.m.
Marriage. 2.184.m.
Leſſons for thē that will Marry. 2.245.m
Marriage, and the ends leading to it. 2.256. *&c.*
Of Marriage. 2.349.m.
Misfortunes ſeldome come alone. 1.29.m
Modeſty. 1.238.m.
Might ouercomes right. 2.108.m.
The Murmurer. 2.163.m.
Muſicke in a women a bewitching thing. 2.307.m.

N

Notaries. 1.8. *their falſhood.* 1.127.
Neceſſitie two-fold. 1.119.m.
Nouelties pleaſe woman. 1.16.m.
None liue for ever. 2.63 m.

O

Of buying Offices. 1.9.40.

The INDEX.

Officers good and bad. 1.120.m.
How light may be in them that beare Offices. 1.119.m.
Old age necessary yet not regarded. 2.28.m.
Old men and women. 2.27.m.

P

Pages. 1.228.m.
Of Painting. 1.12.25.
A Physitian hath three faces. 1.37.m.
Phocion *and* Dyonisius. 2.84.m.
The difference betweene the rich and the Poore Master. 1.18.m.
It is Poore mens ruine to keepe places of pleasure. 1.25.m.
The poore may liue happily. 1.26.m.
The Poore mans epithets. 1.183.m.
Poore men dye of surfeits, rich men of hunger. 1.29.m.
Lessons for the poore. 1.139.m.
Porters talke of state matters. 1.152.m.
Pride. 1.175.15. *Proud fellowes.* 2.26.m.
Why Preachers reprone not sin. 1.121.m.
Printers. 2.27.m.
Prisons and their keepers. 2.114.m.
Prison keepers and Iaylers. 2.325.m.

Q

Queanes. 231.m. *They haue better trading in the Court, then in the Vniversity.* 2.294.m.

R

Of Rapes. 2.236.m.
Repentance not to be deferred. 2.162.
Of Reuenge. 2.176.m. 2.180.m.
Of Riches. 2.212.m.
Rich men dye of hunger, and poore men of surfets. 1.23.m.
Rich men like whales. 1.34.m.
The condition of the Rich. 1.184.m.
Riches like Sugar. 1.171.m.
Against the greedy desire of Riches. 2.248.m.
Lessons for the Rich. 1.139.m.
Right breedes courage. 1.53.m.

S

Scandalous persons what like to. 1.135.
A Schollers life commended. 2.280.m.
How they are cheated. 2.276.m.
Of talking Schollers. 2.27.m.
A bad man-servant, and maid-servant described. 1.126.m.
Sergeants, catchpoles. 1.62. | 2.113.m.
Shamfastnesse 1.104.105.m.
To be ashamed out of modesty cometh hurt. ibid.
Selfe-will hurteth young men. 1.248.m.
Simonides his coffers. 2.266.m.
Sin how she vseth her followers. ibid.
Sleepe cracks care. 1.30.m.
Sorrowes effects. 2.77.m.
The Spaniards fashion of admiring. 1.49.m.
The Spaniards posture in courting their Mistresse. 2.226.m.
The misery of Souldiers. 2.140.40.
Stationers. 2.27.m.
Swaggerers. ibid.
Bad Surgeons. 1.220.m.

T

Tale bearers. 2.5.5.
Of telling the Truth. 1.2.34.
A Tempest. 2.191.20.
A Thiefes qualities. 2.70.m.
Their small Punishment. 2.79.80.
Theeuing. 2.141.m.
The Theefe. 2.163.m.
Who are braue Theeues. 2.165.m.
Theeues cunning carriage. 2.314.m.
All things haue their time. 1.223.
Of Thinking and doing. 1.106.m.
Truth and lying. 1.224.m.
Truthes enemies. 2.106.m.
Time weares away. 1.22.34.
Twenty yeares old is a terrible beast. 2.100.38.

V

Vsurers. 1.5.22.
Vertues enemies spoken against. 2.168.m.

W

Want and its effects. 1.104.1.
Want and honesty can hardly stand together. 2.100.m.
Of Women. 2.215.m.
Women loue to be looks on. 1.15.m.
They are pleased with nouelties. 1.16.m.
Of good and bad Women. 2.252.m.
Women not to take too much liberty. 2.293.m.
a faire Womans enemies. 2.45.m.
Whores are like meale. 2.297.37.
How a Wise man may turne foole. 2.66.m
Wisedome better then Riches. 1.149.
No Writer can please all. 2.7.m.

Y

Young Folke. 2.28.m.
Youths violence. 2.44.m.
Youth what a thing. 2.100.m.

A Cata-

A Catalogue of all the Tales.

The first Part.

A Tale of a Gentleman that had two horses painted. 2.34.l.
A strange monster. 13.25.
A tale of a Mountanese. 1.30.m.
A tale of an ignorant Phisitian. ibid.
Of a Phisitian loving money too well. 37 m
A tricke put upon an Hostesse. 37.m.
A tale of a Country fellowe. 46.m.
A morall fable of the gods of old time. 57.m.
A tale of a miserly gentleman. 140.m.
The Story of Ozmin & Daraxa. 64. &c.
Of Pantalon the begger. 211.m.
A story of truth and of Lying. 224.
A tale of modesty. 338.m.
A tale of an Englishman. 252.m.
A tale of a Spaniard. 253.m.
The Story of Dorido, and Clorinia. 255. &c.

The second Part.

A tale of a couetous Spaniard. 6. m.
A tale of a Nobleman giuen to lying. 14.m.
The answer of a foole to a great Prince. ib.
A tale of a Cryer. 17.m.
A tale of a Doctor of Salamanca. ibid.
A tale of a Scholler of Alcala. 24. m.
A tale of the Prince of Italy and a Poet. 26.m.
A tale of Iupiter, the Asse, the Dog, the Ape, and man. 28. &c.
A tale of two Gentlemen that dined with the French Embassadour. 32.m.
A tale of sundry accidents of love. 37.
A Story of the French Embassadors loue. 45.m.
A tale of a woman slasht ouer the face. 56.m.
A tale of a stout Iudge, and a fooliſh Attorney. 78.m.
A tale of a roguish wench. 95.
A tale of an Alcalde. 107.m.
A tale of a drunkard. 138.m.
A tale of three Country fellowes. 142.m.
A tale of the Asse and his Legacies. 150.
A tale of a false witnesse. 164.m.
A story how a wronged Gentlewoman reuenged an injury done her. 176. m.
A tale of Fuctillos the foole. 177.m.
Another of a miracle wrought by forgiuing an enimy. ibid.
A strange story of a Merchant in Seuill. 194.m.
A tale of a cunning queane. 232.m.
A tale of a Country clowne. 233.
Another like it. ibid.
A merry tale by a Preacher. 251.m.
A tale of a man, that threw his wife ouerboord. 264.
A tale of a little boy. 267.m.
A tale of a Student. 275.m.
A tale of a Iudge giuen to wantonnesse. 303.m. Of a Iudge a deflowrer of Virgins. ibid.
A tale of a Ruffian. 331.
A tale of a new Christian, that had one of the inquisition to his neighbour. 340.m
Another to that effect. ibid.
A story of a painter. 346.m.
A tale of a man willing to be rid of his wife. 350.m.

FINIS.

Hic teneat nostras anchora jacta rates

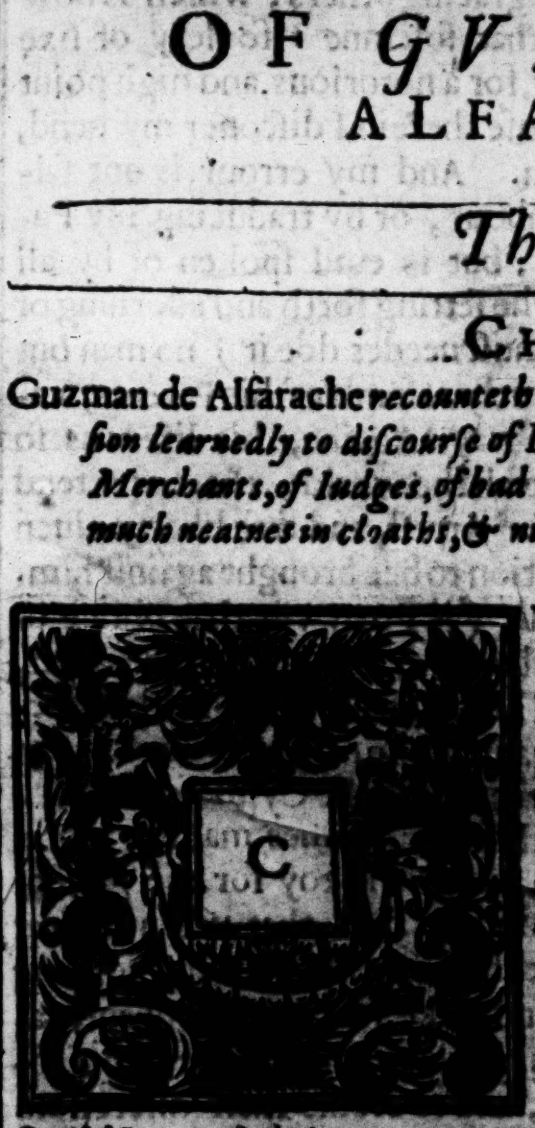
R. S.

THE ROGVE:
OR,
THE FIRST
PART OF THE LIFE
OF *GVZMAN* DE
ALFARACHE.

The first Booke.

CHAPTER I.

Guzman de Alfarache *reconnteth who was his Father, and thereupon takes occasion learnedly to discourse of Detractors, and evill speakers, of unconscionable Merchants, of Iudges, of bad Clerkes, of Lites, and Litigants, and that too much neatnes in cloaths, & nice dressing is ill in a Woman, & worse in a Man.*



VVIous Reader, The desire which I had to recount my life vnto thee, made me make great haste to ingulfe my selfe therein, without first preparing some things fit to be related, which (forming as an induction and entrance to the matter) had been very needfull for the better informing of thy vnderstanding of for being essentiall to this Discourse) they would happily haue giuen thee no small contento. But through too much haste, I forgot to shut the doore after mee; and so vnawares haue left the way of entrance open for euery wrangling Sophister, and smatterer in Logicke, to taxe me of ignorance, and so lay vnto my fault to my charge, that I did not proceede *à definitione ad definitum*, from the definition, to the thing defined. And that before I tooke vpon me to make declaration thereof, I had not first told thee, who, and whence my Parents, together with their obscure and confused birth, which forbiddeth for to manifest as farre as concerneth them in their particulars, according to their condition and proportion in their kinde and degree, would without doubt (had I been willing taken to describe it vnto you) haue bin farre more profitable vnto you, then this mine owne life. I will rather [illegible] most importance, leaning that which is [illegible] for that take, and to play out that triall of Cards for [illegible] it becommeth no man to participate of that prepared for [illegible] a liuing by ripping vp the liues of the dead, as [illegible]

by feeding on thoſe carkaſes which ſhee teares out of graues; I aſſure my ſelfe, conſidering the Cenſurers that are now adayes to bee fonnd in the world, they will not want thoſe that will write their *Chronicle*. Nor is it a thing to bee wondred at, ſince this ſlight ſhadowing of my Fathers life, ſeemeth to inferre, that I pare them too neere the quicke, or at leaſt, that there went but one paire of ſheeres betweene their liues, and mine. And I doubt not, but thou wilt out with thy purſe, and giue mee a thouſand raſh Attributes; the leaſt whereof ſhall bee either Foole, or Block-head, or Coxcombe, or the like. For if I cannot conceale mine owne faults, you will ſay, I will make no bones to bewray others. Thy reaſon is good, and I allow of it; but I would haue thee withall to conſider, That albeit thou wilt count mee but a lewde [a] Companion, yet I would not willingly ſeeme ſo to bee, though it bee farre worſe to bee ſo, and to make boaſt of wickedneſſe. And that by contradicting ſo juſt a Precept, as is that fifth Commandement, touching the honour and reverence which I owe them, I ſhould goe about to couer mine owne weakeneſſes, by laying open thoſe of my Anceſtors. For, it is the birth of vile and baſe [b] thoughts, to ſeeke to grace themſelues by diſgracing others, which is now an ordinary practice, which I condemne for that ſolemne [c] foolery of ſixe Priests Copes, or double-Feaſts; that is to ſay, for a notorious, and high point of folly. And a greater there cannot bee, becauſe therein I diſcouer my bend, and ſhew which way the dint of my edge lyeth. And my errour is not ſalved, by wounding the good name of my neighbour, or by traducing my Parent. Beſides, the Detractor neuer heareth well, but is euill ſpoken of by all men. But to mee it doth ſucceede ſo; for in the ſetting forth and adorning of this Hiſtory, (it being neceſſary that my ſelfe muſt needes doe it) no man but will ſay, Gods bleſſing be with him, that ſo truely reſembles his Parents, caſting vpon mee theſe their good wiſhes by the way. Againe, his life was ſo well knowne, and all that he did, ſo manifeſt to all the world, that to pretend the denying of it, were meere folly, and an open [d] Arreſt, and free liberty giuen for the occaſioning of new matter of murmuration to bee brought againſt him. And therefore I am perſwaded, that I doe them (if I may vſe that phraſe of ſpeech) a notorious courteſie, in expreſſing the pure, and true naked Text, wherewith I will giue the lye to thoſe gloſſes, which haue beene made thereupon. For as often as any one mentioneth any thing of him, or recounts ought of his, he addes thereunto, and multiplyes it with the Cyphers, which are ſet to his owne Spectacles, or as it pleaſeth him; ſometimes making more, but neuer leſſe, as the vaine comes vpon him, and as the toy for the preſent takes him in the head. For there is a certaine kinde of men, that when matter is offered ſuting to their purpoſe, for to make their tale ſquare, and to hang well together, will leſſen a *Pyramis* of *Egypt*, and make a Gnat an Elephant, gather evidence from ſurmiſes; ſight from hearing; and knowledge from opinion, onely for to flouriſh their eloquence, and to credit their diſcretion. Thus it vſually falleth out, and this was to be ſeene in a Gentleman a Stranger, whom my ſelfe knew in *Madrid*: Who being much affectioned to Spaniſh Horſes, and deſirous to carry home with him to his owne Countrey, a true and faithfull Counterfeit, as well for his owne entertainment and delight, as that he might ſhew the ſame to his friends. And for that hee was of a Nation farre remote, and it being neither permitted, nor poſſible for him to carry them home aliue, hauing in his owne ſtable two of the faireſt of ſtature, and feature, that were to bee found in all the Court: hee intreated two famous Painters, that each of them would draw one, as they ſhould agree vpon their choiſe; promiſing (beſides their due) a certaine reward to him that ſhould ſurpaſſe the other in workemanſhip. The one painted a py'd Horſe, with that

(a) *It is worſe to be bad, then to be thought ſo.*

(b) *What minde is that which is baſe.*

(c) *In your great ſolemne feaſts in Spaine, they vſe to haue ſeuen, & in ſome places eight Prebends with Scepters of ſiluer in their hands, and Copes of cloath of golde on their backes, when they aſſiſt at diuine ſeruice, & ſinging of Anthemes. From which metaphor this phraſe is borrowed.*

(d) Arreſto, *is a French word: but becauſe it is Spaniolized, I ſay,* Arreſto, *is as much as a Decree, or Sentence confirmed in the Supreme Counſell, from which there is no Appeale. So ſayes* Caſaneus *in his* Catol. gloriæ Mundi. Arreſtum firmum, & fixum, à quo nemo provocare poſſit. *And it is a Greeke word* ἀρεστὸν, placitum, gratum, æquum. *That it is pronounced with a double rr: the reaſon is, for that the French is a Virile tongue.* Reſto conſignado, *is the ſet reſt agreed vpon at Primero, which they may not paſſe. But ingire à reſto, abierto vale, ſin taſſa, without limitation, when a man may ſet what he will: The Reader may take which ſenſe he beſt liketh.*

perfection

perfection, that he onely failed in that, which was impoſſible for him to doe, to wit, in giuing him life, and ſoule. For, in the reſt (deceiuing the ſight, becauſe it did little, or nothing at all differ from the naturall) it would on the ſudden haue blinded any careleſſe eye, & at the firſt bluſh amazed his vnderſtāding, for that there was no difference betweene a liuing Horſe and it. With this onely did he fill and finiſh his Table, giuing in the reſt Lights & ſhadowes, as might ſute beſt with each ſeuerall part.

The other drew a Dapple-gray (that heauen-reſembling colour) and though his worke were very good, yet it came very ſhort of that before deliuered; yet in one thing, he went much beyond him, wherein hee ſhew'd himſelfe his craftſ-maſter. And it was this: when he had painted his Horſe, in thoſe other parts of the Table, where he found blankes, or void places, in thoſe that were vppermoſt, hee drew admirable Land-skips, and other repreſentations of things afarre off, as clouds in the ayre, ſtreakes in the ſky, and other fiery colours of the heauens, occaſioned by the reflexe of the Sun-ſetting beames, ruinated buildings, and other diverſitie of rare Architecture. And on the lower part, neereſt to the ground, hee had graced his worke with many [illegible], dainty Flowres, greene Meddowes, and craggy Rockes. And on the one ſide of the Table, that made fitteſt for that purpoſe, he had faſtned all the furniture, belonging to his Horſe, to the body of a Tree, at the foot whereof ſtood a Saddle, Gennet-faſhion, ſo coſtly, and ſo curiouſly wrought, and with that excellencie of Art, as it cannot be in-deered too much, or expreſſed to that life it deſerueth.

When this Gentleman ſaw his Tables, and liking them wonderfull well (as he had reaſon ſo to doe) he firſt payde him, with whom he had firſt agreed, and not ſticking vpon that which he demanded for it, giuing in reward to that ingenious Painter, a rich ring from off his finger, he ſent him away well ſatiſfied, hauing paide him ouer and aboue the price for which they bargained.

Now the other grew ſo fondly conceited, and ſo fooliſhly in loue with his own worke, and was ſo vainely tranſported with hope of a liberall and franke payment, that he required ſuch an exceſſiue price, as was beyond all reaſon.

The Gentleman, being ſtrooken blanke, and put to a *non-plus*, that hee ſhould aske him ſo much, and that he had ſcarce wherewithall to pay him, ſaid vnto him; Tell me (my friend) why ſhouldſt thou aske me ſo much; or why doeſt thou not conſider with thy ſelfe what this other piece coſt me, wherevnto thine cannot be compared, nor comes nothing neere it? For the Horſe (indeede Sir, anſwered the Painter) your Worſhip ſpeakes reaſon. But the very trees, & ruines, that are in mine, are worth as much as all the others worke. To whom the Gentleman replyde; It is neither fitting, nor neceſſary for mee to carry home with mee ſuch a volume of trees; ſuch a bulke of ill combined buildings, and ſuch a deale of lumber and luggage as is heere; when wee haue many faire and goodly houſes in our owne Countrey. Beſides, I haue not that affection to theſe toyes, as I haue vnto Horſes. And that which I cannot otherwiſe enjoy but by picture, that alone I deſire to carry along with mee.

The Painter againe made anſwere; In ſo great and large a piece, a ſole ſingle Horſe will not ſhew ſo well. And if for nothing elſe, yet at leaſt for the delight of the Eye, and the gracing of the Square, it not onely inforceth a Painter, but euen inforceth him ſometimes to compoſe a Picture of other different things, beſides the Maſter-piece, that may qualifie it the better, and giue it the more delicate luſtre. So that this ſeeming fairer to the ſight, and preſenting it ſelfe with that pleaſure as it doth, you will graunt mee this, I hope; That it is very fit, that a Horſe ſhould haue his bridle, and his ſaddle, together with his trappings, and all other things belonging to a perfect and compleat furniture; eſpecially being ſo curiouſly wrought, with ſo cleane a hand, and

ſuch exquiſite Art, that if you would giue me other ſuch as theſe, though they were all of Gold, I would not take them in exchange for thoſe that you ſee heere drawne. The Gentleman having now found a ſtring whereupon to play, and caught hold of that, which hee moſt deſired, which was the Picture, that he had already paid for (the other eſteeming impertinent, though in it's kinde very good, and much to be commended) and not finding himſelfe ſo ouer-ſtored with money, as to part with ſo much as hee required, diſcreetly ſaid vnto him; I onely bargain'd with you for the Horſe, and (for that the worke is good, and well wrought) I will (if you be pleaſed to ſell it mee) pay you accordingly. As for the furniture, you may keepe it to your ſelfe, or beſtow it vpon thoſe that haue a minde to it, for I haue no need of it. The Painter went away diſcontented, and vnpaide, by reaſon of the exceſſiue rates hee had ſet vpon his Picture; and for that out of his owne, hee had wilfully ouerlaſhed his diſcretion, thinking with himſelfe, that becauſe his Worke was more, hee ſhould be the more rewarded.

He that doth that which hee ought not, that happens to him which hee thinke not.

The effects of Detractors.

It hath beene (and ſtill is) a common and generall cuſtome amongſt men, when you intreat them to recite what they know in this, or that other thing; or to report what they haue heard, or ſeene; or to tell you the truth and ſubſtance of a buſineſſe, to prepare colours to ſlicke it ouer, and to paint and diſguize it, that you can no more know the face of it, then the countenance of an olde Hagge, that is plaiſtred over with painting. Euery one giues his ſhadowings after his owne fancie: one while amplifying; another while moving paſſion; ſometimes diſanulling, and ſometimes diverting, as the humour takes him. Now hee ſtretcheth it with his teeth, that hee may make the Leather retch: By and by againe, he fileth and poliſheth it, till he haue made it fit for his purpoſe, that he may cut and graue therein what he liſt; putting it an Ace, or a Sice higher, if it pleaſe him ſo to doe. Making, like another *Count* * *Palatine*, a Foole, a Wiſeman; a filthy-fac'd fellow, a beautifull perſon; and a Cowardly Villaine, a valiant *Hercules*. They ſet the Caract and worth vpon things, as they pleaſe to value them; not remembring that they may paint a Horſe well inough, though they leaue him bare-ridged, and without his furniture; and report a thing true inough to the life, without commenting vpon it. Iuſt ſo hath it fared with my father, of whom (to ſpeake the truth) things are ſo falſified, that nothing is now ſaid of him, which was ſo indeede. They haue (with *Celeſtine*) of *tres* made *treze*; of three, thirteene; and of thirteene, three hundred. For euery one thinkes it fit to adde ſomewhat: ſo that Mole-hils are growne to bee Mountaines, and ſuch a confuſed *Chaos*, and *rapſodie* of things huddled one on the necke of another, that there is no bottome of them, nor can there any ground for them be found: euery one incouraging himſelfe by the additions of others, (one growing ſtill vpon another.) And that wrong which euery particular perſon in himſelfe was not able to doe, by a generall helping hand, and common conſent of all men, is become more grievous. There are ſome deceitfull and falſe tongues, which, like ſharpe-headed Arrowes, and hot burning Coales, haue gone about to wound the honour, and conſume to aſhes the good name of my Parents; whence both to them, and my ſelfe, divers notable affronts doe dayly redound. It is to bee imagined, and you may very well beleeue mee, that if it lay in our hands to make our owne choiſe (but beggers muſt bee no chooſers) out of that maſſe of *Adam*, and firſt lumpe of fleſh, I would haue ſcrambled hard for one of the beſt morſels, though I had beene forced to goe to Cuffes for it: But there is no helpe for that; Euery man muſt bee content with that which fals to his lot: wee may not be our owne Carvers. But ſince he that hath ſhared theſe things amongſt vs, keepes them in his owne hands, and knowes when and where to beſtow them, and what is fitteſt for euery man, let vs praiſe his holy Name. For though I had (God be thanked for it) my [a] haltings, though I had naturall

* *The Count Palatine anciently in Rome, had power and priviledge to legitimate Baſtards, to giue degrees, and Titles of honour in learning, or otherwiſe.* Vide Conarruvias in Vocabulo Palatino.

(a) *Alluding to Iacobs halting.*

defects,

defects, though I were not without my ſpots and blemiſhes, yet was I ſo fauoured by Fortune, that I was nobly borne; and that they lighted vpon a man innobled in his blood, both by father and mother. *La ſangue ſe hereda, y el vicio ſe apega*, Bloud is by inheritance, but Vice is adventitious, yet cleaueth cloſer then the other, when it once takes hold of vs. Hee that ſhall be, what hee ought to be, ſhall be accordingly rewarded, but ſhall not purge away the faults of his Parents.

First of all then, I ſhall giue you to vnderſtand, That my father, and his Kinred, were a certaine kinde of vpſtart Gentlemen, that came out of the (*a*) *Leuant*, who hauing no certaine abiding, came at length to reſide, and ſettle in *Genoa*; where they were ingrafted into the Nobilitie, and had many large and goodly Priuiledges granted vnto them. And although they were not Naturals of that place, yet we ſhall here put them vnder that ſtile, as if they had beene borne there. His Trafficke and income, whereby hee maintained himſelfe, was according to the common cuſtome of that Country, the which, for our ſinnes ſake, is growne now into ours; which infection of late, hath ſpred it ſelfe thorow the world, to wit, Vſury, Money-banke[illegible] profitable Exchange of golde and ſilver. Even for this was hee perſecuted [illegible]iled, defaming him with that foule name of Vſurer. Many times he hi[illegible] heard that reprochfull word as hee paſt along the ſtreets, it could not eſcape his eare, yet he was of that good nature, and gentle condition, that hee tooke no notice of it, but ſlightly paſt it over. For which, they had no reaſon ſo to doe, ſince that Vſe-money (the more the pittie) hath beene, and is ſtill permitted thorowout the world. I will not commend it, and (God forbid) that I ſhould defend it to bee lawfull (which ſome doe allow) to take money for money, vpon pawnes of gold or ſiluer for ſome limited time, or to take (the day being broken) the (*b*) forfeiture thereof, nor other cloſe trickes and conueyances: nor that which they call by the name of (*c*) *Cambio ſeco*; a dry kinde of Exchange. Nor that money ſhould runne from Faire to Faire, where there was neuer any intercourſe of men, or trading: for thoſe doe but beare about them the voice of *Iacob*, and the hands of *Eſau*; kinde ſhewes, and rough deedes. And at the ſhooting of *Ionathan's* flight, or ſome warning-piece or other that is giuen, the deceit is diſcouered. But ſuch things as theſe, (though they laid them to his charge) I my ſelfe ſaw them not, and therefore cannot giue you any inckling of them.

But that which is abſolutely vnderſtood to be *Cambio*, an Exchange or turning and winding of moneyes, is a thing indifferent, which may (as it is vſed) be either good or ill. And for ſuch (though perhaps vniuſtly) I doe not wonder, that (being it ought to be eſteemed ill) it is not reproued. But that which is evidently good, being without any ſhadow of euill, that men ſhould murmure at this, and ſpeake againſt it; this is that, which doth aſtoniſh mee, and ſtrikes me into a ſtrange amazement. To ſay, when I ſee a religious perſon enter at midnight thorow a window, into a ſuſpected place, with his ſword in his hand, and his buckler at his girdle, that hee is going to miniſter the Sacrament, were a meere madneſſe: for neither God will haue it ſo, nor doth his Church permit, that I ſhould bee ſuch an errant Aſſe, as to thinke that to bee good, which is evidently euill. When a man ſhall pray, frequent vertuous exerciſes, heare diuine Service, confeſſe his ſinnes, and often communicate; for men to ſay, that ſuch a one is an Hypocrite, I can by no meanes indure: and as there is nothing more ſcandalous to a good Chriſtian, ſo is there not any wickednеſſe like vnto it.

My father had a faire large Maſſe-booke, with the full numbers of Dauid's 150. Pſalmes, wherein he had beene taught to pray, (I meane in the Spaniſh tongue) and a great paire of Beades, iuſt of euery one of them [illegible] as an hazell nut. Theſe my mother gaue him, when [illegible]

Guzmans father.

(*a*) Leuantisco, *which is the word in the Originall, is taken for an Vpſtart, a Iew, or an Eaſterling, come from the* Levant. *And* Eſtar de Levante, *is one that hath no ſet dwelling.* Couarruuias verbo [illegible]

Againſt [illegible] and Exchangers of Moneyes.

(*b*) *The Spaniſh word is* Remate. Non ha remate, *or* Tiene remate, *is the laſt bidding for a thing at a Port ſale, which when no more come vnto, tranſit res à venditore ad emptorem.*

(*c*) Cambio ſeco, *is a myſtery among Merchants, to aſſigne ouer Bils of Exchange from* Antwerpe *to* Bergamon *in* Lumbardy, *where there is no Fayre or Trade of [illegible] Bils are [illegible] remitted to Genoa, only to gaine time, and day of payment. Couarruuias [illegible]*

ſhe died. Theſe he alwayes carried about him, you ſhould neuer ſee them out of his hand, euery morning he heard his Maſſe, humbly kneeling with both his knees on the ground, his hands joyning themſelues together at his breſt, lifting them vp towards Heauen, on the toppe whereof his Hat hung. Some malicious people (by way of reproach) did not ſticke to ſay, that he did pray in this manner, becauſe he would not heare the Prieſt, and that he held his Hat ſo high, becauſe he would not ſee him. But of this, let them judge, who finde themſelues free from paſſion, and let them tell mee, whether it bee not a perverſe and raſh cenſure, proceeding from a prophane kinde of people, that haue no care of their ſoules, and without any conſcience at all. But the very truth is, that the maine cauſe, and firſt beginning of their murmuring againſt him, was; that a Partner of his in *Seuill*, being broken, and turn'd Bankrupt, and having carried away with him great ſummes of moneyes that were his, hee purſued after him, as well to remedy himſelfe as well as he could of ſo great a loſſe, as alſo to order and ſetlle ſome other neceſſary buſineſſes, which did much concerne him.

Guzmans father taken priſoner.

The ſhip he went in, was ſet vpon, and taken; and hee, together with the reſt that were in her, taken captiues, and carried to *Argiers*: where, what out of feare, and what out of deſpaire; feare, for that hee knew not how, or which way to recover his liberty; and deſpaire, for that hee neuer looked to get againe his moneyes; for quietneſſe ſake, as one that had not the ſpirit of contradiction, or that was wont to gaine-ſay any thing, he renounced his Religion, and turned *Turke*. There hee married a *Moore*, a woman of perfect beauty, and principall ranke, with whom hee had good ſtore of wealth. For in matter of intereſt, (taking it in the generall, in which tracke I ſtill treade, without prejudice to a great number of noble perſons, and graue and principall Gentlemen; for there are of all ſorts in all places) I will onely ſpeake by the way, what I my ſelfe knew of ſome of my fathers kinred, during the time that I traded and converſed with them. They were very ſolicitous in meddling with other mens houſes, and too forgetfull and careleſſe of their owne: deſirous, that other men ſhould deale plainely and truly with them, whileſt from themſelues, you ſhould not get ſomuch as one true word. Willing, that others ſhould pay them all that they ought, but of what they ought, to pay nothing at all: to gaine and ſpend freely, (light where it would light for them, they cared not who did wring for it) for the pawne was already forfeited, their day was paſt; and (as the Proverbe is) *a Roma por todo*, at *Rome* there is an abſolution for all offences. It afterwards ſo fell out, that my fathers Partner, to ſecure himſelfe from after-claps, and to liue out of danger, laboured to take order with his Creditours, and to compound for his debts, vpon faire and reaſonable conditions, requiring ſuch rates and dayes of payment, as that hee might both be able to liue well himſelfe, as alſo to pay his debts.

He turnes Turke. He marries a Moore.

Guzmans kinred, what condition they were of.

Guzmans father flies from Argiers, And in what manner.

When this came to my fathers eare, that had certaine and aſſured notice of it, he had a great deſire to come away with all the ſecrecie and diligence hee could poſſibly deviſe. And the better to deceiue the *Moore* his wife, he tolde her, that he purpoſed to employ himſelfe in matters of Merchandize, which would turne much to their profit. He made money of moſt that he had, and putting it into Chekines, (a certaine coyne that is made of fine *Barbary* gold) taking with him all the Iewels he could finger, and ſo leauing her alone, and very poore, hee came his way with all the ſpeed he could. And not making any one acquainted therewith, neither friend nor foe, reducing himſelfe to the Faith of *Ieſus Chriſt*, repenting himſelfe of his fault, with teares in his eyes, being his owne Promoter, he accuſed himſelfe, craving pardon for his offence, and that ſome favourable penance might bee inflicted vpon him. Which being injoyned him, and fully performed by him, hee afterwards went

about to recover his debts. And this was the chiefe cause why they would neuer afterwards trust him, nor haue any charitable opinion of him, were his workes never so good, never so pious. And if you aske other reason, you were as good hold your tongue, you shall get none other from them, but impertinencies and answers, nothing to the purpose; such as they haue often made mee; Once a knaue, and ever a knaue: *Nam qui semel est, semper præsumitur esse malus*: For hee that hath once beene naught, is presumed to bee so still; and that hee will neuer get out of the way of wickednesse, that hath once made it his common walke. Not considering, that no man knowes how God toucheth a mans heart, and cals him home vnto him, putting him againe in the right path, and whether (agreeable to that authenticke Law) hee had reformed his manners or no;

Once a Knaue, & ever a Knaue.

Here you see, without leaning this or that way; or without any the least inclining to any side, my fathers Mere-stones; the very [illegible], and bounds, that doe define and determine him; On the one side, [illegible] supporters) his couzening Kinred, and bankrupt Copartner; on the other side, his owne couzening of the *Moore*. And if it bee objected, that hee himself [illegible] twice or thrice, hauing other mens goods in his hands; if they likewise [illegible] him, it is no wonder, that hee should not hold. For men are not made of [illegible] nor are they bound to hold like nayles: for they, euen though of yron, do sometimes faile and burst in sunder, and grow weake and loose. These are your Merchants stratagems, their fine shifts of wit, which (vpon occasion) they practise when and where they please; especially in *Spaine*, where they haue found the tricke of getting. Nor is it a thing so much to bee wondred at; there lies their skill, let it thriue as it will: wee leaue that to themselues, and their Confessors, to whom, I doubt not, but they giue a large account of their doings. Onely God is the Iudge of these things; and let him that absolues them, looke what hee does: I see many that make a common practice of it, but not a man of them, that hangs for it, if it were a delict, an euill thing, or a theft, it is a cleare case that it should bee punished, since for lesse then sixe Royals, wee see an hundred poore soules whipt about the towne, and sent to the Gallies.

[illegible] tricks of [illegible] Merchants in their Trading.

That I might not vent my selfe in my fathers prejudice, I could be content to hold my peace, and to silence what I thinke: but if I will follow the Philosophers counsell, I must then say, *Amicus Plato, sed magis amica Veritas: Plato* is my friend, but the Truth more. I loue my father well, but I must preserue the Truth aboue all things. Conforming my selfe therefore to that Philosophicall saying, let the world hold me excused if I canonize this Case for one of the greatest villanies and rogueries that was ever put in vse, and such as deserueth exemplarie punishment, and that in no meane degree. But perhaps some one Merchant or other, that is his crafts-master in this kinde of trade, will tell me to my face, Hold your hand, Sir, you are a little too forward, in what Consistory (I pray you) of the Pope and his Cardinals, hath Bankrupture beene determined, and condemned for a sinne? Who will put an Ideot, a Galley-slaue, a Rogue, to establish Lawes, or to censure those Trades wherein he hath no skill? But I now see how I haue erred, in speaking against that, which I cannot helpe, and whereof there is so little amendment to bee expected. For I would willingly endure thy taunts, and bestowe reproaches, so that there might either punishment or remedy be giuen to this horrible kinde of theeuing, though my owne father should stretch for it, and [illegible] the Gallowes it's first handsell. Let it runne on as it doth; for the reformation of such important things as these, and other of greater moment, [illegible] daily worse and worse; their (a) Cloake is false (as it is in the Prouerbe) from off their shoulders. But what doth this belong vnto me? for [illegible] to speake against it, is to crye out vpon the Woolfe, where none will come to [illegible]

(a) [illegible]

to ſtoppe the Sunne in its courſe, and to preach in the wilderneſſe.

How a Iudge & a Scrivano *may be had.*

But I returne to that, which they layde moſt to his charge; which was, That hee was apprehended and impriſoned, for that which thou thy ſelfe ſayeſt, or that hath beene dictated vnto thee by others. But for that hee was rich and wealthy, and (as ſome ſay) for that he had an *Alcalde* to his father, and a (*a*) Notarie to his Goſſip, hee by that meanes came off, and was freed. For there were ſufficient proofes and evidences brought againſt him; and ſuch ſuſpicions to induce beliefe, as might haue ſerv'd the turne to haue turn'd him over. But one puls me by the ſleeue, and tels me in mine eare, Doe you heare Sir? Suſpicion is no proofe, and naked ſignes, are not of themſelues capable of chaſtiſement. I did looke for this concluſion from thee; aſſuring my ſelfe before-hand, that thou wouldſt take them all to be old Wiues tales, when they meet at the Bake-houſe to ſet their bread into the Ouen; that they are all lies, and falſe teſtimonies, maliciouſly vrged againſt him. And ſeeing I haue a-vow'd, and made good one part vnto thee, thou wilt not deny, but that I haue reaſon to defend the other, and to giue thee my reaſons for it. I ſay then, that to haue *Scrivanos* or Notaries, (I may ſo terme them) to bee a mans Goſſips, is a rare title, that onely ſuites it ſelfe according to the Money, wherewith euery one wageth Law. For in blearing the ſight, and picking a mans purſe before his face, ſome haue the ſoule and conſcience of your Gypſies, and will make of Iuſtice a matter of juggling, with a hyepaſſe, and repaſſe, come off *Iacke* with a whim-wham; ordering things ſo, as they ſhall thinke good, and may make moſt for their profit: ſo that it ſhall neither be in the power of the Plaintiffe or defendant to impeach it, nor in the Advocate to diſpute the right, nor in the Iudge to ſentence it.

(a) *The Spaniſh word is* Eſcrivano, i Scriba publicus, ſervus publicus, qui acta in Iudicio, vel extra Iudicium, notis vel literis excipit. Vt conſtat Lege, non unum. 18. §. de adoptionibus. *Beſides that which is alledged by* Don Iuan Vela *in his Tract* de pœnis delictorum, cap. 24. de Notario falſum committente.

A diſcourſe of a worthy Preacher againſt Notaries.

And leſt that I ſhould chance to forget it, I pray you hearken by the way to that, which in the Church of S. *Gil*, in *Madrid*, was deliuered to the Lords of the ſupreme Counſell, by a learned Preacher, vpon a certaine Friday in Lent. By way of diſcourſe, hee ranne thorow all the miniſters of Iuſtice, till hee came to the *Scriuano*, or Notary, or Regiſter, (or what in that kinde you pleaſe to call him) which purpoſely hee forbore to ſpeake of, as reſerving that diſh for the laſt ſervice, and then with theſe words, hee ſet it before them: Here my Cart ſtickes faſt, and is ſo clogg'd with durt and myre, and ſo ſurrounded and wedged in, as it were, on euery ſide with filth and mucke, that I know not in the world how to get it out, vnleſſe the Angell of God returne once againe to the fiſh-poole. I confeſſe (my Lords) that for theſe thirty yeeres and vpwards, I haue ſeene and heard the Confeſſions of many ſinners; who hauing falne into one ſinne, haue falne againe many times into the ſame. And yet all theſe, (by God's helpe, and his goodneſſe and mercy towards them) haue reformed both their liues and conſciences, and become good liuers, and haue all put on amendment. The Wencher that hath lyen at racke and manger, and ſtood at continuall Livery, time, and a filthy Queane hath tam'd him. The Gameſter, a maſter of a Dicing-houſe, or Keeper of an Ordinary, makes him in the end to ſee his errour; who like a Horſe-leech, goes from one to another, ſucking by little and little their blood from them. To day thou winneſt, to morrow thou loſeſt; the money runnes round, and ſtill it remaineth; but they that play, I am ſure remaine without it. The famouſeſt Thiefe, feare and ſhame reformeth. The raſh Railer, the (*b*) Palſie, from which few eſcape. The proud man, his owne miſerie doth diſ-deceiue him, being conſcious to himſelfe, that he is but durt. The Lyer, the ill language, and the affronts, which are daily caſt in his teeth, put a bridle vpon his tongue. The vnadviſed Blaſphemer, the continuall reprehenſions of his friends and kinſfolkes correct and amend him. All theſe, either early or late, at one time or another, reape ſome fruit, and caſt off (like the Snake) their old skinne, although perhaps (within) they wring hard for it.

(b) *The Spaniſh word* perleſia, *ſignifieth alſo* Prelacie. *As if the way to get preferment, were to raile vpon Gouernment.*

In

In all, and euery one of theſe, haue I found ſome markes and ſignes of their ſalvation: Onely in the Scrivener, I miſſe in my account, and am quite out of my reckoning, nor doe I finde in him any amendment at all; but is juſt the ſame man to day, that he was yeſterday; this yeere, as hee was thirty yeares ſince; for he is ſtill one and the ſelfe-ſame man: Nor doe I know to whom, or how he confeſſeth, nor who abſolueth him: I ſpeake of him, who doth not faithfully exerciſe his Office) for they informe, and write downe that, which they thinke fit, and for two ducats, or to pleaſure a friend, or to doe a ſhee-creature a courteſie (for your mantles, are great meddlers, and your women, not the worſt ſollicitours:) they take away this mans life, that mans honour, and a third mans wealth; ſetting the gate wide open to an infinite number of ſinnes, in their inſatiable covetouſneſſe, in their canine and dogge-like appetite, through the heat of that infernall fire that is in their ſoule: which makes them to ſwallow downe without chewing, bee it good or bad; right, or wrong, another mans goods. And becauſe euer and anon, vpon euery ſlight occaſion, they take that which is not their due; and for that the money that is put into the palmes of their hands, their fiſt being well greaſed therewith, is in an inſtant converted into fleſh and bloud, and incorporated into one and the ſelfe-ſame ſubſtance with themſelues; they haue no more power to caſt it off from them, then they haue to ſhake off the World, or the diuell, who ſit ſo cloſe vnto them, that they can hardly be remoued. So that it ſeemeth vnto me, that when any ſuch is ſaved, (for it cannot be that all ſhould bee ſuch, as I haue heere taken vpon me to treat of) at his entrance into glory, the Angels fulfilled with joy, will cry out one to another, *Lætámini in Domino*, A Scrivener come into Heauen, new fruit, new. For Scriueners are not *pomi Paradiſi*, ſuch fruit growes not there: And with this he ended his Sermon. But let it paſſe and goe for currant, that ſome good may bee wrought vpon a Scriuener, and that there may be ſome hope his ſoule may bee ſaved, by changing his former courſe of life. yet for all this, fall backe, fall edge, goe which way you will to worke with him, hee will be not inough able to anſwer for himſelf, by laying an excuſe vpon his faults (for iron alſo may bee guilded) and then will hee tell you that theſe are the rates of old, and that they take no more but their wonted fees, that victuals and other things grow ſtill dearer and dearer, & the meanes to maintaine them, worſe and worſe: That the Kings rents and prices are variable; that they had not their Offices for nothing, but payde ſoundly for thē; and therefore muſt licke himſelfe whole as well as hee can, ſaving himſelfe harmeleſſe out of other mens gettings: And that there is no reaſon but that he ſhould bee well payde for the imployment of his perſon, and his paines taking. This hath beene the courſe of all ages, and for ought I ſee, is like ſtill ſo to continue. Howbeit *Ariſtotle* tels vs, That the greateſt wrong that can be offered to a Common-wealth, is the ſale of Offices.

A defence of Scriueners, though a weake one.

Ariſtodes ſaying.

And *Cleomenes* the *Spartane*, being demaunded how a Kingdome might come to be happy, made anſwere, When a King ſhould not reſpect his private profit. But for a Iudge that comes freely by his place, to whom they haue given the *Title of gracious Lord*, in hope that he will do the office of God, which is, to doe Iuſtice, and to ſhew Mercy, (and therefore are called Gods vpon earth) that to ſuch a one it ſhould be imputed, that he ſells Iuſtice; omitting to puniſh the bad, and to reward the good; and that hee will ſaue and cover a fault in a lewd fellow, or ſaue a notorious offender from the gallowes; I abſolutely deny it, and proue this my propoſition by plaine and euident Reaſons. For who can thinke, that there ſhould bee in the world a Iudge ſo ill, ſo vnorderly, ſo impudent and ſo ſhameleſſe (for ſuch a one muſt he be, that will doe ſuch things) though a mountaine of gold ſhould make his Mace, or rod of Iuſtice to bend, and compell him to breake the Law? Howbeit, there are ſome abroad in the world, who ſticke not to ſay, that this ſining for Offices, and

A ſaying of Cleomenes.

Iudges are Gods

A bad ſight, and his condition.

and ſeates of Iuſtice, goes by certaine indirect pathes, and by-wayes, vnuſuall courſes out of the common track, and vnaccuſtomed; or (to ſpeake more properly) by falſe reports and forged Relations, whereof they make benefite, and grow thereby into great Eſtates. And after that they once grow warme in their places, & ſee that they are ſurely ſettled in them, they then make vp their ſtocke againe, and ſet vp for themſelues, and begin to play their prizes, raking and ſcraping at whatſoeuer comes within their reach; like vnto the *Polypus* or Cuttle Fiſh, that hath many clawes (like ſo many Wyers) to catch his prey. There is not a pore, or joynt in all his body, but is either a mouth to ſwallow, or a paw to take hold, if you once come within his clutches. Here he ſeazeth on Wheat, there on Barley; here Wine, there Oyle, beſides flitches of Bacon, cloathes both wollen and linnen, ſilkes of all ſorts, Iewels, money; from the Hangings in the dining Chamber, to ſtoope ſo low as the ſpice-boxe in the Kitchin; from the Maſters bed, to the Mules Cratch; from the pureſt wheat in the granarie, to the very ſtraw and chaffe that lyes at the barnes doore, chooſing rather to play at ſmall game, then to ſit out. From which terrible griping, and violent hold-faſt, nothing can vn-hitch them but deaths fleſh-hooke. For, when the hand takes a bribe, and they once begin to be corrupted, there is no ho with them, they are marred for euer after by an euill vſe, and neuer come to be good. And ſo they receiue with open hand all manner of Bribes, as if they were men in pay, and what they wrongfully take, were true wages, and lawfull fees. So, that they obſerue not Iuſtice, they winke at theeues, becauſe they offer vnto them the firſt fruits and tithes of their thefts: they haue gotten the fauour of ſome Courtier, to beare them out in that, which they haue bought for their money: whereupon they relying, caſt away all feare of wreſting and perverting Iuſtice.

(a) *A fiſh that hath many feete wherewith to catch his prey. Deriued from the Greeke word* πολυπους, *à* πολυς, Multus & πους: ὁδος, pes.

Thus is it, in all your Officers of Iuſtice, as well with your royall Merchant, as your Retayler; your *Alcalde*, as your *Alguazil*; your Iudge, as your Petty-fogger; with him that ſelleth in groſſe, as him that ſelleth by retayle; your Iuſticer is the Merchant; your Petty-fogger, the Pedler. (And (for their better thriuing in the world) euery one hath his *bonus Genius*, or Angell of guard, either bought out-right for his money, (or at leaſt ſo ſettled vpon him, that it can hardly be alienated from him,) for thoſe impertinent neceſſities of the body; beſides that, which God hath giuen them for thoſe that import the Soule. So that they haue two *Genii*, (as men for the more ſurety will haue two ſtrings to their Bowe:) The Court *Genius*, which is the Protectour of their bodily goods; and Gods good Angell, that is the Protectour of their ſoules.

So that out of all this, you ſee ſomething may be gathered, and happely a great part of it too true; yet for all this, wee muſt not hence preſume to conclude of all: But he that ſhall fall through couetouſneſſe into the like baſeneſſe, which perhaps may be one of a thouſand, and the ſame ſome baſe-born Slaue, an ill-bred fellow, or of a vile and abject minde, thou needeſt not wiſh him greater harme, or worſe miſfortune, then hath already lighted vpon him; for hee carries with him his owne chaſtiſement; He is pointed at (where-euer hee goes) with the finger; he is murmured at by men; he is abhorred of the Angels; and both in publike and in private, hath euery mans mouth againſt him: yet muſt wee not for their ſakes condemne the reſt, or thinke all to bee made of the ſame lumpe. And if ſome particular perſon finde himſelfe aggrieued, and complaine, that he hath receiued hard meaſure, wiſe men will conſider (as a thing to be neceſſarily preſuppoſed) that ſuits of Law, being in number ſo infinite; in nature, ſo differing; and in their ends ſo diuerſe and difficile to bee decided, it is not poſſible that one judgment ſhould content both ſides; or one Iudge (though neuer ſo indifferent) pleaſe both parties. There will (while the world ſtands) be ſome quarrellous men, either with, or without

The puniſhment that an euill Iudge receiueth.

out reaſon, haue they cauſe, or not cauſe. Therefore thou muſt firſt weigh, and conſider well with thy ſelfe, that theſe things, (I meane your Law-ſuites) will require a great deale of care, a great deale of skill, and a great deale of cunning. And if thou bee wanting to thy ſelfe in theſe thy diligences, and take not the right courſe, the blame will lye in thy ſelfe. Nor is it any maruell, *Que perdas tu derecho; no ſabiendo hazer tu hecho*: That for want of good information, thou ſhouldeſt loſe thy right, and miſcarry in thy ſuite, ſo that the fault is not ſo much the Iudges, as thine owne. But that the Iudge ſhould deny to doe iuſtice, becauſe many times hee does not giue ſentence on his ſide, who perſwades himſelfe that he is in the right, it is becauſe hee failes peradventure in his prooſes, or for that his Adverſarie made a bad cauſe good, and the other a good cauſe bad, by the euill carriage of the buſineſſe. (For much aduantage doth conſiſt in the handling of a cauſe.) Or elſe through the negligence of the partie; or for that hee wants meanes and money to follow his ſuite; or for that his oppoſite is too powerfull for him. And therefore it is not good to taxe Iudges, much leſſe thoſe that are ſeated in thoſe higher Thrones, and ſuperiour Tribunall ſeates, where there are many good and choiſe men, euen the beſt that the Kingdome affordeth. And ſuppoſe, ſome one Iudge or other out of paſſion, would raſhly and vnadviſedly precipitate himſelfe, not caring which end went forward (be it right, or be it wrong,) yet the reſt will not doe ſo, they beare a better minde, and will not ſticke to withſtand him to his face.

What he ſhould doe that hath a ſuite in Law.

I remember that a *Labuador* in *Granada*, a good crafty Clowne, did (for his owne private profit) follow a ſuite very hard in open Court, againſt the Lord of the towne where he dwelt. Thinking with himſelfe, that he had to doe with *Pero Creſpo*, the townes *Alcalde*, or Conſtable (if I may ſo ſtile him) of the Pariſh, and that he could haue drawne the *Oydores*, or Iudges (appointed to heare his cauſe) by the eares, and led them along as he liſted; ſtanding one day in the *Plaça nueua*, or the new Market-place, gazing hard, and looking buſily on the Porch, by which you enter into the *Chancery*, which is one of the famouſeſt buildings (for its bigneſſe) that is in all *Spaine*; and whereunto (for not onely the curiouſneſſe of the Arches and Vaults, but for the faire carriage of buſineſſe) there is not any in theſe times knowne to bee equall vnto it: after he had well viewed it, he perceiued that the Kings Armes that were placed in the Frontiſpice, had for its two Supporters, *Iuſtice*, and *Fortitude*. Another Country fellow of his acquaintance, ſeeing him ſtand thus gaping, as if hee had nothing to doe, asked him, why he did not goe in to ſollicite his buſineſſe? Hee told him, I begin to thinke with my ſelfe, that theſe things are not for mee, and therefore I could wiſh my ſelf at home againe. Why (quoth his friend?) Why, ſaid he? becauſe *Iuſtice* is heere ſeated ſo high, that it is in vaine for me to looke to haue her ſtoope vnto me, and I am not able to reach vp vnto her, and therefore would I were well at home.

A witty ſaying of a Country fellow.

It is no marvell then (as I ſaid before) that a Iudge doe not *Iuſtice* now and then to ſome men, though they haue Law on their ſide; but it would ſeeme ſomewhat ſtrange, that a man ſhould haue a ſentence goe on his ſide, that hath not wit to defend his cauſe. But my father found ſentence in his fauour, becauſe he had beene beaten to thoſe kinde of buſineſſes, and knew the trace of them, and was well able to hold plea. Beſides, when hee had the torment giuen him, and was put (as we heere tearme it) vpon the rack, he cleered himſelfe of thoſe imputations that were laid vpon him, and attainted thoſe witneſſes that were brought againſt him of publike malice, prouing that they had depoſed againſt him vpon idle and vaine preſumptions, and vpon weake and feeble grounds.

But heere (mee thinkes) I heare a Murmurer mutter forth his malice, telling mee, That my father had a very ill report: That hee curled his hayre, painted

painted his face, and did diuers other things, which I paſſe ouer with ſilence, and willingly omit to ſpeake of: That moneyes were ſtill ſtirring, and came tumbling in on euery ſide, beſides gifts and preſents, which comming from two oppoſite parties, continually croſſed one another. Whereunto I may adde the ſollicitation of women, who are not the worſt Aduocates, or the leaſt importunate Suitors. All which put together, leaue ſuch a thorne or ſting in my finger, that I dare not touch vpon them. O thou man of malediction, thou doeſt preſſe me too too hard, thou doeſt weary, and tyre me out; I purpoſe this bout onely, to giue thee the beſt ſatiſfaction I can, and not to anſwere any more to thy replyes; for it were but to proceede in *infinitum*, and neuer to make an end, to wayte vpon thy Sophiſtries, and frivolous queſtions. And therefore I doe not tell thee, that thou ſhooteſt at randome, ſpeakeſt *non ſequiturs*, and ſuch like things, wherein thou canſt not prevaile as thou wouldſt, nor make thy part good; for as much as the truth thereof is otherwiſe already determined. Yet when ſuites goe thus, they giue occaſion of much miſlike and offence; but there is no remedy, and wee muſt bee contented with it, as things that can not ſometimes bee poſſibly avoyded: But God deliuer thee from ſuch a Iudge, *qui habet Legem in ſcrinio pectoris*, that interpreteth the Law as he liſteth himſelfe, and as his owne conceit ſhall leade him, hauing neither Text, nor Doctor on his ſide to make good that hee doth; and from a Notarie, that is thine enemy, or any other of thoſe kinde of creatures, that are bribed: for they will falſifie orders for their profite, and regiſter things otherwiſe then they were reported in Court. But in caſe thou wilt bee carried away with opinion, and the voice of the Vulgar, (which is euermore the weakeſt, and leaſt true, according to the ſubject from whence it comes) tell me, not out of the peoples talke, (whereunto little credit is to bee giuen) but to ſpeake like a wiſe man, (out of thine owne diſcretion and judgement,) whether all that which thou haſt ſaid, be ſufficient to proue, that my father was (vndoubtedly) faulty.

Vox populi non modo eſt infirma, ſed ipſa infirmitas, & morbus.

Againſt painting.

Beſides if it be the receiued opinion of ſome Phyſicians, that the vſing of Complexions, and ſuch like ſlibber-ſlabbers, is a kinde of infirmitie and ſickneſs in it ſelfe, who can ſay, whether my father were ſound or no? And as for your curling of pates, criſping of haires, and other greater diſhoneſties, and vnſeemlier ſights then theſe, I doe not commend them; nor allow of thoſe, who permit them in *Spaine*.

Omnium colorum homo.

But that which I ſaw with mine owne eyes, for that time that I knew him, and was converſant with him, I am able to tell thee what manner of man my Father was. Hee was of a faire complexion, ruddy, well coloured, cleane and ſoft was the graine of his skinne, and his hayre curled, which on my conſcience was naturall vnto him: Hee had a full eye, and that full of life, reſembling in colour the watry *Turquoys*. He ware a fore-top, and thoſe his Lockes, which over-ſpred his Temples, to giue them the greater grace, curled themſelues into rings of haires. And if God had giuen him theſe colours, as proper to him, was it fit (thinke you) that hee ſhould beſoot his face with the ſame paintings? or is it likely, that hee would make ſuch ſlight reckoning of theſe faire pledges of Gods goodnes, & imbrace ſuch counterfeit ſtuffe to the ill example of others? But if it be true, as thou ſayſt, that he made vſe of oyntments, greaſie ingredients, ſlabber-ſawces, gals of beaſts, and the like artifices; and that thoſe teeth, and hands, which did ſo much commend him, that all this, I ſay, ſhould be done by the vertue of certaine Powders, Oxe-gals, Lees, Latherings, and other ſuch ſluttiſh and beaſtly confections, I ſhall then ingeniouſly acknowledge whatſoeuer thou ſhalt ſay of him, and ſhall bee a capitall enemy not onely vnto him, but to all thoſe that ſhall practiſe the like. For beſides, that they are effeminate actions, fitting onely wanton wenches, and light huſwiues, they giue occaſion to men, to murmure againſt them, and

breed

breed a juſt ſuſpicion of baſeneſſe in the vileſt degree, when they ſhall ſee them thus daubed over with clay, and wholly compoſed of thoſe things, that are onely permitted vnto women; who, becauſe they haue not ſufficient beauty of themſelues, borrow it from paintings, and varniſhings, to the great coſt, both of their health, and purſe. And (which to ſee, is a thouſand pitties) that your foule, and worſt fauoured women, are not onely thoſe that do this, but euen your fareſt, and thoſe that are moſt beholding to Nature: who thinking thereby to ſeeme fairer, and to make Nature appeare more louely in Arts dreſſing, begin this worke betimes in the morning in their bed, and finiſh it at noone, when the Cloath is layd. So that I ſay, (and not without reaſon) *Que la muger, quanto mas mirare lo cara, tanto mas deſtruye la caſa*: That a woman, the more curious ſhee is about her face, the more careleſſe ſhee is about her houſe; the repairing of the one, being the ruining of the other. If this then (euen in women) bee blame-worthy, how much more ſhall it bee in men? O filthineſſe, aboue all other filthiueſſe! O affront, aboue all other affronts! that God hauing giuen thee one face, thou ſhouldſt abuſe his image, and make thy ſelfe another. Thou canſt not twit mee in the teeth, that my loue to my father hath blinded mee, or that my naturall affection to my Country hath bribed mee, nor ſhalt thou euer finde mee out of reaſon, or in ought I ſhall ſay, to ſwerue from the truth. But if there bee any diſcharge or ſatiſfaction in a thing that is evill, I will tell thee one curioſitie, becauſe it fals out patt for this place and did ſucceed all, as it were about one and the ſelfe-ſame time. To thee it will ſerue for counſell; to mee, for comfort, as a common evill, that goes not without his fellowes.

Painting bad, both in a foule, and in a faire woman, but worſt of all in a man.

Dulce eſt ſocios habuiſſe dolorum.

In the yeare 1512. (a little before *Rauenna* was ſack't) there were cruell warres in *Italy*. And in this very Cytty, (I meane *Rauenna*) there was borne a ſtrange Monſter, which did ſtrike the beholders into great admiration, and cauſed much wonder. Hee had from the girdle vpward, all his whole body, face, and head, like vnto a man, ſaving that hee had one horne in his forehead: hee wanted his armes, but in ſtead thereof, Nature had giuen him two wings like a Bat: hee had figured in his breſt, the *Pythagoricall* (Y), and in his ſtomacke downe to his belly, a well formed Croſſe, or Crucifix. He was an *Hermaphrodite*, both thoſe two naturall Sexes, beeing in a very proportionable manner well and truly formed: hee had no more but one thigh, and to it one legge with its foote like a Kites, and the tallons anſwerable thereunto. In the knotty part, or locking joynt of the knee, hee had one onely eye. Theſe monſtroſities and vnnaturall ſhapes poſſeſſed mens mindes with extraordinary admiration; and thoſe that were learned men, and great Schollers, conſidering with themſelues, that ſuch monſters in nature were vſually prodigious, and did fore token ſome ſtrange effects, did beate their braines, and exerciſe the ſtrength of their wit, in the ſpeculation and ſearch of the ſignification thereof, and what this ſtrange Monſter might portend. And amongſt many other that were giuen, onely this that followeth, was well receiued amongſt them: That the horne did ſignifie Pride, and Ambition; the wings Inconſtancie and Lightneſſe: want of armes, want of good workes: the foote, of that bird of rapine, Theft, Vſury, and Avarice: the eye in the knee, affection to vanities and worldly things: the two Sexes, Sodomy, and beaſtly filthineſſe; in all which vices, all *Italy* did then abound. For the which, God did ſcourge them with that his whip of warres and diſſentions. But the Croſſe and the Y were good and fortunate ſignes; for the Y in the breſt did ſignifie Vertue: and the Croſſe on the belly, that if men (ſuppreſſing their diſhoneſt luſts of the fleſh) ſhould imbrace vertue in their breaſts, God would giue them peace, ſweeten his diſpleaſure, and abate his wrath.

You ſee here (in a caſe prohibited) that when the whole current ran with a troubled water, my father followed along with the ſtreame, and did as o-

thers did, and was not the ſole and onely offender. And therefore more worthy ſhalt thou bee of blame, if thou ſhalt offend, having beene brought vp in a ſchoole of Chriſtianity, and taught by example what to avoyd. God lend vs his helping hand, that wee may not fall into other the like miſeries: for all of vs, even the beſt of vs, we are but men.

Chapter II.

Guzman de Alfarache *goes on, in recounting who were his Parents, and declareth withall who his mother was; and for our better inſtruction deſcribes the evill conditions, and bad qualities of a lewd woman, of Bawdes; of a ſenſuall and laſcivious man, and that the end of diſhoneſt Loue, is the waſting of a mans honour, of his wealth, and of himſelfe.*

BVT that I may returne againe to my Story; I told you before, (if my memory do not faile mee) that (having performed his penance) my father came to *Sevill* for to recouer his debt; wherevpon Law was waged, many offers made either to giue or take; ſome demands, and ſome anſwers: and if he had not thorowly purged himſelfe for his health, and found an evaſion; that is, if hee had not well cleared himſelfe of being a *Renegado*, it would haue broken out vpon him into the ſcurfe of the head, or the ſcraches in the paſternes; the fat had lyen in the fire, and hee had beene quite bloowne vp. But hee had wrought ſuch a cure vpon himſelfe, and handled the buſineſſe ſo handſomely, that they could not catch hold of him for having the Leproſie or the dry ſcab. All things were ſo well made vp, that they could not finde a hole in his coate, or make any marke or white, to ſhoot at him; ſo well was hee provided for all commers. Meanes were vſed on both ſides, compoſition offered, but not accepted; the one being vnwilling to pay all, the other as loth to loſe all. Of this ſpilt water, hee gathered vp as much as hee could, making the beſt of a bad bargaine. And with that which came to his ſhare (bee it what it will) it ſo well ſerued his turne, that the cards once more were dealt round againe, and hee came into very good play. His incomes were ſuch, and his lucke ſo great, that in a very ſhort time, hee gained not onely where-withall to dine, but alſo to ſup. Hee built him a prety handſome houſe, hee ſought to plant and ſettle himſelfe in thoſe parts, hee bought him land of inheritance: hee had a Garden in *San Iuan de Alfarach*; a neate one it was, and of much recreation and pleaſure, diſtant from *Sevill* little more then halfe a League; whither many dayes, eſpecially in the Summer time, hee went for his paſſe-time, and made many banquets. It happened, that the Merchants made a Burſe or Pawne for their contractations at the ſtayers of the great Church, (like that of Saint *Felipe* at *Madrid*) with a place to walke in, which went round about it, having a Parapet or Wall breſt-high on the outſide of it, to ſeparate it from the open ſtreete, girt in with great Marble pillars, and ſtrong chaines of yron. My father walking there with other Merchants, there chanced a Chriſtening to paſſe by. And (as the talke there went) this child was ſayd to be the ſecret ſonne, or (to ſpeake plaine Engliſh) baſtard to a certaine perſon, that ſhall be nameleſſe. My father followed in the tayle of the troope, and entred in after them even to the very Font, for to ſee and view my mother: who with a certaine old Knight of the military habit, (who for to maintaine the honour of his Order, lived by the Rents of the Church) were Partners in this Ceremonie: it was a mettall'd thing, a luſty lively wench, yet graue enough withall; her carriage was very gracefull, and full of courteſie,

Guzmans father compounds with his Creditors, growes rich, and takes his pleaſure.

Guzmans mother an handſome woman: Her condition.

courteſie, her ſelfe young, beautifull, diſcreet, modeſt, and of a vvell compoſed and ſettled behaviour. Her handſome feature needes no other commender, then it ſelfe. He ſtood ſteddily looking vpon her, all the while that the Exerciſe of that Sacrament gaue him leaue ſo to doe, being aſtoniſh't to behold ſo rare a beauty, if not beſotted with it. For, to that her naturall beauty of face, and feature of body, (without any tricking or painting at all) all vvas ſo curious and fitly placed thorow that whole frame of nature, that one part helping another, and all put together into one piece, did make ſuch a delicate contexture, that no penſill can reach to expreſſe it's perfection; nor imagination conceiue, how to make it better. The parts, and faſhion of my father, I haue already largely laid open vnto you: this goodly creature, (for they ſeeme gods and not men, who are not touched with naturall affections) began to perceiue his earneſt eying of her, and did not a little rejoyce in it, howſoever ſhe did diſſemble it. For there is not any woman, (though never ſo proud, be ſhe of high or low degree) but does take comfort, and chuckle for joy, to bee beheld and looked vpon with an hungry eye, be the man never ſo baſe, never ſo meane. Their eyes being their interpreters, though their tongues were ſilent, ſpake plaine language each to other: manifeſting by them their hearts; for ſoules on ſuch occaſions do not admit of maskes, neither will vvilling minds yeeld to the vaile and muffler. For that time, there paſſed no more betwixt them, nor ought elſe done, ſaue onely that he came to know, that ſhe was that Knights Pawne; his jewell, his delight, a mortell that he kept for his owne mouth, over vvhom he was wondrous wary, and ſo tenderly affected, that hee could ſcarce endure to haue her out of his ſight. In fine, this Gentlewoman went directly home to her houſe, and my father was at his wits end, not knowing in the vvorld how to put her out of his minde. He vſed, that he might come to the ſight of her againe, many extraordinary diligences: but, vnleſſe when ſhee vvent forth to Maſſe vpon ſome ſolemne Feaſt-dayes, hee could not otherwiſe ſee her for a long time together.

Women loue to be woo'd, and to be look't vpon.

The often falling drop, hollowes the hardeſt ſtone that is; and ſtedfaſt perſeverance ſtill gets the victory: for continuance crowneth our actions, and diſpoſeth them to their intended ends. Hee plodded ſo long on the matter, that he found out a tricke to ſerue his turne; vſing the meanes of a good old beldame; a reverend Matron forſooth, an honeſt Bawd, one of my charitable Aunts: for, ſuch miniſters as theſe doth the Devill ſet a vvorke, and employ in his ſervice; vvith vvhich ſecret Mynes, he overturnes the ſtrongeſt towers of the chaſteſt vvomen: for that they may better themſelues in their rayment, ſeeking to gaine a vvidowes habit, a Huke, or a Mantle, and that their little Caskets may be ſtored with Boxes of Marmalet; there is no treacherie which they vvill not attempt; no filthineſſe, which they will not ſollicite; no blond, vvhich they will not draw forth; no chaſtity, which they will not ſpot; no cleanneſſe, which they will not ſully; no wickedneſſe, which they will not bring to paſſe. This good creature then, being courted by him with words, and rewarded by him with deedes, went and came to and fro vvith papers: And becauſe the Principles, as they are the firſt; ſo the hardeſt to learne; and becauſe the greateſt difficultie conſiſts in the beginning; and for that, Loaues goe aſide, if they be not well ſet into the Oven; ſhe moulded the buſineſſe well, vſing the beſt ſleights ſhe had. And becauſe my father had heard of old, That money levelleth the greateſt difficulties, and makes all things plaine and eaſie, he did ever manifeſt his faith by his workes; becauſe they ſhould not condemne it to be dead and fruitleſſe. He was never negligent, nor yet no niggard. He began (as I told you) by this womans hand, to ſow the ſeeds of his loue, and prodigally to ſpend vpon my mother, and they both, very willingly, and very cheereſully, are ready to receiue all. And becauſe vnto goodneſs gratitude is ſo due a debt; and that he who receiveth, is bound to a requitall,

A Bawde, and her condition.

Money ouercomes all difficulties, eſpecially with women.

and every courteſie deſerues its acknowledgement. This good mother of miſchiefe did play her part ſo well, grew ſuch a good Sollicitor, and followed the buſineſſe ſo cloſe, that her diligence meeting in a happie conjuncture, with the forwardneſſe of my Mothers will, ſhee ſtill went adding more fuell to the fire; and of a little light ſtubble, raiſed in a ſhort time a terrible flame. As we ſee many times, jeaſting turned into earneſt; and things full often to end in ſober ſadneſſe, which at the firſt, were but begun in jeaſt.

My Mother (as yee haue already heard) was a diſcreet woman; faine ſhee would, but durſt not; ſhee had a good mind to the buſineſſe, but yet ſhe was afraid: ſhe was ſometimes on, ſometimes off; her owne heart was the Oracle of her deſires; with that ſhe conſulted often, what were beſt to doe. And thus diſputing *pro* and *con* with herſelfe, *ya lo tenia dela haz, ya delenues*. Sometimes (as we ſee in the handling of Stuffes, or of Cloth) ſhe was on the right, ſometimes on the wrong: one while ſhe would put on a full reſolution to doe thus and thus; by and by againe, ſhe would turne to a new Conjugation, and vary the Mood ſhe was in before. In concluſion, whom will not ſilver win? whom will not gold corrupt? This Knight was an elderly man, much ſubject to ſpitting, ſpalling, and coughing, hee was troubled with the Stone, with ſharpneſſe of his Vrine, and other the like infirmities: ſhe had ſeene him full oft by her ſweet ſide in the naked bed; where he did not appeare the man my father was, hee had not that vigour, nor liuelineſſe, nor that handſomeneſſe of ſhape and proportion. And beſides, obſerue it while you liue, and you ſhall evermore finde it to be true, That long acquaintance, and much converſation, (where Gods feare is not) breeds weariſomeneſſe, and loathſomeneſſe at the laſt. Novelties pleaſe all, eſpecially women, who are lovers of flim-flam tales, and for the receiving and returning of newes; like vnto *Materia prima*, which never ceaſeth to deſire and ſeeke after new Formes. She was reſolved to haue forſaken the old Knight, to ſhift her of her old clothes, to change her ſmocke, and was fully bent to fly out, and to breake looſe, whatſoever came of it: but her great wiſedome, and long experience, which was hereditary vnto her, and ſuckt from her mothers teat, opened the way, and preſented vnto her an ingenious reſolution. And queſtionleſſe, the feare of looſing her penſion, kept her aloofe off, the thought whereof much perplexed her for the preſent, who otherwiſe was of her ſelfe vvell egged forward, and had a good minde to the game. For what leſſon my Father read but once vnto her, the Devill repeated the ſame ten times over; ſo that it was no ſuch great matter now to winne *Troy*; there was likelihood enough to take it in leſſe then ten yeares.

Novelties pleaſe women.

A woman, wiſe in wickedneſſe, what one ſhe is.

My good Mother caſts vp her account, and made this reckoning with her ſelfe: In this particular, my perſon loſeth nothing, I ſell no houſhold ſtuffe, I waſte none of my goods; and though in this kinde, I affoord much kindneſſe, to others, I am therein like vnto the Candle, or the Sunne in its brightneſſe, though I lend light vnto others, I haue nothing the leſſe my ſelfe: I ſhall not vvant a vvhit in my eſtate, but be rather ſtill at the full. Of whom I haue receiued ſo many courteſies, ſo many gifts, it is fit, I ſhould in ſome ſort ſhew my ſelfe thankfull, and not be ſparing to him, that hath beene ſo bountifull to mee. Shall I be covetous, vvhen he is ſo liberall? God forbid. I am now reſolved vvhat to do: I vvill ſow my bagge at both ends, my jawes ſhall grinde on both ſides, my chaps ſhall vvalke every vvay; and the better to ſecure my ſhippe, I vvill haue too anchors to one bottome; that if I ſhould chance to loſe the one, I might ſtill haue another remayning to ſerue my turne. And if the manſion-houſe ſhould chanſe to fall, yet if the Doue-houſe hold vp, if that ſtand faſt, we ſhall lacke no Pigeons, as long as there is a Lover-hole for the poore fooles to get in at.

Having taken theſe things into her conſideration, ſhe treated with this her bawdy

bawdy Embaſſadreſſe, how, and when it might be; the manner, how; and the time when: But finding (after long conſultation) that it was impoſſible to effect her deſires in her owne houſe, and that there was no good to bee done at home, for to enjoy each other freely, & to take that fulneſſe of content, which muſt ſatiſfie the hungry mawes of greedy Loners, amongſt many other ſhifts and tricks, and very good and witty devices, and ſtrange plots, which they had laid their heads about, for the better ſucceſſe in the buſineſſe, they made choyſe of this which followeth.

The Spring had ſo farre advanced it ſelfe, that *May* was in its ending, and the Summer was now making its entrance. And the Village of *Gelues*, and that of * *San Iuan de Alfarache*, are now the ſweeteſt and the pleaſanteſt of all that bordering Territory, none thereabouts was like vnto them; beſides, the fertileneſſe and goodneſſe of the ſoyle (which is all one with that of *Seuill*, as next neighbouring vnto it) which that riuer of *Guadalquibir*, makes the more famous, whoſe watry gullets purling along the bankes, in-rich and adorne all thoſe gardens and fields that confine thereupon: ſo that with reaſon (if there may be a knowne Paradiſe vpon earth) ſure the name thereof properly appertaines to this particular ſeate: So fairely is it ſet forth with ſhadow-caſting trees, ſo beautified with curious bowres, ſo richly inameled with ſundry ſorts of flowres, ſo abounding with ſavoury fruites, ſo accompanied with ſiluer-tunning ſtreames, with cleare ſprings, glaſſe-labour-ſauing fountaines, freſh ayres, and delightſome ſhades, whereinto the beames of the Sunne are at that time denyed their entrance, and haue not permiſſion ſo much as once to peepe in. At one of theſe retiring roomes of recreation, my mother agreed with her marriage-maker, her *Sine qua, non*; and ſome of the people of her houſe, to come one day thither to make merry. And albeit the place, whither they were to goe, was not that which my father was owner of, but was ſomewhat beyond it, neerer vnto *Gelues*; yet of force they muſt, to goe thither, paſſe cloſe by our doore.

Vpon this care taken, and former agreement concluded betweene them, juſt about the time that ſhee was to come neere vnto our garden gate, my Mother began preſently to complaine of a ſudden and grievous paine in her ſtomacke, imputing the cauſe thereof to the coldneſſe of the morning, and the freſhneſſe of the weather, and did ſo cunningly diſſemble the pangs and gripings ſhee indured, that they were faine to take her downe from her [b] *Xamuga*, which for her more eaſe in her journey, was borne by a pretty little, but ſure-footed [c] *Sardinian* Aſſe. She feigned ſuch extremities of torture, made ſuch pittifull faces, and ſuch wofull geſtures (holding her hands as hard as ſhe could for her life vpon her belly, cruſhing and wringing it with all the might and maine ſhe could:) then would ſhe let them looſe againe, then claſpe them together, and wring each finger through anguiſh of her paine: other-while ſhe would hang the head, as if ſhe were fainting and ready to ſwoune; and that fit paſt, fetching a deepe ſigh or two, ſhee fell to vnlacing and vnbracing her ſelfe, that all that were about her (ſaue thoſe that were privy to the plot) did verily beleeue that ſhee was wonderfully and mightily tormented, that ſhee made them to melt into teares, and to haue a compaſſionate feeling of this her affliction. Diuers paſſengers chanced in the *interim* to come by, and euery one propoſed his remedy; ſo many men, ſo many medicines; but becauſe they knew not for the preſent where to haue the things that ſhould bee applyed; nor where to haue a fit place for to miniſter vnto her, their medicines were impertinent, and to no purpoſe in the world. To goe backe vnto the Citie, it was impoſſible; to goe further forward, dangerous; and to abide thus in the high-way, not commodious. Her fits increaſed, all ſtood amazed, as not knowing what to doe, nor what courſe to take. At laſt, one amongſt the reſt that was there (who was laid there for the purpoſe) breakes mee in amongſt them,

* Alfarache, *a place of recreation neere vnto* Seuill: *And its rare pleaſures.*

(a) Guadalquibir *is a famous Riuer, which thwarteth all* Andaluzia: *it empties it ſelfe into the Sea, neere to* San Lucar de Barrameda. *It is a great Riuer, whoſe head riſes in the* Sierra de Segura, *or* Alcaſar, *anciently called* Tabigenſis: *from whoſe ſpring-head, to the Sea, it runs more then 60 Leagues: its ancient name was* Betis: *from whence that Prouince is called* Betica, *of* Betus *the 6. K. of* Spaine. *Or from the Greeke word* βαθὺς, *which ſignifies Deepe. Some ſay it is a* Chaldee *word, and ſignifies a Houſe. For that it is the receptacle whither all other Riuers enter in, as into a houſe. Some call it* Thuria, *of* θύειν, *which ſignifies impetuous, ſtrong, &c.* Vide Covarruvias, *and* Eſteban de Garib. l. 3. c. 4. fol. 128.

(b) Xamuga, *A woman's ſaddle with a Chaire.*

(c) *A* Sardinian *Aſſe, of all Aſſes, is the leaſt.*

A notable ſubtility of Guzmans *Mother, for the inuiting of his father, before ſhee came to bee his wife.*

them, and as he paſſes the preſſe, cryes, Roome for the paſſion of God, make way there, ſtand farther off; leſt you ſtifle her for want of ayre. Come, let vs take her, and remoue her out of the high way; it were cruelty, not to ſeeke to cure her, and a thouſand pitties, that ſo ſweet a creature ſhould bee caſt away, for want of care and good looking to. Come, let vs take her in our armes, and put her into this garden-houſe heere hard by, in this caſe we muſt bee content to take that which comes next to hand.

All approued what he ſaid, his motion was applauded, and ſo generally well liked, that it was preſently concluded amongſt them, That vntill that fit were over-paſt, they ſhould craue leaue of thoſe that kept the houſe, to giue her entrance, not doubting but ſhe would be much the better, if they could bee but ſo happy as once to get her within the doores. They knockt hard and thicke, (as men vſe to doe when they are in haſte;) the good woman that kept the houſe, made ſhow as if ſhe thought her Maſter had beene there: and as ſhee came waddling along, bawled to her ſelfe: O good God, is it you, Maſter? O ſweete Ieſus! I pray be not angry, that I came no ſooner, I was very buſie, I could not doe withall, I came as ſoone as I could. Theſe and the like excuſes, her vnprofitable chaps mumbled to her ſelfe.

The old Hagge knew well enough what ſhe had to doe, ſhe might goe in the ranke of thoſe rude Countrie wenches, that make curtſey, and cry, *No cbero, no ſabo*; No forſooth not I, I am a poore ſilly old Woman, ſeeming as if ſhe could not ſay B. to a battle-doore. Yet was ſhee a diſſembling Hilding, a crafty olde Carrion, one that had learned her leſſon before-hand, and receiued her inſtructions from my father, ſo that ſhee was well prepared for the buſineſſe. Beſides, ſhe was no Dullard, and for ſuch kinde of imployments ſhee was no Baby, but vnderſtood very well in ſuch ſeruices as theſe what was fit to bee done.

The difference betwixt the poore and the rich Maſter.

And heerein (amongſt other things) the rich haue this advantage of the poore, That euill ſeruants will not ſo eaſily come to the becke and bend of a poore Maſter, as well-diſpoſed ſeruants will bee ouer-awed by a rich Maſter, and wonne to his lewd commands. The poore man, (though hee be neuer ſo honeſt) yet muſt hee yeeld ſometimes to the violent diſpoſition of his wilfull and head-ſtrong ſeruants; whereas honeſt Country-Swaines, ouer-commanded by their rich Land-Lords, become Miniſters to their luſtfulneſſe. So that the poore (though neuer ſo good) hauing ill ſeruants, are ſeruants to their ſeruants. And the rich (though neuer ſo bad) by being ſerued with good ſeruants, are the onely men that are well ſerued.

My good old Woman had by this time opened the gate, and either not well remembring, or making ſhow as if ſhee had not knowne them, full of diſſimulation, ſhe fell thus vpon them: What a ſtirre, what a knocking is heere? The Diuell take you all for mee: beſhrew mee, if I did not thinke it had beene our Maſter: The very feare whereof, leſt I might haue ſtayed too long before I I let him in, hath not left me one drop of bloud in all my body. It's very well, what's the matter now I pray? What would you with me? What is your Worſhips pleaſure? Haue you any thing to ſay to me? If you haue, let me know your minde, that I may make an end, and goe about my buſineſſe; for I haue ſomething elſe to doe then to ſtand thus idly heere.

Then the old Knight anſwered, and ſaid; Good woman, I pray afford vs ſome place in your houſe, where this Gentlewoman may reſt her ſelfe awhile: for a grievous paine in her ſtomacke hath befalne her heere vpon the way: ſhee that kept the houſe, ſeeming to relent her paine, and to be much grieued for it, in her rude ruſticke manner, ſorrowfully reply'd:

Now a miſchiefe on all ſuch ill lucke! O what a griefe it is to ſee, that any paine ſhould proue ſo vnhappy, as to be thus ill imploy'd vpon ſo ſweet a face, ſuch a dainty bed of red and white Roſes! Come in a Gods name, come in, I

pray.

pray, for all the house is at your seruice. My Mother all this while, said not so much as one word, onely she complained of her griefe.

The good old Wench of the house, vsing her with all the kindnesse her Country-fashion could afford, gaue them the liberty of the whole house, bringing them into a lower roome, where, in a well-furnisht bed, there were certaine *Colchones*, or Mattresses; these shee presently vnfolded, and hauing spred them forth, and made all things fit and handsome, shee presently opened a Chest, whence shee tooke out a very fine paire of sheetes, that were neat and sweet, a faire Quilt, and a couple of Pillowes; wherewith shee dressed vp a bed, and made it ready for her to take her rest in. Well might the bed haue beene made, the roome kept cleane, all places sweetned with the burning of perfumes, breathing forth Pomanders, and other the like odoriferous sents, & a breakefast provided, and many other dainties and delicacies put in a readinesse for to entertaine them withall. All the things I say, might well haue beene made ready before-hand; but it was thought fit, that some of them should not bee prepared; as also that the woman that kept the house, should not come at the first knocking, as likewise that the gate should bee shut against them, and not be opened vntill they called, that it might not seeme to bee a set match, and lest it might chance to breed some suspition, and so the stratagem (a) might be discouered, and the maskers made knowne; for this dayes plot was meerely no other thing. * My Mother in this her pittifull paine, put off her cloathes; got her to bed, and called euer and anon for warme clothes; which being brought vnto her, making as if she had laid them to her belly, shee thrust them lower beneath her knees, and somewhat apart from her, because the heate of them did somewhat offend her, fearing least they might cause some temotion or alteration in her body, whereby qualmes might arise and weaken her stomacke: With the helpe of these warme Napkins, she found her selfe much eased, and feigned she had a desire to sleepe, hoping she should be the better after she had taken some rest.

The poore old Knight, whose chiefest joy consisted in giuing her content, hauing placed all his happinesse in her welfare, was (honest Cuckold as hee was) wonderfully glad of this, and left her alone in her naked bed. And hauing made fast the doore after him, that none could get in to trouble her, hee went forth to recreate himselfe in those Gardens belonging to the house, charging his people to make no noise, and that none should come neere the doore, enjoyning stilnesse and silence, and that none of them should dare to open it, till they had farther order from him, or that he came himselfe. And for that honest woman of the house, hee willed her that shee should watch by her till she awaked, and that then shee should come and call him. My Father in the meane while was not asleepe, but stood with attention, hearkening to what was said, and lay peeping out through the Key-hole (like one that lyes in Ambuscado) of a certaine backe doore, belonging to a close closet, whither hee had retired himselfe, till hee could spy his time of aduantage for to sally forth, and surprize that desired fort, which he had so long since cunningly vndermined.

Now, when all was husht and quiet, and that her owne Nurse that came with her, and that other olde Bawde of the house, stood like two Sentinels vpon their Watch, ready vpon all occasions, to giue quicke advice, by a certaine secret signe, which might serue in stead of a watch-word, when the old Knight should make head that way, then did my father issue out at that posterne, or little backe-doore of his, that hee might see, and conferre with his Mistresse. And at that very instant did her feigned pangs cease, and those truer ones of loue beganne to manifest themselues, giuing other kinde of twinges, and those kinder for the place affected. In this swelling kinde of sport they continued two long houres, two yeeres being not sufficient to expresse

A Colchone, *is a kinde of Mattresse, quilted with thread, that the woull may not slide and grow into Knots.*

(a) *The Spanish word* Encamisada, *signifies a stratagem, borrowed from the wearing of shirts vpon their Armour, thereby to surprize the enemy on the sudden, and to be distinguished from their enemies.*

It is also a Maske, or Mummery.

expreſſe thoſe paſſages that were betwixt theſe two new Louers in this their merry fit.

Now the day began to grow hot, and was entring more and more into his heates, which forced the Knight to make his retreate towardes the houſe. Which hee did the more willingly, out of the deſire which hee had to know how his ſicke Saint did, whether ſhee were any thing better, and whether they ſhould ſtay there, or goe forward, or what they were beſt to doe, theſe were the lines that led him along to viſit her. Vpon his marching thitherward, the Sentinels ſhot off a warning peece: and my father with great ſorrow of heart, forſooke the Fort, where he had ſet vp his Standard, and retyred backe to his Court of guard, and ſhut himſelfe vp cloſe, where hee was before.

Vpon the entring in of her olde Gallant, ſhe made ſhow as if ſhee had beene faſt aſleepe, and was awakened with the noiſe that hee had made. And with a bended brow, and angry looke, caſting her eye a-skew vpon him with a coyneſſe of language, ſhee turn'd aſide from him, accenting her words in a pretty kinde of mournefull faſhion, pittying as it were, and bemoaning her ſelfe; Ay me; God helpe me. Why (alas) haue they opened the doore ſo quickly? Was there no care, no loue to bee ſhowne vnto mee, in letting mee ſleepe a little longer? I thought you, of all others, would not haue put me out of ſo ſweet a ſlumber. But 'tis no matter, I ſhall one day; and with that ſhe ſigh'd, & ſtop'd, as if ſhe had ſomething elſe to ſay, ſtudying more to amaze him, then to declare her ſelfe.

This good old Knight of ours, this patient peece of fleſh, gently made anſwere: By thoſe eyes of thine, then which I adore nothing more, I did not thinke to wake thee; it grieues mee (pretty ſoule) that I haue done thee that wrong; yet haſt thou ſlept full two houres and more. Two houres (reply'de my Mother:) no, nor yet halfe an houre: mee thinkes it is but euen now that I began to ſhut mine eyes, and in all my life, I neuer had ſo quiet and contented a nap, for that little while that it laſted; (nor did ſhe lye in all that ſhe ſaid, for ſhe gulled him with a matter of truth:) and looking with ſomewhat a more cheerefull countenance vpon him, ſhee much commended the remedy which they had giuen her; telling them, that they had giuen her her life.

The old Knight was glad to ſee ſo much comfort come from her. And by conſent of both parties, they agreed to celebrate their feaſt there, and to paſſe away as merrily as they could, the remainder of that day: for that Garden was no leſſe pleaſant, then that whither they intended to haue gone. And becauſe their people were not farre off, that had the charge of their proviſion (for the other houſe was hard by) they ſent to them to bring backe their dinner thither, and ſuch other things, as they had brought along with them.

Whileſt this buſineſſe was a-doing, my Father found fit opportunity to get out ſecretly at the other gate, and to returne backe to *Seuill*: where, euery houre was a thouſand yeeres; a moment, an Age; and the time of his abſence from his new Loue, a preſent Hell.

Now, when the Sunne was in declining, which was about fiue in the Evening, mounting vpon his *Gennet*, as if it had beene but his ordinary walke, he came to viſit this his houſe: Wherein he found theſe Gallants, he bid them welcome, and told them he was glad to ſee them there, onely he was ſorry for the miſhap, which cauſed their ſtay. For hee no ſooner came in, but they tolde him all that had paſt. His carriage was courteous; his voyce lowd and ſhrill, but not very cleere: Hee made them many diſcreet and faire offers, (for hee had learned a little Courtſhip) and they on the other ſide, remained no whit in his debt for kinde words: So that in the end, there was a great League of friendſhip profeſſed and confirmed betweene them in publike; but a ſtricter tye in ſecret, betwixt my Father and his Miſtreſſe,

for

for the good pawnes and pledges of Loue, that had lately paſt betweene them.

The difference that is betwixt Loue, Friendſhip, and Good-will.

But there is a difference betweene Loue, Friendſhip, and Good-will. Good-will, is that, which I may beare to one that I never ſaw in my life, nor had any other knowledge of him, then that I haue heard of his vertues, or of his noble diſpoſition, or ſome other worthy parts in him, which makes mee to wiſh him well, and drawes my affection by a violent kinde of motion as it were to runne after him.

Friendſhip, we call that, which is commonly concluded betwixt man and man, or one friend with another, vpon ſome long Treaty or Communication, Similiancie in condition, or ſome other pledges of loue, and reall courteſies, that haue paſſed betweene them: ſo that Good-will, is ſaid to bee betweene thoſe that are abſent; and Friendſhip, betweene thoſe that are preſent. But Loue runnes by another kinde of courſe; it ſteeres by another Compaſſe. That muſt of force be reciprocall, a commutation of hearts, a copy or counterpane of interchangeable kindneſſe, a tranſlation of two ſoules, where each ſtriues with other with all their might and maine, to aſſiſt there more, where it loues, then where it lives. And this takes it's perfection from it's object; the perfecter the object, the perfecter the Loue: but the trueſt Loue of all is *diuine Loue*. And therefore wee are to loue God aboue all things, with all our heart, with all our ſtrength, and with all our ſoule, ſeeing that he ſo much loveth vs. Next vnto this, is your *Amor coniugalis*, that Loue which is betweene a man and his wife: and then that which is betwixt neighbour and neighbour, or one friend towards another. For lewd Loue, and that which is diſhoneſt, (whoſe ground growes not from Vertue) is not worthy of this name of Loue, as being of a baſtard-brood.

True Loue, what it is.

What lewd Loue is.

But hap what may hap, come what will come, fall backe, or fall edge; whereſoever this lewd loue raigneth, there are all your Witcherafts, as no where in the world more; there your inchantments, there your Sorceries. This lewd loue is that, which (like another *Circes*) alters the conditions of men, adventureth thorow all difficulties, and makes them eaſie; it is that alone which tameth the ſtrongeſt and fierceſt Lyons. For to ſay, that there are *Philtra*, amorous potions, poyſons of loue, and the like baits & trickes to force affection, it is all falſe: for this alone, is ſufficient of it ſelfe to turne a mans braines, to pervert his judgement, to take away his life, to confound his memory, to draw on diſeaſes, and to occaſion ſundry ſhrewd fits either of melancholy, or of madneſſe. Loue ought to be free, and to haue the libertie and power to conſigne, & deliver over all the faculties of the ſoule to the thing beloved. For the *Alcayde*, or Governour of a Caſtle, cannot be ſayd to giue vp the Caſtle, when as by force it is taken from him; ſo hee, that ſhall make loue by indirect and evill meanes, it cannot be truly ſaid that hee loveth, but that hee is forced (contrary to his better vvill) and violently carried away vvith that eager paſſion of luſt and ſenſuality, vvhich, like a head-ſtrong beaſt, beares a man headlong to his deſtruction.

Loue ought to be free.

The converſation went forward, Cards are call'd for, and to play they goe. Their game vvas *Primera* at three hands; my mother, ſhee got the money, for my father vvas vvilling to loſe to her: and it beginning now to vvaxe night, they gaue off play, and vvent out into the garden to take the ayre. In the meane vvhile, the Cloth vvas layd, and their ſupper brought in, and ſet on the boord: they ſit downe, they eate, and haue ſup'd. And having given order againſt after ſupper, that a Barge ſhould bee made ready for them, and tricked vp vvith freſh flagges, & greene Boughs: vvhen they came to the vvater ſide, they tooke Boat, and vvere no ſooner lanched foorth into the channell, but they might heare from other Veſſels, vvhich vvent to and fro vpon the river, ſundry Conſorts of all ſorts of Muſicke, vvhich made a moſt melodious ſound; being an vſuall and ordinary thing vvith them, in ſuch a place, & ſuch a time

as that was, being in that ſeaſon of the yeare that was fitteſt for it. In this manner they were brought along, till at laſt they landed; and being now come into the citty, they tooke their leaues: every one betaking himſelfe to his owne home, and his owne bed, ſaue onely my fathers contemplatiue pate, whoſe roving head was ſo full of fancies, that it could take no reſt. My mother too, (like another *Meliſendra*) full of muſing and thoughtfull loue, ſlept with her bed-fellow, her old Conſort; her body being priſoner in *Sanſuenna*, and her ſoule a ſlaue in *Paris*; her corps in one place, and her minde in another.

Guzmans fathers craftie condition.

From that day forwards, ſuch a ſtrong knot of friendſhip was there knit betweene them, and continued with ſo much diſcretion and good cunning, (conſidering their over-venturouſneſſe, and the danger they might run into) as could poſſibly be preſumed from the quaint wit, and cloſe conveyance of an Eaſterling, dyed into a *Genoueſe*, and dipt in the Fat of Vſury, who knew well enough, how to put out his money to the beſt profit; who could cleare you any account, could liquidate and divide it to an haire, how much loſſe there was in meaſure, from the waſtings that aroſe from the winnowing, and cleanſing of corne; how many graines loſt in the refining of ſuch a proportion or quantity of Metall; nay, he could tell you to a crumme, how much loſſe there was in an hundred dozen, betweene the bread that was broken vvith the hand, and that vvhich vvas cut vvith the knife. As likewiſe from a woman of that good talent, and thoſe gifts and conditions, vvhich I haue heretofore acquainted you vvithall, it is enough (if I ſay no more) that ſhe was an *Andaluz*, borne in the towne of *Sevill*, and bred in that good ſchoole, vvhere ſhee proved ſo good a proficient, that ſhee ranne thorow the whole courſe of her Art, and did all her Exerciſe for her degree of a Whore; vvhich ſhee had laudably taken, by making her appointments betweene the two Quires, and the Naues, or Iſles of the old Church. Now my mother had fits and flings before this time; this vvas not her firſt flying out, inſomuch, that not having any thing of her owne in her owne hands, that vvas vvorth the keeping, that very day that ſhee compounded vvith this old Knight for her company, and had driven her bargaine vvith him, ſhe ſwore vnto me, that ſhe put over in truſt aboue 3000 Ducats, onely in Iewels of gold and Plate, beſides the moueables of her houſe, and her change of apparell for the ſetting forth of her perſon.

The diſpoſition of Guzmans mother.

The time (vve ſee) vveares away, and vve muſt vveare vvith it: that runnes from vs, and vve muſt follow after it. Every day that opens, diſcovers new things; and vvith the riſing of the morning, ariſe new alterations. And let vs labour, and doe all that vve can, vve may not be excuſed, nor can the flower of our youth eſcape in it's due time the cutting Sythe of Death. For there is not the ſhorteſt moment that paſſes, that doth not ſhorten ſomewhat of our life: and the elder ſtill vve grow, the neerer vve are to our graue. The good old Knight (as formerly you haue heard) vvas an ancient man, and of a feeble body: my mother, young, faire, and full of vvit, and knew ſo vvell how to provoke his appetite vpon all occaſions, that his diſorder opened the doore to his death: for the old Lad, by over-doing himſelfe, haſtened his owne end. Firſt, his ſtomacke began to faile him, then vvas he taken vvith a paine in his head, after that followed a burning fever, vvhich after ſome few fits began to leaue him; but though that ceaſed, he had never a vvhit the more minde to his meate, he could eate nothing: ſo by little and little hee conſumed away, and after ſome few pulls, he died. My mother not being able to reſtore him to life, though ſhe vvould ever ſweare vnto him, that ſhe vvas his life, and hee hers: But all that proteſtation proved to be but a lie; for he vvas buried, yet ſhee ſtill lined.

An old man, vnfit for a young woman.

The old Knight left many kinſmen behind him in the houſe, vvhen he dyed, but none of them of the ſame ſute with my ſelfe, though they colour'd for it;

it; onely my mother and I ſorted well together: as for the reſt, they were *pan de diezmo, cada vna de la ſuya*: like the bread, that the people offer vp to the Prieſt; every one with a different device, or contrary marke, that his loafe may bee knowne from others. That good old Gentleman, (God bee with him, and haue mercy on his ſoule) had but little comfort in this life; and at the time of his death, they on the one ſide, my mother on the other, while the breath was yet in his body, pull'd the linnen from vnder him leaving him a ſoule in his body, but not a ſheete in his bed: ſo that the ſacking of *Antwerpe* (which for the cruelty thereof is growne into a Proverbe) compared with this, was not halfe ſo rigorous, nor halfe ſo inhumane as this: and all (forſooth) for feare of a Sequeſtration to haue the goods depoſited. But my mother, as ſhe churned the milke, ſo ſhe was her owne carver; ſhee was the Tayler to cut out her owne coat, and the worker of her owne fortune. Shee found a time not long after to put her hands there, where her heart was long before, and fell to fingring of his money. For ſhe had the chiefeſt of all his goods in her owne keeping vnder locke and key, and was Miſtris of all that was worth the having. But ſeeing herſelfe in danger, and fearing to bee put to her jumpes, ſhee thought it better to ſteale then to begge; and like a thiefe to make a ſtart out of a buſh, then hereafter to aske an almes for Gods ſake. They were ſo nimble on all hands, that there was ſcarce enough left wherewithall to bury him.

The actions of Guzmans mother.

Some few dayes were ſcarce over-paſt, but many diligences were vſed, for to make theſe his goods appeare. They ſet vp Excommunications at the Churches, and vpon mens doores, to try if that would do any good, and make the purloyners to bring in the goods: but all to ſmall purpoſe; for hee that ſteales, ſeldome returnes to make reſtitution. But my mother made her excuſe, ſaying; That the Knight (God bee with him) would ſtill tell her, when hee came to viſit his moneys, and ran over his Coffers and his Cabinets, or had brought any thing into the houſe; This is thine, (ſweete heart) it is all for thee. So the Lawyers were of opinion, that with this ſhe might very well ſatisfie her conſcience. Beſides, they affirmed, that it was a due debt, and properly belonged vnto her; for though ſhee gain'd it ill, yet it was not receiued ill. And howbeit the Act were not lawfull, yet the Compact was juſtifiable. It was not lawfull for her to play the whore, yet might ſhe by Law haue whatſoever was promiſed her for the vſe of her body.

In this mans death, I found that to bee verified which I had often heard before; That rich men dye of hunger, poore men of ſurfets, and thoſe which haue no Heyres, and enjoy the goods of the Church, of cold. So that this man may ſerue herein for an Example. For whilſt he was yet living, they left him not ſo much as a ſhirt, ſaue only that which hee wore on his backe, which of courteſie they were content hee ſhould carry out of the vvorld with him. Rich men, for feare they ſhould be ſicke with eating too much, to avoid hurt, hurt themſelues; ſince by eating by ounces, and drinking by thimble-fuls, they liue by drams; dying rather out of hunger, then their diſeaſe. Poore men, in that they are poore, every man takes pitty of them; one ſends, another brings to them, and all of all ſorts, and from all parts repaire vnto them, to giue them reliefe, eſpecially when they are in that extremity. And when they finde themſelues leane and hunger-ſtaru'd, they make no good choyce of their feeding, for vvant of ſome diſcreet bodie that ſhould adminiſter vnto them, and order them in their dyet: whereupon they eate ſo much, and glut themſelues ſo full, that they cannot digeſt their meate for want of naturall heat, and ſo choaking themſelues with over-gorging their paunch, they meerely dye ſurfeited.

Rich men dye of hunger.

Poore men dye with over-eating themſelues.

The like happeneth likewiſe in your Hoſpitals, where ſome deuout fooles, tender-hearted women, who go thither to viſit them out of meere deuotion, ſtuffe their pockets and their ſleeues full of banqueting ſtuffe to carry along with

with them, ſending their ſervants laden with baskets of *regalo's*, and delicate choice Dainties. And thinking therein to do an almes-deede, out of their charity, they kill them for Gods-ſake. In my opinion, this ought not to bee ſuffered, but this coſt ſhould rather be beſtowed vpon the ſickneſſe, then the ſicke, and be put into their Keepers hands, that are ſworne to haue a due eare of them: for by that meanes, (having the counſell of ſome learned Phyſician) thoſe things ſhall bee better diſtributed in their proper place, and make more for their good: And to do otherwiſe, may proue hurtfull and dangerous. And in this their ill-diſpenſed charity, not weighing the good, nor the hurt; the ſeaſon, nor the ſickneſſe; whether it bee fitting or not fitting, they cramme their crawes, like ſo many Capons in a Coope, till they can ſwallow no more, and ſo die of the throttle. Henceforth therefore, let it bee ordained, that ſuch things as theſe, bee giuen to thoſe which miniſter vnto them, who know better how to diſpoſe of them, or let it be given in money, for to ſupply other their greater wants and neceſſities.

A remo, ad clavum & gubernaculum Navis: *A metaphor from Galley-ſlaues.*

O what a gentle *diſparate*, what a pretty abſurdity is this of mine, yet well grounded in Divinity? how am I leapt from the Oare to the Helme? What a Saint *Iohn* the Evangeliſt am I become on the ſudden, that I read you ſuch a Lecture? The Oven grew hot, my zeale was kindled, and ſo theſe good flaſhes flew forth; you may the better pardon this fault in mee, becauſe I haue made you ſome amends in being ſo ſhort. As it came in my fingers, I tooke it along with mee; it came in my way, and I could not let it ſlippe: ſo ſhall I doe hereafter, as often as occaſion is offered. And looke not thou on him that ſayes it, but to that which is ſayd vnto thee. For if thou bee clad in a neat Suit of cloathes, and that they ſit well vpon thee, it is not materiall, whether thy Taylour were crooke-back't or no: that is not a thing to bee thought on. And thus much by way of prevention, that thou mayeſt either leaue mee to my ſelfe, or arme thy ſelfe with patience. I wot well, that it is impoſſible to bee well receiued of all; for there is not that Veſſel in the world, that can meaſure mens taſts; nor that Balance, that can equall their likings, or giue an even poyze to ſuch vneven humours. Every one is in loue with his owne: and thinking his owne judgement to be the beſt, is thereby the more deceiued: For the moſt of men haue it, for the moſt part, moſt depraued.

Guzman *had two fathers, by vertue of his mother.*

But I returne to my firſt ſtation, whence I haue digreſſed: for my mother lookes for mee, now being the widdow of him that firſt poſſeſſed her; and dearely beloued, and wonderfully much made of by this ſecond Owner. In this change and alteration of things, betweene theſe and thoſe other nuptials, I was betweene three and foure yeares old: and by the recknings and rules of your feminine knowledge, I had two fathers: for my mother was ſo well learned in her Art, that ſhe knew very vvell how to father mee on them both. She had attained to the knowledge of vvorking impoſſibilities, as plainely vvas to bee ſeene, ſince ſhe had the cunning to ſerue two Maſters, and to pleaſe two husbands; to both of them giuing good contentment. Both of them did acknowledge me to bee their ſonne; the one ſayd, I vvas his; ſo did the other. And when the Knight vvas alone by himſelfe, my mother vvould tell him, that I vvas as like him, as if I had beene ſpit *a* out of his mouth; and that two Egges vvere not liker one another, then I vvas like him. When againe, ſhee talked vvith my father, ſhe vvould tell him, that I vvas his *alter ego*, that he and I were one, and ſo vvould haue ſeemed, if our heads had beene cut off, and laid in a Charger: and that I vvas himſelfe, made leſſe; and did ſo truly reſemble him, as if my head had ſtood vpon his ſhoulders. But I vvonder a God, in this reſemblance of mine, (vvhich a blind man might diſcerne at the firſt bluſh) that the myſtery thereof vvas not diſcovered; that they found not out her craft, and ſearched not out the ſecret of this her deceipt. But vvhat vvith the blindneſſe vvhere-vvithall they loued her, and the confidence vvhich each of them had,

a *As they ſay,* el gato es eſtornudo del leon, *as like him, as if he had beene ſpit out of his mouth, or ſneezed out of his noſe, for his face, eyes, and muſtacho's.*

had, is was not perceiued, nor any the leaſt ſuſpicion made thereof. And ſo both their beliefes were good, and both made exceeding much of mee: the difference onely was, that in the time the good old man liu'd, hee was my true father in publicke, and the ſtranger in ſecret. And ſo my mother certified mee afterwards, making large relations of theſe things vnto mee.

And therefore I proteſt, howſoever men may talke, and ſeeke to ſlander mee, that it doth nothing prejudice mee; I heard it from her owne mouth, and barely relate vnto you what ſhee told mee. For it were great indiſcretion and vnadviſedneſſe in mee, to affirme; which of theſe two did beget mee, or whether I were the ſonne of a third. Let her excuſe mee in this, who brought mee forth: for it ill becommeth any man to lye, much leſſe to write an vntruth: nor would I that men ſhould ſay; that I maintaine Paradoxes. But that woman, that profeſſes to loue two, deceiveth both the one and the other, and there is no truſt to bee had to her. This is to bee vnderſtood of a ſingle woman; for the rule of thoſe that are married is otherwiſe. It is an old ſaying, that two is one; one, none; and three Roguery. For a woman, making no reckoning of her husband, (and this is true which I ſpeake) hee being alone, is none; and hee, with another, makes one, and with thoſe other two, which are three in the whole, make vp juſt as much, as thoſe two to a ſingle woman. So that according to their reaſon, the reckoning is already made. But bee it as it may be, and grant that this Eaſterling, this Iew, or this Moore bee my father; for ſince that they haue ſaid it, and every one doth averre it to be true, it is not fit that I ſhould appeale, all parties being agreed. I call my ſelfe his ſonne, and ſo I take my ſelfe to bee: ſince that from that [a] Mellon-bed I was made legitimate by the holy right of Matrimony. And it is much better for mee this way, then that people ſhould ſay; that I am ill borne, and the ſonne of no man.

My father did loue vs both with that true loue, as his actions ſhall ſufficiently declare. For by the force of this his loue, hee did tread vnder-foot the idolatry of that, which men ſtyle by the name of popular Voyce, and common Opinion. For they knew no other name that ſhee had, ſaue the [b] *Commendadora*; and to that would ſhee anſwere, as if ſhee had had ſome *Commendum* conferred vpon her. But hee not regarding any of theſe things, nor making any reckoning of the one or the other, ſetting as light by them, as the leaſt hayre of his head, kept company with her, and in the end tooke her to wife. I would haue thee likewiſe to vnderſtand, that hee did not enter vpon this buſineſſe, *à humo de pajas*, ſuddenly and vnadviſedly, without having firſt well bethought himſelfe of what hee did. Every man knowes his owne eſtate beſt; And a foole vnderſtands more in his owne, then a wiſe man in another mans houſe.

In this *Intermedium*, albeit this his *Quinta* or Garden-houſe, which hee had purchaſſed, vvas a place of pleaſure and delight, yet it was his vndoing, it was his overthrow: The profit little, and loſſe much; the coſt great, as well for the keeping of it neate and handſome, as for the feaſtings and banquetings which were very frequent. Such kind of delicates as theſe, and ſuch places for recreations, are onely fit for thoſe, that haue other large poſſeſſions, good ſure Lands, Great and certaine Rents, which may quit the coſt and make the loade ſeeme the lighter: But for thoſe that are not well lin'd, that haue not a ſtrong and able purſe, and that haue not the world at will, theſe niceties, are that Moth that eateth on, till it fretteth out and conſumeth the heart: it is that Worme in Wood; that Magot in the Nut, which turnes all into duſt and rottennеſſe: it is Hemlocke in a cup of Amber; and poyſon in a garden Veſſell.

And thus much by the way concerning that point; it is but a touch, and now wee go on. What with ſuites in Law, what with making loue to my mother, and other expences, one charge drawing on another, a great part of my

a *Agreeing with that phraſe which we vſe to little children, when wee tell them they were borne in their mothers Parſly-bed.*

b *By reaſon the old Knight held ſome Church livings in Commendum.*

For poore men to keepe places for pleaſure is their ruine.

fathers ſtate was conſumed, all was almoſt gone, hee was vpon the point of breaking, and ready to turne (a) Bankrupt, as hee had often done before; ſo that it would haue beene no ſtrange or new thing vnto him.

(a) Eſtallido: *Is the noiſe which a thing makes whe it cleaues, or rends in ſunder. Metaphoricè, A Bankrupt.*

My Mother was a ſtorer, a thrifty Wench, one that could hold her owne; ſhee was no waſter but ſtill lay on the ſaving hand: what with that which ſhee gained in her youth-fuller dayes, and what ſhe had ſcraped vp in the Knights life-time, as likewiſe at his death, amounted almoſt to ten thouſand Ducats, this was her Dowry, and ſo much had he with her.

How Guzmans *Mother got her wealth which his father had with her.*

This money did ſomewhat refreſh his drooping eſtate, it made him hold vp his head againe, who before was vpon fainting, and ready to ſwoune: it was vnto him like a piece of Weake or Cotton in a Lampe, dipt in Oyle; hee began to giue light a-freſh; hee ſpent brauely, got him a Caroche, and a *Silla de manos*, a little chaire to carry with hands, borne with girthes vpon mens ſhoulders, as well for eaſe as ſtate. Not ſo much for any longing that my mother had therevnto, as for his owne oſtentation and glory, that the world might not take notice of the weakeneſſe of his Eſtate, or that hee was going downe the winde. In this kinde of faſhion did hee liue to vphold his credit, and rubb'd out as vvell as hee might with his meanes; but his gaines did not equall his expences. There was but one to get, and many to ſpend; but one paire of hands, and a great many mouthes. The times vvere hard; the yeares deare; dealings, ſmall and bad; little, or no Trading. What was well gotten, is waſted and gone; and what was ill gotten, hath not onely conſumed it ſelfe, but his owner too. So thas at laſt, all was brought to nothing: Sinne, brought it in; and Sinne (on my conſcience) ſent it packing. For of all thas was left, nothing appeared. The light was now quite ont, and my father beeing taken with a grievous ſickneſſe, was arreſted by Death within fiue dayes after: and ſo ſhut vp his ſhop-windowes, and departed this world.

Ill gotten goods what became of them?

The death of Guzmans *father.*

Now, for that I was a child, and of ſmall vnderſtanding, I did not feele the want of a Father, nor found any great miſſe of him when hee dyed, though I was then at that time a doozen yeare old, and better. And notwithſtanding that wee grew poore, the houſe was ſtill well furniſhed with houſho'd-ſtuffe, whereof wee tooke now a piece, and then a piece, and ſold it away by parcels for to buy vs bread, and vvherewith to eate. But the wealth of thoſe, that haue beene rich, hath this property, that the remainder of their eſtate is alwaies more, then the beſt eſtate of thoſe that be poore; & dayly more and more they leaue ſome prints, which diſcover, like the ruines of *Rome*, what it was.

The property of the wealth of rich men reduced to poverty.

My mother grieved much, for that ſhee had loſt a good and honeſt Huſband, and found herſelfe, not onely robbed of him, but alſo of her wealth, and growne now ſo aged, that ſhe was ſuper-annuated for any more Suitors, ſo that ſhee could not helpe herſelfe with her good parts; nor recover her former credit. And albeit her beauty was not diſfigured, yet her yeares had ſomewhat defaced it: And it grieved her exceedingly, that having beene ſo many times ſued vnto by many, that ſhee was not now in caſe to be courted: And eſpecially of ſome ſuch perſons, whoſe fethers ſhe might haue pull'd from him; for otherwiſe, neither would ſhee haue yeelded vnto him, nor I haue permitted it. Even in this alſo was I vnhappy, ſince that in-come which my mother got (as Cats doe) by her tayle, did then ceaſe, when I had moſt neede of it. I ſaid amiſſe, when I ſayd it ceaſed: For ſhee was yet fit for action; and would (when ſhee was ſo diſpoſed) put on her dreſſings, and weare her head attire, as being little more then forty yeares old. I haue knowne ſince ſome old Maids (puſſockes in compariſon of her) of greater yeares, and leſſe handſomeneſſe, that would call themſelues by the name of young Girles, and little prettie Maidens, and ſweare (if you would beleeue them when they lye) that they came but yeſterday out of their ſwaddling cloathes: And although my Mother did not ſhew ſo fare for it, ſhe thought her penny good ſilver, and would

not

not giue her arme for the wringing, or her head for the vvashing. And shee would rather die and starue for hunger, then bate an Ace of her former height, or faile one quilate in the touch and fineneſſe of her punctualitie.

You now ſee me heere left without a father, either the one or the other, our goods waſted, and that vvhich is vvorſt of all, bearing a high ſtyle, living at a great rate, without any perſon in it to gaine a penny, to maintaine this port. On my fathers ſide, (*a*) *Cid* did not goe beyond me, he was no better a man then my ſelfe; for my poſſeſſion croſſed and divided that Lordſhip. On my mothers ſide, I was as vvell deſcended; my great Grand-fathers being men of great wealth, and of good eſteeme in their Country. I had more grafts, then the (*b*) *Cigarrales* of *Toledo*, (for by that name are thoſe Gardens of pleaſure thereabouts called) as I learned afterwards. I tell you (as a thing publikely knowne to all the world) that my mother was her mothers owne daughter, and trode juſt in her ſteps; ſhe ſet her Samplar before her, that ſhe might draw out ſome good worke from thence, ſo that ſhee vvent along in the very ſame path that ſhee did, ſaue only in that of their child-bearing; for my grand-mother brought forth a daughter for her comfort, and my father begot a ſonne for my mothers ruine. If my Mother brought two into the net, my Grand-mother brought two dozen, and made them like Chickens (if the vvorld ſpeakes truth) to eate together in one pot-ſheard, and to ſleepe in one Hen-rooſt; and to be pen'd vp in one Coope, without pecking one at another; or driven to hood them as they doe Hawkes.

With this daughter of hers, (I meane my Mother) ſhe inſnared a hundred ſeverall perſons, vowing and proteſting to every ſuppoſed father, that my Mother vvas his child, and ſo to all, that ſhe was like them all: To ſuch a one, in her eye; to another, in her mouth; to a third, in moſt of the parts and lineaments of her body: nay, to colour the buſines the better, ſhe would go a little farther, in counterfetting markes and moles in the face, and other ſpots in other parts to that purpoſe; not wanting to tell ſome, that ſhe did ſpit like them, and that ſhe had it naturally from them. She had this (as ſhee vvas excellent in many) cunning tricke with her, that when any of her ſweet-heates were preſent with her, ſhe vvould call her after his Sir-name. And if two, or more vvere there at the ſame time, ſhee call'd her barely by her owne name, without any addition. Her proper name was *Marcella*, vvhich vvas burniſhed and furbiſhed over with the title of *Don*, ſet over the head of it; for as ſhe was called *Donna Marcella*; ſo had ſhe her *Don* or *Cavallero* for her ſervant. For *Donna*, without a *Don*, are leſſe compatible, and leſſe comely, than a honſe, without a bed; a Mill, without a wheele; or a body, without a ſhadow. As for her ſir-names, ſeing they vvere things that meerely depended vpon her mothers own free choiſe and election; and for that ſhee was vncertaine thereof, becauſe ſhe could not well tell who vvas the true father to her daughter: I muſt therefore giue you to know, that ſhe did bolſter her vp, and vnder-prop her, with the beſt titulary names ſhee could deviſe, throwing more noble houſes vpon her, then a King of Armes could conferre with all his farre-fetcht Pedigrees. Which to repeat vnto you, were to reckon vp a Bead-roll of Genealogies, as long as any Letany, that is ſolemnly ſung at divine ſervice.

The *Guzmans* were thoſe, vnto whom ſhe moſt inclined, (for ſhe had a great liking to that name) and my Mother told me in ſecret, that in her opinion, which was no more then her owne conſcience did tell her, vndiſcharged vvhereof, ſhe did verily beleeue, and was fully perſwaded (by ſome likely incounters, and probable gheſſes, and other circumſtances of time and place jumping and concurring together) that ſhe vvas ſome by-blow of a *Cavallero*, that was neere of kinne to the Dukes of *Medina Sidonia*. My Grandmother was a wiſe woman, a crafty old Dame, and never wanted to her dying day, but

a Cid, *was the braveſt & valianteſt Souldier in his time, and had conquered five Kings of the Moores, and made them pay tribute.* Guzmans *lineage.*

b *In Toledo. They tearme* Cigarrales, *certaine poſſeſſions, not farre from* Toledo, *which are little choiſe garden-plats, full of Fountaines, as alſo Fruit trees, Vines, Olives, and Figges, with a little houſe of pleaſure to entertaine the owner. But ſome of your* Cigarrales *are goodly things of great both value, and recreation; but of as much expence, as profit. Father* Guadix *ſayes, that it is an Arabique word; and ſignifies as much as a little Houſe. A notable vanity.*

had wherewithall to ſpend freely, nor was it any wonder; for vvhen it began to vvaxe night with her, and that it vvas time for her to ſhut vp her ſhop; then did my Mothers dawning of the day begin to appeare, and ſhe had her at her elbow, to continue the trade for her, and the firſt bargaine that ſhe droue, was vvorth to her better then 4000 Ducats, vvhich ſhee had of a rich Merchant, (vvith vvhom ſhe held trafficke, and exchanged wares) that vvas newly come from *Peru*, vvho did deliver her the money by basket-fuls, vvhich was good & quicke payment. She never made bad voyage, ſhe ſtill bore vp, liv'd in plenty, and would not loſe a jot of what vvas her due. No Chriſtian could carry away her right from her; nor vvould ſhe giue any firſt fruits to the Devill.

Now, if vve had had the like good lucke, our miſery might haue beene the leſſe: Or if, as I vvas the onely ſonne of my Mother, it had beene my good hap to haue had a Siſter, to haue ſerv'd as a prop to my Mother, as a ſtaffe to her old age, as a pillar to our poverty, and as a port to our often ſhipwrackes, we vvould haue bid a figge in Fortunes teeth.

Sevill; and it's condition.

Sevill ſtood very fitly and commodiouſly ſeated for point of profit, or for any kinde of incroaching-getting, and as much is brought thither to be ſold, as there is to be bought. For there ſhall you meete with Merchants that vvill deale vvith you in all commodities, no vvares come amiſſe. It is *Patria communis*, and a free-common for all commers; it is a paſture, without incloſure, a Gordian Knot, and open field, a Globe vvithout end, a mother of Orphans, and a ſhelter for Sinners; where all cry out for vvant, and yet no man wants. Or (ſince not this) that I had beene bred vp in Court, which is the Sea, that ſwallowes all; the point, vvherein all lines meet; and the very center, vvherevnto all other parts haue recourſe: ſure my abilities would not haue beene leſſe then other mens; and as I ſhould haue wanted no good parts, ſo ſhould I not haue lackt entertainment. I ſhould haue lighted on ſome good Office or other, got to be in Commiſſion, and other the like places of profit and honour, wherein I ſhould haue gone as farre as another, and haue found as much favour, had my purſe beene as good: For that will hold any thing faſt, and is the onely thing to keepe a man in. And had the vvorſt come to the worſt, yet could vve not haue vvanted meate and drinke, but ſhould haue far'd like Kings. For hee that ſhall haue a good piece of land, or the like pledge, either to impawne, or to ſell, ſhall ever haue a chapman ready at hand, either to buy it out-right, or to lend ſo much money vpon it, as to ſerue a mans preſent occaſions. But I vvas an vnfortunate man, (as you haue already heard) and ſtood alone by my ſelfe, vvithout any tree by mee, either to ſhadow, or to ſhelter me. I had many troubles come vpon me, the burthen vvas heavy, my ſtrength weake, my debt great, and my meanes ſmall. See then, and conſider whether it were fit or no, that ſuch a young Youth as I, that began to grow before I vvas ſcarce out of the ſhell, and to vvrite man ſo ſoone, having ſuch honeſt parts in me, and good endowments, ſhould not bee made ſome reckoning of? The beſt helpe that I had, was to trie my fortune, by leaving my Mother, and my Country, to ſee if I could mend my miſerable Eſtate. I did ſo, and becauſe I would not bee knowne, I vvould not make vſe of my Fathers name: but by that of *Guzman*, vvhich I tooke from my Mother; and of *Alfarache*, which was the place of my inheritance, as alſo of my beeing. With this reſolution, I went abroad to ſee the World, travelling from place to place, re-commending my ſelfe to God, and well-diſpoſed people, in whom I had put my truſt.

Whence Guzman de Alfarache *had his name.*

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

How Guzman *departed from his Mothers house vpon a Friday towards the Euening, discouering by the way the torments of hunger, and that which befell him with his Hostesse, recounting many notable examples of some Rules of ill gouernment.*

The delicacie wherein Guzman *liued.*

I Was a fat plumpe Lad, well fed, and cocker'd vp, bred in *Seuill*, neuer checkt, chid, nor corrected by my Father: My Mother (as you haue heard) a Widdow-woman, my selfe cramm'd with Collops of Bacon, your fineſt Bread, and your daintieſt Creame; your sops of Honey steep'd in Rose-water, more lookt on and adored, then a Merchant of *Toledo*, or at leaſt as good a man as he, it grieued me very much (beſides that the loue of a mans Countrey is sweet and deare vnto him) to forgoe thus my house, my kinsfolke and my friends. But being forced thereunto, I could not auoid it. The desire that I had to see the World, and to goe into *Italy* to take acquaintance of my Noble Kindred and Alliance, did much quicken and put life into me.

Guzman departs from Seuill to see the world. and what hapned vnto him the first night.

I set forth, which I ought not to haue done (I may be bold to say it) late, and vnluckily. And thinking to meet with some rich remedy, I lost all that little that I had. That hapned vnto me, which befell the Dogge in the Fable, with the shadow of his piece of flesh in the water.

I had scarce gone out of the City gate, when (without being able to make resistance) two great Riuers (like an ouer-flowing *Nilus*) did breake out fró forth mine eyes, watring my face in great abundance, till it was bathed all ouer with teares. What with this, and the nights comming on (for it grew darke) I could not discerne any light of heauen: nor perceiue so much as a hands-breadth of earth as I went along. When I came to *San Lazaro*, (which is but a little way off from the Citie,) I sate me down there vpon the staires or steps, by which we goe vp to that holy Hermitage: There I made a new muster of my life, survay'd it ouer and ouer, and discourſed with my selfe therevpon, I was about to goe backe againe, for that I came forth ill provided, worse aduised, and poorely furnisht with money for so long a Voyage, hauing scarce sufficient to serue my turne for a farre shorter journey. And amongst other my so many misfortunes, (which when they once begin me, come by clusters, hanging like Cherries; one at the eayle of another) it was Friday night: and withall somewhat darke. I had neither supt, nor had any bever that afternoone. Had I gone out of the City vpon a flesh day, although I had beene borne blinde, my nose would haue helped me to smell out some Cookes shoppe or other, where I might haue had a penny Pasty, wherewithall to entertaine my stomacke, and to dry vp my teares, and so my sorrow would haue beene the lesse.

Misfortunes seldome come alone.

Then I began to perceiue, how much more sensible a man is of the good hee loseth, then when hee injoyed it; and what difference there is betweene the hungry belly, and the full-fed paunch. All troubles passe the better with bread: Where good feeding faileth, there no good followeth; no euill which aboundeth not; no pleasure that indureth, nor content to comfort vs. All fret and chafe, and know not why, nor wherefore. No man is in fault; and yet they lay it one vpon another; all runne vpon the haunt, feigning strange *Chimera's* in thir heads; all is then nothing but gouernment; all is Philosophy. I had a great minde to my supper; but the diuell a bit of any thing that I could get to put to my mouth, saue a little fresh water that ranne from a fountaine that was there hard by. I knew not what to doe with my selfe; nor how

He that hath not wherewithall to eate, hath part of sorrowes.

to caſt about, to bring my ſelfe into ſome one Hauen or other. That which did hearten me one way, did diſcourage mee another. I found my ſelfe betwixt feares and hopes; a ſteepe downe-fall before mine eyes, and rauening Wolues ready to deuoure me at my backe. My thoughts began as faſt to wauer, as my feet did to wander: at length I was willing to put my ſelfe into Gods hands. I entred into a Church, I powr'd forth ſuch a ſhort prayer, but whether deuout enough or no, I know not. Nor would they ſuffer me to dwell any longer on my Orizons; for the houre was come that they were to rid the Church, and to ſhut vp the doores.

The night was now ſhut vp, and with it my imaginations, but not the teares, that trickled from mine eyes: In this melancholy humour I fell at laſt aſleepe vpon a ſeate without in the Church-porch. I know not what ſhould be the reaſon of it, vnleſſe peradventure that ſleepe crackes cares, and breakes melancholy in twaine. As that *Mountaneſſe* gaue vs to vnderſtand, who going to bury his Wife, went bare-foot, and bare-legg'd; his Iacket with its inſide outward; and ſo in the reſt, all was Kim-kam, I know not how. In that mountainous Country, the houſes ſtand apart, and ſome of them very farre from the Church. And paſſing by a Taverne, he perceiued white-Wine was there to be ſold: whereupon he made as if he had ſome other neceſſary buſineſſe to do, and ſaide vnto them, On a Gods name, keepe on afore, my maſters, with this vnfortunate Coarſe, for I ſhall ouer-take you in a trice: So hee ſlunke backe, and went into the Taverne; where taking cup after cup, hee ſoop't ſo long, till hee was ſtarke drunke, and there fell aſleepe. Now when thoſe of his company came from the Buriall, and found him ſtretcht out vpon the floore, they called alowde vnto him; hee after a while being come againe to himſelfe, looking ſomewhat heauily vpon them, ſaid; Now a pockes of all ill lucke; pardon mee (my maſters) I pray, pardon mee; for, I ſweare vnto you, that there is not any thing in the world, that cauſeth more thirſt, or more ſleepe, then ſorrow. It was juſt euen ſo with mee; for it was now Saturday morning, and the Sunne was two houres high, when I began to bethinke my ſelfe what I had beene doing; nor ſhould I haue wak't ſo ſoone, if the Timbrels, and the Songs, and the Dancings of certaine Women, whith came thither that day to keepe their Wake, and to feaſt, and bee merry, with their dubbing, and their bawling, had not rowz'd mee vp from ſleepe. I got mee, (though ſomewhat of the lateſt) hungry, and drowſie, without knowing for a while where I was; that mee thought I was ſtill as it were in a dreame. But when at laſt I was fully awake, and found all was true that I ſaw, or heard, I ſaid to my ſelfe; *Echada eſta la ſuerte*, the Dye is throwne, God ſend mee good lucke. And with this reſolution, I went forward on my Journey; but the diuell a whit did I know whither I did go, nor indeede did I much ſtand vpon it: for all was one to mee. At laſt, I tooke that way, which offered it ſelfe faireſt to mine eye; let it leade whither it would, I did not care. Which did then put me in minde of thoſe ill-governed both houſes and Common-wealths, where the feet performe the heads office. Where reaſon and vnderſtanding doe not diſpatch buſineſſes; where they haue not the command, it is to melt a mans gold, (come of it what may come) and afterwards to adore a calfe. My feet carried me along, I followed as faſt after them; come good, or come ill; ouer hill and dale trudge I. That happening vnto mee, which befell a fooliſh Phyſician in *Mancha*; who had no learning in the world, neuer ſtudied any Phyſicall Author; but had gotten together (which he carried along with him) a great number of Receipts; ſome for Syrrupes, and ſome for Purges, which were diſtributed into ſeuerall, either Boxes, or Vyols.

The conceit of a Mountaneſſe.

What houſes and Common-wealths are ill gouerned.

A tale of an ignorant Phyſitian.

Now this cunning Leech, when hee viſited any ſicke-body, (and look't to be well payed for his paines, for the good he ſhould do him) hee would thruſt his

his hand into his Satchell, (which he ſtill bare about with him for theſe purpoſes) and then would hee take forth one of his *recipe's*, ſaying firſt to himſelfe, God diſpoſe it to good. And ſo hee gaue the Patient that which came firſt to hand, without any more ado; worke how it would worke, that was all one to him, he would put that ſtill to the venture. In letting of blood, he kept no account either for the Veine, or the quantitie, but would cry, either a little more, or a little leſſe, as hee chanced to blurt the word at all adventure out of his mouth, caſting himſelfe vpon Fortune, ruſhing through thicke and thinne; like him that careleſly runnes through a Corne-field, where ſome Eares are trod vnder-foot, and ſome ſcape without harme, more by chance, then good cunning. I might then haue ſaid to my ſelfe, as did hee, God diſpoſe it to good: for I did not know what courſe I ranne, I was ignorant of my way, nor could I tell, (if my life ſhould haue lyen vpon it) whither I was bound.

Afflictions are ſent vs by God for our good.

But becauſe his diuine Majeſtie ſendeth troubles, according to his owne good will and pleaſure, and for ſuch ends, as are beſt knowne to himſelfe, they turne all to our greater good, if wee can haue the grace to make true vſe of them. They began now to come faſt vpon mee, and followed mee at an inch, not allowing mee one moment of content, nor affoording mee ſo much as a breathing-time from my cares, all the while that I was abroad in my trauels: ſo that they neuer left, whither-ſoeuer I went. But theſe were not thoſe, that were ſent mee of God, but onely thoſe which my ſelfe went ſeeking after. And there is a great deale of difference betweene the one, and the other: for thoſe that come from the hand of God, hee knowes how to free vs from them: and ſuch as theſe, are Mynes of moſt pure gold, moſt precious Iewels, couered with a little Sward, or light Turfe of earth, which with a little labour may be diſcouered and found. But thoſe which men draw vpon themſelues by their vices and ſenſuall delights, are guilded Pilles, which deceiuing the ſight with a falſe ſhow of a ſauourie taſte, put the body out of order, if not vterly ouerthrow it. They are greene fields, full of venemous Vipers: ſtones (at the firſt ſight) of great eſteeme, but vnderneath are full of Scorpions: and laſtly, an eternall death, which deludeth vs with a ſhort life.

Troubles ſent from God, are Iewels.

But drawne on by our ſelues, are tormentt vnto vs.

This day hauing wearied out my ſelfe with going onely but two little Leagues, (which were the firſt that euer I went) it ſeemed vnto mee, that I had arriued at the *Antipodes*, and like another famous *Columbus*, that I had diſcouered a new World. Well, I came at length to an Inne, full of ſweate and duſt, my feet ſurbated, my ſelfe ſad, and aboue all, with my Mill in very good ſtate to grind, my teeth ſharpe, and my ſtomacke faint. It was about Noone, I ask't what vve might haue to dinner: they told mee, That they had nothing but egges; it had not beene amiſſe if they had beene egges: for either vvhether the roguiſh Hoſteſſe, through too much heat, clocking ouer them, or that the Fox had kill'd the Hen, ſome vvere grovvne addle, others ready to hatch; and that ſhee might not loſe by them, ſhee had put them in a boxe, and had mingled them vvith other egges that vvere good. But ſhee did not deale ſo ill vvith me, God revvard her according to her vſage of me: ſhe ſavv I vvas a yong Lad, ruddy-cheek't, full-fac't, and plumpe vvithall; that I vvas a novice in the World, and look't like a good honeſt ſimple Youth, and that any thing vvould ſerue mee vvell enough: Vpon this ſhee ask't me; My pretty childe, vvhence are you? I told her, I vvas of *Seuill*: vvith that, ſhee came neerer vnto me, and giuing me a chocke vnder the chin, ſhee ſaid vnto mee: Novv you little vvanton foole, vvhither vvander you? O good God, hovv did her ſtinking breath annoy me! vvith her very touching of me, mee thought I had dravvne olde age vpon me, the attraction vvas ſo ſenſible to my ſeeming. This made me imagine, that the vtmoſt of euils had novv lighted vpon mee, in meeting vvith ſuch a filthy vnſauoury Slut. And if my Stomacke had beene full

The vnguety of an Hoſteſſe.

at

at that time, as it was empty, I ſhould haue ſpued out all within me; for my ſtomacke then roſe vp to my mouth, and my guts had almoſt kiſt my lippes. I told her, that I was going to the Court, and wiſht her to giue me ſomewhat for my dinner. Then ſhe made me ſit downe vpon a lame Bench, and on the top of a little blocke, ſhee ſpred a Diſh-clout before mee, juſt for all the world, like vnto the Maulkins wherewith ſhe ſwept her Ouen; and this (forſooth) was my Table-cloath: my Salt-ſellar was the foot of an olde broken Pitcher, or ſome piece of pot-ſheard, ſuch as ſhe ſets full of water, to make her Poultry drinke: and halfe a Loafe of bread, that was blacker then her Napery. This preparation made, ſhee preſently powr'd me foorth vpon a plate, a Froize of egges, which might more truly haue beene tearmed a Plaiſter of egges: they, the bread, the Iarre, the watter, the Salt-ſellar, the ſalt, the linnen, and the Hoſteſſe, were all one; ſo well did they ſuit together. I knew my ſelfe to bee a yong traueller, and therefore held it diſcretion to make no reply, but to take all patiently; my tongue was tyed, my mouth muzzled, my ſtomacke empty, my guts ſhrunke, and clung ſo cloſe together, as if they had beene newly milched. I was as ſharpe ſet vpon my Froize, as a Hog vpon his Akornes, and ſlopt vp my egges, as a Sow do's Waſh, I was ſo eager vpon the buſineſſe. I made no bones of it, all went cleane vp together without any great chewing; howbeit, to ſpeake the truth, I felt the tender bones of thoſe vntimely Chickens to crackle betweene my teeth, that they made my gummes to tickle againe. I muſt tell you truly, that me thought (beſides the ill-fauouredneſs of the taſte, which was not like that of other egges, which I vſ'd to eate at home in my mothers houſe) this was but a courſe kinde of vſage; and ſuch as I had not here-tofore beene acquainted with. But I did let that conceit paſſe by, & drown'd the imagination thereof in my hunger and wearineſſe; conceiting with my ſelfe, that the diſtance of place, or difference of the Climate, might bee the cauſe thereof, and that all egges were not of one ſauour, nor of one quality. In concluſion, I digeſted all things ſo well, that I tooke it for a token of good lucke. For it is as proper to him that is hungry, not to ſtand vpon Sauces, and your fine reliſhes; as to him that is in want, to ſtep out into the high way, and to take a purſe. No booty comes amiſſe to him that is in need. Beg, ſteale, or any thing, rather then ſtarue.

He that is truly hungry, will not ſticke to eate any thing.

I made light of it, my dinner was ſhort, and as quickly diſpatch't, and tooke in good part this my firſt courſe, though it could not be well courſer. Vpon my bread I dwelt ſomewhat longer; I fell to that a little more leyſurely, pawſing now and then betwixt euery bit; for it being likewiſe very bad, I was forced to take longer time; one morſell making way for another, that it might the more orderly deſcend downe into my ſtomacke. I beganne with the cruſt, and ended in the crumme, which was as tough as Whit-lether, and as dry as a Paſte-boord. But whatſoeuer it were, were it better or worſe, I devoured euery jot of it; nor did leaue out of curteſie, the leaſt crumme thereof for the Ants to feed vpon, no more then if it had beene little, and good. That happening vnto me, which doth befall good feeders, when they fall cloſe to a diſh of fruit; who picking out firſt the beſt and the ripeſt, doe (as in the eating of Cherries) eate vp the greeneſt and worſt laſt, without once thinking of thoſe that were gone before. Then did I eat apace, one bit (as they ſay) driuing down another, till I had made an end of halfe a Loafe: which, if it had beene good, or but any thing reaſonable, or that it had but pleaſed mine eye, (for it was but poore browne-bread) I would haue taken in a greater crop, and haue filled vp my pannell, with a whole Loafe of at leaſt three pound weight. The yeere was barren by reaſon of the great droughts; and in ſuch times as thoſe, *Seuil* was wont to ſuffer much ſcarcitie: for euen in their better, and more plentifull yeeres, they haue had much adoe to rubbe out: what hope can there then bee, when corne is ſcant with them?

But

But it is not fit, that I should enlarge my selfe in this subject, nor open the mysterie thereof vnto you, by giving you a reason for it. I am a sonne of that Citie, a Towne-borne child: I vvill therefore hold my peace; for all the whole World is one and the same, here and there, and every where, all alike. For no man buyes an [a] Office for any other end and purpose, but for his profit, be it publicke, or be it private; they will grate and scrape, be it by hooke or by crooke, to raise a fortune there-out vnto themselues. Where are they, that will part with so many thousand Ducats, for to doe good vnto the poore, but to themselues. For ere they will bestow a farthing-token on a poore body by way of almes, they vvill first examine the businesse, and consult with themselues, whether it be a charitable act or no.

Thus it fared with a *Regidor*, who being espied by an old man, one of that Towne where he had to doe, to exceed the bounds of his duty, and to doe things beyond his Commission, call'd him vnto him, and told him; How now Sinior N, &c. Is this it, that you were sworne vnto, when you were admitted at the Assembly, to be one of our Company, that you should goe about to picke vp your crummes a this fashion, and trot vp and downe to sharke for these [b] *Menudo's*? To vvhom he made this answere; Doe not you see, how I comply vvith mine Oath, since I come for them every Saturday to the Shambles? I bought them vvith my money; and I had them out of the poore sheepes belly. After this manner all things passe, in all places; it is the world. They goe dividing the spoyle among themselues; they vvill fetch flowre from all parts to make themselues a good Cake: Claw me, claw thee: to day for me, to morrow for thee: doe thou giue me leaue to buy, and I vvill giue thee leaue to sell. They make restraint for selling of Victuals, saue onely at such set times and places: they set the prices vpon all things, as if they vvere their owne: and when they please, they will sell the same againe at vvhat rate they thinke fit. For all is theirs, as well what is bought, as what is sold.

My selfe am a Witnesse, that a *Regidor* of one of the chiefest Cities of *Andaluzia*, and Kingdome of *Granada*, had a flocke of sheepe, an herd of Goates, and some other milke-beasts; and for that the weather was cold, he could by no meanes vtter his milke, but every man fell to his [c] *Bunnuelo's*. Now thinking vvith himselfe, that he should lose much thereby, if Lent should grow on, and should not remedy the matter before-hand, hee propounded at an open Meeting, or publicke Assembly, That the Morisean *Bunnulero's*, or Fritter-makers, did rob the Common-wealth. Hee rated them therefore at a lesser price, then it stood them in, amounting to little more then sixe [d] *Maravedis*. Well, he was willing in the end to raise them to eight, allowing them rather a small then moderate gaine.

Herevpon, none would make of them, because they could get nothing by the bargaine. And so in that space or tract of time, he spent the profits of his Cattell, in Butter, Creame, fresh-Cheese, and other such like things, till the time of yeere was come, that he was to put foorth his Flockes and Herds of Cattell into the common fields. And when he began to make his Cheese, then would he raise vp your *Bunnuelo's* to twelue *Maravedis*, as they were at before; but then Summer was comming on, and they shortly to grow out of season. He himselfe did not sticke to report this crafty tricke of his, to teach men how to become good husbands, and how they ought to beate their braines, to make shift to liue.

Now let vs returne againe into our old way, from which we haue digrest: for me thinkes it is not meet, that wee should lay all the fault vpon the Magistrates and Governours of Townes and Incorporations, seing that wee may distribute it as well among others. Let vs throw some of this vpon your Purveyors, and Commissaries; and not vpon all neither, but on some of them, as it may be foure out of fiue, or so; who like Caterpillers destroy the Land, by robbing

a *Or a Memply. Against the ill Governours and Magistrates of Seuill.*

b *The conceit of this passage, consists in the word* Menudos, *and its double signification: For* Menudo's *are brasse Moneys: they signifie also particular necessities.* Menudo *is likewise the entrailes of a sheep, together with the head and feet, and in birds, the garbage. And these are vsually eaten in Spaine vpon Saturday, but no other part of the carkase. This last signification suits best.*

c Bunnuelo, *is a certaine round Fritter compos'd of Meale, Oyle, and Honey: and is more vs'd in Spaine, then in any other part, in Winter time. It is called* Bunnuelo, *because it is strained, or squeezed out of the Fist, and so let fall into the Pan of Oyle.*

d *A* Maravedis, *is a small piece of brasse-money, 32 of them go to sixpence.*

The craft of a couetous Magistrate.

robbing of poore old men, and deſolate vvidowes, by deceiving of their betters, and by telling lyes, and informing falſe-hoods to their King; the one for to increaſe their lands and inheritances; and the other, to haue them confirmed vnto them, that they may ſettle a good eſtate vpon the Heires of their houſe, and haue where-withall to liue in fulneſſe, and in plenty.

This likewiſe is ſomewhat out of the vvay from that diſcourſe vvhich I ought heere to treate of, and requires of it ſelfe a whole and intire booke. I treat in this of mine owne life, and therefore will not meddle with other mens; but I doe not know, vvhether I ſhall be able, when a ball offers it ſelfe ſo fairely vnto me, to pull backe my hand or no? For there is no man that is Maſter of himſelfe, when he is on horſe backe: How much more is a man vnable to containe himſelfe, in things ſo generally knowne? Both the one and the other is generally embraced, and all walke the ſame way, yeelding the field to the ſtronger, crying out *Vivat qui vincit*, let him liue that conquers; and he weare gold that wins it. But alas, how doe we deceiue our ſelues? For we are thoſe that are conquered; and he that deceiveth, is the deceived. I ſay then, that *Senilla per fas, aut per nefas*, either by right or by wrong, one way or other, I know not which (conſidering her abundance of fruits, and the deareneſſe of them) ſuffereth ſterility, and ſcarcitie; and that yeere was there greater want and penury then heretofore, by reaſon of ſome ſecret diſorders, and through the coveтouſneſſe of thoſe, who ſhould haue ſought to remedy the matter, who did ſtudy onely their owne ends, and to make a particular fortune to themſelues. The ſecret of this myſterie paſt onely betweene ſome three or foure of them, many vvere not acquainted with it, who without conſidering the ends, tooke in hand bad beginnings, and divelliſh meanes, to the hurt of their owne Common-wealth.

Rich men are like Whales: for they grow great by the hurt of others.

In all my travels, I haue ever obſerved, that theſe great rich men, and powerfull perſons, are like vnto Whales, who opening wide the mouth & jawes of their covetouſneſſe, ſwallow vp all that comes in their vvay, to the end that their houſes may be well provided for, and their revenues increaſed, without caſting any eye of compaſſion vpon the poore young Orphane; or lending an eare to the cry of the diſtreſſed Damſell; or affording his ſhoulders for to vphold the feeble and the vveake; or opening his charitable hands to relieue the ſicke, and him that is in neede: but rather vnder the name of good government, every man ſo governes himſelfe, that he does the beſt he can, to draw all the vvater to his owne Mill. They publiſh good deſires; but they exerciſe bad actions. Their pretenſions are faire; but their practiſe ſtarke naught. They would ſeeme to bee Gods Lambes, innocent and harmeleſſe ſoules, but the Devill onely makes profit of them: they fall wholly to his ſhare; he, and none but he reapes the fruit of them: God hath the name indeede, but the Devill hath the ſhearing of them. There was good ſtore of Rye-bread, paſſible enough, and at a reaſonable price; Hee that had Wheat, reſerved the flower of the Meale for his owne table, and the refuſe he brought forth to ſell in the Market, as if any thing were good enough for the poore Commons. Our Officers and great men turn'd to be Bakers, and thoſe went about to burne and vvaſte the Country, which ſhould haue rather beene vvilling to haue beene burned for it. I cannot deny, but this was puniſhed, and that there were many good men, to whom evill ſeemed evill. But in ſuch neceſſities as theſe, it is not to be holpen by a few. Beſides, the great numbers of thoſe that vvere intereſſed therein, did cruſh thoſe, that offered to ſtirre againſt them, becauſe they vvere poore. And if poore, it is enough, I neede ſay no more. Let every man make his owne conjecture, and diſcourſe that with himſelfe.

Perceiveſt thou not how impatient I am? Seeſt thou not that I cannot con-

containe my ſelfe? and how that my penne, before ever I thought of laſhing out ſo farre, hath ſlipt vpon this Theame. They gaue mee the yarke with the ſpurre, and I turned my head to ſtrike where they pricked mee. I know not what excuſe to make thee, but to tell thee, that I do as carriers doe, that driue their beaſts of burthen before them, who ruſh the man that meetes them againſt the wall, or throwes him to the ground, and then ſay, I cry you mercy, Sir. In concluſion, all the bread was naught, although then it did not relliſh amiſſe with mee. I did refreſh my ſelfe with eating, and did cheere vp my ſelfe with drinking, for the Wines of thoſe Countries are exceeding rich, generous, and full of ſpirit; and with this I had pretty vvell recovered my ſelfe, and receiued new courage. And my feet, that vvere wearied out with bearing my belly, though empty, and of ſmall weight (as being lightly laden) now that it was full, and had his loade, made ſhift to carry my feete.

And ſo I went on on my way, vvith no ſmall care to know, what knacking of (a) *Caſtannetas* that might bee, vvhich made the Egges that I had eaten, to daunce in my mouth. My imagination vvas working to and fro vpon this matter; and the more it did beate vpon it, the more misfortunes repreſented themſelues vnto mee, and my ſtomacke began to ſtirre more and more: for I could ſuſpect nothing leſſe then a kind of loathing, ſeeing how ill they vvere dreſt, of what blackneſſe the oyle, like to that vvhich is it the bottome of a Lampe; a fowle Pan; and a fowle bleare-ey'd Hoſteſſe.

Thus my imagination running from one thing to another, I met at laſt vvith the truth; and having gone another League, my fancie vvrought ſo vvith mee, that I could hold no longer. For as it is vvith your vvomen that are vvith child, ſo was it juſt with mee. Eructations and belchings did come and goe from my ſtomacke to my mouth, till at laſt I fell a vomitting, till there was not any thing left within mee. And even yet to this day, mee thinkes I heare thoſe little chickens, thoſe poore pretty fooles, cry ſtill peepe, peepe, within my bowels.

Being in this miſerable taking, I ſate mee downe on the ſide of a hollow Ditch, that ſerv'd for a fence to certaine Vines that were thereby; conſidering vvith my ſelfe what misfortunes I had, and vvas like to runne into, much repenting my ſelfe of my ill adviſed departure.

But it is, and ever vvill bee, the faſhion of young fellowes, to caſt themſelues away headlong, vpon their preſent pleaſures, vvithout having any eye, or any regard in the vvorld to their future hurt, or the harme that vvill follow after.

(a) Caſtanneta, *is the ſtroke or ſound, that is giuen with the Thumbe, and the middle finger, when they dance. And to make the noiſe the lowder, they tye two hollow thinne pieces of wood to their thumbe, which are made round after the manner of your Cheſe-Nuts.* Caſtanneta *being deriued from* Caſtanea, *which ſignifies a Cheſe-Nut.*

CHAP.

Chapter IV.

Guzman de Alfarache, recounteth to a Carrier what had betided him with his Hosteſſe: and diſcourſeth of laughing. After that, hee tels two ſhort Tales; one, of a covetous Phyſitian; the other of two young men, how they vſ'd the ſaid Hosteſſe; And vpon the necke of that fals into a learned Diſcourſe touching the pardoning of injuries.

TRoubled in minde, full of care and thoughts, and penſiuely muſing with my ſelfe, I lay all along on the ground, leaning mine head vpon mine arme; when by chance a Carrier hapt to paſſe by, who went along with empty Mules, which were to bee laden with Wine at the Village called *Caçalla de la Sierra.* Hee ſeeing mee ſitting in this melancholy manner, a Yong Stripling, all alone, afflicted in minde, handſome in my perſon, and reaſonably well clad, as one that had beene much made of heretofore, began (as I then conceiued) to pitty my troubles, and to take compaſſion of mee, asking mee, what the matter was, that I was ſo ſad. I told him all that had hapned vnto mee in my Inne; and had ſcarce made an end of my Tale, when hee brake forth into ſuch a Youle of laughing, that hee was redy to burſt, and I to breake forth into Choller. And that face of mine, which before was as pale as aſhes, was ſet on fire by thoſe coales of anger, which were kindled in my breſt againſt him. But becauſe I was not then a Cock that ſtood vpon my owne dunghill, nor ſcarce mine owne man; as alſo for that I found my ſelfe diſarmed, and as it were in a deſart by my ſelfe: I held my tongue, and ſayd nothing vnto him, becauſe I could not crowe as I would. For it is diſcretion to diſſemble that, which a man cannot helpe; Patiently brooking this his rather grinning then laughing: And thoſe ends that are doubtfull in the obtaining, muſt be throughly firſt conſulted on, and be reduced to ſome certaine grounds and Principles. For opinions are various, and honours vitreous, glaſſy, and ſubject to breaking. And if I ſhould there, at that time, haue miſ-behaued my ſelfe, happely hee would haue layd hold on mee firſt, and by adventuring to gaine vpon him, I might haue runne the hazzard, if not the certainty of loſing all. For *Competition* is a thing to be avoided. But if it cannot be avoided, but that wee muſt needes haue it, let it bee with our equals; and rather of the two, with thy Superiours, then thy Inferiours; but haue a care that thou doe not over-match thy ſelfe with thoſe that are two ſtrong for thee, leſt they trample vpon thee, and tread thee vnder foot. Every thing hath its Vice, and there muſt an account be giuen of it. But although I did forbeare him; yet hee had ſo heated mee, that out of the warmth of that choller, which yet boyled within mee, I could not chooſe but tell him:

The diſcription of laughter.

My friend; Do you ſee mee coated for a Foole or with a Fooles Cap on my head? Or what elſe is it that occaſions you thus to laugh? Hee, rather increaſing, then ceaſing his laughter, as if it had beene a taske put vpon him, or a part that hee had beene enjoyned to play: ſo faſt it came from him, that gaping with his mouth fiſt-wide, hee let his head fall on tone ſide, (for hee was not able for laughing to hold it vpright:) and laying both hands as hard as he was able, one while vpon his belly, another on his ſides, for feare of burſting; hee was ſcarce able to ſit vpon his Beaſt for falling, and ſeemed with his extreme ſtraining of himſelfe, as if he would at every bout haue come tumbling downe on the ground.

I was about to anſwer him ſome three or foure times, but I could never come to do it: for I no ſooner offered to ſpeake vnto him, but hee preſently fell

fell a-freſh to his laughing till hee chuck't againe; ſo did his pot runne over, when it once fell a boyling.

God be thanked yet at laſt, after this great invndation and ſuddaine breaking forth of waters (that thoſe overflowings of *Tagus* could not bee greater) began to fall by little and little, by patches and by pieces, now a word and then a word, as well as hee could, having taken a little breath, delivering his minde by halfes, like one that ſtumbles and goes, and goes and ſtumbles, hee blundred forth theſe words vnto me: My good Youth, I do not laugh at your ill ſucceſſe, nor do your miſ-fortunes glad mee any whit at all: but I laugh at that, which hapned to this woman ſcarce two houres ſince. Did you happily meete with two young fellowes, that were *Camerades*, and walkt along together, and ſeemed by their habit to be Souldiers; the one clad in a medley greene ſuite; the other in a gray or aſh-colour'd cloth, with a white doublet cut to the skin? Theſe two (quoth I) by your diſcription, if my memory do not faile mee, when I left the Inne, remained there behinde, beeing newly come in, when I went my way, and called for their dinner. Theſe then (ſayd the Carrier) are thoſe that haue revenged your quarrell. And the jeſt, that they put vpon the Hoſteſſe, is that which I now laugh at. But if you goe my vvay, get vp vpon one of theſe beaſts; & as we ride along I will tell you how it was. I thankt him for his kindneſſe, as I had good cauſe ſo to doe, conſidering my preſent neceſſitie, rendring him ſuch good language, as I thought might make ſufficient paiment for ſuch a courteſie. For good words requite good workes, when a man is not able to pay him, that hee is beholding vnto, in better mony; and that he is in neceſſity, to whom the kindneſſe is done.

Kinde words currant money in caſe of neceſſity.

Mounting my ſelfe then vpon this ill accoutred Gennet, howbeit it was no better then a plaine Aſſe with a pack-ſaddle; yet it ſeemed to mee a *Silla de manos*, or eaſie hand-Chaire, a Litter or a Coach, drawne with foure horſes. For ſome ſuccour, in caſe of neceſſity, although it bee little, yet it helpeth much; and that which is but a trifle to him that giues, is an infinite ſupply to him that wants: it is like a little ſtone, that is throwne into a ſmooth & cleere water, which makes not onely many, but great circles alſo. And then is a kindneſſe moſt to bee eſteemed, when it comes in a good conjuncture, albeit it alwayes comes well, and never too late, ſo as it come at laſt. Now (me thought) I ſaw Heaven opened, and my honeſt Carrier appearing vnto mee in the ſhape of an Angell. His face was as joyfull vnto mee, as that of the deſired Phyſician is to him that is afflicted with ſickneſſe. I ſay, deſired; becauſe (as perhaps you may haue heard) a Phyſitian hath three faces. Of a man when wee ſee him, and haue no neede of him: of an Angell, when wee are ſicke, and cannot bee without him; and of a Devill, when at one and the ſelfe-ſame time our ſickneſſe, and our purſe ends together, and yet for his private intereſt, and to gaine a fee, hee followes vs with dayly viſits. As it hapned to a Gentleman in *Madrid*, who having ſent for a Phyſitian, for a certaine infirmity, where-withall hee was troubled, every viſit that hee made, gaue him a crowne. The humour ceaſed; but his Phyſitian was not in the humour to ceaſe from comming vnto him.

A Phyſitian hath three faces.

A tale of a Phyſitian that lou'd money too well. In Spaine your Phyſitians fee is ordinarily two ſhillings; the better ſort give foure ſhillings, and the beſt ſeldom above a Crowne.

Now the Gentleman when hee ſaw that hee was thorow well, and that his Phyſician did ſtill continue his viſits, he got him vp one morning very early, and went to Church.

Now when the Phyſician came to viſit him, and found him not at home, hee asked his ſervant whither hee was gone. Hee like a foole as hee was (for there are ſervants ſtill inow for the Maſters hurt, but few for their profit) told him, that he was gone forth to Maſſe to ſuch a Church. My nimble Doctor, putting ſpurres to his Mule for to make more haſt, went with all ſpeede to the ſayd Church, and ſearching for him at laſt hee found him; and then ſayd vnto him; What a-Gods name, Sir, do you meane to commit ſo great an

The nature of Servants.

exceſſe, as to go abroad without my leaue? The Gentleman, who knew well inough what hee came for, and ſeing that now hee had no more need of him, put his hand in his pocket, tooke out his purſe, drew forth a Crowne, and putting it in his hand, told him; Here, take it; (maſter Doctor) for by the faith of a Gentleman, I now perceiue, that this ſacred place cannot priviledge me from you.

See here, how farre the covetouſneſſe of a fooliſh Phyſitian carries him; and how farre the vertue of a quicke and noble diſpoſition, this other Gentleman.

I betooke mee to my beaſt, and fetching my riſe, I got vpon his backe, and away wee went together: and wee had ſcarce gone a furlong from the place, but wee met with two Church-men that ſate there hard by, expecting ſome paſſengers, that would carry them on horſe-backe towards *Caçalla*, (for there was their dwelling) and had beene at *Sevell* about a certaine Suit in Law. By their carriage and their countenance you might well know their good life and their poverty. They were well ſpoken men, very kind, and very courteous; the one was about ſome 36. yeares of age, the other aboue fifty. They made the Carrier ſtay, they agreed with him; and, doing as I had done before, they got each of them vp vpon his Aſſe, and wee proceeded on our journey.

But all this while, ſo great was the laughter of this honeſt man, and ſo exceſſiue beyond all meaſure, that hee could ſcarce go on with his tale: for betwixt every word hee would let goe the ſluce of his ſides, whileſt like a Flood that furiouſly breakes forth, his laughing ſuddenly fluſhes out vpon him: and as in houſes, where men vittaile vpon the way, a man ſhall meete many times with a bare couple of Hens onely amongſt fiue hundred perſons; and ſee what they want in good cheere, they make vp in good mirth: ſo this mans laughter was three-fold more then his diſcourſe; ſo farre did his ſpleene out-talke his tongue. Theſe his delayes were ſo many Speares in my ſides; every deferring was a farther provoking: ſo that I was all this while vpon thornes. For hee that hath a longing deſire to know a thing, would willingly haue one word come treading on the heeles of another; and with a quicke and nimble pace come (if it were poſſible) huddling all at once out of the mouth.

Never any woman that hath beene with Child, did ever more earneſtly long for any thing, then I did to know the ſucceſſe of this buſineſſe. Mee thought I did conſume and pine away while I was held in this ſuſpence, I could haue burſt for anger, that my eares were put off, from having a preſent hearing: for I could not but expect, but that ſome great matter muſt ariſe from ſuch a glorious and ingenuous Fabricke as this made ſhow to bee. I began to conceit with my ſelfe, whether ſome fire falne from heaven, had conſumed the houſe, and all that was therein: or whether thoſe young fellowes had ſet the houſe on fire, and roſted my Hoſteſſe aliue: or at leaſt (for a leſſer revenge could not be taken of ſo vile a creature) whether or no they had ſtript her ſtarke naked, and hung her vp by the heeles vpon an Oliue-tree, and giuen her ſome thouſand laſhes, till they had left her for dead: for leſſe things then theſe his laughter could not promiſe. Howbeit, I muſt confeſſe had I beene then ſo wiſe and conſiderate, as I ſhould haue beene, I ought not to haue look't for any great matter, or to preſume that any good thing could proceede from one that was thus immoderate in his laughter. For even that which is moderate doth in a kind of manner, accuſe a man of lightneſſe, argue indiſcretion, want of judgement, and ſtore of vanity: but that which is diſ-compoſed, and out of reaſons compaſſe, is though there bee never ſo much occaſion offered) the marke of a mad-man, and the onely note of an abſolute Aſſe, or complete Foole.

Exceſſiue laughter condemned.

At laſt (God bee thanked) this Mountaine brought foorth its Mouſe: in conclu-

conclusion, he told vs, (but with a thousand stops and jumpes, and his wonted bounds and curvets of laughing) that hee having stayd to drinke a little wine, and to tarry the comming of a Companion of his, whom he had left behinde, he perceived, that the Hostesse of the house brought in on a Plate, a Froyze of six egges; three of them starke naught, the other not so bad; vvhich she set before them: and going about to divide this their Froyze or Tansey in twaine, it seemed vnto them, that it made a certaine kinde of resistance, refusing (as it were) to be parted, one piece hanging (like torne ragges) at the taile of another. Wherevpon, because this seemed to bee somewhat a bad signe, and such as they did not well like of; they began to scatch a little more narrowly, what should bee the cause thereof. They vvere not long in discovering the truth; for they might discerne certaine knobs and knurs in it; which, had it bin any body but my self, he might at first sight haue seen how the world went, and vvhere the fault lay; but being a young Lad, I should easily haue swallowed such a Gudgeon, and should in good manners haue slightly past it over. But these vvere a little more curious, and more Court-like, and sifted it out so finely, that they found to their seeming, three little round bumps, like three little Chickens heads clotted together. And this cleared the doubt; for finding the bils of these pretty fooles somewhat hard growne, and none of the tendrest, the pad that lay in the straw was presently perceived. And they taking one of them betweene their fingers, going about to crush and breake it in pieces, it put forth his bill, and began (though dead) to peepe forth its head, and spake alowd vnto them, and told them plainely, vvhence, and what he vvas. So they covered the Plate, clapping another therevpon, and whispered somewhat in secret amongst themselues: vvhat it vvas, I then knew not, howbeit afterwards it did manifest it selfe; for presently one of them called out, and said; Hostesse, haue you any thing else for vs? she had a little before (in their sight) bought a [a] *Sabalo*, (vvhich is a Fish like a Shad) vvhich she had put vpon the ground for to rub off the scales of it, telling them; I haue such a Fish here, vvhereof (if you vvill) I shall spare you a slice or two, other meat haue I none. I pray (mother) said they, broyle it vs quickly then, for vve must be gone; and if it stand vvith your good liking, set a price vvhat you vvill haue for it all, and vve vvill carry it home along vvith vs. She said, it being cut out into pieces, every slice vvill yeeld me a Royall, & I cannot bate you a farthing of it. They said, No: they thought it was too much, one Royall profit in the whole, were very good gaines.

A iest put vpon an Hostesse by two young fellowes.

At last they agreed for two Royals: for a bad pay-master never reckons vvhat he receiveth, nor stands a hucking for that, vvhich he is to take vpon trust. It vvent against her heart to let them haue it so, howbeit the gaine of two Royals in foure, for so short a time as she laid it out of her purse, did vvorke much with her, and made her willing at last to let them haue it. She cuts it out into pieces, broyles two of them, they eate it, the rest they wrapt vp in a Napkin of her owne; and after they had fill'd their bellies, being not vvell contented with their ill vsage, instead of paying their Reckoning, they reckoned without paying. For one of the young fellowes, taking the Froyze of egges in his right hand, went directly thither where the old vvoman was, vnpanching the belly of an old rotten sheepe, that had dyed in some ditch, to make thereof Tripes and Chitterlings, or (as the Spanish word hath it) [b] *Mondongo's*; and vvith all the force that he had, threw it full in the face of her, seeling vp both her eyes therewith, which looked like an old vvall all to bedawbed with rough-cast. Which playstred eyes of hers, he had made so blinde and painefull vnto her, that not daring to open them, she cryed out, as if shee had beene mad, whilest this his other Companion, behaving himselfe, as if he had rebuked him for it, and that he might be ashamed to vse a poore old woman in this vncivill kinde of fashion, threw me a handfull of hot ashes in the very face

a Sabalo, *is a knowne fish, and a savoury, and is called* Sabalo, *quasi* Sapalo à *Sapore. In Latine they call it* Alofa, Frissa, Clupea. *In fresh water it doth vsually die.* Rondelecio de Piscibus, lib. 7. cap. 15.

b Mondongo, *is a hodge-podge made of the entrales and trotters of a sheep, or other beast, boyled, and sold at every corner of the streets in Spaine to poore folkes.*

face of her, and so they got them out of dores, telling her, as they went away: Ah you old rotten Carrion, *Qui cui fidebat, quietal pagne*, you are now payd in your owne money; what you got by your cozening, you may now put it in your eye.

Shee was toothlesse, chap-faine, hollow-eyed, and vvappering vvithall, her haire slutishly hanging about her eares, vnkempt, and as greazie, as it vvas knotty; a fouler Swine no man ever saw: mealed she was all over, like a Mullet dressed vvith flowre, or a Flounder that is ready for the frying-pan; with a gesture so graciously scurvie, a looke so pleasantly fierce, and in all the rest so handsomely ill-favoured, that as oft as you shall but thinke either of it or her, you cannot (if your life should lye vpon it) but you must needes burst forth into laughter.

With this, hee ended his storie, telling vs, that he had now matter enough to laugh at all the dayes of his life. Wherevnto I answered; And I to weepe. Why, quoth he? Because when time was, I did not doe the like: but like a coward (as I was) suffered my revenge to come from anothers hand. But I vow (if God giue me life and health) it shall cost her deare; I will make her pay for the old and the new; I will haue my penny-worths out of her, and make my selfe that full amends, that the longest day she ha's to liue, she shall thinke vpon the egges, and the Youth.

The good honest Clergy-men much condemned their Hostesse, and did as much reprooue my speech; for that I seemed to be grieved, that I had not done her a mischiefe. They both set themselues against mee, and turning towards mee, the ancienter of the two, seeing me so angry, and full of choler, spake thus vnto me:

Your hot and young bloud moues you to say that, vvhich your owne good nature and ingenuous disposition vvill by and by confesse to be ill: and I hope in God, that I shall worke so much good vpon you, that you vvill bee sory for the present: for vvhat you haue sayd, and study to correct hereafter, not onely the acting of any such violent deed, but the very thought of it.

A discourse touching the pardoning of iniuries.

Saint *Matthew* in the fift Chapter of his holy Gospell, and S^t *Luke* in his sixt, reade vs this Lesson; *Loue your enemies, and doe good to them that hate you.* Wherein you are first to consider, that the Evangelist doth not say, Doe good vnto those, that do ill vnto you; but he saith; Doe good to them that hate you. For suppose that your enemy should hate you, yet it is impossible that hee should hurt you, vnlesse you vvill your selfe. For, it being an infallible truth, that vve are to account those as true goods, which are to continue for ever: and that those vvhich faile vs to morrow, (as they often do) are more properly to be called evils, for the ill vse which wee make of them: since that in the trust that we haue in them, *& nos ipsos, & illa amittimus*, wee lose both them and our selues. We may reckon those our enemies, to be our best friends; and these our friends to be our greatest enemies; in regard of the effects which arise from the one and the other: for, from our enemies, ariseth all our true good; and from our friends, our assured hurt. We may plainely perceiue, how that the greatest good that we can draw from the faithfullest friend that wee haue in this vvorld, can be no more, then to pleasure vs either vvith his purse, by giving vs all that he hath; or by his life, by employing it in those things that giue vs content; or by his honour, by not sticking to hazard that for vs, when our reputation shall lie at the stake. In vvhich two latter, none will adventure themselues; or there are so few of them to be found, that I doubt we shall not be able to produce any example in these times vvherein we liue. But say it were so indeede, and that there were some such kinde of men now adayes, and should jumpe together in all these three repeated particulars, vvhen they haue done all that they can, it is much lesse (if in that which is not at all, a *magis* and a *minus*; a more, or a lesse, may be found) then a Geometricall

True good is that which is eternall.

The goods of this world are not good.

A faithfull friend, what good he may doe vs.

metricall point. For, when he hath giuen me all that hee hath in this world, (were it neuer so much) it is too small a substance to free me from hell. Besides, men doe not now adayes spend their wealth, and their riches vpon the vertuous, but such as are conditioned like themselues, and affect them in their sinnes; and these are the friends that they reckon of, and on these their purse is open.

If for my sake, my friend should lose his life, one minute of time is not added thereby vnto mine; if he should put his honour in perill, nay, say he should be willing to lose it quite for his loue to me, I say, that is not honour, nor may it be so called: for true honor is that which is ingaged in the seruice of God; and whatsoeuer is otherwise, and hath not some reference thereto, is false and euill. So that, whatsoeuer my friend shall throw vpon me, being it is temporall, and of no continuance, it is vnprofitable, vaine, and of little or no worth at all. But mine enemy proues all pure wheat; all turnes to profite, that comes from him to mee; so that my selfe will bee willing to make vse thereof. For from his ill-wishing to me, doe I come to wish well vnto him; and therefore God will wish well againe vnto me, and doe mee good, (though I deserue ill) for that I doe good for ill. If I pardon him a light injury, to me are forgiuen and remitted an infinite number of sinnes; and if hee speake ill of me, and I speake well of him, his euill language cannot hurt mee; and his bitter tongue shall bring me a blessing; *Come yee blessed of my Father*, &c. So that by his thoughts, wordes, and workes, mine enemy makes mine to bee good and true.

And what is the cause, thinke you, of this so great a wonder, and whence is the cause of this so excellent a vertue? I shall tell it you, because it is a thing commanded by God, because it is his expresse will and commandement so to doe. And if wee are to obserue that of the Princes of this world, much better (without comparison) is it to keepe that which is commanded vs by the King of Heauen; before whom are humbled all the hearts both of Heauen and earth. And that saying of his; *I command you this*, is a * sweet conserue, which is applyed to the distasted palate of him that is commanded. As if the Physicians should prescribe their sicke Patients to take flowres of Oranges, young preserued Wall-nuts, buds of Limmons, rindes of Pome-Citrons, the rootes of wilde * Borage, or Bugloss. What shall I say now? O my good Lord, doe not giue me any such thing! for a body that is strong and in health, can by no meanes away with it, but is rather vnpleasing then otherwise. But for the better swallowing of these Pilles, and to make the rellish the sweeter, they are so well candyed and rolled vp in Sugar, that what was hard in it selfe to bee taken downe, is now become sweet and sauoury vnto vs. The like effect doth this sweete Conserue of Gods Word worke with vs. *I command* (saith the Text) *that ye loue your enemies*. This is a plaine Pille, made for that foule Monster sell, which before was vnsauoury to our taste. So that which goes most against our stomackes, and which flesh and blood can hardly endure, by reason of its bitternesse, being to our concupiscences and fleshly desires, so bitter then very Gall and Worme-wood; The Spirit of God in the voyce of a good Physician, now it is made more pleasant, more sauoury and sweeter by farre, since that Christ our Redeemer hath so commanded it. So that if a man should now strike me on the one cheek, I would turne the other: for it is an honour vnto me punctually to obserue those orders which are deliuered vnto vs by those that are set in authority ouer vs, and not to breake them in the least iott or tittle.

A Generall doth command one of his Captaines, that hee shall goe and take such a strong place or passage, by which the enemy is to passe, or hath gotten ill aduantage: if he be a man of valour, and one that desires to shew himselfe, it shall be in his power to obey his Generall, and to shew his valour: for his Generall tells him; Take heed, I charge you, for it much importeth my Seruice, and

The good we receiue from our enemies.

* God commands nothing but sweet.

(a) The Spanish word is Escorzonera. This herbe the Latines call Viperina, a species of that which they call Barba de Cabron. It is called Escornera, because it is good against the poyson of [illegible]. Theophrastus and others write, that Vipers, and among the rest the Viper, [illegible] found out [illegible] Spaine in Castile, by a shepheard of Barbary, and afterwards [illegible] was being stung by a Viper, they gaue them the [illegible] of this herbe, whereupon they were [illegible] There is another good sort [illegible] plant in the [illegible] ens de Christ in Spaine. Vide Lobelium. Rhasis. [illegible] Tabernæmontanus. [illegible] Dodonæus.

face of her, and ſo they got them out of dores, telling her, as they went away; Ah you old rotten Carrion, *Qui en tal hora, qual tal pago*, you are now payd in your owne money: vvhat you got by your cozening, you may now put it in your eye.

Shee vvas toothleſſe, chap-falne, hollow-eyed, and vvappering vvithall, her haire ſluttiſhly hanging about her eares, vnkempt, and as greazie, as it vvas knotty: a fouler Swine no man ever ſaw: mealed ſhe was all over, like a Mullet dreſſed vvith flowre, or a Flounder that is ready for the frying-pan; with a geſture ſo graciouſly ſcurvie, a looke ſo pleaſantly fierce, and in all the reſt ſo handſomely ill-favoured, that as oft as you ſhall but thinke either of it or her, you cannot (if your life ſhould lye vpon it) but you muſt needes burſt forth into laughter.

With this, hee ended his ſtorie, telling vs, that he had now matter enough to laugh at all the dayes of his life. Wherevnto I anſwered; And I to weepe. Why, quoth he? Becauſe when time was, I did not doe the like: but like a coward (as I was) ſuffered my revenge to come from anothers hand. But I vow (if God giue me life and health) it ſhall coſt her deare; I will make her pay for the old and the new; I will haue my penny-worths out of her, and make my ſelfe that full amends, that the longeſt day ſhe ha's to liue, ſhe ſhall thinke vpon the egges, and the Youth.

The good honeſt Clergy-men much condemned their Hoſteſſe, and did as much reprooue my ſpeech; for that I ſeemed to be grieved, that I had not done her a miſchiefe. They both ſet themſelues againſt mee, and turning towards mee, the ancienter of the two, ſeeing me ſo angry, and full of choler, ſpake thus vnto me:

Your hot and young bloud moues you to ſay that, vvhich your owne good nature and ingenuous diſpoſition vvill by and by confeſſe to be ill: and I hope in God, that I ſhall worke ſo much good vpon you, that you vvill bee ſory for the preſent: for vvhat you haue ſayd, and ſtudy to correct hereafter, not onely the acting of any ſuch violent deed, but the very thought of it.

A diſcourſe touching the pardoning of iniuries.

Saint *Matthew* in the fift Chapter of his holy Goſpell, and S^t *Luke* in his ſixt, reade vs this Leſſon; *Loue your enemies, and doe good to them that hate you.* Wherein you are firſt to conſider, that the Evangeliſt doth not ſay, Doe good vnto thoſe, that do ill vnto you; but he ſaith; Doe good to them that hate you. For ſuppoſe that your enemy ſhould hate you, yet it is impoſſible that hee ſhould hurt you, vnleſſe you vvill your ſelfe. For, it being an infallible truth, that vve are to account thoſe as true goods, vvhich are to continue for ever: and that thoſe vvhich faile vs to morrow, (as they often do) are more properly to be called evils, for the ill vſe which wee make of them: ſince that in the truſt that we haue in them, *& nos ipſos, & illa amittimus*, wee loſe both them and our ſelues. We may reckon thoſe our enemies, to be our beſt friends; and theſe our friends to be our greateſt enemies; in regard of the effects which ariſe from the one and the other: for, from our enemies, ariſeth all our true good; and from our friends, our aſſured hurt. We may plainely perceiue, how that the greateſt good that we can draw from the faithfulleſt friend that wee haue in this vvorld, can be no more, then to pleaſure vs either vvith his purſe, by giving vs all that he hath; or by his life, by employing it in thoſe things that giue vs content; or by his honour, by not ſticking to hazard that for vs, when our reputation ſhall lie at the ſtake. In vvhich two latter, none will adventure themſelues; or there are ſo few of them to be found, that I doubt we ſhall not be able to produce any example in theſe times vvherein we liue. But ſay it were ſo indeede, and that there were ſome ſuch kinde of men now adayes, and ſhould jumpe together in all theſe three repeated particulars, vvhen they haue done all that they can, it is much leſſe (if in that which is not at all, a *magis* and a *minus*; a more, or a leſſe, may be found) then a Geometricall

True good is that which is eternall.

The goods of this world are not good.

A faithfull friend, what good he may doe vs.

metricall point. For, when he hath giuen me all that hee hath in this world, (were it neuer so much) it is too small a substance to free me from hell. Besides, men doe not now adayes spend their wealth, and their riches vpon the vertuous, but such as are conditioned like themselues, and assist them in their sinnes; and these are the friends that they reckon of, and to these their purse is open.

If for my sake, my friend should lose his life, one minute of time is not added thereby vnto mine; if he should put his honour in perill, nay, say he should be willing to lose it quite for his loue to me, I say, that is not honour, nor may it be so called: for true honor is that which is ingaged in the seruice of God; and whatsoeuer is otherwise, and hath not some reference vnto it, is false and euill. So that, whatsoeuer my friend shall throw vpon mee, being it is temporall, and of no continuance, it is vnprofitable, vaine, and of little or no worth at all. But mine enemy proues all pure wheat; all turnes to profite, that comes from him to mee; so that my selfe will bee willing to make true vse thereof. For from his ill-wishing to me, doe I come to wish well vnto him; and therefore God will wish well againe vnto me, and doe mee good, (though I deserue ill) for that I doe good for ill. If I pardon him a light injury, to mee are forgiuen and remitted an infinite number of sinnes; and if hee speake ill of me, and I speake well of him, his euill language cannot hurt mee; and his bitter tongue shall bring me a blessing; *Come yee blessed of my Father, &c.* So that by his thoughts, wordes, and workes, mine enemy makes mine to bee good and true.

And what is the cause, thinke you, of this so great a wonder, and whence is the cause of this so excellent a vertue? I shall tell it you, because it is a thing commanded by God, because it is his expresse will and commandement so to doe. And if wee are to obserue that of the Princes of this world, much better (without comparison) is it to keepe that which is commanded vs by the King of Heauen; before whom are humbled all the hearts both of Heauen and earth. And that saying of his; *I command you this*, is a *sweet conserue, which is applyed to the distasted palate of him that is commanded. As if the Physicians should prescribe their sicke Patients to take flowres of Oranges, young preserued Wall-nuts, buds of Limmons, rindes of Pome-Citrons, the rootes of wilde *Borage, or Bugloss. What shall I say now? O my good Lord, doe not giue me any such thing! for a body that is strong and in health, can by no meanes away with it, but is rather vnpleasing then otherwise. But for the better swallowing of these Pilles, and to make the rellish the sweeter, they are so well candyed and rolled vp in Sugar, that what was hard in it selfe to bee taken downe, is now become sweet and sauoury vnto vs. The like effect doth this sweete Conserue of Gods Word worke with vs. *I command* (saith the Text) *that ye loue your enemies.* This is a daintie Sauce, made for that foure Morsell, which before was vnsauoury to our tastes. So that which goes most against our stomackes, and which flesh and blood can hardly endure, by reason of its bitternesse, being to our concupiscences and fleshly desires, no better then very Gall and Worme-wood; The Spirit tels vs in the voyce of a good Physician, now it is made more pleasant, more sauoury and sweeter for you, since that Christ our Redeemer hath so commanded it. So that if a man should now strike me on the one cheek, I would turne the other for his further honour vnto vs punctually to obserue those orders which are deliuered vnto vs by those that are set in authority ouer vs, and not to breake them in the least branch or tittle.

A Generall doth command one of his Captaines, that hee make good such a strong place or passage, by which the enemy is to passe; where if he will himselfe, it shall be in his power to ouercome him, and so kill him: but his Generall tels him; Take heed, I charge you, for it much importeth my Seruice, and

The good we receiue from our Enemies.

a Gall exceeding bitter and sweet.

(a) *The Spanish word is* Escorzonera. *This herbe the Latines call* Viperina, *a species of that which they call* Barba de Cabron. *It is called* Escorzonera, *because it is good against the venome of Toades and all other venomous Vermine, and amongst the rest, the Viper. This plant was first found out in Spaine in Catalonia, by a Frier of Barbary. And in harvest-time was being sung by Vigni, they saw about the bignes of this herbe, wherewith they were healed. There is another good one in the Sierra de Cuenca in Spaine.*

it is my pleaſure ſo to haue it, that when hee ſhall paſſe by you, you offend him not, but let him goe quietly along, notwithſtanding that he ſhould giue you cauſe to the contrary, and prouoke you all that he can to fight with him.

Now when this his enemy ſhall paſſe thus along by him, and ſhall braue him to his face, and reuile him with reprochfull and injurious termes, calling this Captaine Coward, and other the like diſgracefull names, will this Captaine (thinke you) though thus mightily abuſed, and affronted in the face of the whole Army, offer him hereupon any offence at all, or violently ſet vpon him? No certainely: But he will rather laugh at him, as a Braggadoccio, and vaine-boaſter; and though he could eaſily haue ouer-throwne him, and kill'd him at pleaſure; yet he doth it not, onely becauſe hee would keepe that Order which was giuen vnto him: And if he ſhould haue broken it, he had done very ill, and contrary to his duty, and therefore had well deſerued to bee puniſhed for it. What reaſon then is it, that we ſhould not diligently obſerue the orders and ordinances, giuen vs by God? Why ſhould wee goe about to breake them; or ſeeke euen in the leaſt kinde of manner to contradict them? If a Captaine, for his pay onely, and vpon hope of ſome better preferment (which is a hazard, whether he ſhall attaine thereunto or no) ſhall be ſo punctuall: why ſhould not we bee as obſervant, ſince wee ſhall gaine thereby a celeſtiall reward; which is reſerued for vs? Eſpecially, ſince that he that made the Law, had the firſt hand-ſell of it himſelfe, and ſubmitted himſelfe thereunto, by ſuffering and receiuing from that vnhallowed and ſacrilegious hand of an vnder-officer, a great buffet on that moſt ſacred face of his, without returning him ſo much as an euil word, or any angry looke.

God rewardeth the obedient.

If God himſelfe could be content to indure ſuch rough vſage, and pocket it vp with ſo much patience: Why ſhould this ſame *Nada del hombre*, this ſame nothing of man, this *res nihili*, why I ſay ſhould hee bee puffed vp with pride, tranſported with paſſion, and ſtand vpon his *puntos*, and termes of honour? And why, for to receiue ſatiſfaction of a poore ſilly word, ſhot out vn-awares, or adviſedly; or howſoeuer (complaining of the infiniteneſſe of the wrong) breaking forth into rage, ſhould one Chriſtian challenge the field of another, ſeeking amongſt Infidels, as if he were one of them himſelfe, a (a) place, where to fight it out, or (to ſpeake more truely) to thruſt themſelues wilfully into the hands of the Diuell, their mortall enemy, flying from thoſe of their Creator?

Man ought to bee humble, not proud.

(a) *The Duell, in Spaine is a capitall crime. And therefore the Spaniards, when they challenge the Field, goe into Barbary to end their quarrell.*

Of whom we may learne, that when he was to leaue this world, and was to ſeale his laſt Will and Teſtament, hee ſuffered himſelfe to bee nayled to the Croſſe, his body to be bored, his fleſh to be torne, being full of paine, and gored all in bloud, from the ſole of his foot, euen to the crowne of his head, whoſe haire did cleaue to his moſt precious bloud, being congealed and clodded together in hard-plotted Knots, and marred, as it were, with the cruell wounds, occaſioned by that his ſharpe thorny crowne, which they ſcornefully crowned him withall. And when he was to take his leaue of his Mother, and that his beloued Diſciple, amongſt other his laſt words that hee vttered, as it were by way of his laſt requeſt, and charge vnto them, and in that his violent and extreme agony, which was then plucking vp his ſoule by the rootes from his diuine body, he prayed vnto his eternall Father, that hee would pardon thoſe that had thus perſecuted him, and put him to this ſo ſhamefull and painefull a death.

A leſſon for the forgiuing of our enemies.

This mildneſſe of our Sauiour, was imitated by Saint *Chriſtopher*: who, when he had a ſound boxe on the eare giuen him, calling that to minde, which his Maſter had before receiued, told him that ſtrooke him: If I were not a Chriſtian, I would be reuenged on thee. So that reuenge then, is a member put apart from the children of the Church our Mother.

Saint Chriſtopher his anſwer to one that ſtrooke him.

S. Bernards The like blow was giuen to Saint *Bernard* in the preſence of his brethren; and

and they being very earneſt to reuenge this wrong done vnto him, hee ranne in amongſt them, telling them, It is not fit that we ſhould reuenge the injuries done vs by others, when as we doe all day long, kneeling humbly on our knees, craue pardon for our owne offences.

ſaying, touching the ſuffering of injuries.

Saint *Steuen*, when they were ſtoning him to death, doth not grieue for thoſe cruell blowes, which bereaue him of his life; but his ſorrow was, that theſe bloudy Miniſters ſhould loſe their ſoules; and grieuing for them, deſires God, euen then, when the pangs of death were vpon him, that he would pardon his perſecutors, and *Saul* eſpecially; who being deceiued, and zealous of his Law, thought to merit heauen by looking to the cloakes and other cloathes belonging to thoſe that were the Executioners; to the end that hauing nothing to hinder their armes, they might, being rid of thoſe lets, wound him with the greater force.

S. Steuen prayes for his perſecutors

And ſo feruent was his Prayer; that this glorious Apoſtle Saint *Paul* was afterwards reduced to the faith; who like a wiſe Doctor, well experienced in this doctrine, finding it to be ſo neceſſary a thing, and ſo much importing our ſaluation, as nothing more, giues vs this good counſell: That we ſhould forget and lay aſide all anger; that we ſhould not ſuffer the Sunne to goe downe vpon our wrath. Rather bleſſe then curſe your perſecutors: Giue them to eate, if they ſuffer hunger; and if they be a-thirſt, giue them drinke: which if you ſhall not doe, the ſame meaſure that you mete vnto others, ſhall bee mete vnto you againe: and as you forgiue, ſo ſhall you be forgiuen.

S. Paul teacheth vs to forgiue our enemies.

The Apoſtle Saint *Iames* ſaith; Without mercy ſhall they bee judged, that haue no mercy: and the rigour of juſtice ſhall be returned on thoſe that are rigorous.

S. Iames inſtructeth vs to bee mercifull.

Very fearefull of the breach of this diuine precept, was *Conſtantine the Great*; who, when one told him, how his enemies to affront him, had in contempt and ſcorne of him, throwne ſtones at his picture, wounding him with their ſtrokes in the head and the face; ſo great was his modeſty, that neglecting the injury, he began to touch and feele with his hands from place to place all the ſeuerall parts of his body: Asking when hee had ſo done; What are become of theſe blowes; where are thoſe wounds you talke of? I feele none, nor haue I any paine of all thoſe thou tell'ſt me, they haue done vnto me. Giuing thereby to vnderſtand, that there is no diſhonour done to any, but to him that will eſteeme it ſo. Beſides, hee was willing thereby to inferre, that whoſoeuer does thee an injury, ſhall not ſcape ſcot-free, or goe cleere away with it, though thou doe not reuenge it; nay, though thou for thy part ſhouldſt pardon the wrong that hee hath done thee. For what injury hee hath offered vnto thee, he hath likewiſe offered the like vnto God; whoſe, both thou, and hee, art. *Duenno tiene eſta hazienda*; theſe goods haue an owner; And therefore you muſt not be your owne caruers. For, if in a Princes Palace, or a Kings Court, any affront ſhall be done, it is likewiſe done vnto the Lord thereof: nor ſhall the pardon of him that is affronted bee ſufficient, abſolutely to excuſe the other, becauſe by that indiſcreet act of his, and inferred injury, are likewiſe injured the lawes of that Prince, the good gouernment of his houſe queſtioned, and his Kingdome ſcandalized thereby. And therefore God ſaith, *Reuenge* belongeth vnto me; and when I ſee my time, I ſhall puniſh the offender: Vengeance is mine, and mine owne hands ſhall execute the ſame. Wretched then is that man, who is thus threatned; for if Gods owne handes ſhall giue him his chaſtiſement, better had it beene that he had neuer beene borne. So that thou muſt neuer requite ill with ill, vnleſſe thou wilt that ill ſhall light vpon thy ſelfe. Moreouer, thou ſhalt merit much thereby, and thou ſhalt bee thine owne pay-maſter: for, by imitating him that commandeth thee, thou ſhalt bee made like vnto him. Giue way therefore to the ire and fury of your perſecutors, that you may merit Gods fauour: Thanke him for theſe outrages

God fauoureth and defendeth the wronged.

rages and wrongs that are done you, and you ſhall in requitall, receiue glory, and obtaine eternall reſt.---And there he reſted.---

I would faine haue committed to memory that good doctrine which he deliuered vnto mee to this purpoſe, that I might repeate it heere vnto you. For it was all heauenly ſtuffe. Fine, moſt fine holy Scripture. From that time forward I vnfeignedly propounded to my ſelfe to make true profite thereof. And if it be well conſidered, hee ſpake very home, and well vnto mee. What greater revenge can there bee, then that a man may be revenged if hee will? *Poſſe, nolle, nobile*, is as true a ſaying as it is olde: And what thing can bee more foule then revenge, being that it is a paſſion of injuſtice? And ſuch a one, as none is more odious in the ſight both of God and Man? For it is onely proper vnto brute beaſts. Revenge is but a kinde of cowardice, and a certaine *Actus fœminilis*, an effeminate Act, and womaniſh kinde of weakeneſſe: Whereas the forgiuing of a wrong, is a glorious kinde of Victory. The revengefull man makes himſelfe the *Reus*, when by pardoning, hee might bee made the Actor; that is, in ſtead of an Accuſer, the Accuſed. What greater preſumption can there be in the World, then that the creature ſhould vſurpe the office of his Creator? appropriating that vnto him, which is none of his; and going away (as we ſay) with another mans wealth, whereunto hee hath no right in the world? If thou thy ſelfe art not thine owne, nor in thine owne diſpoſall; neither haſt thou any thing of thine owne in thee, that he, who (as thou ſayſt) hath offended thee, can take from thee. Such actions as theſe, thou canſt not commence thy ſelfe, they belong vnto thy Lord, which is God: Leaue vengeance therefore vnto him. God will take it of the wicked, *tardiùs aut citiùs*, at one time or another, early or late. And that cannot be termed too late, which is in a continuall inclination to its end. And to take it out of his hands, is a haynous offence, a mighty miſ-regard, and a contempt in the higheſt degree.

Iniury, how foule a thing it is.

Revenge, what it is.

Man hath nothing that is his, no not ſo much as himſelfe.

But admit ſatiſfaction ſhould belong vnto thee; and that the Law were in thine owne hands; tell mee, I pray thee, What thing can bee more noble, then to doe good? And what more good, then not to doe ill? One onely, which is this; To doe good vnto him, that doth ill vnto thee, & doth perſecute thee, as it is commanded vs, which we are bound to obey. For, to repay ill with ill, is the Diuels office; to doe good to him that doth good vnto thee, is a naturall debt betweene man and man; nay, the wilde beaſts of the Forreſt doe acknowledge as much, and doe not waxe furious againſt thoſe, that doe not ſeeke to hurt them. But to procure and worke that mans good, that would doe thee a miſchiefe, and cut thy throat, if it were in his power to doe it: this is *opus ſupernaturale*, a worke aboue the reach of nature: it is that diuine Ladder, whereby we climbe vp by the rounds of Charitie, to glorious Eternitie: it is that key of the Croſſe, which openeth the gates of Heauen: it is the ſoules ſweet peace: and the bodies quiet reſt. But revenge is a life without quietneſſe: one calls vpon another, and all vnto death. Is not hee a foole, nay, worſe then a mad-man, who, if his doublet chance to wring him, will thruſt his ponyard into his owne body? And what other thing is revenge, then to doe ill vnto our ſelues, out of a deſire to doe ill vnto others? And to plucke out both our owne eyes, to put out one of our enemies? Or to ſpit againſt Heauen, that it may preſently fall againe in our owne faces? *Seneca* vnderſtood this doctrine wonderfull well, when an enemy of his hauing giuen him a boxe on the eare in the Market-place, and all that ſaw it, did incite him to complaine thereof vnto the Iuſtice: he ſmiling vpon them, ſaide vnto them, Were it not a fooliſh part in mee (thinke you) to call a beaſt into the Court? As if he ſhould haue ſaid, With that buffet, hee like a beaſt did expreſſe his rage; and I like a man, did ſcorne and contemne this his brutiſh behauiour. Can there bee any brutiſhneſſe greater then to doe ill? Or can there bee any

Seneca's ſaying touching revenge.

greatneſſe

greatneſſe like vnto that, vvhich ſhall deſpiſe the ill that is done him, and ſet light by it?

The Duke of *Orleans* having formerly beene injured by one, when he was afterward King of *France*, he was put in minde, that hee might now be reuenged of the wrong he then received: for now it vvas in his power to doe it. But he, looking ſowrely on him that did ſo adviſe him, told him; it was not fit, that the King of *France*, ſhould revenge the wrongs of the Duke of *Orleans*. If, for a man to conquer himſelfe, be counted ſo great a Victory; Why, by ſubduing our appetites, allaying our anger, and rebating our rancour; doe not we gaine vnto our ſelues this glorious Palme? Since that, (beſides that vvhich is promiſed vnto vs in the future) even in this life alſo, we ſhall avoyde many miſchiefes, which may either take away our life from vs, or rob vs of this our vaine honour, and conſume our vvealth. O good God! had I beene a good Lad, that which I heard from that good man, I might haue beene the better for it all the dayes of my life. But I vvas young, and paſt it quickly over; that treaſure was ill beſtow'd vpon me, I loſt it; it was corne that fell in the high-way, it did not thriue with me. His good converſation and doctrine entertayned vs to *Cantillana*, whither wee came about Sun-ſet: I vvith a good deſire to my Supper, and my Companion with an earneſt expectation to haue his, but that never came. The two Clergy-men made their ranke apart, and vvent to a friends houſe that they were acquainted vvithall in the Towne, and we to our Inne.

The French Kings anſwere.

Fortior, qui ſe, quàm qui fortiſſima vincit mœnia.

Chap. V.

How Guzman *and the Carrier did eate of a young Mule, thinking it had beene Veale, being cozened by his Hoſt in* Cantillana, *and diſcourſeth by the way of the cozening trickes, which bad Hoſts put vpon poore Travellers.*

When the Company, that came along with vs, had left vs, and were gone every man his way; I ask't my Camerade, Whither ſhall we goe now? He told me. Here's an honeſt Hoſt hard by, one of my old acquaintance, a good-fellow, where we ſhall be well lodged, fare daintily, & kindly entertayned. Well, along we trudge together, till we came to this his ſo much commended Inne, having brought me (as you ſhall heare hereafter) to one of the veryeſt theeues, and arranteſt knaues, that there was not ſuch another in all that part of the Countrey wherein he liv'd.

Heere new occaſion of matter was offered, freſh plates ſet vpon the boord, and ſuch proviſion, as you may therewith well entertaine the time. Was I not (thinke you) in fine taking when I leapt out of the Frying-pan into the fire; and fell into *Scylla*, ſeeking to ſhunne *Charybdis*? Our Hoſt had for his owne vſe a good ſtrong Aſſe, and a *Galitian* Mare, that vvas a pretty little Tit. And becauſe men in their neceſſity, doe not ſtand vpon beauty, youth, nor pompe of apparell; but content themſelues onely with Night-caps, when their heads are mangie and ſcabbed; it is no marvell, if the like ſhould happen even amongſt brute beaſts. They were alwayes fellow-feeders in one Stable, one Racke, and one Field; and he that vvas owner of them, tooke no great heed to haue them tyde faſt, but let them goe looſe of purpoſe, to the end that they might helpe the other Beaſts in the Inne in the repeating of their leſſons. Whereby it came to paſſe that this Mare grew great with Foale, by living at large amongſt this good company.

It

A Law in Andaluzia against the vnnaturall covering in horſes.

It is an inuiolable law in *Andaluzia*, That no ſuch Conjunction, or Commixture bee permitted; and to this end, grievous penalties are ordained. This Mare then, having in her due time foaled a pretty young Mule, mine Hoſt vvas vvilling to make profit thereof, and to that end nouriſhed and bred it vp. Hee kept this buſineſſe very ſecret ſome certaine dayes, and was wonderfull carefull, that it might not come to light: but becauſe hee ſaw it was not poſſible for him to hide this matter long, and to keepe it from the knowledge of the world, that he might not giue his enemies advantage of revenge; carried away partly with the feare of his owne hurt, and partly with the greedineſſe of gaine, he reſolved (this laſt Friday night) to kill him. He cuts me out the fleſh of it into pieces, which he powders vp in a pickle made of purpoſe, and made ready againſt the next day, (being Saturday) for his Gheſts: *partes minutiores hujus animalis, vt pedes, ilia, venter, &c.* all the entrales and offals of this beaſt; as feet, tripes, the cragge-end of the necke, tongue, braine, and the like. Wee (as I told you) came to our Inne in a very good howre: for he that travailes, takes contentment vpon the vvay, that he may come into his Inne betimes, that he may haue meate to fill his empty guts, and a bed to reſt his weary bones.

Theſe things are commonly eaten in Spaine vpon Saturdayes, by a cuſtome receiued amongſt them.

Vneaſie riding cauſeth wearines.

My Companion, as ſoone as he had alighted and taken off his lading, and put vp all things ſafe, ſet vp his Aſſes in the Stable, taking order for their dreſſing and their feeding. But I came thither ſo wearied, that I was not able when I lighted, to ſtand vpon my legges, but was faine to lie downe on the ground, and was not able for a great while to turne my ſelfe any way in the world. For all my muſcles and ſinewes were quite benum'd, my legges and feete ſwolne, with their long hanging downe for lacke of Stirrops, my breech extremely gall'd, my parts neerer my privities full of paine, as if ſo many needles had beene ſtucke in my Groyne; my body vvas all out of joynt; but of all other parts, my belly (for pure hunger) did moſt pittifully complaine.

Now when my companion had ordered his beaſts of burthen, and had eaſed them of their carriages, and had done all things fitting for one of his profeſſion, my turne was next to bee ſerved, and therefore ſaid vnto him; How now (my Camerade) what thinke you of the motion? Is it not high-time (thinke you) to goe to Supper? He anſwered, It was; the motion he told me, was very good, and that it was high-time indeede: for he meant to bee ſtirring very early in the next morning, and to reach betimes to *Caçalla*, and ſo to lade, and away. We ask't our Hoſt, if he had any thing in the houſe for our ſupper? He anſwered, he had; adding withall, that we ſhould fare very daintily. He was a burly-kind of man, yet of a ſtirring metall, nimble-witted, cheerfull both in his ſpeech and countenance, an eternall talker, but aboue all a moſt excellent Villaine. His promiſing perſon (I confeſſe) did deceiue me: for, ſeeing ſo good a preſence, and not having knowne him before, the Spot at firſt ſight, made ſhew of a good Card. And hearing him ſay, that he could feaſt vs brauely, my very heart and ſoule did leape for joy within mee: Oh, they were comfortable words! Wherevpon I began with my ſelfe to giue thankes vnto God, reverencing his holy Name, for that after our troubles, he giues vs eaſe; after ſickeneſſe, health; after a ſtorme, a calme; after ſorrow, joy; and a good Supper after a bad dinner.

What a manner of creature our Hoſt was.

a Old Chriſtians in Spaine are counted the beſt, by way of difference from the Moores, whom they call new Chriſtians, as being but lately converted.

I know not, whether I may well tell you or no, of a tongue-errour, but a witty one, which came from a plaine countrey-fellow, whom I knew in *Olias*, being a certaine Village belonging to *Toledo*: yet I ſhall make bold to tell it you, as well for that the thing in it ſelfe is not ſcandalous, as alſo for that it proceeded from the ſincere heart of an [a] old Chriſtian.

A ieſt of a country-fellow.

There were certaine good fellowes playing at *Primera*, and the third having diſcar'ded, the ſecond cride, I am *Prime*; God be thanked yet at laſt, that I haue got one game ſince I plaid, ſaid he that had the *Prime*. The other

Country-

Country-fellow that was in the *interim* drawing his Cards, when he had puld them, found them to be all of one linage, and being glad that hee had got the hand of him, ſuddenly brake foorth at that very inſtant, and ſayd; Not ſo much God bee thanked neither, as you thinke for; for I am Fluſh. If ſuch a *diſparate*, or idle toy as this, being not purpoſely ſpoken with either due meaſure, or to any certaine end, but by meere chance, as it were, may bee brought vpon the Stage; this is its proper place, and the Scene well layd here, conſidering what befell vs. Its very well, (ſayd my Companion) to mine Hoſt; Now and thou beeſt a good fellow, tell mee I pray thee, what dainty morſell haſt thou provided for vs? This [b] *Socarron*, this diſſembling Raſcall, that was all for his commodity, and cared not (ſo as he might get by him) whom he coozened, told him; Yeſterday I kild a very delicate fine young Calfe: which, becauſe the damme thereof was very weake; and by reaſon, (through the drineſſe of the yeare) that hee wanted feeding, hee cauſed his calfe to be kill'd after it was ſome eight dayes old. The offals, and the intrailes are ready dreſt, take what you pleaſe. After this, crying out *Preſto*, bee gone, lifting vp his legges, and fetching a friſcall or two, hee flies away in the ayre in a trice, clapping his heeles with his hands as hee runne along. With this, my heart began to bee ſomewhat lighter then it was before, and it did rejoyce mee much to heare him ſay that dee had the calues intrailes; the very naming whereof, did make my Bowels to moue within mee. And taking my leaue of my former wearineſſe, looking cheerily vpon him, I ſayd vnto him; Mine Hoſt, bring vs what you thinke good.

[b] Socarron; el vellaco diſſimulado, que ſolo pretende ſu interes, y quando habla con vos, oſeſt à ſecretamente abraſando.

Therevpon, the Cloth was laid in the turning of an hand, our Linnen vvas cleane, and our bread was not ſo bad as before, but our vvine was paſſing good: wee had alſo a freſh Sallad ſet vpon the Board in a faire Plate; But for ſuch waſhie Tripes as mine then were, I held it no good meate. And had it beene ſpared by mee, either for any of the intrailes; or any one foote of a Calfe, it would never haue greeu'd mee. But theſe promiſes might deceiue any diſcreete judgement whatſoever, making the taſt of an hungry appetite drunken with the very conceit of his promiſed fare. The *Italian*, by way of advice giues vs this good leſſon; That in the promiſes of Women, Mariners, and Inne-keepers, wee ſhould place ſmal confidence: for they that are given to commend themſelues and their owne things, (as all theſe vſually do) they do all (gueſſing the whole by the greater part) generally lye. After hee had ſet downe the Sallad, hee brings vs in two little Plates, in each of which lay a little of this ſame Calues-plucke, I ſay, a little; for hee was afrayd to giue vs too much, leſt through too much plenty, hunger being ſatisfied, and the belly glutted, wee might more eaſily come to the knowledge of this deceit of his.

Leading vs thus leaſurely along, wee follow the ſent wee firſt ran vpon, and it ſeemed to our taſte, that wee ſtill did eate, according to that conceit which wee had intertained, of this our ſuppoſed tender Veale; and the more wee thought thereon, the greater edge was ſet vpon our appetite, and as wee had a longing deſire therevnto, ſo by degrees wee were ſtill calling for the ſame hand againe. For My Companion, there was no care to bee taken for him, all meates were alike to him; for hee was borne amongſt Savage people, and bred vp by brutiſh Parents, whoſe palate was ſeaſoned from the cradle with a cloue of Garlicke; and your rude ruſticall Clownes, (as a thing not belonging to their either goodneſſe or cleanlineſſe) in matter of taſte can ſeldome diſtinguiſh ill from good. To moſt of them, there is a want of perfection in their Senſes; and albeit they ſee, yet do they not ſee that, which they ought to ſee: and though they heare, yet do they not heare that which they ought to heare: and ſo in the reſt, but more particularly in the tongue, which vvas not giuen them to murmure againſt any man, much leſſe againſt thoſe, that are gentle and

The defect which is in Country people in their feeding.

and noble, as well in their diſpoſition, as their deſcent. But theſe kindes of vn-nurtured people are like vnto Dogs, who ſnatch and ſnap at every thing, ſwallowing all that comes in the compaſſe of their chaps, without chewing: or like vnto the Oſtrich, that will devour a horſe-ſhooe, though it bee never ſo red-hot. And if a double-ſoled ſhooe, which had done ſervice three Winters in *Madrid*, treading thorow thicke and thinne; *lodo y mierda*, durt and turds had beene ſet before ſuch a fellow as this, hee would haue made no bones of it, nor found no difference in the going downe of it. But that I, who was daintily brought vp, and borne of civill parents, and ſuch as were neat and curious in their dyet, that I ſhould not find out this deceit, my hunger muſt needes be great; and this muſt excuſe my errour. The deſire that I had to eate ſomething that was good, was exceeding great, ſo that every thing ſeemed too little to feede mine eyes. This cunning Rogue, mine Hoſt, gaue it vs by way of diſtillation, Limbecke-faſhion, now a little, and then a little: and therefore it is no ſuch wonder, had it had farre greater defects, that it ſhould ſeeme vnto me a well-ordered Banquet.

The Hoſts craft.

Haue you not heard it ſayd, *Que à la hambre, no ay mal pan?* That all bread is ſavory to the hungry? I ſay, all ſeemed to mee to bee Suckets, and Marmalate; and me-thought I ſhould never haue enough to fill my belly. I demanded, if hee had any thing elſe: He told mee, we might (if we would) haue the braines fryed, with ſome butter and egges. We told him wee vvould: but wee are ſlower in telling him ſoe then hee in going about it; nay, almoſt in the dreſſing of it. In the meane while, leſt wee might not catch cold with ſtanding ſtill, like your Poſt-horſes when they haue runne their ſtage; hee gaue vs, to intertaine the time vvithall, a piece of fleſh folded, and rolled vp made out of the Tripes, (after the faſhon of your roſted Oliues of Veale) together with ſome of the Filme and rinde of the belly. I did not like the taſt of it halfe well; it ſmelled (mee thought) like rotten ſtraw that's throwne out vpon the dunghill. Whereupon I thruſt it from mee, leaving it to my Companion, vvho entred roundly vpon it, devouring it as greedily, as a man would grapes, comming into a Vineyard in the time of Vintage. Nor did it greeue mee a-vvhit to ſee him fall to it ſo luſtily; but was rather very glad of it, thinking by this meanes, that when hee had beene full-fed therewith, a greater part of the braines vvould fall to my ſhare. But it fell out contrary to my expectation; for he had never a vvhit the more cloyd his panch, nor did hee ceaſe to lay about him vvith as good a ſtoomacke, as if hee had not all the day, nor night before, eaten ſo much as one morſell of bread.

The egges and the braines vvere ſet vpon the Board; and vvhen my honeſt Carrier ſaw this fine Froyze, hee began, according to his old wont, to laugh out alowd, with as wide a throate as you can imagine. I did fret and fume, and chafe with my ſelfe out of all cry, conceiting with my ſelfe, that he made himſelfe merry with my miſery, and tooke delight, to repreſent to my remembrance thoſe former loathſome things, that had lately overthrowne my ſtomacke.

A guilty Conſcience is evermore ſuſpicious, and full of feare.

Our Hoſt therevpon looking very ſoberly on vs both, with a watchfull eye obſerving our behaviour, and with an itching eare, liſtning to heare what wee ſayd; ſeeing his diſ-compoſed laughter ſo ill ſeaſoned, and vn-occaſioned, (as hee thought) was much moued thereat; fearing that hee had found out his Knauery: for vntill then, there was not any matter offered, that might moue occaſion of laughter. And therefore hee was jealous, that the Foxe was now vn-earthed, and this muſt needes be it. And becauſe a guilty perſon carries his [a] his beard euermore vpon his ſhoulders; *& vmbræ ſuæ imagine concutitur*, and is afraid of his owne ſhadow; becauſe his owne conſcience doth accuſe him: and the Committed fault, repreſents the deſerved puniſhment. Every the leaſt act, or inkling of any thing whatſoever, he imagineth, that it is all

[a] Traer la barba ſobre el ombro: Viuir recatado, y con recelo, como hazen los que tienen enemigos, que van bolviendo el roſtro à vn lado, y al otro, de donde naſcio el refran.

all meant againſt him; and that the very ayre doth whiſtle forth his offence, and publiſh it to all the world.

This poore Rogue, (albeit a very villaine) hardned in roguery; and habituated in miſchiefe, and beeing ſteeped, and lyen long in ſoke, (as it were) in theſts, and all kind of coozenages, was now out of heart, and grew ſilly and weake-ſpirited, and was ready to quake for feare. Beſides, ſuch kind of men are commonly Cowards, and haue onely an outſide of men, but no manhood at all. Why is it (thinke you) that ſome men hacke and hew, and threaten to kill and ſlay, and like Tygres lay about them? I will tell you the reaſon of it. They do this, not out of true metall, but to make others afraid, and to ſupply by this roaring carriage, the defect of their courage: beeing like herein, vnto dogges; whereof thoſe that are barkers are leaſt biters: they are like your little [a] *Melitean* dagges, or a kind of foyſting-hound, which are made all of noyſe and barking; but if you turne towards them, they clap their taile betweene their legges, and runne away. Our Hoſt was (as I haue told you) much troubled; for feare, ſuſpicion, and jealouſie, is a property, that is ſtill incident to an evill liver. Hee hath quite loſt his ſtirrops, nor did he know how or which way to recover his ſeate; but began to ſweare with many great and horrible oathes, that it was very good Veale that hee had ſet before vs, and that wee had no juſt cauſe, nor reaſon to laugh as we did; and if need were, I could bring an hundred witneſſes to teſtifie as much.

a Meliteos ſi dizen, porque ſe trahian de Malta.

These words hee vttered with much paſſion; with a face as red as fire, that the blood ſeemed to trickle downe his cheekes, and ſparkles to flaſh for very anger forth his eyes. The Carrier lifting vp his head, and looking earneſtly vpon him, told him; Who medles with you, (my friend) what wrong haue we done you, that you are ſo cholericke? Wee do not touch vpon you, no not ſo much as to aske you how you doe, or how [b] old you are? Haue you any Edict, or proclamation here in the houſe, that doth ſet a taxe or rate vpon laughing; or to what proportion and quantity your gueſt ſhall bee tyed to laugh, if at any time hee be ſo diſpoſed, vpon paine of ſome great forfeit? or is this a generall ſeſſing ſet therevpon, and you alone haue got the Monopoly thereof into your hands? If it be ſo, good mine Hoſt, let every man weepe, or laugh, as hee will himſelfe; and take that a-Gods-name which is your due, and recover your right of vs by order of Law. I tell you, Sir, you are miſtaken in mee; for I am of that free diſpoſition, that if I were minded to laugh at any thing of yours, I am not ſo meale-mouth'd, but I would plainely tell you at what I laught.

b *A Metaphor borrowed from woman, who can not abide to bee askt, how old they are.*

c *The Spaniſh word is* Aranzel, *which is a Decree or Law, which ſets a taxe vpon ſuch things as are ſold.* Tabula eſt, vbi ſcribitur ordo & pretium rerum venalium. *derived of* a. ar- articulo Arabico, *and* ranſel, que vale tanto, como decreto, determinaſion, aſſiento.

The Spaniards faſhion of wounding.

These egges now put mee in minde of thoſe other, which my Companion here did eate to day at an Inne ſome three Leagues hence. Then hee vp and told all that had paſſed, as my ſelfe before had delivered vnto him; and that which happened afterwards in his preſence, betwixt the old Hoſteſſe, and my two young Souldiers; in the relating whereof, hee ſeemed as if hee had beene bathing himſelfe all the while in Roſe-water, if a man might judge the content hee tooke in repeating the ſame; by his paſſions, his lowd laughters; ſtrange viſages, anticke geſtures, and the diverſities of poſtures, in the bowing and writhing of his body; all the while that hee was telling him this tale. Mine Hoſte, he fell as faſt a bleſſing and croſſing himſelfe, powring out Volleys of Exclamations, calling vpon, and often reiterating the name of Ieſus; a thouſand times one after another, and lifting vp his eyes to heaven, ſayd; Our bleſſed Lady be my helper; let her ſtill bee preſent with mee! *Mal haga Dios, à quién mal haze ſu Oficio*, let ill betide him that performes his function ill. And becauſe in his Theeueries and his Rogueries hee was ſo good a Proficient, hee might reſt aſſured, that this malediction did not belong to him, ſo well had he exerciſed that trade all his life-time. Hee began afterwards to walke vp & downe, & ſeeming ſometimes to wonder, ſometimes to complaine,

Mine Hoſt by railing on the old Hoſteſſe, diſcouers the knauery of Inne-keepers.

at laſt hee cryde out; I wonder a-gods name, that the earth did not open, and ſwallow vp this Inne? How is it poſſible, that God ſhould diſſemble his anger and forbeare to puniſh ſo vile a vvoman? Does this old Witch liue? is ſhee not gone downe quicke to hell? All Trauellers haue juſt cauſe to complaine of her; I now ſee, that all men haue reaſon to complaine of her ill vſage; no man comes away contented from her; all finde fault, not one that comes thence well ſatisfied, but are ſorry that ever they came within her doores. Either all her gueſts are very bad, or ſhee her ſelfe: but is not to bee imagined ſo many can bee all bad; and therefore ſure the fault is onely hers.

For theſe and other the like trickes, no paſſenger will ſtay to baite at her Inne, they haue all ſet a croſſe vpon her doore, they bleſſe themſelues when they goe by, and make large ſtrides till they be paſt that wicked houſe. I ſweare vnto you ſhee ſhould bee well whipt, if ſhee were well ſeru'd, that all other cozening queanes, ſuch as ſhee is, might take example by her. Her Signe was once pull'd downe, and order taken, that ſhee ſhould not keepe victualling any more. And I much wonder, that ſhee turning againe to the old byas, the officers returne not againe to puniſh her anew.

There is ſomething in it, as the Ant ſayd, but vvhat it is I cannot tell you, that makes her to doe as ſhee does. There muſt be ſome myſtery in it, what ever it bee: for ſhee robs and coozens with the like liberty to day, as ſhee did yeſterday: and now, as laſt yeare: And (which is worſt of all) ſhee coozens with that confidence, as if ſhee were commanded ſo to doe. And ſure it muſt needs be ſo; for the Guards, the Searchers, the Promoters, and the Alguazils, all ſee her dealings, and know them well inough; yet they winke at them, and ſay not ſo much as blacke is her eye. Theſe I warrant you be her fee'd men, ſhee giues them good content, and greazes them in the fiſt with that, which ſhe filſhes from others. For if it were not ſo, as ſure as the coat is on your back, they would haue another fling at her, and pay her home againe with a poxe in her owne kinde.

Howbeit (wretched woman as ſhee is) it is puniſhment inough vnto her, that ſhee liu'd ſo long, as to diſcredit her houſe. For if ſhee had kept good meat in her houſe, and vſ'd her gueſts well, behaving herſelfe civilly, and demanding reaſonable recknings, her cuſtome would haue beene good, and all Trauellers would haue flokt vnto her houſe. And you know, *De muchos pocos hiziera mucho*; Many a little, makes a mickle. For by carrying but one graine of corne away with him at once, the Ant fils his granary, and liues in ſtore and plenty all the yeare long. And had ſhee done ſo, the proudeſt Officer of them all, could not haue ſet his foot vpon her neck, and torne her vngodly gaines out of her throat. But ſhame light vpon her, and all ſuch as ſhe is. The Devill take ſuch vnconſcionable Inne-keepers.

When hee had come thus farre and made his full point, I thought he would there haue left. But hee comes about againe, giuing vs this cloze for a fare-well: Bleſſed bee that vnſpotted purity of the Virgin *Mary*, that though I am but a poore man; yet I thanke God for it, there is no ſuch ill vſage in my houſe, no ſuch deceitfull trickes; Every thing heere is ſold for the thing it is: no Cats, for Conies; nor Mutton for Veale. *Limpieza de vida, es lo que importé*, a cleare conſcience, is that, which will carry a man through thicke and thin. Hee may goe bare-faced through the world, and never bee aſhamed, that hath led an innocent life. Let every man enjoy that which is his owne, and not defraud and deceiue one another.

Heere he ſtopt, and tooke a freſh breath, which was no more then needed, conſidering how faſt his tongue walkt: and though happily hee might thinke, that wee might the more willingly giue him the hearing, now that wee had ſupt; yet he heere cuts of the thread of his Diſcourſe, and ſayes no more, giving

ving vs in ſtead of our ſecond Courſe, two or three Olipes, as bigge as Nuts. We intreated him that againſt the next morning we might haue a morſell of his Veale made ready for vs. He vndertooke that care, and we went to take our reſt. Our boulſters, were our pack-Saddles; and our bedding the cloathes that covered our Packs, which we ſtretch out as plaine as we could vpon the bare Floore: and ſo we paſt over that night, as well as we could.

CHAP. VI.

Guzman *goes on, in recounting what ſucceeded with his Hoſt of* Cantillana, *who had given him to eate of his young Mule, and of the misfortunes that befell the ſaid* Guzman: *And how it is not good vpon the way to quarrell with our Hoſt.*

HAd I, the Sunday morning following, when it was day, beene ſet in the Market-place in *Sevill*, or at my mothers owne doore: I am doubtfull, whether they would haue know ne me or no. For I was monſtrouſly Flea-bitten by that infinite number of Fleas, which had fed that night on my carkaſe, that it ſeemed they likewiſe endured a deere yeare, and that I was offered vp vnto them for a prey. And ſo in the morning I got me vp, looking for all the vvorld, like one that had beene ſicke of the ſmall Pox, or infected with the Meazels; my face and hands, and all my whole body over, not having one free place, or one ſpot of white; no, not ſo much as you might put a pins point betweene; ſo miſerably was I tormented with them.

Guzman is extremely bitten by Fleas.

But fortune was herein ſo favourable vnto mee, that what with the wearineſſe of the journey, and taking a cup or two over-night more then ordinary, I ſlept ſoundly, dreaming heavenly dreames, no noiſe hindring my quiet reſt; till that my Companion, whoſe minde ranne vpon hearing Maſſe betimes in the morning, and of his ſeven Leagues which he had farther to goe, did awaken me.

Drinking freely, what it effecteth.

We riſe by the breake of day, before the Sunne was vp. And calling preſently for our breakefaſt, it was brought vs in; but it did not like me ſo well, as it did my fellow; for every morſell that went downe his throate, ſeemed to him, as if he had ſwallowed ſo many bits of the brawne of ſome young tender Peacocks, and he did ſo much commend the goodneſſe of it, as if all the vvorld could not afford a daintier diſh. And I was forced ſo to eſteeme of it, by laying my faith vpon another mans taſte, attributing that defect to mine owne bad palate; which this hungry hound had inherited from the Aſſe his father. But, to ſpeake the plaine truth, it was ſtarke naught, and as vile meate as a man could eate, and did not ſticke to ſpeake it ſelfe vnto me in a knowne language.

To me it ſeemed tough, and vnſavory, and of that little vvhich I did eate over-night at ſupper, my ſtomacke was ſo ſur-charged withit, lying as heavy within me as Lead, that I was not able for my life to digeſt it. And albeit I was ſomewhat fearefull, leſt my fellow ſhould finde fault with me, yet did I not ſticke to ſay vnto mine Hoſt; How comes this fleſh to be ſo tough, and of that evill reliſh, that a man can ſcarce faſten vpon it with his teeth? Hee told me; Doe not you ſee, Sir, that it is [illegible] that hath beene newly kill'd, and wants time for the mortifying and making of it tender? Hereupon my Companion taking his Q. It is not (quoth he) any lacke of mortifying, or hanging in the aire, or that it does not eate tender and ſhort enough, that makes this

Gentleman to be ſo ſqueamiſh: but becauſe he hath beene fed from his cradle with Spice-Buns, Sugar-Cakes, and freſh Egges, all other meates ſaue theſe, are hard both to his teeth and ſtomacke. I ſhrunke vp my ſhoulders, & held my peace, as one that knew full well, that I was now as it vvere in another kinde of vvorld, and that it vvas but one dayes patience more, and then I ſhould be out of danger of vnderſtanding ſuch kinde of language any longer.

But for all this, I could not here-with reſt contented, but ſtill mee thought this meate had an ill ſmatch with it, of I know not what.

And as I was thinking thereon, it preſently came in my minde what vnneceſſarie oathes mine Hoſt made the night before, when hee vow'd and ſwore it vvas Veale.

This ſwearing and ſtaring of his, I did not like halfe well, and did therefore thinke, he did the rather lye, becauſe he did ſo deepely ſweare: for the truth hath no neede of the confirmation of an Oath, vnleſſe it bee in open Court before a Iudge, or in caſe of great neceſſity. Beſides, all ſuch ſatisfaction, as offers it ſelfe by was of prevention, before the thing delivered, is queſtioned, or called into doubt, makes the faith of the reporter to bee evermore ſuſpected. I knew not what did ayle me, or what might be the cauſe of this; for although I did not really conceiue any aſſured ill, I did as little preſume, that there could be any good meaning herein. It was only a touch of my imagination, a ſtrange apprehenſion, that I had in my head at that time: Wherevpon I did not long dwell, nor made any great reckoning of it. So paſſing it over, I call'd for a reckoning, my Companion told me, I ſhould let my purſe alone, for he would pay for vs both. Wherevpon I went aſide, leaving him to be the Pay-maſter: thinking with my ſelfe, that out of courteſie, and this our new acquaintance, he was not willing, that I ſhould pay my ſhare of ſo ſmall a ſhot.

Qui ſæpè jurat, ſæpè perjurat.

I was very thankefull to him in my heart for this his kindneſſe, and was not wanting to ſing forth his prayſes, for this his freeneſſe and loue, which he had ſhowne vnto me, ever ſince that he met me vpon the vvay, giving mee my horſe-hire, and my dyet *gratis*; not ſuffering me to ſpend one penny in his company.

I thought with my ſelfe, this world would ſtill hold, and that whereſoever I went, I ſhould meete with ſome one or other that would beare my charges, and let me ride for nothing. I had now taken heart vnto me, and began to be prettily well fleſht, and to forget my mothers teat, as if it had bin anoynted with Aloes, Worme-wood, or the like bitter ſtuffe, and ſo in all other things did I doe the like, wherevnto I had beene formerly accuſtomed. And becauſe it ſhould not be ſaid of me, *Que delos ingratos eſt analleno el infierno*; That hell is full of vngratefull perſons: While he was paying the ſhot, I was willing to ſhew ſome part of my thankefulneſſe, by leading out his Aſſes to drinke, and carrying them backe againe to their cratches, to the end, that while they were ſadling and making all things ready, they might champe vpon their ſtrawe, and make an end of their provender. I put a helping hand to all that vvas needefull, rubbing their foreheads and their eares, as well as I was able.

He that receiues a courteſie, ever ought to ſhew his readineſſe to doe that man ſervice from whom it comes.

Whil'ſt I was buſied in this, I had laid my Cloke vpō a bench hard by, which like Quick-ſilver before the fire, or ſmoake before the winde, was vaniſht away in an inſtant, that I could never ſet eye on it any more; nor could deviſe in the world vvhat ſhould become of it. I thought with my ſelfe, that either mine Hoſt or my Conſort, had, to make themſelues merry therewith, hid it from me in jeſt. But it vvas now no more a jeſting matter, for they began to ſweare in good earneſt that they had it not, nor knew vvhat was become of it; I made diligent ſearch for it even to the very gate which was ſhut, and had not yet beene opened. There was no body there in the houſe but our

ſelues.

ſelues, and mine Hoſt, and therefore mee thought it was impoſſible, that it ſhould bee loſt, and that I might peradventure forget my ſelfe, and haue put it apart in ſome other place. Hereupon I ſought vp and downe all the Houſe; and going out of the Hall into the Kitchin, it was my hap to come into a back-Court, where I found a great plaſh of freſh bloud, and hard by it a Mules skin, fairely ſtretch out to its full breadth and length, from the which the feet were not yet cut off; The eares were there at large, and all that part of the head towards the fore-head, neere whereunto were thoſe other bones belonging to the head, onely the tongue, and the braines were wanting: Which I no ſooner perceiued, but I was preſently confirmed in my doubt.

Hereupon I ſtreight goe forth to call in my Companion; To whom, when I had made ſhow of the Hide, that had bound in our breakfaſt and our ſupper, I then ſaid vnto him; What thinke you now, Sir? Are not thoſe things (trow you) Sugar-cakes, and new-laid Egges, in compariſon of theſe that we eate at home? This is that Veale, forſooth, which you ſo extolled to the skies; and this is the Hoſt you promiſed, ſhould prouide vs ſuch dainty cheere.

What thinke you of the ſupper now, and the breakefaſt which hee hath beſtowed vpon vs? Hath he not dealt well with vs I pray'? haue wee not beene excellently well vſed? Hee (good man) is none of theſe coozening Hoſtes, and cheating Inne-Keepers, that will ſell a Cat for a Cony; and put away Mutton, for Veale. This is that innocent man, that may goe vnmaskt throughout the world, and cares not who ſees him, and lookes him in the face, hee is ſo honeſt a man. This is that *integer vitæ, ſceleriſq; purus*, ſo vnſpotted in his life and conſcience, and ſo free from all ill dealing, that out of his owne integritie, made no bones to curſe our Hoſteſſe, and the euill vſage of her Gueſts.

He was ſtrooken ſo dumpe, and ſo full of wonder, to ſee what I had ſhow'd him, that hee had not a word to ſay; but with his head caſt downe into his boſome, went ſlinking away from mee, and was ſo amazed at this ſtrange ſight, that all the day after till we parted company, I could not get from him ſo much as a word, ſaue what paſt at our parting when we were to take our leaue each of other. And that which then came from him, ſeemed to be drawne out of the very guts of him, as you ſhall heare anon.

Howbeit, I was not (as euery man may imagine) very well pleaſed with this vnhappy accident; yet notwithſtanding (that this his floud of laughter might by this meanes bee dammed vp, or the current thereof turn'd another way, wherewith euery moment before, my very heart and ſoule was ouerflowne, and in a manner, quite drowned.) I was wonderfully ouer-joyed with this my miſ-fortune, which did ſo much the leſſe grieue me, becauſe he had ſo great a ſhare in it.

What with this (which was vantage enough) and the ſtrong beliefe that I had, that no man but mine Hoſte could poſſibly convey away my Cloake, I began ſomewhat more boldly to charge him with it; It being euer incident to a good cauſe, to put ſtrength into weakeneſſe; and to adde courage to the faint-hearted: I beganne to put it home to him, and tolde him plainely that hee ſhould anſwere mee my Cloake, and that he had ſtolne it: But he very ſcornefully denyes, jeering and fleering at me; and the more earneſt I was, the more merry he makes himſelfe. Wherewith my patience was ſo much moued, that I could not holde, but threatned him in my choller with the Iuſtice; yet did I not touch at all on this new buſineſſe, nor ſpake one word to him of that which I had ſeene. But hee, for that I was a young Lad, a poore Boy, and no body to take my part, began to domineere ouer me, telling mee, that he had a rod for me in his pocket, and other the like reproachfull words, termes onely befitting Cowards, and men of baſe condition, ſuch as himſelfe. But becauſe wormes will turne againe, if they bee trod on, and the gentleſt

He that hath right, hath courage.

Lambes grow mad, if they bee too much wrong'd, vpon multiplying of words one begetting another; and the latter, worſe then the former, at laſt wee fell foule. And as the fewneſſe of my yeeres, and weakeneſſe of my ſtrength would giue me leaue, I tore out halfe a brick-bat from the ſide of a bench thereby, and threw it at him as hard as euer I could drine; which, if I had hit him withall, and that he had not hid himſelfe behinde a pillar, I thinke I had beaten out his braines, and beene fully reuenged of the wrong he did me. But he ſcap'd my hands, and ranne as faſt as his legges would carry him into his chamber; whence he came forth in all haſte with his ſword drawne in his hand.

He that is faulty, turnes coward.

Heere you may ſee what manner of men theſe roaring-Boyes be, ſince that this great Gull doth not now ſeeke to defend himſelfe with the force of his ſtrong and brawnie armes, againſt thoſe weake and tender twigges of mine; forgetting that he ſaid, he would whip me, ſeeking now to offend me by force of armes, I being but a griſſle, and a poore ſimple diſ-armed chicken. In this manner then he makes towards me with his naked ſword; whileſt I fearing what might follow, ſtood vpon my gard with two pibble-ſtones, which I had pluck't out of the pauement. Which when hee ſaw I had now ready in my hand, his courage began to be abated, and did not dare to draw neerer vnto mee.

Now with the noyſe and out-cryes that were made vpon this ocaſion, the whole Inne was in an vproare; and all the neighbours there-abouts hearing the ſtirre, came flocking in vpon vs, to ſee what the matter was. All the whole ſtreet haſted thither, and with them a great throng of people, as well Iuſtices, as Notaries. There came in two *Alcaldes*, both at the ſame inſtant, and each of them ſtroue to haue the hearing of the cauſe, labouring to prevent each other. And the Notaries for their priuate gaine, euery one ſaid, that this buſineſſe did belong vnto him; whereupon they grew at difference and oddes betweene themſelues.

Vpon this contention grew a ſecond quarrell, no leſſe fierce and tumultuous then was ours: for on both ſides, they digg'd vp their Grand-fathers graues, twitting one another in the teeth with their fathers and their mothers, not ſparing one anothers wiues, ripping vp their faults, and the courſe of life that they ledde; wherein perhaps they did not lye: But they would no more vnderſtand one another, then did wee. Whileſt wee were in this hurly-burly, come in certaine *Regidores*, acompanied with other worſhipfull Burgomaſters of the Towne, who laboured to make peace betweene them, and laide hold on me. *Que ſiempre quebra la ſoga, por lo mas delgado:* for the weakeſt muſt ſtill goe to the wall: and the Skeane there breaketh ſooneſt, where the threed is fineſt. The ſtranger, the poore ſoule, the miſerable man, he that hath no ſhelter, no friends to ſticke vnto him; no great Ones to fauour him, he that is depriued of all ſuccour and comfort, and hath no body to defend him, hee is the man, whom the Iuſtice doth firſt take in hand.

They would needes know, what this ſtirre was, and whence it grew. They call'd me aſide, and tooke my confeſſion: I plainely told them all that had paſſed; but becauſe ſome that were there by, might chance to ouer-heare mee, I went apart with the *Alcaldes*, and told them in ſecret, that which I knew concerning the *Machuelo*, or little young Mule. They were firſt of all deſirous to approue and verifie the cauſe; but it ſeeming vnto them, that they had time enough to diſpatch all, they vſed diligence for the apprehending of mine Hoſte; who was careleſſe of any ill that might come vnto him for that offence. And perſwading himſelfe, that all this inquiry was onely about the Cloake, made but a jeſt of it, and laugh'd at it as a thing of nothing, and could no way touch him, for default of Information, and thoſe due proofes that I was to make, hauing no man, beſides the Carrier, to witneſſe for me, that I was ſeene to come in thither with a Cloake.

But afterwards perceiuing, that by little and little, this piece of hangings came to be ſeene, to wit, the skinne, and the reſt of the appurtenances, the Copy of my Gentlemans countenance was quickly altered, and began ſuddenly to looke blanke vpon the matter: ſo that when they began to examine him, and had withall before his face ſhew'd him the skinne; confeſſing the fact, hee was convicted, not hauing the heart to deny any thing; but tolde them the truth of all that had paſt.

For it is an aſſured truth, that baſe-minded men, infamous in their life, and ill-conditioned in their carriage and manners, are (as I ſaide before) ranke cowards, and of no courage in the world. For, without hauing the torment giuen him, or before euer that hee was threatned with the Racke; vndemanded he declared the Thefts, and the Rogueries that hee had done, as well in that his Inne, as his robbing vpon the high-way, when he was a ſhepheard: whereby he got him a Stocke, to ſet vp for himſelfe in this world. I all this while liſtened very cloſe; looking ſtill when his confeſſion ſhould bring my cloake to light; but out of the malice and hatred he bare vnto me, that was quite left out. I vſed my beſt diligence I could, to make it appeare, but all would not ſerue the turne. After they had made an end of taking our declarations; I meane, the Carriers and mine, becauſe wee were ſtrangers, they did in that particular, ratifie and approue what we had depoſed. And whileſt this Plea was depending, whether or no (till it were determined) they ſhould carry me to priſon, and keepe me there (*tras paciente, aporreado* (as they ſay) I muſt haue the wrong, and be beaten too,) there were divers diſputes thereupon. The Notaries were very glad of this, and they did pretend I ſhould: but one of the *Alchaldes* ſtood vp and ſaid, That I had reaſon on my ſide, & was in no fault at all: and that they had no reaſon to queſtion mee any farther; for it was puniſhment enough already for me, and too much too, that I was left thus naked in my hoſe and dubblet, and was coozened of my Cloake. Hereupon they let mee goe, but mine Hoſt, he was led away to priſon. And leauing him there, wee prepare for our journey: and all things being made ready, we beginne to ſet forward, paſſing along that ſtreet, where the Clergy-men ſtood looking for vs, each of them tooke his Aſſe, and away wee goe. By the way I tolde them the whole ſucceſſe of the buſineſſe: they bleſt themſelues when they heard of it, and much pitied my caſe. But becauſe they could not helpe it, they committed it to God. My ſelfe and my Companion, what with the long time that was ſpent in this broyle, and the haſte wee had to bee gone, wee went away without hearing Maſſe; ſeeming rather to flye, then goe forth of the Towne. I (for my part) neuer miſt Maſſe before, being accuſtomed all my life-time to that daily exerciſe of deuotion. From that time forward, it entred into my head, That from ſo bad a beginning, it was impoſſible to looke for a good ending. And that now, nothing could ſucceed well and happily vnto me. And ſo it fell out, as you ſhall heare hereafter. Nor can it be otherwiſe expected, when we ſerue our ſelues, and not God firſt; and not beginne with him, before we beginne our buſineſſe.

He that leaues God, God will leaue him.

CHAP.

CHAP. VII.

(Mans misfortune is heere discourſed of, and to that purpoſe you haue a ſtory tolde you of the gods of thoſe ancienter times: And how Guzman, *being thought to be a Thiefe, was apprehended; but afterwards being knowne what he was, he was ſet at liberty. One of the Clergy-men promiſeth to tell vs a ſtory, to entertaine the time withall, vpon the way.*

The Egyptians adored Fortune *as a goddeſſe.*

THe *Egyptians*, a great while agoe, in thoſe times of olde being notable Sooth-ſayers, (as indeede they were) amongſt many other errours, which they had, this was one amongſt the reſt, that they adored *Fortune*, as a Goddeſſe; verily beleeuing, that there was ſome ſuch thing indeede. To her, they celebrated a Feaſt on the firſt day of the yeere, preparing ſumptuous Tables, making great Feaſtes and coſtly Banquets, in a thankefull acknowledgement of the fore-paſſed yeare, and intreating her fauour for that which was to come. They were fully perſwaded, that this Goddeſſe was ſhee, that had the diſpoſall of all things, giuing and taking away at her pleaſure, as ſupreme Governeſſe ouer all humane things. This they did, becauſe they wanted the knowledge of one onely true God, whom wee adore and worſhip, by whoſe powerfull hand, and divine will, Heauen and earth are governed, and whatſoeuer is created in them both, be it viſible, or inviſible. It ſeemed ſomewhat ſtrange vnto them, and were touched therewith to the quicke, when misfortunes began to light vpon them; to ſee how one miſchiefe came vpon the necke of another; one no ſooner paſt, but another at the heeles of them, not giuing them one houre of eaſe and quiet, neuer making an end, till they had made an end of man, and quite ouer-throwne him horſe and foote: And how againe at another time (like ſo many Cowards) they come trooping all at once vpon vs, and neuer leaue aſſaulting vs, till they haue vtterly ruin'd vs, and throwne this our houſe of clay downe to the ground.

And on the contrary ſide againe, the Aire doth not aſcend with that nimbleneſſe and quicke motion to the top of the higheſt mountaines, as Fortune doth eleuate and lift men vp by wayes and meanes, neither ſeene, nor thought vpon, neuer ſuffering them to continue ſtill firme, either in the one, or th'other eſtate; to the end that he that is dejected, may not deſpaire; and he that is exalted, may not preſume. If the light of faith were wanting vnto mee, as it was vnto them, I might (giuing credit to this their errour) happily ſay, when ſuch like misfortunes ſhould befall mee; *Bien vengas mal, ſi ſolo vienes.* Welcome is that misfortune which comes alone: yeſterday morning I did complaine of little wearineſſe, and of the demy-Chickens that I had to dinner, going diſguized in your Hermites habite, as vnwilling to bee knowne. Afterwards, I came to make my ſupper vpon the ſtinking panch of a young Mule; and which was worſe, to feed vpon the fleſh and braines thereof, which was all one in a manner, as if I ſhould haue deuoured mine owne fleſh; I meane, by his (a) fathers ſide; which may be euery mans caſe, as well as mine. And for an vpſhot of all, the ill lucke that I had at laſt, to bee coozened of my Cloake. *Poco danno eſpanta, y mucho amanſa*: little loſſes doe onely ſtartle and amaze men at the firſt, but great ones doe quell and daunt a man, making him as gentle as a Lambe.

(a) *The Sire of a Mule, is an Aſſe.*

What treaſon hath beene plotted againſt mee? what ſquint-ey'd Starre hath ſcowl'd vpon mee? what misfortune followed mee, ſince I came from home? For from the time that I firſt put foorth of doores, all things haue

gone

gone amiſſe with me, one miſchance being the fore-runner of another, and the ſad preſager of worſer things to come, which like a double *Tertian* went increaſing vpon me, every fit being worſe and more violent, then the former, not allowing me the leaſt *intervallum* of time, or any ſpace or reſpit in the vvorld to take any reſt.

Mans life is a warre-fare vpon earth, there is no certainty therein; no ſetled aſſurance, no eſtate that is permanent; no pleaſure that is perfect; no content that is true; but all is counterfeit and vaine. Wilt thou ſee, that this is true? Then hearken to that that I ſhall tell thee. *Mans life, what it is.*

The great god *Iupiter* (for ſo the Poets faine him) having created all things vpon earth; and man to be the enjoyer of them, commanded the god *Content*, to reſide in the world, not beleeving, nor preventing the ingratitude, vvhich afterwards they fell into, following their owne proper pleaſures and delights, and bearing themſelues in a high and proud faſhion: for having this god continuing amongſt them, they did not ſo much as thinke on any other. To him they did ſacrifice, to him they offered their oblations, his name they celebrated with joy, and to him onely did they ſing Songs of praiſe and thankſgiving. *Iupiter* ſcorning this contempt, and being mightily offended vvith man for this ſtrange neglect, called a Councell of the Gods; and when they vvere all aſſembled together, he made vnto them a long diſcourſe, wherein he informed them, of the evill Correſpondence which man held with him, for that they did onely adore *Content*, as their true god; not conſidering the benefits which they had received from his prodicall hand, being meerely his workemanſhip, and by him created of nothing. And that therefore they ſhould deliver their Opinions, vvhat order vvas to be taken, for the redreſſing of ſo foule an abuſe; and vvhat Medicines to be applyed for the curing of this their madneſſe. *A morall Fable of the gods of old time, and the Councel that was held in heaven againſt Mankinde.*

Some of the milder gods, out of their tender hearts, and mercifull natures, ſpake thus vnto *Iupiter*.

Man, you know, is but a weake kinde of creature, framed of a fraile and brittle matter, a corruptible ſubſtance, ſoone diſſolv'd and turn'd to nothing; and therefore we thinke it fit, that they ſhould be holpen and held vp by vs, and that we ſhould yeeld them our ſuccour and aſſiſtance in all that we can. For, if it vvere poſſible, that we could exchange fortunes with them, and vvere in the ſame ſtate and condition as they are, and every vvay equall vvith them, I doubt me, we ſhould doe juſt as they doe. And therefore we are not to make any great reckoning of the matter: but if we doe, and that they muſt be proceeded againſt, we for our parts are verily perſwaded, that ſome milde and gentle correction will be a ſufficient remedy for the preſent.

Momus would faine haue ſpoke his minde, and his tongue itch't to be let looſe, having already entred into ſome free language, and would haue laſh't out farther, had he not beene commanded to hold his peace, and to forbeare till it came to his turne, and then he ſhould haue a full hearing. Hee would gladly haue taken hold on that occaſion, to haue incenſed *Iupiter*, becauſe it did ſo fairely offer it ſelfe vnto him: but obeying for the preſent, he meditated in the meane while on a long Oration, which he meant ſhould make for his purpoſe, when it came to his turne to ſpeake. Howbeit, there were not ſome wanting in the *interim*, of equall (almoſt) condition with himſelfe, and of the ſame humour, who ſtood vp and ſaid:

It is not fit (great god of Heaven) to leaue ſo haynous a fault vnpuniſhed: for the offence is infinite, being committed againſt ſo infinite a Majeſtie; & therefore the puniſhment ought likewiſe to be infinite. Our opinion is, that they ſhould be vtterly deſtroyed, and made an end of at once, and never to haue any more of them created anew; for there is no neceſſity at all of their beeing and living in the world, but may very well be ſpared.

Others

others would not agree to that motion, but did hold it fit, that great ſtore of Thunder-bolts, with fearfull flaſhes of Lightning, ſhould be throwne downe vpon them, and conſume them all; and that others more good ſhould bee created a new.

Thus as they vvere delivering their opinions, being more or leſſe rigorous, according to their ſeverall qualities and complexions, till it came to *Apollo's* turne to ſpeake, vvho craving leaue of the Houſe, and their favour obtayned, in a graue voyce, and with a cheerefull countenance, he thus expreſt himſelfe:

Apollo's ſpeech in mans favour.

Supreme Scepter-ſwaying *Iupiter*, higheſt amongſt the gods, both in power, and in pittie: That grievous acculation, wherewith thou chargeſt man, is ſo juſt, that wee cannot gaine-ſay, or contradict any vengeance, vvhich thou ſhalt take of them. Yet vvithall, I cannot (out of that great reſpect which I beare vnto thee) but vtter what I thinke, and plainely to ſhew vnto thee, what I haue conceived in my minde, my words being as free from paſſion, as I hope they ſhall be from offence.

If thou deſtroy the world, in vaine then are thoſe things, which thou haſt therein created; and it were imperfection in thee, to vn-make that, which thou haſt already made; only for to mend that which thou now findeſt amiſſe: Much leſſe, vvould I haue thee to repent thy ſelfe that thou haſt made Man; for that will be but to diſcredit thy ſelfe, and thine owne worke. Beſides, how can it ſtand with the power and goodneſſe of a Creator, to take too ſtrict a courſe againſt his Creature, and to exceede, by extraordinary meanes, in his chaſtiſements?

To deſtroy theſe that are now living, and to create others a new, I hold that not ſo fit to be done by thee. For thou muſt either giue them, or not giue them free-will: if thou giue them it, they muſt neceſſarily then be ſuch manner of men, as their fore-fathers were: If thou not giue it them, they ſhall not be men: And ſo thou ſhalt haue created in vaine that ſo great and glorious a frame of Heaven- Earth, Starres, Moone, Sunne, together with the compoſition of the Elements, and millions more of things, which thou haſt made in ſo exact a manner, and ſuch a ſingular perfection. So that (which importeth your ſervice; if you will be pleaſed to take it into conſideration) there remaineth but one thing to be done to ſet all aright againe, without ſeeking for any other remedy; or that you ſhall be driven to vſe any violent or rigorous proceeding againſt them, to the prejudice of your clemencie.

Thou (O *Iupiter*) gav'ſt them the God *Content*, whom they were to haue with them as long as it pleaſed thee, and no longer: for vpon thy will and pleaſure, all things both in Heaven and earth haue their dependancy. Now, had they beene ſo wiſe, that they could haue continued thankefull towards thee, and haue conſerved themſelues in juſtice and obedience towards thee, it had bin a thing repugnant to the goodneſſe of thy nature and juſtice, not to vphold and protect them, by enlarging thy favours towards them, and multiplying thy bleſſings vpon them. But ſince they haue diſ-merited this by diſobedience, thou oughteſt in ſome ſort to puniſh them. For it is not fit, that they ſhould in tyrannous manner, and with a ſtrong hand poſſeſſe theſe ſo great bleſſings, to offend thee thereby: But thou oughteſt rather to take this their god from them, and in his ſtead to ſend downe his brother *Diſcontent* amongſt them, who is very like in favour vnto him, and doth reſemble him ſo neere, that a man can hardly diſcerne the one from the other. And ſo by this meanes, they vvill ever hereafter come to acknowledge their owne miſery, & thy mercy; thy happie eſtate, and their owne wretched condition; thy eaſe, and their trouble; their paine, and thy glory; thy power, and their owne weakeneſſe. And then, as thou ſhalt ſee cauſe, thou mayſt diſtribute thy favours to thoſe that ſhall deſerue them; and according to thy loving kindneſſe

recom-

recompence every man according to thine owne good will and pleaſure, not making thy benefits alike common to the good and to the bad, by ſuffering all men equally to enjoy one and the ſame happineſſe. This courſe beeing taken with them, I am of opinion, that it will not onely bee a ſufficient puniſhment vnto them; but will alſo bring them a due acknowledgment of their errour. I haue now ſpoke my mind and ſhall now leaue it vnto thee (thou mercy-imbraceing *Iupiter*) to do that herein which ſhall ſuite beſt to thine owne good liking, and ſhall make moſt for thy ſervice.

With this briefe advice, hee ended his Oration. Then *Momus*, with his venemous tongue, beganne to lay about him, labouring to exaggerate the offence, and to ſet it forth in its vileſt colours, induced thereunto not ſo much for goodneſſe ſake, as that inveterated hatred which hee evermore bare vnto mankinde. But notice being taken of his paſſion (which was a knowne diſeaſe in him) his opinion was reproved, and cryde downe by the generall voyce of that higheſt Court of Parliament: All commending the motion that was made by *Apollo*. The execution of whoſe ſpeech was (with an vnanimous conſent) committed to *Mercury*: Who preſently (ſpreading his wings, and breaking with them through the ayre) deſcended downe vpon the earth, where hee found the men of this world with their God, *Content*, feeding and making merry together, doing him all the honour they could deviſe, being farre from the leaſt thought, that this their God ſhould (while the world indured) be alienated from their poſſeſſion.

Momus mans ancient enemy.

Mercury, by order from Ioue, deſcends on earth, and to what end.

Mercury came to this God, where hee was; and having in ſecret delivered the Embaſſage vnto him, ſent from the Gods aboue, was (though ſore againſt his will) forced to yeeld thereunto. The men were herevpon in an vproare, and ſought to hinder it all they could, and began with might and maine to intereſt themſelues in the cauſe; and ſeeing that there was no remedy, but that this their God muſt bee taken away from them, they ſtroue to defend him with all the ſtrength they could make; and taking ſtrong hold of him, they tugged hard for him, as deſirous to retaine him ſtill amongſt them.

Iupiter perceiving how the world went, and what a coyle they kept about him, came downe amongſt them, and whilſt theſe men were buſied in laying faſt hold on his cloathes (vſing a pretty ſleight) he cunningly convay'd awey *Content* from amidſt his cloathes, leaving them *Diſcontent* in his ſtead, with the ſame cloathes, and the very ſame habit of rayment, wherewith *Content* was at that time aparrelled, taking him away from thence with him to heaven. Wherewith the men that were in this broyle were very well pleaſed (though thus deceived) thinking that they had prevailed in their purpoſe, and obtained what they deſired, ſince they had their God ſtill amongſt them: But it was not ſo well with them, as they thought it to bee.

This errour of thoſe former times (the ſame deceite but liuing ſtill amongſt them) hath continued even to this preſent age. Men did thinke that *Content* remained ſtill with them, and that they had him ſure inough heere vpon earth. But it is nothing ſo; for it is onely the bare raiment, and outward ſhape and reſemblance, which they injoy with them; and *Diſcontent*, clapt into his cloathes. And if thou beleeue otherwiſe, or conceiu'dſt the contrary, thou art wide of the truth, and a meere ſtranger thereunto. Wilt thou, that I make this plaine vnto thee? Marke well then what I ſhall ſay vnto thee.

Weigh and conſider with thy ſelfe, in any kinde of manner thou thy ſelfe ſhalt deviſe: the Feaſts, the Sports, the Bankets, the Muſickes, all the delights and joyes, and whatſoever elſe may moſt moue thy inclination to the higheſt point of all, which thine owne deſire can ſuggeſt and paint forth vnto thee to the life. If I ſhall aske thee by the way, Whither goeſt thou? Thou wilt anſwere mee perhaps, and that very proudly, To ſuch a feaſt of *Content*. I giue it for granted, that there thou doeſt receiue it, and that the place doth afford it thee;

thee; the Gardens being freſh and full of flowers; the Rivers plated with their ſilver-ſtreames, and that the fountaines diſtilling their drops of pearle, may much cheere and glad thy heart. I ſuppoſe that thou haſt banketed thy ſelfe in ſweete and pleaſant Arbours, where neither the Sunne did offend thee, nor the ayre annoy thee. And that thou didſt enjoy thy deſires to their full height, & that thou hadſt all the ſports & paſtimes that a man could wiſh. Yet notwithwanding, there is no contentment ſo abſolute in this world, which is not watred with ſome ſorrow. And though in all theſe things thou hadſt no diſtaſte at all given thee; but hadſt every thing according to thine owne mind: yet when thou returneſt home to thine own houſe; or layeſt thee downe in thy bed to take thy reſt, it is not poſſible but thou ſhalt find thy ſelfe weary, duſty and ſweaty, to haue loſt thy ſtomacke, or taken cold, to grow heavy, melancholly, and ſad; and peradventure either become mad, or dead. For amidſt our greateſt pleaſures, happen the greateſt misfortunes: And are vſually wont to be vnto vs Veſpers of feare, and of horrour; and not Veſpers, where the night paſſeth merrily away from the beginning to the middle, and from the middle to the end: for in the midſt of this thy idolatry, all ſhall bee taken from thee. Set not thy heart therefore vpon them; but ſleight them, and let them goe by, as if thou didſt not know them: for there is no truſt to be had in them.

Now, by this time, (doubt not) but thou wilt ingenuouſly confeſſe, that this diſguiſe did deceiue thee, theſe cloathes coozen thee, and this maske ſo blinde thy eye-ſight; That whereas thou didſt verily thinke, that thou hadſt *Content* now ſafe inough in thy hands, thou hadſt nothing more but his outward raiment; and in it, *Diſcontent*. Now doſt thou ſee, how there is no *Content* vpon the earth; and that our true *Content* is onely in Heaven. And therefore, till thou meete with it there; do not looke for it heere.

True content is in heaven.

When I reſolued on my departure, (O good God) what a deale of *Content* did repreſent it ſelfe vnto mee? Mee thought, the very thought of it wrought wonderfully vpon mee, apprehending no happineſſe to be equall vnto this. With theſe eyes of my imagination, I beheld onely *Aprill*, and the beauty of the Fields in that ſeaſon; not ſo much as once thinking on the *Auguſt*, that was to come after: As if I were to ſuffer nothing, and had beene made of ſome impaſſible ſubſtance, that could not be ſubject to perturbations, or theſe fooliſh croſſes of the world. Thoſe long and even wayes, I conceited as things, that I was not to goe: at leaſt, not to bee wearied with them. To eate and drinke at your Innes, and other the like victualling houſes, (as one that did not know what kinde of Vermine, theſe bloud-ſuckers were,) I thought they would haue giuen mee my meate for nothing, or if they did take money for it, that it would haue beene much better then what you haue heard mee tell you. The variety and greatneſſe of things: as Birds, Beaſts, Mountaines, Woods, Cities, and whatſoever was inhabitted with people, as if I had them all already in my hand, all did figure forth vnto mee *Content*, and nothing but *Content*; but could not finde it in any thing, but in a good and honeſt life.

The ſtrange alterations in this world.

I did frame in the fabricke of my braine, Caſtles of *Content*, and that all things ſhould ſucceede proſperouſly with mee, and that whereſoever I came, I ſhould meete with my Mother, that ſhould make much of mee, and my Maid that ſhould make mee vnready, and bring my ſupper to bed to mee, and that ſhould helpe me on in the morning with my cloathes, and fetch me my breakfaſt. Good God who would thinke, that the world were ſo large and ſo long as it is? I had ſeene it in ſome Maps, and mee thought it was all plaine and ſmoth, and huddled (as it ſeemed there to bee) all together, without any great either difference or diſtance. I did not imagine, there could haue been ſo many troubles, and ſo many miſeries in it. But to ſay I never thought it, is a thing that betrayes a man to haue liheally deſcended of a race of Coxcombs,

Inſipientis eſt dicere non putarem.

it

it is a propepty, that belongs onely vnto fooles; it is the excuſe of rude and ignorant Aſſes, the childs helpe and the careleſſe mans refuge. For hee that is wiſe and diſcreete ought ever to thinke on things afore-hand, to fore-caſt the worſt; and to prevent a miſchiefe before it come.

But I did like a ſimple Youth, (as I was) having neither wit nor government in mee; and therefore I was juſtly puniſhed, for that lining ſo at eaſe as I did; and being at it were in Paradiſe I would goe abroad into the world; and like my firſt fore-fathers, could not ſee when I was well, but I know not out of what vaine humour, muſt goe ſeeke after the knowledge of good, and ill. How many things beganne I then to call to minde, when I came out of the Inne without my Cloake, and was not onely coozened, but made a common laughing ſtocke, to as many as lookt vpon mee! I would faine haue then beene feeding on the fleſh-pots of *Egypt*: O how I did long to bee at home againe! But (as the ſaying is) *el bien, haſta que ſe pierde, no ſe conoçe.* Man knowes not what happineſſe is, till hee want it.

Magis carch-do, quàm fru-endo, &c.

We were all ſad and heavy, and jogged on along in a ſullen and melancholy kinde of faſhion; and now my honeſt Carrier was no more ſo full of his laughing, as hee was before; the winde was laid in that corner, by the tricke that mine Hoſt had put vpon him. Before, he threw ſtones on my houſe top, thinking to breake the Tyles, and cracke my Roofe: but when hee found his owne to bee made of glaſſe, hee left his flinging, with-drew his hand, and kept himſelfe quiet. It is leſſe ill, and more diſcretion to conſider with a mans ſelfe, before hee ſpeake, what he may chance to heare; and before that hee doe a wrong, whether it may bee returned vpon himſelfe, or no. It is not good for a man to thruſt himſelfe willfully into danger. For when a man ſhall take too much liberty to himſelfe; hee ſhall finde a tougue for a tongue, and a hand for a hand. All things haue their equall meaſure; like do, like haue: And hee that will be honoured of all, muſt honour all.

Morall leſſons.

If it enter not (yet at leaſt it ought) into thy conſideration, that what thou haſt ſayd or done in ſecret, either ſhall, or may bee publiſhed by ſome one or other to the world, and that thou maiſt meete with ſuch a one, that either in word, or in deed, my reply that vnto thee, which thou wouldſt not vvillingly heare, and leſſe indure: Doe not ſtand vpon thy ſtrength, nor rely too much on thine owne might: For though thy affronts bee not written in thy fore-head; yet will it bee made knowne to all the world. Doe not make thoſe thy enemies, whom with good vſage thou maiſt make thy friends. For it is not good to haue any enemy at all, though never ſo weake. For from a little ſparke, ariſeth oftentimes a great flame. What thing's ſo faire and beautifull in it ſelfe; what more worthy wiſe-men; what more befitting braue ſpirits and valiant Gentleman, then to meaſure their actions by the rule of reaſon, to bridle and reine in their paſſions, and to carry an even hand in all that they doe: to the end that they may not act any thing vn-adviſedly, and put themſelues vpon extremities? Doeſt thou not ſee, how the world is now altred with our Carrier? Hee was now as ſilent as the night, not a word that comes from him. Hee laughs no more, but hangs downe his head in his boſome, not daring for ſhame to lift it vp. Our good honeſt Clergy-men rode mumbling their Mattins to themſelues; I was thinking on mine owne mis-fortunes: and when all and every one of vs were as it were in a wood, even in the thickeſt of all our contemplations, (every man thinking vpon his owne buſineſſe) two Miniſters of juſtice, with their Officers at their heeles, came in purſuit of a Page, that had ſtolne from his Maſter great ſtore of money and jewels. And by the markes that were given them; it ſhould ſeeme it was ſuch another ſtripling as my ſelfe. They had no ſooner eſpide mee, but they cryde out aloud: Ah thou theefe haue wee caught thee? wee haue the ſafe enough now, thou canſt not eſcape our hands: And preſently hereupon they

Guzman apprehended for a Page, and his ſuffrings.

ſtrooke mee off the Aſſe (my brother) with their fiſts; and when they had mee downe, laying faſt hold on mee, they fell a ſearching mee, thinking to haue found the ſtolne-goods about mee.

Sergeants and Catch-poles, an vncivill kinde of people.

They tooke off the Pack-ſaddles, ſearched the Pannels, leaving not ſo much roome, as you may put a pins-head betweene, which they did not narrowly pry into: and when they could finde nothing there, then they began to exclaime, and cry out vpon mee; Ah, thou thiefe, confeſſe and tell vs the truth; for wee will hang the here preſently, if thou delay vs any longer. They would not heare mee, nor admit of any excuſe I could make for my ſelfe; and in deſpight of the world, without any other cauſe given, (ſaue their owne ſelfewill and opinion) I, and no other man, muſt needes be the fellow. They gaue mee many blowes, thumps on the breaſt, boxes on the eare with the backes of their hands, and many other outrages, wherewith they tormented me, and all, that I might not bee ſuffered by them to ſpeake for my ſelfe, and to pronounce ſomething in mine owne defence. And although it did much grieue mee, to ſee how ill I was vſed by them, yet I could not chooſe but laugh to my ſelfe, for that my companion was worſe dealt withall; laying more load and harder blowes vpon him, than mee, as a receiver and concealer of this theft, and that he was my partner and ſharer therein.

Mans depraued diſpoſition, what effects it worketh.

Doeſt thou not here perceiue the perverſe inclination of men, who haue ſcarce any feeling of their owne miſeries, when they ſee thoſe of their enemies, to bee greater then their owne? I was not halfe Cater-couſins with him, becauſe by his meanes, I had loſt my Cloake, and ſup't vpon a Mule. And therefore I did beare mine owne hurt the better, becauſe hee ſuffered ſomewhat more then my ſelfe. They did beate him without mercy; they had no pitty of him in the world, but were ſtill bawling vpon him, that hee ſhould diſcover whither hee had carried theſe goods? and to what ſecret place hee had conuei'd them?

** A Proverbe,*

The poore man that was as innocent as my ſelfe, and as free from any ſuch fault, as the childe that is new borne, did not know in the world what to doe. He thought at firſt that they had beeue but in jeſt with him; but when hee ſaw they were in earneſt, and paſt ſo farre beyond the bounds of ſport, and that it was now no longer a jeſting matter, * He curſt the dead to the devill, & all thoſe that ſhould but ſhed a teare for him. This ſport did nothing pleaſe him, and wiſht by this time with all his heart, that hee had never ſeene mee. The Gowne (as they ſay) was now bruſht cleane, not a ſpecke to bee ſeene; all was vnfolded, and ſearched over and over, but nothing at all to bee found: and though the theft appeared not, yet the rigour of their puniſhing ceaſed not: But as if they had the Law in their owne hands, or had beene to ſit vpon vs as our lawfull Iudges, they did vſe vs moſt cruelly both in word and deed: perhaps it was giuen them ſo in charge amongſt other their inſtructions. Now they being weary with punching vs, and wee with ſuffering it, they began to bind our hands, and pinion our armes to carry vs backe vvith them to *Sevill*.

a The holy Inquiſition is well knowne to the world, what ſeuere courſes they take

Let it be in thy *Letany*, that God would deliver thee from committing any offence againſt theſe three *Holy's*; The holy [a] *Inquiſition*, the holy [b] *Hermandad*, and the holy [c] *Cruſada*: But if thou bee faulty, then pray, That the Lord would deliver the from the holy *Hermandad*: for the other *Holy's*, having (as they haue) vpright Iudges, men of truth, knowledge, and Conſcience; their Miniſters notwithſtanding and vnder-Officers, are of a different condition. And your Sergeants and Catch-poles belonging to the holy *Hermandad*, are in the generall, a kind of moſt lewd and wicked people; men without Soules, and not worthy to bee ſpoken of, or named amongſt honeſt men. And very many of them, for a very little matter, will not ſticke to ſweare that againſt thee, which thou never didſt, nor they never ſaw, more then the money which

The ſeuereſt and cruelleſt Officers that are in all Spaine.

What baſe and vile people, are the Sergeants and Catch poles.

b Hermandad, in Caſtile is a certaine Tribunall, that hath a great Iuriſdiction, and puniſheth the faults committed in the fields, which hath great prerogatiues and exemptions from the kings of Spaine. And is in that reſpect amongſt them, that it is ſtyled by the name of Santa, or holy.

a The Cruzada is an Indulgence which the Popes granted to thoſe, that went to conquer the holy Land, which is now granted to the King of Spaine, by way of Subſidies againſt Infidels and Heretickes giuing ſome ſmall almes towards ſo pious a worke.

they tooke, to beare falſe witneſſe againſt thee (vnleſſe thou beſtow the wine vpon them, or otherwiſe content them, by greaſing their fiſt.) They are in concluſion, of a raſcall kinde of race; very Varlets, Buckle-beaſonds, Collar-catchers: in a word, they are Sergeants, and Catch-poles; and ſo by conſequence, theeues, peſſants, or but an Ace leſſe; and (as we ſhall tell you hereafter) thoſe that rob the Common-wealth whereſoeuer they come, as if they had a Commiſſion for theſe their open thefts. And now (my honeſt Sergeant) me thinkes I heare thee mutter, that I ſpeake amiſſe; telling thee, that thou (for thy part) art a very honeſt man, and doſt exerciſe thy Office well, vvithout abuſe vnto any. I confeſſe as much, and ſay, that thou art ſuch an one, and that I know thee to be ſo. But tell me, my friend, (and let vs ſpeake it in ſecret betweene our ſelues, that no body may heare vs) doeſt not thou know, (and confeſſe ingenuouſly) that this is truth which I ſpeake of thy fellowes? if thou know'ſt as much, (as thou canſt not chooſe) and that it is ſo indeede; I talke to them and not to thee.

Now had we quite loſt our Clergy-men, wee ſhooke hands with them at the firſt, who walked afoote their vvay, and vve ours. Shall I tell you what I thought with my ſelfe? if you will giue me the hearing, I will. Truſt me, all the blowes that I received, nay, Death it ſelfe, vvould not haue beene halfe ſo grieuous vnto me, as to ſee my ſelfe brought backe againe, in this manner to mine owne Countrey, if their reſolution had held: if they had carried me to any place, where I was vnknowne to it, and it to me, it had not beene a Pins-poynt matter; I ſhould haue ſet light by it, and caſt it at my heele, eſpecially conſidering, that in the end I muſt be ſet at liberty, and come off cleare; and that the truth would at laſt ſhew it ſelfe, and make it knowne to the world that I vvas not the man, they tooke me to be. We were drawn along like dogges in a paire of couples; afflicted in that manner as thou mayſt imagine, (if ever the like misfortune ſhould happen vnto thee.) I know not how it came to paſſe, (but ſo it was) that one amongſt the reſt look't ſtedfaſtly vpon me, and ſaid to one that was by him; How now, what's this? I feare mee we haue taken our marke amiſſe, and through our too much haſte, haue runne into an errour. The other anſwered; Why thinke you ſo? Hee replide; Doe not you know, that he, whom we are to ſeeke after, wants his left Thumbe; and this Youth you ſee, is found in that part? Whereupon they went to reade their * *Requiſitoria*, which did ſet downe the markes, whereby they ſhould know him, and they found they had beene deceived almoſt in every one of them. But queſtionleſſe, they had a great deſire to beat ſome body, and ſo fell vpon him that came firſt to hand. Preſently thereupon, they vnpinion'd vs, and looſed our hands, and craving pardon, that they vvere ſo much miſtaken, they went their way, and left vs ſoundly paid for our paines; taking ſome few b *Quarto's* of the Carrier, for the ſight of the Commiſſion, to moyſten their mouthes herewith, at the next Inne that they ſhould light on.

No ay mal tan malo, de que no reſulte algo bueno.

There is no ill ſo bad, from whence there doth not ariſe ſome good.

If they had not ſtolne my Cloake from me, by having that vpon my backe, they would not haue perceiued, whether I had beene ſound of my thumbes, or no: But had it ſo falne out, that they ſhould haue come to know any ſuch thing by me, it had come ſo out of ſeaſon, that rather then I would haue confeſt, the fact, I would haue firſt endured a thouſand torments. In every thing I had very good fortune. My money ſpent, my Cloake ſtolne, my belly hungry, my cheekes buffeted, my necke out of ioynt, and my teeth beaten in bloud, with the bobs on my noſe, and the dollors that they gaue me on the mouth. My Companion, if he vvere not worſe, was no leſſe ill treated then my ſelfe. And vvhen they had vſ'd vs both thus hardly, to make vs amends, they cry vs mercy, ſaying; That vve are not the men. I pray marke, what

a Requiſitoriz *is a Iudges Warrant to another, wherein he requireth him to execute his commaund.*

Guzman *ſet ſpie.*

b *The Spaniſh word* Quarto, *is a kinde of braſſe coyne, whereof foure make 3 pence.*

Guzmans good fortune what it was.

pretty kinde of pardon this was, and in what good time it came: first, they fall a beating of vs, before they examine vs: and when they haue almost murthered vs, to make vs amends, forsooth, they aske vs forgiuenesse.

The Clergy-men were now neere at hand, wee presently ouertake them; they blest themselues when they saw vs. But vp and told them, what was the cause of our liberty; for my Companion was so bang'd about the chappes, that he durst not dare to speake, for feare he should spit out his grinders.

Every one got vpon his Asse, and we began to spurre on, but not with our heeles; because with them we were not able to reach to our Saddle-skirts. And I assure you in good faith, it were a world to tell you, what a bargaine we had of it; how the Faire went, and what a market we had of it.

Then said the younger of the two Clerkes; No more of this (my friends) it is enough. That we may forget part of these sorrowes past, and entertaine the way with some merriment; when my Companion hath ended his (a) Deuotion, I shall relate a Story vnto you; much whereof happened in *Seuill*. We tooke it all as a fauour; and the other having now ended his Orizons, attending this Discourse with a deepe silence, and an earnest desire, we looke still when he should begin.

a *The Clergy-men in Spaine, when they travell on the way, haue certaine set prayers to say.*

CHAP. VIII.

Wherein *Guzman de Alfarache* relateth the Story of those two Lovers, *Ozmin* and *Daraxa*.

THE ARGVMENT.

How Ferdinand *and* Isabell, *King and Queene of* Spaine, *tooke* Baça, *a Citie of the Moores, wherein* Daraxa *a beautifull and noble Damozell was taken prisoner, whom Queene* Isabell *brought with her to* Sevill, *and there left her in the custodie of Don* Luyis de Padilla. *How* Ozmin *a young Gentleman well descended, and inamoured of that Lady, after he had suffered long sickenesse for the imprisonment of his faire* Daraxa, *went to the said City, together with the diuers accidents that happened to them both.*

AS soone as they had mumbled vp their prayers, (which they quickly dispach't) they shut their prayer-bookes, and putting them in their *Alforjas*, (which is a kinde of Wallet) all of vs giving diligent eare vnto him, the good Priest began his promised History after this manner:

The Catholicke Kings *Don Ferdinand*, and *Donna Isabella*, being at the Siege of *Baça*, it was so well fought on both sides, (being as bravely defended as it was valiantly assaulted) that for a long time it was not knowne which side had the better, or where the aduantage was like to fall, (Fortune had so equally spread her wings.) For albeit, the Kings Forces were the greater, and did exceede the other in number of men; yet the Moores (being likewise many) were wonderfully strengthened by the good disposition of the situation of that City.

The Queene *Donna Isabell* remained in *Iaen*, making prouision of all things necessary for the Campe. And the King *Don Ferdinand* went forth in person to supply the Army; which he diuided into two parts: In the one hee planted his Ordinance, recommending the care thereof to the Marquesses of *Cadiz*, and *Aquila*, to *Luys Fernandez Portocarrero*, Lord of *Palma*, and to the Commendadours of *Alcantara* and *Calatraua*, besides other Captaines and

Souldiers. In the other himselfe was incamped, accompanied with the chiefe of his Nobilitie and Gentry, and most experienced men of Armes; so hedging in the Cittie on euery side, that it seemed as a Center in the midst of a large Circle.

The two Campes lay some halfe League the one from the other, if the compasse had runne right; but because their passage was stopt, they beleaguered the other halfe along by the mountaine, and by this meanes were distanced one from the other a League or thereabouts: and because they could hardly succour one another, they agreed (the Councell of Warre hauing so thought it fit) to make certaine Trenches and Castles, which the King in his owne person did often visit. And albeit the Moores did labour by all meanes possible, to hinder this designe, yet the Christians made good their Worke, valiantly defending what they had vndertaken; there being not a day that past over their heads, wherein there were not two or three (if not more) skirmishes that past betweene them; many on both sides being both hurt and slaine. But because the worke, (being of so great importance) should not cease vpon those that wrought thereon, a sufficient Guard did continually attend both night and day: it happened, that *Don Rodrigo*, and *Don Hurtado de Mendonça*, *Adelantado* of *Caçorla*, and *Don Sancho de Castilla*, being of the Guard; the King commanded them to make good that place, till that the *Condees* of *Cabra* and *Vrenna*, and the Marquesse of *Astorga* should enter with their Regiments for a certaine exploit that was to bee put in execution. The Moores, who (as hath beene saide) were very watchfull, seeking to disturbe the worke, descended from the toppe of the mountaine with some 3000 Foote, and 400 Horse, and set vpon *Don Rodrigo Mendonça*. The *Adelantado*, and *Don Sancho* began the fight with them; and now the battell growing hot betweene them, the Moores were relieued by many other that sallied out of the Citty. King *Ferdinand* being there present, and seeing how things went, commanded the *Condee de Tendilla*, that he should assaile them on the other side, so that the battell by this time grew very bloody on both sides.

The King then seeing the streight wherein the *Condee* was, and that hee was wounded, manfully fighting against the Moores, hee gaue order to the Master *de Santiago* to assist with his forces on the one side, and to the Marquesse of *Cadiz*, the Duke of *Nagera*, and the *Commendadors* of *Calatreva*, and to *Francisco de Bonadilla*, that they should charge them with their troopes, where the Artillery was planted: The Moores thereupon drew foorth another third Squadron against them, and it was bravely fought on both sides, aswell by the Moores as the Christians. And the King being himselfe in this conflict, discouered by those of his Campe, they armed with all the haste they could, and went foorth to ayde him. And so thicke were the Troopes of those that came to succour him, that the Moores being vnable any longer to make resistance, betooke themselues to flight, the Christians still hauing them in chase, making great slaughter of them; pursuing them euen to the very suburbes of the Cittie; whereinto many of the Souldiers entred, and got rich pillage; taking some of the principall persons prisoners; in which number was *Daraxa*, a Moorish Damosell, the onely daughter of the *Alcalde* of that Fort. Her beauty was her owne, and the most perfect one, that euer eye had seene: her yeeres were rather shorter then full seuenteene; being so well growne in the bud, that shee was now ready for the blowing. And being in this true height of excellencie, as is heere set downe, it was raised much the higher by her discretion, gravity, and gracefull carriage: She spake Spanish so well, that a man that had not knowne her, would haue taken her to bee an olde Christian; for shee might haue past amongst those that speake the purest Language.

The King did highly esteeme of this Lady, accounting of her as of a iewell

of great price. And therefore ſent her as a treaſure to the Queene his Wife, who made no leſſe reckoning of her, receiuing her very graciouſly, as well for her owne deſert and worth, for that ſhe was of principall ranke and qualitie, being deſcended of Kings, and the daughter of ſo honourable a perſon; as alſo for to try whether ſhee might be a meanes to make the Citty to yeeld, without further fight, and ſhedding of bloud. Whereupon ſhee treated her with all kindneſſe, and the beſt vſage ſhee could deviſe, farre exceeding the faſhion of thoſe her other Ladies, which were neereſt about her perſon. So that not as a Captiue, but as a Kinſwoman, ſhee entertained her in the kindeſt manner that could be, greatly deſiring, that ſuch an excellent piece of nature as ſhee was, and where ſuch ſurpaſſing beauty did poſſeſſe the body, there the ſoule might not with fowle Paganiſme be ſullied and defiled. Theſe were ſufficient reaſons of themſelues to haue her ſtill in her ſight, beſides the content ſhee receiued in talking and converſing with her. For ſhee was able to giue her ſo good an account of the ſtate of the whole Country, and of euery particular paſſage in thoſe warres (though ſhe were but of yong and tender yeeres) as if ſhe had beene of maturer age, and the wiſeſt Counſellour in the Kingdome. And albeit the King and Queene hapned afterwards to meet in *Baça*, (that Citie being rendred vp into their hands vpon certaine conditions) yet the Queene would neuer ſuffer *Daraxa* to be from her ſide, for that great affection which ſhe bare vnto her, promiſing the *Alcalde* her father, to doe her many particular fauours. Her abſence did much grieue him: but the loue which he ſaw their Catholicke Majeſties bare vnto her, did ſomwhat leſſen his ſorrow, conceiuing that much honour and profite would redound vnto her thereby: And ſo reſted himſelfe contented, and pocketed vp his griefe in ſilence. The Queene (as I told you) would neuer bee without her, and at length carried her along with her vnto *Sevill*; where, out of the deſire ſhee had to winne her to be a Chriſtian, for to diſpoſe her thereunto, by little and by little, vſing no violent, but tractable meanes; ſhee tooke her one day aſide, and ſaide thus vnto her:

Thou canſt not by this time (*Daraxa*) but truely vnderſtand how well I affect thee, and the great deſire I haue had to giue thee content: In requitall whereof, I ſhall intreate thee for my ſake to grant me one requeſt; which is, that thou wilt exchange this attire thou now weareſt, and put on ſuch cloathes as I ſhall inveſt thee withall, appertaining to mine owne perſon; and to weare, and enjoy them, being that thy beauty will be much advantaged by this habite of ours.

Daraxa mildely made anſwere; I ſhall willingly performe, what your Majeſty ſhall be pleaſed to command me. For by obeying you herein, (if there be any diſcretion in mee, or any conſideration of worth in this my weake apprehenſion,) I ſhall from this day forward thinke the better of it, and holde it for good, for doubtleſſe it cannot be otherwiſe, but that theſe your Majeſties ornaments will adde a grace to my imperfections, and your rich dreſſings ſupply my poore defects.

Daraxa, (reply'd the Queene) it is not your modeſty that can make you derogate from your ſelfe. For if euer Nature made a perfect worke, ſhee ſumm'd it all vp in thy ſelfe. But not to inſiſt vpon the praiſe of that, which can not ſufficiently be expreſſed, we graciouſly accept of this your ſeruice, and the willing tender you make thereof vnto vs.

Now was *Daraxa* apparelled after the Spaniſh faſhion, reſiding certaine dayes in the Palace, till ſuch time as their Catholicke Majeſties departed from thence, to goe to the ſiege of *Granada*. And therefore as well for the troubles that attend the Warres; as alſo that ſhee might take ſome ſauour in the things of our Faith, the Queene thought it fit to leaue her in the houſe of *Don Luys de Padilla* (a man of quality and a Fauourite) where ſhee might entertaine her

herſelfe with *Donna Eluira de Guzman*, his Daughter and a Virgin; to whom was giuen in charge, the care of her entertainment, with expreſſe order to vſe her with all reſpect; and that ſhee ſhould want nothing that might giue her content. And albeit ſhe were accordingly receiued by them, being feaſted and courted with all the pleaſures that place could afoord; yet it grieued her much to ſee her ſelfe ſo farre from her natiue home, beſides other cauſes, which gaue her much more diſcontent, but thoſe ſhee did not diſcouer; for with a cheerefull countenance, and a pleaſant ſemblance, ſhee made ſhow, that ſeeing it was her Majeſties pleaſure ſo to diſpoſe of her, that ſhee did eſteeme it as a fauour; and ſo did expreſſe it in her lookes and geſture.

This Damſell, her Parents had betrothed to a Mooriſh Gentleman of *Granada*, whoſe name was *Ozmin*: whoſe qualitie and condition, together with his diſpoſition, was in all points ſutable to that of *Daraxa*. Hee was young, rich, of a ſweet behaviour, perſonable, diſcreet, and aboue all, very valiant, and full of courage, and euery one of theſe parts well adapted, and diſpoſed to receiue many other, which as they were fit for him, ſo they did well become him. Beſides, he was ſo dextrous in the Spaniſh tongue, as if hee had beene bred vp in the heart of *Caſtile*, and a naturall of that Countrey: (it being a thing as worthy commendation in vertuous young men, as it is a glory to thoſe parents, who breed vp their children in the knowledge of tongues, & exerciſe of Armes.) Hee lou'd his eſpouſed Lady with all the tenderneſſe that a Louer could, inſomuch that hee did (in a manner) commit idolatry, out of the reverence and reſpect that hee bare vnto her; and would (might hee be ſuffered ſo to doe) haue ſet vp her *Statua* vpon the higheſt Altars. On her hee did wholly imploy his memory; for her all his ſenſes kept continuall watch and ward, and his will was more hers, then his owne; Nor was his Spouſe (who was made all of thankefulneſſe) any whit his debtor. Their loue was as equall, as was their qualitie, and their affection did truely correſpond with their euen condition. But ſurpaſſing all the reſt, was that moſt honeſt courſe of life, wherein they conſeru'd themſelues. The ſweetneſſe of thoſe diſcourſes which by Letters paſſed betweene them, thoſe louely meſſages which were ſent to and fro each to other, can not bee indeered according to their true deſert. They had viſited and ſeene one another very often, but neuer treated of loue, mouth to mouth. But their ſpeaking eyes parled many times when their tongues were ſilent, which neuer omitted the occaſion to talke together. For both of them many yeares before, and yet not very many, becauſe they were both but young, but to ſpeake more properly, had euen from their child-hood loued and viſited each other at their pleaſure. The parents were knit in ſo perfect a friendſhip, and their children in ſuch ſtreight knots of the faſteſt loue, that to make this harmony the fuller, they did all deſire to be neerer linked (if poſſibly it might be) by a ſtrong Alliance: And by this marriage it had taken effect, had it not, when all was in a manner concluded, beene croſt in an vnluckie houre, and by the rigour of ſome auſtere Planet, when *Baça* was beſieged.

But vpon this reuolution of things, and theſe warlike commotions, it was thought fit to deferre it for a while, wayting for a more conuenient time, wherein their marriage might bee ſolemnized with greater mirth and iollitie, and ſuch triumphs and feaſtings performed, as the youthfulneſſe and qualification required of ſo ſweet and lowely a couple, and ſeemed neceſſarily to ſuite with the eſtimation and greatneſſe of both their parents.

You haue heard already who *Daraxa*'s Father was: Her Mother was her owne Kinſwoman, daughter to a Siſter of *Abdalla*, King of that Citie, who had treated this Match betweene them. And *Ozmin* was ſonne to *Germane* to *Muhomet*, King of *Granada*, ſur-named *The Lefter*. Now that all theſe

ſaire

faire designes, had contrary successe to their desires, and that Fortune had bent her browe against them, *Daraxa* remaining now in the power of those their Catholicke Majesties; and being left behind in *Sevill*, as soone as *Ozmin* heard of it, the exclamations that hee made; the sorrowes which hee vttered; the sighes which he vented, as they were the true Heraulds that proclaimed his hearts-griefe; so did they moue all men to compassion, who could not choose but share, (and that in no small measure) with him, when they saw such lamentable effects of his great affliction.

But because the losse was so solely his, and the wound put so home to his very heart and soule, sorrow did so seaze vpon him, that in a short time it tooke holde vpon his manly (yet delicate) body; so that all the whole frame thereof was out of temper, and fell at last into a grieuous sickenesse, as dangerous and difficill to bee cured, as the remedy was distant, and the cause vnknowne. The effects whereof dayly increased with mortall signes of death, because the cause encreased; and the medicines that were ministred vnto him, him, being not rightly applyed, did him no good at all. And which is the worst in maladies, the Physicians did not truely apprehend the nature of his disease, being the most essentiall point, for the restoring of a man to his former state of health. So that his afflicted Parents, despairing of his recouery, had now rendred vp all hope of life; and the Physicians, they had giuen him ouer, being of opinion, that it was impossible he should liue; their judgment being strengthned and confirmed by all those accidents which did jointly concurre, & openly expresse themselues in this his painfull torment.

But when this sicke Louer was treading the last step of life, that hee had to goe, and euen entring into the doores of Death; a conceit came suddenly into his head, which representing it selfe to his imagination, wrought so effectually with him, that hee seemed to draw some fruit from it, and to be somewhat better then he was: And though his sickenesse were yet still full of danger, yet compared with that miserable estate wherein hee stood before, the amendment could not for the time be greater. And out of the longing desire that hee had to put that in execution, which his conceit had formerly entertained, plotting in his imagination, how he might come to get a sight of his beloued Spouse, hee gained breath, and grew somewhat stronger, stoutly resisting those things, that might hinder his intent.

Whereupon he silenced his sorrowes, and shooke handes with melancholy, taking his leaue of them both: bidding them fare-well for euer, and did now wholly intend his health; and by this meanes beganne by degrees to grow better and better, cleane contrary to the expectation of those, who had seene how low hee was brought, and in what a desperate estate hee was.

True is that olde Adage, *Desire subdueth feare*, trampleth on the necke of inconveniences, and levelleth all difficulties, be the way of them neuer so steep, neuer so rockie. And a good and cheerefull heart in a sicke man, is the best Sirrop, and the most comfortable cordiall in the world; your Amber, your Corall, your Pearle, your Gold, and all the rabble of your other restoratiues are nothing vnto it. And therefore it is good for a man to make himselfe as merry as he can. And when thou seest a man once to wax merry when hee is sicke, thou mayst boldly say, he mends.

Now then, by this time, our Gentleman is vp vpon his feete, and though yet weake and scarce able to walke vp and downe in his Chamber (his long sickenesse hauing yet made his legges vnable to beare his body) he forthwith furnished himselfe of a *Moore*, to bee both his Guide, and Interpreter, who had for a long time serued the Kings of *Granada* as an Intelligencer. And putting vp good store of Gold and Iewels for that journey, and taking with him a good horse, that was browne Bay, with a Petronell hanging at the arson of his Saddle,

Saddle, and his Sword and Dagger girt to his side; upon a certaine night by them appointed they departed out of the Citie, in the fashion and habit of Spaniards; and going by the way, knowing well how to coast the Country, as being well acquainted with those parts, they passed through the midst of the enemies Campe, and having left that behinde them, by by-paths and secret passages they came to *Loja*. Where, being scarce vnto the Citie, it was their hard fortune to meet with a Captaine of the field, who went gathering vp of men which had fled from the Army, and forsaken their colours. Now as soone as he spied these two, he tooke hold of them. The *Moore* fained hee had a Pasport, seeking for it one while in his bosome, another while in his pocket, and other parts about him. But because he could not finde it, and for that the Captaine perceived he had beene out of the rode way, which made him shrewdly to suspect them, he tooke them along with him, to bring them backe againe to the Campe.

But *Ozmin* not dismayed herewith, nor suffering any alteration of countenance, with great boldnes and free language, making benefit of the Noblemans name, in whose power his Spouse was, fained himselfe to be his sonne, styling himselfe by the name of *Don Rudrigo de Padilla*, and that he came with a message to their Catholicke Majesties from his father touching *Davara*; and that his health fayling him (which was witnessed by his wanne lookes) hee was making home with all the convenient haste he could. Other whiles, hee affirmed, he had lost both his Pasport, and his way; and that to returne againe thereinto, he had betaken himselfe to that path.

But this would not serue his turne; for hee still insisted to haue them goe backe, whilest they either did not, or would not then vnderstand, that he did not care a button whether they returned or no? His pretension onely was, that a Gentleman of that ranke and quality, as hee pretended himselfe to bee, should haue blinded his eyes with some few Dubbloons: for there is no Generals hand, that can equall the seale-Royall, which is of so much the more power with vs; by how much we finde it firmed and instamped with that more noble mettall. For your poore Shag-rags, and silly snakes, that steale from the Armie to returne home: for these (I say) they haue teeth, and sharpe ones too, and on such poore soules as these, doe they only exercise their power, executing those orders which are made against such kinde of fugitiues: But not on them, from whom they haue hope of profit, and may make good gaine: for this is that they seeke for.

Ozmin suspecting whither these bearings of his did tend; and finding on which foote he began to halt, followed him close, and began thus to speake vnto him: Misconster mee not (Noble Capeaine) nor thinke, that it shall greiue me a whit to returne once more backe againe, nor were it ten times one after another, should it trouble mee to reiterate the steps that I haue troden; nay, I would willingly repeate the same way againe and againe; if my health (as you see) were not wanting vnto mee; but since the necessity of my returne is made evident and plaine vnto you: let me intreat you, Sir, not to put me to that trouble, seeing it is as much as my life is worth, considering the weakenesse wherein I now am: And with that, taking a rich ring from off his finger, he put it into his hand, which was such he should haue throwne Vineger vpon fire; for he straight grew coole vpon it, and kindely said vnto him; Sir, God be your good speede; for I well perceiue that you are as you seeme to bee a man of principall note, that does not serue the King for pay, nor would out of your nobleneese and point of honour forsake the field, but vpon so great an occasion as this. I shall write vpon you at *Loja*, where I will giue order, that you passe forward with the more safety. And so he did, remayning both good friends; and when they had reposed themselues a while, they tooke their leaue.

Attended

Attended vvith theſe and other the like misfortunes, they arrived at length at *Sevil*; vvhere, by the information that he had gotten, he came to know the ſtreete and houſe where his *Dorus* dwelt: her walked many a faire turne thereabout at different howers; and on divers dayes, but it vvas never his good hap to ſee her, for in regard ſhee walked not abroad, nor vvent to Church, ſhee ſpent her whole time in her needle, and in recreating her ſelfe with her friend *Donna Elvira*.

Now *Ozmin* perceiving the difficulty to compaſſe his deſire, and the ſuſpition which he might giue, (as ordinarily all ſtrangers doe, in whatſoever place they come: for all mens eyes are vpon them, deſiring to know who they are, whence they come, what they ſeeke, and how they liue, eſpecially if they frequent one ſtreet more then another, and caſt a carefull eye either vpon the windowes or the doores of ſome particular houſe) Hence ariſeth envie; hence a muttering and murmuring of the multitude, and hence, (though none be intereſſed in the buſineſſe) an hatred without a cauſe. And ſome vvhiſperings were already begun; vvherevpon he was inforced, for the avoyding the ſcandall, to forbeare for ſome few dayes, vvhileſt his ſervant in the meane while performed that office, as being a perſon of leſſe eſteeme, and therefore the leſſe obſerved. But he making no diſcovery, did onely confort himſelfe in walking that way in the night at extraordinary howers, and in imbracing the walls, kiſſing the doores and threſholds of that houſe.

In this forlorne kinde of hope he lived ſometime, till at length that fell out which ſorted with this deſire. For his ſervant taking the care vpon him to round the houſe three or foure times aday, found out in the end, that *Don Luys* was a making vp of a certaine Wall that was falne downe. Then did he take occaſion by the fore-top, adviſing his Maſter to put on a poore canvaſſe Frocke, or the like baſe garment, and to thruſt himſelfe in amongſt the reſt, as a Labourer in that Worke. He liked vvell of the invention, put it in execution, leaving his ſervant to looke to his horſe, and the vvealth and Iewels that vvere in his Lodging, that he might helpe himſelfe there-withall, if neede were. And ſo he vvent forth to this vvorke: whither, vvhen he came, he demanded, if they had any worke for a ſtranger; they told him, they had. For his wages, it is to be ſuppoſed, that he for his part was willing to bee hired at any rate, rather then to ſit out. So he now ſets himſelfe roundly to his vvorke, ſtriving to out-worke them all: and albeit, through his many croſſes and diſcontents, he had not yet recovered his perfect health, yet (as the phraſe is) he drew ſtrength out of weakeneſſe: for it is the heart that commands the fleſh. Hee vvas the firſt ſtill that came to vvorke, and the laſt that left off: and vvhen all the reſt vvere vvilling to take their eaſe and refreſh themſelues, hee vvas ſtill ſeeking out ſomething, vvherein he might buſie himſelfe: inſomuch that being found fault withall for it by his fellow-labourers, (for even in misfortune Envy likewiſe hath a hand) he made them anſwere; That he knew not how to be idle. *Don Luys*, who noted his diligence, had a liking vnto him, and was reſolving vvith himſelfe to take him into his ſervice for the affaires of his houſe; and more particularly for the keeping of his garden. Herevpon he demanded of him, vvhether he had any skill in that kinde? Hee told him, A little; and that the deſire that he had to doe him ſervice, would in ſhort time enable him much more. He was well pleaſed both vvith his ſpeech and perſon; for he had found him in every thing, to be as ſufficient as he was carefull.

The Maſon had made an end of repayring the wall, and *Ozmin* was now Gardiner to *Don Luys*, nor vntill that day, was it ever poſſible for him to ſee *Dorus*. But ſuch vvas his good fortune (Fortune being willing ſo to haue it) that the Sunne ſhone bright that morning, the skie was cleare, the heavens propitious, ſcattering the clouds of his former diſgraces, and diſcovering a

new

new light; by helpe whereof, hee ſaw the joyfull haven to his long indured ſhip-wracks.

And the very firſt evening that he exerciſed this his new Office, hee ſaw his Spouſe comming all alone, ſoftly pacing her ſteps thorow a ſpacious Walke, beſet all with Myrtles, muske-Roſes, Ieſmines, and other Flowers, gathering here one there one, wherewith ſhee adorned her haire. Now by her attire, hee would never haue knowne her, if the true Originall had not well agreed with that liuely counterfeit, which hee had imprinted in his heart: as likewiſe that hee did plainely perceiue, that ſo great beauty could not belong to any body but herſelfe. Hee was much perplexed when hee ſaw her, and debated with himſelfe, whether hee was beſt to ſpeake to her or no: but his baſhfullneſſe being as great as was her prevention, beeing hindred by the ſhortneſſe of that time wherein ſhe paſſed along, hee hung downe his head making holes in the earth with a Dibble that hee had in his hand, for the ſetting of a few choyce Slips.

Daraxa turn'd her head aſide, and when in the caſting of it, ſhee ſaw this new Gardiner, ſhee ſtedfaſtly began to looke vpon him: and viewing vvell that ſide of his face vvhich did moſt conveniently diſcover itſelfe vnto her, that place did repreſent it ſelfe to her imagination, where ſhee had ſo often beheld her Beloued, (ſo like did hee ſeeme vnto her:) vvherevpon ſuch a ſudden ſadneſſe ſeized vpon her, that fainting ſhee fell to the ground; and vvhen ſhee came to her ſelfe, taking hold on the Rayles of the Garden, which vvere wrought of well ordered Canes, (according to the faſhion of that Countrey) ſhee ſent forth a moſt ſorrowfull ſight, attended with infinite ſtore of teares; and leaning her hand on her roſie cheeke, ſhee called many things to remembrance; wherein, if ſhee ſhould haue inſiſted vpon every particular, and perſevered in the recordation of them, ſhee might eaſily haue bene the authour of her owne death. But ſhee did put them off as well as ſhee could, with another new deſire which ſhee had to entertaine her ſoule with his ſight; deceiuing thoſe conceits, with that little parcell of *Ozmins* face which repreſented itſelfe vnto her.

Herevpon ſhee roſe, but accompanied with a generall trembling, (her vvhole body and heart, panting and ſhivering vvith an aguiſh fit of Loue) and turning againe to contemplate anew the image of her adoration; which the more attentiuely ſhee beheld, the more liuely ſhee transformed the ſame into herſelfe. It ſeemed vnto her that ſhee had beene in a dreame, but when ſhee perceived that ſhee was awake, and that her ſight ſerved, ſhee vvas afrayd it was ſome ghoſt or Fairy-apparition. But afterwards, vvhen vpon better view ſhee ſaw it was a man, a very man, and no *Phantaſma*, ſhee vviſhed that it might be he, whom ſhee loued. Notwithſtanding ſhee vvas mightily perplexed in minde, and caſt many doubts vvith her ſelfe, not beeing able to deviſe vvho this man ſhould bee. For his ſickneſſe had layd a paleneſſe on his cheekes, which had loſt their wonted colours but in all other things beſides, as his favour, his feature, his proportion and carriage did aſſure her of the truth: yet his office, his habit, and the very place vvherein hee ſtood; made her diſcard all ſuch kind of thoughts, and to diſ-deceiue herſelfe: and againe; it grieued her to bee drawne out of this errour, perſiſting obſtinately in her vviſh, not being able to abſtaine to diſcover her particular affections vnto him, for the reſemblance which hee had of him, whom ſhe ſo dearely loued: vvhervpon out of thoſe her doubtings and anxieties to know vvhat hee vvas, ſhee ſayd vnto him; Friend, vvhence are you? With that, *Ozmin* ſuddenly, and in a ſtarting manner caſts vp his head, looking vpon his beloued; and ſweeteſt pledge, but his tongue being knit cloſe to the roofe of his mouth vvith the fulleſt knot of Loue, having not the povver to ſpeake a vvord; and not being able, no not for his life, (ſo great vvas his paſſion) to anſvvere her vvith his

tongue

tongue, hee replyed with his eyes, watering the earth, with that abundance of teares, which fell guttering downe his cheekes as if they had flowed from two cleare fountaines. And with this, these two deare and faithfull Lovers came to haue true knowledge each of other.

Daraxa answered him in his owne language, distilling ropes of Pearles in round orientall drops downe her louely cheekes. And now were they ready to change imbracements, at least some sweete words of Loue; when lo, in the instant there entred into the Garden *Don Rodrigo*, sonne and heyre to *Don Luys*, who being enamoured of *Daraxa*, did alwayes wait vpon her steps, that he might thereby injoy the occasion to contemplate on her beauty. Now, that they might avoyd all suspicion, they no sooner spyde him, but *Ozmin* returned roundly to his labour, and *Daraxa* vvalked leasurely along, as shee was wont to do. *Don Rodrigo* perceiued (by her sad semblance, and inflamed eyes, growne red with weeping) an alteration in her countenance, and presuming that somewhat offended her, (for her lookes did shew shee was not well pleas'd) hee made towards *Ozmin*, and asked him what the matter might bee of her discontent: who, albeit hee was not fully as yet recovered of his fore-passed perturbation, yet forced by that necessity whereunto hee vvas driuen, told him; Sir, as you see her now, so was shee vvhen shee came hither, she did not exchange so much as one word with mee; and therefore told mee no part of her minde, nor do I know whence this her passion should proceed. Especially this being the first day, that I entred into this place: so that it was neither fitting for mee to aske her the question, nor discretion in her to open her heart vnto mee. With this answere he went his way, with purpose to learne it out of *Daraxa* her selfe. But the more hee entertained himselfe in this displeasing subject, the larger steps she made, speedily wheeling about to her Lodging, shutting the dores after her as shee went in.

Diverse Evenings and Mornings these two Lovers luckily met, injoying vpon severall occasions some flowers, and honest fruites from the tree of true loue, wherewith they gaue some ease vnto their griefes; Intertaining their true pleasures, with the desire and hope of that happy time, wherein without shadowes and interruptions, they might freely injoy each other. But this content of theirs was as short as vnsecure. For the extraordinary continuation of their companying together, and their close discourse, (and that in the *Arabicke* tongue) and her excusing herselfe (for his sake) from the conversation of her friend *Donna Elvira*, had already giuen sufficiene distaste to all those of the house, and *Don Rodrigo* himselfe was horne-mad, inraged so with Iealousie, that hee knew not what to doe. Not that hee had any the least imagination, that the Gardiner did treat with her any thing that was vnlawfull, or made any loue to her: but because hee saw, that hee was made worthy to be intertained with so much frequencie in that sweete conversation of hers, which shee did not exercise so freely with any other in the world.

The Argvment.

Going on in the discourse of the adventures of these two faithfull Lovers, Ozmin and the faire Daraxa, are deliuered at large the troubles, ielousies, and the sorrowes that befell them.

MVrmuring being the naturall daughter of Hatred and Envy, is ever more busily labouring to staine the liues of others, & to draw a curtaine of darkenesse over their bright-shining vertues. And amongst people of base and vile condition, (where most commonly she keeps her Court of Audience) it is the onely sauce to moue their appetite, without which

which their daintieſt diſhes haue no relliſh, nor their beſt morſels any ſauour in them. It is a bird of the flippantſt wing, which as it moueth with moſt nimbleneſſe, ſo it doth the greateſt miſchiefe. There were not ſome wanting, that toſſed words from hand to hand; ſome adding, and others inventing matter vpon this their ſo great familiarity, till the ball at laſt came to ground, and this whiſpering to *Don Luys* his eare, by one who thought to worke out himſelfe a fortune thereby, and to grow into fauour with the Lord, by this his ſuppoſed honourable piece of ſervice.

This is that which the world doth practice, ſeeking to gaine great mens loue at other mens coſt, by trickes and lies, when in the naked truth there is not cloth enough to ſhape a garment according to their minde. An office, worthy thoſe, to whom their owne worth is wanting, and haue nothing either in their actions, or their perſons, that may deſervedly recommend them.

Don Luys attentiuely gaue eare to theſe well-compoſed words, and painted ſpeeches, on which ſuch faire colours were layd. Hee was a wiſe and diſcreete Gentleman, and therefore did not ſuffer them to dwell where theſe men had placed them, but gaue them onely paſſage to his imagination, leaving a roome empty for to receiue the reaſons of the defendant, to whom hee had left the doore open, and would by no meanes giue way to haue his eares ſtopped, albeit hee were ſomwhat offended with the occaſion of the ſcandall. Many things did hee caſt into his minde but ſtill the farther hee went, the farther hee was from the truth. But that which did moſt trouble him, was the ſuſpicion which hee had, that the Gardiner was a Moore, who was cunningly come thither to ſteale away *Daraxa*: and perſwading himſelfe that it was ſo, his vnderſtanding was preſently blinded there-with. And that which is ill conſidered on, many times, nay for the moſt part, the execution of that advice is ſcarce gone out of doores, but that repentance preſently enters the houſe. Vpon this ſurmiſe, hee was reſolued to take hold of him, and clappe him faſt. *Ozmin*, without any reſiſtance or ſhew of Sorrow or any other alteration of countenance, ſubmitted himſelfe to be ſhut vp in the Hall, the fitteſt place the ſuddenneſſe of the ſurpriſe could afford for the preſent. And leaving him thus vnder locke and key, hee made towards *Daraxa*, who by the hurry and tumult of the miniſters and ſervants of the houſe, knew already all that had paſt there, having beene ſome few dayes before a muttring of this matter about the houſe. Shee ſhewed her ſelfe much agrieued with *Don Luys* his manner of preceeding, forming complaints, how he had put in doubt the goodneſſe and vnſpotted innocencie of her life, ſetting the gate wide open to Suſpicion; and that with this blurre which hee had giuen to her reputation, every one might thinke as hee liſted, and as his fancie ſhould ſtand affected, to cenſure her honour accordingly; for there was not any ſuſpicion ſo bad, whereunto he had not by this his vnadviſed act, opened a gap to it's entrance.

Theſe, and other well-ordered reaſons delivered with an affection of the minde, and freeneſſe of ſpirit, made *Don Luys* quickly repent himſelfe of what hee had done. He now wiſht with all his heart, (after *Daraxa* had thus newly molded him) that hee had never attempted any ſuch thing, being angry with himſelfe, and much incenſed againſt thoſe, who had put this into his head. But that he might not ſhow his lightneſſe, in being thus miſ-led, and over-facile to be wrought vpon by other mens perſwaſions, but that what hee had done, he had done it vpon due conſideration, and as the weightineſſe of the buſineſſe required, diſſembling his ſorrow, he ſpake thus vnto her:

Deare *Daraxa*, I acknowledge the wrong I haue done you, and ingeniouſly confeſſe that your complaint is not without juſt cauſe, in that I proceeded againſt you in this vncivill faſhion, without having firſt examined the Witneſſes to the full, who haue depoſed, (as it ſhould ſeeme) thus wrongfully againſt you. I am not ignorant of your owne worth, as likewiſe that of your

parents and Anceſtours, from whom you are deſcended. I know that the merits of your owne proper perſon haue purchaſed of the King my Maſter, and his noble Queene, all that loue, which a true and onely heire can gaine of his louing and tender Parents, having conferred vpon you many prodigall and publique favours. To this I muſt giue you to vnderſtand, that they placed you in my houſe; to the end that you might be ſerved therein with all care and diligence, according to your owne will and pleaſure: and that I am bound to giue account thereof, according to the truſt that was repoſed in mee. For which reaſons, and for that which my ſervice deſerved at your hands, you ought to correſpond (that you may not be vnlike your ſelfe) with that faire carriage which is due vnto my loyalty, and the conſideration of theſe things that are now in queſtion. I neither can, nor will conceiue, that there can bee any thing in you that may ſeeme vnbefitting your breeding, or giue the leaſt blemiſh to your honour. But the great familiarity which you hold with *Ambroſio* (for that name had *Ozmin* put vpon himſelfe, when hee firſt entred to ſerue as a day-labourer) together with his talking vnto you in the Arabicke tongue, hath ſomewhat troubled mee, out of the generall deſire that all here haue to vnderſtand what manner of man this fellow is, and what his firſt beginning, neither you nor my ſelfe having ſeene or knowne him heretofore. And this being ſatisfied, you ſhall rid others of their doubt, and my ſelfe of an impertinent and tedious trouble. I beſeech you (as you are worthy) that you will reſolue vs of this ſcruple, aſſuring your ſelfe for mine owne part, that as much as in mee lyeth, I ſhall ever be ready to ſerue you vpon all occaſions that ſhall offer themſelues, wherein I may be ſerviceable vnto you.

Daraxa ſtood curiouſly attentiue to that which *Don Luys* had delivered, that ſhee might be able to make anſwere vnto him, (albeit his good vnderſtanding had already prevented her with reaſons) incaſe that any thing had beene diſcovered. But out of that ſhort tearme of time which ſhee had to bethinke herſelfe (laying her former thoughts aſide) ſhe was driven to make vſe of other more materiall to that propoſition which was made vnto her, wherewith eaſily (leaving him well ſatisfied) ſhee freed him of his care, making good vſe of it, to be more wary hereafter, that ſhee might injoy her ſelfe, as ſhee was wont, vvith her beloued; and therewithall ſhee thus ſayd vnto him.

My Lord, and Father; (for ſo I may truly call you) Lord, for that I am in your power: and Father, for the tender care which you haue of mee. I ſhould ill correſpond with that obligation wherevnto I am bound, and thoſe continuall favours, which I receiue from their Majeſties by your meanes, and by your interceſſion dayly augmented in my favour, if I ſhould not depoſite in the Cabinet of your diſcretion, my greateſt ſecrets; ſheltring them with your ſhadow, and governing my ſelfe by your wiſedome: and if with the ſame truth and plaineneſſe, I ſhould not fulfill all your juſt deſires. And albeit to recall things to my remembrance (which I may not forbeare to recite vnto you) cannot but be a great griefe vnto mee, and even a matter of no ſmall martyrdome; yet with this will I repay your kindneſſe, and make you become a debtor to my ſorrowes, and giue you aſſurance thereby in how much I eſteeme your loue.

Sir, you haue already vnderſtood who I am, for it is notorious to you, and all the world; and how my misfortune or good hap (for I can not, till the fruite waxe ripe, by ſeeing the end of ſo many troubles, condemne the one, or commend the other:) brought mee to this houſe of yours, even at that very time, when a marriage was in Treaty for mee, with a Gentleman of the beſt both worth and ranke in *Granada*, being a neere Kinſman of thoſe Kings, and anciently deſcended from them.

This my Husband (if I may ſo ſtile him) was bred vp, being then about ſome

fixe

ſixe or ſeaven yeares of age, with another childe a Captiue Chriſtian, about the ſame yeares, whom his parents bought for his ſervice and entertainment. They ever went together, plaid together, eate together, and vſually ſlept together, out of the great loue that was betweene them. See whether theſe were not pledges of friendſhip which I haue repeated vnto you. And ſo well did my Husband loue him, that had hee beene his equall, or his neareſt kinſman, hee could not haue lou'd him better. Hee truſted him with his perſon; for he was very valiant; he was the Feoffie of all his pleaſures, the Companion of his entertainements, the Treaſury of his Secrets, and in ſubſtance his ſecond ſelfe. In concluſion, they were in all things both of them ſo like, that nothing did difference them, but their Religion, vvhereof (out of the greatneſſe of both their diſcretions) they never argued, that they might not diſ-brother themſelues. For no brothers in the world could loue better then they did. And well did this Captiue deſerue his loue (I ſpake amiſſe; the word Brother better befits him, and ſo I ſhould haue call'd him) for his faithfull carriage, his compoſed behaviour, and his Gentleman-like proceeding; in ſo much, that if vve had not knowne him to haue beene borne of meane parents that got their living by their handy-labour, in a poore Cottage, who were captivated and made ſlaues at the ſame time, we ſhould verily haue beleeved, that he had deſcended from ſome Noble bloud, and generous off-ſpring.

This honeſt man (I ſhould ſay honourable; for his vertue deſerues that ſtile) was the Meſſenger of our entertainements, the Poſt that ranne betweene vs: for being ſo faithfull as he was, hee was the onely man that was vvholly imployed in that buſineſſe. He brought me Letters and preſents, returning backe by him ſuch due requitals, as in like caſes vſually paſſe betwixt thoſe that truely loue.

Now, vvhen *Baça* was delivered vp, and hee found there, he was ſet at liberty together with the reſt of the Captiues that vvere at that time vvithin the Citie. But I am not able to ſay, whether his joy to recover his freedome, or his ſorrow to forſake vs, were the greater. This himſelfe can beſt tell you as alſo whatſoever elſe you ſhall deſire to know beſides, if it pleaſe you to aske him, which is no hard matter for you to doe: for this man I ſpeake of, is that very *Ambroſio*, which is now in your ſervice, it being Gods will that he ſhould come hither, for to be a comfort vnto me in theſe my afflictions. I loſt him before ever I thought of it, and when I leaſt looked for him, I found him againe. With him I ranne over the whole courſe of my misfortunes, ſince the firſt time that I was graduated and tooke degree in them; vvith him I did cheriſh the hopes of my adverſe fortune, entertaining a painefull life, for to deceiue the wearieſomneſſe of a lingring and tedious time. If this comfort (for that it is in my favour) ſhall offend you, follow your owne will, for mine ſhall ever be ſubordinate to yours, which you may diſpoſe of at your pleaſure.

Don Luys was ſtrucken vvith aſtoniſhment and tenderneſſe, as well for the ſtrangeneſſe, as the pittifulneſſe of her Story. Beſides, he was much moved with her manner of proceeding; for ſhe went on in her Diſcourſe without any pauſing, perturbation, or other accident, whereby hee might conjecture, that it was a made tale, or invention of her owne vpon the preſent. Which carriage ſhee did credit the better, by letting fall from her eyes ſome effectuall teares, vvhich were able to ſoften hard Marble, and to rent in ſunder the rocky Diamond.

With this ſpeach of hers, *Ambroſio* was looſed out of priſon, without being queſtioned of any thing, that he might not wrong the report vvhich *Baraça* had given of him: Onely laying his arme about his necke, looking cheerefully vpon him, hee told him. Now I know (*Ambroſio*) that thou haſt ſome noble

bloud about thee; and though this should be wanting vnto thee, thou art able to giue it thy selfe by thine owne vertue and nobleneſſe. For by that which I haue lately heard of thee, I am obliged henceforth to vſe thee with that faireneſſe as thy worth deſerveth. *Ozmin* told him; In this, Sir, you ſhall doe like your ſelfe; and the good which I ſhall receiue from you, I ſhall ever make it my glory, that it came from the largeneſſe of your hand, and from ſo noble a Houſe as this is. This paſt, he was permitted to returne againe vnto the garden, with the ſame familiaritie as before, if not with much more licence and freeneſſe of liberty. So that now they talked together as often as they would themſelues, without any ſcandall at all.

In this *interim*, the King and Queene had ſtill a care to know how it was with *Daraxa*, as well in the ſtate of her health, as otherwiſe; whereof particular advice was given them from time to time, who were very glad to heare of her well-doing; and did continually in their Letters recommend her very darely to the care of *Don Luys*, with expreſſe charge to vſe her with all kindneſſe.

This favour of theirs wrought ſo much, that as well out of the deſire to ſtand in grace with their Majeſties, as out of *Daraxa* her owne deſerts; not onely *Don Rodrigo*, but moſt of the principall Cavallero's of that Citie, wiſhed in their hearts ſhe were a Chriſtian, that they might make loue vnto her, pretending to take her to Wife. But becauſe *Don Rodrigo* had her (as hath beene ſaid) in his cuſtody, hee was in the common opinion of the World, amongſt all the other rivalls thought to be moſt favoured by her. The caſe was very cleare, and this ſuſpition not without great likelihood. For of his qualitie, condition, behaviour, and faire proceeding, ſhe had had very good tryall; and oſtentations of this nature, and apparences of ſuch commendable parts as theſe, are not wont to be of the ſlighteſt moment, nor the loweſt round in the Ladder, that climbes vnto honour. For when a man ſhall haue made publike demonſtrations of his vertues, and his noble carriage, it is to be preſumed he will be no leſſe beloved, then he is knowne; and ſo get advantage of thoſe, who (when it ſhall come to matter of oppoſition) ſhall be vnder-valued by opinion. But as if theſe Lovers had exchanged their ſoules, and none of them poſſeſſed that which was his owne, they were as firme in loving, as farre from offending.

Daraxa never gaue way by any diſ-compoſture, or vnjoynted behaviour, or any other occaſion whatſoever, whereby any one might preſume more then other vpon her favour; howbeit, all of them adored her, left no meanes vnſought to procure her loue, nor no nets vnſpred, ſeeking by traines to draw her within their reach, but none of them had any ground, wherevpon to build their hopes.

Don Rodrigo perceiving how little his ſervices did availe him, how his labour was in vaine, and the ſmall remedy that hee found, ſince after ſo many dayes ſpent in her continuall converſation, hee remained in the ſame ſtate as hee did the very firſt day, neither better nor worſe, for ought hee knew, it came into his conſideration to make vſe of *Ozmin*, thinking by his interceſſion to get into her favour; and taking this to be the beſt and ſureſt way to worke his ends, being one morning in the garden, hee brake thus with him.

Friend *Ambroſio*, Thou canſt not but know the obligations which thou haſt to thy Religion, to thy King, to thy Countrey, to that bread which thou eateſt of my Fathers, and to that deſire, which wee haue of thy good. I conceiue, that as a Chriſtian of that quality, which thy workes doe publiſh, thou wilt correſpond with that thou profeſſeſt thy ſelfe to be.

I come to thee, moved thereunto by a great neceſſity (which now offers it ſelfe vnto mee) wherevpon doth depend all the increaſe of mine honour, and

the

the safety of my life, which wholy lyes in thy hands. If discoursing then with *Daraxa*, amongst other reasons, thou shalt worke her by force of Argument, that she forsake this false Sect, wherewith she is now infected, & make her to become a Christian, thou canst not but see what good will come thereof: first, Salvation to her owne soule; next, good service vnto god; thirdly, great content to their Catholike Majesties; fourthly, honour to thy selfe in thy Country; and lastly, to my selfe perfect happinesse. For, desiring her to Wife, I meane to be married vnto her, and the benefit shall not be small which thou shalt make by this voyage: for it shall be as profitable, as it shall be honourable vnto thee; and therefore straine all the wits thou hast to bring this good purpose to passe. For besides that thou shalt be rewarded by God, for the soule which thou shalt gaine, I for my part will, with many requitals, and those reall, recompence the life which thou shalt giue me by thy good diligence in this businesse, and if (exercising thy power with her;) it shall be my good hap to winne her by thy intercession. Doe not refuse to doe me this favour, since thou canst doe so much with her: And because there are so many tyes vpon thee, to induce thee hereunto, it is not fit that I should presse thee any further, or to be too importunate with thee. To whom, when he had ended his exhortation, *Ozmin* made him this answere:

My very good Lord; The same reason, wherewith you seeke to binde me, ought likewise to oblige you to beleeue, how much I desire that *Daraxa* should follow my Religion, which very earnestly, divers, nay infinit times I haue perswaded her vnto. My desire is no other, then your owne; and therefore I will vse all diligence in this particular cause, as in a thing wherein I am so much interessed. But loving her betrothed friend, and my Master, so dearely as she does to treat with her to turne Christian, were but to double passion in her, without any other fruit at all: For she hath some hopes yet aliue in her, that Fortune may turne the wheele againe, flattering her selfe with some accident or other, whereby in time she may come to injoy her desire. This is all that I can yet learne from her, shee is still harping vpon this string, and (for ought that I can perceiue) very constant in this conceit of hers. But that I may comply with that, which you command me, I shall (though I were sure my labour should be fruitlesse) returne once more to treat with her in this kinde; and when I haue done, I will acquaint you with her answere. The *Moore* did not lye in any one word that he said, had he beene rightly vnderstood; but (not thinking on a thing so remote) *Don Rodrigo* gaue credit, not to that which he truly, but to that he formally delivered. And so (though deceived) he had some confidence with him, and was not cleane out of hope. For *Quien de veras ama; Se-engaña; con desengaños:* He that truely loves, is deceiv'd with that, which ought to dis-deceiue him.

Ozmin (when *Rodrigo* was gone) remained so sad to see the open instance which was made to his owne hurt, that he was ready through jealousie to runne out of his wits. Which did so afflict him, that from that day forward you could never get a cheerefull looke from him, and making things impossible, seeme possible vnto him, hee did wrastle and struggle with himselfe, imagining, that this new Competitor (being powerfull in his owne House and Country) might vse some tricks and devises, wherewith to hinder his intent, being so sollicitous as he was, and so earnest in the businesse. He feared againe on the other side, lest she might be wrought to alter her former affection; for many batteries make a breach in the strongest walles; and with secret mynes they are blowne vp, and laid levell with the ground.

Out of this jealousie of his, hee discoursed in his thoughts of Tragicall ends, and disastrous accidents, which presented themselues vnto his phantasie, which he did not so much beleeue, as he did mightily feare, because hee was a perfect Lover.

Daraxa seeing how her deareſt beloued had for many dayes together continued in this melancholy mood, was very deſirous to know the cauſe of this his ſadneſſe: but ſhe could not wring it from him, nor did he ſpeake a word of that vnto her, which had paſt betwixt him and *Don Rodrigo*. ſhee (poore Gentlewoman) knew not what to doe, nor which way to worke him to bee merry; howbeit with ſweete words, vttered from a daintier tongue, pleaſant ſmiles, and a conſtant heart, much augmented by thoſe faire eyes, whoſe warme teares did be-dew her tender cheeks with thoſe criſtall waters which did flow from them, ſhe ſoftly breathed foorth (hauing firſt ſent forth many a ſigh, as heralds of her ſorrowfull minde): theſe few words vnto him.

Lord of my life and liberty; my betroathed, whom I honour and obey, what thing can there be of that force, (I beeing aliue, and in your preſence) that ſhould thus to my hurt torment and grieve you? May my ſelfe peradventure bee the price of your joy? or how vvill you bee pleaſed to diſpoſe of it, whereby my ſoule may be freed from this hell of ſorrow, wherein for your ſake I am tormented? Let the chearefull heaven of your countenance, ſcatter thoſe cloudes wherewith my heart is over-caſt, if I am able to doe any thing with you; if the loue which I beare you deſerveth ought; if the griefe wherein I am, may moue you to pity; if you will not that my life receiue its buriall in your ſecrecie, I beſeech you to tell me the cauſe of your ſadneſſe. Here ſhe ſtopt; for her teares had choak't her vtterance, ſorrow working on them both, one and the ſame effect; for he could not anſwer her otherwiſe, then with the ſcalding teares of loue, each ſtriving with their owne to dry vp the others, ſeeming both to bee one and the ſelfe-ſame thing, as long as their tongues were thus tyed, and the current of their ſpeach ſtopped.

Ozmin, with the oppreſſion of his ſighes, (for he cloſely ſmothered them) fearing (if he ſhould vent them) to be over-heard, did ſo long reſiſt them, by returning them backe againe vnto his ſoule; from whence they would haue broken out their way, that he fell downe into a ſwoune, and ſo deepe an one, as that he lay for dead. *Daraxa* knew not what to doe, nor how to fetch him againe, nor which way to comfort him, nor could ſhe conceiue what might be the cauſe of this ſo great and ſudden an alteration, having formerly beene accuſtomed to ſhew himſelfe merry and cherefull. Shee was very buſie in wiping his face, in drying his eyes, putting her faire hands vpon them; after ſhe had dip't a rich hand-kerchiefe, that ſhe had about her in the water, imbroydered with gould & ſilver, inter-woven with divers other glorious colours, and ſcattered here and there with pearle, and other devices of wonderfull both worth and workemanſhip. So much was ſhe transformed into this paine of his; and her ſenſes ſo wholy taken vp in ſeeking to recover him, that had this fit continued but a little longer, *Don Rodrigo* might haue found them little leſſe then arme in arme; for *Daraxa* had his head leaning on her knee, and one ſide of his body folded in her Gowne, when he firſt began to come to himſelfe. Now when his Senſes were come againe into their proper places, and all was well, thinking to haue taken his leaue of her, *Don Rodrigo* on the nicke, comes into the garden. *Daraxa* (though much troubled) came off as handſomely as ſhe could, leaving through haſt her curious hand-kerchiefe on the ground, which was quickly taken vp by *Ozmin*, who preſently had it in his eye.

Now when ſhe ſaw that *Don Rodrigo* drew nigh, ſhe went her way, and left them two alone together: *Rodrigo* (when he ſaw the coaſt was cleare) aſk't him what he had done in the buſineſs? He told him, (as he had at other times) that he found her ſo firme in her loue to her betrothed friend, that ſhe will not onely not be wonne, (as you pretend) to be a Chriſtian: but if ſhee were ſo, yet for his ſake, ſhe would willingly turne Moore; ſo extreame is her owne folly, the loue of her Religion, and of her husband. I treated your buſineſſe

with her; and to you, because you attempt it, and to me, because I propose it, she beareth vs both that hatred, that she is resolved, if ever I speake word thereof againe, never any more to see me; and as for you, you see, she no sooner saw you, but she went her way. So that I would not haue you weary out your selfe in this suit, nor spend any more time in it; for I see it will be but in vaine, and a hopelesse piece of worke. *Don Rodrigo* was stricken deepely into his dumpes with this so resolute an answer, delivered with that sharpnesse, which made it the more sowre and vnfit for relish. From that time forward he began to suspect that *Ozmin* was rather in his prejudice, then profit, and did rather dis-advantage, then advance his pretension. Howsoever he thought at least with himselfe, that though *Daraxa* might happily haue given so distastfull a reply, yet it did ill become him to report it vnto him, in that rough fashion as he did, making himselfe, as it were, master and ruler of the roste: but such impossible things in their incounter are Loue and discretion; for evermore a man is so much the more confounded and troubled in himselfe, by how much the more hee loveth and affecteth: hereupon did represent it selfe vnto him that strict league of amity and friendship, which *Daraxa* reported to haue beene betwixt him and his old Master, he imagined, that loue was still aliue in him, and could not be perswaded, that the ashes of that fire were yet growne cold. With this conceit (which was re-inforced by his passion) he was fully bent to put him out of the house, informing his father how vnfitting it was; nay how dangerous to permit (where *Daraxa* was) such a one, as might intertaine her in the Discourse of her former Loue, still putting her in minde thereof, especially it being their Majesties intent and purpose to haue her turne Christian: which would be hard to doe, as long as *Ambrosio* was there. Let vs, Sir, (said he) make some triall by sundring them some few dayes one from another, and then we shall see what effect it will bring foorth.

Don Luys did no whit misslike his sonnes counsell, and presently picking a quarrell, where no cause was, (for of great men we must not aske the reason of things; and a Captaine with his souldiers will bee bold now and then to make fifteene of two eights) he dismissed him of his service, commanding him, that he should not so much as once dare to passe by the doore. And hee tooke him so on the sudden, that he could not take his leaue of *Daraxa*. And so obeying his Master, taining lesse sorrow, then what he felt, he removed his body from thence, (for that pledge he could carry whither he listed) but for his soule, that abode still with her, in whose power it had formerly so long remained.

THE ARGVMENT.

Continuing the Story of the loue of Ozmin *&* Daraxa, *are recounted the troubles and griefes that befell them both: as also those publike Feasts, that were made by divers Knights and Gentlemen, for to glad and cheare vp the dis-consolate* Daraxa: *and of the valour which* Ozmin *in disguise and vnknowne, did performe in them.*

Daraxa seeing so sudden a change, began to suspect that his former sorrow had its birth from that new successe, and now by the sequele assured her selfe it was so: whereupon adding one evill to another, sorrow to sorrow, and griefe to griefe, wanting the sight of her espoused Lord; albeit the poore Lady did dissemble it all that she could, yet this was that which did most trouble her. Giue them leaue to weepe, howle, sighe, cry, and talke, that finde themselues afflicted: for albeit they doe not cleare with teares

away

away the burthen of that paine which they indure, yet it doth leſſen ſorrow, and makes the load ſomewhat lighter. She was ſo deprived of all content, ſo heavily ſad, and ſo bodily afflicted, that you might read her griefes not onely in her face and countenance, but throughout all the courſe of her carriage. Our inamoured Moore would not change his eſtate and condition of life; for as he went clad before, the ſame ſtile he ſtill continued, and in the habit of a day-Labourer, he followed his painefull fortune: therein hee had had good ſucceſſe, and he hoped the like with advantage. He daily followed his worke hard, where there was ought to be got, going in this ſort from place to place to proue his fortune, trying if by this meanes he could come to heare or harken out any thing that might import him, or ſerue his turne concerning *Daraxa*: for no other end or intereſt in the world had he but this, to labour ſo hard as he did; for he had liberally to ſpend with a large hand for many dayes together, out of the meanes that he had, brougt from home in money and in Iewels. But as well for that vvhich hath beene ſaid, as alſo becauſe he vvas well knovvne in that habit, that he might haue the freer licence vvhereſoever he came, and himſelfe remaine ſafe in his perſon vnder this diſguiſe, leſt his deſignes might otherwiſe be overthrowne, he continued his wonted weare.

Thoſe young *Cavallero's* that ſerved *Daraxa*, knowing the favour that ſhe bare to *Ozmin*, and that he was now no longer ſervant in *Don Luys* his houſe, every one did covet him for himſelfe and his owne ends, and happy vvas he that could make the firſt purchaſe; ſo generall vvas their deſire to haue him theirs.

But *Don Alonſo de Cuniga* got the ſtart of all the reſt, being a Gentleman of that City, one that vvas borne to a great eſtate, young, gallant, and rich, and one that was confident, that others want, and his wealth, by the helpe of *Ambroſio*, ſhould carry the buſineſſe. He commanded him to be ſent for, intertained him in his ſervice, did him many knowne good turnes, made him more advantageous proffers, gaue him many kinde and loving words, and in concluſion, a kinde of friendſhip was begun betweene them, (if any ſuch thing may bee found betweene maſter and man:) notwithſtanding, in as much as man is compatible, it is commonly called by the name of Privancie or Inwardneſſe; vvhereinto men grow by ſome deſerving ſervice: vvith vvhom having runne over ſome paſſages, he came in the end to diſcover his deſire vnto him, promiſing him great rewards: all which was but an opening vnto him of his old vvounds, and a ripping vp of his ſores, to make them greater then before: if he were jealous before of one, now he had two Corrivals, and vvithin a ſhort time after, he knew of many which his Maſter had diſcovered vnto him, and vvhich vvay they marched, and the meanes vvhereby they thought to prevaile: but for his owne part he neither ſought, or deſired any furtherance of others, ſaue only his good intelligence, beleeving (as he verily perſwaded himſelfe) that ſolely his interceſsion ſhould bee ſufficient to effect it.

I am not able to imagine, much leſſe to expreſſe the griefe vvhich he conceived, ſeeing himſelfe now the ſecond time to be made a Bawd to his owne wife: and how fitting notwithſtanding it vvas for him to paſſe thorow all thoſe pikes with a diſcreet kinde of diſsimulation.

He intertained him with good vvords, for feare leſt it might happen vnto him, as it did with *Don Rodrigo*; and if he ſhould carry himſelfe violently and inconſideratly with the reſt with whome he had to deale with, he ſhould finde his hands too full, and giue himſelfe a great deale of trouble, and in the end looſe all, and not come to the knowledge of any thing concerning his beſt beloved. And if we will peaceably injoy the end of our deſires, we muſt put on patience and ſufferance in the atchiuements of them.

He bore him fairely in hand, albeit his heart was all on fire, his various

thoughts

thoughts gaue him many a ſhrewd battell, and aſſaulted him on every ſide, galling him in ſuch cruell manner, that like a Bull inraged, hee knew not how to helpe himſelfe, nor whither to flie for ſuccour, nor behinde whom to runne, nor could he find any comfort for to eaſe thoſe intolerable torments which he indured. The Hare was ſingle, the Grayhounds many, and all light-footed, they had certaine Falcons too in their favour, that for all their high place, would not refuſe to ſtoohe to their Lure, for hope of reward: to theſe I may adde a number of ſhee-friends and acquaintance, comming to viſit and banquet with *Daraxa*, who too too vſually ſet fire to the honour of many a faire Lady, and blow the coales of Luſt in many Noble Houſes of good report and honeſt fame: many Ladies and Gentlewomen enter (for ſuch they are in appearance) and all, forſooth, vnder the faire name of *Viſiters*; ſome, out of the difficulty they find at home in their own houſes to effect their purpoſe; others, to worke deceite, and to bring innocent Dames, by one device or other into the ſame net, wherein theuſelues haue beene caught. Of theſe kinde of creatures there are great ſtore, the world is full of them, and the practice too too common. Nay, out of the principalleſt and graveſt ſort of Ladies, the Devill hath not beene careleſſe in working them to become pot-lids, and covers to theſe boyling veſſells of concupiſcence. Theſe are thoſe ſilver Plates, that cover many a ſweet morſell, after which your Gallants ſo eagerly long to licke the lippes, and are ſo ſharpe ſet. All theſe thinges did hee feare, and many more, but moſt of all *Don Rodrigo*, to whom both himſelfe, and the reſt of the rivals bare great hatred for his falſe arrogancie, whereof hee cunningly made vſe, to haue them thereby deſiſt from their purpoſe: and the more to daunt and amate them, hee made them all beeleue, or at leaſt would faine haue them ſo to thinke, that hee was the onely man that was like to carry *Daraxa*, as having the beſt meanes and opportunity, (beſides his owne deſires) to grow into her Loue and favour. Hereupon they ſpake courteouſly vnto him, but in their hearts they wiſh't him hang'd; they powred hony to him out of their mouthes, leaving rancour and poyſon in their breſts; they ſaluted him kindly, but curſt his very bowells and intrailes, deſiring to ſee them burſt in a thouſand pieces; they ſmiled vpon him, but as dogges doe grin at Waſpes, they long'd to haue a ſnap at him: this is the common faſhion now in Court, and more particularly amongſt thoſe of the greateſt ranke and quality.

Now let vs returne againe to *Daraxa*, and ſpeake of the torments which ſhee ſuffered; of the care which ſhee tooke to know what was become of her deareſt Loue, whither he was gone, what hee did, how it was with him in his health, how he ſpent his time, and whether hee had got him ſome other new Miſtreſſe; and this did trouble her moſt: for albeit mothers haue likewiſe ſome ſorrow for the abſence of their children, yet notwithſtanding the caſe is not alike: for they onely feare the life of their childe, but a wife the loſſe of her husbands loue, leſt ſome other woman with fawning blandiſhments, and ſmooth flatteries ſhould draw his affection from her. What dayes ſo ſad as thoſe, what nights ſo tedious, as for a woman to weane and vn-weane her thoughts, like *Penelope's* Web, with the chaſte deſire of her beloved *Vlyſſes*?

I ſhall vtter much by being ſilent in a paſſage of this nature; for to paint forth ſuch a ſorrow as this, ſmall was that cunning, which a famous Painter vſed vpon the death of a young damoſell, who after hee had painted her dead, ſtretcht out to the life lying in her Coffin, hee placed round about the Coarſe, her parents, her brethren, her kinſfolkes, her friends, her acquaintance, and her houſhold ſervants in their proper places; and with that griefe which was fitting for every one of them in their ſeverall degrees: but when he came to her father and mother, he left off to finiſh their faces, giving every one licence and free liberty to pourtrayt forth ſuch a ſorrow, according as

he

he himſelfe ſhould therewith be affected; for neither words nor penſill were any way able to manifeſt a parents loue, or the ſorrow that they conceived, ſaue onely ſome actions, which wee haue read of Heathen people. The ſame courſe muſt I take. The penſill of my rude tongue, ſhall be but a groſſe vnhewen ſticke, fit onely to forme blots and blurres; and therefore it ſhall be vviſedome to leaue it to the diſcretion of the hearer: and to him that ſhall vnderſtand Hiſtory, to referre it to his conſideration in vvhat manner ſuch paſſions as theſe are to be apprehended. So that every man may meaſure it by his owne imagination, judging others hearts by their owne.

Daraxa vvas ſo ſurcharg'd vvith ſorrow, that her outward remonſtrances manifeſted her inward afflictions. *Don Luys* ſeeing her ſo vvholly taken vp vvith melancholly, as alſo *Don Rodrigo* his ſonne, both of them for to cheere her vp, ordained certaine feaſts; as that of the running of Bulls, and their *juego de canas:* And becauſe the City vvas ſo vvell fitted for theſe paſtimes, it ſhortly after tooke effect. Now thoſe that vvere Actors in theſe ſports, had every one of them his ſeverall device, vvrought in different ſorts of ſilkes and colours, expreſſing therein their diverſe paſſions; one, his Deſpaire; another, his Hope; this, his Captivity; that, his Jealouſie; ſome their Ioy, ſome their Sorrow, and ſome their being in Loue, and the like. All vvhich, and more too, did meet in poore *Daraxa*.

As ſoone as *Ozmin* knew that this appointed feaſt was to be performed and that his Maſter was one of the number; he thought with himſelfe, that it were not time ill ſpent to ſee his Miſtris, by giving ſome proofe of his valour, and ſetting himſelfe forth that day amongſt the reſt. Which being come, juſt as the Buls began to runne, he mounted vpon his horſe, both he and it being in every point very well fitted. His face was ſcarfed with watchet Taffata, that he might avoid the common eye, and his Horſe had his eyes vayled vvith a bend of blacke. He feigned himſelfe to be a ſtranger; his ſervant went before him, bearing in his hand a goodly ſtrong Launce, he rounded the whole place, beholding many things of admiration which were therein: but aboue all, the beauty of *Daraxa* did out-ſhine the reſt, as the day doth the night; and in her preſence all the other Dames were but darkeneſſe. He placed himſelfe right over againſt her window; whither he vvas no ſooner come, but hee ſaw the place much altered, every man flying as faſt as he could from a fierce Bull, which at that inſtant they had let out of the Paddok; it was a of Bull *Tarifa* well growne, cunning in the carriage of his head, and as ſtout as a Lyon, and as full of rage. Who vvas no ſooner let forth, but giving two or three nimble bounds, put himſelfe into the mid'ſt of the place, making himſelfe Maſter of all that Round, to the great affright and terrour of all that vvere there. Hee turn'd his frizzled front from ſide to ſide, vvhil'ſt divers darts vvere throwne at him, vvhich hee did eaſily ſhake off, and vſed ſuch art, that he vvould not ſuffer them to gall him in the flanke, or other his inferiour parts: and this hee did avoide, by vſing certaine light friskalls, vvhich he performed ſo dexterouſly as they could not touch him. Now, there vvas not a man in all the place that durſt to encounter him a horſe-backe, and thoſe that vvere a foote, durſt not expect his comming, nor looke him in the face, though he vvere never ſo farre from them. So that for very feare they left him all alone, and not one man ſaue onely *Ozmin*, and his ſervant, vvas to be ſeene any thing neere him in all the circuit of ground.

The Bull, as if he had rode on the vvings of the vvinde, ranne vvith all the ſpeed he could, directly towards this Gentleman; ſo that hee vvas forced to betake himſelfe ſuddenly to his Launce, which he had not taken into his hand vvhen the Bull vvas firſt let looſe, and lifting vp his right arme, bearing his Launce for his beſt advantage, whereat was faſtened *Daraxa's* Handkerchiefe which ſhe left behind her in the Garden (as you haue heard heretofore) with a graceſull

a gracefull kinde of actiuenesse, and a gallant ayme in the carriage of his arme, hee charged home vpon him; and making way by his necke, hee ranne his Launce quite through his body, which made no stay till the point thereof had nayled the hoofe of one of his farther feete to the ground, leaving him there for dead, without any motion in the world; there onely remaining in his hand the short broken truncheon of his Launce, which hee casting away from him in a careleſſe fashion, hee victoriously, but modestly quitted the place.

Daraxa was much rejoyced in the sight of him: for when hee first made his entrance, shee knew him by his man, who had sometimes also beene her servant; as likewise by his handkercher, which after the Bull was slaine, hee wore about his arme. All that were there present, with a generall murmure, remained full of admiration, giuing him due commendation, indearing the happinesse of the stroke, and the strength of this vnknowne Knight. Nor was any thing else in the mouthes of the multitude, then the discoursing of the braue performance of this businesse, delivering the manner thereof one to another; and though they had all seene how it was, yet every one spake thereof a-fresh, and it seemed to them as a dreame; some in wonder clapping their hands; others highly extolling his valour; one speakes with his fingers; another stands amazed; a third blesses himselfe; a fourth lifts vp his arme; a fifth acts it with his hand, all of them having their mouthes and their eyes full of joy; a sixt bowes downe his body, and suddainely leapes vp againe in the ayre; some bend the brow, and some being ready to burst with content, make gracefull Matachines, with many other pretty Anticke-gestures.

All which to *Daraxa* seemed so many degrees of glory. *Ozmin* with-drew himselfe out of the Citie into certaine backe-Gardens, out of which hee formerly came; and (leaving his Horse, and changing his cloathes, vvith his Sword vnder his arme, returning in the habit of *Ambrosio*) hee came to the place; taking his Stand where he might see what hee most desired, and was seene againe by her, who lou'd him more then her owne life. They tooke great pleasure in beholding each other; howbeit *Daraxa* was very fearefull, lest some mis-fortune might befall him, standing there afoote amongst the multitude: shee made signes vnto him, that he should get vp vpon a Scaffold: but hee made show that hee did not vnderstand her meaning, standing there still, till the Buls began to runne.

By this time the evening was farre spent, and with the approaching of the night, those that were to sport at the *Juego de Cannas*, made their entrance in manner following:

First of all, the Trumpets, Fifes, and drummes, accompanied with divers other sorts of musicke, presented themselues, being cladde in rich Liveries of sundry colours; after whom followed the *Azemilas*, or Sumpter Mules, laden with bundels of Canes.

The companies that were to maintaine this sport, were likewise eight, answering to the number of their bundles of Canes. Every one had a Sumpter Cloth of Velvet cast over the Canes, richly imbroydered with the Armes of their Master in Silke and Gold, the *Garrotes* belonging therevnto, being all of silver.

After these, entred two hundred and forty Gennets, richly furnished for 48 Knights, which were fiue a piece for every man, besides that which came in with the Canes, which made vp sixe in the whole. But they that entred first on the right hand, came in two Files, opposing themselues against the adverse part. The first two horses (which as if they had beene yoaked together, ranne on in an even and equall course) were assisted by fiue others of a side, bearing their Owners Targets at the Arson of their Saddles, offering their faireſt show to the eyes of the Spectators; wherein were depainted their Emblemes

he himſelfe ſhould therewith be affected; for neither words nor penſill were any way able to manifeſt a parents loue, or the ſorrow that they conceived, ſaue onely ſome actions, which wee haue read of Heathen people. The ſame courſe muſt I take. The penſill of my rude tongue, ſhall be but a groſſe vnhewen ſticke, fit onely to forme blots and blurres; and therefore it ſhall be vviſedome to leaue it to the diſcretion of the hearer: and to him that ſhall vnderſtand Hiſtory, to referre it to his conſideration in vvhat manner ſuch paſſions as theſe are to be apprehended. So that every man may meaſure it by his owne imagination, judging others hearts by their owne.

Daraxa vvas ſo ſurcharg'd vvith ſorrow, that her outward remonſtrances manifeſted her inward afflictions. *Don Luys* ſeeing her ſo vvholly taken vp vvith melancholly, as alſo *Don Rodrigo* his ſonne, both of them for to cheere her vp, ordained certaine feaſts; as that of the running of Bulls, and their *juego de cannas:* And becauſe the City vvas ſo vvell fitted for theſe paſtimes, it ſhortly after tooke effect. Now thoſe that vvere Actors in theſe ſports, had every one of them his ſeverall device, vvrought in different ſorts of ſilkes and colours, expreſſing therein their diverſe paſſions; one, his Deſpaire; another, his Hope; this, his Captivity; that, his Jealouſie; ſome their Ioy, ſome their Sorrow, and ſome their being in Loue, and the like. All vvhich, and more too, did meet in poore *Daraxa*.

As ſoone as *Ozmin* knew that this appointed feaſt was to be performed and that his Maſter was one of the number; he thought with himſelfe, that it were not time ill ſpent to ſee his Miſtris, by giving ſome proofe of his valour, and ſetting himſelfe forth that day amongſt the reſt. Which being come, juſt as the Buls began to runne, he mounted vpon his horſe, both he and it being in every point very well fitted. His face was ſcarfed with watchet Taffata, that he might avoid the common eye, and his Horſe had his eyes vayled vvith a bend of blacke. He feigned himſelfe to be a ſtranger; his ſervant went before him, bearing in his hand a goodly ſtrong Launce, he rounded the whole place, beholding many things of admiration which were therein: but aboue all, the beauty of *Daraxa* did out-ſhine the reſt, as the day doth the night; and in her preſence all the other Dames were but darkeneſſe. He placed himſelfe right over againſt her window; whither he vvas no ſooner come, but hee ſaw the place much altered, every man flying as faſt as he could from a fierce Bull, which at that inſtant they had let out of the Paddok; it was a of Bull *Tarifa* well growne, cunning in the carriage of his head, and as ſtout as a Lyon, and as full of rage. Who vvas no ſooner let forth, but giving two or three nimble bounds, put himſelfe into the mid'ſt of the place, making himſelfe Maſter of all that Round, to the great affright and terrour of all that vvere there. Hee turn'd his frizzled front from ſide to ſide, vvhil'ſt divers darts vvere throwne at him, vvhich hee did eaſily ſhake off, and vſed ſuch art, that he vvould not ſuffer them to gall him in the flanke, or other his inferiour parts: and this hee did avoide, by vſing certaine light friskalls, vvhich he performed ſo dexterouſly as they could not touch him. Now, there vvas not a man in all the place that durſt to encounter him a horſe-backe, and thoſe that vvere a foote, durſt not expect his comming, nor looke him in the face, though he vvere never ſo farre from them. So that for very feare they left him all alone, and not one man ſaue onely *Ozmin*, and his ſervant, vvas to be ſeene any thing neere him in all the circuit of ground.

The Bull, as if he had rode on the vvings of the vvinde, ranne vvith all the ſpeed he could, directly towards this Gentleman; ſo that hee vvas forced to betake himſelfe ſuddenly to his Launce, which he had not taken into his hand vvhen the Bull vvas firſt let looſe, and lifting vp his right arme, bearing his Launce for his beſt advantage, whereat was faſtened *Daraxa's* Handkerchiefe which ſhe left behind her in the Garden (as you haue heard heretofore) with a gracefull

a gracefull kinde of actiueneſſe, and a gallant ayme in the carriage of his arme, hee charged home vpon him; and making way by his necke, hee ranne his Launce quite through his body, which made no ſtay till the point thereof had nayled the hoofe of one of his farther feete to the ground, leaving him there for dead, without any motion in the world; there onely remaining in his hand the ſhort broken truncheon of his Launce, which hee caſting away from him in a careleſſe faſhion, hee victorioufly, but modeſtly quitted the place.

Daraxa was much rejoyced in the ſight of him: for when hee firſt made his entrance, ſhee knew him by his man, who had ſometimes alſo beene her ſervant; as likewiſe by his handkercher, which after the Bull was ſlaine, hee wore about his arme. All that were there preſent, with a generall murmure, remained full of admiration, giuing him due commendation, indearing the happineſſe of the ſtroke, and the ſtrength of this vnknowne Knight. Nor was any thing elſe in the mouthes of the multitude, then the diſcourſing of the braue performance of this buſineſſe, delivering the manner thereof one to another; and though they had all ſeene how it was, yet every one ſpake thereof a-freſh, and it ſeemed to them as a dreame; ſome in wonder clapping their hands; others highly extolling his valour; one ſpeakes with his fingers; another ſtands amazed; a third bleſſes himſelfe; a fourth lifts vp his arme; a fifth acts it with his hand, all of them having their mouthes and their eyes full of joy; a ſixt bowes downe his body, and ſuddainely leapes vp againe in the ayre; ſome bend the brow, and ſome being ready to burſt with content, make gracefull Matachines, with many other pretty Anticke-geſtures.

All which to *Daraxa* ſeemed ſo many degrees of glory. *Ozmin* with-drew himſelfe out of the Citie into certaine backe-Gardens, out of which hee formerly came; and (leaving his Horſe, and changing his cloathes, vvith his Sword vnder his arme, returning in the habit of *Ambroſio*) hee came to the place; taking his Stand where he might ſee what hee moſt deſired, and was ſeene againe by her, who lou'd him more then her owne life. They tooke great pleaſure in beholding each other; howbeit *Daraxa* was very fearefull, leſt ſome mis-fortune might befall him, ſtanding there afoote amongſt the multitude: ſhee made ſignes vnto him, that he ſhould get vp vpon a Scaffold: but hee made ſhow that hee did not vnderſtand her meaning, ſtanding there ſtill, till the Buls began to runne.

By this time the evening was farre ſpent, and with the approaching of the night, thoſe that were to ſport at the *Iuego de Cannas*, made their entrance in manner following:

Firſt of all, the Trumpets, Fifes, and drummes, accompanied with divers other ſorts of muſicke, preſented themſelues, being cladde in rich Liveries of ſundry colours; after whom followed the *Azemilas*, or Sumpter Mules, laden with bundels of Canes.

The companies that were to maintaine this ſport, were likewiſe eight, anſwering to the number of their bundles of Canes. Every one had a Sumpter Cloth of Velvet caſt over the Canes, richly imbroydered with the Armes of their Maſter in Silke and Gold, the *Garrotes* belonging therevnto, being all of ſilver.

After theſe, entred two hundred and forty Gennets, richly furniſhed for 48 Knights, which were fiue a piece for every man, beſides that which came in with the Canes, which made vp ſixe in the whole. But they that entred firſt on the right hand, came in two Files, oppoſing themſelues againſt the adverſe part. The firſt two horſes (which as if they had beene yoaked together, ranne on in an even and equall courſe) were aſſiſted by fiue others of a ſide, bearing their Owners Targets at the Arſon of their Saddles, offering their faireſt ſhow to the eyes of the Spectators; wherein were depainted their Emblemes

blemes and their *Motto's*, ſet forth with faire ſcarfes, rich Ribboning, Taſſels and buttons of the beſt both ſilke and gold, with ſundry other borderings and coſtly imbroyderies, every man ſuting himſelfe according to his owne humour, and particular fancie. Moſt of the Horſes had their Pettrels ſtucke full with Bels, all their other furniture and trappings being very rich and curious, they had ſumptuous head-ſtals of gold and ſilver, ſet with pretious Stones, as thicke as they could ſtand each by other: it ſhall ſuffice, for the better amplifying of what I haue ſpoken, that they were in *Sevill*, where there is no ſmall ſtore of them, nor make little eſteeme of ſuch things; and that theſe Knights and Gentlemen were Lovers, Competitours, rich and young; and the Lady for whom they ſtroue, preſent among them. Theſe entred in at one gate of the Place, and when they had giuen it a round, they iſſued out at another neere vnto that by which they entred. So that the one did not hinder the other either in their comming in, or their going forth: and thus they paſt in very good equipage as could be deſired.

The Horſes having quit the place, theſe Gallants entred in againe, the whole eight ſquadrons running two and two together, well attired themſelues, with their Liveries attending vpon them (as before hath beene delivered) and with their Launces in their hands, which they ſtrongly brandiſhing, made the ſtock and point thereof ſeeme to meete together whoſe nimble ſhaking cauſed every ſingle Launce to appeare to be foure. Preſently vpon this, incouraging their proud Gennet with their lowd ſhoutes and cryes, and wounding their Sattin ſides with their ſharpe Spurres, you would haue thought them rather to flye, then runne; their Maſters, and they, ſeeming but one joynt-body, ſo cloſely did they keepe themſelues in their ſeates. Nor is this any Hyperbole, or over-indearing what was done, ſince that in all parts almoſt of *Andaluzia*; as *Sevill*, *Cordova* and *Xerez de la frontera*, they bring forth their children (as it is commonly ſayd) from the Cradle to the Saddle, as in other parts they accuſtome them to carry Canes. And it is a wonder in ſuch tender yeares, to ſee ſuch hard ſteeles, and ſuch dexterity and agility of body. For to doe theſe things, is an ordinary exerciſe amongſt them. They gaue a turne about the place, running to and fro from all the foure parts thereof: and then leaving the place for a while to recover freſh breath (and to giue ſome pawſing to the Spectatours) they entred againe, as before, (changing ſtill their Horſes) with their Targets on their armes, and their Canes in their hands.

Then they divided themſelues by ſixe and ſixe (as the manner there is) and in a handſome well ordered faſhion began their ſport. Wherein having continued for the ſpace of a quarter of an houre, or thereabouts, ſome other Gentlemen thruſt in amongſt them to part the quarrell, beginning with their freſh Horſes a well-prepared skirmiſh, both the one and the other from all parts of the place, ranging and marſhalling themſelues in ſuch good array, obſerving ſuch due both time and meaſure, that it ſeemed a very fine contriued daunce: the beholding whereof, as it held the people in ſuſpence by poſſeſſing all their faculties; ſo did it giue them ſingular content. But this ſport was interrupted, and wholly diſordered by the ſudden approach of a furious Bull, which they had let looſe from the other ſide of the place. Thoſe that vvere a horſe-backe, changing their Canes into Iauelins, (vvhich they had ready at hand) began to caſt themſelues into a ring, ſeeking to ſhut him in on every ſide: but the Bull ſtoode ſtocke-ſtill in the midſt of them, not knowing whom he ſhould firſt ſet vpon: hee caſt his eyes vpon them all, tearing vp the earth with his forked feet; and whileſt every man ſtood in this manner expecting his chance; one bold Rogue amongſt the reſt comes athwart him, provoking him to fury with his tottered Cloake and his ſhrill ſhoutes, but little needed any ſuch inſtigations: for the Bull preſently therevpon, like one mad with rage, forſaking the horſemen, made after him vvith all the eagerneſſe he could,

could, who tooke himselfe to his heeles as fast as they were able to carry him: he flyes from the Bull, the Bull after him, and never giues him over, forcing him to take Sanctuary vnder *Daraxa's* window, just there where *Ozmin* then stood; who deeming it a place of priviledge for this fearefull yong fellow, and reputing it a kinde of injury offered to his Lady and Mistris, if there hee should receiue any ill entertainment, as likewise to himselfe, if this poore Rogue should suffer for his comming thither; as well out of this respect, as also for that hee was incensed against those, who stroue to get the honour of the day; and to winne grace by doing something bravely in her presence, breaking through the thickest of all the people, hee went out against the Bull, who forsaking him he formerly followed, made directly towards himselfe. All that beheld this, thought him either foolish or mad, that should so desperately put himselfe forth to incounter with a Beast of that courage, and fiercenesse, looking every minute when hee should take him vp betweene his Hornes; and tossing him vp aloft, breake every bone of him in pieces. All of them with lowd voyces cride out vnto him, Take heede, for the passion of God, if you loue your life, looke to your selfe; for if you had a thousand liues, they are all in danger of loosing. You may by this time imagine with your selues, what a poore taking his Spouse was in: for mine owne part I know not what to say therein, saue that shee was as a woman bereft of her proper Soule, and was become an insensible body, through too much Sence. The Bull bowed downe his head for to fasten his blow vpon him, but this was but an humbling himselfe to the sacrifice, for hee never came to lift it vp againe. For the *Moore* wrything his body aside, and with extraordinary quickneſse vnsheathing his sword, acting it all in an instant, hee gaue him such a cut in the necke, close vnto the horne, that parting the bones of the braine in sunder hee left his head hanging by his winde-pipe, and there he lay for dead.

This done (as though he had done nothing) sheathing his sword, he presently leaues the *Place*. But the common rout that loue novelties, and hunger as well to heare, as to tell strange tales (besides many horse-men, and foote-men that began to flocke about him, to know who he was) pressed so hard on every side to see him, and so throng'd him both before and behinde, that they had almost stifled him, being scarce able to wagge amongst them. In the Windowes, and on the Scaffolds, began a new murmure of admiration, like vnto the former, there being a generall joy amongst them all, for that this thing had hapned at the conclusion of these feasts, so that nothing else was talked of, saue onely those two wonderfull accidents of that Evening, doubting which were the greater of the two; and taking in good part this second course which he set before them, hee left their palate well pleased, and their mouths seasoned with a good relish, to recommend such braue actions in perpetuall remembrance to all succeeding ages.

THE ARGVMENT.

The Story continues of these two illustrious Lovers, Ozmin *and* Daraxa; *wherein is declared her sorrow, and his griefe, with diverse other accidents; and how for to comfort and cheere vp* Daraxa, *there was a Tourneyment, or Iusting performed by many Knights, and Gentlemen of worth, wherein* Ozmin *bore away the bell, and had the glory of the day: yet all this could not make* Daraxa *merry.*

THis day *Daraxa* had (as you haue seene) her pleasures interrupted, her joyes intermixed with griefes, her delights false, and her contents vnsavourie: for scarce had arriued the comfort which shee tooke in seeing that which she most desired, but on the sudden it was over-taken

with feare of danger: it did likewiſe torment her, to thinke with her ſelfe that ſhee knew not how nor vpon what occaſion to ſee him once againe, nor how ſhe might feede her fill, ſatisfying the hunger of her eyes, on the delicate foode of her ſweete deſire. And becauſe Pleaſure appeares not, where Sorrow is in place, it could not be diſcerned in her countenance, whether their Feaſts had giuen her that contentment, for which they were intended: As well for this, as for that theſe Gallants were ſomewhat more heated then before, beeing ſet on fire with that beautifull faireneſſe, and faire beauty of *Daraxa*, deſirous more then ever to entertaine her with pleaſures, and that fitting occaſion might be offered to come againe to the ſight of her; in this their pride of heart, and heate of blood, they ordayned a Tourney wherein *Don Rodrigo* was to be the Challenger.

And ſome few nights after, the Challenge was publiſht with great ſtore of muſicall inſtruments, and bright-burning Torches, that all the ſtreetes, together with the great Place, ſeemed to be all on a flame: in this ſolemne manner they ſet vp the Challenge, where it might beſt be ſeene and read of all that paſſed by.

There was a place for Tourneyment neere vnto the Gate, which they call the gate of *Cordova*, adjoyning to the wall, (which I haue ſomtimes ſeene and well knowne, though now decayed) where the Knights and Gentlemen went to exerciſe Armes, and to proue their Lances: there *Don Alonſo de Zuniga*, being but a new beginner, did likewiſe practiſe amongſt the reſt, deſirous to ſhew himſelfe in this Tourney, for the great affection which hee bare to *Daraxa*. He was afraid he ſhould rather looſe then get honour in this Tourneyment, nor did he ſticke in all companies publikely to ſay as much; not becauſe he wanted either ſtrength, or courage; but becauſe in all things whatſoever, Vſe makes maſteries: for they that haue onely the bare *Theoricke*, and naked ſpeculation of things, be they never ſo skilfull in this their contemplatiue knowledge, they erre in their ayme, be they never ſo confident in their vnder-takings. And in this, of all other hee was moſt vnwilling to erre, the thoughts whereof did much afflict him, yet made him withall more carefull how to behaue himſelfe in the buſineſſe.

Ozmin on the other ſide deſired to haue as few enemies as hee could, and becauſe he might not Tourney, nor thought it poſſible to be admitted into the number, he would faine haue ſome body to enter the Liſts, that might overthrow *Don Rhodrigo's* pride; for that hee was more jealous of him then of all the reſt: more to effect this his purpoſe, then any minde that he had therein to do his Maſter ſervice, he ſpake thus vnto him:

Sir, if you be pleaſed to grant me free liberty of ſpeech, I may haply deliver that vnto you, which may be of ſome profit vnto you in this ſo honourable an occaſion. *Don Alonſo* dreaming of nothing leſſe, then that hee would treat with him touching ſuch Gentleman-like exerciſes as theſe, but rather ſuppoſing that hee would entertaine him with ſome diſcourſe touching his Loue, ſayd vnto him; You are to ſlow in vnfolding your ſelfe conſidering the haſte I haue to heare thee, and the longing deſire which I haue to know what it is thou wilt ſay vnto mee.

Sir, (quoth hee) I finde, that of force you muſt be preſent at this famous Tourneyment, the noyſe whereof, as it hath filled every mans eare, ſo it is now all their talke: nor do I wonder, that where the reward of a glorious name lyes at ſtake, men go on fearefully, out of their great deſire that they haue to gaine it. I that am your poore creature, will doe you the beſt ſervice I can, by inſtructing and inabling you in that, vvhich you are deſirous to attaine vnto in the exerciſe of Horſemanſhip, and the vſe of armes, and that in a ſhort time; no way doubting but my inſtructions ſhall bring forth good fruites of what I promiſe. Let not this ſeeme ſtrange vnto you, nor let my youth

youth ſcandall my skill; for I muſt tell you, they being thinges wherevnto I haue even beene bred, they are familiar vnto mee, and I dare boldly boaſt my knowledge in them. *Don Alonſo* was much joyed in hearing him, and giving him many thankes for this his voluntary offer of his loue and ſervice: he told him; If thou performeſt what thou ſpeakeſt, thou ſhalt binde me much vnto thee. *Ozmin* made anſwere; He that promiſeth that, which he cannot performe, is as wide of his word, as he is from the worke; and meanes nothing but deceit; but he that ſtands in thoſe tearmes, as I doe now, where trickes cannot ſerue the turne, he muſt of force (vnleſſe hee be a foole) accompliſh more in deeds, then he promiſeth in his words.

Take order, Sir, that Armes be provided for your owne perſon, and mine, and then you ſhall quickly know, that by how much the ſlower I haue beene in my offer, by ſo much the ſooner I will bring it to effect: freeing my ſelfe from this debt, but not from that obligation which I haue to ſerue you. *Don Alonſo* preſently gaue order to haue all thinges neceſſary provided, and when they were fitted for the purpoſe, they vvent forth to a place a part, vvhere that day, and thoſe that followed till the determined time of the Tourneying, they ſpent their time in the exerciſes which that ſolemne Feaſt required. So that in a very ſhort time, *Alonſo* learn'd to keepe his ſeate ſo ſure, as if hee had beene lockt to his Saddle, bearing his Launce with ſo gracefull a carriage, and cowching it in his wreſt with ſo comely a deportment, as if he had many yeares beene practiſed in the Feates of Armes: wherevnto were very good helpes, his cleane proportion of body, accompanied with a ſmart and nimble kinde of ſtrength, which gaue no ſmall gracefull ſucceſſe to his performance.

From his dexterity in vaulting on his horſe, paſſing lightly from one Saddle to another, from his directions in his teaching, and from the ſhape, proportion, faſhion of his body, from his behaviour, beſides the garbe of *Ozmins* language, *Don Alonſo* began to thinke with himſelfe, that it was impoſſible this mans name ſhould be *Ambroſio*, much leſſe a Labourer, vnleſſe perhaps he laboured with his wretched Fortunes, whereof hee ſeemed to make ſhew. He diſcovered by his actions the liuely ſplendour of ſome principall perſon nobly deſcended, who by ſome various ſucceſſe of Fortune, wandred vp and downe in this diſguiſe: and not being able to containe himſelfe in quiet, till he were rid of this doubt, taking him one day aſide, hee ſpake thus in ſecret vnto him.

Ambroſio, it is not long that you haue ſerved mee, but in this ſhort time you haue beene with me, you haue bound me much vnto you: your vertues, and your noble kinde of carriage ſpeake what you are; and therefore it is in vaine to ſeeke any longer to conceale your ſelfe; vnder the courſe vaile of theſe baſe and vile clothes, and vnder this poore habit, which thou now weareſt, lyes hid a nobler office, and a nobler name, (like Iewells lap'd vp in leather Caſes.) I now know by manifeſt ſignes which I haue noted and obſerved in thee, that thou doeſt, (or to ſpeake more properly) haſt deceived mee: for, that a poore Labourer, whoſe perſon you are willing to repreſent, ſhould be ſo generall (eſpecially being ſo young) in all kinde of knowledge, but more particularly in the exerciſe of Armes and horſemanſhip, is a thing almoſt (let me call in that word againe, and ſay) beyond beliefe. I haue ſeene in thee, and plainely perceived, that vnder theſe hard clods of earth, and muddy ſhells, is incloſed the fineſt gold, and the pureſt orientall Pearles the vvorld can afford. What I am, it is already well knowne vnto thee; what thou art, I am yet to ſeeke; howbeit (as I ſay) the cauſes are knowne by their effects, and that thou canſt not any longer conceale thy ſelfe from me. I ſweare vnto thee by the faith which I haue in Ieſus Chriſt, and by the Order of Knight-hood which I profeſſe and maintaine, to be thy both faithfull and ſecret friend, keeping that

vnder the Locke of Silence, which thou ſhalt depoſite in my boſome, aſſiſting thee in all that I am able, both in my purſe and perſon. Giue mee an accouint of thy fortune, that I may in ſome ſort cancell the debt, wherein I ſtand bound vnto thee for thoſe reall courteſies, vvhich I haue received from thee. Hereunto *Ozmin* thus repli'd.

So ſtrongly (Sir) haue you conjur'd me; ſo ſquiz'd the Grapes in the winepreſſe, that you muſt of force vvring that from my Soule, which with any other ſtrayning in the vvorld, ſaue by theſe the Preſſes of your Gentleman-like proceeding, vvere impoſſible to be drawne from mee. Complying therefore with that which you cõmand mee, putting aſſured confidence as well in your perſon, as your promiſe, I ſhall giue you to vnderſtand, that I am a Gentleman; my natiue Soyle *Saragoça* in *Aragon*; my name *Iayme Vives*, which I borrowed from my father; for ſo likewiſe was he called. It is not many yeares ſince, that following an occaſion, (it being the nature of young-men to be in action) I fell into the Moores hands, and was made a ſlaue, by a ſubtill kinde of trechery, and falſe play of certaine fained friends; which, whether it were occaſioned through their envy, or my misfortune, is too large a tale to tell you. It ſhall ſuffice that I deliver vnto you, that being in their power, they ſold me to a *Renegado*, one that had renounced his Chriſtianity; who, how hee did vſe me, it is enough to haue nam'd his condition. Hee led me along with him, till hee had brought mee to *Granada*, where a Gentleman bought mee, called *Zegri*, one of the principalleſt perſons in that City. This man had a ſonne of the ſame yeares with my ſelfe, whoſe name was *Ozmin*, vvho becauſe he vvas the very picture of my ſelfe, as well in age, as in ſtature, feature, favour, condition, and all thinges elſe whatſoever: for that I did ſo truely reſemble him, he was the more deſirous to buy mee, and to vſe mee the better, that it might breed the greater faſtneſſe and friendſhip betweene vs. I taught him all I could or knew, according as my ſelfe had learned of my friends at home in mine owne Country, which vvas the more perfected in mee by the frequent practice of ſuch like exerciſes, being of that common vſe with vs, as nothing more. From vvhence I reaped no ſmall benefit; for, by converſing with my Maſters ſonne, my knowledge was thereby increaſed, vvhich otherwiſe I might haply haue forgot: and experience teacheth vs, That men by teaching, come to learne. Hence grew to be refined both in the ſonne and father that affection which they bore vnto me; truſting me with their perſons and wealth; ſo much did they relie vpon my truth and honeſty.

This young Gentleman was a Suitour to *Daraxa*, daughter to the *Alcade de Baça*; (my Miſtreſſe, whom you ſo much adore:) the mariage was treated of, and vpon the point to take the effect; for the articles of agreement were already drawne, and no doubt the match ere this had beene concluded, had not the vvarres hindred it, and the preſent ſiege that was then laid vnto it, whereby they were forced to deferre it till ſome fitter time.

Baça was ſhortly after yeelded vp, by occaſion whereof, this intended Mariage hung in ſuſpence. And becauſe I was then *Domimus Fac-totum*, and the onely man in favour and truſt with them, I went and came with preſents, and other interchangeable kindneſſes, from the one City to the other: it being my good fortune to be in *Baça* at that time, when it was rendred vp; and ſo I recovered my liberty, together with many other Captiues. I would faine haue returned home to mine owne Countrey, but I wanted money: In the end I had notice, that a Kinſman of mine was abiding in this City. Two things did concurre to draw me hither; the deſire I haue to ſee this place, (being ſo noble and magnificent a City) and the ſupplying of my wants, the better to performe my Iourney. I continued here a great while; without finding him, that I ſought for: for hearing no newes of him, but ſuch as were vncertaine, it turned to my vtter vn-doing; by finding that which I did not ſeeke

for, as in ſuch caſes it commonly falleth out. I vvent wandring vp and downe the City, and having little money, and much care, it was my happe to meete with a rare piece of Nature, an admirable Beauty; (at leaſt in my eye, howſoever in other it might be otherwiſe) but that's all one, being that is onely faire, which moſt pleaſeth. To her I delivered vp all my faculties, leaving to my ſelfe not one of them to liue with mee: I made now no more any reckoning of my ſelfe, nor poſſeſſed any thing which was not hers. This faire workmanſhip is *Donna Elvira*, ſiſter to *Don Rodrigo*, and daughter to *Don Luys de Padilla*, my old Maſter. And becauſe counſell (as the ſaying is) ſpringeth from neceſſity, ſeeing my ſelfe ſo wholly loſt in her loue, and not finding any meanes to manifeſt my affection, together with the quality of my perſon, I held it my beſt courſe to write Letters vnto my father of the recovery of my liberty, and that I was indebted in a thouſand double Ducats; and that hee would be pleaſed to ſupply mee with ſo much moneys for my reliefe. Which buſineſſe ſucceeded well; for having ſent me the whole Summe, and a ſervant with a horſe for my journey, I put my ſelfe into good Cloathes, and fitted my ſelfe with all thinges neceſſary according to mine owne minde. The two or three firſt dayes I began to make that ſtreet my walke, giving many a turne at all houres of the day, but could never haue the happineſſe to ſee her. Now, from my continuall walking that way, I began by ſome ſuſpicious people to be obſerved, who ſeemed to haue a watchfull eye over me; wherefore, for the avoyding of Spies, I vvith-drew my ſelfe from my vvonted walke, and betooke my ſelfe to a more retired courſe of life.

My ſervant (to whom I imparted my Loue-buſineſſes) thinking vpon ſome courſe for mee, adviſed me (as being elder and better experienced then my ſelfe) finding a certaine piece of Worke going forward in my Lords houſe, to ſuite my ſelfe like a day-Labourer, and to change my name, that I might not be knowne, and ſo ranke my ſelfe amongſt the reſt, that are hired to digge and carry away the rubbiſh from the Maſons worke. I began to conſider with my ſelfe, what might happen therevpon; but becauſe Loue overcomes all difficulties, and Death is too weake an adverſary to withſtand it's force, all feare was layd aſide, every thing ſeemed eaſie vnto me, I put on a reſolution to entertaine his advice, and ſo I did accordingly. At that time there befell mee an vn-expected accident, vvhich was this: When the Worke was finiſhed, they receiv'd me into the houſe to be their Gardiner. Then, & never till then, was that happy day that I long looked for: my Moone was now come to her Full; and I was now climing to the height of my good fortune: for the very firſt day that I ſupplyed that place, and had but newly ſet foot within the garden, I luckily met vvith *Daraxa*; ſhee wondred to ſee me there, and I no leſſe to behold her. Wee gaue an account each to other of our liues, relating our mutuall misfortunes; ſhee recounting hers, and I mine; not ſticking to tell her, how farre I vvas in loue with her friend, and in what faſt Fetters ſhe held my heart: intreating her withall, that ſince ſhee had ſuch cleare knowledge both of my parents and ſelfe, and how nobly I was deſcended, ſhee would be pleaſed to favour my pretenſion, and to worke ſo with her by her good interceſſion, that I might come (by the holy Rite of Mariage) to injoy the fruit of my hopes. She promiſed ſhee would, and did (I aſſure my ſelfe) all that in her lay to accompliſh my deſire. But becauſe Fortune was evermore too too niggardly-handed towards mee, when thoſe our tender loues (like young Plants) began to gather a little ſtrength, and were in the way to ſhoot vp higher; the ſprigs being rent off, the bud was blaſted with a ſharpe Eaſterly winde, and ſome malicious Worme lay gnawing at the roote, till at laſt it withered to nothing, and was quite conſumed: for I was on the ſudden baniſhed the houſe, not knowing vvhy, nor vvherefore; falling thus from the higheſt top of happineſſe, to the loweſt depth of miſery. He that with the ſtroke

of a Launce kill'd the firſt Bull, hee that with the edge of his ſword made the other fall dead at his foot, was my ſelfe. She ſaw me well inough, and knew me too, and was not a little glad of it, which I did plainely reade in her looks, and her eyes did expreſſe it to the life. And in this occaſion (if it were poſsible) I would likewiſe ſtriue to make ſome notable proofe for to pleaſe my Miſtris, who ſhall eternize my actions, by giving the world to vnderſtand who I am, and at what valuation I ought to be rated amongſt the reſt. My inability to execute this my deſire, makes mee even ready to burſt with griefe; and if I could purchase it with my bloud, I would willingly let looſe the Sluces of my veines to obtaine my vviſhed end. Thus (Sir) you ſee, I haue freely laid open vnto you the vvhole ſucceſſe of my loue, I haue given you a true account of it, there remaining nothing to my ſelfe in the reckoning, ſaue a groſſe ſumme of diſgraces. And with that word hee ſtopt.

Don Alonſo, who liſtned earneſtly all this while vnto him, when his eares were ſet looſe (for t'others tongue had tyde them to his mouth) threw his armes about his necke, claſping him cloſe vnto him with ſtreight imbracements: Whil'ſt *Ozmin* in the meane while ſtroue to kiſſe his hands, but hee vvould not ſuffer him ſo to doe, ſaying; Theſe hands and armes are to be imployed in thy ſervice, that they may thereby deſerue to gaine thine. It is no time now to vſe compliments, nor to alter as yet the courſes you haue hitherto held, ſeeing your owne will is not in diſpoſition to doe otherwiſe. As for the Tourneyment, let that never trouble your thoughts, for you ſhall enter in with the reſt, and doubt you not of it, for it ſhall be ſo; therefore plucke vp your ſpirits, and ſet your heart at reſt. *Ozmin* once more made offer to kiſſe his hands, humbling his knee on the ground. *Don Alonſo* did the like, making many proffers of prevention: ſo forcibly did this new bond of friendſhip tye them each to other. Thus they paſt in large converſation the reſt of thoſe dayes that remained, till the very time and houre, wherein the Tourneyment was to be performed.

I told you before, how that *Don Rodrigo* for his great arrogancie, was ſecretly miſliked by moſt of theſe Gallants. And therefore *Don Alonſo* thought with himſelfe, that he had now met with that he deſired. For *Iayme Viues* entring into the Tourney, he was well aſſured, that he would eclypſe his honour, and beat downe his pride. *Ozmin* for his part likewiſe did deſire it as much. And before the houre of arming vvas come, that he might ſee *Daraxa* enter the place, he walked vp and downe there a vvhile, wondring to ſee it ſo richly adorned: the Hangings of Cloth of Gold and of Silke, were ſuch and ſo many, as are vnable to be expreſſed; ſuch variety vvas there in the colours; ſuch curioſitie in the vvindowes; ſuch beauty in the Ladies; ſuch richneſſe in their dreſsings, and their cloathes; ſuch concourſe of all ſorts of Gallants, that all being put together, ſeemed to be one ineſtimable Iewell; and every particular by it ſelfe, a precious Stone ſet therein. The Tilt-yard, vvhich divided the Place into two equall parts, ranne quite athwart the mid'ſt of it; and in a convenient place vvas a Scaffold ſet vp for the Iudges, right over againſt the vvhich were the windowes appointed for *Daraxa* and *Donna Elvira*, vvho vpon two white Palfreys, their furnitures being blacke Velvet ſet with ſilver Oes, and ſutably frindged, entred well attended: Who after they had rounded the Place, tooke their Seates. Where *Ozmin* leaving her, haſted away, becauſe anon after, the Challengers were to enter; vvho within a little ſpace made their arrivall, wonderfull well ſet forth, and in very good equipage. The Ho-boyes, the Trumpets, and other inſtruments of Muſicke ſounded without ceaſing, till they were ſeated in their places. Afterwards entred the Defendants, and *Don Alonſo* was one of the firſt; who having performed his three courſes, and thoſe ſingular well (that few did better) he preſently returned home.

Having

Hauing before obtained licence for a Cavaleere, a friend of his, whom he expected from *Xeres de la frontera*, *Ozmin* in the meane while attending his comming. They came in both together to the place; and *Alonſo* being his *Padrino*, preſented him vnto them. This Moores Armes were all blacke, his Horſe ſutable, without any plume in his Helmet; in ſtead whereof with great curioſity, he had made a Roſe of *Daraxa's* Handkercher, which was an aſſured token, whereby ſhe might know him. He put himſelfe in his poſture, and as good lucke would haue it, he was to runne his firſt Launce againſt one of the Challengers Abettors: The ſignall was giuen, they made their Carreere, *Ozmin* hits his Adverſary on the Bever, where he brake his Launce; and giving him a counter-buffe with the Trucheon of his Staffe, he removed him from his Saddle, and fell with that ſtroke to the ground over his horſe crupper, but he had no other harme, ſaue what he ſuffered with the weight of his Armour. For the two laſt courſes, *Don Rodrigo* put himſelfe forth, who lighted with his firſt Launce on the left arme of the *Moore*, neere vnto the ſhoulders, remaining wounded by him in the pouldrons on the right ſide, where he brake his ſtaffe in three peeces. With the laſt *Don Rodrigo* miſt, and *Ozmin* brake his neere the ſight of his Helmet, where he left behinde him a great ſplinter of his Launce; ſo that it was generally thought, that he had ſhrewdly wounded him; but his Helmet defended him ſo well that he had no great harme.

The *Moore* having broken his three Launces, went his way wounderfully joyed with his Victory; but much more *Don Alonſo* who had brought him as his Champion into the field, and could not finde any place large inough to intertaine his joy. They quitted the *Place*, and went home to the houſe to diſarme himſelfe, ſuffering no man elſe to ſee his face. And putting on his ordinary apparrell, he ſecretly went out at a poſterne doore on the backſide of the houſe, returning to behold his deare *Daraxa*, and to ſee that vvhich paſſed in the Tilt-yart. He had gotten ſo neere vnto his Miſtris, that they might in a manner haue ſhaken hands: they looked ſteadily each on other, but he evermore bare his eyes ſadly, and with a heavy cheere; but ſhe beyond all degrees of ſadneſſe, ſuppoſing that the cauſe of his ſorrow might be, that ſhe had not cheered him with ſome gracious caſt of her eye. Nor could ſhe tell what to thinke, ſo much was ſhe amazed, to ſee him Tilt in blacke both Horſe and Armour, being it is a ſigne amongſt them of evill lucke. All this put together, wrought in her a moſt deepe melancholly, and continued ſo extremely paſsionate therein, and vvas ſo ſurcharged with ſorrow, that the ſports being ſcarce ended, her heart trembling in her body, ſhe left her window, and haſtned home. They which did accompany her did much marvell that ſhee went away no better pleaſed, ſeeming to take no contentment in what was done, and withall began to murmure and mutter amongſt themſelues, every one ſuſpecting that, which his owne malice did ſuggeſt vnto him.

Don Luys, like a wiſe Gentleman, as oft as he heard any reaſoning thereof, ſpake ſtill in her excuſe; the like he did with his ſonnes that Euening, when he found them grumbling at her carriage, telling them that an afflicted ſoule weepes in the midſt of mirth, and that there is not any thing that can miniſter matter of joy and gladnes to man or woman, that is abſent from thoſe, whom they beſt affect. Good things are ſo much the more eſteemed, by how much the more vvee injoy them with knowne perſons, and our particular acquaintance.

Towards ſtrangers, there may (no doubt) be many intertainments given to moue pleaſure and delight; (but alas) they haue no feeling of them; their thoughts are otherwiſe taken vp, and in them the increaſe of ſorrow is ſo much the more, by how much in others they ſee the greater joy. I blame her not

not for it, nor doe I thinke it a thing ſo ſtrange; but rather imagine it to haue proceeded from her great prudence, then any diſlike ſhe had of our ſports, and doe meerely attribute it to her graue and ſober behaviour; whereas the contrary would haue argued too much lightneſſe, and an vnſetled kinde of carriage, which imputation, women that prize their vertue and goodneſſe, ſtudy to avoyd. Beſides, ſhe is farre from father and mother, and from her beſt-beloved; and (though free in her viſage) yet a Captiue in her condition, and that in a ſtrange Country, not knowing how to remedy her ſelfe, nor when ſhe ſhall finde the meanes. Let every man examine his owne boſome, let him but make her caſe his owne, and then hee will tell mee another tale, and ingenuouſly confeſſe, that he ſhould finde himſelfe affected, juſt as ſhe is now. And in doing otherwiſe, is (as it is with him that is in health) to bid the ſicke to eate and be well.

This diſcourſe having paſt in ſecret amongſt them, they treated afterwards in publike of the *Xerezano*, how brauely he had behau'd himſelfe that day; and how (albeit they deſired much to know who he was) they could never get any more out of *Don Alonſo*, then what he told them at firſt, and they beleeued it was true. *Daraxa's* melancholly increaſed daily more & more, but the cauſe thereof none could gueſſe aright: they were all wide of the marke, none came neere the Butte: of all that ſhot their bolts; ſome fell too ſhort, and ſome flew over. All did judge amiſſe, inventing in the meane time all the entertainements their wits could deviſe to giue her content: but ſhould they haue broken their braines in the ſtudy thereof, they had never beene neerer their purpoſe: for ſhe was as farre from beeing capable of the delights they deviſed for her, as they were from entring within the Circle of her deſires.

THE ARGVMENT.

Continuing the Story of the noble loues of theſe two diſconſolate Lovers, it is now recounted how Don Luys, *for to cheere vp the gentle* Daraxa, *brought her to a pleaſant Village, whither* Ozmin *repairing, was ſet vpon by a company of Clownes. And in the defence of himſelfe he ſlew foure of them outright, and wounded many others. For the which fact he was committed to priſon, and ſentenced to death; together with the diverſe and ſundry accidents that inſued therevpon; and how in the end he was ſet at liberty, And how himſelfe and* Daraxa *turning Chriſtians, their happy Nuptials were ſolemnly celebrated in the preſence of the King and Queene of* Spaine.

DON LVYS had an houſe in *Axarafe*, and other poſſeſsions belonging therevnto, by the vertue of his *Mayoraugoſhip*, in a little Village appertaining to *Sevill*. The ſeaſon was temperate, beeing then about *February*, at which time the Fields ſeeme to put on their new apparell; thither they agreed to goe to make merry, and to recreate themſeues for ſome few dayes, that they might not leaue this path vntroden, to ſee if by this meanes they could divert her ſorrowes. With this ſhee ſeemed ſomewhat pleaſed, and made ſhew of better cheerefulnes then before; ſuppoſing, if ſhe went forth of the Citie, ſhee ſhould finde ſome meanes or other, to ſee and ſpeake with *Ozmin*. They made ready their *Recamare*, and all fitting proviſion for ſuch a buſineſſe: and it was good ſport to behold the hurly burly and confuſed noiſe amongſt them, as of him that had the charge of Gray-hounds, of that other, that was to goe along with the ſetting dogs, the Tumblers, and the Kennell of the hounds; or a third, that carried Hawkes a-field; of this man bearing the Owle, that his Peece on his ſhoulder; of ſome with Croſſebowes in their hands; otherſome with Mules laden with Bedding, Hangings, and

and other houſhold-ſtuffe, and all of them trooping together, laughing and making themſelues merry with the conceiued joy of this Feaſt.

Don Alonſo hauing notice thereof, comes to *Ozmin*, and tels him that their Miſtreſſes were gone abroad into the Country to take the ayre, and diſport themſelues, and that they were to remaine there ſome time: but when they would returne againe, that he knew not. This newes was nothing diſpleaſing vnto them for two reſpects: the one, for that they might (happily) meet there with the fewer *Competitors* in the purſuit of their Loues; the other, that they might haue the better occaſion not to be knowne. The nights were neither cleere, nor darke, nor cold, nor hot; but with a pleaſant noiſe of ſtilneſſe, and delicate darke cleareneſſe, heau'n and earth were both ſo over-ſpread, that the heart of man could not imagine a fitter night for the purpoſe.

Theſe two loving friends, and friendly Lovers, agreed to try their fortunes, and to ſee what prize they could make in the choiſe of two ſuch rich Bottomes as theſe were, laden with ſo much Honour, Beauty, and Wealth, the greateſt treaſure the world can afford. They diſguiſed themſelues, apparelling their bodies with good honeſt Country cloathes, like plaine Husbandmen, and ſet forth about Sun-ſet vpon two hanckney Iades; and when they came neere vnto the Village, ſome quarter of a League, or there-abouts, they alighted at a certaine Farme-houſe; to the end, that by marching thus on foote, the leſſer notice might be taken of them. Which might then haue fell out verily happily for them, if Fortune had not wheeled her ſelfe about, and turned her back towards them; for they arrived in very good time, even then when their Ladies were in the *Balcon* intertaining diſcourſe, wholly fitting themſelues for converſation, and mirth, as the company, or occaſion ſhould giue cauſe.

Don Alonſo durſt not draw too neere, for feare of frighting the game; and therefore intreated his Companion to make the winde-laſe, and to negotiate alone for them both; becauſe he being beloved of *Donna Elvira*, and well knowne to *Daraxa*, he had no reaſon to hide himſelfe from them. *Ozmin* then by degrees, (with a carefull kinde of careleſneſſe) ſtole neerer and neerer, ſinging in a low Baſe as it were, humming betweene the teeth an Aribique ſong; which (to thoſe that vnderſtood the language) were cleare notes: But to thoſe that knew it not, and were neglectfull thereof, it ſeemed no more then an ordinary *La, La, La*. *Donna Elvira* (hearkening vnto him) told *Daraxa*; Even on theſe rude kinde of people God hath beſtow'd his gifts, if they knew well how to vſe them. Doe you not obſerue the ſauage fellow, what a ſweet and well-tuned voice he hath; and how he relliſheth and ayreth his notes, and how merrily he chants it, as if his mother had brought him into the world with a prick-ſong? But this is in him, as water that raines it ſelfe into the Sea without any profit. By this you ſee (ſaid *Daraxa*) that all things are eſteemed according to the ſubject wherein they ſubſiſt. Theſe country Clownes, if in their tender age they be not tranſ-planted into a politicall & Civill life: and if they be not removed and changed from their barren, to better grounds, and wholly ſtript of that rugged barke, wherein they are borne, it is a thouſand to one if euer they come to be well behau'd. Whereas on the contrary, thoſe that are Citizens, and naturally of a good diſpoſition, are like the Vine, which if it continue a yeare vndreſt and vntrim'd, it yeeldeth fruite notwithſtanding, though it be but a little: but if you returne to prune and husband it aright, it acknowledgeth the good it hath received, and renders a very large and thankefull recompence. But this fellow that ſings heere now, is ſuch a knotty piece of Timber, ſuch an arrant Clowne, that the beſt Carpenter in the world cannot with his Axe nor his Plainer, hewe him into faſhion, or ſhaue him to any ſmoothneſſe of civill-carriage, but for ever remaine an vnprofitable

profitable blocke. It is a torment to me to heare this Turtle ſing; if it pleaſe you, let vs goe hence, for it is time to with-draw our ſelues, that we may take our reſt.

The Lovers well vnderſtood one another; ſhe the Song, and he her words; and to what end ſhe ſpake them. The reſt of the Ladies went their way, only *Daraxa* remained a little behinde after the reſt, and ſpeaking to him in the *Arabicke* tongue, will'd him to ſtay there: where he ſtood waiting for her, and in the meane while, walked careleſly vp and downe, but ſtill with an eye towards the window, to ſee when ſhe ſhould make her returne.

The baſer ſort of people, (by a ſecret kind of inſtinct) doe evermore beare a naturall hatred to thoſe that are Noble; as the Lyzard to the Snake, the Swan to the Eagle, the Cocke to the [a] Pheſant, the Crab to the Cuttle-fiſh, the Dolphin to the Whale, Oyle to Pitch, the Vine to the Cole-wort, and the like. And if you aske, (as deſirous to know, what is the naturall cauſe thereof,) I can ſhew you no other reaſon for it, more then that the Adamant drawes vnto it the Yron, that the Marygold followes the Sunne, the Baſiliske kills by Looking, and Swallow-wort helpes the ſight. For as ſome things naturally loue one another, ſo otherſome hate and abhorre by a celeſtiall influence; the reaſon whereof mortall men haue not to this day beene able to reach vnto. And that things of divers kinds haue this property, it is no wonder, becauſe they conſiſt of differing compoſitions, diſpoſitions, and inclinations in nature: but that reaſonable men, both t'one and t'other, molded of one and the ſame earth, of one fleſh, of one blood, of one beginning, created-forme, and the ſelfe-ſame end, living vnder one ſelfe-ſame Law, beeing of one and the ſame Religion, and all of them in all and every part, (as farre-forth as they are men) ſo one ſelfe-ſame ſubſtance; that out of that Similiancy, man naturally loues man: that yet (I ſay) there ſhould be that contrariety and vnſauorie taſte; that this Raskallity, and baſe off-ſcumme of the earth, more hard then Flint, or the *Gallician* Nut, ſhould perſecute the Nobility with that vehemencie as they doe, is a matter to me of great admiration.

[a] Francolino.

That night certaine young Lads of the Pariſh likewiſe walked abroad, and lighted by chance vpon theſe two Strangers: and at the very firſt incounter, without any cauſe or reaſon in the world; no occaſion being given them, began to flocke together; and gathering themſelues into a ring, began to cry amaine; A Woolfe, a Woolfe, the Woolfe is come: and throwing therewithall little ſtones by hand-fuls on their heads, (as they had ſhowred downe from heaven) they ſhrewdly be-pelted their Pates: ſo that they were forced to flie, vnable to make any longer ſtay, their entertainment was ſo bad. And ſo they returned without any more adoe, *Ozmin* being diſ-appointed (which did moſt grieve him) of taking his leaue of his Miſtreſſe. They went thither where their horſes ſtood; and on them to the City, with purpoſe to returne late againe in the night, that they might not be diſcovered. But this forecaſt ſtood them in little ſtead: for if Lightning and Thunder ſhould haue fallen from heaven, and though they knew it ſhould either burne or daſh them in pieces, their was one Rogue amongſt the reſt, that vvould rather loſe his life, then carry himſelfe civilly towards them; and onely out of no other end but to doe miſchiefe and villany. Scarce had they the next night following ſet foot in the Village, but that a knot of theſe mad-caps being met together, and knowing them to be the very ſame whom they abuſed the night before, one vvith a Sling, another with a Yard, this man vvith a Bore-ſpeare, that with a Batte, ſome with Staues, ſome with Spits, not ſparing ſo much as the Peele & Maulkin of their Ovens, (as if they were to goe out againſt a mad Dog) they joyntly ſet vpon them: but they found them better provided then they were the night before; for they had brought with them good Iackes of Male, and ſteele Murrians, and ſtrong Bucklers. On the one ſide you might ſee ſtones,

Cudgels,

Cudgels, and lowd ſhoutes; and on the other, many ſtrong blowes, and cutting ſlaſhes with the ſword; and on both ſuch a tumult, and ſuch a ſtirre, that with the noyſe thereof, the whole village ſeemed to be vp in armes; ſo like a little warre did this fierce figh appeare. *Don Alonſo*, in croſſing the ſtreete, was vnawares with an vnluckie ſtone ſtrooke on the breſt, and fell to the ground, wanting ſtrength to recover himſelfe to returne afreſh to the fight. Wherefore as well as he could, he crawled vp, and with-drew himſelfe aſide, while *Ozmin* in the meane time draue them vp before him in the ſtreet, working them much harme: for ſome of them (and that not a few) were ſore hurt, and three left dead in the place. The tumult increaſing, all the whole Village came out at once, and ſtopt the paſſage, that hee could not, though hee would never ſo faine, haue fled from them. There was got now on the one ſide of him a Turfe-breaker, a ſturdie ſtout Rogue, who with the barre of a doore ſtrooke him ſuch a cruell blow on the ſhoulder, that he forc't him vpon his knees: but it did nothing benefit him, that he was the *Alcalde's* ſonne; for before he could come to double his blow vpon him, (which hee was about to do) he gaue him ſuch a ſlaſh, that he claue his head in twane, as it had beene of a Kid or a Calfe, leaving him lying like a *Tunnie* on the ſhore, having rendred vp his life in ſatisfaction of his Roguerie. So many charged him on every ſide, and laid ſuch load vpon him, that being vnable any longer to defend himſelfe, he was taken by them.

Daraxa and *Donna Elvira*, ſaw and heard all that had paſt betweene them, (but with much ſorrow to ſee ſuch vncivill out-rage) even from the firſt beginning of the Fray, as alſo what a coyle they kept, when they had caught him thus aliue, and had him in their hold, and how they bound his hands behinde him with a Cord, as if he had beene one of their fellow-rogues. All of them on all ſides intreated him ill; one buffeted him, another puncht him, a third kickt him, throwing on him a thouſand diſgracefull affronts, vvherewith they ſought to be revenged on them for all the wrongs he did him, who (before he was their priſoner) durſt not looke him in the face.

What a beaſtly and ſhamefull thing vvas this, to vſe a man thus, when hee was not able to make reſiſtance, his hands being bound to the peace? A thing never to be done by any, but ſuch baſe Villaines, and dogged Clownes, vvhich kinde of coorſe vſage is naturall and proper vnto them. But what becomes now of *Daraxa*? how does ſhee brooke this misfortune? how is ſhe able without ſwouning, to ſee his perſon thus baſely abuſed, who did ſo much loue and adore his ſhadow? on the one ſide to ſee him priſoner, on the other, to ſee ſome wounded, and ſome ſlaine, and her honour lying in the midſt betweene them both? for ſhee knew well enough, when the caſe ſhould be layd open, *Don Luys* of force could not but aske, vvhat *Ambroſio* made there, and what occaſion drew him thither.

In this confuſion, neceſſity draue her to ſit in counſell with her ſelfe vvhat courſe was beſt to be taken. To prevent therefore farther miſchiefe, ſhee deviſed a Letter, which when ſhee had ſealed, ſhee lockt it vp in a little Cabinet that ſhee had, to the intent that when *Don Luys* ſhould come vnto her, ſhee might make ſhew thereof for her owne diſcharge.

Now by this time the day began to appeare, and yet the people were not quieted. They had ſent vnto the City to giue notice of what had happened, to the end that information might be taken how things had paſt, and to open the buſineſſe. And when the Notary was come, they began to examine Witneſſes; whereof many (vvithout being called) made their voluntary appearance. For ill men, of themſelues invite themſelues vnbidden, onely out of a deſire to doe that is ill: and of enemies becomes friends, to condemne the innocent. Some ſware that *Ozmin* had ſixe or ſeaven, beſides himſelfe in his company; others, that hee was ſeene to come out of *Don Luys* his houſe, and that

ſome

ſome cryde out of the window, Kill them, kill them, Others that the people of the Towne reſting ſecure and quiet, they wilfully ſet vpon them; others, that they came and challenged them out of their houſes; there not being one man amongſt them all that ſware a truth. God deliver vs from ſuch Clownes, for they are as ſtiffe as Oakes, and of the ſame toughneſſe of nature, cruell, and hard-hearted: if you will haue any fruit from them, they muſt be vſed like Akornes, beaten downe with Cudgels and dry blowes; for they will ſooner ſuffer themſelues to be pluct vp by the rootes, though it be to the vtter ruine of themſelues, and their eſtates, then to bow to ſtoope, be it never ſo little. And if they be once minded to perſecute a man, they will perjure themſelues a thouſand times, though the matter in queſtion be not worth a ſtraw, onely out of an inclination to do that which is evill. And the ill is ſo much the worſe, that theſe wretches thinke, that they do God good ſervice therein, and that their ſoules are ſaved by it: and it is a wonder, if they confeſſe their fault, and repent themſelues of this their rancour and malitious poyſon. The deaths and wounds receiued, were prou'd vpon him, and the poore Gentleman laden with yrons, and put in ſafe cuſtodie. *Don Luys*, as ſoone as he had notice hereof, haſtned to the Village, his daughter informed him of the buſineſſe, acquainting him truly with all that had paſt: hee inquired likewiſe of *Daraxa*, who told him the ſame tale, and that ſhe had ſent for *Ambroſio* to come thither, for to diſpatch him thence with Letters for *Granada*, and before that hee could get to ſpeake with her, they had theſe two nights together beaten him with Cudgels, and pelted him with ſtones; ſo that, though her Letters were written, and lay ready for him, ſhee could not come to deliver them into his hands. *Don Luys* deſired her that ſhee would ſhew him the Letter, as well to ſee the contents thereof, as alſo for his owne diſcharge, ſhee being by their Majeſties committed to his cuſtodie. Shee (though ſhee ſeemed loth ſo to do) condeſcended at laſt to his requeſt, and gaue him the Letter, howbeit little intreaty would haue ſerved the turne; for ſhee deſired nothing more, then to haue him ſee what ſhee had writ. And taking it from forth her Cabinet, ſhee ſayd vnto him; I giue it vnto you, that you may perceiue my truth, and conceiue no jealouſie, that I vvrite any thing worthy the hiding from you. *Don Luys* tooke the Letter, and going to reade it, found that it was written in the *Arabicke* tongue, wherein hee had no knowledge. Hee then made inquirie for one that could reade and interpret that Language; the Contents whereof were, that ſhee ſignified vnto her father, vvhat a griefe it was vnto her, to liue thus divided from him; and that ſhee deſired to be certified of his welfare; and if the deſire ſhe had to ſee him did not over-ſway all other reſpects, ſhee liu'd otherwiſe in as full content as any woman in the world, being more made of by *Don Luys*, then any of his owne children: And therefore beſought him that in acknowledgement of this his kindeneſſe, and courteous intertainment, hee vvould be pleaſed to remember him with ſome preſent worthy his deſert.

And becauſe in ſuch like hurly-burlies as theſe, vvords multiply more and more, and together with the ſtirre, reports gather ſtrength, and increaſe; and for that every one canonizeth his owne preſumption, according as hee is in loue vvith it, they began to murmure againſt *Don Luys*, and the people of his houſe. The Muſtard was got vp already into their Noſes, and their fingers began toitch, but he, like a wiſe and diſcreet Gentleman, (as he vvas) thought fit for the preſent to diſſemble the matter; and ſeeming to take little notice of their malicious proceeding, hee remoued his vvhole houſhold, and returned backe to the Citie.

Now, vvhileſt theſe things thus ſucceeded, *Granada* had yeelded her ſelfe to the Conquerours, vpon ſuch conditions, as the Chronicles mention, and as by our fore-fathers hath beene reported vnto vs. Amongſt thoſe other Nobles

bles that vvere found there at that time, vvere the two fellow-father-in-lawes, *Alboaçen* father to *Ozmin*, and the *Alcayde de Baça*: both vvhich beſought to be baptized, deſirous to become Chriſtians: vvhich Ceremony being performed, the *Alcayde* intreated their Majeſties hee might haue licence to goe ſee his daughter *Daraxa*: vvhich being granted, they tolde him hee ſhould be adviſed from them ere long, how and vvhen it ſhould be. *Alboaçen* thinking that his ſonne was dead, or taken captiue, vſed all diligence to know vvhat vvas become of him, but he could never get any inkling thereof. For the which as hee had good reaſon ſo to be) hee vvas vvondrous ſad, not onely as hee was his onely child, but being alſo ſuch a ſonne, ſo vvell qualified as hee vvas, and deſcended of ſuch rich and noble Parents, the onely hope of their Houſe. The *Alcayde* had no leſſe feeling of it then hee, as vvell for that hee loued him as dearely, as if hee had beene his owne; as alſo for the griefe *Daraxa* would conceiue when ſhee ſhould come to heare the tydings of this heavy newes. Their Majeſties on their part had diſpatcht a meſſenger vnto *Sevill* with expreſſe command, that *Don Luys* ſhould preſently without delay repaire vnto them, and bring *Daraxa* along with him; with that reſpect and good vſage, where-withall, they had put him in truſt.

Vpon the receipt of theſe Letters, ſhee (being acquainted what order was given) vvas at her vvits end, and ready to runne mad, becauſe of force, vpon this occaſion, ſhe vvas to depart, grieving thus to go away, before ſhee ſhould ſee an end of this buſineſſe, not knowing what would become of it; and ſorrowing beyond meaſure that her deareſt Loue ſhould beleft behinde her in priſon; and that now when hee had moſt need of her helpe, ſhe muſt in this his greateſt extremity, be driven to leaue him to ſhift for himſelfe. Her thoughts were all in a confuſion, her imagination vvas troubled, and her heart (through the weight of her griefes) as heavy as Lead, calling her ſelfe a thouſand times more vnfortunate, then Misfortune it ſelfe, and of all other, the moſt wretched woman.

She was reſolving to finiſh all at once, and together with her Loue, to loſe her life with a perplexed, but almoſt-ſettled minde, it was in her deliberation to haue acted a moſt cruell errour vpon her ſelfe, in token of that chaſt and true loue which ſhee bare to *Ozmin*. But *Daraxa*, vvhoſe paſſion had not quite out-gone her judgment, like a diſcreete Lady, (as ſhee was) correcting her cruell determinations, taking vp her ſelfe when ſhee was in the height of her ſpeed, ſhee reſolued to truſt her misfortunes in the hands of Fortune her enemy, expecting what-ever ſhee would giue them; and being that the vtmoſt evill was death, ſhee would not diſpaire of the game till ſhee ſaw the laſt man borne. But this reſolution of ſufferance could not ſtop a ſea of teares, which burſt with a ſwelling Tide from forth her eyes. The ſtanders by, ſuppoſed this to proceede out of her over-joy, that ſhee was to returne to her owne Country, but they were all deceiued, ſo that every one ſpake to her, but none did comfort her. *Don Rodrigo* came to take his leaue of her, who with a countenance bathed with thoſe criſtalline teares which dropped from her heavenly eyes, ſpake vnto him in this manner following:

Noble *Don Rodrigo*, I might very well ſeeke to perſwade you vvith abundance of reaſons to that good worke, which vpon this preſent occaſion I pretend to preſent vnto you, and to craue your furtherance therein. Which in its owne nature is ſo juſt, that I cannot forbeare to aske it, nor you to grant it, being that your ſelfe is ſo much interreſſed therein: you know (though I ſhould not tell you) the obligation wee haue to do good; which as a naturall and divine Law ſpeaketh particularly to every mans ſoule and conſcience. Nor is there any man ſo barbarous, that is ignorant thereof: and this carries ſo much the more force with it, by how much the ſtronger the reaſons are that are alleaged; amongſt the which a principall one, and not the leaſt, is, that wee

apply this good vnto thoſe, that haue eaten of our bread, and beene intertained in our ſervice. And becauſe I know you cannot be vnlike your ſelfe, my interceſſion may ſeeme the leſſe needfull. But that which I ſhall intreat at your hands, is this: You know, that *Ambroſio* was ſervant to both our fathers: firſt to mine, then to yours: and therefore we are both bound (but I the more) to do for him; hauing put himſelfe through my default in that neceſſity, wherin now he is, the cauſe in hand no otherwiſe concerning him, but as I was intereſſed in the buſineſſe. By my hand hee was thruſt into this danger, I vvas the ſole cauſer of it; and therefore I ſtand charged with it, and muſt put it to my account. If you will therefore free me from this debt; if you deſire to giue mee content; if you purpoſe to binde me unto you, that I may for ever remaine the thankefull acknowledger of your loue and kindeneſſe, it muſt be, that by laying vpon your ſhoulders this weighty care of mine owne deſire, that you ſeeke by all meanes to procure his liberty, which in the reckoning is mine; and my requeſt vnto you is, that you endevour it with that earneſtneſſe, as I do deſire it. *Don Luys*, (whom I haue ever found my ſingular good Lord) will, before I goe hence, vſe all poſſible diligence in his owne perſon, with his friends and kinsfolke; that the one ayding the other in his abſence, may free mee of this debt, for the which I ſtand ingaged. *Don Rodrigo* promiſed to do his beſt, and ſo they parted.

Now, for that this poore Lady had left her beſt beloued in this great perill of his life, ſhe was much grieued; and by ſo much the more, by how much the farther ſhee was from him; ſo that when ſhee came to *Granada*, ſhee did not ſeeme to be the ſame ſhe was.

Don Alonſo, though hee had eſcaped their hands, yet being ſore bruiſed in his breſt, hee was forced to keepe his bed, ſo ſoundly had the Clownes bang'd him. But when he afterwards heard, that his Companion vvas carried priſoner to *Sevill*, hee got him out of his bed, poſted thither, tooke infinite paines, trotting vp and downe, and never ceaſing to ſollicit his friends cauſe, as if the caſe had beene his owne. Notwithſtanding, what with the complaint of the Plaintifes; the accuſation of Witneſſes; the evill inclination of the Iudges, (either vpon information; or corruption; not fauouring the Defendant,) beſides the ſlaine and wounded (which were many) hee could not ſaue him, together with diverſe other his good friends, from being condemned to be hanged at the common Gallowes.

Don Rodrigo vvas in a great rage, that his father and himſelfe ſhould find ſo little reſpect, as to hang vp a ſervant of theirs, that had not offended the Law, had he had equall hearing, and a faire tryall. On the other ſide *Don Alonſo* ſtood much in the maintenance of the Defendant, ſaying that it was not to bee permitted; nor could the Law condemne a Gentleman, ſo nobly deſcended as his friend *Iayme Vives* was, to be hanged: And that in caſe the fault were farre greater, yet the difference of quality ought to ſaue his life: at leaſt it ought to priviledge him from hanging, it being the Law, that, in matters deſerving death, Gentlemen ſhould not be hanged, but beheaded. The Iudges and the reſt of the Bench were diſtracted in this Caſe, and knew not what they were beſt to doe. *Don Rodrigo*, hee ſtiles him his ſervant; *Don Alonço*, his friend; *Don Rodrigo* pleades for him by the name of *Ambroſio*, and *Don Alonço*, by that of *Iayme Vives*, a Gentleman of *Zaragoſa*; who, at the feaſt of their Buls, had made ſuch noble proofe of his Valour, as the whole Citie could well witneſſe: And that in the Turnament hee (being his *Padrino* or Champion that brought him in) vn-horſt one of the Challengers, ſhewing that day great tokens of his worth and valour. The difference was ſo great, the names ſo contrary; the qualities alleaged ſo diſcrepant; that the Iudges, to cleare this doubt, reſolved with themſelues to take declaration thereof from himſelfe. They demanded then of him, whether he was a Gentleman or no? Hee

anſwered

anſwered that he was nobly deſcended, & of Royall Bloud, but that his name was neither *Ambroſio*, nor *Iayme Vines*. Then they willed him, that hee ſhould manifeſt his name, and the quality of his perſon. Wherevnto he made anſwere, that his puniſhment might excuſe him for not diſcovering himſelfe; and being that he was vndoubtedly to die, it was no more neceſſary to tell it them, then it was materiall, to ſuffer either the one, or the other death. Then they deſired him to deliver, whether hee were the ſame man *Don Alonſo* had reported, which had ſo brauely kill'd the two Bulls, and gotten ſuch honour in the Tourney ment.

He repli'd he was; but that he had neither of thoſe names; whereby they called him. And becauſe he was ſo loth to declare his Linage (conceiving him thereby to be a man of quality,) they demurred vpon the buſines, to ſee if they could worke the truth out of him, to know who he was; as alſo to winde out the reaſons, why theſe two noble Gentlemen ſhould ſo earneſtly vndertake his defence. And which did not a little ſtartle them; they ſaw the whole City did generally deſire his liberty, & ſtood ſtrongly affected towards him. Herevpon they diſpatched ſome preſently away for *Zaragoſa*, that they might learne out the truth, and giue knowledge of his Birth. But having ſpent ſome dayes therein, and vſed many diligencies, they could not meet with any (for all their ſtrict inquiry,) that could giue thē notice who he might be, nor could deviſe what manner of Gentleman he might be, either by his name, or any ſignes or tokens by them given, who failed not to deſcribe him at full vnto them. Being returned with this ill Diſpatch, albeit his friends did much importune for him, and the Magiſtrates of Iuſtice did often require him, that he would lay open his quality and condition, yet he would not doe it, nor was it poſſible to perſwade him therevnto. So the Iudges (the time limited being fully expired for farther reſpite) ſore againſt their will, much pittying both his Youth and Valour, not being able to croſſe the courſe of Iuſtice, being preſt ſo earneſtly by the importunity of the adverſe party, they confirmed their former ſentence.

Daraxa, nor the two fathers vvere aſleepe, vvhil'ſt theſe things were in doing; for they had made their Majeſties acquainted with the vvhole carriage of the buſineſſe, & were by them informed of the truth thereof. Many petitions they put vp, and no ſooner one Memoriall given, but another was a drawing to ſecond their ſuit. *Daraxa*, ſhe in her owne perſon did ſollicit the life of her eſpouſed husband, begging it by the vvay of *merced* and grace: But their Majeſties anſwered nothing therevnto. Yet ſecretly they diſpatched *Don Luys* preſently away, vvith their kingly proviſion to the Iudges, that they ſhould deliver vnto him the Bill of the whole inditement, in every point as it was taken from the beginning to the end, together vvith the priſoner, for that it did much concerne their Highnes ſervice. *Don Luys* poſted away (as he vvas commanded) vvith all the ſpeed he could; vvhil'ſt poore *Daraxa*, her owne father, and father-in-law melted into teares, conſidering the haſte vvhich the Iudges vvould make in diſpatching this poore innocent Gentleman. Which they ſo much the more feared, for that their Petitions received ſo ſlowe an anſwere. They knew not what to ſay, or thinke of this ſo long a delaying of them, without giving thē any anſwere off or on, either good or bad, or any the leaſt hope of life. This did exceedingly grieue them, but they knew not how to helpe themſelues, nor had they left any one ſtone vn-removed, but made all the meanes and friends they could. But that vvhich did moſt daunt them, vvas, that the maine danger did conſiſt in the delay.

Whil'ſt they vvere thus ſtrucken into their dumps, and doubts (for vvhat comfort can there be in ſo dangerous a ſuſpenſion?) *Don Luys* (as you heard before) ſpurred on a maine, vvith much both ſpeed and ſecreſie. And as he entred the gates of *Sevill*, *Ozmin* was led forth of the priſon, to be carried to his execution. The ſtreetes, & every place through vvhich they paſt, vvere full of

people; all was tumult and noiſe, and not a perſon, but wept and ſhed teares, to ſee ſo handſome a young man, ſo well favour'd, ſo valiant, and well-belov'd for thoſe famous deeds which hee had publikely done, to be ſo vntimely cut off: And the more was their ſorrow, to ſee him dye without confeſſion. Which made them all to thinke, that he did it to eſcape death, or to prolong his life: but he was ſilent, and ſpake not a word, nor ſhew'd any ſigne of ſadneſſe in his lookes, but with a ſmiling kinde of countenance beheld them all as he paſſed along. They made now and then certaine ſtops, to ſee if they could exhort him to confeſſe himſelfe, labouring all they could to perſwade him, that hee would not loſe body and Soule both at once. But hee anſwered them not a word, but held his peace all the while. The people continuing thus in this confuſion, and the Citie wayting on this ſad ſpectacle, *Don Luys* came, making the people giue way, preſſing through the throng, to hinder the Execution. The *Alguazils* thought it was a reſiſtance of Iuſtice, and out of very feare which they had of *Don Luys*, for that hee was a ſtout and valiant Gentleman, and dared to oppoſe himſelfe to any danger, they forſooke *Ozmin*, who was vnder their guard, and with great hurry and clamour, they ranne to giue account of what had paſt, to the Magiſtrates, whoſe autority (they thought) it more nerely touched. Wherevpon they came to know, what might be the cauſe of ſo great diſreſpect done vnto them. Hee put his hand in his pocket, and taking out the Kings Order, hee delivered it vnto them, which was by them, to their great contentments, moſt willingly obeyed. And ſo they brought *Ozmin* (being accompanied with all the Gentlemen of that Citie, and the common joy of the people) to *Don Luys* his houſe; Where that night hee was entertained with a gallant maske, ſetting vp many Torches and Creſſets in the ſtreetes and windowes, for to giue the more generall content: And in token of their great joy, they would haue celebrated thoſe dayes hee ſtayed there with publike feaſts; for now they knew who hee was. But *Don Luys* would not giue way therevnto; but tying himſelfe to his Inſtructions, carried him as a priſoner, along vvith him the next morning, being kindly vſed, and well entertayned vpon the way, according to the greatneſſe of his ranke and quality.

Being now arrived at *Granada*, hee kept him ſecretly with him ſome few dayes, vntill ſuch time as hee had order from their Majeſties to bring him to Court. Who when he was come before them, they joyed much in the ſight of him; and whil'ſt he was ſtanding thus in their preſence, they commanded *Daraxa* to be called forth. Now when theſe two Lovers thus ſuddenly met in ſuch a place as that was, ſo vnexpectedly, and ſo farre beyond their hopes, every man may make his owne heart judge of the wonderfull joy which they received in this happy (but vnlooked for) incounter, and imagine with himſelfe what each of them did thinke and conceiue thereof. When each others eyes had fed their fill, the Queene made towards them, and told them that both their fathers were become Chriſtians: howbeit, *Daraxa* knew ſo much before. She deſired them to doe the like, which ſhee ſhould receiue as a ſingular favour from them; but that no other loue, nor feare ſhould inforce them therevnto, ſaue onely that of God, and their owne ſalvation. But howſoever, whether they did ſo or no, (for ſhe would not compell the conſcience) her pleaſure was that they ſhould now inſtantly injoy their liberty, and diſpoſe of their Eſtates and Perſons, according to their owne will and pleaſure.

Ozmin would faine haue anſwered the Queene with all the joynts and ſinnewes of his body, making them ſo many tongues, to render thankes to her Majeſtie, for this ſo great a benefit; ſignifying that he was very willing to be baptized; and then addreſſing himſelfe to *Daraxa*, in the preſence of their Majeſties, he intreated her to doe the like. *Daraxa*, whoſe eye was never off from her deareſt *Ozmin* (ſo hungry was ſhe in beholding him) ſhedding a few ſweet teares from her Roſie cheekes, directing her lookes & ſpeech vnto their

Majeſties,

Majeſties, ſhe told them, That ſince it was Gods will to inlighten their vnderſtanding, and by many tribulations, to bring them to the knowledge of his truth, ſhe was diſpoſed, and that vnfeignedly, and with a true heart, humbly to ſubmit her ſelfe therevnto, and to the obedience of their Majeſties, vnder whoſe protection and princely hands, ſhe repoſed both her ſelfe, and all that ſhe had. So anon after, they were chriſtened with a great deale of Ceremonie, naming the one *Ferdinand*, and the other *Iſabell*, according to that of their Majeſties, who as God-father, and God-mother gaue them their names at the Font. Within ſome few dayes after, their Nuptials were celebrated with a great deale of glory and oſtentation, many Preſents and other courteſies being conferred vpon them in that City, where they liued all their life-time, and left behinde them an illuſtrious and noble off-ſpring, which continueth yet to this day in much honour and reputation in their Country.

We went hearkening to this Story, with a great deale of Silence, being led on attentiuely with it, till we came within ſight of *Caçalla*: ſo that it ſeemed to haue beene meaſured juſt out for that journey; ſo truely did the one jumpe with the other. Howbeit, it was ſomewhat more inlarged by the Author, flouriſhed over with finer phraſes, and a different Scule, to that which I haue delivered vnto you.

Our honeſt Carrier, who remained mute from the beginning to the ending (which was no more then all of vs did) began now to finde a tongue, and was the firſt that opened his mouth. Alight (my maſters) quoth hee: For here I muſt leaue you: my way lyes along by this path. And with that he calls vnto me, Come hither, (my young Gallant) let vs make vp our reckoning before we part.

When I heard this, I was almoſt ready to hang my ſelfe, it was the bitterеſt draught, that ere went downe my throat. Is it e'ne ſo? (ſaid I to my ſelfe:) Well, let it goe: for I did verily beleeue, that all that paſt betweene vs, had beene in the way of friendſhip. Well, I diſ-mounted, and got not vp ſo lightly before, as I now came downe heavily: for I knew not in the world what anſwere to make him, ſaue onely to aske him, how much I was to pay him for the riding of nine Leagues? See what theſe Gentlemen giue, ſo muſt you. For your lodging & your diet, you are to pay me three Royalls more. The Vmbles of the Mule I now found to be deare meat vnto me (and that they ſtucke a little alſo in his ſtomacke:) but that which griev'd me moſt, was; That I had not money to pay for it. And therefore I came vnto him, and told him; My friend, Loe, here is your money for the reckning, ſo much you ſay is my part of the ſhot; but for my horſe-hire I owe you nothing; for you your ſelfe, without any intreatie of mine, deſired me to get vp, inviting me therevnto of your owne accord.

What a Devill (quoth he) meane you by this? Marry g'up with a murraine, you are a fine Gentleman indeed; doe you thinke to ride a cock-horſe on free coſt? you are a pretty Youth indeed. I repli'd vpon him; wee fall to ſcuffling; the Clergy-men interpoſed themſelues; they were to vmpire the buſineſſe betweene vs: They condemned me to pay for the meat of my Beaſt for that night. I did ſo; making an even reckoning with my purſe, having no more left me in all the world, but twenty *Maraueds*, to beare my charges that night.

The Muleter went about his buſineſſe; The Clergy-men, and my ſelfe, entred into *Caçalla*, where we take our leaue, every man betaking himſelfe to his owne way.

THE ROGVE:
OR,
THE FIRST PART OF THE LIFE OF GVZMAN DE ALFARACHE.

The ſecond Booke.

Wherein is treated, how he came to be a Rogue; and by being ſo, what happened vnto him.

CHAPTER I.

How Guzman de Alfarache, *going out of* Caſalla *towards* Madrid, *proues the quality and condition of a miſerable man; and vpon this occaſion gravely diſcourſes of the effects of Want, of Shame, and of Caſtles in the ayre: And how he came to ſerue an Hoſt; and of the wicked diſpoſition of ſuch kinde of men.*

THOV ſeeſt mee here in *Caſalla*, twelue Leagues from *Sevill*, vpon Munday in the morning, with my purſe pennileſſe, and my patience remedileſſe: and accuſed (as you haue heard) for a Thiefe, by way as it were of Prophecie, preſaging what I ſhould be hereafter. I ſuffered inough the firſt day I ſet forth; the ſecond, more. For my care increaſed and it rained downe hard vpon him, who was too wet already; one miſchiefe over-taking another. I had money lately in my purſe, and meate to put in my belly: and *griefes* (as the Proverbe is) *are the better over-paſt with bread.* It is good to haue a father, it is good to haue a mother; but to haue meate to put in a mans mouth is better then them both. The third day was to me, as it were, a day of death: for then I had my full load of miſeries: I found my ſelfe then like a leane Dogge, barked at by others; grinning with my teeth vpon all thoſe that came round about me; turning head againſt all, but not daring to bite any: my cares continued with me; with them, their barking: and having hedg'd me in, ſet all vpon me at once: but that which moſt troubled mee, was; That I had not where-

Los duelos con pan, ſon menos.

where-withall to ſpend, nor any meanes to defray my neceſſary expenſes. I knew then, what a * *Blanke* meant; and that he that doth not ſeeke to gather, doth not make any reckoning of it, nor know the worth thereof, till hee feeles the want of it. This was the firſt time that I look't that Hereticke *Neceſſity* in the face: I knew him then by his Character, but afterwards I did better conſider him by his effects. How many diſhoneſt actions doth it venture on? what cruell imaginations doth it repreſent vnto thee? what infamous things doth it ſollicite? what diſcordes doth it driue thee into? and what impoſsibilities doth it not attempt? I weighed alſo with my ſelfe, with how little our mother Nature is contented; and hauing giuen much to many, yet none of them reſt contented: all cry out, They are poore, publiſhing their wants to the world. O thou Epicure! O thou ryotous Glutton! thou lauiſh Prodigall! why doſt thou talke thus fooliſhly, that thou eateſt and ſwalloweſt downe ſo many thouſand Ducats yearely? Say rather, that thou haſt ſo much Rent comming in; and that thou keep'ſt it in thy hands, but not that thou eat'ſt it out: and if thou doeſt eate it out, why doeſt thou keepe ſuch a complaining? ſeeing thou art no more man, then my ſelfe, whom poore Lentils, dry Fitches, old Beanes, hard Peaſe, and Bisket that is fenowed and moth-eaten, keepes as fat and faire, as thoſe that haue daintier feeding. Thou wilt not tell me, nor canſt thou (I thinke) giue me a reaſon, what ſhould bee the cauſe of it. For my part I know not: but if ever thou haſt beene in want, or ſhouldſt (which is poſsible) be put to ſhift for thy ſelfe, & be driven to need and to lacke, thou wouldſt then be able to tell mee another tale. I wiſh no man that ill lucke, but onely lament mine owne misfortune. She is the Miſtreſſe to all things, a ſubtill Inventreſſe, by whom your Thruſhes, your Pyes, your Iack-dawes, and your Parrats are taught to ſpeake. I plainely began to perceiue, how Adverſitie makes men wiſe: in that very inſtant, me thought, I diſcouered a new light; which as in a cleare Glaſſe, did repreſent vnto mee things paſt, things preſent, and things to come.

Till this preſent I was a meere Cockney, and well might that name ſute with my breeding. For (as it is in the Proverbe) *Hijo de la viuda, bien conſentido, y mal dotrinado*: the ſonne of a Widow is well fed, and ill taught. I had many chips to be hewne out of me, and the firſt ſtroke of the Axe, was this trouble that did light vpon me; which did ſo wound the maine timber, and ſo touch me to the quicke, that I know not how to indeere it vnto thee. I ſaw my ſelfe abandoned, and ſo dangerouſly ingulphed, that I knew not where to find harbour, or to put into any port for to ſaue my ſelfe. My yeares were few, my experience leſſe, it being fitting, that they ſhould both haue beene greater then they were. And which was worſt of all, (knowing by manifeſt ſignes, that my ruine was neere at hand) beeing willing to aske counſell, I did not know from whom I might receiue it.

I entred into a reckoning with my ſelfe, and was making my Account; which I found to be wery bad; my charge was great, and my caſh ſmall: I was about not to haue gone any farther; for to goe on I wanted meanes, as I likewiſe did for to carry me home. I was aſhamed, being I was come away from thence, to become againe (as it is in the Proverbe) an Hindge to the doore; (which, howſoever that open or ſhut, it remaines ſtill in the ſelfeſame place) or to put my foot vpon our owne Threſhold, in the open ſight of my Mother, my friends, and my kinſfolke. God helpe me, how many, from that day to this, haue I ſeene to be vtterly vndone, and meerely out of this reſpect! I was (I ſay) aſhamed: how many Virgins haue left off to be ſo, and haue loſt their Maiden-heads, by thinking themſelues to be tyde in thankfulneſſe for a paper of Sugar-Comfits, and ſome Loue-verſes; or becauſe ſome vaine fellow had giuen her muſicke at her window, and made her fall in loue with him, by the helpe of another mans quality; with that very Song, which with a ſweet

* Blanca, *is a ſmall piece of money*, Lat. As, aſſis.

The effects of want.

Neceſsity the beſt Schoole miſtreſſe.

Adverſity makes men wiſe.

A poore mans account, to what a reckoning it comes.

To be aſhamed out of modeſtie to doe what is good, is a cauſe of great euils.

ſweet aire and gracefull voyce another ſung for him? How many block-heads (out of ſhame of denſall) haue entred into Surety-ſhip for others, & haue paid the debt, themſelues beeing vtterly vndone thereby; and the children (through the fathers folly) for want of maintenance, ſent to ſome Hoſpitall? How much money hath bin lent and borrowed, for the continuing of friendſhip and kindneſſe betwixt man and man; whereby in the end it ſo falles out, that he doth not onely loſe his friend, but his money too? Nay more, many times it ſo comes to paſſe, that he that parted with his money, hath not meat to put in his mouth, and is ready to ſtarue for want of food; and hee that had it of him, had ouer and aboue to pay him; and yet the other dares not aske it him, and all (forſooth) for that he is aſhamed to ſpeake to him.

Shamefaſtneſſe what it is likened to.

I would haue thee to know, (if thou knoweſt it not already) that Shamefaſtneſſe is like vnto a web in a Weavers Loome; if one thred be broken, it ravels the whole worke. In thoſe things, whereby hurt may ariſe vnto thee, and driue thee to narrow ſhifts, ſpoyle the worke, and breake the threds in ſunder, and I aſſure my ſelfe thou wilt rather thanke me for it, then thinke amiſſe of my counſell. And the inconvenience which thou muſt ſuffer, (having done that which is deſired at thy hands) let him ſmart for it that craues it, rather than thou, when thou haſt done it.

Good Advice.

For Modeſty and ſhamefaſtneſſe in ſuch a caſe, when it ſtands vpon a mans making or marring, is a thing that is onely proper vnto fooles. It is fit, that thou ſhouldſt haue a kind of modeſtie in thy ſelfe, not to do (no not whē thou art alone by thy ſelfe) any foule or ſhamefull act: but for any other, what knoweſt thou of what colour he is, or of what mettall hee is made? Free thy ſelfe from him, in that which ſhall neerely concerne thee; let him not tye thee vp like a Dogge, with a chaine and a clogge, behind the doore of thy ignorance: cut, or ſlip the Collar; get looſe, and runne away from him, as faſt as thy legges will carry thee. Onely be aſhamed to doe any thing (as I ſaid before) that is ſhame-worthy. For that which thou calleſt Modeſtie, is no better then meere foolerie: if I my ſelfe had not beene aſhamed, I ſhould not haue waſted ſo many ſheetes of Paper, as this volume containes, to acquaint thee with the Sad Story of my miſerable life: whereunto I might adde many more; but I now ride poſte, and muſt haſten away, promiſing to deliver vnto thee farre greater things concerning my life, if God ſay Amen.

Modeſty, when to be vſed.

Shamefaſtneſſe in ſome things, is notable ignorance.

I tell you it would haue grieved me very much to haue returned home without a Cloake, eſpecially having come forth with one vpon my backe. Nor was I willing to be laught at, (which they could not chooſe but doe) to ſee what a ſingle-ſole Gentleman I was, and how like a naked cottage I lookt, or a bare wall without hangings: Beſides, I made it a point of ſhame, and ſtood much vpon it. And that having put on a reſolution at my departing, it had beene puſillanimity in me, and baſeneſſe of mind, to haue had but ſo much as a bare thought of returning backe againe. I thought, I ſhould never haue the like occaſion againe, (though I thinke, never any man but my ſelfe, played ſuch an idle tricke) and therefore when I was once on my way, it ſtood not (me thought) with my reputation to hang an arſe, and to pull that foot backe, which had already ſet it ſelfe forward: I made it a matter of ſhame, which turned afterward to my vndoing; but am not now aſhamed to ſpeake this as boldly, as I did vnder-goe it fooliſhly: for ſuch another Aſſe as I, was there never.

The good old Hoſteſſe ran ſtill in my minde, who; I make account, will fall ere long into my hands; whom, if it be my chance to light vpon, I beleeue ſhe ſhall not get from me with her Kerchiefe on her head: I will make her walke with her haire about her eares, and throw her (Sir-reverence) in the durt. I haue water enough in ſtore for her, to ſet her vp to the chinne: I am reſolved to be revenged on her, by treading on the very necke of her, and ſetting

ting my foot on her old withered wind-pipe, throwing her firſt to the ground as thou wouldſt throw a Diſh-clout.

Would to God (thou paltery proud Boy, thou vnruly young man and thou ſenſeleſſe old Aſſe) that I had either then vnderſtood, or thou didſt not know, what manner of thing Shame is, what point of honour and reputation, conſidring the great diſorders that thou doeſt, and the idle courſes that thou runneſt.

I ſaid with my ſelfe, my Reputation lyes vpon't; my Honour is ingaged; I muſt and will goe on, my truſt is in God, and I hope he will not faile me. Having thus ſet vp my reſt, I reſolved to paſſe forward, with purpoſe to make a journey to *Madrid*. For there was the Court, where was all the braverie and gallantry of the world, nothing to bee ſeene, ſaue Roſes and Lillies great plenty, and abundance of all things, with many Knights of the order of the golden Fleece; many Dukes and Grandes of *Spaine*; many men of Title; many Prelates; many Knights of the Habit, with many principall Gentlemen of extraordinary ranke and quality, and aboue all, a young King newly married.

I thought with my ſelfe, becauſe I was a handſome young Lad, vvell ſhap't, and of ſome reaſonable good faſhion in my behaviour, that they would haue gone together by the eares for mee, ſtriving who ſhould haue me away with him. O how many things did preſent themſelues at once vnto me! How farre, in this ſimplicitie of ours, are our deeds, from our thoughts! What made diſhes; what hot, what cold, what boyld, what roſt? For it is eaſier to thinke, then to doe. Buſineſſes may be ſoone conceived, but they are not ſo eaſily effected. Both which in my imagination I thus paint forth vnto thee.

It is eaſie to think on a thing, but hard to bring it about.
How both theſe are painted.

To thinke vpon a thing, I ſuppoſe to bee like vnto a pretty little Boy, riding vpon a Hobby-horſe, with a Winde-Mill made of paper, which hee beares in his hand vpon the top of a Cane, or ſome little ſticke, that comes firſt to hand. But to bring that thing to paſſe, I liken that to an old man, bald-headed, weake-handed, lame-legged, who leaning on two Crutches, goes to the ſcaling of an high wall, that is ſtrongly defended. Haue I ſpoke too much? I ſay it is no leſſe. For things oftentimes ſeeme to bee well diſpoſed of in the night, when the Candles are out, and all is darke, taking counſaile with our pillow: But the Sunne no ſooner appeares, but they vaniſh away in an inſtant, like thinne clouds in the heat of Summer. He that could haue ſeene mee, when I made this account, might eaſily haue perceived with what care, and breaking of my ſleepes, I framed theſe things in my thoughts. But they were Caſtles in the ayre, and fantaſticall *Chimera's*, and had ſcarce put on my cloathes when I had put them all off againe, and throwne them from mee. I plotted many things, but none of my projects did hit right, but fell out croſſe, if not quite contrary to what I had propoſed. All was vaine, all lies, all illuſion, all falſehood, and deception of the imagination, and like (*a*) *Duendes* Treaſure, all cold embers, and dead coales.

Pillow Counſell proveth vaine.

Now, I goe onward on my way, and having gotten me a ſhort Cane in my hand, in ſteed of a walking Cudgell, me thought, all the while I had that, I had my (*b*) Cloake on my backe; but it did neither doe me that credit, nor keepe mee ſo warme, as that would haue done. Onely it ſeru'd me to vnder-prop mine arme now and then, whileſt I gaue breath to my weary legges.

As I was trudging along, a couple chanced to overtake mee travelling that way on their Mules: I thought with my ſelfe, Could I now hold out luſtily, and keepe company with them, they could not in kindeneſſe but pay my charges. But *Peſcar con* (*c*) *Maço, no es renta cierta.* To fiſh with a Pole,

(*a*) Duende, *is one, of the ſpirits that fell with* Lucifer. Teſoro de Duende: *Or* Duendes *treaſure, we ſay to be that Eſtate, or Wealth, which is all conſumed and gone, and a man knowes not how, being vaniſhed like a ſpirit,*

(*b*) *A* Plimmouth *Cloake.*

(*c*) Mazo *is properly a Mallet wherewith Carpenters driues their Chizell.*

a Pole, is no certaine rent. Nor, is it to thinke, and to be wiſe, all one. They are two differing things. They had never a boy betweene them, to goe along and looke to their Mules; they did not ride very hard, though their hearts (as I afterwards found) wery very hard towards me. They rode gently inough, but they were cruell-minded men. Their pace was ſofter then their bowels, for any compaſſion that was in them.

To ſute this with an Engliſh Proverbe, I know not.

I jogg'd ſtill along, and kept cloſe with them, and when wee had gone ſome three Leagues, or there-abouts, it vvas neere about Noone. My heart-ſtrings were ready to breake with trotting and galloping after them, becauſe I would not be caſt behinde. For, though their gate were caſie, yet it put mee (conſidering my youth and vveakeneſſe of body) to the height of my ſpeed. Theſe were men, or rather beaſts in mens ſhape, for they ſpake not a word. And I beleeue they were monſtrous covetous; and ſome there are that are ſo neere, that they will not part with their ſpittle, if they knew it would ſerue for a medicine. Theſe miſerable wretches would not exchange ſo much as one vvord with mee, becauſe they vvould not helpe mee (if neede had beene) with ſome intertainment on the way.

Had they entred vpon ſome Diſcourſe, or told mee ſome ſuch ſtory, as did my honeſt Clergy-man, I ſhould not haue beene halfe ſo weary as I vvas, For Good company, (whereſoever wee chance to light vpon it) is a kinde of meate and drinke to the Soule: it cheares the hearts of Travellers; it recreateth their mindes; it refreſheth their bodies; it makes them forget their wearineſſe; it riddeth the way; it eaſeth our griefe; it expelleth melancholly; it lengthens mans life, and by a particular priviledge that it hath, it makes horſe-men of foote-men. Wee came in together into the Inne vvhere vvee were to bait; but I in that caſe, that there was but little difference betwixt mee, and one that is dead, I was e'ne quite out of heart, and cleane tyred out. But that I might get mee a morſell of bread to put in my mouth, I vvas forced to buckle vp my ſelfe, to beſtirre my ſtumps, to lay aſide all ceremonies, and to forget to ſtand vpon my points. Moreover I ſtrayned my ſelfe beyond my ſtrength; humbled my ſelfe more then ſtood with my nature; applyde my ſelfe to wait vpon them, to put their Mules into the Stable, and to carry their luggage into their lodging. They were ſound and luſty, and had their healths about them, but I had got the plague by meeting with them. For at the firſt daſh, one of them ſayes vnto mee; Stand aſide (my yong Gallant) get you gone, wee haue no need of your ſervice.

Good Company, what effects it worketh.

O Traytors, enemies to God (thought I to my ſelfe) how vncharitably doe theſe men beginne with mee? what hope can I haue from them, that they vvill giue mee victuals; or if I ſhould faint on the vvay, that they would take pitie of mee, and ſet mee vp behinde them? They are ſet downe to dinner: I ſtood right over againſt them, but ſomewhat aloofe off, thinking they vvould haue beene ſo tender-hearted, as to afford one bit or other from their trencher: but I fell ſhort of my hopes.

There came thither at that time a *Franciſcan* Fryer, who vvas on foote, and all in a ſweat. Hee ſate downe to reſt himſelfe, and anonafter, puls me out of his Wallet (which hung on his left ſhoulder) a Loafe of Bread, and a piece of Bacon. I was ſo horrible hungry, that I could ſcarce ſtand vpon my legges, or fetch my breath, ſo faint was I growne for want of food.

But not having (white-Liver'd Whore-ſonne, as I was) the courage (out of a daſtardly kinde of baſhfulneſſe) to ſpeake vnto him to relieue my want: I lookt pittifully vpon him, and beſought him vvith mine eyes (which is a good dumbe eloquence) that he vvould giue mee a bit of ſomething for Gods ſake.

The good Fryer, who read my petition in my lookes, (vvith all the haſte he could make, as if his life had lyen vpon the ſpeedy doing of it,) ſayd; Bleſſed

The Franciſcan Fryers Charity.

ſed be God, Though I ſhould want my ſelfe; yet ſeeing thee in that neceſſity thou now art, I would rather go without my ſelfe, then to ſee my poore brother lacke.

Take this (my pretty boy) quoth hee; and much good may it do thee. O to ſee the wonderfull goodneſſe of God, the eternall Wiſdome, the divine Providence; the infinite mercy, which in the bowels of a hard ſtone doth ſuſtaine a poore ſilly worme, and provide it food, and filleth all things living with his heavenly bounty!

They that were able and had wherewithall would not (out of meere coveteouſneſſe) giue me ſo much as one crumme from their table: and what reliefe I could not draw from them, by all my ſerviceable indeavours, I had from this Mendicant, this poore beggerly Fryer, onely for Gods ſake, and out of meere charity, ſeeing in what extremity I was *Quien proprias neceſſidades no tiene, mal ſe acuerda de agenas.* Hee that never knew what want meant, hath little feeling of another mans miſery. Mine was before them, they ſow it, and with it my tender yeares, and that I had almoſt broken my heart, having ſpent and tyred out my ſelfe to keepe company with them; yet were they not ſenſible of my wearineſſe, tooke no pitty at all of mee, nor did commiſerate my wants,

My good honeſt Fryer, did freely ſhare his victuals with mee, wherewith I fill'd my belly, and was vvell ſatisfied. If that good man, as hee went towards *Sevill*, had beene to goe my way, hee had ranſomed mee from my miſ-fortunes, and had made mee a happy man: but wee were to runne a contrary courſe, and to take ſeverall wayes: yet when hee vvas to goe his way, the good man (I ſhall ever call him by that name,) gaue mee halfe a Loafe that hee had left, and bid mee fare well, telling mee, thou muſt content thy ſelfe (my child) with this; had I more, more ſhouldſt thou haue.

I put it in the lyning of the lappet of my Iacket, and faire and ſoftly ſet forward on my way. By that time I had gone three Leagues more it was night, then did I ſupper my ſelfe vpon my bread, without any other meate in the world; nor was there any other that would giue mee ought elſe to eate.

It was the Carriers day, and ſome of them Inned there: Mine Hoſt of the houſe bid mee go in, and ſleepe vpon the Straw, I did ſo. and paſt over my travell as well as I could, being poore and needy, and muſt doe as I might, ſeeing I could not do as I would.

I had made a light Supper, (vvhich you may well beleeue without an oath) for I did not riſe the next morning with a full ſtomacke. But when I was about to depart and ready to leaue the Inne, my Hoſt comes vnto mee, and demands a *Quarto* of mee for my lodging, I had it not, and therefore could not pay it him: the cunning Rogue had a great deſire to haue ſtript mee out of my Iacket, which was of very good cloath.

A hard-hearted Hoſt.

When I ſaw I was put to this ſtreight, and that hee vvas ſo eager vpon mee, my eyes vvere brimme full, and ready to runne over with vvater. One of the Carriers tooke pity of mee that was there, (for they are not all Blaſphemers, and fellowes that haue no Soules) ſtept in betweene vs, and ſayd, Mine Hoſt, Let the poore Boy alone, I vvill pay it for him. His fellowes askt mee; Sirra, whence are you, and whether goe you? Hee made anſwere for mee, that had payd for mee. What vncivill people are yee to aske him that queſtion? Is that ſo hard a matter to be knowne? you may eaſily gueſſe, hee is runne away either from his Father, or his Maſter.

All Carriers are not Knaues: ſome haue Soules to be ſaved.

Mine Hoſt then ſayd vnto mee; how ſayſt thou my Boy, vvilt thou take vvages, and dwell with mee? As things then ſtood vvith mee, mee thought it vvas no bad bargaine; yet it ſeemed harſh vnto mee, that I ſhould now learne to ſerue, who from my child-hood, had beene taught to command.

mand. I told him I vvould. Get you in then (quoth hee) and reſt you heere, for I will not imploy you in any other ſervice then the Stable, for the delivering out my (a) Strawe and my Barley, and ſee that you keepe a good account, and ſcore vp truly what every man takes, that neither you, nor they may be miſ-reckoned. Take you no care, Sir (quoth I) I ſhall do it to a hayre.

(a) *They haue little Hay in* Spaine, *and no Oates at all. Their ordinary feeding for Horſe, is chopt Straw, and Barlie.*

And thus I remained there a while, having victuals vvithout allowance, and feeding (as they ſay) vpon free-coſt; and for my vvorke, that vvas rather a ſport vnto mee then otherwiſe, and holpe well to paſſe away the time. For till thoſe nights that the Carriers came, there vvas little or nothing to doe; as for other ordinary Paſſengers; it vvas not a trouble, worthy the talking of. There I learned to ſteepe Barley in warme water, to make it increaſe a third part, and to giue falſe meaſure; I had the cunning ſtrike of the hand; I knew how to ( )hollow it with mine arme, and to runne over the Mangers; and if any man did put mee in truſt to looke to his Beaſt, and to giue him his Provender, I vvould be ſure to coozen him of one third part of his meaſure. Some of my Yongſters vvould come in now and then very neately, in their trickſie ( )Garters, and their trimme Mouchato's, as ſpruce as could be, carrying the ſhow of Gentlemen, but the Divell a Page or Lackey that they had to attend vpon them. It vvas good holding the Baſon to theſe: they are your onely *Dons*, to indure a fine Shaving.

(b) Hincar el pulpejo.

(c) Mancebilletes de ligas y vigotes.

With theſe, wee droue a good Trade. For wee came vnto them, and taking charge of their Hackneyes, wee did ſet them vp in ſuch places as vvere appointed for them, where they had the remaines of that the others had left, which went for one halfe of their allowance; and the other halfe they were preſently ſupplide with (though but bad meaſure;) but vvhen they came to pay, we gaue them a reckoning for the whole. And into the bargaine wee had our Hens, and our Pigges, if not now and then the Foale of an Aſſe, that did helpe to ſhare with them. For bountifull natures, and mindes that are magnificent, never ſticke for trifles, nor offer to ſtand for ſmall matters; ſo that wee had all that wee could aske, and they never made any more bones of the matter. Our mouths were the meaſures, never vveighing the ſet prices of things, nor the Sizes ſet downe in the Proclamation, nor what the Iuſtices had ordered in that kinde, which vvere formally hung vp in every Inne, with a particular taxe to every thing there ſpecified. For thoſe are never kept, and therefore made little or no reckoning thereof at all. Onely they are ſet vp there at our doores, to the end that the *Alcalde* and the (d) *Eſçrivano* may licke their fingers, and receiue ſome monethly profit from the fees belonging therevnto. And to take occaſion to ſee, vvhether they had fixed vp the *Cedula* or no, with purpoſe to picke a quarrell vvith them, if they neglected the doing thereof, and ſo made them pay ſoundly for it. For the Stable, it is already well knowne, what every Horſes allowance is, and how much it comes to a peece, both for their ſtraw, their Provender and their Standing. For the Kitchen, that vvas ſport alone to vs, it made vs all merry, for wee were quicke vpon that call to come in, and nimble, (as having learned our leſſons afore-hand) in the bringing in of our reckoning. So many * *Ryals* (Gentlemen) and ſo many *Maravedis* miche yee God diche you, and you are hartily welcome. Being ever ſure to reckon rather a *Ryall* over, then a blanke vnder.

Magnanimus non curat de minimis.

(d) *The Notary.*

* *A Maravedi, is the thirty two part of a Ryall, which is ſixe pence.*

Many (like good wiſe men as they were) would never examine the reckoning, but lay downe their money preſently, ſaying, Lo (my friend) ther's your due. But ſome freſh-water-ſouldiers, that were but Novices and yong Travellers, plants of the firſt Leafe, would aske vs wherefore? How can it come to be ſo much, &c? But this was but to cut their owne throates, and to make vs to

inhaunce the reckoning the higher; for when they once put vs to that jumpe, (beſides the rayſing of our price in the generall) we did alwayes finde a tricke to adde ſome thing, though it were but for the boyling of their [a] *Olla*, and ſuch like toyes, ſo that by this time there was money wanting to make vp the full reckoning, which they were forced to pay in the end, by way of fine or amercement for their folly. For had they (like others) taken their payment quietly, they had not beene ſo ſoundly laſh't. For you muſt vnderſtand, that the word of an Hoſt, is a kinde of definitiue Sentence; there is no appealing from it, but to the Purſe. Nor is it ſwaggering or roaring that can ſerue the turne; your bravings will little benefit you; for your Hoſt's for the moſt part, are a company of old Catch-pooles, dogged Curres, who out of a ſcurvie condition that they haue, will with a ſtill mouth hunt dry-foote after you, till he come to ſome good Towne, and then hee will bawle vpon you (like olde Cryer) and when he hath ſet you vp, will accuſe you to the Iuſtice, That you would haue ſet his Inne on fire, or that you did baſtonado him with a Cudgell, or that you would haue forced his wife, or his daughter; and onely that hee might do thee a miſchiefe, and be revenged vpon thee. Beſides wee had ſome Lures in our houſes to catch fooliſh birds with-all, and had ſome ſhewes of proviſion for poore Travellours; which were ſuch, that no man that had come into the Inne a foote, would haue ſtayed to goe forth a horſe-backe: if thou chance to forget thy ſelfe, and to leaue any thing behinde thee, giue it thy good word, vnleſſe thou haue the better lucke; for it ſhall be layd vp ſure inough for thy finding.

What ſhall I tell thee of the theſts, the tyrannies, the impudencies, and the villanies, that dayly paſſe in your Innes and Victualling-houſes? There is neither the feare of God, nor his Miniſters amongſt them: and for matter of Iuſtice, either there is none at all to be had againſt them, or elſe they take part with them: But God forbid, that wee ſhould beleeue any ſuch things of them, for it is not to be ſuppoſed that your Iuſtices will be corrupted: But be it ſo or not ſo, take it as you will, the remedy thereof was a matter of no ſmall importance. For it is a thing worthy the following, that many Wainmen, and thoſe that go vp and downe with Carriages, do refraine their Trading, through the great expence and charges of your Innes. Trafficke ceaſeth every where, out of the feare that they haue to be bitten by your Hoſts, and Victuallers, who receiue good payment for evill vſage, profeſſing a kinde of publicke theft.

I haue beene an eye-witneſſe of ſeeing many things touching theſe kinde of inſolences; vvhich to deliver, would require a large diſcourſe. And ſhould wee heare the like amongſt Barbarians, wee ſhould cenſure them accordingly; and yet when wee ſee the ſame here at home before our eyes, we are not moved therear. But I ſweare vnto you, that [b] the mending of the high wayes, the repayring of Bridges, and the reforming of Innes, is not that which requires leſſe care, then matters of greater moment, in regard of commerce and trafficke. Howſoever, when I ſhall leaue this houſe, I haue not farre to goe.

CHAP.

[a] Olla, *is a pot or Pipkin, wherein fleſh & other things are ſod, by the Figure* Metonym. *The* Olla *is taken for that which is boyled in it.*
Olla podrida, *is a very great one, containing in it diverſe things, as Mutton, Beefe, Hens, Capons, Sawſage, Pigges feete, Garlike, Onions, &c.*
It is called Podrida, *becauſe it is ſod leaſurely, till it be rotten (as we ſay) & ready to fall in pieces.*
And it is therefore tearmed Podrida, *for that it is like fruite that is over-ripe.*
Andreas Bacius, *A Roman Phiſician, in his booke* de natura Vinorum, *ſayes; That* Olla Podrida, *is the ſame as* Poderoſa: *To wit, powerfull by reaſon of its greatneſſe, and the variety of the things contained in it.*
In Engliſh it may well beare the name of Hodge-podge.
Covaruvias, verb. Olla.
This Olla *is in* Spaine *the commonſt meate of all other, and in moſt eſteeme. They eate the meate firſt, and ſuppe vp their* Caldo *or broth afterwards.*

[b] *Profitable conveniences for Travellours.*

CHAPTER II.

How Guzman de Alfarache *leaving his Hoſt, went begging to* Madrid; *and comming thither, how hee ſet himſelfe to learne to play the Rogue, and to beare a Basket; where by the way he diſcourſeth of Hunger, of Beggerie; and of Honour which hurteth the ſoule.*

THIS being too lazie a life for mee, I did not like it halfe well; and the leſſe, for that it did not ſort to my purpoſe. For I vvas no better (to ſpeake the beſt of it) then an Inne-keepers Boy, which is ſome-what worſe then a blind-man. I had a minde to be a Traveller, and thereon had ſet vp my reſolution, and therefore would not, (though it had coſt mee a thouſand liues) haue beene found there in ſuch a baſe Office, as that was. There did daily paſſe by the doore many haggard-Hawkes, young wandring Lads, much about my yeares and growth; ſome with money in their purſe, others begging an almes for Gods ſake: wherevpon I ſaid to my ſelfe, What a devill ayles mee? or what ſcurvy mettall am I made of, that I ſhould be more cowardly, and baſer-minded then other men? in that I am not ſenſible, how much I wrong my ſelfe; and that of faint-heartedneſſe, and like a Craven (as I am) ſhould ſtoope to picke a poore living, out of ſuch a dung-hill kinde of life, as this? Herevpon I tooke heart vnto mee, and ſet a good face on the matter; and ſo bidding mine Hoſt God b'wy, I went forth to ſeeke my fortune, carrying ſome Copper-money along with mee, gotten in a good warre; and ſome other lawfull purchaſes that I made: but my ſtore being ſmall, it was quickly gone. When all was ſpent, I fell a begging: ſome would giue me an [a] *Ochauo*; but moſt would ſay vnto me, Pardon me (my Boy) I haue not for you.

With this poore *Ochauo*, and other his fellowes, I did eate now and then with a *gaudeamus*, according to my gettings: but this Pardon mee (my Boy) I haue not for you, did me no good in the world: I might haue ſate downe with a *pereamus*, for any comfort that I found in it. Charity was very cold, and it was no marvell; for it was a deare yeare, and there was a generall ſcarcitie throughout the Kingdome. And if there were a dearth in *Andaluſia*, how great then muſt the want be in the Kingdome of *Toledo*? and farre greater in the In-land. Then I heard that Proverbe verified, *Librete Dios de la enfermedad que baxa de Caſtilla, y de hambre, que ſube del Andaluzia*, [b] God deliver thee from the Plague, that comes downe from *Caſtile*, and from the Famine that comes vp from *Andaluzia*.

Now, becauſe I found begging to be but a poore Trade, and all thinges elſe at exceſsiue rates; food and rayment being deare commodities, I grew ſo out of heart therewith, that I reſolved to follow that occupation no longer, though my wants ſhould be never ſo great. Herevpon, I was minded to make the beſt I could of thoſe Cloathes that I had on my backe: then I began to vnbinde the Booke, and to divide it into Leaues: that is, to ſeperarate one thing from another, that all might not goe away at once; ſorting my clothes into ſeverall parcells, conſuming one piece after another, till all was gone; ſelling this, chopping that, and pawning the other, till I had not a ragge left.

So that when I came to *Madrid*, I look't like one that had newly come from the Oare, or ſome gentile Rower returned lately from the Gallies, I was

Guzman *reſolues to part with his Hoſte.*

Guzman *falls a begging.*

a Ochauo, *is a kinde of braſſe-money, whereof two make three farthings.*

b *When there is a plague in Caſtile, the infection is generall. And when there is a famine in* Andaluzia, *the dearth is over all the Land.*

Guzman *leaues begging.*

what ſhift he makes to liue.

Guzman *comes to* Madrid; *and in what kinde of faſhion.*

ſo lightly clad, having nothing on but a Canvas paire of Breeches, & a courſe Shirt;& that none of the cleaneſt, but as foule as foule might be; all to tatter'd and torne, and ſo rotten with age, that it was ready to fall from my backe. And this I was forced to doe, to keepe life and ſoule together, and all little enough to ſerue the turne.

Seeing my ſelfe thus out of reparations, and all to be rent and torne; howbeit I ſought after Service, thinking to winne credit with my good words, no man would truſt mee the more for my faire tongue, but grew rather jealous of my evill conditions; in ſo much that I could not meet with any that would giue me entertainment, admit me into his ſervice,or ſuffer me to come within his doores, becauſe I was without a Cloake, and ſo naſty in my other cloathes; that out of a very loathing, they were able to turne a mans ſtomacke. They did thinke, that I was ſome roguiſh little Thiefe, and that if they ſhould take me in, I would filch ſome thing from them,and betake mee to my heeles when I had done.

Seeing my ſelfe in this deſperate ſtate, counting my ſelfe, as it were a loſt man, I began to follow the Trade *de la Florida Picardia*, exerciſing all your Cony-catching trickes, knaviſh prankes, fine feates, with ſleight of hand,and whatſoever Rogueries come within the compaſſe of that prowling office. The ſhame that I had to returne home,I loſt it vpon the way;for travelling afoote as I did, it weighed ſo heavy, that I was not able to bring it along with me: or perhaps, they that ſtole my Cloake, carried it away with them in the Cape thereof; and this is ſure the likelier of the two. For ever ſince that time I haue beene troubled with a lazie kinde of yawning, and a * Fever-lordane, which did prognoſticate the Diſeaſe I ſhould be ſicke of to my dying day. A Pockes vpon ſhamefaſtneſſe, which hung ſtill vpon me, and yet I haue none of it; for I began to free my ſelfe from that irkeſomeneſſe, and that little ſhame that was left me, I turned into Impudencie: for Hunger and ſhame could never yet be made friends. My former Modeſty (I confeſſe) was meerely out of my ſhallowneſſe of wit,and now I finde,that it was even then a fooliſh kind of Simplicity. And in thoſe dayes, I plaid the childe,as others of my age doe: but now, like a Vyper, that hath ſtung mee vnawares by the hand, I haue ſhak't that Vermine from off my fingers ends. I fell in with other Taffel-gentles, much about my ſize and pitch, that were high Flyers,and cunning in the catching of their prey. As I ſaw them doe,ſo did I,as well as I could: but becauſe I was but newly entred, and was not yet come to that true flying, to ſeize the Partridge in foote, I did aſsiſt them with my beſt indeavours, refuſed no paines, followed their ſteps, and walked their ſtations; whereby I came to picke vp my crummes, and to gather a few Blankes together. Thus I ſayled vp and downe, fetching my boords to and fro, ſtill ſounding as I went along, to ſee how many fadome I was off from the ſhore, and what new Countrey was vpon diſcovery.

I could now hunt for my ſupper, as well as the beſt of them, and knew certainely where to haue it; but I was to take heed, that I playd the true Clock-keeper: for if I fayled of my houre, (eſpecially at your Monaſteries, and Religious Houſes) and did not truely keepe the due time, limited and preſcribed by them, I was ſhut out, and left in the darke: ſo that I had now learned the faſhion, to ſhew my ſelfe a mannerly Gueſt, by ſtaying rather for others, then that others ſhould ſtay for me. This loytering kinde of life was not without it's cares; and as idle as it ſeem'd to be,it was painfull enough vnto mee: for, while I led this Roguiſh life, I learned to play at Cock-All, at Handy-Pandy, and at Nine-holes: from theſe I went a Forme higher; I knew how to play at Noddy, One-and-thirty, Quinolas, and Primera: in a ſhort time I profited ſo well in theſe my ſtudies, that I paſt on to the vpper Forme. I could cogge a Dye handſomely, and if I had good lucke, all was mine owne, (eſpe-

* *The Spaniſh word is* Calofrio: *Lat.* Paroxyſmus, frigus ſimul & calorem inducens: & nomen habet à calido & frigido.

Hunger and Shame, mortall enemies.

Guzman *begins to turne* Picaro.

Need is a diligent Waiter.

(eſpecially if I met with weake Gameſters.) Nor would I change this life of a *Picaro*, this roguiſh life of mine, for the beſt that any of my Anceſtors ever ledde.

I had a moneths minde to the Court; and I went daily refining my wit; I ſet a new edge vpon my vnderſtanding, and enriched my braine with new Philoſophie. And ſeeing others of leſſer worth then my ſelfe, to grow from a little, to a great deale of wealth; and from meane beginnings, to come to mighty matters, and to eate their bread without begging, nor expecting it from others hands, (which is the bread of ſorrow, and the bread of bloud) yea though it ſhould be beſtowed vpon thee by thine owne father: out of a deſire that I had to attaine to this glorious liberty; and that I might not (as many others) be puniſhed as a Vagabond, and runne the cenſure of a wandring Rogue, I applyed my ſelfe to carry ſuch burdens, as my weake ſhoulders were able to beare.

Bread of Sorrow, what it is.

The Fraternity of Aſſes is a great Brother-hood; for, even men haue beene willing to be admitted into this Company; and haue beene glad to yeeld themſelues to carry vncleane and heavy Loades, with as much patience, as the ſillieſt Aſſe aliue, as if they had beene borne for no other end, but to eaſe them of their burthens. Now, if men are growne to that baſeneſſe, that they will quitte the Aſſe of his Hamper, and clap it on their owne backes, onely to gaine an *Açumbre* more of Wine, that they may drinke the freelier, when they haue done their worke: ſee in what ample manner their aſsiſtneſſe extendeth it ſelfe; what a ſtrong hand it hath in the world, and to what a mighty Corporation it is now growne.

a Açumbre is a Iarre or Pitcher, containing about a Pottle, little more or leſſe, and is one mans allowance in wine. The Açumbre we divide into foure Meaſures, called Quartillo's. It is an Arabicke word. All things are hard in the beginning.

But to let this paſſe, I confeſſe vnto thee, that I was ſome-what cold in the matter at the firſt, and fell to it with an ill will; but aboue all, I was wonderfull fearefull: for being a thing that I was never vſ'd to before, it ſuted ill-favouredly with me at the firſt, and worſe afterwards, when I was entred into it: for all beginnings haue their difficulties; and are not ſo eaſie at the firſt as they ſeeme to be: but after I had taken a relliſh of this Roguiſh life, and found the ſweetneſſe of it, I could tread the true Tracke of it, and was growne ſo perfect, that I could haue gone blind-fold to my worke, and not haue ſtept a foote out of the way.

What a fine kinde of life was it, what a dainty and delicate thing, without Thimble, Thread, or Needle; without Pinſers, Hammer, or Wimble, or any other Mechanicall Inſtrument whatſoever, more then one onely bare Basket; like vnto thoſe of your Brethren of the Order *de Anton Martin*, (though vnlike to them in their goodneſſe of life, and ſolitary retiredneſſe) I had gotten me an Office whereby to liue: and ſuch a kinde of Office, as ſeemed to be a bit, without a bone; a backe, without a burthen; a merry kinde of Occupation, and free from all manner of trouble and vexation?

I did often thinke on the life that my Parents led; and that, which I had made tryall of in this ſo ſhort a time; as alſo, that which they had vndergone to ſo little purpoſe, and to their ſo great coſt. O! (ſaid I to my ſelfe) what a burthen is the weight of Honour? And what mettall is there, that can equall it in poyze? To what a world of inconveniences, is that man liable, who is driven to make vſe of it? How warily, and how circumſpectly muſt he goe to worke? What a deale of care, and ſudden paſſions, come vpon him? What high and ſlender ropes muſt he runne vp and downe vpon? Thorow how many thouſands of perills muſt he ſaile in this vaſte Ocean? Into what infinit troubles muſt hee thruſt himſelfe? And amidſt how many Brambles, and Buſhes, and pricking Thornes, muſt he im-bryer, and intangle himſelfe withall, and ſcarce get out of them, without leaving his fleece behinde him, if not his skinne? What a thing is it, that my honour muſt be ſubject to the mouth of the diſſolute, and to the hand of the indiſcreet and vnadviſed

Honour, what a burthen it is.

man? The one by word, the other by action. Againſt which, all the wit and force of man is not able to prevaile, nor to turne that vnruly tyde, when it ſhall breake in vpon vs. What phrenſie of Satan, what malice of the Devill was it, to marry this foule Abuſe vnto Man, which is able to make him run mad, and irrecouerably to loſe his wits? As if hee did not know, that Honour is the Daughter of Truth. And ſee how much a man is Vertuous, ſo much is hee Honorable, and no more. And it is impoſſible, that my honour ſhould be taken away from mee, as long as my Vertue remaines with mee, which is it's proper Centre. Onely mine owne Wife may take away mine honour from me (according to the opinion of *Spaine*) by taking away firſt her owne: for ſhe being one and the ſelfe ſame thing with my ſelfe, my Honour and hers are one, and not two, as being but one, and the ſame fleſh; and whatſoever ſhall be ſaid in the contrary, it is but ſcurrility, meere wit and invention, and the idle dreames of a fantaſticke braine. Happy is that mans life, that neither knowes what Honour meanes, nor ſeekes after it, nor hath any thing to doe with this Titulary toy.

True Honour is the Daughter of Truth.

The Honour of a mans Wife, what it is.

I was ever of the minde, that if that man that pretends Honour, ſhould but truely open his eyes, and looke vpon it without partiality, conſidering (not carried away with paſsion) the effects thereof, hee would not ſtoope to take it vp; nor touch that with his hand, whoſe burthen muſt either breake his backe, or make him ſinke vnder the weight thereof to the ground. O how troubleſome a thing is it, firſt to get it? how difficult afterwards to keepe it? how dangerous to hold, how eaſie to loſe, as depending on the common eſtimation and opinion of men? But if it relie vpon the Vulgar, and that be the proppe that muſt vp-hold it, it is one of the greateſt torments that Fortune can giue, or man ſuffer in this life, who deſires to end his dayes quietly, and to paſſe his Carreere peaceably, without being croſſed in his Courſe. And albeit men plainely perceiue, that this which I ſay is true, and they ſee the experience thereof daily before their eyes, yet they vvill not ſticke to hazard their liues; nay to giue their very Soules for it, as if that ſhould ſaue them another day.

What the Honour of the Vulgar is.

Thou think'ſt it no honour vnto thee, to cloath the naked, to feed the hungry, nor to exerciſe (as thou oughteſt) thoſe good deeds, that belong to thy function, and many other thinges, which I know, and am ſilent in; and thou knoweſt them to thy ſelfe, though thou doeſt diſſemble them; thinking that others perceiue it not, and that thou carrieſt thinges cloſely, when as indeed thou danceſt but as it were in a net, and all thy actions lye open to publique view, which my pen ſhall omit to ſet downe, that I may not point them forth vnto thee as it were with the finger, and whereof perhaps, vvhen I ſhall haue delivered thee my minde, thou wilt make no more, if not leſſe reckoning of it, then of a blaſt of winde, or puffe of ſmoake, that preſently vaniſheth, and is no more ſeene.

Chriſtian Honour what it ought to be.

Canſt thou thinke it an Honour vnto thee, that the Hoſpitall ſhould be maintained with the droppings of thy Tap, and the Scraps of thy Kitchen, (when there is not a Dogge, that waites at thy Trencher, but fares better?) Canſt thou thinke it an honour vnto thee, that thy Mules ſhould haue their Linnen and their Woollen cloathes, whileſt Chriſt (in his members) dyes out of very cold, not having wherewith to cover his nakedneſſe? Canſt thou thinke it an honour to thee, that thy Horſes ſhould be as fat as their skins can hold, that they are even ready to burſt againe with the fulneſſe of their feeding, while the poore fall downe at thy gate for want of foode, their weake legges not being able to ſupport their hunger-ſtarved bodies? No, thou canſt not. And I preſume, the practice of every good Chriſtian is farre otherwiſe. And this is that honour, which every man ought highly to eſteeme, and may juſtly ſeeke, and hunt after it. But that which thou calleſt honour, may

more

more properly be termed *Pride*, or fooliſh eſtimation, which makes men fall into a *Hecticks*, and *Ptyſicks*, and with a canine appetite to catch greedily at that Honour, which is no ſooner had, then loſt. And not onely that, but with it the Soule; (which is a thouſand pities) which every good Soule ought to avoid, and bewaile.

CHAP. III.

Guzman de Alfarache *goes on in his Diſcourſe againſt vaine* Honours: *Where by the way he offers vnto Mans conſideration, what manner of perſon hee ought to be, how to beare himſelfe in his Office, and to governe himſelfe in thoſe high places, whereunto he is called.*

ALbeit, (as being then but a Youth) and newly (as they ſay) crept out of the ſhell, this being the firſt flight that ever I made, I had runne thorow many miſeries, and ſuffered much want, yet I paſt them all ouer as eaſily as I could; imagining ſtill in my minde, that *Honour* is like vnto your early fruits, that are ſooner ripe then the reſt, and brought firſt into the Market, which though they bee exceſsiue deare & not to be had, but at a high rate, and vnmeaſurable prices; yet all doe equally buy them, & pay alike for them, even from him, that hath a purſe to beare it, as from him, that hath not the like abilitie. What a great preſumption and ſhame is it, that a poore Husband-man ſhould buy halfe a pound of your firſt Cherries that come into the market, which may chance to coſt him the price of ſo much bread, as would very well ſerue to ſuſtaine himſelfe, his Wife, and his Children? O holy Lawes, and O happy Kingdomes, that ſhall put a bridle to this abuſe, as a thing tending to the generall hurt of a Commonwealth! For (there being no reſtraint in that kinde) they buy and eate thereof without limit, or moderation, never growing weary of buying, nor glutted with eating: Which too timely or rather vntimely fruits, breed no good nutriment, corrupt the bloud, cauſe raw concoction, and ingender evill humours, which afterward, pay their bodies with ſound Agues, ſharpe Fevers, ſtrange *Paraſiſmes*, and other the like grievous and painefull infirmities.

Honour, how pretily it is heere compared.

I ſweare by the faith of an honeſt man, that ſuch a devouring of Honour, will coſt thee more then one purge. I was never ambitious in this kinde, never greedy of this honour, never gaue it a good looke, ſince I firſt knew it; eſpecially, when I ſaw Pages, Serving-men, and Prentiſes forſake their old Trades, to follow new courſes, and to get themſelues into ſome odde Office, or other, as farre repugnant from their nature, as heat, from cold, and as much differing from their diſpoſition, as heaven is diſtant from the earth. Yeſterday, thou wouldſt haue ſent thy Servant to one of theſe fellowes, to will him to come to thee, and when he had come, given him an *Ha*, or a Nod, or a plaine (*a*) *Vos*, which was as much, if not more, then he deſerved. And now that he hath got but an Office vpon his backe, hee ſends the next day for thee by a Porter, when thou muſt ſue and intreat that hee will be-friend thee in ſuch a buſineſſe, and ſtand with cap in hand, crowching vnto him giving him the Worſhip with a Sir-reverence at every word, beſeeching him, that his Worſhip would be pleaſed to doe you this or that favour.

Honour ill placed vpon ſome.

(*a*) *Counted a diſgracefull word in* Spaine. *As if heere in* England *we ſhould in ſcorne. Thou a man.*

Tell me is not that true of this man, which is ſpoken of that proud Bird the Peacocke, who t' other day having ſcarce ever a feather to cover his nakedneſſe, doth now boaſt his ſilken plumes, and ſpread abroad his golden traine? If this be true, it muſt likewiſe then follow, that when this painted puffe ſhall haue his tayle pluckt, all his gilden feathers, and rich imbroyderies

ties taken from him, which natures richeſt hand hath ſo curiouſly wrought; if any miſ-fortune befall ſuch a man, and that he once come to be ſtript of his honours, downe goes his goodly traine, and his plumes beeing pull'd from him, is juſt the ſame man, as he was before.

Touching Honour, and the honoured.

And if you ſhall but weigh and conſider this thing well, you ſhall find ſuch men as theſe, not to bee men of Honour, but men honoured; for they that are truely honourable, haue their honour from, and in themſelues, and no man can ſo pill and pull their feathers, but that freſher and goodlier plumes will come vp a-new in the place, and be more glorious to looke to then before.

But the honoured, that receiue their honour from another, one while you ſee them; another while you not ſee them. So long as the merry moneth of *May* laſteth, ſo long are your flowers freſh and faire to ſee to: As theſe flowers, ſo are thoſe favours, which the Favorite receiueth from the Prince, or perſon that favours him. They ſoone fade; they had but their time, and thats gone, and they with it: And then they returne to be the ſame men they were before.

Whileſt the ſap is in the bough, it is greene and flouriſheth; but when it goes backe into the the roote, it dyes and withereth for the time. So it ſtands with our Favorite; his Honour flouriſheth like the greene Bay-tree, while his Princes favour ſhines vpon him; but when hee calls this in againe vnto himſelfe, as the tree doth the ſappe, and it returnes to the roote from whence it came, his honour is nipt in the head, and is no better (if not much worſe) then he was before his riſing. So haue I ſeene ſome men mounted on high, imployed in great affaires, and to haue held great places of Dignity and honour in the Common-wealth, which might haue beene put into the hands of Gentlemen of approved good judgement, and excellent parts, and thought themſelues happy, if they had beene conferred and beſtow'd vpon them.

A reprehending of thoſe that are Sots and Dolts, and yet ſeeke after Offices, and places of great preferment.

To theſe men I haue call'd, as I haue lyen in my bed, and cryd out vnto them: How now (my friends) whither away goe ye with theſe Offices? Who (if they heare me) might very well anſwere: I vow to God, I know not my ſelfe: I thinke they are therefore given vs, that we ſhould make our profit of them, feather our neſts, and in-rich our ſelues, as well as we can. But thou doeſt not conſider (wretched as thou art) tha tthe burthen which thou beareſt, thou neither truely vnderſtandeſt, nor is it properly belonging to thy profeſsion: and that in loſing thine owne Soule, thou overthroweſt withall another mans buſineſſe, and art bound in conſcience to make him recompence, for the wrong thou haſt done him.

Doeſt thou not know, that there belongs more to the diſpatch of buſineſſe, and deciding of differences betwixt party and party, then there doth to the ſowing of a Garment, or the ſhearing of Cloth, or to lend ſuch a Gentlewoman your arme, when you Vſher her along the ſtreetes; which grace ſhee vouchſafes to afford thee, for that hands ſake, which did advance thee?

Peradventure thou maiſt haue beene askt the queſtion, or thy ſelfe mayſt perhaps haue made ſome ſecret ſcrutiny in thine owne boſome, whether thou didſt finde thy ſelfe of ability and ſufficiency to performe thy charge; or whether thou hadſt the knowledge and vnderſtanding to doe things well and handſomely, without wronging thy Conſcience, going thy ſelfe to hell, and carrying him along with thee, that did conferre thy Office vpon thee? But ſome babbling fellow here-abouts, which I ſuppoſe to be ſome one Barbers man or other, (for they are commonly a kind of Climacterical and dangerous prattlers) will giue me this ſhort anſwere: We can. It is a ſtrange thing to ſee the humours of ſome men. Conſider with me (for Gods ſake) what buſineſſe hath with it ſo many trickes, ſo many ſhifts, and ſo many difficulties, as this is? We are all of vs men, (the beſt of vs are no more) and when

when the wheeles are once ſet a-worke, wee imagine, they muſt goe well inough of themſelues, without any care, or looking to of ours. O what a pitie it is, that thou ſhouldſt then begin to learne an Office, when thou ſhould'ſt come to vſe it! O what a griefe, to ſee a mans practice out-runne his knowledge! he being as vnfit for the Place, as the place for him.

The Pylot is fearefull of gouerning his Ship, (not only in tempeſtuous weather, but at all times, even in the calmeſt Sea, and faireſt Seaſon; by reaſon of thoſe ſudden accidents and various caſualties, which hourely, nay, every minute may befall him) although he be his Art-maſter, & throughly vnderſtands, what he hath to doe vpon all occaſions. And thou, which never ſaweſt the Sea, waſt never taught thy Compaſſe, nor knowſt what belongs to the Art of Navigation: Wilt thou, I ſay, venture to ſteere a Ship, and ingulph thy ſelfe, thou knowſt not whither, nor into what danger? What wouldſt thou thinke or ſay, when thou ſeeſt a Boy fumble on the Citterne, and when hee ſhould come to play before thee, not to be able to ſtrike a true note? what a tearing would this be to thine, or any other muſicall eare? O how harſh would it ſound? And yét all this while, thou doeſt not, or wilt not perceiue, that when thy ſelfe commeſt to vnderſtand thy Place, or to thinke, that thou vnderſtandeſt it (which is the truer of the two) for want of knowledge, thou haſt not onely loſt that, but thy Lords loue together with it, and the time which thou haſt ſpent, and nothing left to comfort thee withall, but the fooleries, which thou haſt committed therein. Follow thine owne trade, and exerciſe thy ſelfe in thoſe things, thou well vnderſtandeſt, thruſt not thy Sickle into another mans Harveſt, and meddle not with thoſe things, that are fitter for others, then thy ſelfe. But this is not ſo much thy fault, as of theſe that thruſt it vpon thee, who haue more, then thou, to anſwere for it: it is a Commutation that lyes heavily vpon the Conſcience. But to proceede.

Even now but to day, haue I knowne theſe kinde of men, meane, poore, and miſerable creatures; on the morrow after, they haue riſen vp in a ſtrange faſhion, vtterly vnknowne vnto me (like him that dyes his Beard, or being old and ſtrooken in yeares, growes to be young againe,) exalted, and ſet aloft, looking bigge vpon the matter, expecting to haue the firſt Cap, and to be firſt ſaluted by thoſe, whoſe ſervants they might will haue been, and that in meane and baſe offices, and yet haue thought it preferment good inough for them. I knew very well, which way he would goe, that led the daunce, & whence this violence did proceed, by altring things, and putting them out of their due courſe, thruſting out the naturals, to bring in ſtrangers. I likewiſe was not ignorant, that thoſe that did murmure and repine thereat, had good reaſon ſo to doe; for by giving vnto every one, that which of right belongeth vnto him, the gall of Envy and Malice is thereby broken and ſplit in ſunder. For it is an eaſe to the ſicke ſtomake of a ſtate, when Offices ſeeke men, and not men Offices, whence great ſcandall and infamie doth ariſe. For by how much the more high Places make them to be knowne, that doe not deſerue them, by ſo much the more they make the owners of them to be contemned and deſpiſed. And theſe vndeſerved dignities, goe not away without their payment. For as they are an affront to thoſe that hold them, when they are vnworthy of them; ſo they ſuffer diſhonour in themſelues, by being conferred on ſuch vndeſerving perſons; Leaving him likewiſe, who did beſtow them, ſubject to Infamy, Detraction, and Obligation to make ſatisfaction to the State, for the wrongs occaſioned thereby.

Heere I alight, and make a ſtand, ſhutting vp my conceit within it's bounds, that it may not ſtraggle to farre. This ware I ſell you as mine owne, and recommend it vnto you for good, vnleſſe you vnder-value it for the ſeliers ſake. And I muſt needs confeſſe that this off-ſpring of my braine is worthy a better father. But doe thou diſpoſe of it, and compoſe it, according as thy

thy ſelfe ſhall thinke fit, by amending ſuch faults as thou find'ſt amiſſe. And though it be a beggars Brat, and the ſonne of a Rogue, yet conceiue withall, that we are all men, and haue all of vs vnderſtanding; and that *El habito no haze el Monge*: it is not the Coule, that makes the Fryer. Yet in this, as in all things elſe, I ſubmit my ſelfe to thy cenſure, and am willing to receiue thy correction.

Cucullus non facit Monachum.

Now by this time, thou knoweſt my weakeneſſe, notwithſtanding I would haue thee to know, that there was not that day went over my head, wherein I did not runne over my beades; beſides other devotions that I did. And although I heare thee murmure, that it is a common practice amongſt Theeves and Ruffians, to haue their [a] *Roſario* ſtill in their hand, faining themſelues to be very devoutly affected towards our Lady: Thinke, and ſay what thou wilt, I care not a ruſh, for I deſire not thy good opinion, nor ſeeke to winne any credit from thy mouth. Euery morning, the firſt thing that I did, was to goe to Church to heare Maſſe; that being done, I afterwards began preſently to caſt about, how I ſhould ſpend that day, for the getting of ſomething to ſuſtaine my ſelfe withall, and to keepe me from ſtarving.

[a] Roſario. Las cuentas para rezar. *Latinè* Sphæruleæ, Præcatoriæ, Corona.

I once remember, that having layen ſome-what long a-bed, and finding my ſelfe not halfe currant, I thought it not fit, that day, to take paines for my living: it was a Feſtivall-day, and to Church I went, vvhere I heard high Maſſe, and a very good Sermon by a learned *Auguſtine*, vpon the fifth Chapter of S. *Mathewes* Goſpell, where it is ſaid; *Let your light ſo ſhine before men, that thy may ſee your good workes, and glorifie your Father which is in Heav'n*: where by the way, he beſtowed a little ſprinkling vpon your Clergie-men, your Prelates, and ſuch as were beneficed: telling them, That they had not theſe great Rents given them for nothing; that they were to looke rather vpon the greatneſſe of their charge, then into the greatneſſe of their Revenew; and that theſe good things were not conferred vpon them, to fill the belly, and to cloath the backe, and to waſte and conſume theſe good bleſſings of God in vnneceſſary idlements; but in feeding the poore, and cloathing the naked, and in deſpenſing to the needy, and thoſe that are in neceſsitie; over whom God had ſent them as Stewards, and no otherwiſe; or to ſpeake more properly, hath appointed them his *Adminiſtrators* ouer this his *Hoſpitall*. And that in putting this Steward-ſhip or Adminiſtration into their hands, it was more particularly throwne vpon them, then any other, as on men of all other the moſt to be truſted, and (by reaſon of their Profeſsion) leaſt intereſſed in the World: mercifull-minded men, wholly retired from the world, and from thoſe confuſions which accompany it; to the end, that with the more care, and the leſſe trouble, they may apply themſelues to this Miniſterie, wherewith they vvere in-truſted.

A Diſcourſe vpon the 5. of Ma.

Clergy-men charitably reprooved of their faults.

Would to God they would open their eyes, and looke to whom they giue, hovv, and on what they doe diſtribute it; for it is anothers money, and not their owne, vvhereof a ſtrict account vvill be taken of them. Let them not therefore abuſe the truſt, that is repoſed in them; God never ſleepeth; he is ſtill awake and ſeeth all our Actions. Nor will it boot them to vſe trickes and devices to defraud him but in a Farthing, or to coozen him of the leaſt Mite. For as it is the gaine of *Iudas*, ſo ſhall they receiue *Iudas* his reward. He ſaid in generall, that their manners and behaviour ſhould bee like vnto the Lanterne in the Admirall, to the reſt of the Fleet, by vvhoſe light, all the reſt of the Ships ſhould ſteare their Courſe, and ſtill haue an eye vpon it, vvithout troubling themſelues in other worldly affaires, and matters of profit to their purſe, which is contrary to their Profeſsion, and to that obligation, whereunto they are bound by Gods Word, which cannot lie.

What manner of men Church-men ought to be.

I remember very well, I did then call to minde a certaine friend of my fathers, how ill he diſpoſed of that which he had got, and the ill example which he

he left behinde him: this was his end; and with this the Preacher ended.

Many other excellent good things did he vtter to this purpose, and ſtrongly confirmed what hee delivered with forcible reaſons; which for the indecencie of my profeſſion, I willingly ſilence; nor is it fitting for a man of my faſhion to make mention of them.

Guzmans *miſerable condition*

That night my ſickeneſſe increaſed vpon me; my bed was none of the beſt, nor much ſofter then a piece of an old Matt, that is full of holes, and throwne vpon the dung-hill, as good for nothing. The cattell went grazing on the humane paſture of my miſerable corps; I awaked with their nibling, fell a ſcrubbing, and finding no diſpoſition in my ſelfe to ſleepe, I made a repetition of the whole Sermon to my ſelfe; as one that vnderſtood very well, that albeit his ſpeech tended more particularly towards Church-men, yet it did in the generall appertaine vnto all; from the Myter to the Crowne; from the moſt powerfull Prince, to ſuch a poore Caytiffe as my ſelfe. Lord be merciſull vnto mee, I began to thinke with my ſelfe, that this did as well concerne mee as them: and that I was a kinde of Some-thing; that I had a ſoule to ſaue as well as they; and that there was ſome reckoning to be made of mee too. Then I began to examine my ſelfe, What light am I able to giue to others; or how can it be had, much leſſe, ſhine in a man, whoſe office is ſo vile, and ſo baſe as mine? Yes (my friend) quoth I: and it belongeth alſo vnto thee, and therefore I ſpeake it vnto thee; for thou likewiſe art a member of this myſticall Body, equall with the greateſt in ſubſtance, though not in quality. Beare thy burthens well and faithfully; make not your Vintage out of other mens Grapes; do not nimme and purloyne by the way; conveying from the Baſket to the Breeches, into privie Pockets, and falſe Linings, that which is none of thine. Doe not ſhrinke the ſhoulder, as if thou hadſt the dead weight of Plate vpon thy backe; and do not thou moue as ſlowly, when thou halt but two Loaues to carry, as when thou art laden with two beames, or maine pieces of Timber.

Every man, even the meaneſt, is bound to be vertuous, and to haue a good conſcience.

Make a conſcience of thy gettings; be moderate and temperate in thy gaines; not demanding more then thy labour is worth: vſe all men well, but beſtow thy paines on the poore for nothing; offering that freely, as thy firſt fruits due vnto God. Be not diſhoneſt, be not vitious, be no glutton, nor no drunkard: call thy conſcience to an account, be ſure to keepe a true ſcore and reckoning with it: for, in ſo doing (like that poore old woman in the Goſpell) thou canſt not want the comfort of lifting vp thy heart, and thy eyes vnto Heav'n, ſaying; *Bleſſed be the name of the Lord.* For even in *Rogues* there is ſome vertue, ſome ſparke of goodneſſe; and this in thee ſhall be thy Light.

What poore Porters that carry baskets, and the like burdens, ought to do.

But in my judgement, both now and then when I heard the Sermon, (that we may returne againe to our former conſideration) what he ſpake (beſides that which concernes the Clergy and the Communalty) had eſpeciall reference vnto Princes, and their miniſters of juſtice, whereof I ſhould haue ſpoken when I made this my Digreſſion. Theſe are truly ſayd to be the Light, and in that ſacred Chapter-houſe, or in the greateſt part thereof, all is Light, more and more Light ſtill, to the end (to leaue them the more inexcuſable) that they may not alleage hereafter, that they had not any Light at all. Conſider with mee that the light ought to ſubſiſt (as the agent) in ſome ſubject (as the Patient) whereon to worke. As for example, in the Waxe, be it Torch, or any other thing whatſoever. I ſay then that when any ſuch kinde of perſon, be it another, or be it thy ſelfe, ſhall repreſent himſelfe, as a Light vnto mee, thy good workes, thy faire behaviour, thy civill carriage, thy zeale, thy holineſſe of life, it that which makes thee to ſhine, and to giue Light vnto others. What thing is it then, thinkſt thou, to haue an Office throwne vpon thee, or ſome great dignity or other? It is, a putting of Waxe to this Light, to

Light, how it ought to be in thoſe that beare Office.

Rules for him that gouernes others.

to make it ſhine the more: but tell mee then, what is the office of the Light? It is to go with his heate, drawning and ſucking the Waxe ſtill towards him, that it may burne the brighter, and maintaine it ſelfe the better. Even ſo muſt thou doe with thy Office; thou muſt drinke it in, as it were, and incorporate it into this Light of thy vertues, and honeſt courſe of life, that all men may ſee it, and imitate it, bearing thy ſelfe ſo vprightly, that prayers may not moue thee, teares may not ſoften thee, gifts may not corrupt thee, menaces may not daunt thee, anger may not ouer-come thee, hatred may not diſturbe thee, nor affection deceiue thee. Againe, which offers it ſelfe firſt to our ſight, the Light, or the Waxe? You will grant mee, thee Light: if ſo, then to behaue thy ſelfe, that thy Office, which is the Waxe, may be ſeene after thee; and that the Office may be knowne by thee, and not thou by thy Office. It often ſo fals out, that the Waxe is much, and the Light is little; whereby the Light comes to be drowned and quenched in it; as in caſe the Torch ſhould be great, and the Weke ſmall. Other times it happeneth, that the Light is turned down-wards; and ſo by melting the Waxe aboue, it is preſently extinguiſhed and put out.

Officers compared to the Light, and to Waxe.

Bad Officers, and their evill effects.

So wee ſee, that the good in thy ſelfe is ſo little, and the Office which thou art put into, is ſo farre beyond the meaſure of thy Merit, that that little Light thou haſt, is ſmothered on the ſudden, and ſo thou remaineſt in darkeneſſe. Other-whiles, thou turneſt theſe thy vertues towards the ground, by inclining thy ſelfe vnto evill: for thou doſt make thy Office to melt as it were at the top, and to waſte and conſume its light, by thy robbing, by thy coozening, by thy over-commanding, and contemning the poore: vſing in his Cauſe, delayes; in that of the rich, all poſſible ſpeede: with the poore thou deal'ſt rigorouſly; with the rich, gently and mildly: on the one thou frowneſt, on the other thou ſmileſt: the poore thou proudly trampleſt vnder thy feete; but the rich thou ſaluteſt with Cap in hand; boweſt thy body, vſing him in all the reſt, with a great deale of loue and kindneſſe. And while this is in doing, Death comes on thee vnawares; it ſeizeth ſuddenly vpon thee, thy life is quickly at an end, but thy damnation remaineth for ever. Others there are, who (as I ſayd before) draw Light from their Office; and whereas they themſelues ought to be the Light, they are indeede but the waxe. Would'ſt thou know the condition of theſe men, and what they do? I will tell thee: What I pray, is the property of Waxe? To go by little and little, wearing and waſting away; haling the Light violently after it ſelfe, till they both go toppling out, vaniſh away at laſt, and come to nothing. Iuſt ſo is it with theſe kind of men; they liue in that manner, (hiding their Lights vnder a Buſhell, concealing their good Works, and burying all Vertue and Goodneſſe in them) that they make no vſe of it, nor eſteeme it: onely they eſteeme the Office, which they haue made their Light: this they go forcing, as it were by violence, they tugge and hale it vnto them, that they may incorporate it into themſelues, that they may reape their profit by it, skimme the Creame from it: and not onely that, but to draw away its very heart-blood. And ſo by little and little, together with it, they themſelues likewiſe conſume away. Ill they liu'd, and ill they dye: as was their life, ſo was their end. What doth hee thinke with himſelfe, that ſuffers himſelfe to be made VVaxe, when hee taketh from one that which is his right, or that which hee juſtly deſerveth, and doth transferre it on a foole, or ſome vnworthy perſon, whom hee hath a deſire to pleaſure? Shall I tell thee what becomes of this man in the end? He melts and drips away like VVaxe, not knowing how nor what way hee comes to be conſumed: his health decayes, his honour diminiſheth, his wealth vvaſtes away, his friends faile him, his wife, his children, and his kinsfolke, are taken from him by Death; on whom as on the proppes of his houſe, leaned all his pretenſions, hee is ſwallowed vp with Melancholy, as it were in a graue, or

God puniſheth evill Officers, and in what manner.

ſome

ſome deepe pit, yet knowes not the cauſe why, nor whence it ſhould proceed. But the cauſe (my friend) is, that theſe are the whips of God, wherewith hee ſcourgeth them temporally in this world, in that part which ſhall paine them moſt, beſides that which hee reſerveth for their farther puniſhment, in the world to come. And his divine Majeſty, for the comfort of the righteous, is willing that thoſe, that do diſſolutely ſinne by doing publike and open wrongs, contrary to all right and reaſon, ſhould be corrected in the ſight of men and in the open view of all the world, to the intent that they may magnifie him in his juſtice, and draw conſolation vnto themſelues from his mercy, which is alſo made knowne in the chaſtiſement of the wicked.

Wouldſt thou liue in health? wouldſt thou be cheerefull, and merry? wouldſt thou continue free from thoſe diſturbances, which might giue thee cauſe to lament? wouldſt thou abound in riches? and leade a contented life without melancholly? Take then this rule of mee; Make thy dayly account with God, confeſſe thy ſelfe vnto him every day, as if that very day thou wert to dye.

A good leſſon for thoſe that deſire to liue well and happily.

Let juſtice be obſerved by thee in that manner, as it is defined and ſet down vnto thee, giving to every man that which is his due: Eate of the ſweat of thine owne browes, and not of the labours of other men; and to this end, ſtore thou vp ſuch riches, as are well and truly gotten; ſo ſhalt thou liue contentedly, ſo ſhalt thou be happy, and every thing ſhall proſper and thriue with thee, and all ſhall goe well with thee and thine.

In good ſooth I am halfe afrayd, that this conſideration of mine hath ledde mee on a little too farre, where-into I haue ſo farre thruſt in my foote, that I had neede of ſome helpe to pull it out. I haue launched out too much into the deepe, and ingulphed my ſelfe before I was aware. I haue almoſt loſt my ſelfe in this buſineſſe, in dilating vpon this point, and ſhould runne out much more at randome, if I ſhould goe about to tell you, why, and how, ſome of theſe things, are thus and thus carried, whether out of private intereſt, or affection, or paſſion, &c. But I will be ſilent, all ſhall be huſh with mee; for I will not (in theſe tongue-controlling dayes) that the Law take hold vpon mee. *Secreta mea mihi:* My ſecret I will keepe to my ſelfe; I will locke it vp cloſe in mine owne boſome: beſides, good and diſcreete ſilence is counted a holy thing: Though in that which I haue ſpoken, I acknowledge my exceſſe, and confeſſe I haue (with the Cobler) gone beyond my Laſt, this being a point of doctrine fitter to bee diſcuſſed by a *Preacher* then a *Picaro*. Theſe barkings will require better mouth'd Dogges. Let them ſtretch out their throats, and yawle alowd, that they may diſcover the theeues.

Why Preachers refuſe to reproue ſinne, and to cry out againſt it.

But alas, it may happily or rather vnhappily be,
that they haue their mouthes ſtopt with
a cruſt, which makes them to
hold their peace.

Chap. IV.

Guzman de Alfarache *delivereth a learned and witty Diſcourſe, conceived by himſelfe, againſt the Vanity of* Honour: *touching by the way vpon the Vice of Servants, of Shop-keepers, of Notaries, of Proctors, of Iudges, of Artificers, of Apothecaries, of Phyſicians, and of Lawyers.*

I Haue made a long and tedious digreſſion, and am vvell witting thereof to my ſelfe. But I would not haue thee make it a matter of wonder; for the neceſſity that enforced mee therevnto, was very great. And if two or more hurts meete in one and the ſelfe-ſame body, it is good diſcretion to ſuccour the more important, not being vnmindfull in the meane while of the leſſer. So doth it often occurre in Warre, and in all other things whatſoever. I aſſure thee by the faith of an honeſt man, that I am not able to tell thee, which of the two were the greater, either that which I did let alone, or that which I tooke in hand, conſidering how much both of them imported, and of what conſequence they were. But let vs redeeme the Pawne that ſtands ingaged, add returne againe to our former matter, following the purſuite of that Diſcourſe, of whoſe footing, wee haue found the pricks already.

It was my hap one day to beare in my basket, (which I brought from the Shambles) a quarter of Mutton, for a certaine Hoſier, or Gentleman Taylor. I had by chance at that time about mee, certaine olde (a) *Coplas*, or Ballads, which (in a kinde of broken tune) ſtill as I read this or t'other line, I fell a ſinging, as I went along. My good Maſter having (as it ſhould ſeeme) liſtned vnto mee, look't backe on the ſudden, and ſmiling, ſayd; How now (my tatter'd Raskall) a pox take you for a ragga-muffin, can you reade, you Rogue? Yes marry can I, Sir, (quoth I) I thanke God, I can reade reaſonable vvell, but my writing is better then my reading. Sayſt thou mee ſo, Boy? And with that hee intreated mee, that I would teach him to write his name, or to make ſome marke, that might ſerue for a ſubſcription, or vnder-ſigning (hee cared not which) for either would ſerue his turne. I pray Sir (ſaid I) what good can this do you? What can you benefit your ſelfe, by having learned to make a bare marke, and no more? Mee thinkes you ſhould haue no great vſe of that alone, vnleſſe you could write too. Yes marry haue I, Sir (quoth hee,) for I haue much worke goes through theſe hands, of ſuch and ſuch great men, I make all the cloathes their children weare (and there by the way, he reckons me vp a bead-roll of theſe and theſe Lords) and therefore I would very faine, (if I knew how) learne to write my Name, or to make my Marke, that (if occaſion were offered) I might not be taken for an Aſſe, and ſay (like a foole as I am) when I am call'd to ſubſcribe, indeede, Sir, you muſt pardon mee, I cannot write. And ſo this buſineſſe broke off as abruptly, as it began. And I making a large *Soliloquium* and meditation to my ſelfe, went on a good while with the ſame after this manner.

(a) Coplas, ſon cantos que venden per las calles, y en las plaças los ciegos.

A Taylor would faine learne to write his name or to make his firma or marke. And the reaſon why?

Honour, what kinde of thing it is.

Here (*Guzman*) thou ſhalt ſee what a kinde of thing Honour is, ſeeing it is conferred on ſuch as theſe: It is the ſonne of Nothing; the Child that knowes neither father, nor mother; the Earth's off-ſpring, being raiſed out of the duſt thereof; it is a fraile Veſſell full of crackes, of flawes and of holes, vncapable of containing any thing in it, that is of any moment or worth. Favour hath endeavoured to mend this broken Bucket, and to ſtop the Leakes thereof with clouts and with ragges; and puttting therevnto the rope of private intereſt, they now draw vp water with it, and it ſeemeth to be very beneficiall and profitable unto them. It is one of *Peter* the Taylors ſonnes, whoſe father,

Honour compared to baſe perſons.

father, howſoever he got it, were it well, or were it ill, made a ſhift to leaue him ſomething to liue vpon. Or like vnto that other, who by ſtealing from others, got wherewithall to giue, and wherewith to bribe, and ſuborne. Theſe are the men that are honoured now adaies, they ſpeake high language, and vtter arrogant words, and preſſe into all your great Aſſemblies, and principall meetings, as if they were the onely men, and none but they. Theſe now take the vpper hand, ſit downe firſt, and take place of all men, whom heretofore you might haue ranked amongſt your Muletters, or ſcarce ſo good men as they.

Behold, how many good men haue with-drawne themſelues from the Court, and liue a private and retired life at home? How many habits of S^t *Iago*, *Calatrava*, and *Alcantara*, ſowne with white thread? How many of the ancient Nobilitie of *Zayn Caluo*, and *Nunno Raſura*, troden vnder feet? *The more rich, the more honour.*

Tell me I pray, who is that that giues honour vnto ſome, and takes it from other ſome? Marry, it is more or leſſe wealth. O what a braue Canon is this, to qualifie a man? what an excellent Rector, what a learned Schoolemaſter? How diſcreetly doe they graduate a man, what a good examination doe they take, before they preferre any? Tell me once more I pray: What difference is there in their Obligation, betweene him that commeth fairely (as thou ſaidſt before) by an Office; and him that buyes an Office, whoſe money onely (without any other merit) hath inthroned him in the *Sancta Sanctorum* of the world? Whence comes it to paſſe, that the man that is diſcreet, noble, vertuous, well deſcended, of a ſound and ſober judgement, long practice, and more experience, a true Maſter of his Art, ſhould (by being deprived of his due preferment,) remaine poore and needy, ſhut vp in a corner, excluded from buſineſſe, afflicted, and peradventure inforced to derogate from his owne worth, and to doe that which is not agreeable to his diſpoſition, that hee may avoyde the incurring of a worſe inconvenience? Thou haſt put too hard a taske vpon me, conſidering that ſlender ſatisfaction, that I am able to giue thee. But I ſhall tell thee, according to my talent, and as the poorenеſſe of my vnderſtanding ſhall giue me leaue.

When I conſider thereon, as a thing properly appertaining vnto God (whoſe judgements are inſcrutable, and hidden both from men and Angells) I ſhall not intermeddle, or ſtraine my ſelfe any farther therein, then the ſhortnes of my apprehenſion ſhall be able to reach vnto. Which is; That he very well knoweth, how to proportion his gifts, and to giue vnto every one ſo much as is needfull for him, for his ſalvation. And therefore when a man ſhall faile of ſuch or ſuch an Office, or miſſe ſuch or ſuch a preferment, God ſaw it was not ſo fitting for him, for cauſes beſt knowne vnto himſelfe, or for that hee fore-knew that it would be a meanes to worke his condemnation, whom hee is willing to ſaue, becauſe he hath predeſtinated him to a better place. *Gods ſecrets concealed from men*

And this is as much as can be ſaid concerning him, who doth not obtaine that, which he deſerveth. But for that Favorite, or Perſon of Power with his Prince, that ſhall either be a blocke in this mans way, or ſtrippe him of the Office that he worthily holdeth, who is not a Iudge of the inward intentions, nor of the hearts of men, neither is able to examine them; but muſt goe vpon truſt, and make his judgement by externall and outward thinges, (which hee can onely ſee and know) doth often-times tread awry, and pervert and wreſt thinges to an ill ſenſe: If it may be lawfull for vs to ſpeake in a ruſticall phraſe; applying the language of heaven, to that here on earth, I ſay, that vpon the margent of this great mans Account, God doth (as we vſe here to doe, when we will marke a thing the better, and looke more narrowly into it) ſhut one of his eies, to make his ſight the ſurer, when he mindes to hit the marke hee aimes at. I ſay then: I will demand of theſe men, what cauſe they had to doe this wrong, knowing that my threatnings are out againſt them? O yee Iudges

of the earth, becauſe ye haue judged vnrighteouſly, I haue prepared for you a hard and inſufferable puniſhment: I will reſide in the Synagogue of the gods, and I will judge them. O, what a griefe is it, how many thouſands of pitties, that theſe men (knowing this to be true) will adventure to come before that vpright and true Iudge, when the Accuſation is certaine, which is brought in to condemne them; and the reſtitution now wanting, which they ought to make; without the which, their ſinne cannot be forgiven them; and yet would not, when time ſerved, take order to make amendment for ſo foule a fault!

True it is, that paradventure there were not ſome wanting, that would whiſper them in the eare, and ſay; Sir, you may doe this very well, and not ſinne, it is not a thing that ought to trouble your conſcience, you did well, (which is no more then every wiſe man would doe, were he in your place) in beſtowing this Office, on that kinſman, that acquaintance, that friend, or ſervant of yours, which are neereſt vnto you. But (to ſpeake the truth) thou couldſt not doe it; for thou didſt remoue it from it's right place, and put it into that, which was vnfit, and improper for it. Looke over thy Cardes a little better, thinke well on this buſineſſe, and then thou wilt tell me (my friend) that it was an errour in thee, and that thou couldſt not doe it; And becauſe thou couldſt not doe it, thou didſt ſinne; And becauſe thou didſt ſinne, it was not well done. Doe not liſten to the words of fooles, nor of flatterers, in a thing that concernes thee ſo much as this doth: it were better for thee, that thou wouldſt gird vp thy loynes, and looke vnto that which may doe thee hurt, and ſeeke in time to prevent it, leſt the remedie come too late. For there are ſome Confeſſors, that will giue large Abſolutions, who are like vnto Taylors, who will tell thee, that the garment which they haue made for thee, fits thee very well; but thou knoweſt better then they, whether it wring thee or no, whether it be too ſtreight, and vneaſie for thee, and how it ſitteth to thy body. And God doth permit, becauſe thon didſt not ſeeke after one (whil'ſt thou waſt living, and in place of authoritie) that ſhould tell thee the truth, at the time of thy death, when thou art in thy laſt agonie and anguiſh of ſoule, thou ſhalt not meet with that true friend, that ſhall then tell it thee, but rather ſooth thee vp to thy condemnation. Looke about with thine eies, open wide thine eares, and ſuffer not theſe buſie Bees of Satan, to put honie into them, nor there to ſwarme and in-hiue themſelues. For theſe their ſweet words will but leade thee on in the high and ready way to damnation.

But to returne againe vnto theſe kinde of men, in reſpect of God, I doubt not of their puniſhment; And in regard of man, I muſt plainely tell thee, that they open the doore to murmuration, and giue occaſion to the people, to ſpeake thereof in publike, not ſticking to vtter (as I ſaid before) thoſe ends which I thought ſhould haue beene kept ſecret; taking pittie and compaſsion of ſo many merits, ſo ill rewarded; and of ſo diſproportionable an Exchange as this, in ſeeing the evill, by evill meanes, to be in higheſt eſteeme: and the good, by reaſon of their goodneſſe, to be excluded, and ſhut out of all. But I can aſſure you, that God hath numbred all the haires of their head, and will not ſuffer one of them to fall to the ground. Though men therefore may chance to faile them, yet let them comfort themſelues with this, that they haue a good God to friend, that will never forſake them. This is the world, and thus thinges goe.

I therefore will neither haue Empire, nor Dignity; I will not haue Honour, I will not ſo much as once looke vpon it. Keepe thy ſelfe as thou art, (*Guzman*) continue (my honeſt friend) the ſame man ſtill. Let others (a Gods name) be the Councell of the Common-wealth, the Oracles of the State; let them never thinke vpon thee; Enter not into that place, whence thou

thou canſt not get out, when thou wouldſt: Doe not put thy ſelfe into that danger, which may bring a continuall feare with it; Deſire not to haue too much, leſt it chance to bee taken from thee; nor too little, leſt thou bee driven to beg; Doe not pretend any thing by way of flatterie: Doe not intangle thy ſelfe in many buſineſſes, leſt they ſhould diſquiet thee: Seeke to be the Vſufructuarie, and free injoyer of thy life, that by vſing of it well, thou maiſt liue ſafe in thy eſtate. Why ſhouldſt thou keepe a ſtirre, and trouble thy ſelfe for that, which to morrow is to bee no more, and when it is at the moſt, is of no long continuance? What doeſt thou, or any man elſe know, is become of the *Mayor-Domo* to King *Don Pelayo*, or of the Chamberlain to *Conde Fernan Gonçales*? They had honour, and they held it, but neither of them, nor that, is any memory remaining. So ſhalt thou the next day be forgotten, as if thou hadſt never beene at all. Why then is there ſo much greedineſſe, ſo much thirſt, and ſo much coile; one for his belly, (for to ſo great a vanitie are wee now growne, that to eate and waſte much, is held no ſmall reputation) another for his backe, and a third for honour.

No, no, theſe thinges are not for thee, and if thou offer to trouble thy thoughts with them, thou ſhalt not liue to be an old man, or elſe thou ſhalt be old before thy time. Leaue, leaue off; I ſay, the ſwelling pride of theſe huge Gyants, and thruſt them vp againſt the Walls; let them ſtand there, as Bugbeares to fright children, as being good for nothing elſe.

Cloath thy ſelfe in the winter, with that which may keepe thee Warme; and in the Summer, with that which may cover thee, not going too ſlovenly, nor too pompouſly, rather decently then richly; Eate no more then may ſuffice nature, preferring moderation before exceſſe, for whatſoever is more then neceſſary, is meerely ſuperfluous. For by it, neither the rich man liues, nor the poore man dies. But the diverſitie and abundance of meates, is rather a diſeaſe then otherwiſe, breeding viſcous and ſlimy humours, whence ariſe grievous ſickneſſes, and mortall Apoplexies.

Twice, thrice, nay foure times happy art thou, who riſeſt in the morning when thou wilt, and at what houre thy ſelfe liſteth, without once thinking of ſerving, or being ſerved by any body; for although it be a trouble to haue a Maſter, yet it is alſo a trouble to haue a ſervant, as you ſhall heare by and by. At noone, feed freely, dine ſecurely, runne not vpon the ſcore with thy Cooke, nor be indebted to thy [a] *Diſpenſero*, ſend not for thy Coales from the Merchants Sellar, where they gather [b] wet and moiſture, in ſtead whereof they will bring thee in duſt and ſtones, wherewith thou wilt be coozened; for there are more deceits in the world, then thou or any man elſe knowes, ſaue God alone: Seeke not to excell in brauerie, affect not too much neatnes; feare not every ſpot that may fall vpon thy clothes, be not in loue with rich Imbroyderies; be not too carefull to keepe, nor too fearefull to loſe. Be not envious nor ſuſpicious; Let no occaſion moue thee to lie; Doe not purchaſe preferment by vndermining of others, nor worke not another mans Ruine, to worke thy ſelfe into favour. Thinke it fitter for thee to goe alone, then accompanied; a quicke, then a ſlow pace: rather laughing then weeping; eating then dancing; without being noted by any. That is the beſt Taverne to thee, where thou meetſt with the beſt Wine: And that the beſt Cookes ſhop, where thou lighteſt on the beſt morſell: In the Market-place, thou maiſt make choyce of the beſt ſeat, and ſo thou maiſt the like at all publike Feaſts. In the Winter, get thee into thee Sunne, in the Summer into the ſhade. Thou maiſt cover thy Boord according to thine owne minde: thou maiſt make thy Bed, according to thine owne liking; without paying one penny either for the making or ſtanding of it; And maiſt chooſe, whether any man ſhall ſee thee, diſquiet thee, or contradict thee. Keepe thy ſelfe aloofe from Law-buſineſſes: liue a ſtranger to Sutes & Actions: free thy ſelfe from falſe Witneſſes, for feare

Libertie, how pleaſant a thing it is.

a *A Cater, that makes proviſion for victualls.*
b *In Spaine they ſell their coales by the pound.*

they ſhould part thy goods amongſt them, and become maſters of all that thou haſt. Let no man be able to aske thee a penny; keepe thy ſelfe ſafe from Decrees; Beware how, and whom you truſt, and vpon what termes: but aboue all, (which will be no ſmall glory vnto thee) take heed, how thou becom'ſt a ſurety for any man. Giue no cauſe to haue any executions come out againſt thee; nor thou to doe the like againſt others: Shunne all contentions and debates, and all manner of ſuites in Law. Laſt of all, reſt thou ſatisfied and contented, ſo that nothing may oppreſſe thee, nor breake thy ſleepe, that thou maiſt riſe betimes in the morning to thinke vpon thoſe thinges that may turne to thy good, by reforming what is amiſſe.

The poore man may, ordering himſelfe well, liue happily.

All men cannot doe all that they would; yet our good God is not forgetfull of the poore, having opened a way vnto him, whereby he may liue contented; not giving him more cold, then his body is able to beare, ſuting his conſtitution according to his cloathes; ſo that he may paſſe in this world, as well as the rich, if he will but order and governe himſelfe aright. But this life is not made alike for all men: And vndoubtedly, the firſt inventer muſt be a moſt famous Philoſopher; for ſo happy a repoſedneſſe, is to be ſuppoſed to haue it's beginning from ſome ſingular wit. And to ſpeake truely, that which is not ſo, coſteth much trouble. And thoſe that doe not ſo paſſe through this life, are the men that ſuffer, and pay for all.

Walking through this world with many diſturbances, contentions, and moleſtations; flattering, idolatrizing, carrying thinges away with a ſtrong hand, plotting of tricks, violently haling by the haire, that, which neither ought to be ſuffered, nor is fit to be effected, or any way in the world, to be borne withall; ſhutting their eyes all this while againſt that, which it concernes them to ſee; but are very ſharpe-ſighted in looking to their profit, nothing ſhall paſſe by them then: They are *Linxes*, and Eagle-ey'd, when their prey is before them, though it were better for them in theſe thinges, to be as blind as the Beetle, or the Mole: For then they begin to lay their Nets, to pitch their Hayes, fall a ſetting of Lime-twigges, watching how to put themſelues forward, by making of Pit-falls, wherein to intrap men, thinking to raiſe themſelues, by the fall of others. For they doubt not of their owne comming forward, if they can but once come to thruſt others backe. Vanity of Vanities, and nothing but Vanity.

What a troubleſome thing Honour is?

O what a grievous thing is it, that a man ſhould ſuffer ſuch a number of calamities, and for no other end onely, but to vphold his fraile and vnfortunate honour from falling? And he that thinkes he hath ſureſt poſſeſſion of it, liues but with ſo much the greater care to repaire and maintaine it. I returned againe and againe to conſider thereon, never ceaſing, nor never enough ſatisfied with the repeating of this ſaying: Happy, thrice happy thou, who haſt wrapt Honour in a Coffin of Lead, and with ſtrong cords, tying heavy ſtones therevnto, haſt buried it in the Sea, whence it may never riſe vp any more, nor appeare vnto the world.

Bad ſervants, what a bane they are to a houſe.

I likewiſe began to thinke with my ſelfe, what a hurtfull thing in a Family, is a villanous, an vngratefull, a coozening, and a lying ſervant: whereof now a-dayes, the world is too full. And if we ſhall briefely decipher forth vnto you ſuch a manner of ſervant, you ſhall finde him to be a Foole; a Sloven; a careleſſe Companion; idle, lazie; a bagge, fill'd with nothing but malice and roguery; a Funnell, to powre in all manner of diſcord, and diſſention; full of prattle, vpon every ſlight occaſion; and dumbe, in thoſe thinges, that are of any moment; ignorant in ſpeaking; and impudent in grumbling.

The wickedneſſe of women-ſervants, and their qualities.

Shall I character forth vnto you a Maid-ſervant, or a Nurſe, that will ſerue for any thing? You ſhall haue her ſluttiſh, theeviſh; with a Brother, a Parent, or a Kinſman, ever and anon asking for her, troubling thy houſe with

daily

dayly visits; for, and with whom, she returnes so many nights, euery weeke, by retayle; dividing that time amongst them in parcels, which she should lay out in the grosse in thy service; devoted onely to the loue and service of her Sweet-heart: earnestly desiring to see her selfe made Mistresse of a Mantle: she will looke for good maintenance, and be her wages neuer so good, that proportion will not serue the turne, but as she sees occasion, she will still be grating more and more vpon thee: And you must over and besides, allow her her wine into the bargaine, because forsooth her stomake is weake, and cannot digest her meat without it. If wee will but looke out into the street, which way so ever we turne our eye, we see every thing want some-what in the fineneſse of it's Loy and true touch, all is false, and without Law, nothing that is perfect, neither in weight, nor in measure.

Falsehood in selling of wares.

And that this is true, looke into your Shambles, your Hucksters, and other shops of retayle in the Market-place; and then you will tell mee what a deale of coozenage they vse in the venting of their wares, and with what gainefull cunning they vtter their commodities. Besides to what desperation doth a false or corrupted *Notary* driue a man vnto? Against whom, even truth it selfe hath not the power to prevaile. For the Stemme onely of his Quill, and the very nib of his Pen, is more dangerous against whom it is bent, then a strong-steeled Launce, or a Cannon of Brasse, with all his batteries,

Against Notaries, Scriuners, &c.

What thinke you of a lying Attourney? a wrangling Lawyer? Both men of an evill conscience, full of tricks and quillets, skilfull of deceiving; cunning in plotting, and aboue all, wonderfull lovers of delayes, making it their maine study to put off and prolong suits, that they may licke their owne fingers, and fill their hungry bellies, at other mens cost.

Against Attourneys & Lawyers.

What say you to an obstinate and head-strong Iudge? one of those ignorant wilfull ones, who will not sticke perhaps to say to himselfe; I vnderstand my selfe well enough; I know what I speake; nor will I bee taught what to doe. When indeed, he neither vnderstandeth, nor knoweth, nor doth any thing that is fit, nor is well vnderstood by others. At the first hee seemed milde and gentle (before hee was warme in his Office) like a Bull amidst a Heard of Cowes; but when he came forth he appeared fierce, and full of rage, as if he had been stucke with darts, and his bloud drawne from him. He wore a garment, which for the shaping of it into fashion, setting the pieces handsomely together, and to make it fit for wearing, had need of more then a thousand Scedules, and as many Passe-ports, as also the thread of *Theseus*; for it is a Labyrinth to enter into. O with what hunger is he affected! he thinkes he shall never be full enough. So that I must say, nothing escaped his hand, were it little or great; the bare fell, or the whole Fleece. I found he offended in all: In this by an I; in that by a No: In some things; by doing, in some things by not doing: Offending, not only in matters of Omission, but in sinnes of Commission. Who like the Lyoness, can with lowd roarings put life into these little Whelpes, (these dead truthes) to the end, that by taking breath, some remedy might be had.

Against Iudges

Let vs runne through all occupations; Looke I pray into your Taylor, with whom it is now growne to a custome, that you must pay some thing to the setting vp of their (*a*) Signe, else your worke shall ne're be made an end of; or if it be, it shall be spoyled in the making, or they will filch so much of your stuffe from you, as shall lessen your Coat, and inlarge their Vailes.

Against Taylors.

(*a*) *The Spanish word is* Pendon. *And so it may signifie something given to the Corporation.*

Your Mason, your Smith, your Carpenter, and all other Trades-men whatsoever, none excepted, doe all steale, all lye, all coozen: none of them deales truely; no not one. And which is worst of all, they take a glory therein, and thinke themselues, in so doing, to be jolly wise fellowes, and Masters of their craft; holding those that deale more honestly (if there be any such) to be simple men, and poore seely fooles, that want wit.

Against Masons, Smithes, Carpenters, &c.

Let

Against Apothecaries.

Let vs looke a little backe, and ſee, if we ſhall not finde an Apothecarie in a blind corner, who becauſe he will not be ſaid to ſay I haue not ſuch a thing, or ſo, nor diſcredit his ſhop; will not ſtick to giue you contrary Syrrops, counterfet Oyles, falſify'd Waters; you ſhall not finde one Drugge that is of true and perfect goodnes, or any Compound made according vnto the rules of Art; they mingle, baptize, and make confections (according to their owne liking) of differing qualities, and divers effects, thinking (in their poore diſcretion) that there is but little difference betwixt the one and the other, though it bee contrary to all truth and reaſon. And thus doe they kill many a man, making of their Boxes, and their Vyals, Dags and Piſtols; and of their Pils, Pellets; wherewith (as with ſo many Bullets) they lay vs dead on the ground.

Against Doctors of Phyſicke.

But you will ſay, Maſter Doctor ouer-ſees him, and that there is not an ingredient, but carries his eye, and direction with it, and therefore the danger is ſo much the leſſe.

True: But if you doe not fee him well, hee forgoes the cure; and if you doe fee him well, he prolongs it: And ſo by this meanes, ſome, nay, many times, his ſicke Patient miſ-carries, and is ſent vntimely to his graue.

And it is a thing worthy the noting, that Lawes being the Daughters of Reaſon, if you put a Caſe to a Lawyer, aske his opinion, hee ſtudies it, and will not reſolue you, till he haue well and truely conſidered thereon, becauſe it is a matter of goods, or of Land, which may concerne a mans making, or marring.

But your Phyſician, no ſooner comes in to viſit you, but preſently by the touch of your Pulſe, as ſoone as ever his finger hath felt it, hee inſtantly knowes your diſeaſe, though it be vtterly vnknowne vnto him, and removed as farre from his vnderſtanding, as earth, from heaven. And then, (that hee may not betray this his ignorance) hee forthwith preſcribes, and applyes ſuch remedies vnto you, as are more truely meanes to bring you to your laſt home, then to reſtore you to your health. Shall it not be fit (if that *Aphoriſme* of theirs bee true) that life is ſhort, the Art long, experience deceitfull, and the judgement hard and difficult, to goe on by little and little, as it were by degrees, till they bee thorowly entred thereinto, and become Maſters of that which they would willingly cure, by ſtudying that which they ought to doe therein? To treat of this, would aske a long diſcourſe. All goes topſie-turvy; all Kim, Kam; all, is tricks and devices; all Riddles and vnknowne Myſteries; you ſhall not finde man, with man; we all liue in ambuſh, lying in wait one for another, as the Cat, for the Mouſe, or the Spider for the Fly; who roming careleſſely vp and downe, ſuffers her ſelfe to be taken by a ſlender thread, whileſt that venemous vermine, ſeazing on her head, holds her faſt, never leaving her, till ſhee hath kill'd her with her poiſon.

CHAPTER V.

How Guzman de Alfarache *lighted on a Cookes ſeruice, and with faire Sentences, and good Leſſons, ſheweth, what he ſhould be that ſerueth. He blameth gaming, and Gamſters. He declareth a pretty theft performed by him; he relateth the Vices of* Deſpenſero's, *Cookes, Butlers, and other the like Officers. Of Lords, abuſed by their ſeruants. Of Kings, and their miſerable condition. Of the vanitie of Inferiours conteſting with their Superiours. He condemneth thoſe Maſters that ill intreat their ſeruants: And how they ought to carry themſelues towards them.*

I Found my ſelfe free from all theſe things as ſubject to none of them, except infirmitie, and ſickneſſe. In regard whereof, I had a determination, to haue put my ſelfe into an Hoſpitall. I injoyed a free and flouriſhing kinde of liberty, praiſed by the wiſe, deſired of many, and ſo much applauded and re-applauded by the Poets. To whoſe true valuation, all the gold and riches of the earth, are not to bee compared, as things of too poore and meane a price. I had it once, but had not the wit to keepe it. For it being my courſe of life (as a thing whereunto I was accuſtomed) to play the Porter, and carry burthens, and being now as well truſted, as I was knowne, all my care was, to come acquainted with ſome one falſe Cater or other (Gods curſe and mine goe with him) that was the Purſer, Diſburſer, Diſtributer or Steward, or by what other ſtile or Title, in that kinde you ſhall call him. This *Deſpenſero* or Cater (as you pleaſe) had a good confidence in me, truſted me very farre, and would often ſend me away alone by my ſelfe, to carry thoſe things home to his houſe, which he had bought in the Market. This my continued Converſation and daily commercement with him, did (which it ſhould not haue done) procure his good liking, and loue towards me; Inſomuch, that he removed me from that Office, and preferred me to be Scullion of the Kitchen, which was as much as my ambition could then reach vnto.

Libertie, a great jewell.

Guzman, a Porter, or asket bearer.

Hee would often-times tell me, (and one day amongſt the reſt, and I remember it was in the morning; he made me a long Oration, flouriſhed over with a great many of faire Promiſes, ſo that by climing from one round to another, I began to conceiue with my ſelfe, that I ſhould come at laſt to be a *Corregidor* at leaſt.) That if I would apply my ſelfe to that Office, and take paines therein, behaving my ſelfe well and honeſtly, when I was growne fit and perfect, he would be a meanes to place me in Court, and put me into the Kings ſervice; where when I had ſeru'd ſo many yeares in the Kitchen, I ſhould be well rewarded, and might afterwards liue richly of my ſelfe, and be mine owne man.

O how quickly did this vaine blaſt puffe vp my emptie Pate; This giddy winde-mill of mine was ſet aworke, and turn'd quite round with the breath of his word. The adventure I ſaw was ſmall, and the gaine might be great.

Well he brought me to the Cooke my maſter (we being well knowne to each other.) When I came thither, (as if it had beene the firſt time that we had ſeene one another) he ſpake to me in a proud commanding manner. How now (*Sennor* few-clothes) what winde draue you hither? What make you here, (goodman Shag-rag,) you *Cavallero de* * *Illeſcas*? Haue you any buſineſſe here? or doe you come to abide with me? Sure I was ill adviſed; for when I ſaw he began in ſo high a key, I was about to ſhew him my backe, and to leaue him to himſelfe, and his ſlie; (for Summer was now fully in.) I ſtarted, and ſtood as one aſtonied, not knowing what anſwer to make him, but when I ſaw there was no remedie. I replide; yes Sir. Come your wayes then (quoth he) in

a A Ruler or Gouernour of a City or Towne.

* Illeſcas, *is a certaine Towne neere vnto* Toledo, *King* Don Alonſo *Anno Domini* 1176. *made a Donation thereof to the Church of* Toledo. *But it is now reuerted againe to the Crowne.* Illeſcas *is an Arabicke woord, and ſignifieth, laſciuous & diſhoneſt loue.*

Cavallero de Illeſcas, *is a word vſed in ſcorne.*

Covarruuias

Guzman goes to serue a Cooke. The dutie of a servant. Guzman his readinesse in serving his Master.

in with me; And if thou dost thy dutie (said he) and shall deserue well at my hands, thou shalt not lose thy labour.

I told him, I was very well assured, that in serving his Worship, I might gaine by the bargaine, but lose nothing, because I had nothing to lose. Then he ask'd me; Doe you know (sirrah) what you are to doe? All that (I mildly replide) that you shall be pleased to command me; or my selfe either know, or am able to performe. For he that sets himselfe to serue, must not refuse (when need is) to doe any thing, but that which more properly belongs to the dutie of his place, he ought cheerefully to vndergoe it; and to applie himselfe as well to the one as the other.

He seemed to like well both of my speech and vnderstanding; aud I hoping to be well rewarded, flew in like a Hawke for the prey. At my first comming, I behaved my selfe very respectfully towards him, and serued him as punctually as I could; and he againe made much of me, and vs'd me as kindly as heart could wish. But I did not only seeke to please my Master (who was a married man) and my wife his Mistris, euen in the meanest seruices, seruing them in all things else besides, both in Towne and Countrie, at home and abroad; taking vpon me the Office both of Man-servant and Maid-servant, (saue only that I had never a Gowne to put on, nor a Mantle to cover me withall, to waite vpon my Mistris when she went abroad;) But for all other services of the house, as sweeping, rubbing, scowring, setting the Pot over the fire, dressing of meate, making of Beds, laying the (*b*) *Estrado* in order, smoothing and plaining it, that not a wrinckle was to be seene, and other the like services were my ordinary exercise; (And for that I was the only man, all this was committed to my charge:) But I laboured besides to giue good contentment to all the rest of my Masters servants. So that my heeles were as nimble to runne vpon the least boyes errand in the house, as the Stewards, the Pages, as the *Mayor-Domos*; for him that rub'd the Horses heeles, as for him that was Vsher of the Hall. One would haue me to buy such and such necessaries for him; another, that I would brush, and make cleane his clothes; This man, that I would get his band washt and starcht for him; that, that I would carrie some * provision home to his wife; A third, to his Wench. And all this I did without grumbling, or muttring, or any the least vnwillingnesse in the world. I was never any Tale-carrier nor sower of sedition; nor did I ever discover any secret, or report againe what I had heard, though it were not delivered vnder the seale of Silence vnto me, or that the relators had laid their finger on my mouth. For I was not so ill bred, but that I knew very well, what, and when it was lawfull for me to speake, and when to hold my peace. Hee therefore, (whosoever he be) that serues, must haue an especiall care to obserue these two things; Wherein if he faile, he will quickly ruine himselfe, by drawing all mens ill will vpon him, and making himselfe the most hated man in the world. Whereas nothing doth more recommend a man, then a faire carriage, and a faithfull heart. When I was chidden, I never replide: and made it my studie, to giue them as little cause as I could, to finde fault with me. I would not willingly haue any mans displeasure; And all my care was, to doe what I was commanded. And when there was neede of my seruice, or that my helping hand might doe any good, I was seldome or neuer wanting; I was *Iacke* at a pinch, I was here, and there, and every where. And albeit these diligences of mine cost me a great deale of labour and painestaking, yet I lost nothing by it; for the good commendations that they gaue mee, and the kinde words that they spake of me behinde my backe, and the hopes that I had to be well rewarded, when time should serue, seemed to me a sufficient payment, and I was well contented therewith.

b Estrado, is a [illegible] of halfe pace, couered with Turkie Carpets, and furnished with faire long Cushions, whereon your great Ladies and Gentlewomen sit, when they receiue any Visits. But now adayes, your ordinary women in Spaine are growne into this fashion, taking more state vpon them, then suites with their conditions.

* The Spanish word is Racion, i. rata portio; a set allowance.

A silent tongue, and a true heart, did never hurt any seruant

The good vsage of the Master is a spurre to the seruant.

Good vsage, is a great heartening to him that serveth: It is the spurre which pricks on the Will, and makes it goe forward; it is the finger, that beckens

beckens our affections, it is the Lure, that calls our desires, it is a Chariot, wherein our forces (like strong Iades) draw on without wearinesse, and tugg stoutly thorow thicke and thinne; it is good serving of some men, and they deserue to haue service done them *Gratis*; And there are some men againe, that a man would not serue for any money. But of all others, I disclaime that Master as vnworthy to be waited on, that will neither giue his servant good wages, nor good words. Kinde vsage will make a man worke out his heart, but high language and poore payment, will kill any spirit living, and make a servant grow neglectfull, if not weary of his Masters service.

Then might I affirme, that leaving my roguish kinde of life, this *Picardia* of mine, (as a Queene, whose name I am not worthy to take in my mouth, and wherevnto any other politicke course of life is not to be compared) all the bravery and gallantrie of the curious method of living happily, and passing well away the time, which the world solemniseth so much, must yeeld, and giue place therevnto. But this, (though accompanied with much care) was exceeding good, good in the highest degree, for such a one (I meane) as my selfe, who had beene daintily bred vp in the midst of delights. So that mee thought, I was in a manner reduced and brought backe againe to my old bias, and naturall course of life, as farre as it concernd the Bucolickes: for my (c) *Bocados* were of another kinde of quality and relliſh, then those of the *Bodegon*, or a Pie-corner Tripe-wiues shop; they were otherwise drest, otherwise season'd. And in this, those of S^t *Gil*, (d) *Santo Domingo*, *Puerta del Sol*, *Placa Mayor, and Calle de Toledo*, must pardon mee and haue mee excused; howbeit I cannot deny, but that their Liver-slices, and their rashers on the coales, ran still in my head, and were hard things for mee to forget.

I did nothing, were it never so small a thing, never so little for the which I had not something. All did giue mee one thing or other; one a (e) *Tarja*, which is a matter of penny halfe-penny, another a Royall, a third a Doublet, a fourth an old Iacket to cover this poore flesh of mine: I did not goe so like a tattred Rogue as I did before; my meales were sure and certaine; and though I had not had any other thing to sustaine my selfe withall, I might haue liu'd very well vpon the skimmings of the pot, and vpon the tryall of my taste, by essaying whether my boyld meates were sod enough, and so likewise for my roste, reserving still mine owne allowance whole and intire, I had no neede to touch vpon that that I made profit of. This good did mee much hurt, as also did my Gaming, which I had learned in my looser dayes; For looke whatsoever I got by meanes of my Place, for that I had no house to repaire, nor rents to buy in, I playd it all away. So that I may very well say, My good did me hurt. For, see how much increase it bringeth to the good, (because they know how to turne it to their best benefit;) so it worketh as much hurt in the bad, for (when they fall once a loosing what they haue got) they lose a great deale more with it, it being with them, as it is with your venemous beasts; who draw poyson from that, from which your Bees sucke honie.

Goodnesse is like vnto your sweete Waters, which if they be kept in cleane Vessels, grow still the better, but in bad, are straightway corrupted, and quite spoyled. I was a learned Doctor in that Science, but yet I consumed my Estate in following that Trade. Within a few dayes, I grew a refined Gamester, and could play well with my hands too, I had learned to filch and steale finely, which was the worse Occupation of the two. Gaming, is a terrible vice; And as all Rivers haue recourse vnto the Sea; So is there not that vice, which is not to be found in a Gamester. He never does well, and alwayes thinkes ill. He never tels truth, but still lies; Hee hath no man to friend; Hee keepes no good quarter with his Kindred; Hee esteemes not his credit, but overthroweth the honour of his house; Hee leadeth a lewd life; Hee desires the death of his Parents; Hee sweares without cause; Hee blaspheames vpon every little losse;

The commendation of a roguish life.

(c) *The morsels I did eate.*

(d) *The principall victualling places in* Madrid, *and what poore kinde of things they be.*

(e) Quædam monera Hispanica, valoris 9. Maravedis, sic dicta, a Tarja; i. scuti similitudine, quam habet.
A piece of three halfe-pence.

Gaming, a hurtfull thing.

Goodnesse what it is like vnto.

All manner of vices are in a Gamester.

losse. He neither feares God, nor regards his owne soule. If he leese his money, he looseth all shame to get it againe, and so hee may haue it, hee cares not with what infamy; he liues gaming, and hee dyes gaming. In stead of a holy Taper, hee holds a pack of Cards in his hand, as one that is resolu'd to lose soule, life, and all that he hath at one dealing. I had very good experience hereof from others, but I speake not that, which was told mee by others, but what my selfe saw with mine owne eyes.

When my Vailes would not serue the turne, (that I might not want wherewithall to game) I would cast mine eyes, like burning Torches, about the house, where, and out of what I might make my provision. For those things, that belong'd to the Kitchen, I could make purchase there in the turning of a hand, but ever had a care to do it so handsomely, and to carry it so cleanely, that they might not haue the least suspition of me in the world. Many things which I stole, I hid in the selfe-same roome where I found them, with purpose, (if they should chaunce to suspect mee) to pull them out in publike, gaining thereby credit to my selfe for after-times, vpon the like occasion. And in case the suspition fell vpon another, I presently tooke hold vpon that advantage; and putting it from my selfe, transferred it on him. Once I remember, I lighted on a happy encounter, which was this:

A pretty theft done by Guzman.

My Master on a time brought certaine friends of his home to his house, good-fellowes, sworne brothers to *Bacchus*, Pylots for (a) *Guadalcana*, and (b) *Coca*, and he would needs forsooth in kindnesse bestow a Bever vpon them, all of them playd well vpon the Keyes of this Organ; the Iacks went vp liuely, but my Master he tickled it notably, hee vvas an excellent Musician vpon a jarre of Wine: hee was a braue bottle-banger, a singular tosse-pot. Hee tooke me out of one of the cup-bords of his Ambry (which were ever stored with cold meats) a delicate piece of Bacon finely inter-larded, or (to speake more properly) inter-laced with fat and leane, which look't as fresh and as ruddy, as the bloud of a Lambe, that is newly kill'd. The game growing now hot, and the Vyes seene on all sides, they were all *thirty* ( ) *apiece in Kings*, merry, rich, and contented: And with this new Shooing-horne to draw downe their drinke, they fell a-fresh to their former play, drinking healths Helter Skelter, till at last (and my Mistris had her share too, who did mince and gyg it in this round, with as much metall, and as nimbly, as the best dancer of them all) they grew so fine and so mellow, that you might haue stript them (like Rabbets) out of their Cases, and left them starke naked as ever they were borne, and yet they never haue knowne who had done them this harme. Their peeces were overcharged, the powder strong, the charge too great; so that when the fire tooke them, the smoke and fume thereof flew vp to the highest part of all the chimney, wherewith the whole house was so shaken, that some fell downe flat, others reeled too and froo; some tript both in their tongue & feet; other were full of their gamboll-tricks, each man having his severall Posture.

A drunken Description.

My Master and my Mistresse (as one of the neighbours told me) scrambled (as well as they could) to bed, leaving all the doores of the house open, the Table vn-taken away, and the silver Goblet, wherein they drunke their Healths, tumbled downe on the ground, all which made much for the benefit of the Inventory.

I was by chance at that time in my Masters Kitchen, scowring of the Pannes and the Spits, pyling vp the wood, laying it handsomely together, and doing other things belonging to my office. When that taske was done, and I had made an end of all my worke, I got mee to my lodging, and as I past along, I found all out of order, every thing out of his proper place; all the doores open; the Cup that was falne downe on the floore, I fortunately stumbled on; it silently seemed to intreate me, that I would do it that courtesie to take it vp. I stooped downe vnto it, to do it that friendly office, looking in the meane while

(a) Guadalcana, *signifies* rio de la recreaçion: *a River of recreation.*

(b) Coca, *is a Drugge so called, wherewith Fishermen are wont to make the Fish drunke, and to turne vp their bellies vpon the water, as if they were dead.*

(c) A tryenta con-Rey, *the Spanish word, which is a game at Cards common amongst them.*

It is good sticking at thirty, for feare of being cut Allusiue.

while round about mee, to see whether any mans eyes were vpon mee, to spy what I was a doing; but when I saw the coast was cleare, that there was not any body liuing there-abouts, so that no man could detect mee, I put it vp, and softly stole away. But I had scarce gone foure steps from the place, when my heart began to beate a false alarme.

Then I began to thinke with my selfe, whether I had heard any noyse stirring either within or without the house, for I could not bee too secure, and it did much concerne me, to haue a care to keepe my skinne whole, and not to indanger the losing of much, for the gaining of a little, and so in the end get a whipping by the bargaine. I got mee in, I called twice or thrice vpon this, then that man, but not a word of answere that I had from any of them.

I went to my Masters bed-chamber, where I found him and his Wife in that case, that they seemed to be dead, and sure they were little better, for they were deepely buried in Wine.

The snores and snorts that came from them, and other the like puffings and blowings, which they breathed forth, made mee to imagine, that I had beene newly entred into some famous drinking-schoole, I had a great minde to haue bound them with some whip-cord by the feete to the bed-post, and to haue playd the knaue vvith them in that manner, to haue made a little sport vvith them. But I did not like so well of that jest, a greater businesse was now in hand, and I thought it the better jest of the two, to content my selfe vvith that silver piece of Plate: wherevpon, I made a safe worke with that. And having now secured this theft, away went I back againe to the Kitchen, where I found worke inough to do till it was night, about which time my Master came thither, terribly pained in his belly, & his temples. And finding there but one only fire-brand lying on the Harth, he would needs cudgell my coat therwith, scolding and raylingat me, telling me that I wasted too much wood, and that I would never leaue, till I had fired his house. That night was not a night of profit; it was worth nothing vnto mee; yet I supply'd (as well as I could) what was wanting, and covering my Masters defect, supper was made ready, and orderly served in, which being ended, and all things done that should be done, we went to bed. But I found my Mistrisse in an il taking, her countenance sad and heavy; her eyes cast downe to the ground, and full of teares, her heart swolne with griefe, all was out of tune with her, and not so much as one word, that came from her, till my Master was gone to bed. And then I made bold to aske her, what was the matter that shee was so melancholly. She answered, O my *Guzmanico*, (sonne of my soule) a great evill, a great misfortuue hath befalne me, wretched woman that I am, curst was that houre vvherein *I* vvas borne, and in an vnluckie time did my mother bring mee forth. By this time I knew where her shoe did wring her; My pocket was her Apothecaries shop. There lay the restoratiue: And my good will had beene the best Physician, she could haue gotten for her griefe. But all her pittifull complaints, and whatsoever else might worke compassion, being all put together, could not moue mee awhit. For I haue heard say; Let a woman weepe never so much, though she should seeme to weepe her heart out, there is no more pitty to be taken of her, then to see a goose goe bare-foote. All her lamentations, her wringing of her hands, and other her demonstrations of her sorrow, could not stirre vp pity in me, or take hold on the least haire of a fellow-kinde of feeling.

But faigning my selfe to be very sensible of her affliction, and that it grieu'd mee much to see her so surprized with griefe; I began to comfort her, and to perswade her (all that I could) that her impatience might not force such words from her, as I heard her but now vtter, requesting her, that shee would lay open the wound, and tell mee what shee ayld, and make mee a sharer in this her misery; promising (in all that little, that I was able to doe) to doe as much for her, as I would for mine owne Mother. O sonne (quoth shee) your Master (in

an ill houre) brought hither ſome of his friends to make merry this afternoone, and amongſt other things, my ſilver Gobblet is wanting, and I know not in the world what to doe. What will thy Maſter ſay, or do, when hee ſhall know it? O hee will kill mee (ſonne of my bowels, mine owne deare child) hee will kill mee, that is the leaſt he can do vnto mee. And what I pray can hee doe more, ſayd I with my ſelfe? Well, I put on a mourning-face, looke ſad, ſhewing how much I was diſpleaſed with this roguiſh dealing, and how much it did vexe mee for her ſake. And then calling my wits together, I told her, that there was no other way in the world to ſalue this ſore, but that ſhee ſhould be ſtirring very early in the morning, and get her to the Gold-ſmiths, and buy another like vnto it, and then tell her Husband, that becauſe the ſilver Cup was old, and ſtayned with many ſpots, ſhe had cauſ'd it to be new burniſh't over, and made as bright as it was the firſt day it was bought.

And by this meanes, this cloud, that threatens ſuch a foule ſtorme, will quickly be over-blowne, and all be fare weather againe with you.

I offred her withall, that if ſhee wanted money, ſhee ſhould make ſhift to take it vp vpon credit, ſhee ſhould haue my allowance and my Vailes, till all was payd, if ſhee did not finde meanes before of her owne to diſcharge the debt. Shee did with a great deale of thankfulneſſe entertaine what I had ſpoken, as well for my good counſels, as the ſpeedy remedy. But it ſeemed vnto her, that it would bee very vnfitting for her to goe from home, and that all alone, and ſo earely in the morning, fearing leſt her Husband might chance to know it, who was very jealous of her, and would thinke, ſhee had gone a gadding to ſome worſer purpoſe. Wherevpon ſhee intreated mee of all Loues, even for Gods ſake, that I would goe my ſelfe to ſee and I could get ſuch another as that was; and as for the money, ſhe had inough of her owne ſtore to pay for it. This was e'ne as I would haue it, it hit as pat as a pudding to a Fryers mouth, I could not had wiſht it to haue falne out better; for I had already begunne to deviſe and caſt with my ſelfe, to whom, or how I might ſell it, and what chapman I might beſt find out to buy it of me; for if they ſhould come to ſcanne my perſon, they might eaſily be induced to beleeue, that I had ſtolne it.

But this buſineſſe falling out ſo luckily, and all things ſorting ſo well with mee, I went amongſt the Gold-ſmiths, & ſpake to one of them, that he would make cleane this plate, take out the ſtaines, and beate out the dents, for it had taken ſome knocks in the fall; I agreed with him for two Royals, for vvhich price he finiſhed his vvorke, and made it looke as freſh and as new, as if it had beene newly bought out of the ſhop; I tooke my cup, and carried it home with me to my Miſtris, telling her, that I had met with this piece at the *puerta de* (a) *Guadaxara*, and that it amounted in weight to ſeaven and fiftie Royals, and for the faſhion he would not abate a farthing of eight Royals.

(a) *A place ſo called in* Madrid.

All this ſeemed to her, as if it had beene but one poore Blanke, conſidering the great deſire which he had to be freed from that trouble wherein ſhe was. She told me out the money vpon a table, ſo that I ſold her her owne againe, as if it had not beene the ſame, or that I had beene the man that had ſtolne it from her. Wherewith ſhe remained contented, and I ſatisfied. But lightly come, lightly gone: Two incounters carried it cleane away from mee.

Theſe pretty thefts of wit, I reckned as things of nothing, and occaſion taught me the way: theſe were naturall vnto mee. But thoſe of permiſſion, and of greater moment, I tooke great care in the managing of them, when need did require: It was a common thing with mee, to come neere to the Butchers chopping-blocke, where the portions allotted to every man for their allowance, were cut out and divided. I did diligently obſerue that which paſſed, I learned the tricke of the finger, the bounding of the ballance, & all the tricks of weighing, & many would ſay, I weighed paſſing well, yet ſo for mine owne advantage, that every mans part ſhould dayly come ſhort two ounces in weight.

Your Carvers, your Cookes, and your Butlers a company of cozening knaues.

The

The *Despensero*, he would answere for himselfe, that the flesh did shrinke & drie away, and though he received full weight, and the Scales true, yet there could not choose but be some losse therein, by cutting it out afterwards into so many severall pieces for Commons, which might very well take vp a sixt part. Your *Despensero*, your Cooke, your Butler, your Purveyour, and most of all your Officers, they doe all of them filch and steale, and sticke not to say, it is their Fees, and that it belongs of right vnto them, and this they so openly and impudently maintaine, as if they had the Kings Letters (*b*) Patens to shew for it.

There was never yet any Kitchin-boy so foolish or so vnluckie, but that he would make a shift to meet with the giblets of your Geese, your Hens, & your Capons, with the hocks of a gammon of Bacon, your flaps, Kidnies, and fat of the shoulders and loynes of Mutton, your Pigs-pettitoes, your Calues-feet, Livers, Gisards, Sweet-breads, Sauces, Spices, Snow, Wine, Sugar, Oyle, Honie, Candles, Coles, and Wood, not sparing the very Ashes, nor any thing else, (were it Vineger, Mustard, Annis-seede, Carrowaies,) from that which was most necessarie, even to those of smallest moment, which are daily spent in a great mans house.

When I came thither first, I confesse, there was no man would trust mee farther then he saw me, they had no great confidence of me; but by little and little, I got into credit by degrees, first pleasing this man, then contenting that man, and in fine, being willing to serue them all, in all that I was able: for he must haue a care to please all, that will haue all men to pleasure him. To gaine friends, is a putting forth of money to Interest, and the sowing of seed in a fruitfull soyle. A man ought to venture his life, for the keeping of a friend, and the spending of his wealth, for the vn-procuring of an enemie. For such a one is a Sentinell, that sees with a hundred eyes; hee is like a Dragon, that stands vpon the Towre of his Malice, to looke into our actions from afarre, and to watch vs a mischiefe, if wee doe amisse. It importeth much, not to haue an enemie, and hee that hath, let him carrie himselfe so towards him, as though he were by and by ready to become his friend.

Wouldst thou know who this is? Behold his name, and thou shalt finde him to be all one with the Devill, our mortall enemy, and both of them, to be one, and the selfe-same thing. Doe thou sow good workes, and thou shalt reape the fruite of them. For the first (whosoever he were) that did a benefit, wrought chaines therewith to imprison noble spirits, and to binde their hearts vnto him in the bonds of loue. In those things, wherein I might put my selfe forward, I was never slothfull; I did never giue way to any just complaints to come against mee; nor was I ever given to faction, or to the raising of calumnies and evill reports vpon any; I did abhorre all colours of this nature, and aboue all, your scandalous and offensiue persons, whom wee properly compare vnto Sponges, who what they sucke in one place, haue it vvrung from them in another, if they doe not drop it out of themselues, which is too vsuall with them. Such men as these, see thou trust them not, shunne their fellowship, abhorre their company, though thou wert sure to get by them. For in the end, thou shalt sit downe with losse, and shame enough.

A private house cannot suffer a greater calamitie; nor a Common-wealth a more contagious pestilence, then these make-bates, these sowers of discord, these Court-chamblets, that are sprinkled over with holy water, whose glosse of words makes a very faire shew, but vnder that print (which is quickly gone) lies the Devill, and his foule deedes.

It was evermore my chiefe study, to haue peace with all men, because it is the daughter of *Humilitie*; And the humble minded man, that loveth peace, loveth, and is beloved of the Author thereof, which is God: if ill company had not done me harme, I had begun well, and gone on better; I had

(b) *The Spanish word is* Esecutoria. i. el Instrumento y auto de lo determinado en juizio, por tres Sententias. Couarruuias. Ver. Esec.

How hee must doe, that will receiue a pleasure.

Friends and foes, how to be kept, or avoyded.

How a man should behaue himselfe towards his enemie.

Scandalous persons, what they are like vnto?

Peace, the daughter of Humilitie.

had had wherewithall to eate, to drinke, to laugh, and to be merry, and might haue paſſed this carreere of my life with a great deale of content. Many times (when I had ended my buſineſſe) I would take a nap in the ſweetneſſe of that Sunne, which ſhew'd it ſelfe after dinner, and ſometimes I made my ſleepes by Moone-ſhine, remaining in the view of that faire light vntill the morning.

The Pages waggery with Guzman.

But when there was nothing to be done at home, your Lackies and Pages of the Court, being a company of Crack-ropes and notable Wags, would make me free of the frying-Pan, fright me with Snakes, hang on my backe, & weigh me downe, crying, More ſackes to the Mill; If by chance they found me aſleepe, then would they clap a Flie made of Waxe vpon the inſtep of my ſhoe, and letting it burne there, till ſhoe and skinne were both ſcorched, and when I began to ſtir & ſtretch, then would their knauery breake forth, & cry, Fire, fire, fire. Other-while they would roll vp a Carde, or a piece of Paper, Tunnel-wiſe, & then ſetting it a fire; (blowing out the flame,) they would put it directly vnder my noſe, till the pillars of ſmoake that aſcended to my noſtrills, had not onely awak'd me, but almoſt choakt me. I remember they vſ'd me ſo once in this manner, that I knew not in the world where I was, whether ſleeping, waking, ſtanding, or ſitting; I was eene mad, I had loſt my wits amongſt them; and had I not beene held faſt, I had falne againſt one of the corner ſtones of the houſe, and daſht out my braines in a thouſand pieces: yet I tooke all patiently, never opened my mouth againſt them, pocketting theſe and many other the like wrongs, which I paſſed over.

All which I did, that by correcting my ſelfe, I might conſerue my ſeife: chooſing rather to kill my choller, then choller ſhould kill me. *Que el que todo lo quiere Vengar, preſto quiere acabar.* Hee that will revenge all wrongs, ſhall ſooner end himſelfe, then them. *Larga ſe deueder à mucho, ſi no ſe quiere viuir poco.* The man, that would liue long, muſt not be too ſhort. This cuttedneſſe, hath cut off many a mans life before his time. But by ſlighting of injuries, and letting them quietly goe by, he that does them, growes in the end both weary, and aſhamed; Whereas if thou ſhouldſt reſent them, and take them to heart, they would never leaue perſecuting thee, but be vexing thee ſtill more and more. For mine owne part, if I ſhould haue complain'd of theſe Wags, or but made any ſtirre in the buſineſſe, I am ſure they would haue made an Anatomie of mee. I (poore Scullion) muſt haue turned *Skelliton*; There had beene no other way with me. Sometimes, to make triall of mee, they would lay baits for me, putting money in ſome ſuch place, where I could not chooſe but finde it; and then would they watch me, to ſee, whether I were light-fingerd or no, and had the art of taking vp, and were in the number of thoſe that ſtill take vp, and ne're lay downe. But becauſe I knew their meaning, and had found out the tricke, that they would faine put vpon mee; I ſaid with my ſelfe, It will not ſerue your turne, *A otro perro, con eſſe hueſſo*; I am too craftie a curre, to be taken with this bone; you muſt throw it out to ſome other dogge, you ſhall doe no good with it on me: you haue miſt your marke (my Maſters) you haue lept a little too ſhort, you ſhall not goe beyond mee, nor ſhall you make your ſelues merry with my miſeries, nor make merchandize of my credit, nor furniſh your [a] *Almoneda* with my infamies. Therefore, it ſhould reſt there for mee, till hee that had laid it there, ſhould come himſelfe and fetch it away. Still having an eye, that another ſhould not take it thence, leſt afterwards it might be ſaid, I was the man that did it.

Proverb.

(a) Almoneda, *is an open ſale at an Out cry.* Guzmans *craft to preſerue his credit.*

Otherwhiles I would take it vp my ſelfe, and come and bring it to my Maſter, and giue it him; having alwayes a great care to keepe my wounds cleane, and like a good Fencer, to come fairely off, without the leaſt Vennie or touch in the world: For to giue another man a cut in the legge, or a ſlaſh on the arme, and to receiue a home-thruſt, and full *Stocada* in his owne boſome,

Proverb.

ſome, ſhewes himſelfe to be but a foole in his Science. I filcht and ſtole whatſoever came in my way, but ſtill carried it ſo cunningly, that no man could haue cauſe to ſuſpect mee.

For thoſe thinges that appertained to my charge, I was wonderfull prompt and diligent, albeit my Maſter had beene careleſſe in willing mee to doe this, or that; And when there was any worke to be done, I never ſtood looking, when my Maſter would bid me goe about it; I would ſaue him that labour. I was the formoſt of all my fellowes, when Birds were brought in, to fall to plucking of their feathers, to ſcowre the Spits, to make cleane the Veſſell, to ſweepe the houſe, to make, and blow the fire, without ſaying to another, Doe it you. For I did conſider with my ſelfe; that ſeeing I was not to take my pleaſure; or to ſtand like a Loyterer, with my thumbes vnder my girdle; one was as much trouble to mee as the other; And mee thought, it was a fine kinde of deceiving of the time; to doe that by faire meanes, which I muſt otherwiſe haue done perforce. And this made me indifferent (ſo as I were a doing) whether it were this worke, or that worke, all was one to mee, ſince firſt or laſt, it muſt be done by one of vs.

Guzmans diligence in doing his Office.

I did evermore doe my vttermoſt endeavour, as farre as my abilitie and knowledge would leade me, reſerving alwayes the *Decorum* due to my office. I was ever in Action; I had ſcarce made an end of pulling my Birds, but I preſently runne me to the Morter, and fall a pounding of Sawces, ſome for my Boyl'd meates, ſome for my Roaſt; all my Iron Vtenſels about the Kitchin, as Spits, Andirones, Tongs, Fire-ſhovell, Pot-hookes, and the like, I kept ſo neat and ſo cleare, that they lookt like ſo many Sword-blades, whereon the Cutlers hand had ſet a delicate Glaſſe; my Pots and my Pans, why you might haue wiped them with a Cloake of Velvet; my Skimmers, my Ladles, and my fleſh-Hookes, were (like Barbers Looking-glaſſes) curiouſly kept in their Caſes, and hung vp vpon ſeverall Nailes, as all thinges elſe that were of vſe, had their peculiar places appointed for them, that they might be ready ſtill at hand, when need ſhould ſerue, without being driven to ſeeke for one thing in one corner, and another in another, bearing ſtill in my minde, how and where I had plaſt them.

In a word, every thing had it's deputed place, with much diligence, and very good order. At my ſpare houres, when I had nothing to doe (which were likely in the Euening,) for then I was vſually at leiſure; the Officers of the houſe would giue me their [a] Vailes, that I might goe abroad, and ſell them for them. I went with them to the Gate that belongs to the Shambles, which was our ſet place for that buſineſſe, whither came ſuch to buy, as had need thereof; Sometimes that which I brought, was good; ſometimes ſo ſo; and at other times, ſtinking and ſtarke naught. And all did ariſe out of that, which they call *Prouechos y Derechos*, Fees, and Duties, which is two, out of every ten: a great deale better payment I am ſure, then that of the [b] *Almoxarifaſgo* of *Seuilla*; Seldome or never were wanting vnto vs the *Menudillos* or entrales of your Birds, the mammocks of Veale, Partriges and Hens, which were ſpoyled or loſt in the ſpitting or the roaſting, or had clung in the boyling to the Pots ſide, or falne in ſunder by being over-ſod; in the ſtripping and vncaſing of Rabbets and Conies, and the Lard beſtow'd vpon them, being bordered about, and imbroydered as it were with Bacon, like

[a] *The Spaniſh word is* Percances. i. Quicquid acquiritur à ſervis præter Salarium dict. à perquirendo. *Your Officers in great houſes challenge their Fees, as a Tribute due vnto them. How the Cookes licke their owne fingers.*

[b] Almoxarifaſgo, *comes of* Almozarife. i Exactor portoriorum. *He that takes vp all the Kings rents vpon all merchandize, either imported, or exported. It is an Arabicke word, and ſignifies an Officer, that recovers all Rights and Duties, belonging to the King, be it vpon Cuſtomes, Tenths, or payment of Rents.* Father Guadix ſayes, *this name by corruption, is borrowed from* Al Muxrriph, *that is to ſay, a Teller, a Changer, a Barber, a Renter.* Diego de Vrrea, *That in it's Arabicke termination, it is termed* Muxerifun *of the Verbe* Xerefe, *which ſignifies to ſee, to diſcover. And ſo* Almoxarife *may be taken for a Seer or Diſcoverer. And the reaſon of it is, for that he ſees and diſcovers all the Merchandize that paſſeth to and fro, to recover what is due to the King, and to let the other paſſe free. This in ancient time, was a generall name to all Treaſurers, till the daies of King Alonſo 11. who diſcarded it, becauſe it was Mooriſh, and changed the Title into* Teſorero generall. i. *Lord high Treaſurer.* Collarrubias.

vnto one of your Gabardines of *Sayago*, ſcarce leaving ſo much white as the bredth of my naile, through which their larding-Needles had not paſt. There were ſome other commodities, which being kept too long, before they came to be ſold, began to ſtinke; theſe they had a tricke to diſguiſe in that handſome manner, that they ſhould ſeeme to be freſh and ſweet. Every one did ſet forth his own ware, as well as he could. I ſold likewiſe Neats-tongues, Hogs-cheeks, powdred peſſells of Porke, Engliſh Paſties of Veniſon, & pieces of Bacon, three fingers thicke of fat. Behold, what vndue duties, what vnprofitable profits, and what hurtfull and vngainefull gaines theſe were; things able to vndoe a Noble man, to make him waſte his Wealth, morgage his Lands, and ſell his Vaſſalls.

I pitty yee (poore Lords, yee Gentlemen that keepe good Houſes) who either cannot, or know not, or (to ſpeake truely) will not conſume this Locuſt, this Caterpiller, by deſtroying ſo harmefull a moth. And thrice vnhappy they, who for oſtentations ſake, will offer to throw the Barre, with thoſe that are able to out-fling them, and ſtriue in a brauery to over-doe their ſtrength, which may cauſe a ſpraine, if not a Rupture in their Eſtates.

(c) *The Spaniſh word is*, Ganapan, quaſi ganar el pan. Acquirere panem & victum ſudore facies.

The (c) Porter, as well as the Trades-man; the Trades-man, as the Merchant; the Merchant, as the Gentleman; the Gentleman, as the Knight; the Knight, as a *Grande*; and the *Grande*, as a King; all deſire to be inthroaned, and to out-ſtrip one another, by living aboue their compaſſe, and ſpending beyond their meanes. But in troth, the Office of a King, that is no good Place, there is no ſport in it, no mirth, no jollity. For a King neither ſleepeth ſo ſoundly, nor reſteth ſo quietly as the poore Porter doth; neither doth hee eate his meate with that merry heart, and free from all care, as doth the Trades-man. The care of one Crowne afflicts him more, then that of many doth the Merchant. Hee is troubled more in making proviſion for his Armies, then a Gentleman in preparing his Armes: Nor is there any Knight or *Titulado* ſo much impawned, or ſo deepely in debt, but that his King is much more: Nor any *Grande* ſo great, but that the troubles and griefes which attend a King, are farre greater. Hee muſt keepe watch and ward, when others ſecurely ſleepe. His eyes (like your ſhops on worky-dayes) muſt be ſtill open, that thoſe of his Subjects may be ſhut vp, and keepe Holy-day. And therefore the *Egyptians*, when they would Hierogliffe a King, and by ſome myſticall Cyphers, expreſſe his vigilancie; they did put a Scepter in his hand, with an eye on the top of it. Hee travells hard, when all others take their eaſe and laugh; for hee is both Coach, and Coach-man. Hee ſighes, and groanes, when others ſport and play; yet few are they, that take pitie of him, or are ſenſible of his ſorrowes, vnleſſe it be for their owne private intereſt. Whereas indeed, onely for his owne ſake, and for that generall care that he hath of all, he ought of all to be both loved, feared, and reſpected.

A vigilant King, how depainted by the Egyptians.

The wretched eſtate of a King.

Few informe him of the truth, for feare of drawing hatred vpon themſelues: Few, if he be in an errour, will ſeeke to put him out of it, & they know well enough, why, and wherefore they let him alone, and ſuffer him to goe on in't; and ſo doe we too: Onely forſooth to put themſelues forward, & that they may come to mount and ſoare the higher, and the ſooner, though it be with waxen winges, and muſt in the end, like *Icarus*, come tumbling downe, and fall into the Sea, where they, and their fortunes, are to ſinke for ever, never to be ſeene more.

But what doe I talke of theſe tranſcendencies? I divine nothing. They are thinges out of my element, and therefore I will let them alone. It is mens fooliſhneſſe, and their want of judgement and diſcretion (as I told you before) that leades them thus along (deceived with theſe vanities) to their deſtruction: and of all other, moſt miſerable are your great Lords, & other Noble Gentlemen, who ſpending where they need not, fall into need themſelues. For

The miſerable condition of your great Lords and Gentlemen.

even

euen ſmall and ſlight expences, vſed often & too abundantly, conſume the ſubſtance, their feathers begin to faile them, they fall away by one and by one; heere loſe a principall, there a Sarcell, and ſo in the reſt: ſo that (hauing neuer a ſound feather left, neither in wing, or traine; wherewith to maintaine their flight:) they are called *Pelones*, or *Peladas*, peel'd Gentlemen, that haue had their Plumes pluckt. Whereupon they are forced to retire themſelues home into the Country, to liue vpon ſome poore Farme or other, where they muſt ſpend their time in breeding of Cattell, as Pigs, Hens, and Chickens, and the like, reckoning the Egges that are dayly laid, making account thereof, as of their chiefeſt living.

Hence therefore I ſet downe this as a ruled Caſe; That if a rich man will governe himſelfe, he ſhall neuer be poore. And if a poore man will be thriuing, he ſhall quickly be rich. Both of them applying themſelues in all things, according to the time, and as they ſee occaſion. For it is not alwayes fit for a Gentleman to ſaue; nor for a poore man to ſpend. There are entertainments to be had, but ſuch as are rather to be had for entertainment then vndoing.

Profitable leſſons both for rich and poore.

Vpon occaſion, euery man ought to ſhew himſelfe, like himſelfe, according to the meanes that God hath given him. For to this end hath he beſtowed theſe his bleſſings vpon him. But not that all men ſhould walke cheeke by joule, foote by foote, ſide by ſide one with another, as if they were all fellowes, and no difference of Eſtates, or Perſons.

If a Noble man ſhall be a great ſpender, let a meaner Gentleman hold his hand, and let him not be-foole himſelfe to thinke, that hee can doe as much with three, as the other with thirty. He doth not conſider that theſe are abortiue births; and things that are out of their naturall courſe: vvhereby he becomes a by-word, and laughing ſtocke among the people: and his wealth being waſted, turnes begger, and mewes himſelfe vp in a corner, and dares not be ſeene. That man doth not vnderſtand, (who is not of good ability) that he does ill, to ſeeme to be a Cocke, before hee be out of the ſhell, and to ſtretch out his throat, as if he would over-crow all the world. If he be a Raven, and can but croke at the beſt, why will he offer to ſing and put forth his voice? Or why, when ſome Flatterer ſhall tell him that he hath an excellent ayre, and ſings exceeding ſweetly, doth he not perceiue that he onely commends him, to make him (as it is in the Fable) let fall his Cheeſe, and then laugh at him when he ha's done? The ſelfe-ſame Leſſon I reade to all, that every man would learne to know himſelfe: let him try the temper of his Steele, and let him not goe about to fyle iron with a fyle of wood, leſt he finde it loſt labour. And when he heares a man murmure at another, let him ſhut the doore, leſt another may murmure at him.

Good inſtructions for a Maſter of a Family.

It is fit, that wee ſhould all ſleepe vpon on foote (as the Crane doth) when our wealth, (which is the life of this world) lyes vpon it: caſting about (now that all is gone) how we may doe, that we may not be driven to ſteale. For to let things runne to waſte, is not liberalitie, but looſeneſſe. And with that, which thy Carrer, thy Cooke, and thy *Deſpenſero*, ſhall ſteale from thee, and never thanke thee; (for theſe are your onely three (*b*) Cheaters,) thou maiſt reward halfe a doozen of thy other Servants.

But I ſpeake no more of their theft, then others waſte; for they will all ſteale, all filch (ne're a barrell better Herring) looke what is vnder their charge, they will be ſure to nimme ſomewhat out of it. One a little, and another a little: and many a little makes a mickle. So that what with a little, and what with a mickle, it mounts to ſo much in the end, and makes ſuch a deepe hole in thy maine eſtate, that thou art much maymed by it, if not wholly ſwallowed vp and vtterly ſunke.

And here I muſt not ſticke to tell the Maſters themſelues, That a great part of this fault is theirs; for that Servants wages (vſually) are too ſhort, and ill

(*a*) *The Spaniſh phraſe is* Tres del mohino. *That is, when foure play at Dice, or Cards, two againſt two, (yet three of them Partners) thoſe three combine to cozen the fourth man of his money. Whence growes that Proverbe,* Tres al Mohino.

ill payd. For, if they be ſerued by men, that are in neceſsitie, and conſtrained by want, they ſhall finde few of them faithfull. Thou wilt not ſticke ſometimes in an humour, to play away at one reſt, all thy whole yeares Revenues. This is naught, giue it over. Pay thy ſervants well, vſe them with courteſie, and ſpeake kindly vnto them; for the rewarding and recompencing of ſervices, makes the Maſter to be eſteemed, and reſpected, according to his worth and qualitie, and incourageth the poore ſervant, (by requiting him for his paines,) to ſerue him the better, and with the more alacritie. There are ſome Maſters, that will not beſtow a Royall on the beſt ſervant they haue, thinking it enough, that they haue onely their bare wages, and that in giuing them that and their dyet, they are very well paid.

Reaſons in fauour of ſeruants.

No (my Maſters) this may not ſerue your turne, it ſtand's not with reaſon to doe no more; for this is but their due, and deſerues but little or no thankes at all. But by giving that, which is not their due, thou bindeſt them to doe more then their due, and winneſt them to ſerue thee with the greater loue. Whereas, if thou (being a Maſter) ſhalt not inlarge thy hand, and bee better vnto him, then the bare bargaine that is driven betweene yee, it is no great marvell, if thy ſervant hold backe, and ſteppe not a foote farther then thoſe bounds, wherevnto his Covenant binds him:

A Tale of a miſerly Gentleman.

As it hapned to a cowardly Gentleman, who (preſuming too much on his wealth, and the greatneſſe of his meanes) fell at odds with another Gentleman that was very valiant; and finding himſelfe farre inferiour vnto him, both in ſtrength and in courage, was willing to entertaine a proper young fellow, of good mettall, and approved Valour, to wait vpon his perſon.

Now it is hapned, that this Enemy ſetting one day vpon him, this his ſeruant drew in his defence, and behau'd himſelfe ſo well, that he made his Adverſarie retire with diſhonour, and held him play ſo long, till his Maſter was quite out of danger.

In this fray, the Young man loſt his Cloake, and the ſcabberd of his Sword. When all was paſt, and this fray (whereof I told you) fully ended, my honeſt Serving-man gets him home, but his vnthankefull Maſter did neither make good this his loſſe, nor returne him any requitall in the world. It was this Gentlemans hap afterwards, to meet with his Maſter againe, and having a good Cudgell in his hand, he affronted him, and gaue him the Baſtanado vpon the former quarrell: his ſervant all the while ſtood ſtill and was content to be a looker on, while the other did beate him. His Maſter cryde out vnto him, that he ſhould come in and helpe him. Your *Worſhip* (quoth his man) did agree with me to pay me my wages monethly, and I did covenant with you, to wait vpon you for it.

(b) Alba quædam eſca, Hiſpanis in vſu. *A meate made of the breſt of an Hen, Milke, Sugar, Rice, beaten and all mixed together. One of the daintieſt diſhes they haue in* Spaine. *This* Manjar Blanco, *was anciently eaten in Princes Courts, and Noble mens Houſes, but now publikely ſold in the open Market.*

And for ought I know, neither of vs both are bound to any more. So that if thou mindeſt that they ſhould ſtrain themſelues for thee, & doe thoſe things, that may advance thy ſervice; with that which thou ſo diſſolutely loſeſt, and vainely and idly throweſt away, gaine their good-wils, and thou ſhalt gaine this thereby, that they will not rob thee of thy wealth; that they defend thy Perſon, illuſtrate thy Fame, and deſire thy life. O how often haue I ſeene them carry away, and carried away my ſelfe, whole tartes of *Manjar (b) Blanco*, Pigs, Pidgeons, Stock-Doues, Cheeſes of a hundred ſundry ſorts, and other infinit things to ſell, which are too tedious to relate, and I feare me, both time, and memory would faile mee, if I ſhould goe about to recount them vnto thee! Onely I will tell thee, that theſe diſorders, being a generall diſeaſe, whereof all of them were ſicke, infected me alſo, and made mee become as bad as the beſt of them. I liu'd amongſt a company of Wolues, and I learned of them to howle, and devoure Lambes, as they did. I was a reaſonable good Scholler for my time albeit in a different kinde of learning, but at laſt, I loſt all feare: I had learned now to ſwimme without Bladders; I was

flush enough now to forsake their nest; all did game and sweare, all did steale and (a) lurch, and I did, as I saw others doe before me. From small beginnings, great matters arise.

I began (as I told you before) to play a little, to lurch a little, and to steale a little; But at length, I began to inlarge my strides like little children, when they haue beene taught a while to goe alone. I was now perfect in my pace, and had the tricke to take one in the hundred. I no more held it ill (to such passe was my innocencie come) but as a thing lawfull, and to be permitted. I bought therewith some few necessaries, that I stood in need of; the rest I threw away at play; for in my gaming, I alwaies made choice of those games that were the most vertuous, either in Dice, (b) or Cardes, such as were the nimblest to rid a man of his money, that I might make an end of it quickly, and get me home to execute mine Offices.

I once remember, that contesting about a Chance with other young Lads about my pitch, we were so loud, in one of the Courts of the house where we plaid, that with the noise thereof, you would haue thought, the whole house would haue falne downe about our eares. Our Master spake to the Vsher of the Hall, that he would goe see what the matter was; who found vs together by the eares, which made the fault the greater. And (exceeding his Commission) he basted our shoulders with Cudgell-dcaw, making the dust flie out of our Coates, till he had beaten our bodies all blacke and blue; The markes whereof appeared afterwards, when we came to put off our Shirts; which likewise occasioned the losse of my credit amongst them; For, from that time forward they had an eie still over me; and lookt a little more narrowly into my water. And this was it, that gaue the first beginning to my vtter vndoing, as by and by I shall more plainely deliver vnto you.

(a) *The Spanish word is* Sisar. *Now* Sisar, *is to take out of that which is bought, or spent, some small part: As out of a sixt part, one. And therefore it ought to be rather* Seisar. *then* Sisar, *of the Hebrew word* Sisah, Sextare, *or to take out a sixt part.*

(b) *The Spanish words, are* Bueltos, y Carteta: *Games much used amongst the Spaniards.*

CHAPTER VI.

Guzman de Alfarache *prosecutes that which past betwixt him and his Master, till being dismist, he departed from him: And takes occasion hereupon, to condemne Idlenesse and evill Companie, and those inveterated vices in rich men. Hee reconnteth the spoiles, and* Trophees *of Cookes; and tells a merry Story, that past betweene himselfe, and the Cookes wife, his Mistresse.*

THat man is much to bee commended, who knowes to gaine by his labours: But much more ought hee to be esteemed, who by his vertue knowes how to keepe that which he hath gotten. I did striue all I could to please every body, albeit the ill custome of my former lewd life, did now and then lead me awry; so that whatsoever I did, was like forced earth, that fell in short time to it's old levell, and being all but counterfeite stuffe, were but Apish imitations, contrary to mine owne nature, and that bent, wherevnto I had beene vsed. For that Glory that is falsely gotten, indureth but a while, it is not permanent, but quickly passeth away; I was like vnto a drop of Oyle, that falls vpon a garment, which *Si fresca no paraçe, brevemente se descubre y crece*; If it be not presently perceiu'd, and taken off in time, discovers it selfe, and goes increasing. Now, they would no longer trust me. One would call me, *Cadaçillo nuevo*, the new little Siue, or the youth of three dayes standing; For as your new married Wiues, that buy a little Siue to straine their Wine, or any other liquor, for some few dayes, are very carefull of it, hang it vp vpon a Naile, or some woodden Pin, but anon after thinke no more of it, and let it lie tumbling on the ground; so is it with your new servants: you

Proverbe.

you ſhall haue them at the firſt very diligent and carefull, and like new Broomes, ſweepe all cleane, but after a while they grow negligent and lazie, and are wearie of well doing. Another would call me *La Gata de Venus*, one of *Venus* Cats; A craftie knaue from the Cradle. But they were all deceived; For I was naturally good, and in mine owne diſpoſition, I neither had read nor knew ſo much; but I depraved this good nature of mine, and I did ill diſpoſe of it. Vice and want altred this my good inclination, and made me otherwiſe then I would haue beene. And what knavery I had in me, I learnt it of the Officers there, and the other ſervants of the houſe. And theſe are they that I muſt thanke; for they were the only men that brought mee to it; I was but coorſe Sugar till they refin'd me.

There are ſome happie theeues, that come to be old men before they die; others are ſo vnlucky, that for the very firſt robberie, that ever they committed, haue beene taken in the manner, and preſently hanged, without any more adoe. That which in others was but a veniall, was in me, a mortall ſinne. And it was fit it ſhould be ſo, becauſe I did degenerate from what I was, by doing that which I ought not to haue done. I did vndoe my ſelfe by ill company; which is Vices Ladder, Vertues Hangman; the Wine that makes drunke; the Smoake that choaketh; the Sorcereſſe that bewitcheth; Marches Sunſhine, a deafe Adder, and an intiſing Syrene.

Ill companie, is the Author of all miſchiefe.

When I firſt began to ſerue, I applied my ſelfe to my worke, and ſought to pleaſe; but afterwards, my ill-acquaintance (bad friends as they were) did ſweetly vndoe me. Idleneſſe was a great helpe therevnto, if not the ſole cauſe of all my hurt. For, as vnto him that is well occupied, no Vertue is wanting; ſo vnto him that is idle, there is no Vice, which is not his Companion. Idleneſſe is the high way to diſtruction; it is that ſpacious field, that opens to perdition; it is that Plough, wherewith bad thoughts are ſowne; It is the ſeed of Tares, caſt into the ground; it is that Woman-weeder that plucks vp goodneſſe by the roots; It is that Sickle that cuts downe all our good works; It is that Flaile, which threſheth all honour out of vs: It is that Cart, which comes loaden home with miſchiefe; and it is that Barne, wherein all the Vices in the world are mowed, and ſtored vp. Mine eye was not ſet vpon my ſelfe, but on others; and looke what I ſaw them doe, (that me thought) was likewiſe lawfull for me: Not conſidering, that becauſe they were in places of credit, (that were able to beare them out) and being old-beaten ſouldiers in all manner of theeveries, it might become them well enough to doe as they did; for by this meanes, they were to make themſelues a Fortune, and to this end only doe they ſeeke to ſerue good Maſters. I was willing to be one of the number, and would faine ranke my ſelfe amongſt them, by doing as they did, being no way their equall, but a poore *Picaro*, a rag-taild Rogue, out both of clothes and credit.

Idleneſſe, what kinde of thing it is. What euill effects it bringeth forth.

He that will not doe ill, muſt looke well into himſelf.

But if excuſes may prevaile, and that I may ſay ſomething for my ſelfe; When I ſaw that every man walkt ſo freely this way, without checke or controule; it ſeemed to me to be the land of (a) *Permiſſion*; and that I might paſſe vp and downe there as well as they: Being perſwaded, (as I told you before) that it was a worke of Vertue, a very good deed, and very juſtifiable, howbeit afterwards I was beaten from that errour: My thought though was good, but my vnderſtanding was amiſſe: For the Grace and favour of this *Bull*, did in eſpeciall words grant the vſe and exerciſe thereof to the elder brothers, that are free of the Incorporation of the rich and Potent; to thoſe that are Favorites to the Proud, to the Arrogant, to Flatterers, to thoſe that are never without Crocodils teares; to Scorpions, which bite not with the mouth, but ſting with the taile; to ſmoote-tongu'd Paraſites, who with ſweet words cheriſh the body, but vvith ſowre workes deſtroy the ſoule. Theſe vvere the men that might doe any thing, all vvas vvell done that they did;

(a) *The Spaniſh phraſe is*, Terra de Xauxa.

The Brotherhood of the Rich, what it is. And the evils that it cauſeth.

did;but in ſuch as my ſelfe, it was falſhood and rogueric, I was in an errour, and together with this my error, I became ſo diſſolute, and liu'd ſo diſorderly, that my diſeaſe even a farre of might eaſily be diſcerned: howbeit all was not worth a ſtraw, as being things not to be reckoned of, or ſcarce worthy the talking of. It is a common ſaying; *Que el poſt vero, que Sabe las deſgraçias, es el Marido.* That the good man, is the laſt that knowes, what things are amiſſe at home. *Proverb.*

Of all theſe my mad prankes, and croſſe fortunes that did befall mee, ſcarce one of a thouſand came to my Maſters eares; Either becauſe being willing (as I was) to pleaſe them, and to get their good will, they would not haue my Maſter to conceiue hardly of me, and ſo put me away; Or elſe, becauſe (though now and then they would chide mee, and tell me mine owne) ſeeing all the World was alike, and that it was every mans Caſe as well as mine; they did not much wonder at it. But for ſome negligences of mine, and other things that were two tranſparent; my Maſter grew ſomewhat angry vvith mee, and ſpurr'd hard to overtake mee. It ſo fell out, that hee was one day ſent for to prepare a Feaſt for a certaine Prince, that was a ſtranger, newly come to Court, and carried mee along with him, that I might tranſplant the Onion; that is, take vp all the leavings, Reliques, Vailes, Profits or Fees, (as the cuſtome is) belonging to his Office.

Wee were no ſooner come into the Kitchen, but all our proviſion vvas brought in vnto vs. My Maſter fell preſently to vvorke; and very nimbly; and with a great deale of dexterity began to chop this, to divide that, and breake that other thing aſunder, putting ſomething apart by themſelues, others (eſpecially if they were all of a ſort) hee heaped vp all together, taking the like order in all the reſt of thoſe things that appertained vnto him (as a lawfull taxe and due tribute, payable to his place) leſt he might, (being buſied about many other things) forget his owne right, and confuſedly intermixe one thing vvith another; it being meete and juſt, to giue vnto *Cæſar*, that which is *Cæſars*, and that every man ſhould take poſſeſſion of his owne, and quietly injoy vvhat of right belonged vnto him.

Now about the ſhutting in of the Evening, when it began to be darke, my Maſter willed mee to bring the Sackes. I brought them, and fell to filling; which (being well practiſed therein) I pack vp every thing that vvas there, very handſomely, and very ſpeedily. And clapping them on my ſhoulder at ſuch a time, and in ſuch a manner, that I might not be ſeene, hee made me make foure returnes, in vvhich journying to and fro, I could hardly fetch my breath, ſo heavily was I laden. All and every one of them ſeemed to me, to be like vnto *Noahs* Arke. And I do not know vvhether in it there vvere ſo many individuall and ſeverall *Species*, or vvhether God did afterwards create them? Now, vvhen I had made an end of this buſineſſe, hee will'd mee to make a fire, hang over the Kettles, ſee the vvater ſeethe, pull Fowle, ſcald the Chickens ſindge the Capons, ſcorch the Partridge; in vvhich and the like I beſtowed a great part of that night. My maſters Cake (good man) did not bake halfe currantly, the byas did not runne the right vvay, he was ſhrewdly out of tune, and much diſquieted in his minde; it ſtill running in his head, that his Wife vvas all alone; and that ſhe could not either vvell order ſuch a deale of vvealth as hee had ſent her in; or that happily ſome vnexpected ſtorme might befall him in his abſence. *The faſhion of your Cookes, when they are ſent for to worke.*

Herevpon vvhilſt his thoughts vvere thus troubled, hee calls mee vnto him, and ſayes vnto mee; *Guzmanillo*, I pray thee hie thee home, and haue a care to that which thou carriedſt hence, ſee that all be ſafe, nothing loſt, open thine eyes and looke about thee. Tell thy Miſtreſſe that I ſtay here; haue a care to the houſe, and as ſoone as it is day haſten againe vnto mee. I did ſo: I deliver my meſſage to my Miſtreſſe. I call for Pinn's, and Pack-thread; I plaſte them vp *What are the Trophies of Cookes, wherof they make their Triumph.*

vp aboue in a Gallery, vvhere they hung in a freſh and open aire. There did I fyle vpon ſtrings the Trophies of that Victory. It was a glorious and goodly ſight to ſee the ſeverall plumage, and diverſe-coloured feathers of Capons, Partridges, Turtles, Hennes, Peacocks, Thruſhes, Veldefares, Pidgeons, Quales, Chikens, Doues, and Geeſe. And taking forth from amidſt all theſe the Conies heads, they ſookt as if they had come peeping out of their berries. I hung in another part of the Gallery Gammons of Bacon, joynts of Veale, Red Deere, wilde Bore, Mutton, Neats-tongues, Pigs, and Kids.

Thus all the Gallery was hung round with this kind of Tapeſtry, vpon very good Nailes & ſtrong Pins, that I had put vp for that purpoſe. So that I aſſure thee by the faith of an honeſt man, according to that faire ſhow that it made there, I had brought home two parts of fiue: nor was this conqueſt yet fully ended; for there vvere yet vvanting thoſe ſeaven * *Infantes de Lara*, to make the feaſt compleate. All the reſt was very well fitted, and I very vveary, for I had vvrought very hard, though little notice vvas taken of it, and my requitall leſſe.

My Miſtris lodged in a lower roome, vvho like an idle Drone, left all the burthen on my ſhoulders, and got her to bed. It ſeemed ſhee had ſupped vpon ſalt meats, for ſhe had her (a) fore-head full charged, which vvas no new thing with her. I, vvhen I had made an end of vvorke, did the like, and vvent to bed. But the weather vvas ſo hot, that for a good while I lay ſcratching, and toſſing too and fro, till at laſt, (though ſome-what I confeſſe, againſt my vvill) I let looſe the reines, that I might goe ſoftly onward on my way to ſleepe. In the end I fell a galloping, that I might quicklier come to my journeys end, and take my reſt. And lapping my ſelfe in my Blanket, vvhich God knowes vvas a ſorry one, (for in that Countrey, they do not vſe to allow Sheetes, nor any more ſaue an old Straw-bed, to ſuch poore boyes as my ſelfe) I vvas very carefull to riſe betimes, according as my Maſter had commanded mee. When behold, (God bleſſe mee) about three of the Clocke in the morning, it being then the time betweene the two Lights, vvhen it vvas neither night nor day, I heard beneath in the Court a cruell skirmiſh among the Cats vvhich vvere making of a banquet vpon a piece of *Poore Iohn*, a dry kinde of Fiſh, vvhich they had drawne out by chance through the Tyles of one of our neighbours houſes.

And for that they are naturally of an ill condition (nor ſhal you ever know, vvhen they are contented, no more then yee ſhall, vvhen old men are vvell pleaſed) you ſhall never ſee them eate their meate quietly, and vvithout noiſe, but ſtill purring and growling, though they haue never ſo much. Whether it vvere that their Fiſh vvas good, and ſo lik't it too vvell; or vvhether it vvere over-ſalted, and ſo made them angry, or vvhat a Devill the matter vvas, that they differ'd about, I know not: but ſure I am, that vvith the noyſe of this their Warre, they did awake mee, and made mee to liſten after them, ſaying with my ſelfe, Sure the Divell is in it, his hand is in this buſineſſe, if the quarrell that was riſen amongſt theſe honeſt Cats ſhould fall vpon the true (b) mans Cloake, and make him ſmart for't, that is not in fault; and ſhould quarrell now at this houre, in ſo vnſeaſonable a time, about the portion of my goods, and then my bones to pay for the meate that they ſhould eate; making my Maſter thereby to mis-doubt my care, and ſo breed a difference betweene vs.

I lay in my bed, as naked as ever I vvas when I firſt came from my Mothers vvombe: I did not thinke, that any body ſhould haue ſeene mee; I ſtarted vp in a trice; and as if the (c) *Moores* had beene come to haue carried away all my kindred Captiues, and this diligence of mine would haue ſeru'd to ſet them free. I hye mee with all the haſte I can, and come running downe the ſtayres amaine, that I might be there in time, and might prevent that miſchiefe, which is wont to grow, when ſuccours are too ſlow.

In

* *Theſe ſeaven ſonnes of* Lara *were braue warriours, and conquered all where they came. And their name is vſed by way of Proverbe, when ſomething is wanting yet to be done.*

a *When a man has drunke hard, it is an vſuall phraſe in Spaine:* Cargò De lantero, *Hee hath charged, his forepeece.*

Cats and old Folkes alike.

b Sobre la capa del juſto. Si dize; quando paga el, que no tiene culpa. Couarrunia, verb. juſto.

c *It is vſuall in Spaine to haue the Moores come in vpon their coaſts, and carry away many Captiues.*

In a buſineſſe of that importance, I thought all delayes vvere dangerous. My Miſtris as ſhee vvas gone to bed before mee, ſo ſhee had got vp before mee. Which ſhee might the better doe, becauſe ſhee had nothing to trouble her head, and had taken foure ſound ſleepes, vvas lapt vp warme like the Silke-worme, ſo that ſhee had not more to doe, but to rub her eyes, and ariſe. Shee heard this ſtirre as well as I, and thought perhaps vvith her ſelfe (as very well ſhee might) that I was faſt aſleepe, and did not heare the noiſe. She, though ſhee went to bed in her ſmocke, yet as her faſhion was, ſhee vvould put it off before ſhee ſlept, and lye all night ſtarke-naked; and ſo was ſhee now, having not ſo much vpon her to cover her nakednеſſe, as the inheritance of her Grannam *Eue*, neither Smocke, nor any other covering in the world.

The ridiculous jeſt that paſt betweene Guzman *and his Miſtris.*

And thus ſtarke naked as ever ſhee was borne, forgetting through her haſte, to clap any thing vpon her body, ſhe came running downe like one out of her wits, with a light in her hand, to ſaue her goods. Her thought and mine jumpt both alike; the broyle equall; the diligence, in *cauſa propria*, in a buſineſſe that did neerely concerne vs both; and the noiſe on either ſide but little, for we both came thither bare-foote.

Now (if it will pleaſe you to behold vs) wee both of vs meete in the Gallery; ſhee, ſtrucken with wonder, to ſee mee there; and I almoſt frighted out of my wits, in looking on her. Shee ſuſpected that I was ſome *Phantaſma*, ſome Hob-goblin, or wandring Ghoſt, and letting the light fall out of her hand for feare, ſhee gaue withall a great ſchriche. And I that was affrighted as much with ſo ſtrange and foule an Apparition, and ſeing her to make towards mee with a Candle in her hand, I gaue a greater ſchrich then ſhee, thinking it had beene the ſoule of the Steward of our houſe, vvho dy'd but ſome two daies before, & that he was come thither to levell his accounts with my Maſter. Shee ſchricht out ſo lowd on the one ſide, that the neighbors might heare her all over the ſtreete, and mine was ſo ſhrill, that they might almoſt haue bin heard all over the Towne. She fled as faſt as ſhe could driue to her Chamber, as if the Devill had beene at the tayle of her; I ſtroue to make as much haſt to mine; the Cats they began to fly, and as glad as wee to be gone. But to ſee the ill lucke of it, vpon the very firſt ſtayre as I was going vp, I ſtumbled vpon the Cat of the houſe, and treading vpon her in the darke, ſhee ſcracht mee by thee legges with her nayles: then did I verily thinke with my ſelfe, that ſome Ghoſt or other followed mee at the heeles, and was come to cary mee away, and that hee was now catching at my ſoule, and ready to teare it out of my body: wherewith being ſcarred, I fell and brake my ſhinns againſt the ſtayres, having grated off the skinne even almoſt to the bone, nor did my noſe ſcape free, that was broken as well as the reſt. Neither of vs two could vnderſtand, or certainely ſuſpect, who the other ſhould be, all did ſucceed ſo in an inſtant, and were both called out, at the ſound of one and the ſame Bell; till that I having falne on the ground and ſhee having hid herſelfe betweene her ſheetes, we began to know one another by the lamentation and mourning that vvee made. With this fright that ſhee had taken (if the freſhneſſe of the morning did not occaſion it) my Miſtris retentiue faculty had ſhrewdly fayled her, and the locke of her belly being looſe, and the bolts of her breech none of the faſteſt, her poſterne doore flew wide open, and before ſhee could recover her Chamber, ſtirred the excrements of her intrailes part in the Portall, and part in the open Court; that White-pot of hers being ſtucke full of Cherry-ſtones, which it ſhould ſeeme ſhe had ſwallowed downe whole. I was a good while, ere I could make all cleane, I ſwept it, and waſht it, and did all that I could to make all handſome againe, for the keeping cleane of the houſe did properly belong to my charge, as a thing wholly committed to my care.

Then did I begin to know that the Ordure & the filthy ſavour of ſuch acci-

dentall Stooles as theſe, doe ſtinke more and worſe by farre then thoſe that are naturall and ordinary with vs. But the cauſe and reaſon hereof, I leaue it to the Philoſophers to ſeeke it out: It ſufficeth, that it coſt mee a great deale of labour, to the detriment of my ſmelling faculty, and the great annoyance of my Noſe: and this I dare be bold to make good vnto you out of mine owne experience.

My Miſtris vvas much aſhamed of this foule accident, and I more: for albeit I did vvrite man, yet I vvas but a yong Lad to ſpeake of, and a meere child in the knowledge of theſe things; I vvas as modeſt as any Maid of them all, and as tender ſtomack't; and had I beene more man then I vvas, I ſhould haue beene aſhamed for her ſhame, and haue bluſht; if not for mine owne, yet for her ſake. It did grieue mee very much, that I had ſeene her in this manner, as I haue told you; for as I liue, I vvould not vvillingly for all the world haue lighted vpon ſuch an vncouth caſualty as this was: But (do all that I could) ſhee could never be perſwaded, but it was my knavery, and my roguery, and that I did it of purpoſe; nor all the oaths that I vſed vnto her, could make her to alter her minde, reduce her to reaſon, make her capable how and by what meanes this hapned, or giue her any the leaſt aſſurance of my innocencie.

From that day forward, I vtterly loſt her good-will; and I knew ſo much afterwards by a neighbour of hers; vvhom ſhee acquainted with all that had hapned. For that which did trouble her moſt, and did even vexe her to the heart, was, not for my finding of her naked, and vn-array'd; but becauſe ſhe had beray'd her ſelfe. As for all the reſt ſhee did not care a Pin; for moſt women deſire nothing more, eſpecially thoſe that haue a good opinion of themſelues, haue conſulted with the cleareneſſe of their skinnes, and are privy to their owne perfections.

When I ſaw that nothing would ſerue the turne, and that neither perſwaſions, nor proteſtations would perſwade with her; I tooke it for an ill ſigne and beganne to thinke with my ſelfe, that ſome falſe witneſſe or other vvould be raiſed vp againſt mee, to caſt mee out of doores, putting her Husband into an evill opinion of me, as if this (poore innocent ſoule as I was) had been meerely my fault. Never did ſhe looke ſtraight vpon me afterwards, nor ever exchanged word with mee good or bad.

When it it was broad day, backe went I to my Mill againe, as I was commanded, that I might fall there afreſh to my drudgery. But when I came to my maſter, not a word of what had paſt. I was Mum-budget, and durſt not open my lips to him (for my life) in that buſineſſe. Hee askt mee vvhether all thoſe things were ſafe at home? and vvhether I had ſet them handſomely in order? I told him, all was well, and vvell ordered. Hee imploy'd me in ſomethings. And I can aſſure you, that my Maſter & his companions, and I and mine, ſuch as were helpers, and wrought there for him, had more adoe, to gather together, and hide what he had ſtolne, then we had in the dreſſing and ſeaſoning of all the reſt of our meats. And how was it poſſible, that it ſhould be otherwiſe, where there was no order taken, no agreement made, no account to be call'd vnto? What did not wee call for without controule, what was not given vs without grudging; vvhat did vvee not receiue with a great deale of glory; how little was ſpent, and how much was ſtolne? Sugar vvas demanded for our Tarts; and for out tarts, Sugar. So as wee had for every thing twice or thrice over. Theſe kinde of banquets, we termed *Iubilees*; becauſe the waters were Troubled, and there were ſtore of fiſh to be taken. The poyſon was throwne in, and they began to float.

This made mee to thinke, ſeeing (as the common phraſe is) that this [a] vvas my Goſſips bread, but at other folkes coſt; that my fore-teeth were no leſſe able then other mens, to gaine this indulgence. For I likewiſe had a Soule in my

[a] Pan demi compadre el duelo ageno.

my body, as well as the best of them; I wanted not a iot of any thing, that should make me a man; My Armour was not without it's Rivets, to buckle all close. And if I had a minde to the Crums that were faine vnder the Table, (yet so, as not to seeke, to make my selfe equall to my fellowes, or to enter into comparison with them) it might (me thought) be lawfull for me, to make some profit of other mens liberalitie, and though I were no Gamester, yet I might receiue (*b*) *Barato*, as a stander by. I waxed weary with pulling Fowle, blanching of Almonds, and the kernells of Pine-apples, with providing of scalding waters, and other thinges: I had then on at that time, an old Shirt, and a Doublet that was all torne.

(*b*) Barato, *is that mony, which at play a man takes out of his heape, when he winnes, and giues it to this or that stander by, that he may wish him good lucke. Giving lesse, or more, as their hand is good, or their game great or small.* Prou.

Amongst other thinges that came to my Masters share, was a Pannier of Egges; I made thither, and tooke out a good company of them, some few of them I clapt in my bosome, betwixt my body and my shirt, the rest I thrust into my Pockets, and the linings of my Breeches. Now you see, I laid my hand vpon that which wrought my woe. But (to speake the truth) I did not doe this so much for mine owne private interest, but that I might say another day (if I list) that I kist the Bride; and that it might not be laid, that shee came forth a Maid: Or that it should be cit in my teeth; that I had beene at the Court, and not seene the King. The crattie Rogue my Master had found mee out; and that he might sanctifie himselfe by my sinne, and justifie his honesty by my theft, the *Mayor-Domo* being present, and other principall servants of the house, when I was about to goe forth to put this poore purchase of mine in some safe place out of sight, he fell vpon me like a Lyon, and laying hold on my Coller, he began to play *Rex* with me, taking me to *Coram nobis*, haling me by the haire of the head, and treading me vnder his feet.

Guzman *steales Egges, and is taken in the maner.*

You may very well imagine, how well conditioned this Merchandize was like to come home, being with his beating of me, hee had broke them all to pieces, making both the Whites and the Yolkes thus batterd, both together to drop out at my knees. I could not but say to my selfe; Sure, some Poulterers Planet doth pursue me, & my Choller had almost mou'd me to speake it out aloud. But ô (thou notorious thiefe) how canst thou haue thy house hang'd with that, which thou stol'st, and I carried away, and yet keepe such a coile, & make such a deale of doe, for halfe a doozen paltrie egges that thou found'st about me? Doest thou not see, that thou wrongest thy selfe, in wronging of me? But I thought it my best course, to hold my peace. For, in injuries, the best remedie is to neglect them. It did grieue me so much the more, that my Master should vse me thus hardly; had it beene done by a stranger, or so, I could better haue borne it. But I must be contented with my hard fortune; I saw I was to suffer, and therefore I past it over without any alteration of countenance, or replying otherwise vnto him, then by lifting vp mine eyes vnto heaven, which were brimme full of teares, and ready to runne over.

Now the heate and furie of the Feast was past, and we were going home; but as we were vpon the way, my Master said vnto me, What I shall now tell thee (*Guzmanillo*) hearken vnto it, and weigh it well, it is worth the noting; That beating which I bestowed on thee to day, did concerne mee more then thou art aware: I know I had no reason to vse thee as I did; but to morrow, I will giue thee a new paire of shoes, which shall be better worth to thee, then thy egges would haue beene. This was welcome newes, and pleas'd me very well; for those I then wore were old, and all to fitters. But I shrewdly suspect, that my Mistresse, after we were come home, had made her complaint vnto him, and spoken some ill language of mee; for from that time that wee entred in adoores, my Master did ever after cast such a sowre looke vpon me, as if he had beene newly tasting of Wine-vineger, so sharpe a countenance did hee set vpon me; so that now we heare no more words of our new shoes, they are forgot, and I must be content to goe without them. When I saw he

Faire words and large promises, pacifie anger.

lookt awry vpon mee, and that I found his favour to be with-drawne from mee; I ſought to remoue all rubs, and to giue him all the content I could, ſerving him with more care then ever; without committing any the leaſt offence, or being wanting in any thing that belonged to the buſineſſes of the Kitchin; I was not faulty in an haire, becauſe hee ſhould haue no juſt cauſe againſt mee.

Guzman *tries his wit to get ſome money.*

Vpon a Feſtivall day, (as our faſhion vvas) we had made certaine Pies and Paſties, ſome of one ſort, ſome of another; whereof there was ſome (though not very much) of the Paſte left; And the Munday following, was the Running of the Bulls. In the duſt-Basket, amongſt other refuſe-things out of the ſweepings of the houſe, it was my hap to meet with the ſhanke-bone of a Heyfer, which was in a manner whole; I had need of a few of Blankes to make merry with, and preſently (a toy taking me in the head) in the turning of a hand, I had lapt vp my Shanker in the Paſte that remained; which (as I had handled the matter) was to the outward ſhow a goodly faire Conie, that you could not diſtinguiſh the one from the other. Away went I with it to the wonted place, where I vſ'd to vent my other thinges, with a purpoſe to cozen ſome ſtranger with it: But becauſe I was in haſte, and could not ſtay long, I might not wait to make choice of my Merchant. There comes me to buy it of me a goodly graue Gentleman Vſher, (his head and beard as white as Milke) to doe him a pleaſure, I was willing hee ſhould haue it. Wee agreed vpon the price, and hee was to giue me for it three Royalls and an halfe. Me thought I ſaw the heaven opened, in having made ſo quicke a Market. But the more was my haſte, the greater was his fleame.

He puts me firſt vnder his arme a Reportorie or little Regiſter booke, about the bigneſſe of an Almanacke, which he had in his hand; Then hee hangs me at his Girdle, his Gloues and his hand-Kercher; with a great deale of deliberation; After that, he takes me a caſe out of his pocket, wherein were his Spectacles: he pulls them forth, wipes them, and put them on, wherein hee ſpent two long houres. Then he went diſtilling out of a little leather Purſe, one *Quarte* after another, and putting then in his hand, every halfe *Quarte*, ſeemed to be a *Quartile*, giving every one of them halfe a doozen turnes at the leaſt, holding them againſt the Sunne. I had ſcarce received my money of him, when loe, my Maſter was at my backe, who miſſing me at home, came forth to ſeeke me. And having thus found me napping, hee tooke mee faſt by the arme, and when hee had me ſure, hee ſaid vnto mee, What Pawne (my youth) haue you redeemed here? My Gentleman-Vſher was preſent at all this paſſage: the Devill (I thinke) kept him there all this while, for the diſcloſing of this my ſecret.

Guzman *taken in a fault by his Maſter.*

I ſaw my ſelfe now in the ſuds, and knew not which way to get out; I could not quote my Author, nor yeeld any good reaſon for what I had done; ſo that it ſtood with mee, as with prohibited bookes, or merchandize forbidden to be ſold: and puniſhing me for my fault, he afterwards diues me into my pocket; and when hee had fiſht out my money, hee cries; Let goe you rogue; Let goe, I ſay: Are you the man, that ſo many haue commended vnto me? Are you that dead Flie, that would doe no hurt? Are you that faithfull ſervant forſooth, whom I truſted with my goods, and all that I had? haue I kept thee in my houſe? given thee of my bread? cheriſht, and made ſo much of thee, and all for this? I will no more be troubled with ſuch a rogue as thou art. See thou com'ſt no more in my houſe, and come not, I adviſe thee, neere my doore; for hee that will be falſe in a little, will (if occaſion be offered) be falſe in greater matters.

Guzman *thruſt out of his Maſters ſervice.*

And ſo giving me a cuffe on the eare, and a kicke in the breech, both at one inſtant, in the preſence of my Merchant, (whoſe dull fleame, (the worſe luck mine) would not diſmiſſe him thence) hee had almoſt laid mee flat on the ground

ground. I was so ashamed, that I knew not what answere to make him, though I had stuffe enough in store for him; But not holding it fit so to doe, because hee had beene my Master. I hung downe my head, held my peace, and went my wayes. For it is a greater glory to avoyde injuries by silence, then to overcome them by replying.

Chap. VII.

How Guzman de Alfarache, *being put from the Cooke his Master, turnes* Picaro, *and proues a notable cunning Rogue. How hee having a great desire to see* Italie, *occasion was offered vnto him to effect his purpose, by the helpe of a theft, done upon a Grocer, and how he went sheere away with it, and left* Madrid.

IN all chances whatsoever that may befall vs in this world, *Mas vale Saber, que auer*; it is better to be wise then to be rich; For though Fortune should play the Rebell, yet Knowledge never forsakes a man. Wealth may be wasted, but Knowledge increaseth; and of more worth is that little, which a wise man knowes; then all that which a rich man enjoyeth. There is no man (I thinke) makes any question that Wisedome excelleth Fortune; though both of them put forward, and hasten to one and the same end; which is, to adorne and set forth men, and to raise them to honour.

Wisdome better then Riches.

Divers Philosophers, did diversly paint forth Fortune, because in all thinges shee is her selfe so diverse. Every one did draw her forth in that forme, as hee found it did accord with himselfe, or as hee did consider it in another. If shee be good, shee is the Step-dame to all Vertue; if bad, the Mother to all Vice. And him, whom shee most favoureth, shee reserveth for most miserie: her courtesies ever ending in disgraces. Shee is brittle, unstable, restlesse, *Tanquam Figura spherica in corpore plano*: like a Spherical Figure, in a plaine body. That which shee giues to day, shee takes away to morrow: she is the flowing of the Sea, tossing and tumbling vs to and fro, till shee leaue vs at last vpon drie land, on Deaths shore, from which she never returnes to recover vs; And while we liue, enjoying vs (like Players to con over our parts, and to learne daily new toyes & devices, to present them vpon the stage of this World.) Every various accident doth disorder her, & steale Wisdomes praise from her. But Wisedome doth quickly repaire that which shee ruineth: And redresseth those things, which shee despaireth of; shee is a most rich open Mine, from whence, they that will, may exhaust great treasure, like vnto the waters of a huge River, which can never be drawne drie. She honoureth a good fortune, and helpeth a bad. Shee is silver in the poore, gold in the rich, and a precious stone in a Prince. In the perillous passages, and in the troublesome chances of Fortune, the wise man treads safely, and walkes securely; but the Foole stumbles and falls, though the way be never so plaine.

Fortune, how decypbred by the Philosophers.

There is no trouble so great on the land; no tempest so terrible on the Sea; no storme so violent in the aire, that is able to withstand Wisedome, so that every man ought to desire to liue to be wise; and desire to be wise, that hee may liue happily; Her riches are perpetuall, permanent, constant, and certaine. But thou wilt aske me; Whither away, *Guzman*, so laden with Knowledge? What think'st thou to doe with it? To what end dost thou commend it with such large eloquence? Why dost thou so earnestly indeare it vnto vs? What dost thou meane by it? Whither doth it tend? Since you aske mee; I will tell you. All this speech hath reference to my Basket, which was the Knowledge that I did studie, for to get meat to my mouth, which is a good

What man should doe, to liue happily.

point of Wisedome: For, *Quien à Oficio, à beneficio*, He that hath a good Office, hath a good Living. And hee that hath no other meanes to liue in this world, and to passe over the necessities of this life, shall for me be esteemed as much in these dayes, as *Demosthenes* was in those, for his eloquence, & *Vlysses* for his wit.

Guzman *complaines of his mis-fortunes:*

My naturall disposition was good; I was descended both by Father and Mother of a Noble and Honourable Scocke. This I could neither hide, nor lose. And therefore I could not choose but shew of what House I came, by suffering injuries with patience, the onely tryall of valiant minds. And as badde men, by good thinges, become worse; so good men, by bad thinges, are made better; especially if they know how to make true vse of the thinges of this world.

Who would haue thought, that so good service as I had done, should haue receiu'd so bad a reward? And that vpon so light an occasion, and when I did least expect, I should be thrust out of all? But in answere hereof, thou vvilt happely say vnto me; Such is the world now a-dayes, that for the same very action, for the which at this present, a man is accounted a good servant, an able Minister well seene in his Office, and to haue behaued himselfe therein as he ought, shall againe at another time, for doing the very same thing, be neglected, ill thought of, disgraced, and vndone. And all to this end, that either herein wee may see the worlds incertainty, and vvhat errours it doth daily runne into; or else be brought to confesse, That God, to those, whom he hath predestinated to salvation, after sinning, sends repentance. O would to God, that I might be so happy, as to receiue onely a corporall punishment here vpon earth.

My Master was now bent against me, his Wife had set him on, and he thereby so incensed, and so apt to take hold of any occasion, that every the least shutting of the eye, or but the wagging of a Straw, would haue beene matter enough of exception against me; and though I should haue seru'd him never so vvell, never so truely, and laboured (as if my life had layne vpon it) not to giue him any the least cause of dislike, yet all would not serue the turne, hee was minded to put me from him, and I must be packing; faulty, or not faulty, all was one. Now I am throwne out into the street, persecuted, & put away: What shall I doe? Whither shall I goe? Or what will become of mee? Seeing I am thrust out of doores for a Thiefe; vvho will now entertaine mee in his service? Who admit me into his house? Then did I begin to think of my former troubles, & how well I bore them out, by bearing of a Basket. I was wont to be a *Bunuolero*, a maker of Fritters, Bunnes, and Cracknels, and was now faine to follow mine old trade afresh. It did not repent me, that I had bin in-vred to troubles; for from them I recein'd my reliefe; and it is good sometimes to take them patiently, and willingly, to the end that they that are driven to necessity, may the better endure them, and not sinke vnder the burthen of them, as many doe, because they haue not beene formerly vs'd vnto them.

And because they can never faile vs in this life, but doe still wait vpon vs, it is fit that we should be taught how to entertaine them, that wee may be the better able to beare them when they come. Besides, they make a man submit himselfe to those things, wherein afterwards he findes a great deale of good. There is no affliction so bitter, from which (if thou wilt) thou maist not in the end sucke some sweet juice; nor no pleasure so sweet, whereof thou mayst not feare some bitter end, saue onely in that of vertue. If vvhen I was so well accommodated to mine owne content, I had not before indured some stormes of Adversity, never in that faire weather of my Scullion-ship, should I haue knowne how to Sayle in my putting forth from the Kitchin, but haue shewne my selfe a raw Mariner, and fresh-water-Pylot, nor haue found things so ready at hand, where-withall to helpe my selfe in time of need.

What

What would then haue become of me? Doeſt thou not ſee how troubled, how afflicted I ſhould haue beene? and what hard ſhifts I ſhould (poore wretch) haue been put to, when my Office was taken from me, not knowing which way to turne my ſelfe, what courſe to take, nor where to put my head? All that I got, I either plaid it away, or vnjuſtly ſtole it. I had bought me neither goods nor land with it, neither houſe, nor cloathes, nor any thing wherewithall to cover me. All was ſpent and gone; As it came, ſo it went; in at one doore, and out at another; what I gain'd, that I loſt; what I ſeru'd for, that I waſted: And as the Proverbe is; I had *frutos (a) por penſion*, my fruits allotted me. Of evill, whereof the leaſt is the beſt, for all my miſfortunes that befell me, my maine ſtocke was ſtill remaining with mee, to wit, my loſt ſhame. For what ſhould a poore man doe with ſhame? Baſhfulneſſe brings no benefit. And the leſſe ſhame I had, the leſſe did thoſe errours grieue me, which I committed. I was now well knowne to all the Towne, and I had money in my purſe to buy me a Basket; but before I would reſolue to ſaddle it to my backe, I did night and day viſit my Maſters friends and acquaintance, to ſee if any of them would haue pity of me, and take me into their ſervice. For I had learned now a little skill, and would haue beene glad to haue better'd my knowledge, that I might know how to liue another day. Some of them did reliene me a little, entertaining me with a piece of bread or ſo.

But it ſeemed, they had heard ſuch things of mee, that they quickly diſmiſt me, having no minde in the world to receiue mee into their ſervice. Might overcomes Right: And where force prevaileth, there the Law goes to vvracke.

With theſe diligences that I vſ'd, I had performed my duty, and complyde with that, vvherevnto I was bound, that I might not accuſe my ſelfe hereafter, of returning to my former courſe of life, out of meere idleneſſe, and for the avoyding of labour, and that I might not vvorke and take paines for my living. But I aſſure thee, that I lou'd it then, as one that had experience what Vice vvas; and knew very well, that by ſo much one man is more man then another, by how much the more he labours in ſome honeſt courſe of life. As the contrary may bee ſaid of him that is idle. But a man can doe no more then he can doe; I did my endeavour. Nor doe I know how it comes to paſſe, that we deſiring to be good, yet we never come to be ſo: and though we propoſe it dayly and hourely vnto our ſelues, yet we doe not put it in execution in many yeares; nay, not in all our life-time are we able to reach vnto it. And the reaſon is, becauſe, we either will not, or doe not thinke vpon any thing but the preſent. I began to beare my burthens, I did eate what was needfull, (for I never made my belly, my God) and a man ought not to eate more, then vvhat may ſuffice for the preſerving of life. The exceſſe whereof is bruiſhneſſe. For it is the Beaſt that gluts himſelfe to grow fat.

By this my orderly dyet, and moderate feeding, my minde was not dull'd, my body was not weakened, I did nouriſh no ill humours, I did breed no diſeaſes. I had my health, I was ſound & luſty, and never wanted money to play.

In my drinking, I was very temperate, neuer vſing it but when I muſt needs, and then too very ſparingly; ſeeking to proportion my ſelfe to what was neceſſary; and to moderate my ſelfe in ſome meaſurable manner, as well, for that it was a thing naturall vnto me, and agreeable to my diſpoſition; as alſo for that drunkenneſſe, did (me thought) very ill become my Companions: Who depriving themſelues of the ſence and reaſon of men, fall ſicke and ill; their heads turne to aking; their tongues, to hoarſeneſſe; their breathes, to ſhortneſſe, if not to noyſomeneſſe; their eyes to a ſwolne ſeelednesſe, & dulneſſe of looke; their legges, to making of Congees and Honours; their feet, to tripping of it this way, and that way, with counter-paces, now backward, then forward, as the Morris-bels in their braines ſhould deuiſe them their time. But (vvhich

(a) Frutos, por penſion: Quando del beneficio que vno tiene, da todos los frutos al penſionario, auiendole Senna. lado la congrua. *Couarr. nias. verb. Fruto.*

(b) Donde la Fuerſa oprime. La Ley ſe quiebra.

We ſtill deſire to be good, but never are good. And the reaſon why?

Orderly dyet, a wholeſome thing.

Moderate drinking, healthfull. The contrary. [illegible] Paſſion, and Bachi. humors, are for the moſt part, a baſe and brutiſh kinde of people.

(which exceedeth all other miſchiefes) this inhumane and ſottiſh Vice makes them a May-game to children, a laughing-ſtocke to men, and a ſcorne to all the world. So as theſe are Rogues, and for ſuch, let them goe, for they are no better then Rogues. And I doe not wonder at it. For all baſeneſſe whatſoever is ingraven on their fore-heads, and is made juſt fit to their meaſure, as being the off-ſcumme and refuſe of men.

A leſſon for Noble men, and Gentlemen.

But for men of worth, and ſuch as ſtand vpon their credit, as great and noble Perſons, and Gentlemen of qualitie, who ought to abſtaine from theſe diſcords; let them take heed, how they giue any ſuch ſcandall, to vvrong their Reputation.

The like for Church-men.

But for a Church-man to diſorder himſelfe, nay, but to goe a haires-breadth awry in this kinde: for ſuch a one (I ſay) it is not onely a diſorder, but hee comes within the compaſſe of being noted for a ſcandalous perſon, & a wronger of his profeſſion, which cannot but reſound much to his reproach. Let them themſelues bee their owne Iudges, and ſpeake what they thinke of it; when they ſee themſelues thus overtaken. Doe they not, for to maintaine their abſurdities, ſeeke to excuſe themſelues by idle and fooliſh reaſons, and make, I know not what vn-joynted ſequels, by which after one errour granted, they runne into a thouſand: and yet perſwade themſelues, that they, and none but they, are in the right? It is a ſhame to treat of it; infamy to vſe it; villany to cloake it, and a thing vnworthy men, not to hate, and abhorre it.

The Market-place, the Rogues burſe.

We had in the Place neere vnto *Santa Cruz*, our proper Manſion, bought, and repaired at other mens coſt. There were all the meetings and the Feaſts. I was vp with the Sunne, I diligently waited on thoſe Shops, and attended often on the Bakers; and if I wanted imployment there, I got me into the Shãbles, to ſee what good I could do there. I made my harueſt in the morning, to ſerue me all the whole day after. The Pariſhioners there-abouts, that had no ſervants of their owne for theſe buſineſſes, would hire me to carry home their proviſion for them. Which I did faithfully, and diligently, without wronging them the leaſt haire of my head. No man of my place had more credit amongſt them, or was better truſted then my ſelfe. So that my Companions vvanted worke, whileſt I had enough for my ſelfe, and ſome other good-fellow my friend, whom I would make choice of to helpe me; who would be ſure to follow me cloſe at the elbow. Then we vvere but a few of vs, and vve vvent vp and downe from place to place: but now there are very many, the number is much increaſed, and all of them haue their hands full, and glad is he that can catch them vp firſt. And I can aſſure you, that there is not any Eſtate, that hath more inlarged it ſelfe, then that of the *Picaro's*; for all your Rogues apply themſelues to the bearing of Baskets, and carrying of Burthens, they count it a very good Trade, and theſe Rogues grow proud of it. And to this paſſe doth mis-fortune bring a man, that his Infamy, he makes his glory; his Baſeneſſe, he counts his Honour; and earneſt, he turnes to jeſt.

It ſo fell out, that there were certaine Companions of Souldiers to be raiſed, and Captaines appointed for the conducting of them. Now when any ſuch thing happeneth, it is preſently ſpread abroad over all the Towne, every corner of the ſtreet is full of it, and every private houſe is made a Councell of State.

Porters, and Car-men, and the like baſe Rogues will not ſticke to talke of State-buſineſſes.

Nor doth that of your *Picaro's* ſleepe in the meane while; every Porter, and Basket-bearer will haue a hand in the Government of the Common-wealth as well as other men; they will fall into diſcourſe of the buſineſſe, vent their opinions, and conclude, what things ought to be done, how carried, and who fitteſt for the managing of theſe great affaires. Nor doe not thou thinke, that becauſe they are baſe in their qualitie and condition, that therefore they are the farther off from the Truth, or their intelligence the leſſe certaine. If thou doe, thou art much deceiued; for it is rather the quite contrary with them.

For

For it often-times ſo comes to paſſe, that they know the eſſentiall points of things, and participate of the ſecrets of State; and there is a great deale of reaſon for it. For, in regard of the vnderſtanding, ſome there are, nay, very many of them, who if they would applie it well, and accommodate it, as others doe, making the like vſe of it, haue it ſtrong and good. Beſides, ſithence that they goe all day long from one place to another, through diuers ſtreets, and into ſundry houſes, and being that they be ſo many, and ſo ſcattered and devided over all the Towne; of many they heare many things; and though it be vſually ſaid amongſt vs; (a) *Quot capita, tot ſenſus.* So many men ſo many mindes. And though happily one, or ſay a hundred, ſhould ſhoot wide of the marke, and diſcharge the follies of their idle braines; yet doubtleſſe, there are others againe, that diſcourſe wiſely, and will come very neere vnto, if not hit the Pinne.

(a) Quantas Cabeças tantos pareceres.

Now we (having raked together all the newes of the whole Towne) when we are met together, and are ſitting at our ſupper, every man opens his ſtore, and tels what hath paſt in Court, ſome relating one thing, and ſome another. Beſides, there is not that Victualing-houſe or Taverne, but whatſoever hath beene talked of there, is brought to our eares. For there likewiſe are held your open Courts, and publike Aſſemblies, were all queſtions and doubts are winowed and ſifted to the full, nothings eſcapes their ſearch and inquirie; There they limit the Turks power, reforme Councels, and taxe your Miniſters of State.

In a word, there all things are made knowne, there all things are treated of, and they are the Law-givers, that preſcribe rules to all; for they ſpeake all out of *Bacchus* his owne mouth, having *Ceres* for their Aſcendent, converſing with a full belly, and a free heart, and if the Wine (a) bee new, the Veſſell will runne over, it muſt needs worke, and can no longer hold. With that then, which wee haue learned from others, wee come afterwards to ſit and determine of every particular paſſage, every man according to his ſeverall opinion, ſetting downe his ſeverall cenſure. One while we reſolue, that theſe Companies are to march towards *Italy*; and that went for good, and paſt the more currant amongſt vs, becauſe their Banners were advanced towards *Mancha*, and were now farre entred into that Countrie, paſſing from *Almodonar* and *Argamaſilla*, along the skirts of the Kingdome of *Toledo*, till they had got to *Alcala de Henares*, and *Guadalajara*, compaſſing all the way as they went, the *Mediterranean* Sea.

In Vino veritas.

(a) Si el Vino es nueuo, hiere la tinaja.

Me thought, this was a very good occaſion for me to take hold on, for the executing of my former deſires, which with earneſt longing did mightily ſpurre me on to vndergoe this Voyage, that I might know mine owne blood, and whence I was deſcended, how I was alli'd, and of what qualitie my Parents and Kindred were. But I was ſo tatter'd and torne, and ſo vtterly vnprovided of all things for this my intended journey, that the bridle of Reaſon made me ſtop vpon my courſe, and held me backe from going farther forward, it ſeeming vnto me (vpon better deliberation) a thing impoſſible to be effected. But notwithſtanding, my minde ranne ſtill on nothing elſe.

Guzman deſires to paſſe out of Spaine into Italie.

This was ſtill in my head, and I could not beate it out. In the day time it was my ſtudy; and in the night I dream'd ſtill on that, and nothing but that. And if that Roman Proverbe taketh place (*Si quieres ſer Papa, eſtampalo en la teſta*) if thou mindeſt to bee Pope, thou muſt haue him to write in thy forehead: it was truly verified in mee. For, as I was beating my braines about this buſineſſe, toſsing them a thouſand times to and fro, full of this ſolicitous care, I ſate me downe on the one ſide of the Place, neere vnto one of the Shops,, where my ſelfe, and this my other Aſſociate were wont to make our *Rendeuous*; And leaning my cheeke (in a melancholy manner) vpon my hand, being fully reſolued to goe, though it were but in the place of a ſtrag-

Proverbe.

ler

ler, to waite vpon the Souldiers, and to carry their luggage for them, thinking this vvould bee place good enough for mee, if I could not light on a better.

Whileſt I was deviſing this with my ſelfe, on the ſodaine I heard a voyce, which ſaid; *Guzman, Guzmanillo?* I lookt about, and turned my face towards the place, from whence the voice came. And I perceiu'd at laſt, it was a Grocer, that ſtood vnder the walking place vnderſet with Pillars, that cal'd me vnto him, neere adjoyning to the Butcher-row. I held vp my hand, and made a ſigne vnto him, that I would haſten thither. I got me vp, and came to ſee, what he would with me. He ſpake vnto me, and bid me open my Basket. I did ſo. That no ſooner done, but he throwes me into it, about ſome two thouſand fiue hundred *Royals* in Silver and Gould, and in ſome few *Quartes*. I ask't him; To what Braſier I ſhould carry this Copper? Copper, you rogue? Come, vp and away with it, for I muſt goe pay it to a Merchant a ſtranger, that had ſold me ſome Wares at my ſhop.

Guzman *reſolues to ſteale a ſumme of money, and puts it in execution.*

He ſaid one thing, and I thought another: which was, to ſhew him a tricke at the next turning. And beleeue me, the joyfull newes of a deſired birth, did never come more welcome to the eares of a loving Father: Nor the Mariner beaten by tempeſt, did with more joy diſcover on the ſodaine the Harbour, that he ſought to put into: Nor any rendred Towne, to that famous Captaine that beſieg'd it, gaue ſo much content, nor had ſo ſweet a ſound with it, or afforded ſo pleaſing an Accent; as I conceiued then in my ſoule, hearing that ſweet and melodious voyce of my Grocer, when he ſaid, (*b*) Open thy Basket. Me thought it was a braue word, they were letters of Gold ingraven in my heart, leaving it full of joy, but much more when they had qualifi'd themſelues, by actually putting me into a quiet and peaceable poſſeſsion of that, which I was perſwaded would be my beſt remedie.

(b) *The Spaniſh word is* Capacha: *a* Capatitate.

Vpon this luckie incounter, I began alreadie to diſpoſe of this money, and to change my courſe of life. I laded my ſhoulders with it, faining; that it did weigh very heauie, but my heavines was the more, that there was no more of it. My honeſt Grocer, he (good man) goes afore, and I follow after, but with a wondrous deſire to meet with ſome throng, or preſſe of people in ſome ſtreet or other, or to ſlip aſide into ſome houſe, where I might effect my purpoſe. Fortune (as good lucke was) had, in the very nicke, fitted me with one, juſt according to the meaſure of my deſire. For if I would haue wiſht for an opportunitie, I could not haue deſired a fairer. For as I was entring into the principall Gate, I got me away ſome three ſtreets from thence by a blinde Poſterne doore, and fetching bouts from one corner to another, with ſome what a quicke, but not diſcompoſed pace, that I might the better avoyd all ſuſpition, I went away gallantly, winding this way, and turning that way, till I had got to (*c*) *Puerta la Rega*, where I eaſed my ſelfe of my load, and made downe to the River. From thence I croſt over to (*a*) *Caſa del Campo*, and being holpen by the night, I walkt (through a little thicket of Alder trees, Poplars, and other well-growne buſhes of thorne) a League farther: in the thickeſt part whereof I caſt Ankor, and had now pitcht my Standard, that I might with my mature counſell thinke vpon things to come, and what fruit and benefit I might make of my late purchaſe. For it is not enough to begin well, nor to goe on well, but to end well. For to little vſe ſerue good beginnings, and better proceedings, vnleſſe they be crowned with proſperous endings. What good would this theft haue done me, if I had beene taken with it, but to loſe that, and with it, perhaps my eares, if not to haue beene (*e*) hang'd for my labour, if I had beene of yeares? There I entred into conſultation with my ſelfe, what I were beſt to doe: I made tryall where the water was deepeſt, and there where the buſhes were thickeſt, I made a deepe hole; and wrapping the money in the linings of my breeches and my doublet,

(c) *A chiefe Gate ſo called.*
(d) *A houſe of pleaſure belonging to the King of* Spaine, *not far from* Madrid.
(e) *The Spaniſh phraſe is,* auer comprado vn cabo de anno. i. La memoria y ſufragios, que ſe hazen por el difunto cumplido el anno que muriò.
That is, the memoriall & ſuffrages, which are made for the dead the yeares being fully ended after his death.
Couarruuias Verb. Cabo.

doublet, I put it in, covering it over very handſomely with ſand and ſtones; ſetting vp a marke, that I might not forget the place where I had hid it, hankering there-abouts, that I might ever and anon haue an eye vpon it, for the ſpace of almoſt fifteene dayes: And all becauſe I would not trouble my ſelfe hereafter in ſeeking for it ſome two foote neerer or farther off, which would haue beene as bad as death vnto mee, if I ſhould not haue hapned to light vpon it, as ſoone as ever I had thruſt in my hand. And the rather for that ſome nights I went from thence to the neighbouring places there-abouts, to get me ſome victualls for three or foure daies, returning preſently backe againe to my old haunt, keeping my ſelfe cloſe, after the Sunne once began to peepe forth, in that wood adjoyning to the [a] *Pardo*.

Hither in this manner as you ſee, had I with-drawne my ſelfe, till the Hue and Cry were paſt and gone, which vndoubtedly was made after mee. Now by this time they had loſt my footing, and I conceiuing with my ſelfe, that the Coaſt was now cleare, and that I might ſafely paſſe, that I might remoue my Tent, and march forward, I made me vp a little fardle of the old linings that were left of my jerkin, wherein I had cloſely lapt vp this my heart-bloud. So that I had nothing now left mee, ſaue the old linings of my Breeches, poore ragged Doublet, and a Shirt all torne and full of holes, but all as white and cleane as a curd, for I had lately waſht them. So that I was apparelled all in white, being wonderfull well fitted for to make one in a Morris-dance. I got mee two delicate fine walking Cudgels, which I had cut my ſelfe, and pill'd of the Rinde, and made as ſmooth and neate as could be deviſed. On the one, I hanged the pretious bundle, which I bare at my backe; the other I made a Trunchion of it, to carry in my hand. I was now fat and full fed, and began to be weary of being any longer a Conie in that Warren, fearing leſt one of the Keepers, or ſome other Ferreter, ſhould finde mee there in the Berrie, and pull me out as a ſuſpicious perſon; To preuent that, I began to take my journey by night, when it was darke, going out of the rode-way, taking croſſe pathes, by-places, and vntrodden trackes, paſſing thorow *La Sagra de Toledo*, a certaine Territory belonging to that Kingdome, till I came two leagues beyond it, to a little place that ſtood in a bottome called *Açuqueca*; whither I had reached betimes in the morning. There I reſted my ſelfe vnder the ſhadow of certaine Quince-trees, where I meant to ſpend that day. Where, e're I was aware, I found hard by mee a prettie yong ſtripling, much about my pitch. Hee ſeemed to be ſome Citizens ſonne, who out of ſome vnadviſed conſideration as mine was, had forſaken his Parents to travell abroad, and goe ſee the world; Hee carried his Fardle at his backe, and being but a yong novice, bred vp daintily, and newly taken from his mothers teat, the Milke yet hanging on his lips, was weary of his burthen, and himſelfe ſeemed heavy, in having ſo heavy a load: ſure, hee had no great minde to returne home againe to his friends; and as little, that they ſhould finde him out. Hee walkt as I did, in the day thorow Groues and thickets, and in the night along the high-way, ſeeking covert, where to ſhrowde himſelfe. Which the rather I gheſſe to be ſo, for that, from our arrivall there, vntill it were night, that wee were to depart, hee did not budge a foot from the place where I was. When we were to goe our vvayes, taking vp his Fardle very heavily, hee let it fall againe to the ground, ſaying, Gods curſe go with thee, a little thing vvould make mee to leaue thee here behinde mee.

Now I muſt tell you by the vvay, that vve had had ſome talke together before, and exchanged (as occaſion offred) good ſtore of vvords, taking account one of another of our Voyages, and vvhat and vvhence vve vvere; He did not deale truly vvith me, and I vvould not confeſſe my ſelfe to him; For by mine owne lies, I knew thoſe that hee told mee. And ſo wee vvere both payd in our owne

a Pardo *is a houſe of pleaſure, ſeated in a wood, belonging to the King of* Spaine, *neere to* Madrid. *It comes from the word* Pardes, Paradiſus, id eſt, hortus domeſticus arboribus conſitus, Pomarium *And amongſt other ſignifications, it is taken for a Parke.* Genebrard *vpon the* Cantic. *ſaith*, Pards vocabulum eſt Perſicum, quod in omnes fere linguas manavit pro horto pretioſo & delicioſo omnium arborum genere conſito. Couarruuias. Verb. Pardo.

b *The Spaniſh phraſe, is* Dança de eſpadas. *A dance much vſed in the Kingdome of* Toledo; *they dance it in their ſhirts, and breeches of Linnen, and night caps on their heads, & bright Swords; it is full of changes and one amongſt the reſt, which they call* Degollada, proque cercan el cuello del que los quita con las eſpadas, y quando pareçe que ſe la van à cortar por todos partes, ſe les eſcurre de entre ellas ξιφισμὸς ſive, βαλλισμὸς. Couarru.

owne coyne. All that *I* could ſucke from him, was; that hee acquainted mee with his wants.

Now finding the conjecture good, and the diſtaſte great, which hee had taken at that heavy burthen which hee bore at his backe; but much more, that his purſe was ſo light, *I* began to conjecture with my ſelfe, that it might haply be a ſute of cloathes: Wherevpon *I* askt him, what luggage was that hee carried, which did giue him ſo much trouble, and made him ſo weary? Hee told mee it was a ſute of apparrell. This ſuted well with my deſires; the induction (mee thought) was good. Therevpon *I* proceeded farther, and told him; Sir, *I* could giue you reaſonable good counſell, if you would be willing to accept of it. Hee intreated mee to giue it him, and that finding it to be ſuch, he ſhould be very thankfull to mee for it.

My advice then vnto him, was; that ſince hee went laden with that, which as yet hee had no great neede of, nor would it much import him, if he had, that hee ſhould rid himſelfe of it, and haue recourſe to that, which might be more neceſſary for him. Heere you carry a wardrope, or what elſe ſoever it be, about you; I would wiſh you to ſell it, and put it in your purſe; for beſides that it will weigh leſſe; you ſhall make your profit of the money, you ſhall receiue for it.

The yong youth diſcreetely replyde, (for your *Toledanos* haue paſſing good wits:) This advice of yours I like vvell, and vvould follow it, but I hold it impertinent for the preſent. And *Conſejo, ſin remedio, es cuerpo ſin alma.* Counſell, without a cure, is a body without a ſoule. What doth it import mee to ſell it, if I want a Chapman to buy it? I haue no occaſion to goe into any Towne, either to trucke for it, or to ſell it, and no body will buy it of mee, that does not know mee.

Proverb.

Then I demanded of him, what pieces they vvere that hee had in his packe? Hee told mee, they vvere certaine cloaths for change, vvhen hee vvas minded to ſhift thoſe others that hee had on his backe. I askt him of the colour, and vvhether it had beene much worne? Hee anſwered mee, that it vvas a mingled colour, and reaſonable good. This pleaſ'd mee better and better, I could not diſlike of it: Therevpon I offered him preſent payment, if the cloathes did fit mee.

The youth beganne to looke ſadly vpon mee, as one that had beene ſtrooke into a muze, and fell to eye mee from top to toe; for all that I had on my backe, was not worth ſo much thred as would ſerue to binde vp a farthing-worth of Saffron, it was not worth one poore ſmall Comin-ſeed, and yet I ſhould haue the face to offer him money for his cloathes.

This imagination was mine owne, and it may be it entred into his conceit, that I vvas a little yong thiefe, and that I vvould put ſome tricke or other vpon him. For hee ſtood in ſuſpence, conſulting with himſelfe, vvhether hee were beſt, to ſhew them vnto mee, or no? For hee knew not how to truſt mee. And my faſhion vvas then ſuch, that hee could not hope, or ſurmiſe, that any good thing ſhould come from mee. So much difference is there betweene good and bad cloathes, that it giues either a good or badde preſumption of a mans perſon, according to that old Adage: *Qual te hallo, tal te juzgo.* As I find you, ſo I take you. For where knowledge doth not informe, there the habit doth qualifie. But this Proverbe is oft checkt: *Que debaxo de mala capa, ſuele auer buen vividor.* Vnder a thred-bare cloake, lyes many times much learning. And beggerly bottles oftentimes hold rich wines. I did preſently apprehend his thought, as if I had beene vvithin him: And that I might reduce him to a better opinion of mee, and alter his conceit, I ſayd vnto him: My pretty little Youth, I would haue you know, that I am as good a man as your ſelfe, and every vvay as vvell borne, though I haue forborne till now to giue you account what I am: but becauſe thou mayſt lay aſide all feares and jealou-

Proverb.

joalouſies, *I* am now minded thou ſhalt haue it. My native ſoyle is *Burgos*, there was *I* borne, and thence did *I* ſet forth, (as thou doeſt now,) reaſonable vvell acoutred. I haue already done that, which I now adviſe thee vnto: I ſold my cloathes, as having then no neede of them, and with that money vvhich I had for them, together with that which I brought from home, I will buy me other, when I ſhall come, where I ſhall haue occaſion to vſe them. And by being carefull in looking well to my money, (hiding it in ſome ſecret place about mee,) and by travelling vpon the way in theſe tatter'd ragges, (which I now haue on) I ſecure my life and paſſe freely too and fro.

A poore man liues ſecure from harme.

For no man will ſet vpon him that is poore. Hee liues ſafely, and dwels in places vn-peopled, and diſ-inhabitted, without any feare at all of theeues that ſhould come to robbe him, or murderers to aſſault him on the way, and take his life from him. If therefore you haue any minde to it, ſell mee what you haue no neede of, and doubt not my payment, for I am vvell able to doe it. I am neere to *Toledo*, whither *I* am bound; *I* would gladly goe in a little handſomer, and not in this baſe and vile habit that I haue now about mee. The Youth vndid his Fardle, takes mee out a Cloake, a paire of Breeches, a Caſſocke, two Shirts, and a paire of Silke Stockins, all as fit for mee, at if they had beene made of purpoſe for mee.

I agreed with him for a hundred *Royals*, nor were they worth any more; for although the cloathes were vvell vſ'd, and little worne, yet the cloth was none of the fineſt, I ript open the one ſide of my bundle, and tooke out thence as many *Quartes* as ſerv'd the turne; which gaue him no ſmall trouble, when he perceiu'd the baſeneſſe of the money; for though it went againſt his ſtomake to beare any more burthens, yet he could by no meanes excuſe it. But he comforted himſelfe with this, that it was lighter then the other, and more vſe-full vpon all occaſions. The bargaine ended, we ſhooke hands, and parted. Hee went to ſeeke his fortune, I know not whither. And I that night, though late, entred *Toledo*.

CHAP. VIII.

How Guzman de Alfarache, *cloathing himſelfe like a Gallant in* Toledo, *makes loue to certaine Gentle-women: Hee telleth how things paſt with them, and how there, and in* Malagon *they ſcorned him; Hee diſcourſeth of youthfull jollity, and of the craft and ſubtilty of your Spaniſh women; which may ſerue for an inſtruction, and warning to all yong men.*

Prou.

IT is a common ſaying; *Que aunque viſtan a la mona de ſeda, mona ſe queda.* An Ape, though he be cladde in gold, will be an Ape ſtill. And this is ſo infallibly true, that it admitteth no exception. A man may eaſily alter his Habit, but hardly change his evill conditions. Hee may intertaine and deceiue folkes with his cloathes, though hee himſelfe be ſtarke naked, and ſtript of all goodneſſe. I will preſently turne Gallant, and as ſoone returne againe to my old trade; be a Gentleman to day and to morrow a Porter. For, he that knowes not how to liue by the ſweat of his browes, muſt quickly fall into poverty, as you ſhall ſee in the ſequell of this Story.

Guzman comes to Toledo, *and puts himſelfe into handſome apparell.*

The firſt thing that I did the next morning, was the altring of my Doublet, my Shooes, and my Hat; I tooke of that Taffata, that was on the Cape of my Cloake, and put on other of another colour; I clapt new buttons vpon my Caſſocke; I tooke off the ſleeues that were of Cloth, and in their ſtead ſet to others, that were of Silke: ſo that with a little coſt, I had quite altred the fa-

ſhion of thoſe cloathes I had lately bought; fearing leſt for my ſinnes-ſake, or by ſome other mis-fortune, I might be taken in ſome trap, and ſo come to pay both for this, and the laſt yeares reckning. For if (by chance) this yong Youths friends ſhould ſend after him, and make inquiry after him, and ſhould hap to light vpon me, and finde his cloathes on my backe they would preſently ſuſpect that I had kill'd him to get his cloathes, and ſo demand their loſt child of mee, and driue me to giue them an account, what was become of him.

When I had fitted my ſelfe to my minde, I walkt vp and downe the Citty ſome two dayes together, making inquiry, where, or in what place were any Companies of Souldiers, that were to goe vpon ſervice, but could not of any heare any certaine newes. Thus I went beating the ayre, as one that was idle, and had nothing elſe to do.

And as I paſt by [b] *Socodouer*, (which I croſt but ſeldome, and that with feare: and if I went out of my lodging, it was againſt my will, and that late, not ſleeping three nights in one place, leſt, if any man ſhould chance to know me, I might be apprehended and carried to priſon:) it was my hap to ſee a Gentleman, mounted on a Mule, to croſſe the way, going (as it ſhould ſeeme) to the Court, ſo handſomely clad, and ſo well ſuted, that I did envy his gallantry. His breeches were of Murry Velvet, cut with ſomewhat a long, but delicate fine cut, drawne out vpon Cloth of Silver: His doublet of Cloth of Gold, vpon which he had a Buffe Ierkin, layd on with a coſtly Milane-Lace, ſome three fingers broad. Hee had a braue Hat, anſwerable to the reſt, imbroydered about the brimmes, and well ſet forth with it's Feather, and vvas not a litle graced by the Hat-band, Which was ſet thicke with Gold-Buttons, inammelled with blacke.

This Gentleman rode [b] *en cuerpo*, in his Hoſe and Doublet. But his in *Port-Manteau* hee had a cloake, which (if I be not deceiued) was of Raſh, or elſe of fine Cloth, of like colour to his Hoſe, rounded about with a broad Parchment Gold Lace, ſutable to that of his Ierkin. Theſe good cloathes of his ſet an edge on my appetite. And ſeeing I had not got my money by Thraſhing, but came by it ſo eaſily, it began to laugh and tighie in my purſe, it geered and it fleered, and (like a little yong Devill) went gingle, gingle, gingle.

When I ſaw my purſe was ſet vpon this merry pin, I could hold no longer for my heart, but brake preſently with him, and told him in good earneſt, if you haue a minde to dance, I ſhall not ſticke to pype vnto you: And if you will not leade on merrily of your owne accord, I ſhall be as loth to keepe you any longer company. And therefore I vvould vviſh you to accompliſh this my deſire, ſatisfying mee herein, and that quickly, vvithout any farther delay.

Herevpon I vvent forth-with to a Merchants ſhop, bought all things fitting, called a Taylor vnto me, and cauſed him to cut out my cloathes, vvho made ſuch good haſte, that hee was (as the phraſe is) *ni oydo, ni viſto*; neither heard, nor ſeene. It was finiſhed in a trice, before any words were made of it, or any eye had ſeene it. For in three dayes, he brought it mee home, and put it on my backe; being juſt the ſame with the other, and as like as like could be, all ſaue the Buffe jerkin, which becauſe I could not meete with a good one according to my minde, I made me one of Murrey Sattin, trimm'd with trenſils of Gold. My Garters were of Straw colour, fringed about with Gold Lace, and purled with ſpangles. So that now I did ſcarce know my ſelfe; I was growne ſo fine on the ſudden; all was in very good order, and my ſelfe not a little proud of it.

Now I had no more to doe, but to ſet a good face of the matter, and to ſay the truth, for a good face; when I was a Boy, there were few that had a better. For I vvas very vvell-favour'd, my eye quicke, and my countenance throughout very pleaſing. When I ſaw what a gallant Souldier I was growne, I did

a Socodouer *is the great Market-place in* Toledo. *Compounded of* Saca, *that is a place; and* dequeuir, *which ſignifies great; which put together, makes* Sacadquevir, *and by corruption* Socodouer. Diego de Vrrea *ſayth, it comes from* Sacud de vair. *A word compounded of* Scicun, *which is, a place: and of the Verbe* Saca, *which is to draw; & from* deuair, *which ſignifieth all kind of foure-footed Beaſts for burthen. So that* Socodouer, *is as it were a place, where beaſts are brought laden with victuals, and other proviſion, to ſell in the open Market.*

b *A man is ſayd to be* en Cuerpo, *when hee goes without a Cloake, being in his bare Hoſe & Doublet.*

Guzmans *vaine and idle humour.*

I did proudly jet it about the ſtreets of *Toledo*, in a very good Equipage, as if I had beene the ſonne of ſome principall Man of note. I likewiſe entertained to attend on my perſon, a pretty handſome Page, and well clad; and I fell into acquaintance with one that was well skill'd in the faſhions of that Countrey, and ſpake excellent language.

I conceited then with my ſelfe (ſeeing my ſelfe thus inthronized, and ſo well accoutred) that my Father was aliue againe, and that I was reſtored to thoſe proſperous times, wherein I was borne: I thought my ſelfe the happieſt man in the world, and tooke ſome delight in my gay clothes, that a nights I was loath to put them off, and a dayes, I left no ſtreet vntroden, to the end that all might ſee me; though I would not, that any ſhould know me. I got mee vp betimes one Sunday morning, put on a proud and ſtately gate, and in all this my gallantrie ſtept me with a jolly preſence into the Cathedrall Church, for to heare Maſſe, though (let me whiſper it in your eare) I went thither more (I feare me) for oſtentation, then devotion; not ſo much to heare, as to be ſeene. I walkt round about the Church ſome three or foure times at leaſt; I viſited the Chappells, (which were moſt reſorted vnto) till at laſt I came betweene the two Quires, where I ſtaid: There I ſaw many Ladies and Gentlewomen, and a great many of Gallants. But I did ſtrut and ſet forth my ſelfe, as if I had beene the onely Cocke of the game, and all the reſt Cravens; none of their combes nor feathers were ſo goodly (me thought) as mine owne. I did put them downe all for a braue ſuite of clothes. And like a bonny-Sheepheard, made ſhow of all the whole fleece, as one that was very willing, that they ſhould take a generall ſurvey both of my perſon, and Apparell, not debarring their eyes of thoſe leſſer objects, as my girdle, garters, and ſhoe-ties, which were all *del Tudeſco*, curious and delicate worke, right *Flanders*.

The Spaniard hath naturally a proud kinde of gate.

I ſtretcht forth my necke, bore out my breſt, ſtood ſtiffe vpon my legs, advancing one while this, and then that other foote; carrying my ſelfe in that vaine and idle faſhion, that every one at laſt had found me out, and obſerving the ſtrangeneſſe of my lookes, my Mymicke geſtures, and often change of Poſtures, they began to jeſt and ſcoffe at my folly. But as long as they lookt vpon me, I ne're lookt into that; nor did I ſo much as once perceiue, that my faults were the ſtrings whereon their laughter plaid. But I rather thought with my ſelfe, that they did admire my curioſitie, and my gallantrie.

And this is all, that offers it ſelfe to be ſpoken of concerning the men. But a pretty accident hapned vnto mee amongſt the women, not vnworthy ſuch fooles as my ſelfe; and this it was: Two amongſt the reſt were preſent there at that time, one of the which (being borne in that Citie, and of extraordinary beauty) fixed her eyes vpon my perſon, (or to ſpeake more truly) vpon my purſe; perſwading her ſelfe, that I that had ſuch good clothes, could not chooſe but haue good ſtore of mony. But for the preſent, I tooke no notice of that, nor did I care to caſt an eye towards her, becauſe I had ſwallowed the others baite, that ſate on the other ſide. Who having made (as children vſe to doe) ſome ſignes vnto her with my finger, ſmil'd vpon me, and caſt a kinde of ſlie looke towards me. I thought that was enough, and that the goale was already gotten. I perſevered in my ignorance, and ſhee in her cunning carriage, till that going out of the Church, ſhe went home to her houſe, and I after her, walking leiſurely along. I ventur'd vpon her, and falling into diſcourſe with her, vented ſome of my Foolcries: But ſhe, (as if ſhe had beene made of ſtone) anſwered me not a word, nor riſented nothing that I ſaid vnto her: yet for all this ſhee did not ſticke now and then to turne her head aſide towards me, and to diſcover her face vnto me, which was the fire that did burne me aliue. At laſt we come to a ſtreet, neere vnto the (*a*) *Solana* of *S^t Cyprian*, where ſhee dwelt. And as ſhee entred into her houſe, it ſeemed (ſtooping to goe in) that ſhee

Gizman *caught with a looke, and a ſmile.*

(*a*) Solana, Corredor de Sol Solarium, Verb. Solana. Communia.

ſhee made mee a kinde of reverence and courteſie with her head; and mee thought her eyes laughed as it were vpon mee, and her countenance ſhewd it ſelfe very cheerefull. With this (for this time) I left her, and returned backe to my lodging the ſame way I came. But I had not gone many ſteps, but it was my hap to ſpie a young Wench that had taken vp her ſtanding at the corner of the ſtreet, who had wrapt her ſelfe vp ſo cloſe in her Mantle, that you could ſcarce perceiue the eyes of her. This Wench had dogg'd me, and putting onely forth thoſe her two leſſer fingers of her faire hand, with them and her head, ſhe call'd and beckned me vnto her. I came vnto her, to know what ſhe would be pleaſed to command me. Who made a long diſcourſe vnto me, telling me that ſhee was ſervant to ſuch a married Gentlewoman, a woman of very good faſhion, and principall qualitie, to whom I was much obliged, and could not out of nobleneſſe, but thinke my ſelfe much bound vnto her, for the extraordinarie loue which ſhe bare vnto me.

The cunning of your Spaniſh women.

And therefore, as well in regard of this her good affection towards my ſelfe, as alſo in reſpect of her owne condition, (being ſo great and ſo worthy) and the ſtrength of her Alliance and Kindred, which were men of no meane power and eſtimation in thoſe parts; that I would be pleaſed to acquaint her where I lodged, becauſe ſhe had ſome earneſt buſineſſe to treate with me, and muſt needs ſpeake with mee, for it did much concerne her ſo to doe. I was ſo taken with this, that I had much adoe (as they ſay) to keepe my ſelfe from leaping out of mine owne skinne; nor would I haue chang'd this good fortune of mine, with the beſt that ever befell *Alexander* the Great: Smoothing and flattering my ſelfe with this vaine conceit, that all the Ladies and Gentlewomen in the Towne were falne in loue with me, and now began to ſtriue who ſhould enjoy me firſt.

To this her meſſage, I returned a very graue and demure anſwere, with a gratefull acknowledgement of this her offred (though vndeſerved) favour, which when ſhe ſhall be pleaſed to make me worthy thereof, I ſhall thinke my ſelfe not onely the moſt graced, but the moſt fortunate and happieſt man in the world. In this converſation by little and little, we draw neere to my Lodging. Shee tooke notice of it, and leaue being taken each of other, I get mee in to dinner, for it was more then time.

Now, for that I knew not what this Gentlewoman was, and had never ſeene her heretofore (to my knowledge) my longing was not ſo great to looke after her, as was my deſire to ſee this other. I thought every houre a thouſand yeares, till I might come to ſee her againe; Time (mee thought) was too ſlow of wing, his Glaſſe did not runne faſt enough, his Sithe did not ſweepe away the loytring houres halfe ſo ſpeedily, as I could haue wiſhed. Yet at laſt I hie me to the ſtreet where ſhe dwelt, beſtowing there more turnes, and circling more rounds about her houſe, then a Mill-horſe, or a Mule that drawes in an (*a*) *Anoria*; yet at laſt, when it grew ſomewhat late, and the day ſhut vp, ſhe came forth (as by ſtealth) to talke with me from her window. Then did we enter diſcourſe, and exchang'd many words; at laſt ſhee told mee, that I muſt needs that night come and ſup with her. I commanded my ſervant to provide me a good fat Capon, a brace of Partridge, a baked Conie, a bottle of the Wine (*b*) *del Santo*, and as good bread as could be got for money, fruits and other the like things for the latter courſe, and that he ſhould make haſte, and bring them away with him.

(*a*) Anoria, *i. an engine that goes with wheeles, to draw water out of a Well.*
Some would haue it to come from Anno, *a yeare. For as the Sunne paſſing thorow the twelue Signes, cauſeth the yeare, and brings it about anew: So that Wheele, when it is downe at the loweſt, comes about againe.*

Some ſay it is compounded of am, circum; *and* haurio, *taking vp the water as it turnes about. Others, of* ἀνὰ, ſurſum; *and* ῥέω fluo, *becauſe it cauſeth the water below, to come vp. Others from the word* Annuere, *To incline. Others, from* ἀναῤῥῶμι Reſtauro, reſtituo, renovo. *Becauſe when they are emptie, they come to be fill'd afreſh. Others of the word,* ἀντλία Hauſtoria, *which ſignifieth* Anoria, quaſi Antloria. *Of the Verbe* Antlo, antlas. Diego de Yrrea *ſaies, it is an Arabicke word, of the Verbe* Neuare, *to goe round, making a noiſe, as* Anoria *doth.* Padre Guadix, *that it is called* Noria, *from* Naaura, *which is as much as a wheeling, or turning about.* Couarru. (*b*) Vino del Santo, *a rich kinde of Wine, as famous about* Toledo; *as that of* Ayon Nantueil *in* France.

After

After that the night was well in, thinking it was now high time, I went to the place appointed, where I was kindly received, and entertained with all the kindneſſe and courteſie that could be deviſed. It was now a fit houre for ſupper, and therefore entreated her, that ſhe would command the Table to be covered. But ſhe finding out freſh matter to worke vpon, and ſpending the time in new entertainments, ſpunne out the thread ſtill longer and longer, adding one delay to another; I marvail'd a God what ſhe meant by it; I knew not in the world what to make of it.

At laſt, vvhileſt I vvas muſing vpon it, ſhe puts me into a Labyrinth, beginning to tell me that ſhe vvas a Virgine, her deſcent Noble, her condition and qualitie, of thoſe of the beſt ranke, and that ſhee had a brother, an vnruly young fellow, ill govern'd, and vvorſe condition'd, ſubject to ſwaggering, and to quarrelling, a kinde of roaring-Boy; one that never came within doores, vnleſſe it vvere ſometimes to his dinner or his ſupper, and all the reſt both day and night, hee ſpent in play, and other youthfull pleaſures.

Whileſt wee were in this deepe diſcourſe, behold, one knocks aloud at the doore. Shee cries out, Ay me! vvhat ſhall I doe? I am vndone, I am vndone. So much vvas ſhe moved, ſo diſtractedly troubled with this feigned perturbation, ſo good a face did ſhe ſet vpon this falſhood, and did diſſemble this her paſſion ſo handſomely, that ſhee might haue therewith deceived a wiſer, and better experienced man then my ſelfe. And though this Gentle-woman knew very vvell, both the end and the meanes, vvhereby all this buſineſſe vvas to be carried, yet did ſhee play her part ſo vvell, that ſhee ſeemed to be mightily afflicted, as one that knew not vvhich vvay to turne her ſelfe. And as if then preſently that remedie had occurr'd vnto her, (as a thing ſuddenly thought vpon) ſhe deſired me of all loues to put my ſelfe for a vvhile into a (a) *Tinaja*, that had no vvater in it, yet vvas it not vvithout ſome droppings, and a kinde of ſlimineſſe hanging about the ſides of it, and that none of the cleaneſt. This earthen Veſſell ſtood in the outward Court vnder the Porch. I got in as vvell as I could, as vvilling to doe vvhat ſhe vvould haue me; ſhe claps a Lid over it, and vvhen ſhe had ſo done, ſhe returnes to her *Eſtrado*, ſhe vvas ſcarce ſet, but her brother comes in; vvho ſeeing ſuch a great ſmoake in the houſe, ſaid vnto her; Why how now ſiſter, vvhat meane you by this? are you turn'd Gallant, and thinke to out-braue mee with this ſmoake? it is marvell you doe not let the raine drip into driue mee hence. What haue vve to ſupper? ſo much ſmoake muſt promiſe much good cheere. It is not I trow, a great deale of fire (as they ſay) and a little roaſt.

And as he vvent thus talking along, hee entred into the Kitchin; vvhere hee had no ſooner ſeene our proviſion, but he gets him out againe, ſaying; Here's braue doings indeed; it is newes to ſee this, Siſter. Which of vs two, I pray, is to be married this night? How came this hither into the houſe, and vvhen? What curious banquet is this, or vvho the gueſts that are invited vnto it? Is this the confidence I haue had of you? Is this the honour vvhich I maintaine? and this the reputation, that you giue to your Fathers houſe, and to mee your vnfortunate Brother? I muſt know the truth of this buſineſſe, or elſe it is like to be a blacke night. She excuſed her ſelfe vnto him, but how or vvhich way, I cannot tell you; for partly through feare, and partly becauſe the *Tinaja* was covered, I could not vvell either heare or vnderſtand more then the noiſe vvhich her vvords ſent forth: And in this chollericke humour of his, being much offended vvith her, he vvilled her to ſit down at boord. And vvhen they had ſupt, hee in his owne perſon vvent downe with a Candle, and fell to ſearching of the houſe, and had made faſt the doore, that opened out into the ſtreet: and they two entring together into their private chambers, remained there within, and I vvithout in the *Tinaja*. All this vvhile I vvas very attentime to vvhatſoever was ſaid or done, and earneſtly betocke my ſelfe to my

(a) Tanaja, *a large wide Veſſell of earth, as big as a Tunne.* Antonius *drawes it's Etymologie from* Tinea. Alio nomine, Dolium. *In* Spaine *they uſually fill them with water, with Oyle, with Wine, or the like.*

devotions, in so much, that there was not any one prayer that I had learned all my life-time, that I did not runne over and over, that God might blinde his eyes, and that he might not see where I was.

And finding my selfe out of danger, lifting vp the cover, I thrust out my head a little to see whether my Mistresse were comming, or that I could heare her either cough, or spet, whether any Cat were stirring about the house, or any thing else whatsoever. Every thing that mou'd, my minde still gaue mee that it should be shee. But seing that she staid so long away, and that the house was wonderfull quiet, I leapt out of the belly of my *Tinaja*, like another *Ionas* out of the Whales, though not so cleane as I could wish.

But it was my good hap, that for feare of such mischances, which are wont to happen, especially to young-men, I had reserved my better cloathes for the day, making vse a nights of that old Sute, which I had bought before, so that the care I tooke was not great, and it did so much the lesse grieue me. I ranged round about the house, and went from lodging to lodging, till I came at last to her Chamber, where I beganne with my finger to scratch the doore, like a dogge, and did the like vpon the floore, and all that she might heare mee: but this deafe Adder, was of that evill condition, that she had stopt her eares.

In this kinde of language the night wore away, and the day beganne to appeare: which when I perceiued, inraged, afflicted, desperate, and ready to freeze for cold, opening the street doore, and pulling it after mee, I went forrth (like a foole as I was) cursing and blaspheming, (a) fretting and fuming, and making crosses on the wall, with a purpose never to come there any more.

Musing vpon my mis-fortunes, I drew neere to mine owne lodging, finding not farre from thence a Cookes shop open, where I fill'd my belly with Pyes, such as are eaten by such *Picaros* and Rogues, as my selfe, which were to mee more savory, then any other. And with them, that rage, and wrathfull choller descended downe into my stomacke, which stucke before in my throate, & was ready to choake me. My lodging was neere at hand, I called to my servant, who (waiting there for me) opened the doore; I came in, put off my cloathes, and got me to bed. But the remembrance of the wrong that I had receiued, would not suffer me to sleepe, or to take any rest. One while I condemn'd my selfe, another while my Mistresse, and by fits would lay the blame vpon mine owne ill fortune.

And while I was debating these thinges with my selfe, it being now broad day, behold one knockes at my Chamber doore, and it was the Maid that had dogg'd mee the day before, and her Mistresse with her, who was sooner come in, but she sets herselfe downe in a Chaire, close by my bed-side, and her servant that waited on her, sate vpon the ground neere vnto the doore. The Gentle-woman askt me a long Story of my life; Who I was? what my busines? & how long I staid in Towne? But the Devill a word of truth, that she could get from my mouth. All that I told her, were arrant lyes; for I was made of nothing else. And thinking to deceiue her, she caught me in the trap. I went satisfying of her demands, but fell short (I know not how) in that part of mine account, which concerned me most. For, whereas I should haue said, That I was to reside there some certaine moneths. I told her that I past as a Traveller. and was shortly to be gone. She, that she might not lose the advantage of the Dice, and to shew what a poore gamester I was, in seeking after such transitorie sport, that was to last so little a while, (but a cast, and away) made sure account, if I would but set out her hand liuely, to put a tricke vpon me. And thereupon, she presently began to pitch the Hay, wherewith she meant to catch the Conie.

Thus resolved, she careleslely, (or rather with a great deale of careless care) went discovering her brauery in her cloathes, which was neat and delicate, with rich abilliments of Gold, with other thinges vnder her gowne, which was

(a) *The Spanish phrase is* Echándo mantas, y no de lano. *Casting abroad Coverlets, but not of Woll: i. vsing hairy and harsh words, not milde and soft words, like woll.*

This is an ordinary fashion in Spaine.

was of Naples Grogoram, choyſer Silke all *Italy* was not able to afford.

And taking out certaine Beads of Corall out of her pocket, ſhe made ſhew of playing with them in her hand, toſsing them to and fro; and within a little while after, ſhe feigned that ſhe miſs'd a Relicke, which was faſtened therevnto. She ſeemed to be much afflicted for the loſſe of it, ſaying, that it was her huſbands. And therewithall ſhe ſuddenly roſe vp, as if it did import her to goe backe againe preſently to her owne houſe, that ſhe might loſe no time for the finding of it againe, if by chance ſhe had there let it fall. And albeit I promiſed to giue her ſuch another, and perſwaded her all that I could, and made her large offers, I could not winne her to ſtay any longer.

Away ſhe went, yet paſsing her word vnto me, that ſhe would come againe to viſit me, and ſend her Maid backe againe vnto mee, as ſoone as ſhee came home, to adviſe me, if ſhe had found her loſt Iewell. It made me very melancholly, and grieu'd me much, that he ſhould in that faſhion go away from me; for that (as I told you before) ſhe was marvellous beautifull, exceeding gallant, and wonderfull diſcreet. I had a great minde to ſleepe, and ſettled my ſelfe to take ſome reſt, but I could not continue it for aboue two houres. I had too many cares in my head to take any eaſe, and therefore I aroſe, that I might thinke the better of them, when I was vp.

By that time I had made my ſelfe ready, dinner came in, & while I was yet ſitting at the table, her Maid entred the roome. Who (being a witty Wench as ſhe was) entertain'd me till dinner was ended. And then ſhee told, me that ſhe was once more come back againe to ſee, whether her Miſtris, playing there with her *Roſario* in her hand, had by chance let fall that peice? Wee were all downe vpon our knees, to ſee if we could haue the good lucke to finde it; but it could not be found becauſe it was never loſt.

When we had given ouer looking, I complemented with her, and told her, that I did not griue ſo much for the worth of the thing it ſelfe, as for her ſake, whoſe it was.

Then did ſhe figure forth vnto me the bigneſſe, the proportion, and the true faſhion of it, obliging mee with good words, to buy her ſuch another; promiſing, that her miſtreſſe ſhould not faile to be with me the next day following betimes, making ſome faire excuſe (the better to colour the buſineſſe,) to goe on Pilgrimage to our Ladyes Shrine, or ſome other the like Viſit.

Vpon this I went along with her to the Gold-ſmithes, and bought her a dainty fine little golden booke, curiouſly wrought, which her Maid had made choiſe of it; and it may bee ſhe had her direction from her Miſtreſſe, as having had her ſight of this pretty toy but lately before. Howſoever I am ſure they went cleane away with it, for I could neuer after ſee either Miſtriſſe, or Maid.

Many loue Matches are made in Spaine, vnder theſe holy pretences.

Now was it about three in the afternoone, and I had not yet digeſted the bread that lay in my ſtomacke; I was ready to dye out of a longing deſire that I had to know the occaſion, and to ſearch out the true reaſon of the laſt nights paſſage, and whether it were a matter of earneſt, or a tricke put vpon mee? And ſo putting this affront out of minde, as if there had never beene any ſuch matter, I returned to my former walke: Where I found my Miſtreſſe looking very heavily on the matter, her countenance was ſad and melancholy; and making ſhew, as if ſhe had ſtayd there for me, ſhe beckned vnto mee with her hand to come vnto her, putting her fore-finger vpon her mouth, and caſting her eye behinde her, (as if ſhe were afraid leaſt ſome body ſhould watch her,) ſhe drew neere vnto the doore, and whiſpered ſoftly vnto mee, that I ſhould goe gently on a-fore to the great Church, and ſo I did. She takes her Mantle and haſtens after me, meeting both, as it were at one inſtant betweene the two Quires; and ſhe paſsing quite through them, went directly

out

out of the Church, into the *Calle de la (a) Capineria*, the ſtreet where all your womens (*Chapines* are ſould; and ſmiling vpon me, and intiſing mee vnto her, with a louely caſt of her eye, ſhe ſeemed to wiſh me to follow her. I made after her; ſhe entred into a Merchants ſhop, in the (*b*) *Alcana*, and I with her. There ſhe gaue me ſatisfaction, vowing with a thouſand oathes, that it was no fault of hers, and that ſhe had no hand in that buſineſſe. She fill'd my head with this winde: I beleeued her well-compoſed lies, ſhe promiſed this next night to make me amends; and though ſhe were ſure to loſe her life, ſhe would not ſpare it, to giue me content. She made me ſo plyable, that ſhe might now worke me like Waxe. She bought ſome thing, which came to about ſome hundred and fifty *Royals*, and when ſhe was to pay for it, ſhee ſaid vnto the Mercer; What ſhall I pay you weekely till this debt be out? Hee anſwered, Miſtris, ſee Ware, ſee Money. I doe not vſe to part with my Wares at this price, nor doe I ſell vpon truſt. If you deliver me my money, you may carry away what you haue bought; if not, I muſt intreat you to pardon me.

Then I told him, Sir, This Gentle-woman is diſpoſed to jeſt with you for ſhe has money ſufficient to ſatisfie for a greater matter then this. I am her Purſe bearer, and the Steward of her houſe. So taking ſome Crownes out of my pocket, for to ſhew my greatneſſe the more, I freed my ſelfe from baſeneſſe, and her from her debt: Apprehending then at that inſtant, that this was but a ſtratagem of hers, to be paid before-hand, and that ſhee might not be mockt withal, as it often befalleth many women; nor did I repent me of what I had done; it ſeeming vnto me, that by my faire proceeding, I had bound her vnto me. Nor would I haue given my two imployments of that one day, in the purſuite of theſe two Dames, for all the wealth of *Mexico*, and *Peru*. So I askt her, whether ſhe would keepe true touch with me or no? And whether I might take ſure hold of her promiſe? And at what houre I ſhould come? She aſſur'd me that I might, and for the houre, ſhe would not faile me at ten in the night. She went home to her houſe, and I to entertaine the time abroad; Thinking with my ſelfe, that I had ſeazed on two preyes at one flight, and tooke two Trouts at one ſtroke.

At the houre appointed, I put on my old diſguiſe, and got mee to the Mill againe. I gaue the ſigne agreed vpon betweene vs, which was, to ſtrike certaine ſtrokes, with a ſtone vnderneath her window. But it was all one, as if I had beſtow'd thoſe blowes vpon the Bridge of (*c*) *Alcantara*.

I conceiued with my ſelfe, that the houre was not yet come, or that it was little more then ten of the clocke, which made me dance attendance a little longer. And ſo houre after houre, I ſtaid waiting there, till it was twelue of the night, now and then making the wonted ſignes.

But what ſhould a man ſpend his time in talking to Saint *Iuan de los Reyes*, being it is a *Statua* of Stone? It was but loſt labour, a wearying out of my ſelfe in vaine, and a meere mockery. For he, whom ſhe termed her brother, was her Gallant, and her Sweet-heart: and did maintaine themſelues by theſe kinde of cheating tricks, and conſorted both together in all that they did.

They were of (*d*) *Cordona*, proper in their perſons, and vvell accommodated; and amongſt other young Thruſhes, that they had brought into the Net, vvhas a young Scriuener, but newly married, who being whetted on by this Gentlewoman, and tolled on by ſuch traines as ſhe had cunningly laid for him, had given her certaine Iewels; and as ſhe dealt with me, ſo did ſhe lead him along with delayes, making him to wait vpon her pleaſure, putting him to fine after fine to purchaſe his deſire. But when he found all was coozenage and Roguery, he reſolued to be revenged on her.

That night I was quite tyred out with a tedious expectation, (as you haue alreadie heard.) And when I was about to goe my way, lo, I might diſcerne a great troope of people making towards mee, and ſuppoſing it to bee the Iuſtice

(*a*) They haue an old Tale in Spaine, That the men, to keepe their wiues from gadding abroad, did perſwade them to vſe Chapines, that they might ſeeme as tall & handſome as the men, and they made them of a very heavy kinde of wood. They made vſe of this invention of their Husbands, but made them at firſt hollow within, and afterwards of Corke, to lighten the loade, & that they might be able to walke more nimbly Couarruuias verb. Chapin.

(*b*) Alchana: A knowne ſtreet in Toledo, where all your Mercers dwell. Of the Hebrew word Chana, to buy. Guadix ſayes it is an Arabick word, of alquina, which ſignifies Gaine Couarruuias.

(*c*) Alcantara: A Bridge ſo called in Toledo. In the yeare 1258, a great part of it was carried away with a Flood: but the yeare following, it was repaired and new built.

(*d*) Cordoua, is a Noble and famous City in Andaluzia

Iuſtice, I got me a little aſide. At laſt I perceiued, that they knockt at that doore; I returned backe, drawing neerer and neerer, a little and a little, to ſee what all this company did ſeeke for. And one of the *Alguazils* (telling them within who they were) cauſed the doore to bee opened. When they were all gone in, I got me to the doore, that I might the better vnderſtand how all things paſſed. The *Alguazil* ſearched all the honſe ouer and ouer, but could not finde that he came for. I was about to call vnto them, to looke into the *Tinaja*, and to haue betooke me to my heeles when I had done. But the Scriuener preſently tooke that taske vpon him, and ſaued me a labour, and had a care that no corner ſhould be left vnſearcht.

But, as thoſe things cannot be carried ſo cloſe, but that they will ſoone be brought to light, if they be well followed, one by chance lighted vpon a ſingle hand Cuffe that lay vpon the ground, which at the time of the hiding of her brothers clothes, was let fall and left behinde out of haſt; and becauſe this was a buſineſſe vndertaken for a friend, and every one was willing to doe his beſt, one of the *Alguazils* ſaid, This Cuffe muſt haue a Maſter, who ever it be.

The Gentlewoman would faine haue ſalu'd vp this matter: but having prickt the Hare, thoſe Hounds began to take a little more paines, and to hunt with more mettall, in hope to haue their game. And one of the *Alguazils*, ſeeing a great Coffer there, which (as he thought) might very well containe a man, commanded it to be opened: where they found my Gallant. Wherevpon, they were both will'd to put on their cloathes, and to make themſelues readie; which done, they were both for companie carried to priſon together. I was both contented therewith and aſhamed. Contented, that it was my good hap not to be found there; and aſhamed that ſhe had gull'd mee, and made a foole of me. All the remainder of that night, I could not ſleepe one winke, for, thinking partly on this, and partly on that other Gentlewoman, vpon whom, I thought to make my ſelfe whole, I did conceit vvith my ſelfe, that ſhe vvas a vvoman of another kinde of qualitie, and of a differing faſhion from the former.

All that day I ſtaid vvaiting for her, but ſhe did not ſo much as ſend me any meſſage by her maid, nor did I know vvhere ſhe liu'd, nor what ſhe vvas. You ſee here how well I imploy'd my paines, and my Purſe vpon theſe two, and whether it had not beene better for me to haue laid out my money in the buying of ſome fiftie young Lambes of a yeare old. I vvas now growne deſperate, and for my greater comfort amidſt theſe my troubles, at night vvhen I came to my lodging, I met with an *Alguazil* there, a ſtranger, making inquirie for I know not vvhat perſon. Now by this time you may imagine, in what poore caſe I tooke my ſelfe to bee, and how the world was like to goe with me. I will'd my ſervant to tell him, that if he had any thing to ſay to me, he ſhould be ſure to finde me there the next morning.

In the meane-while I walked out by the Gate (*a*) *del Cambron*, where muſing, and walking, I continued almoſt till it was day, framing Diſcourſes to my ſelfe, what, or whom it ſhould be, that this *Alguazill* ſought for. But when the morning was come, I thought it a ſafe houre to goe home, with purpoſe to change both my apparell and my Lodging.

But by this time, my care was ſecur'd; for I was not he that he looked for, as I afterwards vnderſtood. I went forth to the place of *Socodouer*, where I heard two Mules cri'd for to goe for (*b*) *Almagro*; I was ſlower in the hearing, then the agreeing for them, or in my departing from *Toledo*. For euery thing there me thought ſmelt of Broome, and the ſoles of old ſhooes. That night I reached to (*c*) *Orgaz* the next to *Malagon*. But being not able, out of the feare I had taken thoſe nights before, to take any reſt, I came thither ſo drowzy, and ſo ſleepy, that I was not able to hold vp my head: But another new

(*a*) *A gate ſo called in* Toledo, *becauſe the entrance thereinto, is hard and difficult, it is an Arabicke word, and ſignifies a thorny place, and full of buſhes.* Couarru.

(*b*) Almagro, *a principall Towne belonging to the Order* de Calatraua. Padre Guadix *would haue it come from* Alma-agua, *and of* agro. *Becauſe thoſe waters there-abouts haue a ſowre taſte, though they be wholeſome. Others from the colour of the ſoyle, which is red.* Vide Couarru. Verb. Almagre.

(*c*) *A Towne in the Kingdome of* Toledo, *intitled with a Condeſhip.* Tierra vmbroſa. Guzman *leaues* Toledo.

new occaſion did awaken me, and made me to rowze vp my ſpirits; which was; That as ſoone as I was entred into my Lodging, there came to take charge of my clothes, and ſuch other things as I brought in with me, a young Wench, ſeeming to be ſomething more then a ſeruant, and yet ſome-what leſſe then a daughter; She had a good face of her owne, a hanſome feature, a pleaſant behaviour, and had both wit and tongue at will. Which ſort of creatures, (to draw both cuſtome and credit to ſuch kinde of houſes) your honeſt Inne-holders will be ſure to lay wait for, and ſeldome or never ſhall you ſee them vnprovided of ſuch pretty Commodities to welcome, and cheere vp their Gueſts. I talkt to her, and ſhe anſwered mee; I could not ſpurre her that queſtion, wherevnto ſhee did not kicke me an anſwer. One diſcourſe drew on another, and we continued our converſation ſo farre forth, that ſhe conſented vnto me, and had peremptorily giuen me her promiſe, that ſhe would come and paſſe away the time with me, when her Maſter and Miſtreſſe were gone to bed and aſleepe. She couered the boord; I gaue her the brawne of the Capon. I dranke a Health to her, and ſhee did pledge me; I would haue held her faſt by the arme; ſhe flies off; I ſeeking to catch hold of her, and ſhe to get away from me: reaching at her, I fell downe vpon th' one ſide to the ground. The Chaire was of Wood, and had ſome turn'd pieces in it rib-wiſe, it tooke me juſt athwart the midſt of my body, whereby I receiued a ſhrewd blow. And it was a faire gift of God, that it was not farre worſe; for if the Dagger that I had at my backe, had by chance falne out of the ſheath, and picht with the Pommell on the ground, and the point haue beene vpward, and had lighted betweene one of thoſe barres or ribbs in the Chaire, a thouſand pound to a pennie, but that I had beene ſlaine out-right in the place; and ſo there being an end of me, my Creditours had beene paid. When I was vp, and all was well, I put the queſtion againe vnto her, whether I ſhould depend vpon her comming? ſhe told me I ſhould ſee, whether ſhe meant to faile me or no? Vttering ſome other idle fooliſh ſpeeches, and ſo went her waies.

A pleaſant ieſt, that paſt betwixt Guzman *and a pretty wench at the Inne in.* Malagon.

You haue heard already how ill I paſt thoſe nights before; which made me now ſo heavy-headed, that it was impoſsible, that I ſhould any longer beare vp, and abſtaine from ſleeping. But I was deſirous to riſe betimes, whether I ſlept or no. And therefore I will'd my ſervants, that they ſhould get them ſtraw and Barley, ſo much as our Mules were to bee allowed the next morning, and that they ſhould bring it, and put it in the chamber where I lay. Which being done, having ſet it neere vnto the doore, they pull'd it after them, and leauing it vnſhut, they went to bed. And albeit ſleep would faine haue ſeayed vpon me, yet my deſire kept me waking; but not being able to hold out any longer, I was forced to yeeld my ſelfe vnder the arreſt of *Morpheus* his Mace, in whoſe ſilken bands I was faſt, though ſoftly bound.

About mid-night a little ſhe-Aſſe had ſlipt her halter in the Stable, and got looſe (if ſhe were not left looſe before, as I verily perſwade my ſelfe it vvas mine Hoſts, and went about the houſe to ſeeke her Provant;) This Aſſe came to my lodging, and hauing ſmelt out the Barley, the little foole thruſt in her head, thinking to haue met with a good mouth-full, and in preſsing to come where the Provender was in the Sieue, ſhee wagged, and wagg'd, this way and that way, and ſtriving to get in, the doore began to creake, I that was mindfull of the buſineſſe, a little thing would ſuffice to reviue my remembrance: And now I was fully perſwaded, that I had the Bulls ſure enough in the Place, and that they could not by no meanes get from me. And becauſe I was all this while very ſleepie, and ſcarce halfe awake, I imagined with my ſelfe, that ſhe could not finde the way to the bed, wherevpon I raiſed my ſelfe, and ſitting vp in my bed, I call'd her vnto me. When the Aſſe heard my voyce, ſhe was afraid, and ſtood ſtill, ſaue onely that ſhee did put one of her fore-

fore-feete in the fraile wherein the ſtraw was. I thinking that it was the Wench, and that ſhee had ſtumbled by chance vpon it, leapt out of my bed, and ſayd vnto her, Come hither, my Loue, come to bed, giue mee thy hand. And becauſe ſhee ſhould reach mee, I ſtrecht out my body at large vnto her, and lifting vp my legge, I hit her with my knee on the groyne; with that ſhee lifted vp her head, and ſmote mee ſuch a blow with hers on the noddle, that ſhee almoſt ſet mee on my breech; ſo much was I aſtonied therewith. And when ſhee had done, ſhee fled away from mee, as faſt as her legges would giue her leaue. For if ſhee had ſtayd, I ſhould haue had much adoe (conſidering the paine I was in) to haue forborne to thruſt my Dagger vp to the hilts in her guttes.

I bled mainly, both at mouth and noſe; and curſing Loue, and all his cunning tricks to the pit of hell; I knew that this hapned deſervedly vnto mee: becauſe, being a wild ſimple Lad as I was, I was ſo eaſie of beliefe. But I quickly made faſt my doore and got me to bed.

CHAP. IX.

How Guzman de Alfarache *liſts himſelfe for a Soldier. Hee telleth, whence that ill phraſe grew.* En Malagon, en cada caſa vn ladron; y en lo del Alcalde, hijo y padre. *In* Malagon, *every houſe a thiefe; And in that of the* Alcalde *two: The father and the ſonne. How in a ſhort time, through ill government, all* Guzmans *money is gone; How to his griefe hee is forced to ſerue a Captaine. Some leſſons are giuen to yong men. To theſe, are added the faults of bad Miniſters in matters of warfare.*

AS if loue had not beene a deſire of Immortality, bred in an idle minde: without any beginning of Reaſon, without any ſubjection to Law, which is entertained by the Will; but with it, cannot be put off; eaſie in it's entrance to the heart, but hard to be thruſt out againe; I began to ſweare, that I would never more follow his colours, nor be of his Company. But I was aſleepe when I made this proteſtation, and knew not what I ſayd. My ſleepineſſe was ſo great then at that time, that all my paine could not keepe mee waking.

Which drowſineſſe of mine was the cauſe, that I could not riſe ſo early as I thought, but kept my led till nine of the clocke that morning. At which houre comes me in this my Fiddle-faddle of the Inne, to giue mee ſatisfaction, vowing and ſwearing vnto mee, that ſhee lay within her Maſter and Miſtris, and that they had ſhut her vp, and kept the key themſelues, that ſhee could by no meanes get forth: Though for mine owne part, I did verily belieue, that ſhe did purpoſely play the Wag with mee, and had never any ſuch meaning, but did lie in all that ſhee ſaid. Wherevpon I told her; O friend *Lucia*, your loue hath done mee a great deale of hurt: it began in the Chaire, and ended in the ſaddle. I ſhall looke hereafter a little better to your water. Take mee vvith that fault againe, and I will giue you leaue to hang mee. Goe about your buſineſſe, goe, I haue no more to ſay to you. Make haſte, and bring in break-faſt, for I will preſently be gone. So ſhee roſted out of hand a brace of Partridge, ſerued in with a ſlice or two of Bacon, which ſerued both for our breake-faſt, and our dinner, becauſe the day was farre ſpent, and our journey but ſhort.

Well, I was now vpon going, my mules were ready, and ſtayd for my comming. The [a] Mule that I rode on, vvas an ill-conditioned jade, and ſomewhat skittiſh. When I was ready to put foot in the ſtirrop, I got mee vpvpon a bench; thinking from thence to get with the greater eaſe into my Saddle; but

[a] *The Spaniſh word, is* Mohina. *To wit, a Mule that is begotten of an Horſe, and a ſhee Aſſe, commonly with a blacke Muzzle, a ſwelling noſtrill, and having jadiſh tricks.*

but by her going backe, shee seemed to tell mee, that I should not doe it to dasle my Lanthorne: or else her meaning was, that I should quickly get mee thence, or else that would set mee going with a witnesse: and because shee could not speake my language, that she might make me vnderstand her by signes, forking out her hinder legges, shee flings mee out her heeles, and dashing her eyes, with two kicks, that shee made at mee, shee threw mee a good wayes from her: but shee did mee no hurt, for I recouered my selfe by and by, and got vp vpon my legges. After this I was a little more wary, and tooke better heede. And with a loud voyce I began to cry out: There is not any female, I thinke, in this Inne, even to the very Mules, which hath not her jadish trickes.

Well, I was seated in my Saddle, and my mule was quiet, and being vpon the way, (seeing what mis-fortunes I had suffered) I acquainted my seruants what had hapned vnto mee, with the Asse that came into my Chamber. They laught exceedingly, as if they would haue burst their hearts, and the more, at my weake and childish vnderstanding, that I would giue credit to a Wench in an Inne, who are never good, but at their first comming, and ever after proue arrant jades, that a man cannot tell how to trust to them.

Wee had now gone two long Leagues, and the boy that went a-foote by vs to looke vnto our Mules, would needes drinke. I call'd, bring hither the Bootie, I gine mee the bottle: but no Bottle appeares; for wee had left it behinde vs. Peradventure mine Hostesse (sayd the Boy) hath seazed vpon it, and layd it aside in waggery, because wee might ride the lighter, or be paid for her care in keeping it safe for vs.

Nay (quoth my Page) I rather beleeue, that they amongst them haue stolne it from vs, for to adde more fame to this towne, that they may not loose that good name they haue gotten.

Then was I very desirous to know, how this bad report came first to be raysed, and whence it grew. And because they that vse to carry Merchandize from place to place, and travell oftentimes on the way, and now and then heare diuerse men discourse of such things as these; I thought with my selfe, I were best aske the reason of it of our Foot-man, imagining hee (if any man) could be able to informe vs of it.

Thereupon I call'd vnto him, and sayd; Friend *Andres*, Since thou hast beene a peece of a Scholler, a Wane man, and now a *Moço de Mulas*, one that Lackey'st along with Mules, and lookest vnto them, I prethee tell thee (if happily thou hast heard of it) how this Towne came to haue this ill name, and therefore it is commonly sayd and by-word; or by way of a Proverbe in every mans mouth: *En Malagon, en cada casa, ay vn ladron: y en la del Alcalde, dos*: *Padre*. Every house in *Malagon* hath a thiefe of his owne: And in that of the *Alcalde*, there are twaine; the father and the sonne, both knaues in graine.

The Muleteer made answere, saying, Sir, your Worship askes mee of a thing, which I haue beene told of diuerse times, and that diverse wayes, every one following his owne opinion: which if I should recount them all vnto you, the way is too short, & the story too long, and the desire that I haue to drinke, beyond them both. For I am so dry, that I am scarce able to speake a word. But be it as it may be, I will doe my best to satisfie your longing. Laying that therefore aside, which hath no colour nor shadow of truth, and conforming my selfe according to the opinion of some, of whom I haue heard it, vpon whose judgement, I ground mine, as more agreeable vnto reason. For in that, for which wee haue no naturall reason, nor by tradition left vnto vs in writing, when time shall haue buried these things, a good and a sound judgement must be the Law, which wee must obey, and whereunto wee ought to conforme our selues. And so this had it's beginning, (which is now long since, time out of minde) in this manner, as I shall now deliver vnto you.

a *The Spanish word is*, Bota: *Quasi imbuta, of the Latine word*, imbuo, de in *and* Bibo *It is made of a Goats-skinne, the mouth of it being Horne, with a stopple to it, and the sides strongly sowne and rozend within, that it may not leake. Your Trauellours on the way never goe without one, by reason the country is so hot, which causeth much thirst.*

A Spanish proverbe.

In the yeare of our Lord, 1236. King *Don Fernando*, sur-named the *Holy*, raigning in *Castilla*, and *Leon*, who gained *Sevill*, the second yeare after the death of King *Don Alphonso* his father, stayd one day at dinner in *Benauente*, where he receiued newes, that the Christians had entred the Citie of *Cardona*, and had made themselues Masters of the Towres, and Castles belonging to the Suburbes, which they call *Axarquia*, together with that gate and the wall. And for that the Moores were many, and the Christians few, they were driven to great necessities for want of succour.

The like advice was dispatcht by Post, to *Don Alnar Perez de Castro*, who was in *Martos*, and to *Don Ordonno Alvarez*, Principall Gentlemen of *Castile*, men of great power and strength, and to many other persons, to giue them their best aide and assistance. Every one of these, that had notice of it, presently raised Forces, and hasted thither with all the speed they could; the King likewise marched forward on his way, without any delay, or protraction at all; albeit, that this newes was brought vnto him, on the 28. of *January*, and that the season was very bad, and painefull to travell, by reason of the great Snowes, and the extreme coldnesse of the weather. But nothing could hinder him from this his designe, for hee hasted away to their succour, leaving order that the rest of his Army should follow him, carrying no more along with him to attend his person, then a hundred Gentlemen of good quality.

The King had likewise giuen order to all Cities, Townes, and other places, that were able to afford ayde, to send their Souldiers to those Frontiers and Borders, whither he himselfe was to goe. Great store of raine fell, the Rivers and other Foords by which they were to passe, were so mightily risen, that his men were not able to goe forward.

There met together at that time in *Malagon* a great multitude of Souldiers sent from diverse and sundry parts, being in number so many, that though that place were very well peopled, and of great receipt, being one of the best Townes in all that quarter; yet in every house there was lodged one Souldier at the least, and in some two or three.

The *Alcalde* did lodge one of the Captaines of a Company, and a sonne of his, that hee brought along with him, and was his *Alferez*. Their provision grew short, the wayes bad, there was no comming to Market; so that for want of reliefe, every one suffred necessity, every one was put to his shifts, and not a man amongst them, but sought to maintaine and preserue his life by filching and stealing, robbing here and there, whence or from whom it made no matter all was one to them: Life was sweete. Let others hang and starue; so as they had where-withall, all was well.

A conceited clowne of that very Place, a shrewd witty fellow for a plaine Husband-man, departed thence, to goe to *Toledo*: And meeting in *Orgaz* with a braue troope of Gentlemen, they demanded of him, whence hee was? Hee answered; Of *Malagon*. They further askt him, What's the newes there? Hee told them; Gentlemen, all the newes in *Malagon*, is; in every house, a thiefe; and in the *Alcaldes*, two; the sonne, and the father.

And this was the true Originall of that false report, which men put vpon that Towne, as not knowing any other certaine ground, whence this brute should be raised; and is now, in these our times, a notorious wrong done vnto them, as being a fault whereof they are not guilty, and yet are most vniustly charged therewith. For in all this way, that wee haue come and gone, or whither so ever else it shall be your hap to travell, I doubt me, you will hardly finde either better intertainment (I meane for Innes) or more civill and better behau'd people (taking every man according to his condition and breeding,) then are in this towne. Yet, Sir, withall, I could likewise tell you, of many notable thefts, and very famous ones, that haue beene committed in *Malagon*,

The story concerning the occasion of this proverbe, In Malagon &c.

a Bonauente, is a towne in the Kingdome of Leon. There is a Count of that name.

b Exarquia, the suburbs adjoyning to Cordoua. Padre Guadix sayes, it is so called, because it stands towards the East which is sayd in the Arabick tongue Xatquia.

c Martos, a famous towne in Andaluzia, anciently called Tucci, and Augusta Gemella. Couarruuias.

d Alferez, is hee to whom the Captaine commendeth his Ensigne, that he may gather his Company together, & bring them all to their rendevous. The Captaine should carry the Ensigne. But by reason of his diverse imployments, he substitutes one in his place, which they call Alferez, who is subordinate vnto him & serues not without his direction. And all that are vnder that Ensigne are to follow his Colours. And therefore they haue this variety of names, as Signiferos, Vexilliferos, Primipilarios, &c. &c. as pag. 441

Whilſt wee were thus diſcourſing on the way to paſſe away the time; and make our journey ſeeme the eaſier, I lighted on a Traveller, of whom I learn'd, That in *Almagro*, I ſhould meete with a company of Souldiers. Whereof having throughly inform'd my ſelfe, and well aſſured of their being there, I vvas vvonderfull glad of it; for this vvas the onely thing that I did deſire, and ſeeke after for to caſt off all care, and to giue a farewell to all my former troubles.

Guzman comes to Almagro.

In my comming into the Towne, I was no ſooner entred, but I might perceiue in the high ſtreete a Banner hanging out at a Window. I paſt along by it, and went to lodge at one of the Innes there in the Market-place, where I ſupt betimes, and got me quickely to bed, that I might recover ſome of my loſt ſleepes, and repaire the wrongs of ſo many ill-paſſed nights, as I had lately indured.

Guzman takes on him a feigned name.

Mine Hoſt, and thoſe his Gueſts that hee had in the houſe, ſeeing mee come in ſo well accommodated, and ſo well waited on, made inquiry of my ſervants, who I was. And they (as not knowing any thing, but vvhat they heard from my ſelfe) told them; that my name vvas *Don Iuan de Guzman*: Sonne to a principall Gentleman of the houſe of *Toral*. On the morning very earely, my Page brought me my cloathes; I put them on, ſetting my ſelfe forth in all my braveſt gallantry, and after that I had beene abroad and heard Maſſe, I went to viſit the Captaine, telling him, that I was come in ſearch of him, to tender my ſervice vnto him. Hee receiu'd mee with a great deale of courteſie, and with a cheerefull looke; which was no more then my reſpect vnto him might challenge; beſides, the good faſhion, that I came to him in, and the moneyes which I brought along with mee in my purſe, (which were little leſſe then a thouſand *Royals*) might merit ſome reſpect; for the reſt of the birds were flowne and like *Noahs* Crow, were never to returne againe; they were ſpent and gone in gay cloathes, in courting of Wenches, and in good-fellowſhip vpon the way. Hee admitted mee into his owne Squadron, made mee ſit and eate with him at his owne Table, vſing mee evermore with much loue and kindneſſe.

Guzman entertained by the Captaine for a Souldier, and in what he did exerciſe himſelfe.

In requitall whereof, I began to * *Regalar* him; and to ſerue him; preſenting him ſtill with one thing or other inlarging my hand like a Prince, as if I had for every * Tueſday a new paire of eares; or were ſure to meete (whereſoever I came) vvith another Grocer, another River, and another Groue of Trees, wherin to hide my ſelfe. So faſt did I ſpend my money without feare or wit, threw it away with ſo prodigall a hand, taking ames-Ace againſt ſeaven, and deuz-Ace againſt eleven; I did ſo often viſit the Drum-head, that at laſt getting little, and looſing much, I was almoſt quite blowne vp.

* Regalar: *is to afford a man all the delights and dainties that are to be had for loue or money. The word is deriued à* Rege: *That is, ſo much that a King can not deſire more.*

In theſe kinde of entertainments did I conſume my ſelfe, and my time, till vve vvere to march away: And for to fill vp the Company vvee were all of vs put into a Church, whence wee came forth one by one, and when they came to call mee, the Pay-Maſter lookt vpon me, in whoſe eye I ſeemed ſomewhat too yong, inſomuch that hee durſt not inroll me amongſt the reſt, according to the inſtructions that were given him. Whereat I grew exceeding angry, and was ſo inflamed with choller, that I had much adoe to containe my ſelfe, but was ready to breake forth into paſſion, and to haue laſht out into ſome liberty of language, whereof afterwards I might haue repented my ſelfe; becauſe it might haue forced mee to vtter that, which would not haue well beſeemed me, nor indeede had beene lawfull for mee to vent, conſidering the time, and place.

Guzman paſſeth not for a Souldier, as being under age,

* *A Spaniſh Proverbe.*

Good cloathes put a man in heart.

O what good cloathes can doe! I knew the time when men would kicke mee, and cuffe mee about the eares, and could be content to hang my head in my boſome, hold my peace, and take all patiently. But now I made reckning, as if all heaven had layne at the ſtake, of that which to ſpeake of,

was not worth a ſtraw, waxing mad with anger. Then I began to know by mine owne experience, that no Wine can make a man ſo drunke, as the firſt fit of anger. And it much more blindeth the vnderſtanding, not leaving it any the leaſt light of reaſon. And if that heat ſhould not preſently paſſe away, I know not what fierceneſſe or brutiſhneſſe may be compared to this furie of ours. I did quickly quench this flame, and my Hat being come againe to his colour, and my choller pacifi'd, I ſaid vnto him, Sir, you that are Pay-Maſter, my yeares (I confeſſe) are few, but my courage as great as any mans. It is the heart that commends, and this arme knowes how to brandiſh a blade, there is bloud and marrow enough in it, for to vndertake great matters.

Anger, and it's evill effects.

Hee anſwered me very grauely and wiſely, It may be ſo, Sir, and I doe verily beleeue it, and with much more willingneſſe, then your ſelfe can ſpeake it: but the Order that I haue given me in charge is thus and thus, wherein if I ſhould exceed my Commiſſion, my Purſe muſt ſoundly pay for it. No body ſhall ſmart for it but my ſelfe. I knew not what to replie to ſo faire an anſwere, though the bloud that boyled in my breſt, and the colour that ſhew'd it ſelfe in my cheekes, could not ſo eaſily be allaid, till my choller were a little better ſetled. My Captaine was very ſenſible of this affront of mine, and tooke it as tenderly as if the caſe had beene his owne.

For being quitted of my place, he was perſwaded I ſhould then preſently forſake his Company. And taking part with me againſt the Pay-Maſter, hee was ſomewhat round with him, in ſo much, that neither of them having the patience to beare one with another, they grew to high words, and much adoe there was.

This ſtorme was laid, the Sea had done roaring, their ſtrife was ended, and the Company was fully made vp. The Captaine came to viſit me at my Lodging; telling me in braue and gallant tearmes, how much this griefe of mine did trouble him, and how ſorrie he was for my heavineſſe; and with honourable both words and promiſes, hee gaue me that good ſatisfaction, that I reſted very well contented. Such force hath Eloquence, that as horſes ſuffer themſelues to be ruled with good Bridles and bits; ſo the fierce rage, and chollericke humours of men, are bridled and governed by mannerly reaſons, and are brought to winde and turne their head-ſtrong wills, changing their violent reſolutions, being eaſily reduced in the end to a ſetled pace, and are well content to goe forward faire and ſoftly on their way.

Eloquence prevaileth much.

Wherevpon, albeit I was reſolved to leaue him, yet notwithſtanding his words were ſo powerfull with me, that he ſtopt me in my courſe, and ſuddenly tooke me vp, when I was in the heat and height of my Carreere. Wee continued in this kinde of converſation a pretty while, and a great deale of good talke we had together; And if it be not dangerous to ſpeake the truth, (for feare of being called in queſtion) wee did murmure and mutine at the ſmall reckoning, and ſlight acknowledgement of Soldiers, and men of true vvorth and valour, and the baſe eſteeme that was made of militarie diſcipline and profeſſion of Armes; then did we raile at the ſlight remuneration of Services, and with how little truth ſome Miniſters did informe the State thereof, for their owne proper ends: How thinges are quite out of order, and vtterly miſcarrie, becauſe buſineſſes are not well carried, & are not in a courſe, that ſhould direct them to a good end, every man tending his particular profit, preferring private before publike good.

A digreſſion againſt bad Miniſters, touching Martiall men.

And though ſuch a one know, that another man vvith a very good zeale and loue to his Countrey, doth governe his Armie well, and led them on brauely, he vvreſts all his good ſervices to the worſt ſence, and ſeekes to overthrow his well-deſerved reputation, laying Nets to intrap him, that he may be the only Commander, joyning with his enemies, and falling croſſe vvith

his friends, that he may bring the dance before his owne doore, and raiſe himſelfe by the others ruine, propoſing to himſelfe, by this prepoſterous dealing, to put himſelfe into a better fortune.

And to effect this his vnruly deſire, hee will ſeeke out a thouſand fetches, and as many winding Pipes will he lay before hand, to bring the water to his owne Conduit. Hee would make himſelfe like vnto the higheſt, and place his throne in the North, and ſuffer no man to ſit by him, or to be his equall. Such men as theſe exerciſe their voyce onely in the ſervice of the King, not ſticking to crie out, This and this will make much for his Majeſties ſervice; but their workes, and their actions, are directed to their owne good. Like vnto that day-labourer, who lifts vp his armes to heaven, but ſtrikes his Mattocke into the ground. Theſe make warres at their pleaſure, breake Leagues when they liſt, failing in their Obligation, ruining the Commonwealth, robbing men of their Eſtates, and in the end damning their owne ſoules.

How many errours haue beene committed? How many braue Commanders loſt? How many Armies vtterly overthrowne? the fault whereof is laid vpon him, that doth leaſt deſerue the blame. And the ſole cauſe of this is, becauſe theſe men will forſooth haue it ſo, that this ill ſhall make for their good. For if thinges ſhould ſucceed well, why then it ſhould goe ill with them.

This is the common courſe now adayes, and this makes (a) all out of joynt, and cauſes ſuch confuſion in the world. Will you ſee (Sir) to what poore paſſe our ill fortune hath brought vs, that thoſe braue cloathes, gallant Feathers, and glorious colours; thinges that put life and ſpirit into a Soldiers heart, to make him venture couragiouſly vpon all difficulties, to hew out his way with his Sword, and to vndertake any braue and noble enterprize, in ſeeing vs thus adorned, we are diſgraced in *Spaine*, our Habit ſcorned, and our ſelues flouted at? Thinking forſooth that we muſt walke the ſtreets in blacke, like a company of Soliciters, or like ſome Servitour, or poore Scholler, that waites vpon another, and hath not a Gowne to his backe to hide his pittifull ragges, or to cover our tatterd cloathes, (as your Students vſe to doe) with blacke foot-cloathes, that the old rotten Saddle vnderneath may not be ſeene.

Now are wee quite downe the winde, and never ſo much as now; For thoſe that ſhould moſt honour vs, doe leaſt favour vs. The onely bare name of a Spaniard, which heretofore did affright the enemie, and with the reputation of that one word, made the whole world to tremble; now (for our ſinnes ſake) the glory of that is in a manner loſt and gone. And wee are ſo falne off from what we were, that we are not able to doe that now with our ſwords, which before wee might haue carried with our words. Yet ſuch as we haue beene, wee are, and ſhall be ſtill. It is God, that muſt make vs to acknowledge theſe our errours, and that muſt worke amendment in thoſe that are the cauſe thereof; going (in that courſe wherein now they runne) againſt their King, againſt the Lawes of the Land, againſt their Countrey, and againſt themſelues.

I need not (*Seanor Don Iuan*) to produce any other witneſſe, then the preſent times, for the truth of what I haue ſpoken, and to proue vnto you, that the maine cauſe of all your great miſchiefes in a State, is a favorites inwardneſſe with his King, ſuffering no man to *Priuar*, or to be able to doe any thing but himſelfe, led on with the greedineſſe of his owne private gaine. From this his ill-imployd Greatneſſe, groweth hatred; from hatred, envie; from envie, diſſention; and from diſſention, evill order: from whence you may inferre thoſe other inconveniences, that may follow therevpon. Let it not trouble you (Sir) that we are now to march hence. In *Italie*, you ſhall finde another kinde of world; and here I paſſe my word vnto you, that I will make you an Ancient. Which albeit, it be a meaner place, then your merits may

(a) *The Spaniſh phraſe is*, Se pone de lodo. *Now* Poner le de lodo, es, eſtragar, O errar el negoſio.

may challenge, yet it may ſerue as a ſtep to advance you higher. I gaue him many thankes for this his friendly offer. We tooke our leaues, hee was very deſirous to goe home alone, I earneſtly intreated him, that I might waite vpon him to his Lodging, but he would by no meanes conſent therevnto. The next day following, the Company marched away without any ſtay, till they came neere vnto the Sea-coaſt; (the Captaine ſpending liberally vpon my Purſe.) Wee ſtaid waiting there for the comming of the Gallies, but three moneths were almoſt ſpent, before wee could haue any newes of them. In which time, and that which was already paſt, my Purſe had ſpit his venome, & my rents began to faile me. My continuance at play, did likewiſe put a helping hand to my ſpeedier diſpatch; ſo that I was now quite out of Caſh, and all my money was gone; not all in one day, but all, at all theſe ſeverall times. I was (as your old pratſing Goſſips vſe to ſay) reduced backe againe to my former ſtate, and might walke (as I did before) with a white Cudgell vnder mine arme. How much did I then riſent my former follies? How angrie was I growne with my ſelfe? What amendment did I propoſe vnto my ſelfe, now that I had not ſo much as one ſingle penny left me in my Purſe? How many ſhifts did I vſe to conſerue my ſelfe, when I did not know againſt what tree to leane? Who forced me to fall in loue without diſcretion? Who made me turne Gallant, without moderation? Who taught mee to ſpend without government? To what end was I ſo free in my play, ſo franke in my Lodging? and ſo prodigall with my Captaine? *Quanto ſe halla traſero, quien enſilla muy delantero?* How often is he caſt behinde, that is firſt in the Saddle? What a ſhame is it for a man to follow his delights? What a baſeneſſe, to be captivated by his pleaſures? I was ready to run beſides my ſelfe, and was almoſt out of my little wits, that when I had put my ſelfe in ſo good a Predicament, I could not hold me there, and keepe my ſelfe well, while it was well with me.

Guzmans *money is all gone, and now begins he to lament his follie.*

Good Inſtructions for young men.

Spaniſh Proverb

Now, in regard, as well of my youth, as theſe my youthfull vanities, I was no more eſteemed, or reſpected of any. The friends that I had in my proſperitie, the free table that I kept with my Captaine, the *Alferez* place, and the enſigne, that he told me he would beſtow vpon me, it ſeemed that they were all ſtrooken with a ſudden lightening, which had burnt and conſum'd them. They paſt as an arrow, that makes his quick-feathered-flight thorow the ayre; like a Thunder-bolt, that ſtrikes to death, before it be diſcerned; or to the twinkling of the eye, which opens, and ſhuts in an inſtant.

When my moneyes fell ſhort, all fell away from me: as long as I had that, I had them; That gone; they ſhooke hands with me, and bid me farewell. Thus by little and little, piece after piece, all my ornaments were taken off, and poore *Don Iuan de Guzman* was degraded. I was like that *Obiſpillo de San Nicholas*, that prettie little Biſhop *S. Nicholas*, reſpected onely for his Holy-day; and ſo I, while I had money in my Purſe, and no longer.

Proverb.

Thoſe that heretofore did me honour, did viſit me, did entertaine me, came to feaſt and banquet with me, the heart-ſtrings of my Purſe being broken, they forſooke mee, as being no man of this world; Not a man that would talke with me, or converſe with me. And not onely ſo, but they would not ſo much as vouchſafe to looke vpon me, or once ſuffer me to come in their company. The perfume that did once ſmell ſweet, doth now ſtinke in their noſes. They that knew not before how to be vnkinde, doe now take all thinges in ſnuffe. And I that honoured them, am requited by them with diſhonour, and all becauſe I am become poore. And as if povertie had beene a great and heynous offence, I was conſigned over to the Secular power. My dealing and converſation was wholly now with the ſtragling Boyes about the Campe, ſuch as carried Wallets and Knap-ſackes for the Soldiers, and on this had I now ſet vp my reſt. And it is good Iuſtice, *Que quien tal haze, que aſſi lo pagne.* As a man Brewes, ſo let him Bake.

Proverb.

CHAP. X.

Guzman de Alfarache *declareth the miſ-fortunes, and the wants of one that is decayed in his fortunes: And how hee followed a Captaine, till he came into* Italy; *Exerciſing himſelfe in all kinde of theſts great and ſmall; for the reliefe and helpe of his Maſter.*

Miſ-fortunes, are burthens that are hard to be borne.

HOw bitter was it vnto mee to begin; how troubleſome to goe on; how grievous to endure this new diſ-aduenture? But I had beene well acquainted heretofore with theſe kinde of miſ-fortunes, and had learned them long ſince to my great coſt. And becauſe theſe things were not new vnto me, I preſently fell to my worke, and liuely beſtir'd my ſelfe about my buſineſſe. And I can aſſure you, it is a great happineſſe for a man to ſute himſelfe to all occaſions, and to know how to turne his hand to all kinde of labour, not relying on theſe tranſitory goods of the world, which like Buckets in a Well, are now full, and then empty; and no ſooner vp, but they are downe againe.

But this one thing was my chiefe comfort, That in the time of my Proſperitie, I gained credit againſt the day of Adverſitie. And I did not count it my leaſt riches, ſeeing I was to become poore, that I had left a ſtampe and impreſſion in all mens minds, that I was of a noble and free diſpoſition, by thoſe my former actions, which were able to ſpeake themſelues, though my ſelfe ſhould be ſilent.

My Captaine made ſome reckoning of mee, acknowledging the courteſies, that I had vſed towards him, and was more willing, then able to helpe me. For (poore man) he had ſcarce enough to ſerue his owne turne. But hee conſeru'd me at leaſt in that *buen punto* & good eſteeme, which he had at his firſt knowledge of me, anon after that we were acquainted, bearing a kinde of reſpect to the Houſe whereof I came, and to thoſe my ſuppoſed Parents.

I was inforced to ſtrip my ſelfe; and laying aſide all my gallantrie, I began to cloath my ſelfe againe in a meaner and poorer faſhion, and to put on that rich (though vn-regarded) Robe of Humilitie, which I did not thinke on in my brauery, and ſcorned (as a thing of nought) when I was fluſh, and full of money.

The rich man that is vaine, and the poore man that is proud, both condemned.

Conſidering with my ſelfe, that *Vanitie* and *Neceſſity* could not well ſute together. And that one Chaire was not able to hold them both. For the rich man, if he braue it, he is to be borne withall, for he hath where-withall. But that a poore man ſhould be ſo vaine, is to be but like the *Cameleon*; who, whatſoever hee drawes and ſucks into him, is but ayre, without ſubſtance. And therefore, as the rich man that is vaine, ought to be abhorred; So the poore man that is proud, is not to be endured; It is inſupportable in the one, and ſcandalous in the other.

Guzman *ſets himſelfe to ſerue his Captaine.*

I ſaw, that I was not able to liue of my ſelfe, and therefore got to ſerue my Captaine, making him now my Maſter, who but a little before was my Companion. And I waited on him with that care, as I did on the Cooke. Howbeit, he commanded me with a kinde of reſpect, as conſidering who I was, and that my exceſſes, my childiſhneſſe, and ill-governed Youth, had brought me to this low ebbe, that I was driven to ſerue him. And hee did thus farre aſſure himſelfe of mee, that I would not doe any thing vnworthy a Gentleman, and vn-beſeeming my birth and Parentage, for any intereſt in the world.

What a man ſhould doe, that would riſe by his ſervice.

Hee held me to be as faithfull, and as ſecret, as I was patient. Hee made me Treaſurer of all his ſecrets; for which affiance I alwayes ſhew'd my ſelfe thanke-

thankefull vnto him. He manifeſted his neceſsities, and made knowne his wants vnto me, and what he had ſpent in his pretenſions; beſides, the prolixe time; and the exceſsiue travell and paines, whereby hee at laſt obtained them; as by intreating, bribing, flattering, ſerving, attending, crouching, creeping, making of legges, bowing the head to the ground, with cap in hand, and a quicke and nimble pace, trotting vp and downe the ſtreets from morning to night; early, and late, without intermiſsion.

A trick of a proud Courtier.

I remember hee told me, That going out of the Palace with the Kings Favourite, becauſe he put on his Hat, whileſt he was entring into his Coach, he lookt vpon him, as if he would haue eaten him; and ſhortly after, gaue him to vnderſtand as much, by delaying his diſpatch, and making him daunce attendance at Court many a faire day, till he thought hee had ſufficiently puniſhed both his Purſe, & his Patience. It ſhall euer be in my *Letany, Good Lord deliver vs*, when Power and Malice meet.

It is a miſerable thing, and much to be pitied, that ſuch an Idoll as one of theſe, ſhould affect particular adoration; not conſidering, that hee is but a man, a repreſentant, a poore kinde of Comedian, that acts his part vpon the Stage of this World, and comes forth with this or that Office, thus and thus attended, or at leaſt reſembling ſuch a perſon, and that when the play is done, (which can not be long) he muſt preſently enter into the Tyring-houſe of the graue, and bee turned to duſt and aſhes, as one of the ſonnes of the Earth, which is the common Mother of vs all.

Behold (brother) and ſee the Enterlude of our life is ended; our diſguizes laid aſide; and thou art as I; I, as thou; and all of vs as one another. Some doe ſo ſtrut and ſtretch out their bodies, and are ſwolne ſo bigge vvith the puffing winde of pride, as if they were able to ſwallow the whole Sea into their bellie. They ſport and play, and follow their pleaſures, as if their aboade on earth, were to be eternall. They ſet themſelues aloft, and in-throane themſelues on high, as if they would get them out of Deaths reach, and that it ſhould not be in his power to tumble them downe. Bleſſed be God, that there is a God. And bleſſed be his mercy, that he hath provided one equall day of Iuſtice for vs all.

Want in a great perſon, is a thing that moveth much compaſſion.

I did much grieue at my Captaines poverty, becauſe I did not know how to remedy it. And by how much the more is the vvant and neceſsitie of him that is Noble, by ſo much the more doth the poore man pittie it, then the rich. He had ſome Iewels left, which he might ſell, if need were, but thoſe were things to doe him honour; and being that he was vpon his departure, ready to imbarke himſelfe, where he ſhould houe occaſion to vſe them, it went againſt the very heart of him, to marre much, to mend a little.

Now, while theſe Gallies were ſo ſlow in comming, vvee were faine in the meane while to goe from owne towne to another, to quarter our ſelues with the beſt conveniency we could. By that confeſsion, which my Maſter had made vnto me, I vnderſtood his minde, and the end wherefore he did it.

I told him, Sir, I know by good experience, both good and bad fortune; proſperitie, and adverſitie, and wot well what they are.

In my younger yeares I haue travelled farre and neere, and haue ſeene ſomewhat of the world. I ſhall to the vttermoſt of my power expreſſe that loyaltie and faithfullneſſe which I owe vnto my Maſter, & to the Stock whereof I come.

Take you, Sir, no care, aſſuring your ſelfe, that I will hazzard my life in your ſervice, and will ſo order the buſineſſe (till better times ſhall befriend vs) that for the preſent, you ſhall paſſe over the trouble you now are in, with a great deale more eaſe. Thus did I take a taske vpon mee, that was farre greater then my ſtrength or wit could promiſe.

From that time forward, I did in this Office that I had vndertaken, per-

performe things of admiration, and ſuch as were beyond beliefe.

In every place, where we were to lodge our Souldiers, I had gotten a doozen (a) Billets, whereof the leaſt affoorded no leſſe then twelue *Royals*, and ſome did contribute fifty. My entrance was free into all thoſe houſes, where nothing was ſafe from my hands, no not ſo much as the vvater that was in their Wels.

I never ſuffered my Maſter to be without a Hen, a Chicken, a Capon, or a Pidgeon, both at dinner and ſupper, and a whole Gammon of Bacon every Sunday boyl'd in Wine. Never did I reſerue any thing for my ſelfe of all theſe booties that I made. But looke whatſoever I got, I put it all into his hands.

If by chance the Maſter of the houſe ſhould take mee napping, if it were of ſmall value, it was paſſed over as a thing of nothing, and accounted onely a waggiſh tricke; but if it were of any moment, my puniſhment was, to bee brought by my Maſter before him that had complained of me, and cauſing my hands to be bound, with the thinne ſole of a ſhoe hee would giue me my payment; which being of a hollow kinde of graine, it ſounded loud, but did ſmart but little; the noiſe was more then the paine. Sometimes I ſhould haue the lucke to get me Sureties, that ſhould paſſe their word for me, that I ſhould not doe ſo any more, and then I was pardon'd. But though they ſhould chance to faile me, the chaſtiſement vvas not rigorous, it did not raiſe any Wheales or Bliſters, nor left any marke of the ſtripes vpon my body. And becauſe I knew, they were giuen mee more for faſhion ſake, then any ill will; and rather to ſatisfie others, then to hurt me, before ever the blow came neere mee, I would cry out, as if I had beene kill'd; and ſet out ſuch a throat, as if I would haue rent the very walls of the houſe aſunder.

Thus did my Maſter and I giue good ſatisfaction; he, by complying with his obligation; and I, by ſupplying of his neceſsities: By killing firſt his hunger, and afterwards by giving life to his Honour.

I would ſometimes get me me out into the High-wayes, and ſeyze vpon all ſorts of baggages; then would I ſeeme to ſhew them the favour of the Schoole, in ſelling them their owne againe; in-dearing to the owners of them, that it coſt me thus and thus much out of mine owne purſe, to get theſe their goods to be returned vnto them, ſo that I had both money, and thankes for my paines.

Thoſe commodities which wee lighted on in the Villages where wee lay, thoſe that were able, might chance to ſee them againe, and redeeme them for their money; but thoſe that had not where-withall, their goods were inviſible, not a ragge to be ſeene; they that had taken them from them, were fled and gone, and no more newes to be heard of them. At the Muſters, when the Muſter-maſter was to ſee if the Company were full, I would thruſt in amongſt the Souldiers fiue or ſixe yong fellowes of the Towne, well appointed, and made them to paſſe. Sometimes I would ſo handle the matter, that putting owne ſingle man in the Church, vp aboue in the Charnell houſe that is made for dead mens bones, fiue times one after another, I receiued fiue payes. And for him, that was to come laſt, I would clap a plaiſter vpon his noſe, that he might not be knowne. And every ſeverall time, I did change his cloathes, becauſe my knavery ſhould not be found out, and my tricke diſcovered.

With theſe Gigs, & others the like gulleries, mine owne perſon was as good as foure mens payes. My Maſter lou'd me as his life for theſe good ſervices that I did him, but he was a great ſpender; and therefore both this, and all beſides that I could doe for him, was all too little.

When we were come to (b) *Berçelona*, and ready to imbarke our ſelues in the Gallies, I found my Maſter much troubled, as being in a great ſtraight, for that

(a) *The Spaniſh word, is* Buleta. i Scedula, quæ dabatur militibus in bello, vt properent ad hoſpitium. Dicitur autem Buleta, quaſi Bula pequenna; à diminutiuo Buleta. Et erat Scriptura brevis mandatoria, qualis eſt bulla Pontificis. Guzmans *cunning, while he ſerv'd the Captaine.*

(c) *The chiefe Citie in* Catalunna, *founded 230. yeares before the Incarnation of Chriſt. It was firſt called* Barzino: *of a great linage that builded it, of which deſcended the great* Amilcar. *Preſently vpon that* Barzi-noua. *And now* Barſelona. *The Romans afterwards called it* Fauentia: *But came in time to recover it's old name.* Vid. Abr. Hort. Verb. Barcino. & Ant. Auguſtin. Dialogo 7o. de nummis antiquis. Guzman *comes to* Barſelona.

that he had receiued no pay from the King, and how to procure moneyes, he knew no way in the world; nor could mine that I brought him in, ſtead him to any purpoſe. I ſaw he was melancholly, ſad, and heavy; I knew ſtreight what diſeaſe he was ſicke of, as being the Phyſician, that had often cured him thereof heretofore. I offered him to apply a ſudden remedie for his ſore. He had with him divers Iewels, I knew not well what my ſelfe, and amongſt the reſt an (a) *Agnus Dei* of gold, a very rich one: it grieued him to part with it. But I told him; Sir, if you dare to truſt me, put this *Agnus Dei* into my hands, and I will promiſe you to returne it againe vnto you within theſe two dayes much improved, and make it better worth vnto you, then now it is. He was glad to heare me ſay ſo; and jeſtingly ſaid vnto me; What tricke haue you now in ſtore *Guzmanillo*? Haſt thou lighted peradventure (as thou waſt wont) vpon ſome new roguiſh plot, ſome feate villanie or other, and canſt come finely off with it? Now becauſe he knew, that he might truſt his profit, with my ſufficiencie, his honour, with my ſecreſie; and that his Iewell was ſure enough, without farther queſtioning me, what I would doe with it; he gaue it me, telling me withall, God grant thou bring it me ſafe backe againe, and that my wiſhes may take good ſucceſſe.

Loe, there it is, take it, and doe what thou wilt with it. I tooke it of him, put it in my boſome, lapt it ſafe in a little Purſe, knit it faſt, and ty'd it ſure to one of the button-holes of my Doublet. With it I went directly to a * Goldſmiths ſhoppe; One that was a rich man, and a great Vſurer; I made a large relation vnto him of my perſon, and how and by what meanes I came to this Companie, and what a deale of money I had ſpent in a ſhort time, reſeruing (when I ſhould ſee my ſelfe in ſome need) a very rich Iewell, for the ſupplying of my wants: And that if he would buy it of me, he ſhould haue it reaſonable cheape, ſo as he did not offer me too little, and two much vndervalew the worth of it. But withall, I adviſed him, that hee ſhould firſt informe himſelfe of my perſon, and my qualitie, who, and whence I was; and in knowing of it, (without rendring any reaſon why hee was ſo inquiſitiue, taking that for a ſufficient ſatisfaction to himſelfe) he ſhould walke forth and meet me at the Sea-ſide, for there I would ſtay for him, and there hee ſhould finde me all alone, wiſhing him to make as much haſte as he could.

This man, who had a great minde to this Peece, and was greedy of gaine, inform'd himſelfe of me from the Captaine, the Officers, and ſome other of the Souldiers; receiuing ſo much ſatisfaction, as was ſufficient to content him. For they did all of them witneſſe one and the ſame thing; That I was the ſonne of a principall *Cauallero*, rich, and nobly deſcended, and that being deſirous to ſee *Italy*, I came to their Company with a couple of ſeruants attending on me, well clad, and with good ſtore of Crownes in my Purſe; that I had ſpent it all (as young men vſe to doe) which was the cauſe, that I was now in that poore caſe, as himſelfe might well ſee.

All this made as well for me, as my ſelfe could wiſh it; it fell out pat, as I would haue it. My honeſt Vſurer told me what they ſaid, that hee was very well ſatisfied therewith, and that he might ſafely deale with me for any thing that I ſhould ſell him. He deſired my Iewell of me, that he might looke vpon it, and that he would giue me as much for it, as it was worth. I told him, that

(a) Agnus Dei, *Is Chriſt our Redeemer called a Lambe: not* proprietate, ſed ſimilitudine. *As in many places, he is called a Vine, a Rocke, a Doore, a Shepheard, a Lyon, &c. But in regard of his meeknesse, vnſpottednesſe, chaſtitie, innocence and obedience: as alſo, for that he was ſacrificed vp to his heavenly Father for the ſinnes of mankinde, with a great deale of proprietie, he is called the Lambe. And the Roman Church, in the Sacrifice of the Maſſe, before the holy Communion was inſtituted, did ſay or ſing this Prayer:* Agnus Dei, qui tollis peccata mundi, &c. *And* Iohn Baptiſt *did ſigne it with this name.* Ecce Agnus Dei, &c. Agnus Dei, *is likewiſe a holy relicke, which the Pope bleſſes, and conſecrates the firſt yeare of his Papacie, and ſo afterwards from ſeaven yeares to ſeaven yeares. It belongeth to the Sexton and Chaplaine to order and diſpoſe the Waxe, whereunto they put* Loscirios Paſcuales *the yeare before. And with great curioſitie, neatneſſe, and reverence, and in different Molds, they take forth theſe Agnos, of different bignesse, and divers Figures, both on the one and the other ſide, they haue the Lambe, whence this relicke takes it's name. And being preſented to his Holineſſe, he bleſſes them in the Chappell, and conſecrates them with great Ceremonie, throwing them into Veſſels of Holy-water, which he hath bleſſed, powring vpon them Balme, and the Criſme, or holy Oyle, ſaying many Prayers over them. It is ſaid, that* Pope Vrban *the fifi, ſent an* Agnus Dei *to the Emperor of* Greece, *with certaine devout Verſes, wherein he declareth the excellencie of this holy Relicke; as that, it is good againſt tempeſt, Fire, Lightning, Thunder, and Peſtilence; and againſt the aſſaults of the Devill, and therefore ought to be had in great reverence.* Vide Couarruuias. Verb. Agnus Dei: * *A fine tricke put by* Guzman *vpon a Gold-ſmith in* Barſelona, *that was a great Vſurer.*

we would goe aside by our ſelues into ſome ſecret place, and there he ſhould haue a ſight of it.

We went a prettie waies off, and when I had found out a fit place to my minde, I put my hand in my boſome, and tooke out my *Agnus Dei*, of whoſe price I was well informed, as one that knew what it coſt. The Gold-ſmith lik't it well, and had a great deſire to buy it. For, beſides that the gold-worke was very well wrought and curiouſly enameled, it had divers ſtones in it of great value. I demanded of him for it two hundred Crownes, which was little leſſe then the price that was paid for it, when it was firſt bought. He began to turne and winde it this way and that way, holding it one while vpward, another downeward, to ſee which way it ſhew'd it ſelfe beſt, and gaue the brighteſt luſtre.

He found a hundred faults in it (only to bring downe the price) offering me a thouſand Royals at the firſt word. I was reſolued, that hee ſhould not haue it vnder a hundred and fiftie Crownes, and it was as well worth that, as one Royall; and vnder that I would not part with it. And here vpon the By, let this ſerue by way of advice to him that is to ſell, that hee muſt never deſcend ſo low as the price for which he meanes to ſell it, but that he ſhould driue his bargaine ſo, that the buyer may riſe to his price; looking ſtill, when he ſhall come higher and higher, and ſo by ſtanding off, get as much for it as you can. We giue and take; I offer, and he bids; At laſt, my cunning Merchant comes vp to a hundred and twenty Crownes; I thought with my ſelfe I ſhould never draw him higher, and that it was enough (if not too much) for that which I pretended; and for ſo much I ſold it him. He was loth to leaue me, till he had paid me; and would faine haue had mee to haue gone with him: but I told him, Honeſt ſir, God bleſſe your life, and ſend you well to doe; if I ſhould goe hence alone with you, I am afraid, leaſt that money would bee taken from me, which I purpoſe to keepe till I come to *Italy*, to furniſh mee with clothes, that I may come in ſome good faſhion, when I make my ſelfe knowne there to my Kinſmen, and friends.

And if ſome Souldier or other ſhould hap to ſee me goe with you, they would preſently ſuſpect, that it is rather to ſell, then buy any thing of you. And if they ſhall perceiue, that I haue any ſtore of Copper or ſilver money about me (being but a Boy as I am) they will take it from me, and I ſhall haue no remedie againſt them. And therefore God be your good ſpeed, goe your waies, I will ſtay for you here till you come, bring your gold with you, ſo many Crownes, as wee haue agreed vpon, and you ſhall haue the Iewell away with you, and God ſend you as good lucke with it, as I ſhall wiſh you.

Hee well approu'd my reaſon, and haſted home (like a young Colt in his full gallop) for to fetch them. I had given notice to a Companion of mine, (a confident ſervant of my Maſters) that he ſhould ſtay there waiting for me; And that when I had given him ſuch a ſigne he ſhould as ſecretly as he could haſte in vnto me. He laid cloſe in ambuſh; The Goldſmith by this time is come, he counts me out my Crownes in the Palme of my hand: I had the Iewell in my Purſe, I ſought to vntie it: but becauſe the knots were knit ſo faſt, I could not ſo eaſily doe it. My Vſuring Merchant had hanging at his girdle a paire of kniues in an old greaſie ſheath; I deſired him, that he would lend me one of them. Hee (not knowing why I borrow'd it) pulls me out his knife, and giues it me. I cut the ſtring aſunder, leaving the knot faſt knit to my Doublet, as it was before, and I gaue it into his hand together with the *Agnus Dei*. The man began to marvell; and askt me why I did ſo, and wherefore I had put it there? I told him, that becauſe I had never a Boxe, nor no Paper to lap it vp in, I had done as I did, and that the matter was not great, for the Purſe was old and little worth, and I had no great need of it; and as for theſe Crownes that I had of him, I ſhould make a ſhift to ſew them

them vp in some one ragge or other about my cloathes, where no body should come at them.

He tooke the Iewell of me, just in the same manner as if I had giuen it him, and after that he had put it in his bosome, wee tooke our leaue, and hee went his way. I gaue the signe to my Companion: hee comes; I giue him the Crownes, and aduised him, that hee should hie him home with them, and giue them to my Master, and tell him, that I would be with him by and by.

That done, I made after my Goldsmith, and though by reason of his large strides, he had the advantage of mee, and got ground vpon mee, yet I ran after him, till the occasion I expected, did fairely offer it selfe vnto mee. And so watching my time, when hee was iumpe even with a company of Souldiers, that were standing together, I tooke fast hold of him vvith both my hands, crying out, A thiefe, a thiefe, helpe honest Souldiers, for Gods sake come in and helpe mee, for the Rogue hath robb'd mee, hold him fast if you loue mee, let him not goe, take (and you be good men) ô take, take quickly the Iewell from him, for my Master will kill mee, if I come home without it, and this Villaine hath violently taken it from mee.

I was well knowne to all the Souldiers, and as soone as they heard me, and saw the pittifull moane that I made, they beleeued I sayd truth. Hereupon they layd hold on the man, to know what the matter was. And because hee that complaines first, the Iustice commonly goes on his side; and that whining and crying out of wrongs receiued, many times ouercome the right, more by clamour, then any good claime that they can make; I cry'd out more and more, and kept such a stirre and such a noise, that I would not suffer him to speake, and if hee did, then I was so loud againe and so clamorous, that they could not heare him; putting this tricke [a] vpon him in the playing of my game. I did implore their helpe with great exclamations, with my hands linked one with another, and lifted vp to heav'n, and vvith my knees, creeping and crawling on the ground, crying out vnto them; As yee be Gentlemen, good my Masters, take pitty and compassion of mee; for the Captaine my Master will surely kill mee. This tribulation of mine did much trouble them, it did grieue them to see mee in this pittifull plight.

At last, they began to aske mee what the matter was? and how and vvherein I had beene wronged? Nor was I herein wanting to play my part, now I had the hand of him, I would be sure to hold it; gracing my lie with all the credit I could, that I might leaue the lesse roome for his truth to enter. For, mans *Hearing*, contracting Matrimony on the sudden, vpon the first word that is giuen, will hardly be deuorced from it, but let it alone, and line and sticke thereunto during life, be it for better or worse. So that all the rest that come after, are but as Concubines, that come now and then to the *Hearing*, but haue no settled abode there: They may perhaps like gadding Girles, touch at this eare, and that eare, and the t'other, (as at so many doores, or other folkes houses, but there is no dwelling for them, they must packe and be gone.

Having this string to my bowe, (setting a good face on the matter) I vp, and told them; This morning, my Master left his *Agnus Dei* at his beds-head vpon his pillow; hee willed mee to keepe it, and looke safe vnto it; I tooke it, and first put it in my purse, and then in my bosome, (thinking I had made all sure enough) but meeting with this good man (you here see) by the Sea side, I pull'd it forth to shew it him; and because hee was a Gold-smith, I askt him, what it might be worth: Hee told mee, that the body of the Iewell was but Copper double-gilt, and that the stones were counterfeit, no better then Glasse. Yet askt mee withall, whether I would sell it? I told him no; it was my Masters. Hee demanded then of mee, if my master would sell it? My answere vvas, Sir, I know not: you vvere best aske him, for hee can best tell

[a] *The Spanish phrase, is* haziendole el juego Manna. *That is, when one goes deferring the conclusion of a businesse, because he knowes it will goe against him, for that his cause is not good.* Couarruuias. Verb Manna.

tell you. After this, hee proceeded farther in talke with mee, asking mee, vvho I was, whence I came and whither I would; And so held mee on in such idle discourse, till wee were both alone, out of sight of any; and drawing a knife out of that sheath of his that hangs there at his girdle, he vvilled mee to make no words, for if I did but offer to squeake, though ne're so little, or but wagge a foote from that place, there was no way but one with me, he vvould presently cut my throate, I stood shaking and quivering, vvhile hee vvas taking the jewell out of my bosome, and because hee could not readily vnty the knots, I had knit them so fast, hee made no more adoe, but cut the string asunder, and so went away with it. And I thinke he hath it still about him; search him I beseech you (good honest Souldiers) for Goods sake search him.

The Souldiers seeing that the purse was cut indeede, turn'd towards my Goldsmith, & lookt some-what strangely vpon him, vvho was strooke therewith so dead, that he had not a word to say for himselfe. They tooke the *Agnus Dei* out of his bosome, which hee had carried away in the purse; as I had before informed them, so did they just finde it about him.

Then did he begin to fall a cursing and swearing, vowing by no small oaths, that I had sold it vnto him, and that I with mine owne hand, vvith that very knife, cut the purse my selfe, and afterwards delivered it vnto him, and that I had of him, for it a hundred and twenty Crownes in very good gold. But for all his swearing and staring, they vvould never a vvhit the sooner beleeue him; Thinking in good discretion, that it was not likely, that hee vvould venture to buy any such piece of me, for hee might very vvell thinke that is vvas stolne Ware. Besides (vvhich made much for mee) they had searcht me all over, from top to toe, but could not finde one penny of money about me.

Making this to serue as a strong proofe against him, they vs'd him very homely, both in vvords and deedes. And vvhatsoever he said vnto them to justifie himselfe, it was all one, he had beene as good to haue held his tongue, for after that, they vvould neither beleeue, nor heare him. They had forcibly taken the jewell from him; Hee complaines thereof vnto the Iustice; I vvas brought before him; there I opened the case anew (as before you haue heard) not fayling so much as one syllable in the relating of that, vvhich I had formerly delivered.

The Witnesses vvere sworne, and justified both vvhat they had seene and heard. And in the end, the businesse vvas brought so about, that it vvas concluded, the Goldsmith should be severely punished. But vpon intreaty, hee had a brotherly correction, and so sent packing. And as for me, I had my Iewell given mee in open Court, with charge to carry it home to my Master. I vvent vvith it to his lodging, and there in the presence of all his people, I delivered it vnto him.

Amo proditionem, Proditorem odi.

There are many that loue treason; but few that like the Traitor. Well may an ill man, by vvorking ill, please that ill man that sets him a-vvorke, for the working of his ends. But vvhen the deed is done, it can not be, but that in the brest of that man, there is so much mischiefe imprinted, and such knowne Characters of Villany writen in the fore-head of him, that none of those that imploy him, will trust him, either any farther or longer, then they haue vse of him to bring their purposes to passe. What I had done did nothing displease my Master. At that time he lik't it vvell, yet it troubled him some-what, and hee could not vvell tell vvhat to thinke of it. These trickes of mine did him good service, (and that he knew vvell inough) but he vvas afrayd both of them, and me.

With these kinde of Cordials, I kept my Master in heart, till hee came to *Genoa*; vvhere, (having dis-imbarkt) and having now but little neede of my service, hee shifted me off. Your Traytors, and other such like vvicked Villaines, are like vnto Vipers, or your Scorpions; vvhich vvhen you haue taken

ken the ſubſtance of that from them, which you ſeeke for, take them, and throw them vpon the dunghill. Onely they are nouriſhed by all ſorts of men (eſpecially your Great-ones) who make exceeding much of them, all the while they vſe them as inſtruments of their pretended ends; but thoſe once effected, they bid you farewell, they will haue no more to doe with you, vnleſſe it be to vndoe you, as you haue others; and ſo let you goe, for ſuch a one as you are; caring rather to vſe, then to keepe a Knaue.

Some few dayes after our arrivall, my Maſter call'd mee aſide, and ſayd vnto mee; Youth, you are now in *Italy*, your ſervice vvill be of little vſe to mee, and your Rogueries may do mee much wrong: Heere is ſome-what for you to helpe you on your journey, diſpatch quickly, and be gone, for you haue free liberty to goe whither you will. Hee gaue me ſome moneys of ſmall value, and ſome few Spaniſh *Royals*; all was a matter of nothing, ſcarce worth God-a mercy; and with this poore pittance, I tooke my leaue of him and left him. I walked along vvith my head in my boſome, muſing in the ſtreete as I vvent, on the great force of Vertue, which did never leaue any man vn-rewarded; whereas Vice did never ſuffer any man to eſcape vvithout puniſhment, and ſhame.

I vvould faine haue ſpoken then vnto my Maſter, and haue told him, that he might be pleaſed to remember, that I had relieu'd him in his wants, ſupplyde his neceſſities, taken a great deale of paines in his ſervice, to my great coſt and hinderance. But I thought with my ſelfe, that hee vvould twit mee in the teech with thoſe things, and lay them to my charge, and that therefore hee was the willinger to rid himſelfe of mee, as of a rotten member, good for nothing, but to infect all the reſt. And ſo I reſted from that. Now ſeeing in what diſgrace I was, and hoping to finde out my kindred there, I made the leſſe reckning of it. So I went dayly vp and downe the City, ſeeking by that meanes to learne the language, which as yet I neither vnderſtood, nor knew, out of the deſire that I had to know, and to be knowne.

R THE

THE ROGVE:
OR,
THE FIRST PART OF THE LIFE OF GVZMAN DE ALFARACHE.

The third Booke.

Wherein, he treateth of his beggerly course of life, and what therein hapned vnto him, whilst he was in *Italy*.

CHAP. I.

Guzman *discourseth of Povertie, and of the wrongs and outrages, which a poore man endureth; As also of Riches, and of the honours that are done vnto the Rich: As likewise of the naughtinesse of this present world: And how not finding his Kindred, which he sought for in* Genoa, *he went to* Rome; *and of a jest that was put vpon him, before he left that Citie.*

The nature of flatterers

With Flatterers, no Rich man is a foole; nor no Poore man wise. For they still weare Spectacles of the largest sight; by reason whereof, thinges represent themselues far greater then indeed they are. It may truly be called, Wealths-Moth, and Truths-Worme. Flatterie resideth most with the Poore, being the greatest enemie that he hath: For that Povertie, which is not the Daughter of the Spirit, is but the Mother of shame and reproach; it is a dis-reputation, that drownes all the other good parts that are in man; it is a Disposition to all kinde of evill; it is mans most Foe; it is a Leprosie, full of anguish; it is a way that leads vnto Hell; it is a Sea, wherein our Patience is overwhelmed, our honour is consumed; our liues are ended, and our soules vtterly lost and cast away for ever.

The Poore mans Epithites, and his wretched condition.

The poore man is a kinde of money that is not currant; the subject of every idle Hulwiues chat; the off-scumme of the people; the dust of the street,

firſt trampled vnder foot, and then throwne on the dung-hill; In concluſion, the Poore man is the Rich mans Aſſe. Hee dineth with the laſt, fareth of the worſt, and payeth deareſt: His Six-pence will not goe ſo farre, as a Rich mans three-pence; His opinion, is Ignorance; His diſcretion, fooliſhneſſe; His ſuffrage, ſcorne; His Stocke, vpon the Common; abuſed by many, and abhorred of all. If he come in Company, hee is not heard; If any chance to meet him, they ſeeke to ſhunne him; If he adviſe (though never ſo wiſely) they grudge and murmure at him; If hee worke Miracles, they ſay, he is a Witch; If vertuous, that he goeth about to deceiue; His veniall ſinne, is a blaſphemie; His thought, is made treaſon; His cauſe, be it never ſo juſt, it is not regarded; and to haue his wrongs righted, he muſt appeale to that other life. All men cruſh him; no man favoureth him; There is no man, that will releeue his wants; No man that vvill comfort him in his miſeries; nor no man, that will beare him company, when he is all alone, and oppreſſed with griefe. None helpe him, all hinder him; none giue him, all take from him; hee is Debtour to none, and yet muſt make payment to all. O the vnfortunate and poore condition of him that is poore, to whom even the very houres are ſold, which the Clocke ſtriketh, and paies Cuſtome for the Sun-ſhine in Auguſt!

Th: rich mans Epithites, and his condition.

And as your rotten and refuſe-fleſh, comes to be meat for dogges; ſo, as an vnprofitable piece of fleſh, the diſcreet poore man comes to be eaten vp and devoured by a company of ignorant Chuffes. But it is quite otherwiſe with the Rich: How ſmooth doth the Wooll goe on their ſide? What a freſh gale of winde is ſtill in the poope of them? In how calme a Sea doe they ſaile? What faire weather, free from the leaſt cloud of care? And what careleſneſſe in thoſe ſtormes, which other men ſuffer? Their Granaries are full of corne; their (*a*) Butts of Wine; their jarres of Oyle; their Cheſts of money. In the Summer, he keepes himſelfe from the heate; And in the Winter he clothes himſelfe warme to defend him from the cold. Of all men he is well receiued. His fantaſticall trickes, are gentleman-like carriage; His fooliſh ſpeeches, are wiſe ſentences; If he be malicious and hath a peſtilent pate to plot miſchiefe, then is he ſaid to be ſubtill, and to haue a ſhrewd head of his owne; If he be prodigall, they ſtile him liberall; if covetous, a wary wiſe fellow; if given to rayling, he is a wittie Gentleman; if foole-hardie, of a braue daring ſpirit; if impudent and full of ribaldrie, he is a merrie man, and a fine Companion; if bitter in his taunts, and given to detraction, an admirable Courtier; if incorrigible, all mettall; if ſcoffing, pleaſant-witted; if babbling and full of prate, they tearme him ſociable; if vicious, affable; if a Tyrant, a powerfull man; if obſtinate, conſtant; if blaſphemous and full of oathes, a very valiant fellow; if dull, graue and fit to make a Counſellour. His errours the earth covereth; all are afraid of him; none dare offend him; Every mans eare is ty'd to his tongue, ſeeking by their attention to pleaſe his palate; and not a word that comes from him, but is entertained by them with as much ſolemnity, as if an Oracle had ſpoken vnto them. He will not be ſaid nay, but will haue what he liſt, making himſelfe both Partie, Iudge, and Witneſſe. When he will countenance a lie, his power makes it to paſſe for a truth, and, as if it were ſo indeed, it is ſo receiued. How is he accompanied, how viſited, how feaſted, how magnified of all men?

(*a*) *The Spaniſh word is*, Cuba i. el vaſo hecho de coſtillas de Madera del gada, que ſe ſinne con aros y cercos y communemente ſe hazen las cubas, para echar en ellas el Vino. Couarruuias.

In a word, Povertie is the poore mans portion; and riches, that of the rich. And therefore, where good bloud boyleth, & the pulſe of honour beats ſtrongly, want is held a greater loſſe then life; death is not ſo hurtfull, nor ſeemeth halfe ſo terrible vnto him, as Neceſſity. For money warmeth the bloud, and makes it quicke and actiue: Whereas he that is without it, is but a dead body that walkes vp and downe like a ghoſt amongſt the living. A man cannot without it doe any thing in it's opportune and fit time, he cannot execute his deſires, nor accompliſh any thing, wherevnto he hath a liking.

A man without money, is a body without life.

This

This is the courſe of the world, it hath alwayes kept this tracke, it is no new thing, but even from the beginning, to ſee (*a*) men of baſe birth, and meaner parts, to waxe proud and arrogant. There is no helpe nor remedie for it; So wee found it, and ſo we ſhall leaue it; we muſt not looke for a better time, nor thinke that it was otherwiſe heretofore. All vvhatſoever, either hath beene, is, or ſhall be, is ſtill one and the ſelfe-ſame thing. Our firſt Father was credulous and light of beliefe; our firſt Mother a Lyer, and falſe of her word; The firſt ſonne that was borne into the world, a thiefe and a *Fratricide*, one that kild his owne and onely brother.

What is there now, that was not heretofore? Or what can we hope for in that which is to come? If what is paſt ſeemeth better vnto vs, it conſiſteth onely in this, that we are more ſenſible of the ill that is preſent; and call to remembrance thoſe good thinges of old, which being ſo farre off, are quite abſented from vs: yet when our troubles are once over-paſſed, we are ſo glad, when wee finde our ſelues to be well rid of them, as if they had never beene. So your Medowes beheld from a farre, are very pleaſant to the eye, and delightfull to looke vpon, but when thou draweſt neerer vnto them, thou doeſt not finde ſo much as one hands breadth of ground, where thou maiſt conveniently ſit thee downe, all that thou ſeeſt, being nothing elſe but bogs, pits, and ſtones. Wee ſee the one, but never thinke on the other: it is as common, as ancient in the world, for every man to loue proſperity, to follow after riches, to ſeeke for fulneſſe, to procure preferment, to purſue plenty, and to hazard our liues to get wherewithall to liue, and to grow into money (which is the mother of abundance;) For where that is wanting, the father towards the ſonne, the ſonne towards the father, brother towards brother, and I my ſelfe, even towards my ſelfe, breake my faith and my word, and abhorre mine owne ſelfe.

This leſſon, time hath taught me, out of the diſcipline of his experimentall diſcourſes, having puniſhed me vvith an infinite number of miſeries and afflictions.

I plainely now perceiue, that if (vvhen I arrived at *Genoa*,) I had conſidered what I was, and but looked well into my ſelfe; I would not haue ventured ſo farre as I did. And if I had had but the wit to haue reſerved that occaſion to ſome better fortune, I ſhould not happely haue beene ruin'd and vndone by it, as you ſhall heare hereafter.

As ſoone then as I had left the Captaine my Maſter, having made of all my tatter'd ragges and other old clouts, a kinde of Scar-crow (for they vvould ſcarce ſerue for any other vſe) to fray away birds from the Fig-trees, I would needs boaſt my ſelfe to be deſcended of the (*b*) *Gothes*; an ancient Gentleman, and neerely ally'd to moſt of the Nobility of that Citie, giving out, that I was ſuch a one, & come of ſuch a Houſe; and making farther inquirie of my Fathers ancient Familie, and his great Alliance in that Citie, it cauſed ſuch diſtaſtefulnes, & ſuch a loathing in them towards me, that they did hate me to the death. And it is to be ſuppoſed, that if they could haue done it vvithout any prejudice to themſelues, they vvould haue given it me; And thou alſo vvouldſt haue done the like, if ſuch a gueſt ſhould haue come vvithin thy doores. But they manifeſted their good meaning by thoſe actions, vvhich they vſed

(*a*) *The Spaniſh phraſe, is,* Que de atras le viene al garbanço el pico. *Which is rendred as I haue here ſet it downe.* Vide Couarruuias Verb. Garbnaço.

(b) *The etymologie of this word* Godo, *or* Gothe *is divers: and comes of* Gallia, *a Province ſo called.* Got, *alſo ſignifies a Father, which is a phraſe properly belonging vnto God. If from hence we deriue the name of* Gothes, *they muſt be men of eſteeme, as* Heroes, *or good men.* Goet, *is as much as* Good, *from* Got; qua voce Deum vocamus, quia bonum à Deo deſcendit, & ad Deum deducit. *It is not amiſſe to thinke that* Godo *in it's Language, ſignifies Good. Some would haue it come of the Hebrew word* Goi, *which is by interpretation,* Gens, *or* Natio. *But fetch it whence you will, I am ſure of this, that the* Gothes *were Lords of innumerable Provinces, and particularly of* Spaine, *where they ruled a long time, till the vnfortunate raigne of* Don Rodrigo, *and of the Reliques of thoſe, which had retyred themſelues into the Mountaines, the Nobilitie of* Spaine *began anew to lift vp their heads, which continueth to this day; and is ſtill in ſuch eſtimation amongſt them, that when they will ſet forth the preſumption of ſome vaine glorious fellow, they will aske him,* Si deciende de la caſta de los Godos. *Whether hee be lineally deſcended of the race of the* Gothes.

towards mee. There was not that man to whom I made my ſelfe knowne, that did not releeue me with a boxe on the eare, a flirt on the lips, a kicke on the breech; and he that did leaſt hurt or diſgrace mee, did not ſticke to ſpit in my face, vpbraiding me with the name of Villaine, Rogue, (*a*) Moore, and the like. Art thou a *Genoues?* Thou art the ſonne of ſome vile lewd woman, no better can be conceived of thee. And as if my father had beene *terræ filius*, a ſonne of the earth, a miſ-begotten Baſtard, or as if he had bin dead ſome two hundred yeares agoe, I could not find ſo much as a foote-ſtep of any friend or kinſman of his. Nor could I diſcover any thing, till one came vnto mee, and greeting me with a Serpents tayle, like a crafty old Scabbe; (O that accurſed old Villaine, that ſonne of a Whore, O how did he coozen me!) clozing faire-ly with me, vp and told mee:

(*a*) Couarruu. *The Spaniſh word u*, Marrano. i Porcus vnius anni. Et Iudæus recenter converſus ad Chriſtianiſmum, cum Hiſpanis, vocatur Marrano.

A notable pleaſant tricke put vpon Guzman, *by a* Genoes.

I haue heard much talke (my Boy) of your Father, and I can bring you acquainted with thoſe that ſhall render you a large relation of your Parents, and thoſe none of the meaneſt; but (if I be not deceiued) even the beſt and nobleſt in all the Citie.

And becauſe I ſuppoſe you haue ſupt already, come and take a bed with me at my houſe, (for now the time is fit for nothing elſe) and to morrow morning we will walke a turne or two about the Towne, and I ſhall bring you to thoſe (as I told you) that knew him very well, and had long converſed with him. The good preſence that he carried, the gravity wherewith he vttered his words, his good proportion of body, his decent attire, his bald-head, his white Beard, which reached almoſt downe to his Girdle, and the Staffe which he bare in his hand, repreſented (me thought) vnto me another Saint *Paul*. I truſted my ſelfe with him, I followed him to his houſe, with a great deale more deſire to ſup, then to ſleepe: for that day I had made but a bad dinner, as well for that I had beene chafte and angred; as alſo that it muſt haue beene at mine owne coſt, which made me to quake, as oft as I did but thinke vpon ſpending but a farthing.

But becauſe that which the rich giue vs, is but little, and what we call for, muſt coſt vs money, wee eate but little bread, and that (God knowes) ſtale and hard; though to vs, that are almoſt hunger-ſtaru'd, it ſeemes a great deale, and ſoft enough. Beſides, I was now growne a pinch-belly, and a very miſer to my ſelfe.

I went along, but with feeble legges, ready to faint for hunger, after that I ſaw what an Hoſt I was like to haue, & how (like a *Cordoueſe*) he told me by way of prevention, that I had already ſupt: And had it not beene out of the feare that I had to loſe ſo faire an opportunity, I would not haue gone with him, vntill I had firſt viſited ſome tippling houſe. But the hope of that good which ſeemed to waite for mee, made me to leaue the Bird that I had in my hand, for to follow the Oxe, which fled too faſt from me, for me to catch him. As ſoone as wee were come into his houſe, a ſervant came to take off his Cloake; he will'd him to let it alone; and they twaine having talked together a while in their owne language, he ſent him forth: So that now being left all alone to our ſelues, we walked many a turne, and ſometimes talked of one thing, ſometimes of another. At laſt, he drew neerer vnto me, asking me di-vers queſtions concerning Spaine; and amongſt the reſt, more particularly of my Mother, as how ſhee was left, what was her Eſtate, how many brothers ſhee had, and in what ſtreet ſhee liu'd? I gaue him a full account of all, as wiſely, and as adviſedly as I could for my life.

In this diſcourſe I entertain'd my ſelfe the better part of an houre, vntill ſuch time as his ſervant was returned. I know not what was his arrand, nor what meſſage he brought him backe; but my old Foxe turn'd about vnto me, and ſaid vnto me; So, it is well, enough for this bout, it is time for you to take your reſt, get you to bed, and to morrow we ſhall ſee one another againe, and then

then we ſhall inlarge our minds more freely to each other. Then he cals, *O la Antonio, Maria*, doe you heare there? Come away, and conduct this Gentleman to his lodging. I went along with him from lodging to lodging, through this roome, and that roome, I knew not whither my ſelfe; it was a great large houſe, wrought with many goodly faire Pillars, whoſe pauement was all of Alabaſter, hewne foure-ſquare.

At laſt we croſſe through a Court, and enter into a lodging, that ſtood at the one end thereof, which was very well furniſhed, and fairely hung with Hangings of ſundry ſorts of colours, like vnto your (*a*) *Arambales*, but that they ſeemed to be ſome-what better then they. The Beds-head lean'd againſt the wall, and cloſe adjoyning therevnto ſtood a little low Stoole. And as if he would haue me to make my ſelfe vnready, the ſervant that was appointed to attend me, offered his ſervice to pull off my clothes. But they were ſuch, and ſo ragged, that my ſelfe knew not very well how to put them either off, or on, vnleſſe I tooke a great deale of care, diſpoſing of one piece after another, for there was not any one part that was whole, or put in it's proper place, ſo that it was impoſsible to diſcerne or know, which was the Ierkin, or the Breeches, when you ſaw them layd abroad, and ſtreetched out vpon the ground. So that I having vndone ſome few knots, with the which I had faſtened them together for want of points, I let them ſlide off from me at the beds feet. And thus foule and ſlovenly as I was and ſo lowſie, as no man could well be worſe, I crept me in between the ſheetes. The bed was ſoft & good, the ſheetes cleane and ſweet. And when I was laid, I began to think with my ſelfe, ſure, this good old man is my kinſman, that he vſes me thus kindly, but will not make himſelfe knowne vnto me, till to morrow morning. It is a good beginning, it cannot be but that he will giue me new Cloathes, and deale kindly with me, ſince being in that poore and miſerable eſtate as I was, he had given me ſuch good entertainement. Queſtionles it is ſo, & now will ſome faire fortune befall me. I was but young, I did not diue to the bottome of his drift, I only lookt vpon the *Superficies*, I went no farther then the outward appearance. For, if I had had either wit or experience, I might haue conſidered with my ſelfe, that great offers, haue great ends, and that he that is full of courteſie is full of craft. For ſuch kindneſſes as theſe, are not done for nothing, there is ſome myſterie more in it, then a man is aware of. And alwaies obſerue this for a *Maxime*, or generall rule, That when a man ſhall offer thee courteſies of an extraordinary nature, and ſuch as heretofore he hath not been accuſtomed to doe, either he meanes to put a tricke vpon thee, or elſe he ſtands in neede of thee. The Servant, when he had me to bed, went forth of the Chamber, leaving a candle burning by me, I ſpake vnto him, wiſhing him to put it out. He told me, I muſt hold him excuſed, and that he would not doe ſo, for in the night time, there flie vp and downe in that Countrey (almoſt in every corner) certaine Bats, or Reare-Miſe of an extraorditary bigneſſe to thoſe in other places, which are very offenſiue, and doe much hurt, and that the only remedy againſt them, is to haue a light ſtanding by ones bed ſide, for they can by no meanes indure it, but ſeeke to avoid it by flying away from it into ſome blind corner or other.

He likewiſe told me, that this their Country was full of Hob-goblings, and Robin-good-fellowes, which were all great enemies to the light, but in your dark lodgings, they did now and then play their parts, and doe many a ſhrewd turne. All which I did beleeue with the greateſt ſimplicitie in the world.

This ſaid, he went his wayes; and he was no ſooner gone, but I preſently got me vp, and made faſt the doore, not that I was afraid of robbing (for I had nothing to looſe) but out of a ſuſpition and jealouſie that I had, that ſome one miſchance or other might befall me; being young, vnfriended, vnknowne, and in a ſtrange place, where I never was before.

Having

(*a*) Aramball: *Is a Mooriſh word: and is a courſer ſort of Hangings.*

A grande offerta, grande penſamiento.

Having (as I thought) made all ſure, I returned back againe to my bed, fell preſently aſleepe, injoying (to my great content) a ſweet and quiet reſt; for the Pillowes, the (a) *Colchons*, the Coverlets, and the ſheets did drinke a Health vnto me, and I (with a very good will) did ſoundly pledge them.

(a) *Your Spaniſh* Colchones, *are like your finer ſort of Engliſh Matreſſes; quilted with Wooll, or Flaxe; for in your hot Countries they vſe no feather-beds.*

The better part of the night was now over-paſt the beame of mid-nights ballance began to decline, and leaned a little towards the breake of day, whileſt I, being in a dead ſleepe, was wakened on the ſudden with a confuſed noiſe of foure parts: Divels they ſeemed to bee by their ſhape, their habit, their blacke curled haire, and by thoſe fearefull vgly vizards, which they had vpon their faces.

Having walkt their Stations a while about the Chamber, they came at laſt vnto the bed, wherein I lay, putting me in ſuch affright, that I loſt my ſences for a time, and without any word ſpeaking, off they pluckt the Coverlets from me, anon after the ſheets. I wondred what a Gods name would become of me; I fell as faſt as I could for my life, to croſsing and bleſsing of my ſelfe; I ranne over my prayers, I called a thouſand times vpon the name of IESVS; but they were *Dæmonij baptizati*, *Chriſten Divels*, and therefore drew ſtill neerer and neerer vnto me; They had put vpon the *Colchone*, vnder the nether ſheet, a Blanket; every one tooke hold of his corner, and haled me forth in the middle of the roome. I was much amazed, and extreamely troubled, when I ſaw that my prayers could not prevaile; inſomuch, that I did neither dare; and if I durſt, yet I vvas not able to open my mouth, nor to ſpeake ſo much as one vvord, if I might haue all the vvorld for my labour.

The roome was high-roofed, and fitted for their purpoſe; vvhere, vvhen they had me out amongſt them, they began to blanket me, and to toſſe me vp in the aire, as they vſe to doe dogges at Shroue-tide, till growing ſo weary, that they could hold out no longer, they left vvinnowing of me (being ſufficiently fanned already) and laid me downe there againe, vvhere they found me, and leaving me for dead, they covered me vvith the cloathes, and vvent out that way they came in, having firſt put out the light. I was ſo diſ-joynted, and ſo broken as it vvere in pieces, and ſo beſides my ſelfe, that vvhen it was day, I did not knovv, vvhether I vvere in heaven or here vpon earth: God, vvho vvas pleaſed to preſerue me, knevv for vvhat end he did it.

It vvas novv about eight of the morning, and I vvas vvilling to riſe, for that I found my ſelfe reaſonably able to get vp. Me thought, I did not ſmell ſo ſweet as I ſhould, my body cleaving to the Sheetes, no clay could be more clammy, nor any plaiſter cling cloſer.

This put me in minde of my old Maſters wife, the Cooke. And although there are no perturbations vvithout ſome one diſorder or other, yet this did much afflict me. But now the Crow could bee no blacker, then vvere his wings: And therefore I rubb'd ouer all my body with the cleaneſt places, that I could meet vvithall in the ſheetes; vvhich when, I had done, I beganne to buckle my harneyes vnto me, and fall a knitting of my old knots, to my older cloathes. And the longer I was in making of me ready, the more I did conſider with my ſelfe, vvhat a Divell that ſhould be, that had befallen mee this laſt night: And if when I roſe vp, I had not found my limm's almoſt ſhaken in pieces, my bones bruzed, and in a manner out of joynt, I ſhould verily haue thought, that it had beene but a dreame. I look't round about the roome, but could by no meanes finde vvhich way they ſhould come in. By the doore it vvas impoſsible, for I had ſhut that ſure with mine owne hands, and found it faſt lockt, as I left it.

Then I began to caſt with my ſelfe, whether they might not be thoſe Hobgobblings, and Robin-good-fellowes, which the Young-man told me of ouernight. But that (me thought) could not be; for if it were ſo, then had hee done very ill, that hee did not adviſe me before hand, that there were ſome

of

of theſe ſame mad merry ſpirits, that delighted as much in light, as other more melancholly Divels did in darkeneſſe.

Whileſt I was muſing on this buſineſſe, and deviſing with my ſelfe, how or vvhich way they could get in; I lifted vp the Hangings, to ſee, if behind them I could eſpy any little out-let; at laſt I lighted on an open window, which did butt out vpon the Court, thorow which we croſt. Then I preſently ſaid with my ſelfe; This way were the Bulls brought in, my hurt came in at this Window; And albeit every rib in my bodie, and all my bones throughout, did rattle in my skinne, making ſuch a noiſe for all the world as your Cheſſe-men doe, when you ſhake them together in the bag, yet I did diſſemble it all that I could (in regard of that ſlovenly part, which I had playd againſt my will) till I ſhould ſee my ſelfe quite cleare of the houſe: I threw vp the bed as handſomely as I could, covering all as cloſe as might be, that if any ſhould come in, they might not ſmell out my fault, and finde out the feebleneſſe of my retentiue faculties, and ſo the ſame Devils bee brought in againe, and torment me anew.

The ſervant, that brought me thither, came to mee towards nine of the clocke, and told me, that his Maſter expected me in the Church, and that I muſt goe thither vnto him; And becauſe I would not willingly haue his man ſtay behinde in the Chamber, that I might get the ſtart of him, I intreated him that he would doe me the kindneſſe to bring me to the doore, becauſe I was vnacquainted with the houſe, and knew not the way out. So he brought me forth into the ſtreet, and returned backe againe.

When I ſaw I was come off cleere from him, as if I had beene borne with wings at my feet, and my body had been ſound & whole, I tooke (a) *Villa diego* his Breeches, and tript away ſo nimbly, that he that had runne Poſt, ſhould hardly haue overtaken me. Hee runnes faſt that flies: Feare addeth wings and ſtrength; thought was not ſwifter then my flight, I bought ſomething by the way to ſatisfie hunger, and for to gaine time, I eate as I went, and made no ſtay, till I was out of the Citie. Where in a Taverne I call'd for a Cup of Wine, where-with I refreſht my ſelfe, that I might walke the ſtronger towards *Rome*, whither I had directed my journey, thinking all the way as I went vpon that groſſe ſcorne, whereby they ſought to baniſh me out of *Genoa*, to the end that my povertie might not diſgrace them; but I did not remaine their Debtor, nor had they any great cauſe to bragge thereof in the end, as you ſhall ſee in the ſecond part.

(a) Tomar las Calſas de Villa diego. Vale huyr mas que de paſſo, *This Proverbe is in* Celeſtine, *but it's originall vnknowne: But it ſhould ſeeme* Villa Diego *was driven to his ſhifts, and not having time to put on his breeches was forced to fly away with them in his hand.* Couarr. verb. Calſas. Guzman, *leaues* Genoa, *and goes for* Rome.

CHAPTER II.

Guzman *diſcourſeth of the vnhappineſſe, greatneſſe, ond commendation of Neceſsitie and Want; And how after hee was gone from* Genoa, *he fell a begging. And how keeping Companie with other poore beggers, he was inſtructed by them of their Statutes, and Lawes.*

I Fled ſo faſt out of *Genoa*, that if *Lots* wife had but done that which I did, ſhe had never beene turned into a Pillar of Salt. I never offered to looke backe, my Anger ſpurd me on and put me vp to the height of my ſpead; for when choller once begins to boyle, we hardly feele the wounds that are giuen vs, though they be never ſo mortall, never ſo deadly. Beſides, by how much the more a man re-bringeth as it were himſelfe, to himſelfe, and looketh home into his owne boſome, by ſo much the more hee comes neerer to the recognition and knowledge of his hurt.

Anger and it's effects.

I escaped from the overthrow given at (a) *Ronçes valles, como perro* (b) *con bexiga*; like a Dog, that claps his taile betweene his legs, and through too much haste to be gone as farre as his feet will carry him, growes sur-bated, and stiffe in his joynts. There was not one firme ligament in all the whole Fabricke of my body. But I did not much feele it, till I came to rest my selfe; When I drew neere to a little Village some ten miles off from *Genoa*, where I sate me downe, not knowing whither to goe, being bruised in my body, naked of cloathes, without money in my Purse, and blacke and bleu all over, as if I had beene beaten with a Cudgell.

(c) O *Necessity*; how doest thou abate mans courage? How doest thou take off his Mettall? How doest thou dis-hearten his bodie? And howbeit it be true, that thou doest sharpen the wit, and refine the vnderstanding, yet thou destroyest the faculties thereof, by diminishing & taking off so much from the senses, that they are readie to bee slaw'd and crackt in pieces through too much sufferance, and that intollerable patience, wherevnto they be put.

There are two sorts of (d) *Necessitie*; The one shameless and impudent, which (like an vnmannerly guest) comes of it selfe, without being called. The other which being invited, straines a little curtsie, but comes vpon intreatie at the first bidding. That which vnrequested, (e) bids it selfe, God deliver vs from it; And this is that, of which I treat. This is like a powerfull guest in a poore mans house, who out of his greatnesse brings a thousand followers along with him; it is that man of Warre, wherein a multitude of mischiefes, (like so many Pyrats) stand readie armed, wayting to doe hurt. It is the framer and plotter of all kinde of trecheries and villanies; hard to be indured, and worse to be corrected. It is that *Lucerna Nauis Pretoriæ*, that Lanterne in the Admirals Ship, which all couzenages and deceits attend and follow; it is the sport of Boyes and children; a fooliſh dance, a ridiculous Comedie, the sad and direfull Tragedie of honour and of vertue. It is fierce, foule, fantasticke, furious, fastidious, faint, facile, feeble, false: only she failes of being a *Franciscan*. And it is a wonder, if she afford any other fruit but infamie.

That other, which we bid & invite, (f) & comes not but when she is called, is Lady-like, liberall, rich, franke, powerfull, affable, generous, sociable, gracious, acceptable, and welcome to all. She leaues vs a full and plentiful house, feeds vs at her costs, and defraies all recknings; she is a firme defence, an inexpugnable Tower, true riches indeed, and good, without hurt; That (g) Necessitie (I say) with necessitates it selfe, but is not necessitated, is the place of perpetuall rest, the house of God, and the way to heaven. It lifteth vp mens mindes, it addes strength vnto their bodies, it doth innoble their fame, it cheereth their hearts, it magnifieth their Actions, and makes their names immortall.

Let renowned *Cortes*, her trueſt Lover, sing forth her praises. Her legges and feet are of Diamonds, her body of Saphires, and her countenance of Carbuncles, it shineth, it cheereth, and it quickneth, it is full of pleasure, lustre, and life. But that other neighbour of hers, lookes like a filthy old sluttish Laundresse, where you shall see nothing but a heape of Spittle ragges, full of matter'd stuffe, and the soiles of vlcerous sores, which no eye is able to indure, it is so loathsome to looke vpon, and therefore (with a great deale of reason) abhorred of all. Behold and view me well, for I am one of those, with whom Necessitie fell in loue, she never left following me, but kept me company at bed and at boord, living in deadly sinne, by being bound to seeke out meanes to maintaine her. And to this end, she made me study the (h) Briviatick Art.

(a) Ronses valles, *is a Monasterie, built by King* Don Sancho de Nauarra, *whub he indowed with great Rents; it is a Covent of Canons Regular, who beare in their brests an Azure Crosse, hauing the forme of a Shepheards Crooke, or Crosier staffe. Heere was a great battell fought. The said King lies buried in this Monasterie, his body being brought from* Tudela, *where he died.*

(b) Vexigas, *are certaine Blisters, which rise vpon the flesh, through heate, or some other accident and commonly grow on the feet of men or beasts, with over-much travell.* Couarruuias. Bexiga.

(c) *Necessitie, and it's effects.*

(d) *Two sorts of Necessitie.*

(e) *Necessitie, that invites it selfe, and the miserie thereof.*

(f) *Necessitie that comes not before she bee invited; and the greatnesse thereof.*

(g) *Necessitie, not necessued, and the commendation thereof.*

(h) Briuion, *is a loytring fellow that will not worke, but goe from Towne to Towne, from house to house, to begge a piece of bread and a Dish of drinke. It is a French word,* Bribeur, Mendicus. Briber, Mendicare. Couarruuias.

This

This was the course I ran, I was to day in one place, and to morrow in another, begging an almes of all that I met with.

It is fit, that wee should giue every man his due. And therefore I must confesse vnto thee, that there is much charitie vsed in *Italy*, and indeed so much, that this new Trade, that I had betaken my selfe vnto, made mee loth to leaue it, I found so much sweetenesse in it. For in a few dayes I grew flush, and able to make wings to maintaine my flight; So that from *Genoa*, whence I came, till I saw *Rome*, where I stayd, I performed all that Voyage, without spending so much as one farthing. The money that was giuen, I kept that whole and intire, and for victuals, I had ever sufficient, and more then would serue my turne. I was yet but a Novice, and therefore threw that away many times to the dogges, which afterwards, when I had more judgment, I sold for money, which brought me in no small gaines.

Italie, *a charitable Country.*

I had a great minde (as soone as I came thither) to put my selfe into new cloathes, that I might be some-what againe like my selfe; but this counsell of mine (mee thought) was not so good; and therefore repenting my selfe of it, I sayd thus with my selfe; Friend *Guzman*; take heede, lest this other doe not proue like that of *Toledo*. And if being well clad, thou shouldst not chance to meete with a Master, how wilt thou haue bread to put in thy mouth? Content thy selfe, and continue still as thou art; For, if being well apparelled, thou shalt beg an almes, they will giue thee nothing; Keepe that which thou hast, and leaue off these thy vaine and idle humours.

This deliberation tooke place: and having now set vp my rest, I knit another knot vpon my Purse-strings, and then I spake vnto my money, and sayd, Here rest you quiet, for I know not what need I may haue of your helpe. I began then in these my old ragges, that were not good enough to make wast Paper, hanging those tatterd streamers as handsomely as I could about mee, (which seemed like so many little pieces of ravell'd Flannell, so full they were of jigges and jagges) to beg for my liuing.

Having recourse still at noone to those places, vvhere there vvas either bread, or porrage to be had; and sometimes it would so fall out, that I should get as much at once, as might very vvell serue three more besides my selfe. I visited your Cardinals, your Embassadours, your Princes, your Bishops, and other great mens houses, not over-skipping any one of them. I was directed unto them by another yong youth of that Countrey, hee was my Guide, who vvas vvell skill'd in that craft, and was the first Tutor that ever read any Lectures vnto mee in this kinde. Hee taught me the first grounds and Principles of this learned Science, and the different *Species* and formes of begging, how this man was to be sought vnto, how that; vvhat phrase of language to be vsed towards such a sort of people, and vvhat a differing fashion to those of another kinde. For vvee must not haue all one tone, for all sorts of persons, but must vary our note, alter our straine, and apply our selues to that stile, vvhich vve shall thinke will take best, and most moue and affect the party, whose devotion wee craue.

Men do not care for curious words and choise phrases, they loue not the smoothnesse of flattery, and as little can they abide to be beaten about the eares with loud exclamations; that vvhich they like best, is an honest plaine kind of begging *Por amor de Dios*; Good Sir, for Gods sake, bestow one poore penny vpon mee.

Your women they are wonderfully devoted to the Virgin *Mary*, to our Lady *del Rosario*, and the like; vvith these you may be a little more liberall of your Language, beseeching God that hee will direct all their Actions to his holy service, that hee would deliver them from all deadly sinne, from the accusation of false Witnesses, from the power of Traytors, and the malice of evill tongues.

This

This being well pronounced, and repeated over and over, with a great deale of vehemencie of vvords, and a ſtrong and earneſt delivery, makes their purſes preſently fly open, and happy is ſhee who can firſt ſupply thee with an Almes. He taught mee how to worke the rich to compaſſion, how to moove the poorer ſort to pitty, and how to oblige the religious devout man, that hee ſhould not be able to get from me, before he had giuen me an almes. He inſtructed me ſo well in ſuch a company of fine cuming trickes in this kinde, that I got a great deale in a little time.

Conoçia deſde el Papa, haſta el que eſtaua ſin capa. *Proverb.*

There was not that man, but I did know, even from the very *Pope*, to him that had ne're a Cloake: that is, from the higheſt to the loweſt. I did runne over all the ſtreetes of *Rome*, and that I might not be too troubleſome by begging too often in one place or of one perſon, I did divide the whole City into certaine quarters, every working-day vvalking my ſeverall Station; but on Sundayes and Holy-dayes, I vvas wholly for your Churches, I never miſt, but punctually kept my houres, and there I made good purchaſe. But that which I made moſt profit of, were the pieces of bread, that were given mee: Theſe I ſold, and they yeelded mee many a faire penny. Part vvhereof thoſe poore men did buy, which did not goe vp and downe a begging, but * were faire for it, being (as they ſay) the next doore to it, who out of their poverty, were faine to trade vvith mee, becauſe I could afford them a good bargaine.

* *The Spaniſh word is,* Tenian la bola en el embogue.

And ſome I ſold to poore Country-folkes, ſuch as make a living of feeding Pigs, and fatting of Poultry. But thoſe that were my beſt pay-maſters, were your [a] *Turroneros*, for to make their *Alaxur* or [b] *Alfaxor*, as they call it in *Caſtile*. I did helpe my ſelfe beſides, with ſome old houſe-hold ragges, who, for that they ſaw I was yong, and naked, did in pitty beſtow them vpon mee, which were ſomething worth to mee, though to them they were things of nothing.

a Qui coquit & facit Turrones Turron Copta Cruſtulum. *A Biſket made with Honey, Almonds, ſmall Nuts, Walnuts, Kernels of Pine-Apples, &c.*

b Alfaxor *is a Mooriſh word; And is a kinde of Conſerue, made of Hony, Spices, and crummes of bread.* Couart. verb. Alaxu.

Afterwards, I fell in company with ſome other of more ancient ſtanding in that faculty (for they had their diſtinction of degrees, & prioritie of formes, as in Schooles) for the better increaſing of my knowledge, & that from them I might learne how to governe my ſelfe vviſely and diſcreetly. Theſe Rogues had beene admitted into the Livery long agoe and had borne Office of Renters and Wardens, men that had held preeminence amongſt them, and deſeru'd to be Maſters of their Company. With theſe I vvent to ſome knowne Doles; there being ſome men that did dayly (out of meere devotion) diſtribute almes every morning to the poore in their particular houſes. Going once to receiue this Dole in the French Embaſſadors houſe, I might heare other poore Beggers, that were behinde mee, beginne to murmure ſaying, This Spaniſh vnhappy Boy, which beggeth now here in *Rome*, is newly come, and a meere ſtranger in this place, hee is not acquainted with this courſe of life, and for want of knowledge, (by that which I haue obſerved in him) he is likely to beate downe the market, and if ſome order be not quickly taken with him, hee will vndoe vs all. For having once fill'd his belly, in the moſt places where hee comes, if they giue him any victuals, hee refuſes to take them, and tels them (God be thanked) he hath dined vvell inough already. Hee will quite overthrow the Art of begging, by giuing the world by this meanes to vnderſtand, that we poore Rogues haue more given vs then wee can well tell what to do withall. So that if he runne this courſe a little longer, he will hurt vs, and do himſelfe no good.

Another of their Comrags, that was there with them, Tuſh (quoth hee) hold yee your peace, let mee alone with this Lad, I will take him to taske, and yee ſhall ſee how I will worke him, I will inſtruct him how to vnderſtand himſelfe, & how he may not eaſily be vnderſtood by others. Leaue him (I ſay) to mee, With that, ſpeaking ſoftly vnto me, hee called mee vnto him, and wee went out alone by our ſelues from all the reſt of the Company. Hee was an excellent

cellent Proficient, and a very ready and dextrous man in all that appertained to that Art.

The first thing that hee did (as if hee had beene the *Protopobre*, or Prince of Beggers) was, to examine my life, asking me, Whence I was? What vvas my name? When, and to what end I vvas come thither? Then did hee deliver vnto mee the great obligation, that Beggers had to keepe a *decorum* in all their actions, to hold correspondence one with another, and to linke in loue together like sworne [a] brothers, and that I should informe my selfe of certaine curiosities, and secrets, and some Principles, which I did not as yet know. For in very truth, that which I learned of my Youth afore-mentioned, and of other poore Rogues of lesse talent, and farre inferiour both in knowledge and experience, were al triviall things, and of no esteeme, in comparison of those precepts, which I receiued from this Grand-Master of his faculty. Hee gaue mee certaine Rules, which I shall never forget at long as I liue.

Amongst the which, one was, that I should vnfold three or foure leaues of my stomake, and open the booke to a plaine vomit, yet to be so well read therein, that it should not appeare to the world, that it proceeded from any surfet, or that I had over-charged my stomake. He taught mee a tricke how to turne vp my stomake in some by-corner, which brought two good effects.

First, it moued the people to compassion, thinking that I was sicke: Secondly, though afterwards I should swallow downe two Platters of vvarme pottage, there would be roome inough still for more. And so by this meanes the infamy and misery that the poore indured, would the better be published and spread abroad. I knew how many bits I was to eate, and how I was to looke vpon the bread that they gaue mee, how to kisse it, and how often, and what kinde of countenance to cast vpon it: VVhat fashion of behaviour I was to vse, and how to carry my selfe vpon all occasions, differing the forme, according to the diversity of men dispositions. I knew the true tune of my voice, vvhen I was to rise, and when to fall with it. I knew the set houres wherein I was to repaire to such or such a place; In what houses, I might enter in even to the bed-side, and in what, I might not presse no farther then the doore. I knew whom I might be bold to importune, and be earnest withall in my craving; and whom againe I ought not to sollicit or speake vnto aboue once. In conclusion, he gaue mee in writing all the Statute-Lawes, and Orders, ordained by that free Common-wealth of beggers, instructing mee in the observation of them, for the avoiding of scandall, and the better informing of my vnderstanding. And these are they that follow.

[a] *The Spanish word is* Hermano de mesta. *A certaine jurisdiction belonging to Heards men and Sheepheards. The Etymology thereof is not so easie; but I will deliver what I thinke, remitting my selfe to others better opinion. It is termed* Mesta quasi mixta. *By reason of the concurrencie and mixture of divers Herds and Flockes one amongst another. And because they make restitution of those that are thus inter-mingledone with another, which are knowne by some Markes branded with hot irons. Or it is said to be* Mesta, *of* amista, *because of the great conformity and friendship betweene these kinde of people, who are very observant of their Lawes. This the Idiome of Aragon doth confirme, who name that, which the Spaniards call* Mesta, Ligallo, *which is as much as* Liga, *and* Liga, *is a confederation, or friendship.*

The Lawes and Ordinances, which are inviolably to be observed amongst Beggers.

FOrrasmuch as all Nations haue their proper method of Begging, and are distinguished and knowne by their sound, and by a differing forme from all others; as are your *Almanes* by their singing, and going in troopes; your *French-men*, by their praying; your *Flemmings*, by their making of legges, and their low and frequent Congies; your *Gypsies*, by their importuning; your *Portugals*, by their weeping; your *Italians*, by their long Circumlocutions; and your *Spaniards*, by their bigge lookes, and high language, as if they would swagger out of a man an Almes whether he will or no: whereby they make themselues hatefull to their owne hurt, being held no better then vaine babblers, and a kinde of insufferable proud Rogues; these therefore we more especially will and command, that they reforme this disorder, beare themselues civilly, that they do not curse, nor blaspheme, (as too commonly they vse to doe) but that they keepe good order, according to our Statutes and Ordinances in that case provided.

Item, wee will and command; That none of our brother Rogues, or begger vvhat-ſoever, either wounded, or lame of any of theſe Nations, whence, or whatſoever, ſhall joyne and vnite himſelfe vvith thoſe of another Country, and that not any perſon or perſons of all, or any one particular, ſhall make any Covenant, Compact, or alliance, vvith any blind men, that goe ſaying their prayers, from doore to doore, nor with any Mounty-bankes, Muſicians, nor Poets, nor with Slaues ſet at liberty, though our Lady her ſelfe ſhould haue releated and ſet them free from the power and tyranny of the Turkes, nor with old Souldiers, which being tatter'd and torne, haue forſaken their colours, and fled from their Captaines; nor with Marriners, that with one ſtorme are diſ-heartened, and haue no more minde to goe to Sea. For howbeit all and every one of them do ſuite and agree well together in all kinde of cheating, and roguiſh trickes, and would make excellent beggers, yet the Art it ſelfe of begging, and the language are much differing. And therefore wee will and command every one of theſe to keepe his owne quarter, and ſtrictly to obſerue ſuch orders as are ſet downe and ordained in that caſe.

Item, We will and command that the poore of every Nation, eſpecially in their owne Countries, haue certaine Tavernes, and knowne victualling houſes, where ſhall ordinarily preſide and governe three or foure of the more ancient amongſt them, having ſtaues in their hands, as Enſignes of their precedencie, and authority: Whom wee depute, to treat in thoſe places of all ſuch Accidents and other things that ſhall happen there, or ſhall otherwiſe be brought to their knowledge. That they ſhall ſit in Councell, and giue their opinion therevpon. And when they haue ſo done, they may afterwards play at Foxe mine Hoſt, or ſome other drinking [a] Game, at Cards or Dice for their recreation, and to waſh away care. They may ſit ouer the Cup, and tell old Stories: they may recount the famous Acts, done either by themſelues, or others, as alſo of their Anceſtors, and boaſt of thoſe warres, wherein they haue ſerved, and what-ſoever elſe they ſhall thinke fit for intertainment.

Item, We will and command; That every Begger carry a good Bat or Cudgell in his hand, and thoſe that are able, to put a good Pike at the end of it, that they may be armed and provided againſt all caſualties, that may befall either their Purſe, or their Perſons. Which they are to doe vpon penalty of their own hurt.

Item, That no begger may, or do vveare any new garment, or but halfe worne out, ſaue ſuch as is rent and thred-bare, and full of patches, by reaſon of the ill example that may grow thereby, & the generall hurt that may come of it. Alwayes provided, that if any ſuch Coat or Cloake bee giuen by vvay of Almes, that then it ſhall be lawfull for him to weare it that day onely wherein it was giuen him, without any farther limitation of licence, but the next day following to put it off, and never were it more, but forthwith to alter the property, vpon paine of our generall diſpleaſure, and his owne particular hinderance.

Item, Wee will and command, That in the taking of their places, and their ſeates, they do all and every one of them obſerue, *antiquitatem poſſeſſionis, & non perſonæ* the antiquitie of poſſeſſion, and not of the perſon; preferring the ancienter in ſtanding before the elder in yeares. And that no man ſhall dare or preſume, to vſurpe or defraud one another in this kinde.

Item, Wee will and command, That two ſicke, or two lame perſons may joyne and goe together, and call Brothers, but with this condition, that they begge by turnes, and ſtraine their voyces as high as they can reach; the one ſtill beginning, where the other leaveth, obſerving equall time, and tune, every one keeping his one ſide of the ſtreete; and not vſing any artificiall phraſes, or affected forme of ſpeeches let each of them expreſſe, as ſignificantly as he can, his parti-

[a] *The Spaniſh word is* Rentilla: *The Italian*, Gatracieca. *It is ſome Toſſe-pot game, wherein your Ale-Knights, and idle Rogues ſit over their Cups, and cenſure and deride all eſtates.*

particular griefe; and let them afterwards part and ſhare the gaines betweene them, vpon paine of our Worſhips diſpleaſure.

Item, Wee will and command, That no Begger carrie from the knife vpwards, any armes, either offenſiue or defenſiue. That hee weare no Gloues, Pantofles, Spectacles, his hoſe truſſed or his ſtockings gartered, vpon paine of forfeiting of all his temporalties.

Item, It is farther enacted, That they may weare a foule filthy cloute knit about their heads in ſteede of a Kerchieffe.

They may alſo beare about them a paire of Sizars, a Knife, an Awle, Needle and thread, a Thimble, a wooden Diſh, a (*a*) Gourd, a little Hand-basket, a Scrip, a Wallet. Be it alwaies provided, that they beare no Sacke at their backe, no basket of burthen, no (*b*) *Alforjas* or Knap-ſacke, which Travellers vſe to put their proviſion in, when they are to goe ſome great journey, nor any ſuch like kinde of thinges as theſe be. But it ſhall be onely lawfull for them to walke with two Crutches, and a ſore legge, with a long and deepe tent in it.

Item, Wee will and command; That all beggers beare two purſes about them; one little one, and another of a bigger ſize, beſides certaine private pockets for cloſer conveyance, that may ſafely endure a ſearch; and that they put the almes that is given them into their Hat. And Wee farther will and command, that they neither may make, nor doe make any Pouch or Budget, in Coate, Cloake, Frocke, Gabardine, Caſſocke, or Mandillion, vpon forfeiture, it being once eſpi'd and found out, they may chance to loſe it, and ſtand regiſtred ever after for fooles vpon record.

Item, We will and command, that no man diſcover the ſecrets and myſteries of our Trade, nor divulge and publiſh them abroad, ſaue onely to thoſe that are Profeſſors of the ſaid Art. And he that ſhall invent or finde out any new tricke or cunning device for the common good, ſhall be bound to manifeſt the ſame to the incorporation of beggers; to the end, that it may be vnderſtood and knowne of all, for as much as ſuch good thinges as theſe, are to be accounted as common, there being no prohibition to the contrary; and more eſpecially, not to be concealed from thoſe that are our Country-men and naturalls of the ſame Kingdome. But for the better encouraging of others, and that notice may be taken of our good government; We giue priviledge, and plenary power to the firſt Inventor and Author thereof, that for the ſpace of one whole & compleate yeare, he make his beſt benefit of the firſt impreſſion, not ſuffering or permitting any, without his ſpeciall and particular Licence, to vſe or exerciſe the ſame, vpon paine of our heavy diſpleaſure.

Item, We will and command, That all beggers ſhall manifeſt and make knowne to one another, all thoſe houſes, where any almes are to be had, eſpecially thoſe, where there is any Gaming, as alſo ſuch places, where your Gallants vſe to meet, and court their Miſtreſſes; for that is a certaine rent, and ſeldome faileth.

Item, We will and command, That no begger breed any hunting Hounds, Greyhounds, or bloud-hounds, nor may in his owne houſe haue any more then one little Mungrill-curre; for the which wee giue free liberty and licence, and that he led him along with him either ty'd in a ſtring, or otherwiſe faſtened to his girdle.

Item, We will and command, That none ſhall carry a dog about with him, making him to dance and leape thorow a Hoope: nor ſhall it be lawfull for him to haue or hold any place to begge at the doore of any Church, any ſtation, or Iubilee, onely he ſhall haue free leaue to begge as he paſſes along by the ſtreet, vpon paine of being counted contumacious and rebellious to our Lawes and Ordinances.

Item, Wee will and command, That no begger preſume to come to the

(*a*) *The Spaniſh word is* Calabaça: *wherein Pilgrims and beggers carry their beverage.*
(*b*) Alforjas *is a wallet deuided into two parts, that it may the more eaſily be borne vpon a mans beaſt. It is an Arabicke word, to wit,* Ahſodja, *of the Verbe* Ahſad, *which ſignifies to keepe: becauſe in it Travellers keepe their proviſion.*

Butchers ſhambles, or to the Fiſh-market, to buy either fiſh or fleſh, ſaue in caſe of extreme neceſſity, and licence of the Phyſician; nor that he ſing, play vpon any Inſtrument, leape, or dance, by reaſon of the ſcandall that may ariſe by ſo doing.

Item, Wee licence and permit, that ſuch beggers as are ſo diſpoſed, may rent certaine children, to the number of foure (but not aboue) their ages being firſt examined; and if two of them be taken for twinnes, borne of one wombe, at one and the ſelfe-ſame time, it ſhall not be thought amiſſe of, in caſe that the elder of the two be not aboue fiue yeares old. And if it be a woman that goes about with theſe children, ſhe ſhall beare one of them ſucking at her breſt; and if a man, he ſhall carry one of them in his armes, and leade the other along by the hand, and not otherwiſe.

Item, We will and command, That thoſe Beggers that haue any children, they make ſetting dogges of them, to lie watching cloſe at your Churches, and haue ſtill an eye vpon thoſe that come in and out, for whom it ſhall be lawfull to begge an almes for their poore father or mother, that lie very ſicke and keepe their beds, and haue nothing to helpe themſelues withall, having foure or fiue ſmall children, that are ready to ſtarue for want of food. Alwaies prouided, that it be ſo taken and vnderſtood, that this Patent extends not to any that is aboue ſixe yeares of age; for if they ſhall once exceed and paſſe thoſe yeares, then are they to ſhift for themſelues, and like birds that are fluſh, to forſake the neſt, and like Hounds that are ready to be entred, noſe out their owne living, and goe abroad, and bring home their prey at vſuall and ordinarie houres.

Item, Wee will and command, that no begger giue conſent, or ſuffer his children to ſerue, to be bound Prentice to any Trade, or to waite vpon any man, whom he ſhall acknowledge for his Maſter. For their gaines will be little, and their labour much: And therein they ſhall greatly offend, by not following the ſteps of their forefathers, and running a courſe quite contrary to that good way, wherein they haue beene borne and bred.

Item, We will and command, That by ſeven of the morning in the Winter, and at fiue in the Summer, no begger be in his bed, or keepe his lodging, but by breake of day, as ſoone as the Sunne ſhall be ready to peepe forth, or ſome halfe houre before, they goe abroad to gather honey for their hiue. And likewiſe, that ſome halfe an houre before the ſhutting in of the Euening, he by all meanes, and at all times retire himſelfe and get him home; ſaue onely in ſome caſes reſerued, and that with our eſpeciall leaue and licence.

Item, Wee permit and giue leaue, that they may breake their faſt in the morning, eating a morſell of ſome thing or other, if they haue laboured for their living, and gotten any thing the ſame morning, and not otherwiſe. For therein they loſe time (which is a precious thing) and ſpend vpon the ſtocke, by diminiſhing the principall. But with condition, that he waſh and clenſe his mouth, that the ſent thereof be not perceiued; As likewiſe, that hee paſſe not vp and downe the ſtreets, or by any mans houſe, playing with a cloue of Garlicke in his hand, a ſliced Onion, or that his breath ſmell of Wine; vpon paine of being held incapable and vnfit to begge.

Item, Wee will and command, that no man dare to play the Impoſtor, or commit any groſſe villanie, as to ſteale houſhold-ſtuffe, or helpe to convey it away, or exchange it for other, or to vntyle houſes, or ſtrip children of their cloathes, or to commit any the like baſe action, vpon paine of being excluded from our brotherhood, and put out of our incorporation, and to be remitted over to the ſecular power.

Item, Our will and pleaſure is, that every begger, when he ſhall be of full age; that is, (three yeares after twelue, being fully complete and ended) having legally and worthily laboured in that courſe of life, and attained to the

the true art of this our free and noble Profeſſion; he beheld, taken, knowne, and vnderſtood (be it any ſuch manner of perſon or perſons) to haue fulfilled the Law, and comply'd with the Statute: notwithſtanding, that two other yeares to gaine experience, and to learne how to driue the (a) fiſh into the net, haue alwaies to this very day and preſent houre, beene thought very neceſſarie and expedient; and ever after to be held as a Graduate, that hath performed his exerciſe, and taken Degree amongſt vs. And having thus profeſt himſelfe, and made proofe of his learning and manners, wee farther will and command, that he haue, hold, and enjoy all the Liberties, Priviledges, and exemptions granted by vs vnder our great Seale; but with this condition, that he neither may, nor at any time doe forſake our ſervice, and that he ſhew his obedience vnto vs, by obſerving our Lawes and Statutes, and by ſubmitting himſelfe to our Cenſure, in caſe he ſhall offend againſt them.

(a) Xauega *is the Spaniſh word, which is a Foſsers net at Sea, wherewith by little and little, they goe drawing and haling the fiſh to the ſhoare, where certaine* Picaros *and Rogues are ſtill waiting for to pull and tugge at the cordes of the net, whom they call* Los de la Xauega. *It is an Arabicke word, which in it's owne termination is ſaid to be* Xibquetum, *of the Verbe* Xebque, *which ſignifieth, to intrap, or bring into the Net.*

CHAP. III.

How Guzman de Alfarache, *was not onely reprehended by a learned Rogue, and Doctor in his faculties; but likewiſe how he learned of him ſome new Orders and Capitulations, concerning this his roguiſh kinde of life, and that which happned vnto him in this his vpright courſe; And of many Precepts and leſſons delivered vnto him vpon this point by a* Cordoveſe, *an old cunning Croſſebiter.*

BEſides theſe Ordinances, they had many other which they duely kept and obſerved, not worthy at this time to be ſpoken of, which were preſcribed and compiled by the advice and counſell of the famouſeſt Rogues in *Italy*, every one (in his time) ſetting downe ſuch Lawes, as then ſeemed moſt convenient. So that it might be ſaid of them, that they were another new Recopilation, or gathering together of thoſe of *Caſtile*. Theſe were much illuſtrated in thoſe dayes by one, whoſe proper name was *Alberto*, whoſe ſurname (*Mizer Morcon*: Whom in *Rome*, wee had made choyce of for our Generall; Who, for his ſtature, ſhape, proportion of body, his faſhion, converſation, and commendable carriage, deſerved to haue the Imperiall Crowne ſet vpon his head. For he farre ſurpaſſed all his Predeceſſours, who were no way to be compared vnto him, ſo farre did he out-ſtrip all them that had gone before him. He might deſervedly be ſtiled the Prince of Roguery, and the Arch-begger of Chriſtendome. Hee would devoure you at one meale, all the tripes and entralls of two good ſheepe, together with the puddings that were made of them, beſides the Trotters, a whole Cowes Vdder, ten pound of bread, vnboulted and vnſifted, betweene the beginning and end of dinner, allowing himſelfe therevnto in drinke, two (b) *Açumbres* of Wine. And albeit himſelfe alone got more almes in one day then any ſixe of thoſe ordinary beggers, which gained moſt; yet had he never any overplus left, nor did ſell any of thoſe ſcraps, that were given him, nor did receiue any money, which hee did not preſently drinke. And hee did goe ſo farre beyond vs, and was every way ſo much our ſuperiour, that we muſt of force (as Vaſſalls to his good or bad fortune) ſuccour and releeue him all that wee could. I never ſaw him buttond, nor covered from the girdle vpward, never to weare any girdle, nor ſo much as halfe a hoſe or ſhoe vpon foot or legge; His head was evermore bare, his beard cloſe ſhaven, and his skinne all over his body did ſhine and gliſter, as if it had beene annointed and baſted with Bacon. This vpright-man did ordaine, that every poore body ſhould carry about with him a wooden diſh in the crowne of his hat, or ſome other con-

Mizer Morcon, *Generall and ſuperintendent over the beggers.*

(b) *Every* Açumbre, *we devide into foure meaſures, which we call in* Spaine, quartillos. *An* Açumbre *may be ſaid alſo to be a great big Iarre, or Pitcher filled with Wine.*

venient place, and the dried rinde of a Pumpion, wherein to put his Wine, clapping it in ſome cloſe place, where it might not be ſeene.

Orders, ſet downe by Morcon, *King of Beggers.*

That no begger ſhould carry any jarre or pot about him, wherein to drinke his water. But when he came to drinke, he ſhould ſup it out of a Caldron, a Kettle, a great earthen Pan, ſome broad Tub, or huge Vatte, or the like, and then too, to thruſt in his head like a beaſt, and not in any other manner.

That he, that ſhould not drinke a ſound draught after his Sallet, ſhould be made incapable to drinke afterwards, as long as that ſupper, or dinner laſted, and to riſe vp a thirſt.

That no begging Rogue ſhould buy, or eate any Comfits, Conſerues, or the like ſweet things.

That every one ſhould eate either Salt, or Pepper with his meate; vnleſſe it haue beene therewith ſeaſoned before. In that caſe, the doing, or not doing of it, ſhall be left to his owne liberty.

That your poore Rogues ſhall be bound to ſleepe vpon the ground in their cloathes, without Pillow or Bolſter, lying vpon their backes, with their faces vp to heaven.

That having gotten enough to ſpend that day hee goes a begging, he ſhall trouble himſelfe no farther, nor begge any more for that day, but giue way to others to gleane, where he left off.

This our *Mizer Morcon*, when he did eate, would lye lazing all along vpon the ground, and would ſleepe both Winter & Summer, without any covering of Sheet, Blanket, or any thing elſe that might keepe him warme.

Ten moneths of the yeare, he never went out of Tavernes, and victualling houſes; Wee had (as you haue heard) our Lawes and Orders amongſt vs, all which I committed to memory, and was perfect in them, but did obſerue no more of them, ſaue ſuch as appertained to good governmen', and of theſe I was every way as religious, and obſervant, as if my ſalvation had depended vpon the true keeping of them. I made it my chiefe happineſſe, and placed a kinde of felicitie therein, that my Actions might credit my Profeſſion, and become abſolute in my calling. For things, that are once imitated & begun by vs, when we haue taken them in hand, are not eaſily to be forgotten, nor to be given over, till they be fully finiſhed, and ended. For it is a note of ſmall prudence, to enter vpon many thinges, and to end none of them.

I did not put my hand to any thing, that ever I tooke it away, till I ſaw my labour ended, and had fully effected what I had vnder-taken. But becauſe as yet I was but greene fruite, and not come to my full ripeneſſe, whereby I wanted much of my true relliſh, I failed much in the practicke part of my profeſſion, and fell ſhort daily in ſuch caſualties as did vſually offer themſelues vnto me, and in many of them I did much erre.

(a) *In* Italy *in that moneth it is hot at that time of day.*

Vpon a Feaſt-day, about the beginning of (*a*) *September*, towards one of the clocke in the afternoone, I went forth into the Citie in that great heat, and ſuch a ſcorching Sunne, that I am not able to expreſſe it, perſwading my ſelfe, that whoſoever ſhould heare me begge at that time of day, would verily thinke, that I was wondrous hungry, and taking pittie of me, would relieue me with ſome thing or other.

Guzman *recounts the tricks vſed by Beggers: And a jeſt that was put vpon him.*

I would needs (meerely out of curioſitie, & no other end elſe in the world) ſee what I could get at theſe vnſeaſonable houres. I walkt my Stations through ſome ſtreets, & viſited many houſes, but could get nothing frō them, ſaue evill words, giving me foule language, and many a bitter curſe, asking me in a Devills name what I made there? And ſo roming about from houſe to houſe, I came at laſt to one, where I knockt at the doore with my Staffe, but no body would anſwere me. I knockt the ſecond time, and the third, but all was one. Then I enlarged my voyce, and began in the higheſt key I could reach, to ſet out my throat, and to begge as loud as I could for my life. For the houſe was very

very great, and ſtood farre within, and therefore ſuppoſed they could hardly heare me, vnleſſe I ſtrained my note a little higher. Whileſt I was thus balling at the doore, a roguiſh Boy of the Kitchen, who (as it ſhould ſeeme) was ſcouring of Diſhes, came juſt to the ſame window, vnder which I directly ſtood, and threw downe vpon me a great bucket of ſcalding water; and when hee ſaw it had fairely lighted vpon me, he leiſurely vtters: *Aqua va, guarden debaxo.* Ware water, looke to your ſelues there below. With that I began to cry out, that all the ſtreet did ring of me, grievouſly complaining, that I was kill'd by ſome of that houſe, and that it was impoſsible I ſhould liue. True it is, that I was ſcalded, but not in that cruell manner as I made my crimination

With this vociferation of mine, and the lamentable exclamation that I made, the people flockt about me, and every one ſpake what he thought: One ſaid it was ill done; another, that it was mine owne fault; and that, though my ſelfe had no minde to ſleepe, yet I ought in good manners to ſuffer others to take their reſt.

There were ſome others, that did comfort me the beſt they could, and of thoſe that were ſome-what more tender-hearted then the reſt, I made a ſhift to picke vp ſome money amongſt them, and with the helpe of that, I went firſt where I might dry my ſelfe, and afterwards got me home to take my reſt; muttring to my ſelfe, as I went along, who (with a pocks) made me ſo curious, as to goe about to remoue the River out of his bed? When ſhall I bee able to containe my ſelfe? When ſhall I learne to content my ſelfe with that which ſhall be fit and neceſsarie for me, without incroaching vpon that, which is not convenient for me? What Divell did deceiue me, and drew mee out of that ordinarie tracke, which I was wont to tread, by making me to be more forward then the reſt of my fellowes? I drew neere at laſt to mine owne lodging, and there hard by dwelt an old poore man, about ſome threeſcore and ten yeares of age, who was borne of beggerly Parents, that had borne Office in our Incorporation, and had left his trade of begging vnto him by inheritance, wherewith he made a ſhift to liue, and to paſſe his life away heere vpon earth.

A beggar that was a Cordouese, *teacheth* Guzman *many leſſons concerning the Art of begging.*

He was of *Cordoua*, there was he borne: Which I the rather tell you, that you may know that he was dy'de in his wooll, a notable Rogue in graine, whom his Mother brought to *Rome* ſucking at her breſt, in the yeare of *Iubilee*.

When he ſaw me paſſe by in that miſerable pickle, looking for all the world like a Diſh-clout, all wet, all to be-moyl'd, foule and full of greaſe, and all to be ſpatter'd with the refuſe leaues of Coleworts, and the over-ſodden empty Husks of Peaſe, wherewith my garments were imbroidered all over; he askt me what had hapned vnto me? I acquainted him with the whole ſucceſſe of the buſineſſe. He was ready to burſt himſelfe with laughing, and having made himſelfe merry a while at my mis-fortune, compoſing his countenance, with a ſettled kinde of gravity, in the end he ſaid thus vnto me.

I feare me (my friend *Guzman*) that you will proue another *Benitillo*, you are ſuch a Hot-ſpurre, and your young bloud boyles ſo faſt within you, that you would faine come to be a Maſter, before you haue attain'd to be a Scholler. Doeſt thou not now perceiue, that thou haſt done ill, in exceeding thy Commiſsion, and in breaking thoſe cuſtomes, that are ordered and ordained by the Company? Yet, becauſe thou art my Country-man, and a young Lad (and therefore apt to erre) I will teach and inſtruct thee, what thou oughteſt to doe, and how to behaue thy ſelfe. Sit thee downe by mee, and hearken well to that which I ſhall ſay vnto thee.

(a) Seſtear, i. repoſar ala Sombra en la hora de Sexta. Que es la del medio dia. *Your Spaniards generally ſleepe after dinner all the Summer time.*

And firſt of all, I would haue thee to conſider, That you muſt not goe a begging in the Summer time preſently after dinner, when moſt men are diſpoſed to (a) *Seſtear*, and to lye downe and take a Nap, in ſome place of ſhade,

or ſome coole roome; and leſſe at Noble mens houſes, then thoſe of your Trades-men, and Cittizens. The houre is im-proper, and vnfit, and all of them then either doe, or at leaſt are deſirous to take their reſt. And it would be as ſtrange, as troubleſome vnto them, that any ſhould then offer to wake them; And importunities, at that time of all other, are moſt irkeſome, and vnpleaſing vnto them.

Next, I would haue thee take this Rule of me, (and it is a true one) That when you haue call'd or knock't at one doore twice, either there is no body within, or they will not be within, becauſe they are not willing to anſwere. When thou perceiu'ſt that, get thee gone, and ſtay there no longer; for thou mayſt well loſe thy time, but thou ſhalt get no money.

Never offer to draw a Latch', or to thruſt open a doore that is put to, nor to enter within the houſe. For it hapneth ſometime in the opening of a doore, that (without the knowledge of thoſe of the houſe, not once dreaming of any ſuch accident) a dogge may ſuddenly ruſh fiercely forth vpon thee, and carry away halfe a Buttocke at a bit. Nor doe I know how theſe ſcuruy Curs ſhould come to know vs, ſo well as they doe, but I am ſure we are hated of them, and they will neuer let vs paſſe by them, without barking, or biting. And if the Dog ſhould be miſsing, ſome deſperate roguiſh Boy or other will not faile to fall vpon thee, telling thee that, which thou wouldſt be loth to heare. And it is well if thou ſcape him ſo.

When thou beggeſt for an Almes, thou muſt not laugh, nor change thy note, but ſo tune thy voice, that it may carry the ſhow of one that is ſicke, though thou haue health enough for thy ſelfe, and ſome to ſpare for thy neighbours; having a ſpeciall care, that your face keepe an euen correſpondence with your eyes; your mouth it's equall and juſt compaſſe, aud your head bending towards your boſome.

Rubbe thy face a morning, when thou riſeſt, with a cloth that is rather dankiſh, then dung-wet, that when thou goeſt abroad, thou maiſt ſeeme neither faire, nor foule. And on thy cloathes, clap many patches, though they be never ſo hole; and let them bee of divers colours. For it much importeth, that a poore mans cloathes ſhould be rather patch't, then neat and cleanely: yet ſo, that they be not ſo ſlouenly, as to cauſe loathſomeneſſe.

It will ſometimes ſo fall out, that comming to a man to begge an Almes, he will take off his Gloue, and put his hand into his pocket, whereof thou wilt be glad, and laugh to thy ſelfe, thinking that he hath a purpoſe to beſtow an Almes vpon thee, whē as in the end thou ſhalt ſee him only pull out his Handkerchiefe to blow his Noſe. But for all this, thou muſt not bee angry, nor ſeeme to grumble at the matter, for it may bee ſome other may bee by him, which will giue thee ſome-what, though he doe not. Whereas, if he ſhall perceiue thy proud and ſullen carriage, he will giue thee nothing.

Where thou ſhalt finde thy ſelfe well vſed, ſee thou repaire thither dayly: For as Devotion ſhall abound, ſo ſhall thy Stocke increaſe. But ſee, that thou never depart from his doore, till thou haue pray'd for his friends that are deceaſed, and to intreat of God, that he will be pleaſed to bleſſe and proſper him in all his Actions.

Anſwere evill language, with milde words, and to rough ſpeech, apply ſoft tearmes; For thou art a Spaniard, and for our pride (being ill belou'd) we are abhorred of all, whereſoever we come; And he that will draw money out of another mans purſe, muſt rather begge then brawle; craue, then curſe; pray, then blaſpheme. For a gentle Calfe ſucks milke from a ſtrange teat, as well as from his damm's.

Prou. La bezerra manſa, mama de madre agena, y dela ſuya.

When they ſhall not giue thee an Almes, anſwere with devotion, God bee thanked: God bleſſe your Worſhip, and grant much health, peace, and content to this houſe, for the great good, and mercy, that you daily doe, & ſhew

vnto

vnto the poore. This tricke got mee a great deale of money; for answering them so gently, and so mildly, holding vp my hands; and lifting vp my eyes vnto heaven, they would call me backe againe, and giue me of that they had.

Besides all this, he taught me how to faine my selfe a Leaper, to make wounds in my flesh, to raise a swelling in my legge; to benumme an arme, to set a counterfeit colour on the face, to alter the whole body, and other curious principles of his Art; to the end that some might not twit vs in the teeth, and vpbraidingly say vnto vs; that our limmes were sound, and our selues strong and healthy, that we should worke for our living, and that it were no charitie, to relieue such lusty stout young Rogues. He did me many friendly Offices, he had many curious secrets of nature, whereof he made good vse; Nor did he hide any thing from me; for he found me very capable, and apt to receiue whatsoever he should put into me; And then he began to say vnto me, You see my foot is already in the stirrop to goe vnto my graue, and I would willingly leaue a Chaplaine behinde me to pray vnto God for me. And it fell out true as he said; for within a short time after he died.

Wee did some of vs meet many times together, to repeate our parts, and to make shew, what manner of exclamations would best become vs, and make most for our profit; These were studied by night, inventing divers methodes and formes of benediction. There was a poore man that got his living only by making these formes for vs, and did sell them vnto vs, at the rate of so many Comedies or Tragedies. And all was little enough, and no more then needed to moue mens minds, and to stirre them vp to compassion.

On festivall dayes wee would be vp betimes, where the Pardons and Indulgences were stirring, that we might provide vs some good place in the Church; for it was no small benefit vnto him, that could get neere vnto the Font where the Holy-water was, or to that little Chappell, where they were to make their station.

We would now and then goe a Progresse, and runne over all the Countrie, not leaving out a Village, nor so much as a Cottage bordering there-abouts, which we did not goe vnto; Whence, we came very well furnisht: For they would giue vs Bacon, Cheese, Bread, and Eggs in great abundance, besides cloathes to cover our nakednesse, pittying very much our poore and miserable condition.

We would many times begge a draught of Wine for Gods sake, complayning much of the paine and weakenesse of our stomacke. As much as you will, would they say, if you haue any thing wherein to put it.

We alwaies carried a little Iarre with vs, vnder colour of drinking water in it, which held somewhat lesse then halfe an *Açumbre*; They would evermore fill it brim-full, before they gaue it vs; But we were no sooner gone from that doore, but vve did presently empty it into a (a) *Bota*, which one of our Company carried behinde him at his girdle, vvhich would vvell hold some foure *Açumbres*. And I remembred it was once our hap to fill it full in one street alone, so that we were inforced to goe home, and powre it forth into a little earthen vessell (vvhich they call a *Tinajuela*) and then came backe againe to get more.

This word is margented before

(a) Bota, quasi imbuta, *of the Latine Verb.* Imbuo. *It is in briefe, a Bottle or Bottle Bottle made of Leather, to carry Wine in.*

We vsually went shod, but as good haue beene vnshod, our heads covered, but as good haue gone bare; So that we had shooes, and no shooes; hats, and no hats; For our shooes were sandal-fashion, old enough, and torne enough, and our hats were sutable vnto them; the one would scarce hang on our feet, the other scarce sit on our heads.

Wee seldome wore any shirt at all. For, vvhen (according to our accustomed humilitie) we should craue an Almes at such a doore; they would ordinarily say, Pardon me (my friend;) I haue not for you. God helpe you. I will giue you something at another time. Then we begin anew, and cry; An old paire of

The fashion of Beggers in begging an almes.

of shooes, or an old hat (good Master) for this poore soule, that hath never a shoe to his foot to beare him out of the durt, nor never a hat to defend his head from the Sunne and the raine; Gods holy name be praised. The Lord blesse your Worship; and deliver your good Worship from such a deale of miserie and wretchednesse, as we poore creatures indure. God multiply his blessings vpon you, and free you and yours, and all that you haue, from the power of Traitors and Villaines; Christ Iesus guard your Worship, and giue you health both of body and soule, which is the greatest wealth of all, and the truest riches.

If after this he shall reply: Indeed (brother) I haue not for you, I can not pleasure you at this time, excuse me.

Then, vpon the necke of that comes another replicant, and he laies about him, beseeching him to bestow vpon him some old shirt, though never so ragged and torne, for to cover the flesh, and to cure the wounds of this poore miserable man, and that he shall finde it againe in heaven, and that God will one day cover him againe with the cloathing of his mercy, and put vpon him a newer and whiter stole of innocencie and righteousnesse, that shall never weare out. I begge it of you for Iesus Christ his sake, he knowes my wants, and that I am not able to worke and labour for my living. The Lord helpe me; And the Lord reward you. And praised be that pure vnspottednesse of our blessed Lady the Virgin *Mary*.

Now tell me, what heart is there in the world, though of Iasper, and what bowels, though as tough as Iron, and as hard as steele, which will not bee made malleable with this hammer, and melt into compassion with the heat and warmth of so many good words?

Few houses did escape vs, without some one purchase or other. And never a paire of shooes could be so bad, no hat so vile, and no shirt so old, that was given vs, but yeeld vs more then a piece of three pence. To vs it was much, but to him that parted with it, of no profit, and lesse reckning. It was to vs a mine in the (*a*) *Serro de Potosi*: We had Merchants and Brokers for every one of these things, who would lay vs downe money for them on the boord, perfumed and washt over with the water (*b*) of Angels.

We had vpon the way certaine little Asses, whereon we did ride by turnes, when any store of raine fell, that we might the better passe over the Rivers, when the waters were risen. And if we did light by chance vpon any person, that seemed to beare the face of authoritie, we began to call vpon him a farre off, many a large step before we came at him, to the end that he might haue leisure enough to pull out his Purse, and take forth an almes; for if we should stay our begging till we did just incounter each other, many would forbeare to giue vs, least they might be hindred in their journey, and so we should goe without it. And taking this course, we did seldome misse.

Other-whiles, when we saw it fit occasion and time for it, vpon discoverie of some companie of people that came trooping together, we would prepare our selues to put on a counterfeit lameneſſe, to fall a halting, and betake vs to our Crutches: we would change our lookes, alter our countenances, take one another vp vpon our backs, writhe our mouthes, turne the lids and balls of our eyes vp to heaven, some feigning themselues dumbe, other-some crippled, and blinde, making shew that we could not goe but vpon Stilts, when as indeed we were as nimble and light-footed as the Bucke. We would clap our feet in a trice in certaine Swathes, that hung at our necks for that purpose, and carry our armes in a string, so that with these counterfeit tricks, and the helpe of good language, desiring God to send them well on their journey, and that he would preserue their limmes, and blesse their eye-sight, and bring them safe to their journies end, did alwaies bring vs in money. And these we did call our Adventures, because these good fortunes befell vs abroad in strange

(*a*) *I conceiue this*, Serro de Potosi, *to be some hill or mountaine in the West Indies, being a principall Mine among the rest, that yeelded great store of treasure.*

(*b*) *The Spanish word which is*, Aqua de los Angeles, *is so called by the Spaniards, because it is of an extraordinary sweetnes, distilled out of divers different flowers, and Aromatic all drugges*

ſtrange Countries, in places that were deſart and vnpeopled, and becauſe commonly it ſucceeded vvell with vs. But otherwiſe, wee did goe no farther then what was preciſely ſet downe vnto vs, and was held to be neceſſary for the performance of our progreſſe.

Wee had one excellent gift aboue all the reſt, That there was not any Feaſt, where wee were not preſent, getting vs ſome one good place or other; nor any Banquet, whereof wee had not a part; Our noſes were ſo good that wee could ſmell ſuch things ſome ten ſtreetes off.

Wee had no houſe at all, yet every houſe was ours; For either a Cardinals, an Embaſſadours, or ſome Noble-mans Porch or other did never faile vs; And if all, or any of theſe did faile vs, the Church Porches were free, and no body could there put vs out. So that having no property in any thing, we did notwithſtanding poſſeſſe every thing.

There were ſome likewiſe, that had old ruinous Caſtles, decayed buildings, and other poore lodgings not worth any thing, where wee did make our *Rendevous*: For all were not permitted to be Adventurers, nor all allowed (a) Pipkins to boyle their meat in; But I (who was but a yong ſtripling) looke where I was over-night, I would be ſure to be there againe the next day; So that albeit I had many times bad lodging, yet my youth bore it out, and it ſeemed to mee as good as the reſt.

a *The Spaniſh word is Puchero: an earthen Pot, or Pipkin, wherein they boyle* las Puches. *Now* Puches, *is a kinde of dreſſing and ſeething of meale & Oyle together, which in ancient time, was much vſed before the invention of baking bread was found out.* Latine, Pultes. Couarruuias. *Verbe* Puches, y Puchero.

CHAP. IV.

Guzman de Alfarache *diſcourſeth of the Charity, that wee are to vſe towards our neighbours; He recounteth what befell him with a Gentleman: And of the free life, and great liberty which a Begger injoyes.*

A good marke of Predeſtination.

ONe true ſigne, and aſſured token of our predeſtination, is the Pitie and Compaſſion which wee haue of our neighbour. For to haue a fellow-feeling of another mans miſery, (as if the caſe were our owne) is a deede of Charity, which covereth a multitude of ſinnes; and where there is loue, there is God; and hee evermore plentifully dwelleth in thoſe hearts by his holy ſpirit, where Charity and mercy aboundeth. All things, with it, haue life and being; without it, dye and come to nothing. For, neither the gift of Prophecie, nor the vnderſtanding of Myſteries, nor the knowledge of God, no nor faith it ſelfe, vvithout charitie, is any thing at all, but is all as nothing. To loue my neighbour, as I loue my ſelfe, is of all other, the richeſt and the greateſt Sacrifice; becauſe it is offred vp in the Temple of the ever-living God. And the merit is as great (through the mercy of our Saviour Ieſus Chriſt) to be truly ſenſible of our brothers miſerie and vndoing; as is the pleaſure that vvee take, that our ſelues ſhould be ſaved.

Charity of what force it is.

To loue our neighbour, is a great Sacrifice.

Charitie is the end of the Commandements, it is the onely marke, vvhereat the precepts of the Law do ſhoote. And hee that ſhall be charitable, ſhall finde the Lord mercifull vnto him in the day of his tryall. And becauſe vvithout God, vvee are not able to merit any thing of our ſelues, and for that Charitie is the gift of God, it is very fit and neceſſary, that vvee ſhould begge it at his hands vvith teares, and do vvorkes vvorthy the obtaining of it, moyſtning vvith thoſe pretious drops, the great drought that vve ſuffer in our ſoules, and mollifying therewith the hardneſſe of our hearts, that they may bring forth the fruites of good Workes, which are the effects of a true and liuely faith. For, the humble and contrite ſpirit ſhall never be forſaken, but God vvill rather ſtill ſuccour and ſupply him with his grace, beſtowing his beſt favours vpon

The charitable man is favoured of God.

vpon him, and inriching him with many notable and knowne benefits.

Riches compared to Sugar.

And albeit Riches, (being so neere a neighbour as it is vnto Pride) be an occasion of Vice, weakning and infeebling those our other Vertues, though it be dangerous to it's Owner; though it be a tyrannizing Lord, and a trayterous Slaue; yet notwithstanding it is of the nature of Sugar, which hath this condition and property belonging vnto it, that (if it be sweete and good, and hath not lost his savour) with warme things, it warmeth and giueth heat, and with cold things, it cooleth and refresheth. To the rich, it serues as an Instrument and meanes (by the helping hand of Charity) to buy eternall blessednesse. And that man shall be charitable, and truely rich, who making the poore man rich, shall make himselfe, of a rich man, poore. For thereby, hee shall make the world to know, that hee is a true Disciple of his Saviour Iesus Christ.

What manner of Cloake Guzman *had?*

I stood one day in the outward Court of a Cardinals house, hard by the Porch, closely wrapt and muffled vp in a great Russet Cloake, just of the same colour as it came from the Sheepes backe, without any other Dye in the world: which was so full of Patches, one clapt vpon another, which I had sowne so of purpose, that (where it had least) it was no lesse then of three threds, so that you could not at all, or very hardly discerne the ground of it's owne true colour. It was as hard and as stiffe as any boord, and for all vveathers, farre better then your fastest Felt, or your closest-wrought Rugge, or any other frized cloth in the world; for it vvas wondrous warme, and no ayre, water, nor cold would passe thorow it, and I was about to say (please it you to excuse the excesse of the phrase) that no arrow was able to pierce it.

Whilst I was thus waiting, there comes mee in a Cavallero to visit the Cardinall, seeming both by his Person, and his Attendants, to be a Gentleman of principall ranke and quality. Who, when hee saw mee standing there in this manner, thought verily with himselfe, that I was sicke of an Ague, and that I had then my cold fit vpon mee: when as indeed the cause that I lookt so pittifull was, that I had layen there in the Porch the night before; and because it was winter time, and that the ayre was fresh, and the winde blew cold, I was willing to keepe me where I was, till the day had advanced it selfe a little more forward.

A Gentleman sees Guzman, *he lookes vpon him, pities him, giues him an almes, and prayseth God.*

Hee look't earnestly vpon mee, and after he had well viewed mee, hee stood still, and beckned mee vnto him. I sneak't out my head, when I came neere vnto him, and being amazed on the sudden, and much astonished, to see a man of his worth approach so neere vnto mee, my countenance did come and goe, and began strangely to change and alter in selfe, not knowing why, or wherefore, or what should be the cause of this sudden alteration.

Hee (good Gentleman) thought that I did shake and tremble, and kindly sayd vnto mee; Put on thy Hat, my Boy, put on, I say, and cover thy head; God comfort thee, and send thee well: And vvith that putting his hand into his pocket, hee tooke out all that hee had, which was a matter of some thirteene *Royals* and a halfe and gaue them mee. I tooke them, and was so ravished therewith, that I was almost besides my selfe, as well in regard of the liberalnesse of the Almes, as to see how hee went away from mee, lifting vp his eyes vnto heaven.

A worthy consideration.

And, I verily beleeue, that hee sayd to himselfe, as hee went along; Let (O Lord) the Angels blesse thee, and all those Courtiours, that wait on thee in thy heavenly Kingdome; Let all the spirits of heaven praise and magnifie thy holy name, for men do not know how to honour thee, they are rude and ignorant creatures. O Lord, how much am I bound vnto thee! that I beeing made of no better mettall then this poore man, and perhaps borne of no better bloud then he, should sleepe and take my rest in my soft bed, whilest hee is forced to lye on the hard ground; should goe so vvell clad as I doe, vvhilest he

he remaines naked, and comfortleſſe; ſhould be thus rich, as I am, and hee ſo poore; that I ſhould be ſound, and hee ſicke; I admitted, and hee deſpiſed: And whereas thou mightſt (by exchanging onely of our places) haue beſtow'd all that vpon him, which thou haſt conferr'd on mee; Yet (O Lord) thou haſt been pleaſed to deale otherwiſe with me; and thou thy ſelfe beſt knoweſt why, and wherefore. Saue mee (ſweete Ieſu) by that pretious bloud, which thou ſheddeſt for my ſins. For that ſhal be my true riches, to lay faſt hold vpon thee for having thee, I haue all things; and not having thee, I haue nothing. I ſay, that this Gentleman knew very well how to imploy thoſe Talents, vvhich God had put into his hands; not conſidering ſo much to whom hee gaue, as for whoſe ſake hee gaue. Looking well vpon mee, and looking vvell into himſelfe, vveighing my wretched, and his happy condition, hee gaue mee all that hee had, with a franke hand, and a free heart; the one being as full of bounty, as the other of compaſſion.

To begge without need, may get vs money, but loſe vs heaven.

Such good ſoules as theſe, did (in the exerciſing of their Charity) gaine heaven by our hands, & we (wicked Villaines) haue loſt it by theirs; ſince, through the greedy deſire we haue to receiue, being ſtill craving and begging vvhen vvee haue no need, wee rob thoſe thereof that are in true want, ſuffering this Vice of ours to vſurpe vpon anothers Office. We went ſtill full gorg'd, greater gluttons and drunkards the world did not affoord; our ſides were ready to cracke with gurmandizing, and our braines to burſt with bowzing; your Senators of *Rome* could not liue more merrily then wee did, for vvee were as tall trencher-men, and as good Epicures as the beſt of them. And albeit vve are not ſo much reſpected, nor liue not in that repute and eſteeme as they doe; yet out manner of life hath a great deale more eaſe in it, and I am ſure, a great deale leſſe trouble.

The great priviledges belonging vnto beggers.

And wee haue beſides two ſuch Priviledges, as none of them all; no not the beſt man in *Rome* hath the like. The one is a kinde of liberty that vvee haue in begging, yet neverthelelſe do not looſe our liberty, vvhich is not ſo vvith your better ſort of men. For miſery hath no greater miſery vvith it, then when a man is forced to be beholding to ſuch or ſuch a friend to ſuccour and relieue his wants, though this helpe ſhould come from the free hand of his owne naturall brother. For hee buies at a deare rate, that receiues this kindneſſe; and farre more dearely does he ſell, who giues to him that is of a thankefull nature. And if on this point of begging, I might ſpeake mine opinion, it is the worſt mis-furtune, that can befall a poore mans life, when hee once comes to be driuen to beg out of meere neceſſity. For although it be freely giuen, yet the very craving therof doth coſt him much. Moreover, I ſhal tell thee what is the cauſe, that begging doth ſo much vexe a man, and why it goes ſo much againſt his ſtomacke; which is; That man being a perfect reaſonable creature, like vnto God himſelfe (as himſelfe ſaith) for when hee was to make man (the moſt bleſſed Trinity aſſiſting at that Creation) God ſaid, Let vs make Man after our owne Image and likeneſſe. (And I could alſo tell thee how this is to be vnderſtood, but it is not proper for this time and place.) Well, Man was made, and comming forth into the world, wee are all of vs naturally inclined to deifie our ſelues, ſeeking as much as in vs lyeth, to come neere vnto God; nay, (if it were poſſible) to be gods. And with this thirſt wee ſtill grow dryer and dryer; and with this hunger, waxe weaker and weaker.

Why it grieues a manly heart to beg.

Man, whereunto he is inclined.

Wee ſee, that God created all things: we would faine do the like. And ſeeing wee can not do it, as his divine Majeſty did of nothing, wee would do it of ſomething, as farre forth as our ability hath power to ſtretch, ſeeking to conſerue *individua Specierum*, the individuals of every *Species*, or ſeverall kinds vpon earth. The bruit beaſts in the Fields; the Fiſhes, in the Waters; the Plants, in the Earth: And ſo every thing in it's nature, that is in the world. Hee beheld thoſe workes, which hee had made with his owne hands, and they ſeemed

med to him very good, as proceeding from thoſe bleſſed and powerfull hands of his. Hee tooke delight in looking vpon them, for they were made to his minde. This paſſeth currant at this day, as it is ſet downe in the letter. And wee likewiſe are deſirous to do, or at leaſt to counterfeit the like; ſtriving to imitate him all that we may.

Every man loues his owne.

How well doe I like that Bird, that I haue bred vp in mine owne houſe? That Lambe, vvhich hath beene reared in mine owne Farme? That Tree, which hath beene planted in mine owne Orchard? That Flower, vvhich hath ſprung vp in mine owne Garden? What comfort do I take in looking vpon them? how does it joy mee, to ſee them to thriue and proſper? Inſomuch, that what my ſelfe haue not bred, made, or planted with mine own hands, although it be otherwiſe very good in it ſelfe, I will not ſticke to pull it vp by the roots, & caſt it away from me, & never grieue therat, it ſhal never trouble me: wher-as that, which is the work of mine own hands, the deare child of my induſtry; the fruit of my labours, though it be not ſo good as the other; yet becauſe it is my own handy-worke, I like it, & I loue it. From my neighbours or my friends Tree, I will not onely take away the Flower, and the fruit, but I will not ſo much as leaue a leafe, or a ſprigge therevpon, and if I haue a minde therevnto, I will not greatly care to cut it downe to the ground. But if it be mine owne, and that I haue planted it with mine owne hands, it would grieue my very ſoule if I ſhould finde but a *Piſmire*, or a *Caterpiller* vpon it, to doe it any hurt, or to ſee a Bird but to pecke at it, and all becauſe it is mine. In a word, wee doe all of vs loue our owne workes. And ſo, in wiſhing well vnto them, I am like to him that made me, and haue it from him by inheritance.

Gods greatneſſe, and mans baſe-neſſe.

The like is true in all other actions. It is very proper to God to giue; and very improper, to craue. Vnleſſe when hee requireth ſomething of vs for our owne good. For that which hee asketh of vs, it is not for himſelfe, neither hath he any neede thereof; for hee is *Remedium totius neceſſitatis*: the onely reliever of all our wants, and the only ſatisfier of the hungry. He hath much, and therefore is able to giue much; and nothing can be wanting vnto him. He doth communicate and impart vnto all according to their ſeverall neceſſities, eaſilier then thou canſt take water out of the Sea, and with a farre larger hand; ſo great an in-equality is there betwixt thy miſery, and his mercy.

Wee would likewiſe be like vnto him in this: He made me according to his owne likeneſſe, and I ought accordingly to be like vnto him; even as the thing inſtamped, ought to be like vnto the Stampe. How mad, how eager, how deſirous, and how fooliſhly are wee all bent vpon giuing? The Covetous, the ſaving man, the Rich, the Vſurer, the Begger, all do keepe and hoord vp for to giue. But the moſt of theſe men vnderſtand leaſt (as I told you before) when they are to giue, for they do not giue till they be dead. If thou aske theſe men, why they maſſe vp money, and why in their life-time they bury it vnder ground, and to what end they do it? ſome will anſwere thee, that they lay it vp for their heires; others for their ſoules; others, that they may leaue ſomething behinde them, and all of them ſure, that they carry none of it away with them. Thou ſeeſt then, how they are willing to giue, and how out of its due time and ſeaſon; like an vntimely birth, which comes not to perfection. But in the end, this is our end, this is our deſire.

To haue wherewith to giue, is a great comfort to a man.

How God-like does a man finde himſelfe, when with a generous minde he hath wherewith to giue, and doth giue? How ſweete and pleaſing is his hand vnto him; how cheerefull his countenance; how quiet his heart; how contented his Soule? His gray haires are remoued; his blood is refreſhed; his life is inlarged. And (queſtionleſſe) ſo much the more, by how much he knows, that he hath ability to do it, and is not afraid that hee ſhall ever want: If wee be willing therefore to do that which hee did; (for ſo did hee with vs) let vs take as much pleaſure to giue, as it would grieue vs at the heart to aske.

And

And thoſe, towards whom Gods hand hath beene ſo franke and libetall and hauing made them (which likewiſe is another particular gift of his) of a noble minde, if they finde themſelues oppreſſed with want, and deprived of theſe their worldly goods, they will rather endure any miſery whatſoever, then begge of another to releeue their wretched eſtates.

A noble ſpirit cannot begge.

Theſe are the men, of whom there is great pittie to be had, and theſe the whole world ought to releeue with a full hand. For by this it is knowne, who does them friendſhip, and ſhewes them any kindneſſe, when ſeing them in neceſſitie, they ſuccour them, before they craue their helpe. For, if they ſhould be put to that puſh, and be driuen to ſue vnto them, they will neither giue, nor lend them. It is a debt which they pay them, and yet put it forth to Vſurie with advantage. This is a friend indeed, which ſuccours his friend in time of need: And this I call ſuccour, * when I concurre and runne along with him. It becomes me to giue, but beſeemes not him to aske. I am to runne equall fortunes with him. I muſt keepe an even pace with him, neither be too farre behinde him, nor too much before him.

What kinde of almes is nobly beſtowed.

* *The Spaniſh phraſe*, Eſſe llamo ſocorro, con el que corro.

If I haue entertained thee too long in this ſubject, and haue not given thee ſatisfaction, pardon my ignorance, and accept my good will. So that the libertie of craving, is permitted onely to the poore; And in this we are equall with Kings and Princes, whoſe particular priviledge it is, to demand Subſedies, and Ayde-money, which is no baſeneſſe in them, howſoever it may be in others. But the difference is, that Kings craue of the Commons, for the Common good, and for to ſupply their neceſſary occaſions; But the poore, for themſelues onely, out of an evill cuſtome, which they haue gotten.

A poore begger, to whom he may be compared.

That other Priviledge, which I told you of, is that of the fiue Senſes. Who is he now adaies in the world, that with larger licence, and freer liberty doth enjoy them, then the poore man, or with greater ſecurity, or more content? Who doth ſo thorowly and ſo feelingly taſte them as he? And becauſe I haue named the word Taſte, I will begin firſt with that.

The liberty of the fiue Senſes, by whom moſt enjoyed.

There is not that pot, which wee doe not skimme; nor that meat, which we doe not proue; nor that banquet, wherein we haue not a ſhare. Whither did that poore man ever come, that the houſe that deny'd him to day, did not giue him to morrow? Hee runnes thorow all mens houſes, hee begges of them all, and he taſtes of all: and he is beſt able to ſay, which houſe hath the beſt meat, and the beſt dreſt.

The Taſte.

For the *Hearing*; Who heares more then the poore man doth? For being dis-intereſſed in all kinde of thinges, none are jealous that hee ſhould heare them; in the open ſtreets, in private houſes, in publike Churches, in the Market-place, and in every place, every man treats freely of his buſineſſe, without any ſuſpition of him, though the matter be never ſo important. Sleeping beſides a nights, vpon ſome bulke or ſtall in the ſtreets, what muſicke haue they beſtowed vpon them, which we heare not? What Loue-tricks are they privy to, which we know not? Nothing is kept ſecret from ſuch poore beggerly Raſcalls as we be. And for publike affaires, we haue by a thouſand parts better intelligence, then all the world beſides. For wee heare that treated of in more parts, then all men elſe beſides put all together.

The Hearing.

For your Seing likewiſe: how freely may we enjoy it, without being noted? nor aske vs the queſtion why we gaze vpon them, nor offer to hinder vs from looking here, or looking there. How often haue I accuſed and condemned my ſelfe, when begging in the Church, mine eye hath beene wandring and roving about? and chuckt and bugg'd my ſelfe, with the delight and pleaſure that I haue taken therein? Or to ſpeake downe-right Engliſh, and to declare my ſelfe more plainely, feeding mine eyes greedily on thoſe Angelicall faces of your fineſt Ladies, whoſe Lovers did not dare to looke vpon them for feare of being noted: all which was freely permitted vnto vs.

The Seing.

The Smelling.

For matter of ſmelling; Who can ſmell better then we, who are called by the name of Smell-Feaſts? Beſides, if any ſmell be ſo much the better, by how much it is the more profitable; to vs, our owne Amber, and our owne Muske, is better and truer then all the reſt, which is a cloue of Garlicke, which ordinarily wee never goe without; as being a Preſervatiue againſt all contagious corruption whatſoever. And if wee be deſirous of any other odours, we then get vs to the corner of ſome one ſtreet or other, where theſe things are commonly ſold, and there we ſatisfie our ſence of ſmelling with the ſweet perfumes of Ierkins, and of Gloues, ſome ciuited, and ſome powdred, that are there laid out for ſhow, till the duſt and powder of them come flying into our eyes, and our noſtrills.

The Touching.

Will you happely ſay, that the ſence of Touching is wanting vnto vs? And that never any good thing came yet to our hands? Lament your ignorance. What ſuch difference I pray, is there betwixt povertie and beauty? Wee poore beggers touch and handle as good ware as the rich, and enjoy as pretty Commodities; but all men doe not vnderſtand this Myſterie. There be ſome poore men, which for all their beggery and poverty, maintaine ſuch a handſome *Doxy* as many a great rich man would be glad to enjoy with all his heart. And yet ſhee had rather haue this poore man, that doth truly pay her her Tribute, and is not wanting vnto her in his loue, then a rich man, that ſhall defame, and miſuſe her. And how often haue ſome women given mee an almes with their owne hand, (I know not what others haue done) but I out of my youth, would make bold to take hold of hers with mine; and in a kinde of devout acknowledgement, would never let it goe, till I had kiſt it?

But theſe are but toyes to ſpeake of, and meere fooleries, but aboue all theſe things, the taſte, the ſight, ſmelling, hearing, and touching, the chiefeſt and trueſt of all the fiue Senſes, put them all together, was that of thoſe ruddy cheeks of your golden Ruddocks, your Spaniſh Piſtolets, your plumpe & full-fac't *Portugueſe*, and your cleare-skinn'd pieces of eight of *Caſtile*, which we kept ſecret to our ſelues, and did privately enjoy in a plentifull manner; For to haue them, for to pay them away, is not to enjoy them; To enjoy them, is to haue them lying by vs, having no other need of them, then to vſe them for the clearing of the eye-ſight, and the comforting of our ſenſes. Howbeit, ſome ſticke not to ſay, *Que el dinero, nunca ſe goza, haſta que ſe gaſta.* That he enjoyes not his money, that does not ſpend it. Theſe we did carry about with vs, ſewing them in ſome patches of our doublets neere vnto the heart, and as cloſe to the skinne, as we could handſomely quilt them in, holding them to be reſtoratiue. There was not any one piece of a patch about vs, were it never ſo foule, and never ſo vile, which was not worth a reaſonable good ſute of cloathes. Wee were all fluſh and full of gold; For, having our diet *gratis*, and feeding on free coſt, the money which we got, we never ſpent. And as the Proverbe is; *Eſſe te rizo rico, que te hizo el pico*; He made thee rich, who gaue thee whereon to picke. And *grano à grano, hincha la gallina el Papa.* Graine after graine, the Hen fills her craw. Wee grew many of vs to increaſe our Talent, till it came to a good round ſumme, wherewith many an honeſt man might haue lifted his feet from the ground, and not haue ſtucke in the mire. Reſt thy ſelfe a while in this Inne; for in that our journey, which we are to make to the Chapter following, you ſhall heare what hapned in *Florence* to a poore man that died there, of the ſame time and ſtanding with my ſelfe. Wherein you ſhall know, whether our Touching be not as good as other mens.

To haue money, to pay it againe away, is not the enjoying of money.

Proverbe. Petit à petit l'oiſeau faict ſon nid.

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

Guzman de Alfarache *discourseth of the qualitie of mens Consciences, and recounteth what hapned in his time to a notable Rogue, and famous begger in* Florence, *who at his death made the great Duke his heire. Hee treats of the ambitious man; And delivers in the end, how he was thrust out of* Gaeta *for his counterfeiting.*

IT is a very ordinary thing with your poorer sort of people, to become Plotters and Contrivers, watching night and day, and beating their braines, to seeke out some poore meanes how to liue, that they may not goe a begging from doore to doore, and still to lie (like *Lazarus*) at rich mens gates for relieſe, and yet ſtarue perhaps in the end for want of a morſell of bread. This every where befalls poore folkes. They (poore ſoules) are put to their ſhifts. And albeit it be ſaid; that in matter of cruelty, *Italy* beares the bell; and in *Italy*, thoſe more particularly that are in, and about *Genoa*; yet I am not of beliefe, that the fault lies ſo much in the ſoyle of that place, as in the neceſſitie, and covetouſneſſe of the people. I meane thoſe, that are of the right ſtampe, your miſerable and hard-hearted Vſurers, whom they that are the native Citizens, and naturall Inhabitants of thoſe parts, call by way of Nick-name, *Moros blancos*, white Moores. Now they, to revenge themſelues of them, and to returne it (*a*) home vpon them againe, ſay, *Que quien deſcubre la* (*b*) *alcauala, eſſe la paga.* Let him pay the toll, that firſt invented it. For this was not (ſay they) ſpoken of them, nor is it ſo to be vnderſtood; but of thoſe great Dealers and Negociators of *Genoa*, who carrie their conſciences in torne pockets, that are ript and vnſewed, whereby they quickly come to be loſt, and ſcarce one amongſt them all, that hath a good and a ſound conſcience. But one ſaid, that this was not ſo, but would needs fetch the water a little farther off, that ſhould driue this Mill; And therefore (ſaid he) it was thus: That when the *Genoueſes* ſend forth their children to ſchoole, they carry their conſciences along with them, there at firſt they begin to play with them, then to wrangle and fall out about them; ſome forgetting that ever they brought any thither with them; and others (having loſt them there at play) leaue them behinde them, and never thinke on them after.

Now, when the ſchoole comes to be ſwept, and theſe Conſciences be found againe, they giue them to the Maſter, who carefully laies them vp in a Cheſt, and there lockes them vp cloſe, that they may no more be loſt. And he that hereafter ſhall haue need of one (if he can call to minde where he either left it, or laid it aſide) he were beſt goe ſeeke it out himſelfe, to ſee if he can light on the right one.

Now, becauſe the Schoole-maſter hath the keeping of ſo many, and ſo mixed one amongſt another, that he doth not know which is which, he giues him that which comes firſt to hand, and ſo the party goes away with it, thinking verily that it is his owne Conſcience, that he carries thus away with him, when as indeed it is not his; but either his friends Conſcience, or his kinſmans, or ſome one or other of his acquaintance. And hence it comes to paſſe, that no man, bearing his owne Conſcience in his owne boſome, every man lookes and pries into that of another mans. And ever ſince that time, hath this ill report runne of them.

The proudeſt, and hardeſt-hearted people in Italy, *are your* Genoueſes.

(*a*) *The Spaniſh phraſe is,* Echarles las cabras. *Now* Echar las cabras, *is, when many having plaid together, who ſhould win or loſe, when they did riſle for any thing, there ſhould be two loſers, and that they might not part or deuide, but that one ſhould pay all, and the other ſcape ſcot-free, they returne againe to play. And this they call* Echar las cabras *Alluding to that which ſhepheards vſe to doe, when they make a merry-meeting, & haue kill'd ſome Goats to make a feaſt; who play, who ſhall pay for all, laying the laſſe vpon the two laſt.*

Couarruuias, *Verbe* Cabra. *Conſcience loſt by whom, and how?* (*b*) Alcauala *is a Tribute, Taxe, Tole, or Subſidie. The common people haue a tale, That* King Don Alfonſo *the Wiſe, holding a Parliament at* Burgos, *ſaid vnto the Procurators,* Dadme gente, delque vala. *And from thence comes* Alcauala, *A ſupply of monyes, which they gaue him.*

O *Spaine, Spaine*, my beloved Countrey, Faith's true keeper, God vphold thee with his hand: And as thou haſt much of this in thee; ſo likewiſe, thou haſt thy Schoole-Maſters too, that trucke one conſcience for another; & men, as well as they, that having chopt conſciences, goe away well contented, preſuming all is right and ſtreight, and that that which they haue is their owne.

Wholeſome leſſons for our Conſciences.

How many forgetfull of themſelues, buſie themſelues in thoſe things, which appertaine not vnto them? How vnadviſedly reprehend, ſollicite, and cenſure another mans conſcience? My friend, this ought not to be ſo; Looke well into thy ſelfe, with-draw this chopping and changing: Firſt, throughly examine thine owne, doe not ſeeke for a mote in another mans eye, till thou haſt pull'd the beame out of thine owne: and then thou wilt tell me another tale.

To let other mens conſciences alone, and to looke into our owne.

That which thou thinkeſt is a diſcharge to thy conſcience, is a meere jeſt, and an idle toy, and therein thou doeſt but put a jeſt vpon thy ſelfe. Doe not cloake thy ſinne (thou Vſurer) ſaying; Such a one is a greater Vſurer then I am: Nor ſeeke to excuſe thy ſelfe, by ſaying; Such a man is a worſe thiefe then my ſelfe. Meddle not thou with another mans conſcience; let that alone, and looke well into thine owne. This is that which concernes thee; This is that which imports thee moſt. Let every man put that away from him, that is not his owne; and wherewith hee hath nothing to doe. Let him not meddle nor make with it. Let him not ſettle his eyes vpon other mens ſins, but caſt them aſide off. For it is neither the Idolatry of *Salomon*, nor the Sacriledge of *Iudas*, that ſhall excuſe the like in thee: But every man ſhall beare his owne burthen, and receiue ſuch puniſhment, as his owne ſinne hath deſerved. Why doeſt thou incline, and leane vnto that, which is not onely ill, but alſo hurtfull vnto thee? Why doeſt thou not rather imitate that, which is good, and vertuous? following the example of him that faſteth, confeſſeth, communicateth, repenteth him of his ſinnes, and performeth many other actions of holineſſe, and of a good and honeſt life? Is he peradventure more man then thou art? Thou forbeareſt (like him that is ſicke) to take that, which ſhould cure thy ſickeneſſe, and doe thee good; and feedeſt on that, which impaireth thy health and doth thee hurt. I therefore aſſure thee, and giue thee my honeſt word, that it will make much for thy ſalvation, *acordarte de ti, y olvidarte de mi*, to forget me, and to thinke on thy ſelfe.

Sevill, *of all other Cities, the richeſt for Conſciences.*

Amongſt thoſe many Schooles for little children, and thoſe many Schoole-Maſters, which haue the keeping of Conſciences, (howbeit, as I ſay, no Citie, Towne, nor Village eſcapes them in all the world) *Sevill* is the onely place for my money; and therein, thoſe that imbarke themſelues to paſſe the Seas. For, the moſt part of them, as if their Conſciences, were of that great burthen and extraordinary weight, that they were able to ſinke both the Ship and themſelues, doe either leaue their conſciences at home in their owne houſes, or with their Hoſts, to keepe them for them till their returne. And if afterwards they chance to recover them againe, (which in my opinion is a hard matter, for that the Countrey is very ſpacious and large, where there is no ſuch great reckoning made of theſe thinges) it is well and good; if not, they doe not greatly care; or if they take them with them, and leaue them there behinde them, as little, if not leſſe. And for this reaſon, Conſcience goes a begging in that Citie, in regard of the great ſtore and plenty of that commodity; becauſe thoſe that left them there behinde them, when they went away to the *Indies*, or ſome other farre place, did never returne backe againe to fetch them.

I will not offer to walke in the Exchange, nor the Burſe, nor haue any thing to doe in the ſtreet of *San Françiſco*, nor hazard a drowning in the Sea. Let all trafficke (for my part) be laid aſide; Let there be no trade driven, nor com-

merce

merce had, no buying nor ſelling, nor exchanging of commodities. For I feare me, if I ſhould once begin to be a dealer therein, I ſhould never be able to giue it over. But let me heare make a full point; taking this onely as but a note by the way, and not thinke ſo much on what I ſay, as what I would haue ſaid, and ſhall perhaps ſay hereafter when I ſee my time. And ſo I will proceed to my promiſed Story.

The Story of Pantalon, Caſteleto, *a* Genoueſe, *and poore Begger in* Florence,

There was a certaine man, that was borne neere vnto *Genoa*, a perſon of great account, for his rare invention, and ſubtleneſſe of wit. His name was *Pantalon Caſteleto*, a poore Begger, who, for that he was married in *Florence*, and his Wife had borne him a ſonne, after that the Mother was delivered of this childe, the Father went plotting and deviſing, how hee might leaue him well to liue, without tying him to ſerue any man, or to binde him prentice to any trade or occupation.

(a) Dichoſo el hijo, que tiene à ſu padre en el infierno. De malè qnęſitis, vix gaudet tertius hæres.

It is commonly ſpoken there amongſt them by way of Proverbe: '*Happy is that ſonne, whoſe Father goes to Hell.* Howbeit, I count him vnhappy. For it is not poſsible, that ſhould thriue with him, which he left him, nor that it ſhould come to the injoying of a third Heire. This is my opinion. For, to leaue his child well provided for, he provides ill for himſelfe; and to make him, marres himſelfe. For he can not but runne his ſoules hazzard, who hunts after vngodly gaine.

And albeit he were married, and had the charge of a Wife, (but this is a particular benefit, and a large Theame to treat of, that one Begger ſhould marry with another, and be both of one profeſsion) they had (God be thanked) reaſonable well wherewithall to liue; they wanted nothing, that they had need of, and ſufficient ſtore of wealth they had beſides, to leaue vnto their heire, in ſome competent meaſure, eſpecially for one, that was of ſo meane a condition as he was.

The cruelty of a Father.

But this man would not put himſelfe vpon Fortune. But had entertained in his imagination, one of the greateſt and moſt vnnaturall cruelties, that the wit of man could deviſe. He maimes me this his poore innocent Infant, (as many more of all Nations doe in thoſe parts:) where when they be young and tender, they writhe their joynts, and breake their bones, making them as plyable as Waxe; then taking them in hand anew, molding them after this, or that manner, as they haue moſt minde vnto, forming and faſhioning of them (I know not) into how many monſtrous ſhapes, and vgly poſtures, onely to moue the people to take the more pittie and compaſsion of them.

With theſe abuſed Babes, whileſt they are little, they get where-withall to liue in their old age; and afterwards, thus maymed and mangled as you ſee, they leaue them a good patrimonie. But this wicked Rogue, for his greater increaſe of gaine, would matyrize this poore tender Infant, with new kinde of torments; He did not put him to theſe cruell tortures all at once; but ſtill as he grew in yeares, ſo did he vary and change them, as men ſhift their Shirts, or change their Bathes, one dry, and the other wet; till he had left him thus carved and ingraven, as I haue painted him forth vnto you.

Some naturall gifts hee had, that his father either did not, or could not touch. So that notwithſtanding this his vnhappineſſe, he had a very happy wit, and was a good Speaker, and his words became him very well. But that which he had from his Father, which was his outward fleſh, to begin firſt with his head, he had writh'd it in that ſort, that it ſeemed to bee ſet quite backwards, his face falling on t'one ſide vpon his right ſhoulder. That both beneath, and aboue the lids of his eyes, was all one over-growne lumpe of fleſh: the fore-head and the eye-browes ſcorch't and burned with a thouſand wrinkles: He was crooke-back't, his whole body like a Bottom of Yarne, all one lumpe, vvithout any ſhape or faſhion, of any one part, that might ſtile him man: His feet turned backwards, and perching vp over his ſhoulders, being

ing diſ-joynted, and withered. The onely ſound parts that were aboue him, were his armes, and his tongue. The one left him to talke, the other to take. He went, as if he had beene clapt into a Cage, being thruſt into a little kinde of woodden Cheſt, ſet and made faſt to a little Aſſes backe, which he did rule and guide with his hands; ſaue that to get vp or downe, he vvas faine ſtill to ſeeke for ſome helpe, which he did ſeldome or never miſſe of, having one or other ever at hand for that purpoſe.

He was, (as I told you before) a pleaſant conceited fellow, had a good wit of his owne, and many good things ſhould you heare to come from him. Beſides he went ſo tatter'd, ſo torne, and in that ragged and wretched manner, that all *Florence* tooke pitie of him, and as well for his poverties ſake, as for thoſe good parts that were in him, they gaue him much Almes, wherewith he was relieved.

After this manner, he lived ſome ſeventy and two yeares, or much thereabouts, at the end whereof he fell into a grievous ſickneſſe, whereof hee certainely knew, that he ſhould dye.

Seeing himſelfe at this point, and that he now ſtood vpon the jumpe of his Salvation, or Condemnation; being (as he was) very diſcreet, hee began to conſider a little better of the matter, thinking with himſelfe, that it was no time now to jeſt, but rather to confeſſe his ſinnes, and to ſend for the Parſon of the Pariſh and to make his Will. Which as it was to be the laſt that ever he was to make, ſo was he carefull to make it as ſtrong and as good as the ſtrength of his wit could deviſe. He deſired, that a knowne Confeſſor of his might be ſent for; one, that was a very learned man, & in very good eſteeme, as well for the honeſty of his life and converſation, as for his learning and manners. With him he treated touching his ſinnes, and fully imparted his minde vnto him. And when he had communicated what he thought fit vnto him, he was very deſirous to haue his Will made, but with the ſhorteſt, and moſt compendious words, that poſsibly could be imagined. And the beginning being drawne, (which belonged to the publike Notary to doe) what was fit on his part, he briefely thus lets it downe.

Pantalons *laſt Will and Teſtament.*

Imprimis, I commend my Soule vnto God, who created it, and my body to the earth, to be buried in mine owne Pariſh.

The Duke made his ſole heire and Executor.

Item, My Will is, that my Aſſe be ſold; which money ſhall bee beſtowed vpon my buriall. But the Pack-Saddle I bequeath vnto the great Duke my Lord and Maſter, to whom it rightly appertaineth, and properly belongs, whom I nominate to bee my ſole Executor, and make my generall and vniverſall Heire.

Pantalon *dyes.*

This done, after that he had ſettled and ſealed this his laſt Will and Teſtament of that his indiſpoſition, anon after he dyed. And becauſe every man held him to bee a merry-conceited fellow, and one that was full of his witty jeſts, they did all verily thinke, that he would make his death equall with his life, and ſhut vp his breath with ſome odde jeſt or other for a farewell, as it vſually befals ſuch kinde of giddy-headed fooles, when they once take a toy in the head, and are wedded to their humour.

The Duke ſends for his Legacy.

But when the great Duke vnderſtood of this will, (which was not long kept from his knowledge) having formerly heard of the Teſtator, and that he was held to be a wiſe and diſcreet man, he did from thence collect, that this Clauſe was not without its myſterie. Whereupon hee gaue order that this Legacy he had left him, ſhould forthwith be brought vnto the Palace, and when he had it before him, he commanded it to be ript in ſunder, piece after piece, and ſtill as they went along, they tooke forth divers different ſorts of coyne: and when they had ſorted out theſe ſeverall kindes of moneys (which were all in good gold) they amounted in the whole to three thouſand and ſixe hundred Spaniſh Crownes, every Crowne bearing the full value of foure

hundred

hundred *Maranedis*. This poore man, whether he had consulted with his Confessor or no, I know not; or advised with himselfe, which is not vnlikely; It seemed he thought with himselfe, that that was no ne of his, and that hee had no other meanes to make restitution, then to leaue it to the naturall Lord of that Signorie, who had the charge of all the poore committed to his care, and with this he conceiued he had discharged his Conscience. The great Duke being so powerfull and so noble a minded Prince as he was, gaue order to haue this Will entred, and to remaine vpon record to after ages, and that the Legacie that he had given him, should be imployed for the good of his soules health; Wherein he shew'd himselfe a worthy Executor, but a farre more worthy Gentleman.

What say you now to the feeling of this poore Begger? What thinke you of his sense of Touching? Thine is farre short of it, nor halfe so good and delightfull as this, though thou shouldst injoy the imbracements of another *Venus*. Of these two Priviledges (before specified) we were the sole and only Lords, for none besides vs, did injoy them so freely, as we did; together with many other liberties and immunities which (if I list) I were able to relate vnto thee.

When I doe but thinke vpon those times, which I injoyed heretofore, and the merry life that I then led, which is all now past and gone with me, (not that I either long or looke for any more such happy dayes or that I would call them to minde, to make me forget my miseries,) or whether the recordation of them did make those sorrowes seeme either greater or lesse, which I suffred in the Gallies, I will not now dispute; but sure I am, that I take great delight in the remembrance of them: As that hauing of our Table still provided for vs; our bed ready made to our hands; our Chamber whithout incombrance; our Scrip well furnish'd; our goods about vs; our stocks sure on foot, without feare of theeues, or any dread of raine, without Aprill's care, or May's fearefull jealousie, which two are the husband-mans moths: Not troubling our heads with new fashions, with the pompe of aparrell, with ceremonious complements, and the like froth of fooleries, scum'd out of forraine Countries: Living without the prevention of flatteries, without the composing of Lies, scorning to get either money, or to seeke to grow into credit by such base insinuations.

Artifices to winne Opinion.

How would we suffer that men might the better esteeme of vs? How visit them, that they might not forget vs? How attend them, for to binde them vnto vs? What occasions would we not seeke out, that we might come to speake with them, and be seene by them? How early would we be stirring, to the end they might thinke we were carefull and sollicitous how to liue? And evermore the more early vp, the colder and sharper the weather was. And every one of these had it's pleasure and delight, for the ends for which they were done.

How often would my selfe fall a discoursing of other mens houses and their gentilitie, only of purpose to set my owne Pedigree a foot, and to shew that I was a Gentleman well descended? How often would I discover another mans defect, and finde fault with it, and only to this end, that by taxing such a vice in another, I might be thought to be free from the same my selfe? How often would I hold conversation, only for ostentation sake, and no other end in the world? How would I wheele about, and fetch in things a farre off, only to vent my wit, and to make my words to take place? To what good meeting did not I goe? I was the only Cocke there that crow'd lowdest; and when I went away from them, and left their companie, they would not censure me, as I would them, but let me alone,

O these conventicles of lewd Company, these meetings, where mens mouthes fall a murmuring and traducing of others! o how large a Historie would

would it require? Who is able to expreſſe, how ill it beſeemes a Gentleman, to be the Taylour that muſt cut out ſuch ill worke? There is no Clergie man, whoſe (*a*) Surplice they will not cut; Nor honeſt woman, whoſe (*b*) Kirtle they will not make a hole in. They cloath the Saint and the ſinner after a large kinde of faſhion. But let it reſt as it is; if we liue, he ſhall be ſerv'd with the like ſawce. By how ſtraight a Rule, by how even a Line, and by how juſt a Compaſſe, muſt that Pretender carry himſelfe, who is to ſaile thorow the ſea of this world; hoping for a fortune from another mans hand? If it be good, how ſlowly doth it come? if bad, how ſoone doth it light vpon vs? And the Scale can never be made ſo vpright and even, but that there will be ſomething wanting of it's true weight. And the better a man deſerues, often-times hee fares the worſe. If a man haue not a minde to doe him good, every Mole-hill is made a mountaine, and every the leaſt obliquitie, is obſerved and noted in him. If he ſpeake much, (though never ſo well,) hee is too laviſh of his words; If little, he is too ſhort and obſcure, and knowes not how to expreſſe himſelfe. If of high and dainty things indeed, he is too raſh, and too preſumptuous; and vndertakes to diſcuſſe thoſe things, that are too deepe for his vnderſtanding. If of things of leſſer conſequence, and of a lower ſtraine, he is too ſhallow, and hath no ſtuffe in him. If he humble himſelfe, he is baſe; if ſtand vpon his worth, he is proud: if he will fight and take no wrong, hee is ill govern'd, and a Royſter; if pocket a wrong, and hold his hands, he is a coward: if he haue a bold looke, he is impudent; if a modeſt countenance, he is an hypocrite; if he laugh, he is condemned of levitiè; if graue, hee is counted a *Saturniſt*: if affable, ſlightly regarded; if auſtre, mightily abhorred: If juſt, cruell; if mercifull, a ſilly ſheepe.

Now againſt all theſe and the like cavils (which are no ſmall misfortunes) the poore haue a Paſſe-port, as being Lords of themſelues, free from all taxes and tallage. They are out of the Gun-ſhot of their Competitors, they quietly injoy this life, without being troubled with Promooting Knaues to informe againſt them; ſnipping Taylours to take them ſhort; or ſnarling dogs to ſnap at their good name.

Such was my happy condition, if Time and Fortune (conſumers of all things on earth, who ſuffer not things to continne in one and the ſelfe-ſame eſtate) had not tumbled me downe from this height of my happineſſe; declaring by the colour of my countenance, and the ſoundneſſe of my limmes, that I was rich in health, and not ſo maymed, nor ſo poore, as I made my ſelfe to be, by my pitifull moanes and lamentations.

For, as I was ſitting one day a begging of almes, in the Citie of *Gaeta*, hard by the Church porch, whither (out of curioſitie) I would needs goe to ſee if their charitie and devotion did equall that of *Rome*? There I ſate bare, made ſhew of my head vnto them, (for I was but newly come thither, and had not as yet fitted my ſelfe with neceſſaries) ſo that I was forced on the ſudden to make vſe of a kinde of ſcurfe, that I had clapt thereon; in the counterfeiting whereof, I was excellent cunning. The Governour of the Towne comming to Church, as he paſt along by me, caſts his eye vpon me, & gaue me an almes. With this tricke, I paſt reaſonable well for a while. But becauſe, *la Codiçia rompe el ſaco*, too much covetuouſneſſe makes the bag to breake; and I had not the wit to ſee when I was well; I thought fit vpon a Feſtivall day to appeare in publike with ſome new invention. I had my preparatiues ready, my proviſion at hand. I ſet them before me, and then dreſt me ſuch a legge, that was very well worth more then a very good Vine-yard. This was the farme that I meant then to liue vpon.

Well, away goe I to Church with it; there I began to ſtretch my throate, and to thunder out my voyce, ever and anon lifting vp the cloth with a tender finger, to ſhew vnto them, what a grievous ſore legge I had, wherein I was

(*a*) *The Spaniſh word is* Loba: *that is*, Veſtidura clerical, talar, que llega al ſuelo, cortada à todo ruedo con golphes para ſacar los braſos. Es veſtidura honorifica Eſte vſo ſe conſerua en la Capilla real. Han le dado varias etimologias, y entre las demas, vna, que por comer tanta tela, la llamaron Loba. Però ſu etimologio trae Origen del nombre Griego λοβὸς genero de veſtidura, quæ hominem ambit, vt cortex & tunica arborem. y puede ſer Hebreo, del verbo labas, induere y aſsi Valdre, indumentum Couarruuias.

(*b*) *The Spaniſh word is*, Saya, *which is that garment, which a woman weares from her girdle downeward.*

The wretched condition of Pretenders.

Guzman *playes the Counterfeit in* Gaeta.

Proverb.

was ſo ready and ſo perfect, that I had need of no body to teach mee my leſſon. But whether it were my ill lucke, or mine owne indiſcretion, (for from ignorance and fooliſhneſſe, all your miſchances for the moſt part proceed) I cannot tell which to impute it to: But certaine I am, I ſhould not haue ſought to haue eate better bread then is made of Wheate, nor haue gone a chopping of horſes in ſo ſmall a Village. I might haue kept mee ſtill to my ſcabbed head, and haue paſt well with it, (for it found mee meate to put in my mouth) and not haue gone ſeeking after new trickes, and new inventions.

The Governour of Gaeta cures Guzman of his ſore legge, and how he did it.

The Governour came that day vnto the Church to heare Maſſe, and becauſe he knew me, he vvill'd me to riſe, ſaying vnto me: Come along with mee, and I will beſtow a ſhirt on thee to put on thy backe. I did beleeue him, and went along with him to his Lodging. If I had but knowne before how hee vvould haue vſ'd mee, he ſhould not haue reach't mee with the beſt Culverine he had, nor haue made mee to come within his clutches, with all his faire words, nor all the wit in his head. But when he had me there, and ſaw I was ſafe from getting from him, hee lookt me ſteadily in the face, and ſayd vnto mee; Thy colour being ſo freſh, thy skinne ſo cleere, thy body ſo ſound (for thou art fat, plumpe, and faire, thy complexion good, thy limmes ſtrong and the reſt of thy skinne ſmooth and ſleeke) how comes it to paſſe that this thy legge is as it is? Mee thinkes this doth not ſute and hang well together with the reſt.

I anſwered him, but with a troubled kinde of delivery: Sir, I know not; it hath pleaſed God it ſhould be ſo. Preſently he knew therevpon vpon what legge I halted, he had found me out; wherevpon I had an eye to the doore, to ſee if I could ſhew him my heeles, and get away from him. But I could not, for the doore was made faſt. Hee willed a Surgion to be ſent for, that hee ſhould ſearch my vvound, and ſee what I ayled. He came and lookt, and lookt vpon it againe and againe, and at laſt very leaſurely and tenderly vvent to vvorke with me, with a ſoft and gentle hand, as never a Lady in the land could more handſomely haue gone about it. At the firſt it did ſomewhat puzzle him, for he knew not vvhat to make of it, but within a little vvhile after he ſaw his error, & then he told the Governour; Sir, this Youth hath no more hurt in his legge, then I in mine eye, and that you may perceiue it is ſo, I vvill plainly demonſtrate it vnto you. With that he began to vnſwathe mee, and taking off ragge after ragge, and ſuch ſlibber-ſlabbers as I had bedaubed it vvithall, hee made my legge to appeare as vvhole as any fiſh, as indeede it vvas.

The Governour bleſt himſelfe, and ſtood amazed to ſee me in that manner, but that vvhich did aſtoniſh him moſt, vvas how I ſhould haue the aptitude and vvit to do ſuch a thing as this. I was in a trance, and ready to ſwoune, not knowing vvhat either to ſay or do. And if my youth had not borne mee out, none but God could haue freed mee from exemplary puniſhment.

But this youth of mine did reſerue mee for greater chaſtiſement. And in ſtead of the ſhirt vvhich hee promiſed mee, he ſent for the Beadle of beggers, and there (in his preſence) vvilled him to giue me a ſtript Doublet, vvhich I vvas to vveare vnder that torne one vvhich I had to my backe. Commanding me, that I ſhould preſently packe out of the Citie, and come there no more. Which command, though he had not layd it vpon mee, I ſhould haue beene carefull to ſee it performed my ſelfe; for I vvould not haue ſtayd there if hee would haue made mee Lord of *Gaeta*. I got mee away full of feare, trembling and quaking, ſhrinking vp my ſhoulders, looking ever and anon behinde mee, being jealous and ſuſpicious, that if they ſhould chance to bethinke themſelues, that they had not given mee ſufficient payment, they vvould make after me, and bring mee to a ſtricter account.

Rome *commended by* Guzman.

Herevpon I haſtned away as faſt as my legges vvould carry me, making no ſtay, till I came into the *Popes* Territories: Calling my *Rome* ſtill to minde, and throwing a thouſand bleſſings vpon it; for there, they did not ſticke vpon trifles,

trifles, nor did not buſie themſelues to examine colours, but let every man (without more adoe) make the beſt of his liuing. To conclude, *Tierra larga*: a large Country for my money. Let mee liue (to choſe) in a ſpacious Countrey, where a man may haue Sea-roome inough, and not be driuen to runne through narrow Streights and Creekes, ſayling ſtill in the Channell, where there is few fetching of boords, nor any danger of being caſt away vpon the Coaſt: Whereas, in your narrow ſeas, every little guſt of winde, every ſmall flawe, or leaſt tempeſt in the world, will caſt you vpon quick-ſands, or throw you vpon the Rockes, till you be either ſwallowed vp, or daſht in pieces.

CHAP. VI.

Guzman de Alfarache *diſcourſeth of Almes: And being returned to* Rome, *hee fals afreſh to his old Trade of begging. Hee feignes himſelfe to haue a ſore legge. A Cardinall taking compaſſion of him, takes order, to haue him cured in his owne houſe, and to be layd in his owne bed. Hee diſcouers the knauery of Surgions, having a bad conſcience: And how being cured, hee becomes the Cardinals Page.*

Wiſedome, gotten by Time.

IT is a knowne and naturall truth; That thoſe that are yong, are very ſhort-ſighted in your choyſer ſort of things, vvhich require gravity, and carry any weight with them. Not for any defect of vnderſtanding, but for want of Wiſedome, which requireth experience; and that experience, Time. As your greene fruit, that is not come to it's ripeneſſe, hath not any perfect reliſh, but is tart, and ſowre; ſo a yong man, before he come to his maturity, lackes his true taſte, and failes in the ſpeculation of things, and comes ſhort of the true knowledge of them. And therefore, it is no wonder if hee erre; but 'twere rather a wonder, if he ſhould not erre. Notwithſtanding, he that hath good naturall parts, is commonly more capable of theſe conſiderations, and readier to receiue the impreſſion of them.

A great wonder if youth ſhould not erre.

This I know by my ſelfe; for many times, the greatneſſe of my Spirit did tranſport mee farre beyond that which ſorted with my yeares; ſetting (as the Eagle doth with her yong ones) my eyes fully fixt againſt the Sun of Truth; conſidering with my ſelfe, that all my cunning trickes, and ſundry manner of deceiuings, was but a kinde of coozening my ſelfe, by ſeeking to rob him, that was truly poore and in need, mamed, and not able to worke, to whom thoſe almes did of right belong. For the poore man indeed never deceiueth, nor can he ſo doe, though it be his end ſo to doe. For hee that giueth regardeth not to whom he giueth; and he that beggeth, is that Quaile-pipe or whiſtle, that cals thoſe Birds vnto him, whileſt he ſits ſecurely on his perch. The Begger, with the Call and cry of his lamentations, receiueth the Almes, vvhich he converteth to his profit, taking God in his mouth, whereby he makes him the debter, binding him to repay it. On the one ſide I vvas glad, when they gaue me any thing; On the other ſide, I did quake and tremble, when I tooke account of mine owne life. For I aſſuredly knowing, that that was the way to my condemnation, I was bound to make reſtitution, as did that *Florentine*. But when I did ſometimes ſee and obſerue, that ſome powerfull and rich men would curiouſly put themſelues to ſearch in every corner of their purſe, for to looke out a poore blanke, a ſingle-ſol'd piece of money (God he knows) and had there beene a leſſe coyne, I thinke they would haue beene well inough contented with it to giue vnto the poore, I could by no meanes indure it, my bloud would riſe at it, and I was ready to looſe all patience. And even now (me thinkes) whileſt I am now ſpeaking of it, my buttons ſwell; the coales

A poore man neither doth, nor can deceiue.

What kinde of poore are bound to make reſtitution.

of

of my choller, reviue and quicken afreſh, and ſuch a furie of rage aſſayleth me, and ſets me on againſt them, that I cannot containe my ſelfe, but muſt needes ſay ſomething, though I know not what, nor where to begin.

An admonition to the rich to be liberall in their Almes.

Hear'ſt thou me (thou my rich friend) art thou not yet wearied out, or waxen deafe, with ſo often hearing what hath beene ſayd vnto thee, (it having bin ſo often beaten in thine eares, and inculcated vnto thee) that whatſoever thou ſhalt do for any poore body, that ſhall begge an Almes of thee for Gods ſake, thou doeſt it for God himſelfe, and hee is ty'de vnto thee for the ſame, and ſtands bound for the payment, by taking the debt vpon him, and making that his owne, wich is another mans? Wee that are poore, are like a Cipher in Arithmeticke, which of it ſelfe is nothing, but vvith the addition of a figure is ſomething, and the number is ſtill the more, the more Ciphers are ſet before thoſe figures. If thou vvilt ſtand for ten, ſet a poore man by thee, and ſee how many the more poore men thou ſhalt relieue, & how many the more Almes-deedes thou ſhalt doe, they are as ſo many figures, to make vp a greater reckoning for thee vvith God, when thou ſhalt be called before him to make thine account.

What ſhouldſt thou ſticke vpon the matter, and begin to debate and conſider with thy ſelfe, whether I get or not get, vvhether men giue mee, or giue me not? But do thou giue mee that which I aske thee, if thou haſt vvherewithall and art able to doe it. And if not for Gods ſake, which commands thee to do it, yet out of that naturall affection, which thou oweſt vnto mee. And doe not flatter thy ſelfe, or ſo much as offer to thinke, that the wealth vvhich thou injoyeſt, and the riches that God hath given thee, is; That thou art better Wooll then vvee; but that thou art better carded. And hee that made thee thus fine, and mee thus courſe; by giuing to thee, and taking from mee, may change hands, and may beſtow his bleſſings on whom hee pleaſe, and on ſuch as hee ſhall thinke vvorthy thereof, and ſhall do more good vvith it, then thou doeſt. Be not a pryer into the poore, nor too ſtrict an examinant: demurre not vvhat thou ſhalt doe for him, ſtand not a hinching and a crinching vvith him: for if thou looke well into thy ſelfe, thou wilt finde coveteouſneſſe to be the cauſe of all this, and that they are but meere excuſes, becauſe thou would'ſt not giue him any thing, and ſo ſhift him off from thee: I know it is ſo; and therefore let mee perſwade the (for thine owne good) to inlarge thy minde, and that will make the to inlarge thine Almes. And for this end, as alſo that thou mayſt ſee the good effect of Almes, heare that, vvhich *Sofronius* recounteth, cited by *Caniſius*, a very learned man.

The Emperour Zenon, a great Almes-giuer.

A Widdow-woman, having one onely Daughter, being a very faire and beautifull Damzell, *Zenon* the Emperour fell mightily in loue with her, and vvas exceedingly inamoured of her; and by force (quite againſt her will, and vtterly vvith her diſlike) he deflowred her; and with a ſtrong and tyrannous hand, kept her and injoyed her.

The Mother of the Maiden, finding her ſelfe much afflicted for this her ſo much wronged and abuſed Daughter, bearing great devotion to a particular Image of our Lady, as often as ſhe preſented her ſelfe there before it, ſhe would ſtill recommend this her cauſe vnto her, ſaying; O bleſſed *Mary*, O ſweete Virgin, I here vpon my knees begge revenge and puniſhment for this force and affront, which that Tyrant *Zenon* the Emperour hath, and doth ſtill offer vs. It is ſaid that ſhee heard a voyce, which ſpake thus vnto her; Thou hadſt beene long agoe e're this revenged on him, if the Almes-deedes of the Emperour had not bound our hands.

The effect of Almes deeds.

Looſe thou thy hands, that are too faſt bound; ſtretch them out to the poore, and helpe them therewith (as well as thou canſt) out of the miſery, vvherein they lye. For it is thy duty ſo to doe, it is required at thy hands; and it much more concerneth thee to giue an Almes, then the other to receiue it. God did

not ſo much make the rich man for the poore, as the poore man for the rich. Not ſo much for his as thy good. And therefore doe not thou ſtand off, and intertaine thy ſelfe with ſaying, One man merits more then another; This deſerues ſome-what, and this not. There is but one God, and they aske of thee in his name; to him thou doeſt giue it. All is one, thou art to make no difference. Thou canſt not vnderſtand, how much another mans neceſſity doth wring him, nor is it poſſible that thou ſhouldſt come to know it. It is the outward man onely, that thou canſt judge of. And thou thinking, that ſuch a man is ſound and in health, it is not fit (as thou ſuppoſeſt) that thou ſhouldeſt giue him an Almes.

The neceſſities of the poore cannot be truly knowne by vs.

Do not ſeeke ſtarting holes, to hide away thy Devotion; ſeeke not excuſes, to put away the poore from thee; leaue that to the Lord and Maſter, thou haſt no Commiſſion to examine them; it is not giuen thee in charge. There are other Iudges, to whom this ſcrutinie belongeth. And if, looking vpon mee, thou wilt let thy judgement ſlip, and ſay, that God hath beene too ſlacke and negligent in puniſhing of mee; Conſider, that the ſelfe-ſame God hath done the like by others.

Do not (O thou man of evill bowels, thou vnmercifull-minded man) doe not thou I ſay, lye in wait to doe miſchiefe. The Ambuſh is diſcovered, and I ſee thy meaning. I ſay then, that Charity, and diſtribution of Almes, hath it's method and order, as in other things. Nor do I ſay, that thou ſhouldeſt nor order thy Charity; but I ſay, that thou ſhouldeſt exerciſe thy Charity; That thou ſhouldſt giue freely, and not pinchingly; That thou ſhouldſt not make ſuch a deale of ſcrupuloſity with thy ſelfe; whether hee ſhould haue an Almes or not haue an Almes? whether hee haue neede, or not need? Troubling my ſelfe with this, and with that, and I know not what. If thou vvilt giue it him, giue it him quickly; if thou canſt not, ſay thou canſt not, and ther's an end. Yet let me tell thee by the way; if a poore man begge of thee then, even then, doſt thou owe him an Almes, and it coſt him deare too, as I told thee before.

Who are to judge of the poore.

And let mee farther tell thee, That thy Office is onely to giue. Let the Rulers and Magiſtrates, the Biſhoppes and their Vicars, open that doore to looke into, it is their eyes that muſt ſee who is poore, and who is not, and accordingly appoint the puniſhment.

What manner of man hee ought to be that is in authority.

This is for men of Office, this, for men of Authority; yet it is a croſſe vnto them; yet is it a trouble vnto them. Nor were they made Governours, or Heads over others, for to eate the beſt morſels, or to feede on the daintieſt diſhes, but to take more paines and cares then other men. Nor to laugh and make themſelues merry with their Fooles and Ieſters, but to lament and bewayle the wretched eſtate of the poore: Not for to ſleepe and ſnort, but to watch and ſigh, having continually (like vnto the Dragon) the eye-ſight of the Spirit cleere. So that, it onely appertaines vnto the to giue an Almes: And doe not thinke that thou doſt then performe that dutie, vvhen thou giueſt that thou canſt not well tell what to do vvithall, and haſt kept it ſo long in ſome corner a moulding, that it is fitter to be throwne out vpon the dunghill, then any thing elſe. And as if the poore were that dunghill, thou giue'ſt him thy mouldy and thy ſtinking meate; not ſo much out of Charity, or any devotion thou haſt to giue it to the poore, as becauſe thou canſt not eate it thy ſelfe, and wouldſt haue thy houſe faine rid of it. But this, I tell thee, is the ſacrifice of *Cain*. That which thou wilt offer, muſt be of the beſt things that thou haſt, as did that good and juſt man *Abel*, with a deſire and will that it were much better wiſhing it may do him much good. Not, as though thou didſt giue by conſtraint and compulſion, nor yet for oſtentation, having (like the Phariſee) the trumpet to goe before thee, to ſound forth thy praiſe; but onely out of meere charity, that thou maiſt reape thereby that fruit that is promiſed thee, God accepting of thy ſacrifice.

I was now a prettie wayes off from *Rome*, whither I was bending my ſteps. But I no ſooner came thither, but my teares trickled downe my cheekes for joy. I did wiſh in my heart, that mine armes had beene ſo large, as that they might haue beene able to haue embraced thoſe ſacred Walls. The firſt ſtep that I ſet within thoſe holy gates, I fell downe on my face, and kiſt that hallowed ground. And becauſe that Countrey, which a man knowes and where he hath his meanes, the ſame is to be accounted his Mother, I did much joy to ſee it. I knew the Citie well, and was as well knowne in it. I began (as I had done before) to ſeeke ſome courſe to liue, and to maintaine this life of mine: I falſely call it life, being it was my death, though it ſeemed vnto me, to be my proper Center.

Guzman with much joy arriues at Rome.

O alas, how ſtrangely are we wedded to our paſſions, and how ſtrange doth that ſeeme vnto vs, which doth not anſwere therevnto, be it never ſo true, never ſo certaine! This ſeemed to me, to be my only happineſſe; holding (in compariſon thereof) every other thing as a misfortune. And though I did ſee all, yet I inclined ſtill to the worſt, thinking ſtill, that that was the beſt.

Video meliora, &c.

I was ſtirring one morning betimes, according as I had formerly beene accuſtomed, and trugg'd along with my ſore legge, with which I ſate me downe to begge at one of the Cardinalls gates. And he comming forth for to goe to the Palace; ſtay'd to heare me, in how loud a voyce and extravagant a tune, I beſought his pitie: not vſing thoſe plainer notes of eight, but ſaying; *Giue mee ſomewhat (noble Chriſtian; friend of Ieſus Chriſt) take pitie of this ſore afflicted ſinner, maimed and pained in his members; Looke vpon theſe wretched limmes: conſider my vnfortunate yeares, and take ſome compaſſion of this miſerable creature! O my moſt reverend Father, my moſt noble Lord, ſhew ſome ſenſe of ſorrow, haue ſome little feeling, I beſeech your moſt illuſtrious Lordſhip, of this poore young wretched Youth, and powre forth your fatherly compaſſion vpon ſuch a pittifull piece of miſerie and wretchednesſe, as you ſee here before you. I begge it at your noble and charitable hands, in that glorious name of the bleſſed (though moſt painefull) paſſion of our deare Maſter and Redeemer Ieſus Chriſt.*

Guzman falls a begging anew with his counterfeit ſore legge.

A forme of begging vſed by ſome beggers.

My Lord Cardinall (after that he had heard mee with a great deale of attention) was extremely moved therewith, and conceiued an extraordinary pittie towards me, inſomuch that I did not ſeeme vnto him to be a man, but that I repreſented vnto him even God himſelfe. Therevpon hee forthwith gaue order to his ſervants, that they ſhould take me vp in their armes, and carry me into the houſe, and that ſtripping me of thoſe old and rotten ragges, they ſhould lay me in his owne bed, and in another chamber adjoyning therevnto, they ſhould make his. All which was done in a moment.

The Cardinall takes pitie of Guzman.

What effect his pitie brings forth.

O the great goodneſſe of God! ô the largeneſſe of his noble condition! They ſtript me naked, for to cloath mee; they would not let me begge, but were ready to giue mee; and to make me likewiſe able to giue vnto others. God never takes any thing away from vs, but when hee meanes to beſtow greater bleſſings vpon vs. When God will giue thee any thing, he will firſt aske ſomething of thee. Hee comes weary about noone to the Fountaine, ſits him downe, askes thee a little water whereof the beaſts of the fields doe drinke. Thou giveſt it him: In exchange whereof, he giues thee the water of the Well of life, the drinke of Angells, whereof he that drinketh, ſhall never thirſt any more. This holy man made him his patterne, who ſending preſently for two skilfull Surgeons, and promiſing to ſee them well rewarded, committed my cure to their charge, and that they ſhould doe their beſt to make me a ſound man. This care being taken, leauing me in the hands of theſe two hangmen, and in the power of my enemies, he gets him away to the Palace.

Gods goodneſſe.

His readineſſe to requite vs.

Phyſicians, and Surgeons, no friends to beggers.

Although wee vſ'd many, and ſundry counterfeitings of ſores, yet that

which I had then made me, was rubb'd over with a certaine Herbe, which cauſ'd it to looke ſo ill and ſo vile, that whoſoever had ſeene it, would haue thought the ſore incurable, and that great remedies muſt be vſed, as to a thing that was ſhrewdly feſtred, and growne to a Canker; yet if the vſe of this roguiſh Herbe be but left off for three whole daies, nature it ſelfe, without any other helpe, will reduce the fleſh to that perfection and ſoundneſſe, that it was in before. To theſe two Surgeons, it ſeemed at the firſt ſight a thing of much moment. They threw off their Cloakes, they call'd for a Panne of coales, freſh butter and other thinges; and when they had all that they would in a readineſſe, they vnſwathed me, and vnbound the clouts that were about my legge, which they performed very neatly and handſomely. That done, they askt me how long I had had this ſore, if I could gheſſe whence it ſhould come; if I did vſe to drinke Wine, what meates I did moſt vſually feed on, and ſuch other queſtions as theſe. Which thoſe that are skilfull in that art, are wont to doe on the like occaſions.

Guzman would not anſwere to the queſtions that the Surgeons askt him.

All theſe I anſwered with ſilence, lying all along as if I had beene dead, for I was not almoſt my ſelfe, nor was I indeed for a pretty while, ſeeing ſuch a deale of preparation to cut, to cauterize and the like; and in caſe I ſhould eſcape all this, I was at my wits end, to thinke that my maladie would be found out, and ſo my roguerie be diſcovered. That which I ſuffered in *Gaeta*, ſeemed but a flea-biting vnto me. But now I lived in feare, that the Cardinall would inflict ſome notable puniſhment vpon me, for this cheating tricke that I had put vpon him. I knew not how to helpe my ſelfe, nor what to doe, nor whom to make vſe of in this my extremity. For, neither in all the *Letanie*, nor in *Flos Sanctorum*, could I finde any Saint, that was a Defender and Protector of Villaines, or that would ſeeke to excuſe me.

By this time they had viewd me againe and againe, a hundred and a hundred times, and turn'd me to and fro, this way and that way, that I thought they would never haue made an end; when at laſt I brake forth and ſaid; I am vndone, I am vndone; yet there is ſome life left in me: I die if you aske me any more queſtions, or if you meddle with me any more. Two houres of trouble haue I already endured vnder their hands, if they doe not burie me now in *Tyber*, (thought I) I will paſſe over the reſt as well as I can. And ſay they ſhould agree to cut off my legge, the condition were better, and the gaine more certaine, ſo as I did not die in the doing of it. But ſuppoſe alſo that this ſhould befall me, I ſhould then be before hand with Death, and I ſhall not be put to endure that brunt another time. What can I doe more? (vnfortunate man as I am) I was borne into the world, here I muſt ſuffer, patience muſt be my beſt comfort, ſhuffle the Cardes therefore anew, and ſee whether we ſhall haue any better lucke. For my reſt is vp, and the care is already taken.

Surgeons of an evill conſcience, what kinde of men they be.

While I was thus doubtfull what would become of me, the covetouſneſſe of theſe Surgeons, and their greedineſſe of gaine, opened the doore to my remedie. The one of them, (who was better experienced then the other) came to know at laſt, that this ſore was a counterfeit ſore, and that by the ſignes and Symptomes of it, it proceeded from the effects of that very ſelfe-ſame Herbe which I had vſed. But this he kept cloſe to himſelfe; telling his fellow, This fleſh is canker'd all over, and therefore it is neceſſary, that to hinder it from ſpreading any farther, and that other new fleſh may come vp in it's place, to cut it all away to the quicke, and then there was no doubt of the well curing of it.

The other ſaid vnto him; This cure will aske a great deale of time; all this filthy matter muſt be taken away, till we come to the very belly, as it were, wherein the very pith and Core of it lies, before we can well tell what to ſay to it. Howſoever, we haue here a faire occaſion offred to ſhew our skill, and to

picke out ſomething of it, for the better paſſing over of this hard yeare. Hee that was the more expert man of the two, tooke the other by the hand, and led him forth aſide into a withdrawing roome, that joyned cloſe to the chamber. I, when I ſaw them thus goe forth together (ſuſpecting ſome ſecret conſultation) I ſtole me out of my bed after them, that I might liſten to their talke, and it was my hap at laſt to heare the one of them ſay to the other; Maiſter Doctor, I doe thinke (be it ſpoken vnder correction) that your Worſhip doth not rightly and truly vnderſtand this young mans maladie; for you ſhall ſeldome meet with the like kinde of cures, and there is ſcarce one of a hundred, when they doe meet with them, that doth know them, or can tell what to make of them, yet ſhall I acquaint you with what I know: we are Partners in this buſineſſe, and therefore I will hide nothing from you; but it is a great ſecret, that I haue to communicate vnto you. What (for Gods ſake) ſaid the other? I ſhall tell you, Sir: and with that he ſaid: This begger is a notable diſſembling Rogue, a ſubtill Villaine; theſe ſores that you ſee, are feigned ware, counterfeit ſtuffe. What ſhall we doe in this caſe? Let me be adviſed by you. If wee leaue him off thus, the bird will eſcape our hands, and ſo we ſhall loſe both the credit and profit of this Cure. If take vpon vs to cure him, vve haue no cure to worke vpon, and then this Raſcall vvill befoole vs, and laugh at our ignorance: and if wee cannot one way or other come off fairely to our beſt advantage, the beſt courſe will be (in my opinion) to acquaint the Cardinall how the caſe ſtandeth, and what a counterfeit Knaue we haue vnder our hands.

The wicked counſell of two Surgeons, about Guzmans *ſore legge.*

No Sir (ſaid the other) I hold not that ſo fit. Let vs hold the Bird faſt, while we haue him: it is a leſſe evill, that vpon this young fellow (that is no better then a *Picaro*, and an errant Rogue) wee ſhould gaine vs a little reputation, and come off with ſome good opinion, then to let ſlip ſo fine and ſo faire an occaſion. Let vs therefore take no notice of theſe his counterfeit ſores, but rather lay ſome Playſters therevnto, that may entertaine and delay the time: And if need be, vve ſhall afterwards apply ſome Corroſiues, that ſhall eate into the ſound fleſh, in the cure whereof, vve will ſpend ſome few daies. Nay then (quoth the other) the beſt way will be, Sir, (as I take it) to begin firſt with fire, cauterizing that part which appeares thus infected.

Now, which of theſe two remedies they ſhould firſt begin withall, as alſo, how they were to ſhare the gaines betweene them, a great quarrell there was, they could not agree vpon the point; for he that firſt found out the nature of my ſore, would haue the greater ſhare, or elſe he would acquaint the Cardinall with the whole buſineſſe.

When I ſaw vpon what they ſtucke, and that it was a matter of little or no moment, and that vpon their difference, which vvas occaſioned by my miſerable povertie, I might runne the hazard of my vtter ruine, I ruſht in betweene them, and throwing my ſelfe downe at their feet, I ſaid thus vnto them: Gentlemen; on your hands, and tongues, depends my life, or death: my remedy, or my ruine, From my hurt, no good can come vnto you; but from my good, you may reape aſſured both profit, and credit.

Guzman ſpeaks to the Surgeons. They agree together to abuſe the charity of this good Prelate.

I know you are not ignorant of the neceſſity and want vvhich the poore ſuffer, and of the hardneſſe of rich mens hearts, in ſo much, that to moue them to the more compaſſion, and the eaſilier to get an Almes from them, we are inforced to wound our fleſh, vvith theſe kinde of ſores and martyrdomes, induring much trouble, and ſuffering much paine, yet neither theſe, nor greater miſeries that we abide, are of power to prevaile with them. It vvere a great miſ-fortune in others to endure that out of neceſſity, which wee vvillingly ſuffer, for that poore and miſerable maintenance, which we draw from thence. I beſeech you (for Gods ſake) to take pittie on me, ſeing that you are men that runne through the troubleſome ſtreet of this world, and are made

of flesh and bloud, as well as my selfe; and that, which hath driven me to this hard exigent, may likewise light vpon your selues.

Doe not (I beseech you) bewray me, worke your will vpon me, and wherein I may serue and helpe you, I will not be wanting to do as you will haue me; and in all things to be so ruled by you, that you may gaine much by this your cure. You may be confident of me, and trust me as you would your owne liues; for if there were no other meanes to make me sure vnto you, the feare of mine owne punishment is sufficient of it selfe, to binde me to be secret. Nor let not the respect of gaine restraine your kindnesse; for it is better to get, then to lose. Wee are three of vs, let vs all play booty, and joyne together to coozen the Cardinall; for he is rich, and something is better then nothing.

These intreaties, seasoned with a few teares, and vttered with that earnestnesse as I delivered them vnto them, were sufficient to make them approue of my counsell; and so much the rather, for that they saw that I had hit the nayle right on the head. Wherewith they were so well pleased, that they were ready for joy to take mee vp vpon their shoulders, to carry me to my bed. And so they and my selfe grew fully agreed to play every man his part as well as he could.

Whilest this businesse was in debating, they were so long before they could agree vpon the matter, that I was scarce put into my bed, and the cloathes cast vpon me; but that my Lord Cardinall was come to the Chamber doore; who when he was entred, one of the Surgeons said vnto him:

The Surgeons dissemble this counterfeit sore with the Cardinall.

This young-mans malady (may it please your Lordship) is a very grievous one, and we must necessarily apply, great remedies therevnto. For the flesh is festred and canker'd in many places, and it hath taken such deepe roote, that it is impossible for the plaisters that we are to apply, to worke any good effect, without some long tract of time; but I am very confident, and dare be bold to assure your Lordship, that (by the helpe of God) we shall make him as sound a man, as ever he was in his life.

Then said the other, If this Youth had not thus luckily falne into your Lordships pittifull and charitable hands, within a few dayes, these his sores would haue beene so putrified, and haue so corrupted the whole body, that all the world could not haue sav'd his life, but he must haue perished, and dy'd. But we shall so stop this Canker, from spreading it selfe any farther, and vse such good meanes for his recoverie, that I make no question but within sixe moneths, if not sooner, his flesh shall come to be as whole and as faire as mine.

The good Cardinall (whom Charity had onely moved herevnto) told them; Be it in sixe, or in ten, let me haue it throughly healed and cured as it ought to be cured, and I shall take order that you be provided of all things necessary for it, you shall want nothing. With this, he left them, and with-drew himselfe into another roome. This did put new life into me; and as if they had drawne my heart out of the one side, and had thrust it in on the other into my body againe, so did I then feele my selfe. For even till that very instant, I did not rest assured of these two trayterous Surgeons. I still feared, they would haue wheeled about another way, and haue beene the cause of my vndoing. But by that which I had heard them treat in my presence, I was somewhat cheared, and began to be of good comfort.

Swearing Gaming, and Begging, three things hard to be left.

But the custome of Swearing, Gaming, and Begging, are things that are hard to be left off. It could not choose but grieue me very much, that I was hindred in my course, mew'd vp, debarr'd my liberty, and made vnable to enjoy those good and plentifull Almes, which I gain'd by begging. Which losse notwithstanding did seeme the lesse, in regard of that curious entertainment, choyce diet, and good lodging that I had, that mans desire could not haue wisht it to haue bin better. For I was waited on, like a Prince, and cured with

with that care, as if I had beene the Cardinall himselfe. And so had he given commandement to the servants of his house; besides his dayly comming in his owne proper person to visit me. And sometimes he would sit downe and make some stay with me, talking of such things, wherein he tooke pleasure to heare me.

At length, being healed of this infirmitie, (when the Surgeons saw their time,) they were dismissed, receiving a great deale of pay, for a little paines. And I was commanded to be new cloath'd, and to be listed in the Roll of the Pages; that as one of them, from the time forward, I might attend, and wait vpon his Lordship.

Guzman is fully cured. He is made one of the Cardinals Pages.

CHAPTER VII.

Guzman de Alfarache *discourseth, how all things haue had their time of Empire. He delivereth strange things, touching Truth, and Lying. As being Page to the Cardinall; hee declareth the Vertues, and the Vices, wherein your Pages exercise themselues. He relateth a pleasant Story of his stealing of some Conserues; and how he was punished for it.*

OF all things created, none can complaine to haue past without its Empire. They haue all of them had their day, & haue taken their turne. But because Time changeth all things; these are past and gone; & those haue finished their course.

All things created haue had their time of sway.

And first to begin with Poetry, it is apparent to all the world, how much that in it's time was celebrated.

Poetry.

Let ancient *Rome* report, in what reverence were your Orators held, that were skill'd in the Art of *Retoricke*, and had the gift of speaking well and eloquently.

Oratory.

And let our *Spaine* speake, what honour is now at this day given to those sacred letters of holy Writ, so many yeares since, so well received by her; And in what esteeme stand both the Lawes, Civill, and Canon.

Divinitie.

Law.

The fashion of Apparell, and wearing of cloathes in *Spaine*, cannot escape amongst the rest; wherein we dayly finde new changes, and new alterations, after which strange fashions all runne as fast, as scatteringly, and as much out of order as Goates doe one after another; and as one Sheepe leapes after another; so doe men and women leape into fashions. He is no body that is not in the new fashion. and nothing now seemeth well, but what is in vse; notwithstanding that it hath been already vsed, and that lately, and approved for good: And that sottish ignorance of the common rout, and baser sort of people, is come now to that passe, that they will all forsooth be alike; the tall man as the short; the Quack-belly, as the *Scranio*; the fat, as the leane; the sicke, as the sound; the deformed, as the well-proportioned man, will haue (if not one & the selfe-same measure) at least one and the selfe-same fashion; putting themselues into vgly and monstrous shapes, and into an indecent and ill-becomming weare of cloathes, and onely because they will follow the fashion, and be in the same cut as others be, as if one kinde of Syrrop, or Purge, were fit for all diseases.

Apparell.

The words likewise and phrases of our speech, haue been corrupted by vse, and those which once were fyled phrases, and pure language, are now accounted rude and barbarous.

Words & Speech.

Meates also haue their season, and their time; For that doth not please vs in the Winter, which we haue a great desire vnto in the Spring; not that like vs in the Autumne, which we haue a minde vnto in the Summer.

Meats.

Your buildings, and your Engines of Warre are dayly renewed. Your Manuall

Buildings. Warlike Engines.

nuall workes, and thoſe that are wrought with the hand, haue their turnings too; as your Seates, your Chaires, you Benches, your Cupboords, your Cabinets, your Tables, your low Stooles for women, your Lamps, your Candle-ſticks, and the like: Your ſports, your games and your Dances, haue alſo their changes. And even in Muſicke, and in Songs, wee finde the like.

Manuall Arts.

Muſick Dancing.

For ſome are much taken with the (*a*) *Zarauanda*; and others may come hereafter, that will vtterly miſlike it, and make it grow out of date. Who haue ſeeene your Mules in former times, how much Veluet they haue drawne along with them in their * Foot-cloathes, may now in theſe behold how incapable they are of any ſuch courteſie, being not ſuffered to haue any ornaments of Silke or Gold.

(*a*) Zarauanda: *a knowne Dance in* Spaine, *very wanton and laſcivious. The women of Cadiz inuented this Dance, and brought it to Rome, whereof* Martial *makes mention in ſome places. Eſpecially* lib. 5. Epig. 79. Nec de Gadibus improbis puellæ Vibrabunt ſine fine prurientes Lacuos docili tremore lumbos.

We are all witneſſes, when the time was, that my little pretty *Sardinian* Aſſe, was your womens onely *Regalo* aud delightfull companion, when they performed their Stations, or went vp to their Viſits. But they are now all for their * *Sillas*, and eaſie Chaires carried with hands, which hereretofore were well contented with good honeſt Pack-Saddles.

* *Foot cloathes. Aſſes.* * *Pack Saddles Dogs. Monkies. Parrats. The Diſtaffe and Spindle.*

Let your Ladies now tell me, how eſſentiall a thing it is, and how much it importeth them, to haue litttle foyſting Hounds, Monkies, and Parrakitos, for to entertaine the time; who in times paſt did ſpend thoſe idler houres at the Reele and Spindle, and exerciſing their Needle in ſome curious, yet neceſſarie workes: But theſe are falne into diſgrace, they are growne out of faſhion, their time is paſt and gone, they haue their courſe, and are vaniſhed with the reſt.

The like hath hapned vnto Truth, that alſo hath had it's time: Inſomuch that it was anciently much more vſed then now: And ſo much, that it was a generall ſaying in thoſe dayes that it was reſpected aboue all other Vertues; and he that told any Lye, were it of more or leſſe importance, received puniſhment accordingly, even to the loſſe of life, by being publikely ſtoned to death.

Truth how much reſpected in old time.

But becauſe we are quickly weary of well-doing, and what is ill, will never be tyred out; men growing worſe and worſe, ſo holy a Law could not keepe it ſelfe a foot amongſt ſo many wicked perſons. Wherevpon, it came to paſſe, that a great Plague and Peſtilence comming amongſt them, all thoſe that were touched with it (if they eſcaped with their life) remained with ſome offenſiue marke or other to their perſons: And as it befalleth, that one generation paſſeth, and another comes in the place, one ſucceeding another; they that were borne ſound and whole, reproched thoſe other with their faults and defects, wherewith they were notably grieved to ſee themſelues thus diſgraced, and tooke it very offenſiuely at their hands.

A ſhort Story of Truth.

Whence it came to paſſe by little and little, that Truth began to be heard with an vnwilling eare. And becauſe men were thus vnwilling to heare it, they grew at laſt to be vnwilling to tell it. For by the firſt round, we come vnto the ſecond, and by the ſecond, by degrees to the top of all. And a little ſparke ſometimes ſets a whole Citie on fire.

At laſt they grew ſo bold as to breake this Statute, & not contented therewith, they baniſhed *Truth* at laſt into perpetuall Exile; and in her ſtead Lying was entertained, and ſeated in her throne.

Truth baniſhed.

Truth being thus condemned, ſhe went from among them to performe the tenor of her Sentence. She went all alone, poore, and naked; as it vſually hapneth vnto thoſe that are ſunke, and falne from their fortunes; (for every man is valued according to that that he hath, or as his abilitie is; and thoſe which formerly haue beene our friends, in time of adverſitie turne tayle, and become our enemies.) And having gone ſome few daies journeyes from thence, ſtanding on a high Mountaine, ſhe might perceiue, paſsing over the edge

edge of a little Hill, a great companie comming along, and the neerer ſtill they drew, the greater did their number appeare. In the midſt of a Squadron, compaſſed about with an Armie, came Kings, Princes, Governours, Prieſts of that profeſsion, Men of command, and Rulers of thoſe Provinces, every one according to his qualitie, either more or leſſe, neere to this triumphant Chariot, which they had placed in the midſt, with a great deale of Majeſtie, which was wrought with admirable Art, and extreame curioſitie. Lyes *Triumph.*

In this Chariot, was there a high Throne erected, whoſe ſeate was of Ivory, Ebonie, and Gold; wherein were inchaſed many precious Stones, and a woman ſitting therevpon, with a Crowne vpon her head, like a Queene; her face moſt beautifull; but as you drew neerer and neerer vnto it, it did loſe much of it's faireneſſe, and at laſt appeared moſt foule and vgly. Her body, when ſhe ſate ſtill, and did not ſtirre, ſeemed luſtie, neate, and handſome; but when ſhe roſe vp, and ſtood vpon her feet, or walked vp and downe, ſhe diſcovered many defects. Her Robes were of changable Taffaties, exceeding rich and glorious to the eye, and full of varietie of colours, ſtrangely diverſified, and cunningly intermingled one with another, but the threds ſo ſlender, ſo ſubtle, and of that little or no ſubſtance, that the very ayre would puffe it in pieces, and every the leaſt thing, either make bracks in it, or breake and teare it to fitters.

Truth, ſhe ſtood ſtill (poore ſoule) till this Squadron was paſt; admiring to ſee ſo much greatneſſe and State; but when the Charriot came right over againſt her, the Lady *Lye* tooke notice of this poore honeſt Dame *Truth*, and commanded thoſe about her to ſtay. And cauſing her to come neerer vnto her, ſhe began to aske her whence ſhe came, whither ſhe would, and what ſhe went about? And *Thuth* plainely told her all. Lye *meetes with* Truth.

The Lady *Lye* thought it fitting out of ſtate and greatnes, and for a farther addition of honour, to lead her along with her: For every one is ſo much the more powerfull, by how much the greater are the enemies, whom he overcometh; and is by ſo much the more eſteemed and reputed of in the world, by how much the mightier the forces are, againſt which he makes reſiſtance.

Herevpon ſhe commands *Truth* to wait vpon her. There was no remedy, ſhe could not avoyd it, ſhe muſt along with her, whether ſhe would or no; but in the tayle of all the troope, being commanded to come laſt, for that was her knowne place, and at that time did (as it ſhould ſeeme) properly belong vnto her. Truth, *where ſhe takes her place.*

He that will ſeeke for *Truth*, ſhall not finde her with this great Lady *Lye*, nor with any of her Miniſters, for ſhe comes in the Rere laſt of all, and there ſhe manifeſts her ſelfe to thoſe, that make inquirie after her.

The firſt daies journey that ſhe march't, ſhe came to a goodly faire Citie, where *Favour* went forth to receiue her, a very potent and powerfull Prince, who invites both her and all her Traine to his houſe. Favour *goes forth to meet the Lady* Lye.

The Lady *Lye* accepted of this his kindeneſſe, giving him many thankes for this his courteous offer, but would needs goe to lodge at the rich and ſumptuous Palace of *Wit*, where a great feaſt, and a curious banquet was provided for her. Wit *entertaines the Lady* Lye.

Afterwards, when ſhe was to goe from thence; and to paſſe on forward with her Troopes, my Lady *Lyes* Steward, which was *Oſtentation*, a tall of perſon, with a long beard, a graue countenance, a ſettled gate, and words well plaſte, came to mine Hoſt, that had given them this good entertainment, and ask't him, what was to pay? The reckoning was ſumm'd vp; and the Steward, without contradiction, or abatement of any thing, told him it was well. Oſtentation *the Lady* Lyes *Steward.*

Then the Lady *Lye* called *Oſtentation* her Steward vnto her, ſaying; See you pay this man well, out of that money which you gaue him to keepe, when *The coyne, wherein the Lady* Lye *makes her payments.*

when you came in hither. Mine Hoſt ſeemed to be amazed thereat, and began to wonder with himſelfe, what money this ſhould bee, that they talked of; and thought at firſt, that they had but ſpoke in jeſt. But when hee ſaw that they ſtood ſo ſtiffely in it, and that the ſame was affirmed by ſo many of good (as they ſeemed to be) condition and qualitie, hee did very much complaine, ſaying; That till now, he had never beene ſo ill vs'd before in all his life. Vpon that my Lady *Lye*, for the juſtifying thereof, preſents theſe for Witneſſes; *Idleneſſe*, her Treaſurer; *Flattery*, her principall follower, and chiefe Attendant on her Perſon; *Vice* her Chamberlaine; And *Wily-beguile-you*, one of her maides of Honour, together with divers other of her ſervants. And that ſhe might convince him the better, ſhe commanded *Intereſt*, mine Hoſts Sonne, and *Couetnouſneſſe*, his Wife, to be brought forth before him: All which avouched to his face, that it was ſo.

Lyes *Witneſſes, who they be.*

Wit ſeeing himſelfe in this ſtreight, did rend the ayre with his Exclamations, calling vpon the heavens, that they would make the Truth knowne; for they had not only deny'd him that which they ow'd him; but they demanded that of him, which he ow'd them not.

Wit *complaines of his wrong.*

Truth, ſeeing him thus afflicted, as being one that ever wiſh'd him well, came to him, and told him; My friend *Wit*, you haue reaſon on your ſide, but I know not how to helpe thee; for ſhe that denies this debt, is the Lady *Lye*, and here is no body on your part but my ſelfe, and all the ſervice that I am able to doe you, is, to declare my ſelfe for you, as I doe.

Truth ſpeakes in favour of Wit.

The Lady Lye *giues ſentence on* Wits *ſide, but condemnes* Truth *in the charges.*

The Lady *Lye* was ſo ſtartled, and ſo abaſht at this her boldneſſe, that ſhee commanded her Miniſters, that *Wit* ſhould be pay'd, but with *Truths* wealth; which was accordingly done. And ſo they ſet forward, taking vp, as they went along, Innes and other lodgings, as ſuch kinde of people vſe to doe, letting no place ſcape, where they did not purloine and ſteale. For one wicked Villaine is commonly the hangman to another. And evermore, (take it for a generall rule) one chiefe, one blaſphemer, one ruffian, and one damn'd fellow, ends his life by the hands of one that is as bad as himſelfe: And theſe are a kinde of great Fiſhes, which feed vpon the leſſer Frie.

They arrived afterwards at a place, whereof *Murmuration* was Miſtreſſe, a great friend to the Lady *Lye*, who came forth to meet her, cauſing all the great Perſons of her Kingdome, and her owne private ſervants, to leade on the way afore. Amongſt the which went *Pride*, *Trecherie*, *Deceit*, *Gluttony*, *Ingratitude*, *Malice*, *Hatred*, *Negligence*, *Sloth*, *Obſtinacie*, *Revenge*, *Envie*, *Injurie*, *Folly*, *Vaine-glory*, *Madneſſe*, *Selfe-will*, beſides other her familiar friends and acquaintance. She invited her to be her Gueſt, and that ſhe would be pleaſed to make her Palace her Inne, and with that freeneſſe, as if it were her owne. The Lady *Lye* accepted of her kindeneſſe, but with this condition, that ſhe might only haue the vſe of her lodging, and in all the reſt, to be at her owne charge. *Murmuration* was very willing to haue ſhowne her greatneſſe, and withall to haue given her the beſt entertainment ſhe could; but becauſe it was *Lyes* pleaſure to haue it otherwiſe, ſhe reſted contented, and thanked her that ſhe would be pleaſed to doe her houſe that grace, which ſhee eſteemed as a great favour; and ſo without any farther reply on either part, they went hand in hand together to the Palace. *Solicitude*, who was Steward; and *Inconſtancie* the Caterer, made proviſion of victuals; the fame whereof was ſo great, that many came from all the bordering places thereabouts, with a world of all ſorts of dainties, and whatſoever elſe was neceſſarie for the ſetting forth of ſo great a Feaſt; all which was taken vp, without any hucking or ſticking vpon the price; Looke what they askt, that they were agreed withall to haue. But after dinner, when they were to depart, and goe their wayes, the Owners of theſe things demanded money for what they had ſold. The Treaſurer ſaid, that hee ow'd them nothing; and the

Murmuration

Murmurations *followers, who they be.*

The Lady Lye *dines at her houſe, and vpon what condition.*

Solicitude, *Steward of the houſe:* Inconſtancie, *the Caterer.*

Caterer

Caterer, that hee had payd them all. Wherevpon there vvere great ſtirre, and much adoe; inſomuch that the Lady *Lye* was faine to come forth her ſelfe amongſt them, and ſaid vnto them; My friends, what is it you vvould haue? Are you mad? or what's the matter vvith you? Sure you are either out of your wits, or I do not vvell vnderſtand my ſelfe. You are all of you payd already for whatſoever you brought hither; and I my ſelfe ſaw with mine owne eyes, when your moneyes was payd you before *Truths* face, and in her preſence. Let her ſpeake if ſhee may be taken for a witneſſe, whether it be ſo or no: I will be content to be tryde by her. They going then to ſeeke out *Truth*, to decide this difference, and to award what was to be done in this buſineſſe; ſhe faigned her ſelfe to be a ſleepe. They call'd aloud vnto her. But ſhee bethinking herſelfe, how ill ſhee had beene dealt withall before, vvas in a doubt what ſhee ſhould doe: at laſt ſhee reſolved vvith her ſelfe to faigne her ſelfe dumbe, and had loſt her ſpeech, that ſhe might not pay for that, which others had bought, and were her profeſſed enemies: Wherevpon ſhee hath continued that cuſtome ever ſince: And now truth is growne dumbe, for that ſhee had pay'd ſo ſoundly for not being mute before. And therefore hee that ſpeakes the *Truth*, let him pay fort by my conſent. For as the world now goes, hee is worthy ſo to doe.

But it ſeemeth vnto mee (as I haue painted it in my Imagination) that *Truth* and *Lying* are like the ſtring, and the Wreſt or Peg in ſome inſtrument. The ſtring hath a delicate ſound, ſweete, and pleaſing to the eare: But the Peg doth skreeke, ſqueake, and creake like a Cart-wheel, and can hardly be turn'd & wreſted. The ſtring gently yeelds, willingly ſtretching & inlarging it ſelfe, till you haue ſtrained it to your liking: But the Peg goes ſtill twirling and turning, being wrung, wrinched, and pinch't vpon by the ſtring. Iuſt ſo ſtands the caſe, for all the world, betwixt *Truth* and *Lying*. *Truth* is the Peg, and *Lying* the ſtring: Well may a *Lye* goe working and winding it ſelfe vpon *Truth*, which is the Peg, and leaue ſome print, or ſigne therein, making it to ſound harſh and vntunable to the eare, but in the end, it goes (although vvith ſome difficulty) turning and winding a *Lye* ſo long, till *Truth* remaine vvhole and ſound, like the Peg: and *Lying* crack't and broken, like the String.

If I had treated *Truth*, all thoſe torments, affronts, and afflictions which I had runne thorow and indured, could not in the end, but haue ſet mee ſafe in ſome one good Port or other, and haue brought mee with joy to the fortunate Ilands. But the whole courſe of my life, was lying, coozenage, and roguerie, and ſo like the ſtring of an Inſtrument, when it came to be put in tune, it could not indure any the leaſt ſtraining, and ſo preſently brake, it vvas not able (I ſay) to reſiſt and withſtand *Truthes* ſtretching hand, but vvent ſtill turning and twirling, from one miſchiefe to another, and from one evill into a worſe. So one Deepe calleth vp another, and one Waue comes head-longly tumbling in vpon the necke of his fellow.

The Pin is now turn'd, and I am rais'd vp to be a Page, God grant I may come downe no lower. That thing which receiueth violence, and is ſtrained to a courſe contrary to its nature, it is impoſſible, but it muſt revert and returne to it's center, be it low or be it high; for that is the place, vvhich it doth naturally affect and deſire. They tooke mee from the height of my glory, and brought mee downe ſo lowe as to ſerue, which (being ſo oppoſite as it was to my diſpoſition) you ſhall ſee how long I continued in that courſe.

Hee that walkes too faſt, will be quickly weary; and to paſſe ſo ſuddenly from one extreme to another, as it cannot be done with ſafety, ſo it is conſerved vvith difficulty. If a tree take not deepe rooting, it will never beare any fruit, but quickly dries and withers away; So hee that is newly put into an Office, cannot ſuddenly take any deepe rooting; and ſay hee ſhould be ſettled therein ſome yeares, he will hardly thriue in a ſtrange ſoyle, that doth not ſort

Lyes ſhifts, that ſhe may not pay what ſhee owes.

Truth becomes dumbe, and the cauſe why.

Truth and Lying how compared.

Guzmans courſe of life, what it was.

Guzman turned Page.

Nullum violentum diuturnum

ſort with his nature, and ſo will proue in the end as vnprofitable to himſelfe as vnfruitfull to others. It was too great a leape, to riſe from a *Picaro*, to be a Page, (though in a manner they are correlatiues, and haue a kinde of relation one to another, only their habit doth difference and diſtinguiſh them) and I could not chooſe but grieue, as oft as I thought vpon it. That which was common with others, fell out quite contrary with mee. For it is ſaid, *Que las honras, quanto mas creçen, mas hambre ponen.* That the more honour a man has, the more he deſires. But I was ſo farre from that liking, that it was rather to mee a loathing. Such high places did not pleaſe mee; Thoſe that I had profeſt, thoſe were for mee. *Cada vno, en lo que ſe cria.* Let every man betake himſelfe to that, vvherein hee hath beene traind and bred vp. Is it fit (thinke you) to take the fiſh out of the water, and to breede Peacocks therein? To put an Oxe to fly, and an Eagle to plough? To feede a horſe with ſand? To ſup a Falcon with ſtraw? And to take from a man his Riſibility (to ſpeake like a Logician) and faculty of laughing? I was bred vp among the Fleſh-pots of Egypt; my Center was a good victualling houſe; my Circle, a good honeſt Taverne; and my end, Vice; vvherevnto I did bend amaine; In that I tooke pleaſure, that was health and life to mee; and vvhat was contrary to that, I tooke no joy in it, it vvas not for mee, nor vvas I vvilling to make it mine.

Proverb.

Proverb.

What Guzman *did vvhilſt he was a Page.*

My mouth was now daintily fed; my backe delicately clad; my eyes ſwolne with too much ſleepe; my hands (for want of vvorke) as ſoft as ſilke; my belly, (vvith too much pampering) as hard brac't as any Drumme; my buttockes brawny, and thicke-skind with too much ſitting; and my chaps (like a Monkies) nimbly walking on both ſides, vvhen I was at my meate. Tell mee how was it poſſible for me to content my ſelfe; how indure to be put to a ſet Penſion, to ſtay waiting all day long at a doore, at nights to ſtand with a Torch in my hand, leaning againſt a wall, and ſtanding vpon one legge like a Crane, till it be almoſt day-breake? Sometimes, (if not for the moſt part) ſupper-leſſe, but frozen (I am ſure) with cold, expecting the Viſits that goe out, and come in, being like a Ladder for others to goe vp and downe; or like a Smiths paire of Bellowes, aſcending, and deſcending, to beare others company vvaiting vpon my Lords Caroche early and late; not onely at ſome ſet ſeaſons and certaine times, but at all houres both of day and night, being myred in the Winter vvith durt; and choaked in the Summer vvith duſt; holding a Trencher betweene my thumbs at meales; my belly growing leane and lanke through a longing deſire feeding on the beſt diſhes with my eyes, and wiſhing in my ſoule, that every dainty morſell at the boord, had beene meat for my mouth. Beſides, going vpon one meſſage, and returning with another, tyring out my legges, and wearing out my ſhooes, and being allowed but every moneth a paire, vvee were forced to goe fifteene dayes of the thirty bare-foote. Theſe are the things, that yearely paſſe from the firſt of *January*, to the laſt of *December*. And he, who at the end thereof ſhould aske vs: How haue you thriu'd this yeare? What haue you got?

Pages gettings, vvhat they be.

The anſwere is at hand, Sir, I reſt vpon my Lords loue and favour, I referre my ſelfe to his diſcretion and goodneſſe. I eate of his meat, and drinke of his drinke; in Winter feeding on that which is cold; in Summer, that which is hot. And what I haue in that kinde, is but a poore pittance, and that little, none of the beſt, and commonly ſome-what of the lateſt, that a man were as good goe without it. I vveare what cloathes hee giues mee, ſuch as you ſee; as a Livery rather of my ſervitude, then of devotion to cloath mee; not given mee to keepe me warme, but to doe my Lord honour: And thoſe too muſt be made to their minde, and our coſt. So that our money payes for it, and they chooſe the colours.

The clocke of a Pages ſtomacke, muſt goe ſtill an houre after his Maſters.

Our greater gaines did conſiſt in cold fare, for there was not one of vs that could

could finger a full Trencher: ſcraps, and picking of their teeth, vvee had in ſome abundance, and with theſe vvee intertained our ſelues, and the like poore Relickes that they left, and ſome refuſe fruits, that were not vvorth the eating, and ſuch things as theſe, or vvorſe, vvere all the fruits of our labours.

When the winde blew freſh, and that wee had got a matter of ſome ten or twelue *Quartes*, vvhich with vs was a great ſumme, wee raiſ'd this money out of ſo many drops and flakes of Waxe, which wee tooke off from our Torches, which vvee ſold to ſome old Cobler or other. Hee amongſt vs that could get vp a little ſtocke, that were worth any thing, though it were never ſo ſmall, this man had a ſufficient Patrimony, and did great things with it, hee might buy him a penny-paſty at the Cookes, and other the like odde kinde of junkets; but if hee were taken in the manner, hee was ſure to be whipt for his labour. This was his judgement. Onely it was permitted vnto vs to ſteale. I ſay (if wee had ſtolne) it was held the leſſe evill of the two. For if it had beene permitted, and that wee might haue beene ſuffered ſo to doe, I would ſo cunningly haue imployed my wits in that kinde, that I would in a ſhort time haue beene able to ſet vp a Chandlers ſhop. But if I did make benefit of mine owne Torch, or filch now and then from my fellowes ſome of theirs, that was all that I did. But they were ſo baſe, and ſo crafty withall, that I never ſaw them buſie themſelues about any other thing, being more deſirous to loſe their meat, then that; for victuals are conſumed in the belly, and cannot afterwards be ſold to profit; and yet for theſe things too, they had a thouſand ſhifts and rogueries.

a *A matter of ſome eight pence, or nine pence.*

For I ſaw one of them once take a Hony-combe from the table, and preſently wrapt it in his Handkerchiefe, and clapt it into his Pocket. But becauſe he waited at the table, and for that he could not carry it ſo ſpeedily as he would haue done to the Haven of Safety, nor land it in ſo good a place as hee deſired, it hapned that the heate of the weather, and the vvarmth of the pocket, melted the Honey, which in great haſt came trickling downe his Breeches, and dropt out at his knees. My Lord ſpide it, as he ſate at Table, who could ſcarce forbeare laughing; at laſt to make himſelfe merry, hee call'd him vnto him, and commanded him to put downe his Hoſe. The Page did ſo. And when his hands came to touch vpon the honey, it clung faſt to his fingers ends, whereat they fell a laughing, and he went away aſhamed. But hee had ſowre ſauce to his ſweete meate; for that beſides hee never taſted of the Honey, hee vvas ſo ſoundly laſht, that his breech dropt Waxe as faſt as the Combe did Honey. Which misfortune ſhould never haue befalne me, for I was perfect in all kind of roguerie, and would never haue beene to ſeeke of ſome ſlight or other for cleanely conveyance. And that my ſword might not ruſt in my ſcabberd, but that I might ſtill keepe my hand in vre, I vvas evermore a practiſing vpon ſome toyes and trifles, petty things not worth the talking, onely to ſet my fellowes wits a worke, and to giue them a bone to gnaw vpon.

A page ſteales a Hony-Combe, waiting at table; The Story of it, and his puniſhment.

The Devill (I thinke) brought Fooles and block-heads to the Court, who let every good morſell ſlip beſides their mouthes: a troubleſome and wearieſome kinde of people to treat withall vnfit for the managing of buſineſſe; inſupportable in their carriage, and tedious in their converſation. A man ſhould be like to a good Horſe, or a good Greyhound, vpon all occaſions to take his carreere, and to make his courſe; and moreover hee muſt carry himſelfe in a coole and quiet manner.

Fooliſh Pages, not fit for Court.

There vvere Pages good ſtore; but I muſt tell you, that the moſt of them, nay, I will inlarge my ſpeech a little more, and ſay; That they vvere all Chips of one and the ſame blocke, a company of beetle-heads, dull-ſpirited fellowes, that had no wherry in them, not onely when they were in their Lords preſence; but likewiſe, when they vvere out of his ſight. They vvere as ſlow in

executing his will, as they were lazie in getting vp from their beds; they were idle, retchleſſe, careleſſe all ſet vpon loytering, exerciſing neither their bodies, nor their braines, which made mee the more willing to play the Wagge with them, and for my better paſtime, to put one pretty tricke or other vpon them.

I did ſtore my ſelfe vvith Stockins, Garters, Bands, Hats, Handkerchieſes, Poynts, Cuffes, Shooes, and whatſoever I could rape or wring from them, which I hid betweene the Straw of one of my fellowes beds, becauſe, if any ſearch vvere made, they ſhould not finde them in mine. I alterred the properties of theſe things in an inſtant, they never lay long by mee, I would chop them for old iron, rather then be troubled vvith the keeping of them. It behooued them to looke vvell about them, and to ſee that they had all ſafe and ſure vnder locke and key, for if they ſhould careleſſely leaue any thing abroad, thoſe eyes that found it gone, did never ſee it returne againe.

Many of theſe waggiſh parts I playd, which were but trickes of youth, and nothing elſe. But I fell afterwards into a fault, which I vvould haue ſworne of all others (ſo farre was it from my thought) I ſhould never haue offended in. It vvas a licoriſh ſinne, even the ſinne of Gluttony. Which I doe not know, whether it proceeded from my eating by meaſure (as being ſtinted) or whether that my longing did prouoke and ſtirre vp my appetite; or vvhether it were now muing time vvith mee, and that I vvas to change my old feathers, and get mee new, for they ſay, that men, vvhile they liue heere in this world, doe at certaine times and ſeaſons (as other creatures ſhead their haires, and recover new coats) change and alter their manners and conditions.

I vvas now growne ſo licoriſh, and ſo ſharpe-ſet vpon ſweete meats, (for the pleaſant taſte they had, while they paſſed downe my throat) that never any blinde man was halfe ſo forward to goe repeating his Letanies, and other his ſet prayers, from doore to doore, to get an Almes, as I was to pleaſe my palate: And looke whatſoever came vvithin the reach of mine eyes, were it as farre as they could ken, and ſafe inough (as it might be ſuppoſed) from catching, yet could it not eſcape my Eagles-talons.

And as the Hart, with his breathing drawes your Snakes out of the bowels of the earth: So I, if I could but once come to ſet mine eyes vpon ſuch, or ſuch a dainty; it was ſure mine owne, they rendred themſelues at firſt into my hands; my hands, they turn'd them over to my mouth; and my mouth committed them cloſe priſoners to my belly, where theſe ſweetes remained, till they were no longer ſweete.

My Lord Cardinall had a great Cheſt (which kinde of Cheſts are much vſed in *Italy*) of white Pine; and I haue likewiſe ſeene good ſtore of them in *Spaine*, which they vſually bring from thence, ſtuft vvith Merchandize, but eſpecially with glaſſes, and earthen cups and diſhes, the better to keepe them from breaking.

This Cheſt ſtood in a vvith-drawing Chamber, for to *regalar*, and cheere himſelfe vvithall, being full of diuerſe ſorts of Conſerues; there I ſay, vvere your dry Suckets delicately candyed, your [b] *Bergamota* Peare of [c] *Aranxuez*, your *Genoa* Cherry, your Melon of *Granada*, your *Sevillian* Cytrons, your Oranges, and Pome-Citrons of *Plaſencia*, your Lemons of *Murçia*, your pretty little Cucumbers of *Valençia*, your buddes of the Ilands, your [d] *Berengenas* of *Toledo*, your [e] *Orejones* of *Aragon*, your *Potatas* of *Malaga*: your Pippens, Parſneps, Carrets, Pompeons, beſides a thouſand ſeuerall ſorts of Comfits, and an infinite number more of ſundry different kinds of Sweetmeats, which did diſquiet my ſpirit within mee, not ſuffering my ſoule to take any reſt.

Guzmans *trickes being a Page.*

Guzman *hath a licoriſh tooth.*

a *The Spaniſh word is* Columbrár. *To diſcerne a thing a farre off, which can hardly be perceiued what it is. It ſeemeth to be borrowed from the Latine word* Collimare. Quod proprium eſt oculorum, cùm eos in angulum retorquentes, obliquè aliquid aſpicimus, quemadmodũ Sagittarij ſolent, cùm aliquid ſibi addictum deſignant.

b *A Peare of a delicate taſte, brought from the City of* Bergamo *in* Italy, *whence it hath the name.*

c *A garden of great both circuit and pleaſure, full of all ſorts of fruits, ſome few Leagues from* Madrid; *it is the Kings garden.*

d *A kinde of fruit growing on the ground like a Melon. Alſo they are called* Amoris poma, *Loue-Apples, becauſe they prouoke a man to Luſt.* Vid Couarru. Ver. Berengena.

e *A kinde of dryed Peaches, which ſteeped ſome foure & twenty houres in Wine, are good meat.*

As often as he made any Colation, or did eate any of theſe thinges, he gaue me the Key, himſelfe ſtanding by, while I tooke them out, never truſting me with them alone by my ſelfe.

This diſtruſt of his, begot anger with me; and this anger, a deſire of revenge. This (though I were broad awake) did I ſtill dreame on. I thought with my ſelfe (God forgiue me for it) how I might poſſibly come to haue a fling at this Cheſt, and open this Myne, which was more precious vnto me, then all the gold in the *Indies*.

I told you already, that the Cheſt was a very great one, being to my ſeeming two yards and a halfe in length, one in depth, and another in breadth: it was as white (if not more) then any Paper; the Barres and all the reſt of the Iron-worke about it, as ſmall as your fineſt threads of Cambricke, curiouſly wrought, ſmooth and neatly poliſhed, ſtrengthned with good ſtrong plates at the corners, ſet with ſtuds very handſomely; the Locke ſtood in the midſt, there being but one Key to open to this ſweet Paradiſe, and that was in my Lords cuſtodie. If thou know'ſt what it is to ſteale; or haſt ever heard tell of it; or would'ſt faine learne how to rob a Cheſt, and to take what thou wilt out of it, without either falſifying of a Key, ripping open of a Locke, taking off the Hinges, or breaking vp the Boards; Liſten but to mee, and I will tell thee how it may be done.

When it was my turne to waite, and that there were any Viſits, or other neceſſarie buſineſſes at home, whoſe preſent being in action, might promiſe me ſecuritie; I had certaine Iron tooles in a readineſſe, which I had prepared of purpoſe, with the helpe whereof I did by little and little heaue vp the lid of the Cheſt, till I could thruſt in a pretty little wedge of wood, and then heaving it vp a little more, I did put in a round ſticke, about the bigneſſe of the head of a reaſonable good big Hammer, and this I went wreſting in by degrees, turning and winding it faire and ſoftly towards the locke, wherevnto, the neerer and neerer ſtill that it grew, the more and the more did it ſtill heaue vp my corner, ſo that being (as I was) but a Youth, and having a ſlender hand, and a ſmall arme, I tooke out ſuch Sweet-meats, as I had moſt minde vnto, wherewith I fil'd my pockets as full as ever I could ſtuffe them. But when I could not reach now and then to thoſe that were farther off, that I might meet at laſt with this their contumacie and rebellion, I did clap vpon the end of a Cane, or ſome little ſticke, two Pinn's, one having a ſharpe point, and the other made crooked like a hooke, and by the helpe of theſe two, I brought them to their due obedience.

Guzman ſteales his Lords Sweet-meates.

And thus I became Lord and Maſter of whatſoever vvas vvithin the Cheſt, without the helpe of any key. In which theft, I carried my ſelfe ſo cunningly, that though I had ſtolne much, yet there vvas nothing found to be miſſing. At laſt I lighted vpon a *Melacotone* of *Caſtile*, vvhich being as faire, and as goodly a one (for it's greatneſſe) as ever I ſaw in all my life, and gilded all over, my appetite was much provoked therewith, it ſeeming to be one intire piece of Gold, when I firſt taſted it: the reliſh vvhereof (me thinkes) remaineth yet ſtill in my mouth; me thought I never taſted any thing better, nor had I ever ſeene the like before.

Now, becauſe this was a knowne Piece, when it was once diſcovered, that this curioſitie vvas vvanting, there vvas preſently a generall ſuſpition conceived; but not any the leaſt thought or jealouſie, that it had beene taken out ſo, as indeed it was, but was rather imagined, that it vvas done by ſome counterfeit key. And this did much trouble my Lord the Cardinall, that he ſhould haue any in his houſe, that ſhould dare to falſifie his locks, eſpecially in ſo private and ſecret a roome as this was, which he reſerved for his owne vſe. Wherevpon he forthwith called vnto him his principall ſervants, to the end that he might ſearch out the truth of this buſineſſe. But as good lucke would-

haue, it fell out ſo happily, that all that I had ſtolne thence, was downe my throat, and thorowly digeſted, not any the leaſt remembrance thereof remaining any more in my poſſeſſion. Now my Lord had to his Steward a melancholy Chaplaine, a fellow of an ill concoction, who wiſht my Lord, that all his ſervants ſhould be call'd together, and afterwards haue them ſhut vp in one chamber, where they ſhould be thorowly examined, one by one, to ſee what could be got out of them, and that their chambers likewiſe be ſearcht; for ſuch a piece of worke as this could not proceed from any man of reaſon, but from the lickoriſh mouth of ſome of his Pages, or ſome other his younger boyes about the houſe, which had a ſweet tooth in their head.

Well, we were all lockt vp cloſe, like birds in a cage, but to no end and purpoſe in the world; for they found vs to be all true (a) blades, not one falſe one amongſt vs all, but according to the right marke, juſt and even to a hayre. This ſtorme was over-paſt with vs, but not my Lords care; For, I can aſſure you, our Maſter was wonderfull deſirous to come to the true knowledge hereof; And by reaſon of the great ſtirre that was made about it, I did refraine for ſome few daies, till this buſineſſe might be over-blowne, and that the matter was in a manner quite forgotten, *y hunieſſe otro aſno verda*; And that I might haue ſome faire occaſion to haue another fling at them.

(a) In Spaine, *all your Sword-blades, are of one length, otherwiſe they be held vnlawfull, and are forfeited to the Iuſtice. Proverbe.*

Well, I durſt not for a prettie while after put my hand to the Cheſt, nor once offer to caſt ſo much as an eye towards it. But that crookedneſſe, which a tree once taketh in it's tender growth, the bigger it growes, the crookeder it is, waxing ſtill worſe and worſe; And therefore thoſe knauiſh trickes, which I had learned in my youth, were ſo deepely imprinted in me, that they could not be blotted out. So that I was as well able to liue without them, as without drawing ayre, and fetching of my breath: Eſpecially in thoſe things, wherevnto I had beene accuſtomed from a childe; for I had beene long practiſed in them, and they pleaſ'd me paſſing well, and I tooke ſuch delight and pleaſure in them, as in nothing more.

In a word, I muſt vp into the Saddle againe, though it coſt me another fall. I could not chooſe but goe viſit my ſweet friends, to ſee how they did; I got me againe to my old haunt, to ſee what good game I could finde.

One day then amongſt the reſt, when my Maſter was at play, I thought with my ſelfe, that my maſter could not (would he never ſo faine ſhift them off) but keepe thoſe Cardinalls companie, that were come in kindneſſe to ſee him. This Cheſt ſtood in a by-roome, within his bed-Chamber, much after the manner of a Cloſet.

Now, I had no ſooner truſt vp my doublet, and tuckt vp the ſleeue of my ſhirt, and thruſt in mine armes as farre as I could reach, but my Lord had liſt to make water. Wherevpon he roſe vp, and came into his Chamber, and not finding any of his Pages there, he went and tooke the Vrinall himſelfe, which ſtood at his beds head, and whileſt he was making water, it was my ill hap to heare him: which ſudden and vnexpected accident did ſo ſtartle mee, and affright me, that going about to get out mine arme quickly (that I might not be taken in the manner) making (as it ſeemed) more haſte then good ſpeed, my round Rouler fell tumbling on the floore, the Cheſt, that preſently ſhuts it ſelfe vpon me, while mine arme like a Sparrow in a Pit-fall, or a Mouſe in a Trap, is taken priſoner betwixt the locke and the lid, where it was held too faſt to get forth in haſte. At the noyſe of the fall, my Lord askt, Who's there? I could doe no leſſe then make anſwere to his call, but the Devill a foot that I could ſtirre to come forth vnto him. Therevpon hee comes in, finding mee vpon my knees, ſtealing the Hony-combes out of his Hiue. He demanded of me, what I made there? I confeſt the whole matter how it was, and without any more adoe (for I ſaw there was no fence for it) I told him the whole truth of the buſineſſe. But when he ſaw how prettily I vvas taken, the more he look't

vpon

vpon me, the more desire he had to laugh; and to make his mirth the fuller, he call'd to those, that were in the next roome at play, that they likewise might come and see, how the bird hung by the wing, and could not get loose. When they saw how I was caught, they all fell a laughing, as though their hearts would haue burst for want of breath; yet had they so much left at last, as to intreat his Lordship, that this fault might be forgiven me, as being the first that I had offended him in; and the rather, for that it is given to all Youth, to haue a likorish tooth. My Lord stood off, and would by no meanes be brought to yeeld; no intreatie would serue the turne, I must be whipt, there was no remedie, but I must be brought to the blocke.

Well, when they saw they could not procure my pardon, then they grew to a new Consultation, touching the number of the stripes; whereon they were so long a deviſing, as if it had beene a thing contained in the Decretalls, or some Pontificall Act, that they had seriously sate on. In the end, the number concluded on in this Conclaue of Cardinalls, was twelue, a full doozen I was to haue, neither more nor lesse. And the care of this payment was committed to Sir *Nicholas*, my Lords Secretary, my mortall enemie, who presently carried me away to his Chamber, and layd them on so soundly, and with so good a will, that for a fortnight after I was not able to sit vpon my breech; but hee did not goe so cleare away with this businesse as he thought he should, for it was not long e're I did cry quittance with him, and returned this payment seven-fold into his owne bosome; so that he had no great cause, by that time I had done with him, to brag of his bargaine. And that I may not delay you any longer, this tricke anon after I put vpon him.

My gentleman was much troubled with (*a*) *Mosquitos*, which did so persecute him, that he could not sleepe for them, they did so disquiet and torment him; All *Rome* did swarme with them, and in our house we had reasonable good store.

Wherevpon, (hearing him complaine much of them, and how hee was bitten and vexed by them) I told him I would giue him a remedy, which we did vse in *Spaine*, wherewithall to destroy this troublesome Vermine. Hee thankt me for it, and intreated me very earnestly, that I would doe him the kindnesse to giue it him. I told him, that he should get him a good bundle of (*b*) *Petroselinum*, and having steept it well in good Wine-Vineger, hee should put it at his beds head, to the smell whereof all the *Mosquitos* would come; wherevpon, as soone as ever they lighted, they would presently fall downe dead. He beleeved me, and presently puts it in practice. But when he was gone to bed, and had laid himselfe downe to sleepe, such a swarme of these buzzing busie Flyes came flying about his eares all the night long, and did so plague and torment him, as if they had pull'd out his eyes with Pincers, and held him by the nose with corne-tongs, as Saint *Dunstan* did the Devill.

Whil'st they were thus nibbling on his nose, eyes, and all the other parts of his face; he bestow'd a thousand buffets on his cheekes, thinking with those smart claps to kill these angry creatures; and perswading himselfe that they would die at last, when they lighted vpon the receipt, that was prepared for them, he past away the time as well as he could vntill the morning.

But the next night after (because this remedy had not drawne only those of the house thither; but all the rest of the *Mosquitos*, that were bordering there-about) they did so be-peps him, that not only his face was most vilely dis-figured therewith, but all the rest of the parts of his body, wherevnto they were able to reach, (for some they could not come at for the cloathes,) were taken in that excessiue manner, so be-pimpled, and so be-spotted, that hee was forced to forsake his lodging, and to get him gone with all the speed he could.

(*a*) Lat. Culex. *A Gnat, which the Spaniards call by the name of Mosquito. They hummo more, and sting, and bite worse in that Country, then here with vs, leaving knobs and bunches in the face.*

(*b*) *The Spanish word is*, Peregil del nombre. Lat. Petroselinum. Apio minudo, que se cria entre las penas; Deste se haze la sal, sa, que llamamos, Peregil. y se echa en los guisados, y en las ensaladas. *It is taken diuersly, sometimes for Parsley, sometimes for Sumlage, and sometimes for Sampire.* Guzman enters quaintance with the Secretary.

The Secretary was madded at the matter, and could haue found in his heart to haue kill'd me.

But my Lord, when hee look't vpon this ill-favour'd faced knaue, and ſaw that hee ſeemed ſo like a Leper (for he had not one free place about him, but like a Leopard ſpotted all over) and that I durſt not appeare for feare, but playd leaſt in ſight, he was ready to burſt himſelfe with laughing, when hee heard that I had put this jeſt vpon him.

Wherevpon, commanding me to be called in, when I came, he askt mee, why I had offered the Secretarie ſo great an affront, and had thus playd the wagge with him?

Whereunto I anſwered; Your Lordſhip may be pleaſed to remember that you commanded him to giue me a doozen laſhes about the buſineſſe of the Sweet-meats. His Commiſſion reach't no farther. But I remember very well, how hee then vſ'd mee. For what he gaue me in groſſe, I told out by retayle, one by one, as a matter much importing my *poſteriors*. Beſides, I know it was not your Lordſhips pleaſure (as a thing contrary to your milde and gentle diſpoſition) that they ſhould be the ſtripes of death: but ſuch as my tender yeares were able to beare. But *el Domine Nicolao*, my Worſhipfull good friend Sir *Nicholas*, that he might not be taxed for a bad pay-maſter, gaue me twenty good ſound laſhes, the laſt being more cruell then the firſt. And ſo having exceeded not onely his Commiſsion, but common humanitie, I thought I had juſt cauſe to crie quittance with him: And thus as you ſee (whereat I hope your Lordſhip will not be offended) I haue revenged the Wheales on my breech, by returning them on his face. He was the man that ſtung me, and I got others to ſting him. And I hope, my Lord, this is but one for another. Onely the difference is, that he did proſecute this ſute againſt me in his owne perſon, and I againſt him by my Attourney.

Guzman baniſhed the Cardinalls Chamber.

This was paſt over as a jeſt, and I heard no more of it. And for that, by reaſon of my former bold attempt, I was not onely beaten, but baniſhed from the ſervice of his Lordſhips Chamber; I waited in the meane while (during this his diſpleaſure) vpon his Lordſhips Chamberlaine.

CHAPTER VIII.

Guzman de Alfarache *revenges a tricke which the Secretarie had put vpon the Chamberlayne, whom he then attended. He tells a tale of Shame and Feare; What it is, and how painted forth. Hee is receiued againe into the Cardinalls ſervice. And how finely he cozened him of a Barrell of Conſerues.*

MY new Maſter was a merry pleaſant Gentleman, without any gall or malice in the world, ſet all vpon ſport and good fellowſhip, there was no harme in him in the earth, no fraud, no deceit; but was a man of the old making, an honeſt true *Troiane*, without any tricks or ligges, juſt in his dealings, and as plaine as any Pack-ſtaffe. I knew no fault in him, vnleſſe it were a little choller; he was ſome-what too touchy, and would (which was the tenderneſſe of his nature) quickly be tinded. Wherevnto I may adde his over-jealous and ſuſpicious nature, which would make him many times to imagine things to be otherwiſe then they were meant, it being the condition of ſuch diſpoſitions to interpret all things to the worſt. Quit him of theſe two qualities, (which were not ouer-much inherent in him) and there was not a fairer condition'd man to converſe withall; if you would haue ſought a whole Countrey, you could not haue met with his fellow.

This

This *Bonus Socius* had but poore Parents, to whom he dayly ſent his owne allowance, and now and then he would either dine or ſup with them, as he did the night before that hapned vnto him, which you ſhall heare by and by.

What with his drinking of water, and eating certaine *Tasaritas* (which is a kinde of meat made of Paſte, cut out into ſlices, boyled with the fat of Birds, and ſeaſoned with Pepper) he came not home halfe well, and complaining of the crazineſſe of his ſtomake, he went directly to his Chamber, and got him forthwith to bed.

Now his Lord, miſsing him at ſupper, asked for him: They told him how it was with him. He ſent one of his Gentlemen to viſit him, and to bring him word how he did.

To which meſſage hee made anſwere, that he did not finde himſelfe well, but he hop'd in God, he ſhould be well the next morning, being much comforted that his Lordſhip had been pleaſed ſo farre forth to grace his ſervant, as to ſend vnto him, to know how hee did, for which favour hee reſted much bound vnto his Lordſhip, returning the Meſſenger, with all humble thankes, and the beſt remembrance of his loue and ſervice.

Thus this matter paſſed for the preſent. The morrow after I went to the houſe of his Parents, with ſome proviſion for their dinner, one of my fellowes remaining with him, who was bruſhing of his cloathes againſt his Maſter ſhould riſe.

The jeſt that the Secretary put vpon Guzman's *Maſter.*

He, and the Secretary vſ'd to breake many jeſts on vpon another, and many merry paſſages paſt betweene them; And becauſe they were harmeleſſe, and without any prejudice to either, my Lord was ſo farre from miſliking them, that he tooke much delight and pleaſure in them.

The Secretarie, as ſoone as he was vp and ready, went towards his Chamber, and meeting with my fellow, who was there ready at hand, waiting when he ſhould be call'd for, askt him; How his Maſter did? He made anſwere, That his Maſter was newly falne aſleepe, and that he had not taken one houres reſt all that night, but that now (God be thanked) hee ſlept ſoundly, and well hoped that the worſt was paſt.

It is well (ſaid the Secretarie) and ſeeing it is ſo, its pitie to wake him; but in the meane while, till he be ready to riſe, (which I preſume will not be with the ſooneſt) I prethee let me intreat thee to goe a little way with a ſervant of mine, to helpe him to bring home a certain commodity for me, which he cannot well doe alone, and make all the haſte I pray that you can, for I will tarry heere till you come, leſt your Maſter might chance to wake and call for you. The young Lad did as he deſired, and went his way.

Now the Secretary, taking hold on this occaſion, that his friend had that night ſupt abroad, and was not in his Lordſhips preſence, (as he was wont to be) that he might haue him in his eye, as he ſate at ſupper: deviſed with himſelfe how he might put ſome pretty jeſt vpon him: and at laſt the conception of his braine, brought forth this merry Babe. He dreſſes me a pretty Youth in womans apparell, attired in the habit of a Curtizan, and places this Boy ſoftly and ſecretly behinde his bed. Now this honeſt man was all this while faſt aſleepe, and the entrance was free and open vnto him, whileſt the Secretarie, for the more ſurety, went in firſt himſelfe without being heard; and afterwards taking this Youth by the hand, led him ſoftly along, and there he hid himſelfe cloſe behinde the bed, as he had beene before inſtructed, and there he remained quiet, not ſo much as offering once to ſtirre.

This being done, the Secretarie went forth, and going to ſeeke out his Lord, he found him a walking, ſaying of ſome prayers to himſelfe, as his manner was; who as ſoone as he ſaw him, his Lordſhip demanded of him, how the Chamberlaine did? Who told him; I enquired thereof but now, and his ſervant told me, that he hath not beene well all this night; And I doe not much marvell

vell at it; for being with him laſt night, before I went to bed to ſee how hee did, I talkt vnto him, but me thought he anſwered me with an ill will. What ayles him, I know not. There is ſomething in it more then ordinarie, what ever it be; farther I cannot informe your Lordſhip.

The Cardinall (who was charitie it ſelfe) preſently therevpon made haſte to viſit him. And when he had ſet himſelfe downe by him, cloſe to his beds head, the Youth comes me out from behinde the Hangings of the bed, and cryes out; Woe is me, moſt wretched and vnfortunate Woman; What ſhall I doe? Pardon me (good Sir) for I muſt be gone, for it is late, and I am afraid my husband will miſſe me. And with that, ſhe went her way, paſsing through the midſt of all the Cardinals ſervants, attending there vpon his Lordſhip.

The Cardinall, who thought him to bee a Saint, began to bleſſe himſelfe, and was much amazed thereat. And the Chamberlaine, he on the other ſide, was as much aſtoniſhed, taking it to haue beene ſome Viſion, or ſtrange Apparition. He croſſes himſelfe, then cryes out, IESVS! The Divell, the Divell: and therewith lept out of his bed in his Shirt, running vp and downe the roome, as if he had beene out of his wits.

The Secretarie, and ſome other, that were privy therevnto, fell a ſmiling, and had much adoe to forbeare laughing out-right; whereby the Cardinall perceiv'd, that it was meerely a jeſt, and they did not ſticke to confeſſe as much, telling the whole truth of the matter, and how it was carried.

But the Chamberlaine could not ſtand ſtill, but ranne vp and downe from place to place, not knowing which way to turne himſelfe. And albeit they did all labour to quiet him, yet for all that they could doe, they could not in haſte bring him to himſelfe againe: but was much abaſhed, and mightily aſhamed of this ſcoffe and jeſt that was put vpon him; and the more, for that it was in the preſence of his Lord. But in the end (like a good Courtier) hee diſſembled it as well as hee could. And the Cardinall vvent away bleſsing himſelfe, and laughed heartily as he vvent along at this conceited merriment.

Now, by that time I was come backe, all this buſineſſe was over-paſt: But I was as ſenſible of it, as if they had given me ſo many ſtripes. And the Chamberlaine would with all his heart haue parted with the beſt eye in his head, to be fully revenged on him.

But when he ſaw, that I looked ſome-what ſad vpon the matter (himſelfe being likewiſe no leſſe heavy) he ſaid vnto me; What thinkeſt thou (*Guzmanillo*) of the wrong that theſe Villaines haue done me? To whom I made anſwere; They haue done well, Sir, and plaid their parts with you very finely, what vvould you more? But if they had vſ'd me ſo ſcurvily as they haue done you, I verily perſwade my ſelfe, that his *Holineſſe* ſhould not need to injoyne them any penance for this offence; nor would I leaue it to mine Heires in my laſt Will and Teſtament to repay this debt, but I would quit ſcores with them my ſelfe, and pay them home with advantage: And ere I had done with them, they ſhould very vvell put that in their eye, vvhich they ſhould get by the reckoning. They all knew me to bee a notable Wagge, and that I had an vnhappy vvit of mine ovvne for all kinde of knavery.

But why doe I ſpend the time in talke, vvhen my Lungs are ready to leape out at my throat, and ſwell vvith fullneſſe of breath, out of the deſire they haue to vent ſomething? But I kept my ſelfe aloofe, and was tender to touch vpon that ſtring, as being loth to adviſe and councell him vvhat to doe, not holding it lawfull for a Page to revenge the injuries of a graue Miniſter vpon another that is his equall, *Ande cada oueja con ſu pareja*. Like with like doth well. For it is no good jeſting with a mans betters. One was enough for me, which might the better be borne withall, becauſe it was in *cauſa propria*; I was toucht in mine owne perſon, and therefore had the more reaſon to right my ſelfe.

proverb. Let every man meddle with his match.

But

But in this particular, why ſhould I wilfully intangle my ſelfe in that net, whence I ſhould not afterwards bee able to eſcape; with leſſe then the laying on of many ſound laſhes; or to come forth with mine eares foure fingers longer when they went in; or with the loſſe of the haire of my head? I therefore held my peace, and kept me quiet. But I, who was naturally of a hot and boyling ſpirit, being often importuned by him, hee making me great offers and large promiſes, giving me beſides to vnderſtand, that the Cardinall ſhould know, that it was a childe of mine owne begetting, and the workemanſhip of mine owne hands, in defence of him who was then my Maſter, I reſolued with my ſelfe to enter into the Action, and to vndertake this buſineſſe in his behalfe, and to be the ſole Plotter and contriver thereof my ſelfe. And ſo I let ſome few dayes paſſe over, waiting for ſome faire occaſion that might giue warmth for the hatching of this bird.

When I had found (as I thought) a fit time, and that the Ordinary Poſt of *Spaine* was to depart, the Secretary was very buſie about his diſpatches, which required haſte. I bought me then a little Roſin, Frankincenſe, and Maſticke, I pounded it, and ſifted it all together, till I had wrought it fine, and as ſmall as any Meale. The Secretaries ſervant was that morning buſied about his Maſters cloathes, bruſhing and making of them cleane with all the ſpeed he could. To him goe I, telling him; Doeſt thou heare (honeſt *Iacobo*) I am come to tell thee, that I haue a dainty piece of Bacon on the Spit, it is now ready, Bread I haue likewiſe provided, there is nothing wanting but Wine, if thou wilt finde that, thou ſhalt ſhare with mee; if not, pardon me, for I ſhall ſeeke out one that will. He quickly replyde: No, (good *Guzman*) no, doe not ſo, for I will giue thee Wine to it. Goe to then (quoth I) ſtay thou here; for I will preſently be with both it, and thee.

Guzmans jeſt that he put vpon the Secretary, to revenge his Maſters quarrell.

Whileſt that he went to the (a) *Diſpenſe* for wine, I tooke forth my paper of Powders, and turning the inſide of the Breeches outward, I beſprinkled them with a little wine, which I carried about me in a little round glaſſe Viall, and threw good ſtore of theſe my prepared Powders vpon them: which when I had done according to my minde, I turned the Breeches againe, putting them juſt in the ſame order they were in, when the Youth left them. He returned anon after with a good Iarre of Wine, and before he could ſpeake vnto me, his Maſter call'd for him to come in, and bring him his cloathes, for he would riſe. He left the Wine with me, and I him within. Where they were both ſo buſie about their Papers, that it was noone before they had diſpatch't, & were ready to come forth. The Secretary was a very hayrie man of his body; & the Powders began to play their part, & to worke their effect. The Dog-dayes were then come in, and with the extremitie of thoſe heates, they wrought ſo vpon his body, that from the girdle downewards he was as if it had beene a Seare-cloath of Pitch, which clung ſo cloſe vnto him, and vvas growne ſo ſtiffe withall, that he was terribly tormented therewith, for every haire did giue him ſuch a twinge when he did but moue, or when with ſome ſudden reach they did rend and vnroot themſelues from the fleſh, that the tearing of every ſeverall haire ſeemed vnto him, the plucking out of ſo many eyes out of his head.

(a) Deſpenſa. El lugar, donde ſe ponen, las coſas, que ſe traen para comer, y beuer. *Such places properly belong only to Embaſſadours of Princes, or to great Dukes, and not to ordinary perſons.*

When he ſaw in what caſe he was, he began to call his people about him, to know the cauſe thereof, but none of them could tell, nor were able to anſwer to that account, till that the Chamberlaine came in, and told him; Sir, this is *Quid pro quo*; one for another; *Qui moccat moccabitur*. Harme watch, harme catch.

This, ſir, is call'd, The beating of the Fencer out of his Schoole. You ſee for all your cunning, you may take a knocke as well as another man. It is but blow for blow; you haue giuen me one Venew, and I haue given you another. And let vs ſhake hands and be friends.

Well

Well, (and to be briefe) the jeſt ended in this, that they were faine to get a paire of Sizars, and goe cutting haire after haire, which was worke enough for two of his ſervants, and yet were forced in the end to vnrip his Breeches, that they might come the better to clip away the haires.

This Ieſt tooke better then the former, becauſe it was a little tarter then the other, and ſtucke cloſer vnto him. By vertue of this, I received the confirmation of my Knaverie, and was taken ever after for the ſame man I was; So that all did ſeeke to flye from my jeſts, as they would flye from the *Plague*.

Guzman received againe into the Cardinals ſervice.

Two monthes of my baniſhment were now paſt and gone. After which expiration of time, I returned againe to my former Office; but with the ſame little Modeſtie, and feare of doing evill, as before. You may haply haue heard tell of that tale, when (*Modeſtie*, the *Ayre* and the *Water* tooke leaue one of another. Who at their parting, asking where they ſhould meet againe and ſee each other: the *Ayre* ſaid, that they ſhould finde her on the tops of Hills; The *Water*, that they ſhould be ſure of her, in the bowels of the Earth. But *Modeſty*, that ſhe being once gone from them, it was impoſsible to meet with her any more. I haue loſt her, ſhe is quite gone from me, and without any hope of ever returning. But it makes no matter. *A quien le falta, la Villa es ſuya*, Where ſhe is away, the Towne is ours.

A Fable touching Modeſtie.

Proverb.

Who would not haue beene feared with thoſe former proceedings, and fully reſolved with himſelfe never to doe the like againe? But what my amendment was, I ſhall deliver vnto you, and what hapned vnto mee thereupon. I had certaine ſweet guts in my belly, and ſo made and accuſtomed therevnto, that thoſe dayes that I miſt of my ſweet-meates, was a taking of water from the ſicke, or Wine from a Drunkard. I would haue ventured the breaking of my necke from the top of (*a*) *Santo Angelo*, rather then I would not downe to ſteale them, if they were to be had vpon the face of the earth. And hence is it; *Que quien teme la muerte, no goza la vida.* That he that feares Death doth not injoy his life. If feare would haue made me turne coward, I had never taſted that ſo ſweet a life. I caſt vp my account, and made this reckoning with my ſelfe; Suppoſe they ſhould take me againe with the like? What can they doe vnto me? or what hurt can come of it? I haue alwaies obſerved, that Feare is painted feeble, leane-viſag'd, ſtaring-hair'd, pale-coloured, ſad-countenanced, heavy, melancholy, naked, fearefull, and not daring either to ſay, or doe that, which it faine vvould, and moſt of all deſireth.

(*a*) *A Caſtle in* Rome.

Proverb.

Feare how painted: And what manner of thing it is?

Feare is a ſervill Act, only proper vnto ſlaues; it enterpriſeth nothing; nor doth any thing ſucceed well, that it vndertaketh; and is like vnto a cowardly curre, which knoweth better to barke then to bite. Feare is the ſcules gang-man; and it is but fooliſhneſſe to feare that, which cannot bee avoyded.

In a word, it was impoſsible for me (ſuch was my condition) to abſtaine from being in Action; I was not able to containe my ſelfe. Happen what may happen; Come what will come; all was one to me. I ſaid to my ſelfe; *Audaces fortuna juvat*; Fortune befriends braue ſpirits. Let the worſt come to the worſt; fall backe, or fall edge, I am ſure to pay for it only in my perſon, and not in my goods, either moueable, or vnmoueable; for it was not Gods will, that I ſhould haue any land of mine owne, whereon to ſettle my ſelfe, and make my certaine abode; nor any *Se-mouentes*, ſuch things as could moue of themſelues, and keepe me company, whither-ſoever I ſhould goe. My Lord was a great lover of your moyſt Suckets, and ſuch liquid Conſerues, as they vſe to bring from the *Canaries* in little Barrells, or from the Ilands of the *Terçeras*; Which Barrels, when they were emptie, were throwne aſide, and no reckoning made of them, lying here and there in every corner as good for nothing:

nothing. I had got mee one of theſe, containing about halfe an [a] *Arroba*, which ſeru'd mee in ſtead of a Trunke, wherein I kept my Cardes, my Dice, Garters, Points, Cuffes, Handkerchiefes, and other things befitting a poore Page.

The Cardinall (as hee was ſitting one day at dinner,) commanded his Steward, that hee ſhould goe amongſt the Merchants, and buy him ſome three or foure [b] *Quintals*, of thoſe that were the neweſt and the freſheſt, and but lately brought in. When I heard him ſay ſo, I began preſently to caſt about with my ſelfe, how I might make my ſelfe Maſter of one of theſe Barrels. The Cloth was taken away, the Cardinall riſen, all gone to dinner: and vvhileſt they were buſie at their victuals, I got mee into my Chamber, and in the twinkling of an eye, before you could well ſay This, I clapt mee vvithin that Barrell which I had, as many old rags, duſt, gravell, or whatſoever other traſh came firſt to hand, till I had fill'd it brim-full, and thruſt it downe as hard as I could for my life to make it lye the cloſer. This done, on went the head then the hoopes, making all faſt and ſure, ſo that it was now as handſomely fitted vp as heart could vviſh, and no man that ſhould haue ſeene it, but vvould haue ſworne (it vvas ſo artificially handled) that it had beene newly brought from the Indies ſtuft with roots of *Tragopagum*, or Goates beard, (as ſome call it) which is good againſt poyſon.

When I had trimm'd it vp, and made it feat and fit, I let it alone, having ſtill an eye, and ſtanding as Sentinell, to watch vvhat ſucceſſe this project of mine might take.

Now, (as good lucke would haue it) behold, about the Evening I did deſcry two [d] *Azemilas* which came along laden with Conſerues, who were no ſooner entred within doores, but they vvere eaſed preſently of their burthen. The Steward commanded the Pages to carry them into the Cardinalls lodgings.

I had now aſight of Fortunes foretop, and boldly told her, You ſhall not goe from mee, till I haue taken hold of your haire. And as I was ſpeaking, I tooke one of the Barrels and layd it vpon one of my ſhoulders, as the reſt of my fellowes did, but lagging a little behinde, giueing them leaue to goe before mee: as ſoone as I was come right over againſt mine owne Chamber doore, I ſuddenly ſlipt in, when I ſaw the coaſt was cleare, and tooke out that other which I bare to my Lords lodging; and ſo I made my three returnes, giuing a good account of all my lading.

When the laſt was come vp, I ſtood very ſoberly in the Hall, vvhere my Lord Cardinall was, who ſayd vnto mee: What thinke you of this fruit (*Guzmanillo?*) you cannot put in your hand here, your Wedges will not ſerue your turne. I reply'd to that point, and told him; My good Lord; *Donde no valen cunnas, aprouechan vnnas.* Where the Wedge nought prevailes, vvee muſt make vſe of our nailes; if one thing will not doe the deed, another muſt. And though mine arme cannot get in, my hand may, and that's enough for mee, I will deſire no more.

Very good Sir (ſayd my Lord) but as they are now, neither your arme, nor your hand will ſtand you in ſtead.

There lyes the skill, quoth I to my Lord; for if they were otherwiſe eaſie to be opened, I would not care a button for them, there is no pleaſure in ſuch a purchaſſe. In matters of difficulty, your good wits come to their tryall, which onely ſhew themſelues in things of great importance, and not in driving a nayle into the wall, or in pulling on of a paire of ſhooes, things eaſie to be done, and which naturally offer themſelues vnto vs at the firſt ſight.

Sayſt thou mee ſo (quoth my Lord?) well, I will once ſet your wits a vvorking. If within theſe eight dayes you ſhall ſhew your ſelfe ſo nimble witted, as to ſteale one of theſe from mee, I will beſtow it on thee for thy labour, and thou

[a] Arroba, *is five and twenty pound weight. It is an Arabicke word,* Errubun, *which is a fourth part; of the Verbe* Rebbea, *To part into foure parts. And according to this, an* Arroba *muſt be in weight, the fourth part of a hundred. It hath it's roote from the Heb.* Rubbaat, Quadrum vel quarta pars. In liquidis, eſt apud Hiſpanos, octo açumbres. 1. 8. anophororum

[b] Quintal, *A hundred pound weight.* Centipondium.

[c] *The Spaniſh word is,* Eſcorzonera. *This Herbe the Latines call* Riperina. *Of this you may reade at large in* Couarruuias. *Verbe* Eſcorzonera. Guzman *plots to play the thiefe. his crafty and cunning carriage.*

[d] Mulo Grande, y de hueſo para litera, ò carga de repueſto Couar. P. 108.

thou ſhalt haue another beſides into the bargaine: but if thou ſhalt faile therein, thou ſhalt then binde thy ſelfe to receiue ſuch puniſhment, as ſhall be agreed vpon.

My Lord, ſayd I; eight dayes? why, eight dayes is a mans life; it is time inough of conſcience. The buſineſſe will be too long a doing; and it may be, by putting it off to ſo large a time, wee may either grow cold in the bargaine, or the memory of it dye, and be no more thought vpon.

I accept the favour offered me by your Lordſhip, and if to morrow by this time I ſhall not finiſh this buſineſſe, I ſhall willingly reſigne vp my ſelfe into the Secretaries hands, to be puniſhed at his diſcretion; becauſe I aſſure my ſelfe, that he would willingly haue the tawing of mee, that hee might revenge himſelfe vpon mee for the late paſſage that I put vpon him to his great griefe: for the ſent of the pitch is not yet gone from him, nor his haires come againe.

My Lord laught, and ſo did they that were about him. And thus the bargaine was driven betweene vs for the next day following. But becauſe I vvas already on the fore-hand, and vvas vvell aſſured of the buſineſſe, I could, if I would haue preſently cleared my ſelfe of this debt, but I vvas willing to let the bond runne on, till the time it was due.

The boord was covered, and my Lord was now ſet downe to dinner, feeding on ſuch things at firſt, which I brought in, to procure him the better appetite to his meate; and looking mee in the face, hee ſmilingly ſayd vnto mee, *Guzmanillo*, it is but a little now to night; That come, your time is paſt What will you giue me now to be freed of your bargain? Maſter *Nicolao* hath rods in piſſe for you, and is provided for your payment. And me thinks that he is plotting how he may be revenged of thee, and thou, how thou mayſt ſatisfie thy ſelfe vpon him. If I might adviſe, my counſell ſhould be, that hee ſhould not deale with thee, not ſo much for thy ſake as his owne. Wherevnto I anſwered; I am ſure (my Lord) that my puniſhment is in the Secretaries hand: But I am not yet ſure that the Conſerues are in mine. Yet if I had ſtore of money to ſet vpon this caſt, and had ought to loſe more then the pooreneſſe of my perſon, I would venture it all for this once, becauſe I am very confident of my Chance.

Thus dinner paſt on till the laſt courſe was almoſt ended, and ready to be taken away; at which time, I went to the Court-cupboord, and taking from thence a Silver-plate, I fill'd it with the Conſerues of that barrell which I had ſtolne, and therewith I came to the Table, and ſet them down before his Lordſhip.

When my Lord ſaw, what I had brought him, he bleſt himſelfe, and began to wonder much at the matter, for hee himſelfe had the barrels in his owne cuſtodie, they vvere within his owne lodgings, and there hee kept them (as hee thought) ſafe inough. He vvould truſt no body with them, in regard of the bargaine that vvas driven betweene vs: Hee kept the key himſelfe; hee bore it alwayes about him. At laſt hee cals the Chamberlaine vnto him, and vvils him to goe in, & to count the Barrels, and to ſee if any of them vvere opened, or ill-conditioned.

He vvent in, and finding them both in number and place, to be juſt the ſame as at their firſt putting in, hee came forth againe, and told his Lordſhip the tale vvas vvhole and intire, not a barrell that vvas miſſing, and that they vvere ſound and vvell-conditioned, and not the leaſt ſuſpition to be had (for ought that hee could perceiue) amongſt them all, no not ſo much as the leaſt hayre of his head. Ah, ah, ah, ſaid my Lord, this tricke vvill not ſerue your turne; this is a very poore one. Thou vvould'ſt make vs beleeue, that thou haſt taken that out of one of the Barrels, vvhich thou haſt bought vvith thy money.

With that he turned himſelfe tovvards the Secretarie, and told him, *Domine Nicolao*, I aſſigne *Guzmanillo* over vnto you, to doe vvhat you liſt vvith him,

him, and to punish him as you think fit, for that hee hath lost his wager.

The Secretary made answere, May it please your Lordship to take the correction of him into your owne hands, and to dispose of him as you please; for I for my part will haue no more to doe with him, I will not come neere him, nor his shadow, I dare not; I haue had too much of him already: And if I should now tickle vpon a new score, and make him pay for the old and this together, I should get nothing by the reckoning; for I hold him to be of that vnhappy and dangerous, both wit and nature, that hee would in revenge convey the next time a nest of Hornets into my breeches, or some other venemous vermine that should either poyson mee, or sting me to death. And therefore if your Lordship put him over vnto mee, and leaue his punishment to my discretion, I freely absolue him thereof, and am willing to imbrace his friendship.

I haue not as yet (sayd I) offended in that degree, that I had neede of absolution. Where there is no matter to worke vpon, it is needlesse to seeke to introduce a forme. I am as good as my word, and haue performed what I promised; the wager is mine, I haue wonne it. And if this be not true that I speake, and that I make it not plainely to appeare vnto you, punish mee at your pleasure, I aske no fauour at your hands. *De que siruen las palabras, donde ay obras?* What neede words, where there are Workes? I say, and say it againe, and that confidently, that this Conserue is of that which was brought in yesterday; and not onely this, but a whole barrell thereof is now at this present whole and vntoucht in my chamber, saue this little that I haue set before his Lordship. *proverb.*

The Cardinall crost himselfe, and wondred how this should be. And vntill dinner was done, and the table taken away, hee did nothing else but blesse himselfe with both his hands. And being desirous to be certified of the truth thereof, hee rose vp, and went into his lodging to be an eye witnesse of it himselfe. Hee lookt vpon all the Barrels, whereon he had set certaine markes, he found them faithfull and true, the number full and just, the key in his owne custodie, and could not deuise how this should bee.

Herevpon hee did verily beleeue, that I had bought a barrell of the very same Conserues, as his were, and sayd vnto mee; *Guzmanillo*, doest not thou thy selfe know, that thou broughtest in thus many hither? count them now, and see if they be not right. I did so; And when I had done telling, I told him; My Lord, here is the full number. *Pero de lo contado, come el lobo.* But it is like the the Shepheards number of his sheepe; whereof, when hee hath cast vp his reckoning, hee shall finde that the Woolfe hath met with one of them by the way. I see they are well, but not all so well as they should be. And that you may see I tell you no lye, let that be brought hither which is in my Chamber, and let this be opened that stands there, and you shall finde that I haue changed the one for the other. *proverb.*

They opened it, whereby they discovered as well the truth, as the wit I had vsed therein. For the dust, the gravell, the old ragges, and the like trumperie which I had fill'd it withall, did manifest as much.

They remained all, as men amazed, not knowing what to thinke of it, nor being able for their liues, to imagine how this should be brought about. They did all aske mee the question, but I would not acquaint any of them with it: But presently besought his Lordship that he would be pleased to performe his promise with mee. Hee did so. So that I had that and one more, which were two in the whole.

And because they should know that I carried a Noble minde, as it was delivered to me with the one hand, so I gaue it with another to my fellow-Pages, who divided it amongst them. And howbeit my Lord was somewhat offended at the fineneſſe of my theft, yet hee did much more wonder at my libera-

litie, and thought the better of mee for this my free diſpoſition. He was much afrayd of theſe cunning and ſubtill trickes of mine, and queſtionleſſe vvould haue then put mee away, but that hee was ſo good and holy a man; and therefore conſidered with himſelfe; If I ſhould now caſt of this yong fellow, ſome great miſ-fortune vvill befall him, by reaſon of his miſ-demeanour. Theſe things that he hath done here in mine owne houſe, are but idle trickes of his youth, and I am ne're a whit the poorer for them. It is leſſe harme that hee ſhould hurt mee in a little, then through want, offend others in much. And out of this apprehenſion, hee did (the better to diſſemble what was paſt) make of this Vice a Vertue. And it is great wiſedome in any man, when a hurt may be healed, for to cure it, and to remedy thoſe things that may be remedied: if not, to diſſemble it the beſt he can. He made himſelfe merry with it: And as often as any Princes and great Lords came to viſit him, as occaſion was offered, hee would not ſticke to make report thereof vnto them.

CHAP. IX.

Guzman de Alfarache *treats of Charitie: Diſcourſeth of Maſters, kinde, and vnkinde: Telleth of another theft of Conſerues. His exerciſes, and diſtaſtes, being a Page. He recounteth the trickes hee vſed at* Primera. *That it is good to know play; but better not to vſe any gaming at all. And how for playing hee was put out of the Cardinals ſervice. And how proud ignorance is the cauſe of all evill.*

Charity and its diviſion.

THe Ordination of Charity (howbeit I haue pointed at it heretofore) had its firſt beginning from God. Next in order follows that of Fathers and Mothers, then of children, and after them of ſervants; who if they be good are more to be made of, and to be better beloued, then children that are bad. And becauſe my Lord had no children, hee did dearely loue thoſe that ſeru'd him, and vvas very tender over them; placing (next after God and his Image, which is the poore) all loue vpon them.

The poore are Gods own image. The fruits of Charity.

He was generally charitable towards all men; as being the firſt fruit of the Holy Ghoſt, and the firſt fire that inflameth mans ſoule. It is the prime good of all other goodneſſe, that flowes from our actions; it is the firſt beginning of a happy ending. It containes in it Faith and Hope; it is the way that leades to Heaven; it is the bond that binds God vnto Man; it is the worker of Maracles; it is the ſcourge of Pride; and the fountaine of Wiſedome.

My Lord did deſire ſo much my amendment, as if his owne had lyen vpon it. He ſought to oblige mee vnto him by loue, that hee might not affright mee with feare. And for to try, if hee could reduce mee to a vertuous courſe of life, he did (that hee might remoue from me all occaſion of longing) *regalar* mee at his owne Table, feeding mee from his owne Plate with all the choyſeſt dainties and delicacies, and with all manner of ſweete Meates: there was not the thing that hee did eate of, whereof I had not my ſhare, telling mee in gentle tearmes: *Guzmanillo*, I giue the this to be at truce vvith thee, in token of peace and amitie: Behold that I, as well as my Secretary, vvill hold no contention vvith thee. Content thy ſelfe with this morſell, whereby I acknowledge my ſelfe to be thy Vaſſall, beſtowing this vpon thee by way of Tribute.

Loving Maſters.

This would he ſmilingly vtter, and with a ſmiling countenance, without reſpect of whoſoever ſate at Table with him, were they never ſo great perſons, or of vvhat qualitie or condition ſoever. Hee vvas a marvailous kinde Gentleman, hee treated, and eſteemed his ſervant vvell, hee favoured, and

and lou'd them exceedingly, doing for them as farre as his abilitie would reach, ſo that all of them did loue him with their very heart and ſoule, and did doe him all true and faithfull ſervice. For without all doubt, the Maſter that reſpecteth his ſervants, is well ſerved by thoſe ſervants: and if he pay them well, they will deſerue their payment: but if he be loving and kinde withall, they adore him as a God. Whereas on the contrary, if a Maſter be proud, a bad Pay-maſter, & vnthankfull to his ſervants, he ſhall neither haue truth, nor loue with them. They neither ſerue him with feare, nor entertaine him with their loue. He is abhorred, hated, ſcorned, made a common by-word in the Market-place, in the ſtreets, in the Tribunalls, and every publike Aſſembly, diſcredited by all men, and defended by none.

Bad Maſters.

If Maſters did but know, how much it did import them, to haue good and honeſt ſervants, they would ſpare the meat out of their owne bellies, to beſtow it vpon them; for they are true riches indeed; and hee that hath a good ſervant hath a great Iewell. And it is impoſſible, that a ſervant ſhould be diligent, with that Maſter that is not loving vnto him.

Guzmans other theft of Conſerues, with the ſtory thereof.

There were brought to my Lord from *Genoa* certaine Boxes of Conſerues, very great and large, they were richly gilded, and curiouſly wrought vpon the top, as poſſibly could be deſired, they were freſh and faire to looke to, as being but newly finiſhed; which Boxes vpon the way had taken a little wet. When they were brought before him, it did me good to looke vpon them, & the rather, for that they were made and ſent him by a kinſ-woman of his, who did ordinarily vſe to ſend him ſuch kinde of dainties. I was not in the houſe when they came; and while I was lacking, they entred before my returne into a conſultation, what they ſhould doe with them, and how, and where they were beſt to drie them, that they might haue a ſafe conduct from my perſon, that I might not ſeaze vpon them: And the rather, for they muſt be forced to lay them abroad in the Sunne, which would haue runne ſome danger, if they had clapt them vp cloſe in that (a) *Vrne*, wherein *Iulius Cæſars* aſhes were put. Every one broached his opinion, but not one good one amongſt them all. My Lord himſelfe lighted vpon one, and ſaid; It matters not much, to ſtudie for a place, where to keepe them ſafe; if we giue the keeping of them to one, that will looke well vnto them, they will that way be ſafe, and no way elſe.

(a) *An Vrne is an earthen Pitcher, wherein the Romans incloſed as in a Coffin the Aſhes of the dead.*

They did all allow of my Lords reaſon; And as ſoone as I came in, his Lordſhip call'd me vnto him, and ſaid; *Guzmanillo*, what were wee beſt to doe with theſe Conſerues, which are come thus wet, that wee may preſerue them from being ſpoyl'd? The beſt courſe (my Lord) ſaid I, in my poore opinion, is to eate them preſently.

And durſt thou adventure (quoth he) to eate them all? I anſwered; It were no great matter ſo to doe, if a man had time enough. But I am not ſo great a glutton, that now at this preſent I dare to venture alone vpon ſo great and honorable a Muſter, as is here made before me.

My pleaſure then is (ſaid he) that thou looke vnto them, and keepe a true reckoning of them, laying them out every day abroad in the Sunne. And here is no evaſion for you, for they ſhall be delivered vnto you by tale, and by tale I will looke you ſhall returne them vnto mee. Here you ſee them layd open before you, and how faire and full they be; and if any harme come vnto them, or ought be miſſing, I ſhall eaſilie know where the fault lies, and call you to account for it.

I told him, that I was neither maſter of my ſelfe, nor them. I knew not what to doe in this caſe, I was not mine owne man; I had not power over my ſelfe; and that I was one of *Eue's* ſonnes; and that being put into ſuch a Paradiſe of Conſerues, the Serpent of the fleſh might tempt me to eate of this forbidden fruit.

His Lordſhip reply'd then againe, and told me; See (ſirrah) that you looke well to your charge; for I will expect, that you giue them me, as I giue them you: I muſt not haue a piece miſſing, neither in number nor in weight, qualitie for qualitie, quantity for quantity, all whole and ſound, or elſe you ſhall ſee what will come of it, and therefore I would wiſh you to looke well what you doe, and to vſe your beſt care.

I then made bold to tell him; The Plea (my Lord) that is betweene vs, depends not on this point; this is not the hinge, whereon it hangeth; For to returne them vnto you as they are, without finding any miſſing, or perceiving any hurt they haue taken, that is a very eaſie thing, I can doe that preſently. But it is another point (my Lord) that I ſtand vpon. What point I pray (ſay's my Lord?) I told him; I put my ſelfe into great perill; for I am privy to mine owne inclination and weakeneſſe, no man ſhould better know mine owne abilitie and ſtrength then my ſelfe, and therefore (to deale plainely with your Lordſhip) if you will haue me to comply with your Lordſhips command, if my life lay on it, I ſhall not be able to hold my hands, I muſt needs taſte of them, if not fill my belly.

My Lord marvelling much at me, Well (quoth he) ſeeing it will be no otherwiſe, I will for once make tryall how diſcreetly you will behaue your ſelfe; I ſhall ſee by this, what manner of man you be. I giue thee therefore free liberty, that thou eate as much as thou haſt a minde to for once, and no more, and that one time, I allow thee to fill thy belly as full as thou wilt thy ſelfe; but with this condition, that thou deliver them vp afterwards vnto me, without any defect or fault; and in caſe the contrary ſhall appeare, thou ſhalt make me ſatisfaction in ſuch payment, as I ſhall be pleaſed to appoint.

I accepted of the condition of this Obligation; and thereupon they were all delivered vp into my hands.

The next day following, I layd them out in the Sunne, in an open walke, and amongſt the reſt of theſe ſweet-meates, there was one of the flowers of Oranges and Limons, which offred it ſelfe to my view, it lookt very lovingly vpon mee, as if it did deſire to be better acquainted with me, and I, who was loth to be behinde hand in matter of courteſie, made towards it, tooke it in my hand, & with a little knife that I had about me, looſening thoſe little tacks with which it was faſtened beneath, and heaving it vp daintily by degrees, till I had turn'd it vp-ſide downe, and that the lid lay downward, with that very knife, I tooke out almoſt the one halfe, from forth the bottome of it, returning to make it faſt againe as before, putting in place of the Conſerues ſo much waſte Paper, cut out ſo juſt to the ſame meaſure and proportion, that no man was able to perceiue it.

My Lord that night being minded to make a collation, I brought to his boord foure of the ſaid Boxes, and asked him when I ſet them downe, whether I had not looked well vnto them? He told me; if the reſt be like vnto theſe, he was well contented with them. Whereupon, I brought them all before him, and he was very well pleaſed when he ſaw them, becauſe they were much dryer then they were before, and better conditioned. With that I preſently ſtept aſide, to goe fetch a Plate, and on it I brought him all that I had ſtolne; for in very deed I had not taſted thereof the quantity of a Nut, having onely done it for the oſtentation of my wit.

When he look vpon it, he ask't me; What's this? I told him; I now devide with your Lordſhip, part of my theft. He reply'd; I will'd thee, that thou ſhouldſt fill thy ſelfe, and not filch. And therefore now you haue loſt.

I anſwered, I haue neither fill'd my ſelfe with it, nor ſo much as taſted what it is, nor doe I thinke that I haue loſt by doing of this; for this is that, wherewith I meane to fill my belly. Beſides, all that was ſtolne out of the Box, is yet whole, and intire, as you may very well perceiue; but if, becauſe

I haue ſhew'd my ſelfe honeſt, I muſt ſuffer for it, which way ſhall I walke to goe right, if you barre me of the path wherein I ought to tread? My puniſhment does not trouble me, nor does it grieue me that I haue loſt, as long as I am perſwaded I haue wonne, howſoever I may be over-borne. But I will be wiſer the next time, and be ſure to loſe no more vpon the like match.

Nay (*Guzmanillo*) be not angry (ſaid my Lord) I vvould not thou ſhouldſt grieue or complaine for this, I confeſſe I haue done thee wrong, and haue blamed thee without a cauſe; but I prythee tell mee (ſaid hee) out of which of all theſe Boxes did'ſt thou take this forth? I put forth my hand, and told him; This is it (my Lord) and I ſhew'd him how and which vvay I did it.

Hee was well pleaſed with the ſubtilneſſe of my wit, but he could haue wiſht that I had not had ſo much fineneſſe in me, for hee vvas afraid, leſt one time or other, I would mis-imploy it to my greater hurt. Hee willed mee to take the Boxe notwithſtanding for my paines, and to carry it away with mee.

Many ſuch thinges as theſe came from me; and hee tooke pleaſure both in them and me, as being ſleights of the hand, vſing theſe juggling trickes more for ſport then harme. If any of my fellowes ſhould chance to fall aſleepe, when he ſhould waite and giue attendance, they might the next day goe buy them new ſhoes and ſtockings, for (*a*) Flyes of waxe were ſure to be their Cocks to wake them. Our exerciſe, was every day two houres in the morning, and two in the Euening, to heare our Schoole-maſter reade vnto vs, of whom I learned (for the time that I ſtudied there) the Latine tongue, which I had reaſonably perfect: I had a little Greeke too, and ſome Hebrew. The reſt of that vacant time, vvhich wee had from ſerving of our Maſter (which was, God knowes, very little) wee beſtow'd in reading of bookes, telling of tales, and in gaming. If we went forth a dores at any time, it was only to coozen the (*b*) *Buñoleros*; and amongſt the Cookes our credit was very good for Pye-meate. Wee would goe a nights to play the wagges with the Curtizans, and to exerciſe our wits vpon them, and to ſing ſongs at their doores. And thus did I ſpend my time, till my beard began to bud.

And howbeit it may ſeeme perhaps to thee, a life of entertainment, and full of mirth, yet it was to mee as if I had beene ty'd to a ſtake, with a collar of iron about my necke, expoſed to ſhame. All this was as a ſtinke in my noſe; none of theſe things could content me; night and day I did ſigh for the loſſe of my former delights.

But when I once began to write Man, and was able to girt a Sword to my ſide, I would haue beene glad of any augmentation of honour, whereby I might haue gained ſome hope to haue proceeded farther. And I verily perſwade my ſelfe, that if my Actions had deſeru'd it, I ſhould not haue wanted the meanes.

But in ſtead of getting judgement, and doing things that were vertuous, for to gaine mens good wills, and thereby to binde them vnto me, I fell to gaming, even to the loſſe of my cloathes from my backe; and as I vvas ſomewhat of the freeſt, ſo was I too liberall in my play.

I made it my ſtudy, to benefit my ſelfe by all tricks and cheating devices, that I could invent or learne; and eſpecially when I plaid at *Primera*. How often when I went vpon two Cards, vvould I take three, and conveying fiue now and then into my hand, vvould ſet vp my reſt vpon the three beſt? How often vvould I take the laſt Card, and clapping it vnderneath, vvould ſee whether it vvere good for me or no, and in an inſtant looke on the other already ſeene, and then make my beſt advantage of them, vvhich vvas all one, as if I ſhould haue robb'd a man vpon the high-way? How often vvould I haue a (*c*) friend ſit by me, which ſhould ſeeme as if he were aſleep, & ſhould ſupply

(*a*) *The Spaniſh word is*, Libramiento de cera. *A Flye made of Waxe burning, which Pages put on the ſhoes of thoſe that ſleepe.*

(*b*) *What a* Buñolero *is, I haue margented elſe-where.* Guzmans *exerciſes being a Page.*
The diſtaſtes that Guzman *had, whileſt he was a Page.*

Guzmans *trickes at* Primera.

(*c*) *The Spaniſh word is* Diaco no, *which though it properly ſignifie a Deacon, yet it is taken for any one that miniſters helpe to a man.* Couarruuias verb. Diacono.

me with Cards vnder the boord to ſerue my turne? How often had I a Copes-mate that ſtood by, looking vpon the others games, who would tell mee what Cards they went vpon, and what their game was? all which he ſignified vnto me by ſuch ſecret and cunning ſignes, that it was impoſſible for them to finde it out. How often would I ſo ſet and packe the Cards, that I vvould deale to him that playd againſt me two and fifty, and having an Ace to helpe me, would make my ſelfe fiue and fifty, or elſe with a fiue encounter foure and fifty, and ſo either winne the Game by one peepe, or by the elder hand.

Now when we were two againſt one, and plaid bootie, and dealt the Cards one to another, how often taking the diſcarding Card, and clapping it on the top, would we play on till we could make our advantage of it? how by a becke or a nod, did vve know how the vvorld vvent? how to ſhuffle and mixe the Cards ſo, as to make our game ſure? how to ſet ſome privy marke or ſigne vpon them, whereby to know them? how to know them by the corners, being bigger or leſſe, and a thouſand the like, vvhich vve made good vſe of, either by the helpe of a ſtander by that ſhared with vs, or by corrupting him that ſold the Cards, which are ordinary things? O how many lewd prankes did I play in that kinde? how many rogueries? how many villanies? there vvas not that cheating or coozening tricke, vvhich I was not acquainted withall, and had at my fingers ends. And as I vvas perfect in the knowledge of them, ſo did I put them in practiſe when time ſerved. For ſuch is the blindneſſe of play, that thoſe that are crafty and cunning in their gaming, haue a large field wherein to expaciate themſelues, and to ſhew their skill.

And if it might be lawfull (I ſay, lawfull) that as in the Common-wealth, houſes of ſinne are permitted, for the avoyding of greater inconveniences; there were appointed in every principall Citie or Towne, Maſters of this coozening and cheating Science, of whom, thoſe that are addicted and given to play, might be taught and inſtructed, it were very good for the avoyding of deceit, and many a Gentleman would not be ſo eaſily fool'd out of their money and meanes, as now they daily are. For our Senſualitie ſuffers it ſelfe eaſily to be overcome by Vice, and that is turn'd to an ill habit, and becomes a bad cuſtome in the end, which at firſt vvas invented for a lawfull exerciſe, and to paſſe away the time. And with reaſon may it be called a bad cuſtome, when it ſhall be diſorderly followed, and that men are too much wedded to gaming, altering the true intent and meaning thereof, and putting it out of its right bias.

Gaming, made onely for recreation.

Gaming vvas firſt of all invented for the recreation of mans minde, and for the refreſhing of himſelfe, vvhen hee found himſelfe vvearied with the troubles and turmoyles which accompany this life; and when it breaketh this rule, and paſſeth beyond its due bounds, it is wickedneſſe, infamy, and theft. For it ſeldome hapneth, that it is not attended with theſe Attributes.

Gaming, to be ſhun'd by Noblemen and Gentlemen; and Wherefore?

I ſpeake of thoſe that are profeſt Gameſters, vvho make their living of it, as a man vvould doe of an Office or a Trade, and make a continuall practiſe of it. Notwithſtanding, I could heartily wiſh, and it is one of my moſt earneſt deſires, that thoſe would leaue it off, and giue over this exceſſe of play, vvhich are of the nobler ſort, conſidering the hurt vvhich may inſue therevpon, eſpecially ſeeing that ill is ballanced vvith good; and that if hee winne, and the other loſe, he is bound to giue the loſer leaue to ſpeake; to indure many bold and intemperate actions; to beare vvith many indiſcreet both vvords and deeds, and other ſtrange kinde of geſtures, and vncivill behaviour, vvhich hee is tyde to ſuffer, onely as he is a winner, not as he is a man of honour, vvho in thinges of another nature, vvill reſent the leaſt vvrong that is done vnto him. Other things there are of like quality with theſe, which I dare not preſume to preſſe any farther, that not onely for them, and thoſe already mentioned,

ned, they ought to abhorre gaming, but even thoſe houſes and Ordinaries, where Play is maintained.

It is good to know play. And why?

But being that our appetite is ſo vnbridled, and our naturall inclination there-vnto ſo exorbitant, that it cannot in this kinde altogether containe it ſelfe, it ſhall not be amiſſe, but rather good & fitting, that a young man ſhould know the Lawes of play, learne the skill thereof, and vnderſtand all the tricks, and cheatings that are vſed therein, that he may perceiue when he meets with a Cony-catcher. And if ſuch cheating companions once begin to loſe, and that their mettall melts away from them, let him powre the reſt of his owne moneys into his Boots, Breeches, Hand-wreſt, Collar, Girdle, Boſome, Sleeues, or any other part about him, whether he can cleanlieſt convey it, that he may not loſe his money like a beaſt. For beſides the getting of it from him, they will laugh at him when they haue done. One thing I was ever carefull to obſerue; I would never ſit downe to play with a little money, nor for a little, nor with that man that would not adventure to get much, playing my mony freely, without either offering, or taking of wrong.

A Gameſter cannot ſerue and attend his Maſter as he ſhould.

Well, I was ſo wholly given to gaming, and ſpent ſo much time therein, that I committed many faults. Nor is it poſsible, that a Gameſter ſhould performe thoſe duties which belong vnto him, much leſſe he that ſerues, and is ty'de to attendance. Neither doe I know that Maſter that will giue bread to that ſervant that is a Gameſter. For if he manage his Maſters affaires, and haue either moneys of his in his hands, or other his goods commited to his charge, and that hee chance to loſe his owne, hee will play then vpon his Maſters purſe hoping to recover himſelfe; and if peradventure hee continue ſtill on the loſing hand, and hath not afterwards wherewithall to pay, hee runnes himſelfe into greater danger then before, thinking that lucke will turne, and ſo come to relieue his loſſes. But ſay, he is not truſted with any thing of his Maſters, nor hath any thing of his to looſe; yet is it not poſsible, that he ſhould aſsiſt at thoſe houres, when he ought to doe him ſervice, nor will he be in the way to be found, when need ſhall require as it hapned vnto my ſelfe.

The Cardinall ſhewes himſelfe a good and loving Maſter.

My Lord was grieved thereat to the very ſoule, nothing could prevaile with me, neither admonitions, nor perſwaſions, nor words, nor promiſes, to remoue this evill cuſtome from me. And being one day (in my abſence) with his houſhold-ſervants about him, he told them, how well he wiſht mee, and the great deſire that hee had of my good. And ſeeing that I could not be reclaimed by faire means, his purpoſe was by ſome one device or other to bring me to be a reformed man. And the plot was, that by diſcharging me from his ſervice, and putting me out of his houſe for ſome certaine dayes, it might be, that calling my lewd courſes to minde, and ſeeing mine owne errours in the end, I might come to a truer feeling of my miſery, and by that meanes bee drawne to amendment of life: yet would he not, that my allowance ſhould be taken from me, leſt for want of meanes, I might through neceſsitie be driven to doe ſome diſhoneſt act or other. O how ſingular a vertue was this in ſo great a Prince! how worthy of eternall praiſe, & how fit to be imitated by all thoſe, that deſire to be well and truly ſerved! And certainly, it is impoſsible, but that ſervants (vnleſſe they be ſuch as I was) would be willing to lay downe a thouſand liues (if they were Maſters of ſo many) to giue but any the leaſt content to ſuch kinde loving Maſters.

Want of food cauſeth much evill.

Well, I was driven by this meanes to my ſhifts, and wanted meat to put in my mouth. O Lord, let it ever bee in my *Letany*, that thou wilt diliver mee from this evill. Other wants haue ſome trouble with them. But when a man hath a good ſtomake, and wanteth meat, is extreame hungry, and hath not where-withall to fill his Maw; to ſee the houre of eating come, and he to remaine faſting; to paſſe over the day from morning to night, and not to finde whereon to to feed; theſe (I ſay) are ſuch things, as would make a man doe any thing,

thing be it never ſo diſhoneſt; Cloakes, Hats, and all walke then, (though it be but for halfe they are worth) what ſhift ſo ever we make to come by other.

Guzman playes away his cloathes.

This miſerie befell mee, aud that in a very troubleſome time: For having ſpent a whole day and night in play, and having loſt all the money that I had, and when that was gone, all my cloathes, having nothing left me to cover my nakedneſſe, but a poore thin Doublet, and a paire of white linnen Drawers, when I ſaw my ſelfe in this poore taking, I retyred my ſelfe into my Chamber, not daring for ſhame to come abroad.

And albeit I would williugly haue faign'd my ſelfe ſicke, I could not doe it; for my Lord was ſo carefull of his ſervants health, and that they ſhould haue all things neceſſarie and fitting for them, that hee would preſently haue ſent for Phyſicians to ſee what I ayled. Beſides I ſaw it was a needleſſe remedy, to vſe any ſuch diſsimulation; for by this time it had paſt from mouth to mouth, how, and in what caſe I was, and what was the cauſe of my griefe.

Now though that I had beene wanting ſo many dayes from the ſervice of his Table, yet would he ſtill aske and inquire vvhat vvas become of me, and where I was that I did not wait? He could not indure Tale-carriers, nor ſuch as would complaine of their fellowes, and make things worſe then perhaps they were, by mis-reporting of them; he did hate it to the death, to haue his houſe, like your Lawyers Courts, full of clamours, and vntruths; & therefore that they might not grieue or diſquiet him, they would mildly tell him: He is heere (Sir) about the houſe, I ſaw him but now, or ſome ſuch like excuſiue anſwere. But this would not ſerue the turne. For now he began ſhrewdly to ſuſpect, leſt ſome mis-fortune had befalne me. And therefore preſsing them hard to acquaint him where I was, and how I ſpent my time, they were forced (for the giving of his Lordſhip ſatisfaction) to deliver vnto him the truth of the buſineſſe.

This evill inclination of mine did much afflict his Lordſhip, when he ſaw how diſſolutely, without either feare or ſhame, I proceeded on in my lewd courſes. Wherevpon, to put his former project in practiſe, he gaue order that I ſhould haue ſome new cloathes made me, and that then they ſhould preſently diſmiſſe mee, and rid me out of both his houſe and ſervice, accordingly as he had formerly ordered the buſineſſe.

Guzman hath new cloathes given him, and is turned out of doores.

So his Steward cloathed me, and then turn'd me out of doores. Which I tooke in that foule ſcorne (holding it as a due debt, that my Maſter was ſtill bound to keepe and maintaine me, and to beare with all faults) that in a kinde of ſullen and dogged faſhion, (ſhewing more ſtomake, then wit) I left the houſe, with a full reſolution never, (come what would come) to returne thither againe, of all other places in the world; notwithſtanding that I had received many meſſages from the Cardinall, at ſundry times, and by ſeverall meſſengers, with many goodly offers, and faire promiſes, delivering vnto me the end why all this was done, and that there was no other drift in it in the world, ſaue onely what ſhould make for mine owne good; thinking by this meanes, when I had champt a little vpon the bit, and taſted what hardneſſe was, and knowne the loſſe of ſo good a Maſter, I would haue reform'd my manners, reclaim'd my ſelfe from my lewd courſes, and proved afterwards a better ſervant, then ever I had beene before. They alſo ſignified vnto me, how much his Lordſhip lov'd me, and vvhat he had ſpoken of me in my abſence. But all would not doe; they could never get me backe againe. For I was ſtiffe and obſtinate, and too fooliſh ſelfe-will'd; thinking that I ſhould revenge my ſelfe in ſo doing; and ſo as I might ſpight them, I did not care how I ſped my ſelfe. I brew'd ill, and bak't worſe; I began in pride, and ended in folly. And what could follow therevpon but my miſerie and ruine, ſeeing that I was vnthankefull for thoſe favours and benefits, which God had been pleaſed to beſtow vpon me by the hands of that good and holy man my Maſter,

Proud ignorance, and ſelfe will, much hurteth young men.

Maſter, who had juſtly given me my doome, and pronounced this ſentence of expulſion againſt me. For he that cannot be wonne with good workes, nor moved with faire and gentle words, it is pittie but he ſhould ſmart for it, and that rigour and caſtiſement ſhould worke that vpon him, which rewards and faire vſage, were not able to effect. I had now quite loſt thoſe little wits that I had, making little or no account of all theſe things, as if I had wanted nothing. How did I ſcorne and contemne thoſe many good things that were done for me, vvithout any why or wherefore, being things beyond the reach of my capacitie, vnbefitting my ſervice, and altogether vnworthy of me, by reaſon of my vnthankefulneſſe? Hovv vnwiſe was I in conſerving that preſent good, and in ſeeking to increaſe the hope of farther favours, vvhich vndoubtedly I ſhould haue futurely received, if I had but indevoured to deſerue them? How forgetfull was I of that kindeneſſe, wherewith I had beene cured? Hovv vnmindefull of that care, that was taken about me? How vngratefull to that charity which vvas vſed towards me? How careleſſe of that diligence, wherevvith I was taught? How ſtubbornly proud, againſt that mildeneſſe, vvherevvith I was admoniſhed? How perverſe, againſt thoſe ſweet vvords, vvherevvith I was perſwaded? How deafe againſt thoſe graue yet loving tearmes, vvherewith I vvas reprehended? Hovv ſurly againſt that patience, by vvhich I was ſupported? How incorrigible againſt that favour, by vvhich I vvas defended? How rebellious againſt thoſe meanes, which were ſought for my good? How vncapable of that good vſage, vvherewith I was treated? How neglectfull in amending thoſe faults, vvhich for my ſake vvere ſo kindely diſſembled? If any of thoſe two, that tooke me for their ſonne, had beene aliue, nay, if they were both now abiding here vpon earth, and might returne to their former proſperitie, they could not haue doue more for me, or with more loue, or vvould haue borne halfe ſo much vvith my ſo many, and prejudiciall knaviſh prankes, vvhich I did ſo dayly, and ſo diſorderly play, and vvith that libertie and freeneſſe, as if I had not beene in my Lords, or my Fathers houſe, but in mine owne. I was more bold in his preſence, then I ſhould haue beene amongſt my equals, and hee imitating God in the ſweetneſſe of his diſpoſition, had the patience to beare with me.

Certaine I am, that he that begat me, vvould haue abandoned and abhorred me, ſo vvearie vvould he haue growne of my ill government. But my Lord vvas ſo good a man, that he vvas never vveary of me, never angry, never offended vvith me, and would not haue caſt me off (had not I caſt off my ſelfe) becauſe he lov'd me.

O the noble and Princely condition of this worthy Prelate, given him by inheritance from the true Father of loue and goodneſſe, that he could bee ſo kinde-hearted, in doing ſtill more and more good to ſuch a one as I was! He looked ſtill when I ſhould returne vnto him, he tarried for me, a day, a weeke a moneth, a yeare nay many yeares; in all which time, he was not vvanting to exerciſe his vvorkes of mercy towards me, to the end, that he might leaue me without excuſe: And that touch't at laſt with ſhame of mine owne folly, I might pronounce that ſentence againſt my ſelfe, vvhich the heynouſneſſe of mine offences had deſerved.

But I for all this followed mine owne humour; vvhich vvas the rule by which I directed all my actions: To all that was ſaid vnto me, I put on Merchants eares, was ſtill deafe to all good counſell, appealing from good advice, to mine owne fleſh, which being ready ſtill at hand in favour of my vices, I did vtterly vndoe my ſelfe, by following of her ill councell. For to execute her ſuggeſtions, I had force enough; to ſeeke out occaſion of ſinne, abilitie ſufficient; to perſever in them, an vntired conſtancie; and in not leaving them, a firmeneſſe not to bee removed. I was as well acquainted vvith all manner of Vice, as I was a ſtranger to all kinde of Vertue. And to lay the fault

Orejas de mercader i. *Deafe eares. A Prouerb.*

fault vpon Nature, I haue no reaſon for it in the world. For I had no leſſe abilitie for good, then inclination to evill. The fault was mine owne; for ſhee never did any thing out of reaſon. Shee was alwaies the Miſtreſſe of truth and modeſtie; ſhe was never defectiue in what was fitting, but as ſhee hath beene corrupted ſince through ſinne; and mine were ſo many, that I produced the cauſe of this bad effect, and became mine owne hangman.

CHAPTER X.

Guzman de Alfarache *diſcourſeth of ill Companie; of Hoſpitalitie; of Patience; And how being put out of the Cardinals houſe, hee placed himſelfe with the Embaſſadour of France, where he playde ſome Knaviſh prankes. Hee relates a Story, which he heard from a Gentleman of* Naples. *And ending with that, he gines an end to the firſt part of his life.*

I Could not (as I told you before) juſtly complaine; or finde fault vvith any body but my ſelfe, that my Lord had thus diſmiſt me, and turn'd me out of his ſervice. For the very truth was, he made earneſt ſute (through the importunitie of his ſervants, who were very inſtant with mee) to haue mee to come backe againe vnto him; but becauſe my bloud (whoſe heate was not yet allay'd) ſtill boyled in my breſt, and was not come to it's wonted cooleneſſe, I did ill conſider mine owne good: or ſhould rather haue ſaid, That I did well, ill, in not conſidering my ill, well.

The converſation of the wicked deſtroyeth the ſoule.

Being thus diſcarded, I wandred vp and downe at mine owne pleaſure, (as my fancie did lead me) thorow the ſtreets of *Rome*. And becauſe in my proſperity, I had purchaſed ſome friends of mine owne profeſsion, they ſeeing me vn-provided for, and that I went vp and downe like a Maſterleſſe-hound, here one would invite me, and there another, howbeit it coſt mee deare; for that meale that is made in ill company, though it giue nouriſhment to the body, yet it filleth the ſoule with ill humours, to it's vtter overthrow and diſtruction. Nor did thoſe good morſels ſo well ſatisfie hunger, as their ill counſell and lewd converſation did vndoe me; Whereof nothing now remaineth, but repentance. For I began then, (and neuer tell then) to know in what danger I was, when I ſaw the water was come vp to my chinne, and ready to runne into my mouth.

Vices, come ſtealing in vpon a man, they enter with ſilence, they are a ſmooth ſtill File, that cuts without any noyſe; they are not heard, till they haue wrought mans ruine. They are as eaſie to be receiued, as they are hard to be rejected.

And ſuch kinde of friends as theſe, are thoſe Bellowes, which kindle that flame, which ſets the whole ſoule on fire, and with a little ſparke raiſeth a great blaze. I might very well haue recovered my allowance, and had meate of mine owne to put in my mouth; for the Steward told me, that my Lord had given him order, that I ſhould dayly come and fetch it, or ſend for it, as I would my ſelfe. But I was ſo obſtinate, that I would none of it. For I was ſo lewdly given, that I had rather indure hunger with ill company, then feed vpon the beſt meat with honeſt and civill people. But they quickly paid me home, who firſt gaue counſell to refuſe my boord-wages, as I did, relying vpon them and their aduice; for they were ſoone weary of helping me any longer, and they did not only not relieue me, but becauſe they would not doe it, they did ſhunne and avoyd me. So that I might ſtarue for any ſuccour that I was to looke for from them.

Touching Hoſpitalitie.

This ſame thing called Hoſpitality, and entertaining of friends and gueſts, carries

carries a kinde of myſtery with it; I evermore found in his mouth that inviteth, honey, but in his hand gall; they promiſe liberally, but giue ſparingly; they bid vvith joy, but eate vvith ſorrow. Hee that vvill be another mans gueſt, muſt be content to be ordred, as hee vvill haue him; beſides, hee muſt be rich and well to paſſe, otherwiſe hee ſhall not be welcome; hee muſt not tread many ſteps in the houſe, his breech muſt ſcarce warme his Chayre, nor muſt he ſit long at boord, for fe are of being too troubleſome. Doe not flatter thy ſelfe, that thou art liberally and freely welcome, becauſe a man giues thee good vvords, and ſpeakes kindly and lovingly vnto thee, and tels thee thou art heartily vvelcome. For I haue ever obſerved it as a true rule amongſt other the Lawes of *Hoſpitalitie*, that a man may dyet vvith his kinſman a ſeaven-night, vvith his elder brother a moneth, vvith his friend a yeare, and with a bad Father all his life-time.

Gueſts, what manner of men they ought to be?

The Lawes of Hoſpitality.

The Father onely is not weary perhaps of entertaining his ſonne, but all the reſt take diſlike, if not a loathing of his company. If thou ſhalt ſtay with them beyond that time, they vvill hate thee to the death, and picke one quarrell or other againſt thee; and if that vvill not ſerue the turne to ſet thee packing; they will put crooked pins in thy Bread, or lay baytes to poyſon thee, that they may once be rid of thee.

But admit, that thou art invited by a married man, and that his vvife be cloſe-fiſted, a very Crib, her vvealth her owne, and ſhee ſomewhat proud and ſcornefull, ſay ſhee bee thy Mother, or thy Siſter, in fine ſhee is a vvoman, who for the moſt part are all of them greedy and covetous, ſo that they will whine for anger to ſee the there, looke ſcurvily vpon thee, grudge thee thy meate; chafe with her husband for bringing thee thither, curſe both him and thee, and vviſh you both choakt. Better is a hard cruſt in thine owne houſe, then a cram'd Capon in another mans. It is a miſerable thing to ſet thy foote vnder another mans table.

Better is a little at home, then a great deale of good cheere abroad.

My friends growing now weary of mee, I needed not out of ſhame to leaue them; for they had already caſt mee off, ſtreightning more and more their hand towards mee, who were ſo farre from giuing mee any thing, that now they could ſhamefully deny mee vvithout bluſhing. They needed no maske nor diſguiſe to diſſemble the buſineſſe. They cold boldly bid mee Goe by. I vvas therefore driven to ſeeke out ſome Wall, where-againſt to leane, and betake my ſelfe to ſome Tree for ſhelter, vnder whoſe ſhadow I might quietly take my feeding. For I was now in that extreeme want, that like the Prodigall ſon, I would willingly haue returned home, and beene content with all my heart to be one of the meaneſt mercinary ſervants in my Lords houſe. But ſuch was my misfortune, that hee was now dead and gone.

Beaten with the rod of affliction; I began to be humbled, and vvas fully reſolved to turne over a new leafe, and betake my ſelfe to a better courſe of life: but it was all too late, I came a day after the faire; And fit it is, that hee that will not when he may, when he would, he ſhould haue nay.

And it ſtands with very good reaſon, *Que pierda por el mal querer, el bien poder*. That through the badneſſe of will, vvee ſhould looſe the goodneſſe of power. There went the diſtance of ſome two moneths betweene my good and bad fortune. And if I had beene a ſtay'd, and well govern'd Youth, as I had a running head, and a giddy braine, the leaſt good that could haue befalne mee, would haue beene (though the meaneſt of his ſervants) an honeſt proviſion during my life, and might haue runne the venture of ſome better fortune. But ſeeing it fell out as it did, yet muſt wee thanke God as well for the bad, as the good. I cannot ſay that my malignant Starre vvas the cauſe thereof, but that mine owne evill inclination was the worker of my vvoe; For the ſtarres *non compellunt ſed inclinant*, they incline, but not conſtraine: They make men apt, but they do not coact. Some ignorant fooles ſticke not

want of patience, the cauſe of much evill.

The Starres doe not inforce a man to this or that.

not to ſay; O Sir, Deſtinie is not to be avoided. That which ſhall be, ſhall be. And it is in vaine to ſtriue againſt it. I tell thee (my friend) it is a vaine thing to ſay ſo; and thou doeſt not vnderſtand the truth thereof aright; for there is no neceſſitie, that it is, or ſhould be ſoe; it is thou thy ſelfe, that mak'ſt it ſo to be.

In theſe Morall and outward things, thou haſt a kinde of free-will conferred vpon thee, vvhereby thou maiſt (if thou wilt) governe both thy ſelfe, and thy actions. Thy ſtarre cannot conſtraine thee, nor all the heavens joyned together with all the force and power that they haue, cannot compell thee againſt thy will.

All evill that befals a man, is for the moſt part occaſioned by himſelfe.

It is thou that forceſt thy ſelfe to leaue what is good, and to apply thy ſelfe to that which is evill, following thy diſhoneſt deſires, whence theſe thy croſſes and calamities come vpon thee.

Guzman ſerues the French Embaſſadour.

I was now entred into the ſervice of the French Embaſſadour, with whom my Lord (who is now in glorie) held ſtrict amity; who in his life-time tooke likewiſe great pleaſure in my witty jeſts, and merry conceits. He would faine haue had me ſerue him before, but hee was loath to entertaine me, leſt it might be taken vnkindly to receiue another mans ſervant, conſidering the good loue and friendſhip that was betweene them.

Maſters intertaine their ſervants for diverſe ends.

Well, I was now with him, and he vſ'd mee vvell, but vvith a different end. For my Lord directed his actions to the profit and benefit of my perſon, but he onely for his owne private ends, and the pleaſure which hee tooke in my jerkes of wit, the merry tales that I would tell him, and the pleaſing meſſages that I ſhould bring him now and then, from thoſe his Ladies and Miſtreſſes to whom hee made loue. Hee did ſettle me in no ſet place, or office about him; I vvas his ſervant at large; and he as largely payd mee. For either hee would giue me my payment himſelfe, or elſe I my ſelfe would take it in his preſence, with ſome pleaſant jeſt or other; or to ſpeake more plainely, I was his chiefe Minion and Favorite, though it pleaſed ſome to call mee his Buffone & Ieſter.

Gueſts how to be attended on by thoſe that wait at the table.

When we had any gueſts (as wee ſeldome or never wanted) wee were very complemental all with them, and waited punctually vpon them, our eyes ſtill attending on theirs: but if they were either impudent, fooliſh, or troubleſome gueſts, which came thither vnbidden, vpon ſuch as theſe we would put a thouſand jeſts. Some wee would make to ſit all dinner time without drinke, that you would haue thought, that they had been ſo many Melones ſowne in a dry ground; to others vvee vvould giue very little, and that in pinching glaſſes; ſome had their wine over-watered, other-ſome over-warme vvithout any ſnow. When they vvere ready to eate their meate, vve vvould take away their Plate from them, and ſet ſome ſalt meates before them, ill ſeaſoned, vvith a little oyle that was none of the beſt. Wee would dayly invent new devices, to abuſe their palates, that they might take diſlike, and come there no more.

Fooliſh and preſumptuous perſons not to be obſerved by thoſe that attend.

Men of good and bad behaviour, to be reſpected according as they are.

It hapned once vpon a time, that an Engliſh-man claiming kindred of the Embaſſadour, and it being a common cuſtome with him, to come dayly to our houſe, my Maſter grew weary of him; for (beſides that hee was not his kinſman) hee was neither Noble in his blood, nor indued with good qualities, and aboue all, in his converſation full of impertinencies, that it was a kinde of captivitie, to keepe converſation with him.

A tale of an Engliſhman.

There are a certaine kinde of men, that a mans heart will riſe againſt them, and grow into a diſlike of them, though he never ſaw them before. And againe there are another ſort of men, that will ſteale thereinto, and thruſt themſelues into our affection, and good liking, vpon the firſt ſight, winning our good will from vs, and procuring our beſt wiſhes; this, either hatred, or loue, not being in the hands of the one, or the power of the other. But this vvas a meere lumpe of Lead, a man of no metall in the world, a dull and heavy piece of fleſh, in a vvord a meere block-head.

One night when they were newly ſet to ſupper, he began to lay open his vanitie, with telling a thouſand lyes one vpon the necke of another, vvherewith the Embaſſadour was much offended, and not being able to ſuffer ſuch a one to goe on in his fooleries, he ſpake to me in Spaniſh, (vvhich the other vnderſtood not) and ſaid vnto mee. Would I could be rid once of this foole; for I am as weary of him, as ever I can be. Hee did not ſpeake this to a Dolt, or an Aſſe: I had his meaning in the winde. Wherevpon I tooke my friend to taske; I followed him vvith ſalt-meates, that vvere ſmart and ſharpe, and left behinde them a kinde of tartneſſe or tang vpon the tongue; vvherewith being bitten, hee call'd for his coolers, which hee tooke almoſt faſter then I could fill them.

The wine that hee gulped downe, vvas the gulph that ſwallowed him vp. The glaſſe was great, his draught anſwerable, and thoſe often, and this powder tooke ſo well, that at laſt hee was powdred with a witneſſe, and quite blowne vp.

When I ſaw hee had yeelded himſelfe priſoner to his pots, and that hee was aboue one and thirtie, being many peepes out, I tooke off one of my Garters, and knit a ſliding knot vpon the inſtep of one of his feete, and faſtened it vnto the ſtoole whereon he ſate. And when the Table was taken away, and that he offered to riſe to take his leaue, and to goe home to his lodging, hee was no ſooner riſen from his ſeate, but that hee fell all along on the floore, his mouth, his teeth, and his noſe being ſhrewdly hurt, the blood guſhing out amaine. So that when hee was come to himſelfe the next day, and ſaw in what ill caſe hee vvas, and how his face was battard with the fall, for very ſhame hee would never more come neere the houſe.

A tale of a Spaniard, who ſcorneth Guzman, *and ſhewes himſelfe a craftier knaue then hee.*

This buſineſſe vvas well carried, for it ſucceeded even as I vvould haue it.

But all darts do not hit right; nor all Angle-rods ſtrike ſure. There are ſome fiſhes that bite and carry away the bait with them, leaving the Angler deluded, and the hooke empty, as it hapned vnto mee with a Spaniſh Souldier, that was longer then the marke.

O the whoreſon traytor, how crafty and ſubtill a Rogue hee was! how full of his cunning ſhifts! Hearken vvell I pray vnto that vvhich paſſed betweene vs.

This wily raſcall came into the houſe about noone; when the Embaſſadour was ready to ſit downe to dinner, and comming vnto him, hee told his Lordſhip that hee was a Souldier, and borne in *Cordova*, and a Principall Gentleman of that place, though now hee were in want, and therefore beſought him, that hee vvould favour him ſo farre forth, as that hee might taſt of his bounty. The Embaſſadour tooke out a little purſe, wherein were ſome Crownes, and without offering to open it, hee gaue him both the purſe and the Gold that vvas within it, becauſe hee ſeemed to be the ſame, he had expreſt himſelfe to be.

But not contenting himſelfe with this, hee continued ſtill with him, recounting vvhat hee vvas, and the ſervices wherein hee had beene. And ſo running on from one thing to another, the Embaſſadour ſetting himſelfe downe to dinner, hee makes mee no more adoe, but does the like. And pulling a ſtoole to him, ſets himſelfe checke by jole with his Lordſhip.

I was then gone to fetch in meate, when lo, by the vvay, I might perceiue two other Ier-Falcons like the former, which were newly entred within the Court; and vvhen they vnderſtood, that this other was at dinner with my Lord, the one ſayd to the other; As I am true Souldier, either the Divell, or Sinne hath clapt gyues vpon our legges; for this cheating Raſcall ſtill gets the ſtart of vs, and wins all that he playes for by the elder hand.

Court Ier-Falcons what they be.

When I heard them thus mutter and maunder againſt him, I came vnto them, and askt them; vvhether they knew that Gentleman vvithin, or no? One of them told mee, I know that Taverne-hunter, whoſe father hath many

a time and oft pull'd on my Buskins in *Cordova*, where hee keepes ſhop vnder the wall of the great Church.

This is our vnhappineſſe, that if ſome twenty Gentlemen of vs goe for *Italy*, there returne a hundred ſuch infamous fellowes as this is, that vvill equall themſelues with the beſt, and boaſt themſelues to be deſcended of the ancient *Gothes*: and vvhen they come vvhere they are not knowne, they thinke that vvith the gumming of their Mouchatos, making them beare vp as ſtiffe as if they vvere ſtarcht, and with the wagging of three or foure feathers in their Hat, they are growne into nobleneſſe of bloud, and purchaſed the name of Valour, being no better then notorious Cowards. For it is not Feathers, and ſtarcht-beards that fight it out in the Field, but ſtout hearts, and men of ſtiffe courage. Come, let vs goe, I will make this effeminate Roskall next time I meete with him, leaue off comming into our quarter, and fyle himſelfe in ſome other ranke.

With that they vvent their wayes, vvhileſt I went conſidering vvith my ſelfe what kinde of cattle theſe three vvere, that thus ſought to grace and ſet forth themſelues.

But I was ſome-what angry at thoſe other two, taking them to be but Braggadoccios, and meere puffes, as well for the vaunt they made of themſelues, as for the ill language they vſ'd, in defaming him, vvho ſought to honour himſelfe, without any coſt or prejudice to others.

I vvas likewiſe not a little moued againſt this new-come gueſt for his bold and inſolent carriage, who might very well haue contented himſelfe vvith that which vvas giuen him, and ſo gone his wayes, without being ſo impudent to ſit downe at table in that ſwaggering and vncivill faſhion; I had a moneths minde to be at him, I long'd to breake one jeſt or other vpon him, and to put it ſo home, that hee ſhould not be able to avoid it; but thinking to goe forth to fetch Wood, I was forced to come backe with my fleece ſhorne, failing very much in this my intent and purpoſe. Hee intreated mee to giue him ſome drinke. I made as if I did not vnderſtand him. Hee beckned vnto me vvith his hand. I drew neerer vnto him. He made me a third ſigne. I turn'd mine eyes another way, looking very demurely, and carrying with mee a ſober and compoſed countenance, (though I had much adoe to forbeare laughing.) He looking well vpon mee, and perceiving that I either playd the foole, or the knaue with him, hee would not ſpeake or beckon any more vnto mee, but turning himſelfe towards the Embaſſador, he thus ſayd vnto him.

Sir, I beſeech your Lordſhip, that you vvould not thinke it over-boldneſſe, or too much preſumtion in mee, that I haue offered (though vnbidden) to ſit downe at your Lordſhips Table, in regard of thoſe many excuſes which I can render to your Lordſhip, which may (if I haue offended therein, and broken the rule of good manners) plead ſome-what in my favour.

Firſt, the quality of my Perſon, and the Nobleneſſe of my Houſe, doth deſerue any common or ordinary courteſie.

Secondly, my being a Souldier, makes mee worthy of any Princes Table vvhat-ſoever, becauſe I haue purchaſed that honour by my Sword and profeſſion.

And laſtly, I may adde therevnto the neceſſitie I now am in, which is common to all, and may befall any man, as well as my ſelfe.

And I preſume that your Lordſhip keepes this ſo free and honourable a Table for to relieue ſuch as my ſelfe; and therefore conceiue, that your Lordſhip holds it not neceſſary, that ſuch Souldiers as my ſelfe, having any worth, or good parts in them, ſhould expect to be invited to your boord.

And therefore I ſhall deſire your Lordſhip to be pleaſed to command one of your ſervants to giue me ſome drinke; for being a Spaniard, I perceiue they doe not vnderſtand mee, though I haue often called for it.

My

My Lord therevpon commanded vs to giue him drinke, ſo that I could not otherwiſe chooſe but doe as I was bid; yet I would haue ſworne, hee ſhould not haue thus gone away with the Bucklers.

Well, I brought him drinke, but in ſo poore and penurious a glaſſe, and mixed ſo much water with his Wine, that I left him in a manner as dry as he was before. But becauſe a little will ſerue a Spaniards turne, and that they are invred to ſuffer ſuch hunger and thirſt, with that little pittance, which was rather a drop, then a draught, he paſſed therewith as well as he could, till dinner was done.

We that were Pages, having conſpired altogether, not to looke him any more in the face while he was eating, leſt he ſhould ſpeake againe vnto vs by ſignes, to giue him more drinke, and ſo binde vs to bring it vnto him. But he was an old beaten Souldier, and knew well how to vſe the weapon of his wit, and being too hard for vs, did likewiſe beat vs from this ward, which wee thought had beene too ſure a one, to be put from. For when hee had fill'd his belly, and well ſatisfied himſelfe, and that the laſt courſe was ſerved in, And your Lordſhip will giue me leaue (quoth he) I will now goe drinke. And ſo riſing vp from boord, removing his ſtoole from him, he went to the Court-Cupboord, and taking from thence the biggeſt Glaſſe that was there, he powr'd forth as much Wine and Water as himſelfe thought fit, and having quenched his thirſt, putting off his hat, and making a legge to his Lordſhip, got him out of the roome, and ſo went his way without ſpeaking any one word or other. My Lord was ready to burſt with laughing, to ſee how hee had put me beſide my tricke, and after that he had wondred a while at the reſolution and boldneſſe of this fellow, he ſaid vnto me; *Guzmanillo*, this Souldier ſavours ſomewhat of thee, and thy countrie, where all is carried away with *Bravados*, and an impudent kinde of behaviour.

Now, vvhilſt vve vvere talking at table of the liberty and free kinde of carriage, vvhich the Spaniards aſſume vnto themſelues, there vvas newly come into the houſe a Gentleman of *Naples*, vvho had no ſooner ſaluted my Lord, but he told him, that he vvas purpoſely come vnto his Lordſhip to acquaint him vvith one of the cruelleſt, and ſtrangeſt accidents, that hath hapned in theſe our times, which now very lately fell out in *Rome*.

The Embaſſadour intreated him to relate it vnto him; And that I might the better heare it, I did deferre taking away, and brought in a Chayre, vvherein, vvhen he vvas ſet, he thus began to ſpeake.

A pitifull and lamentable Accident of two noble Lovers in Rome.

In this Citie, there dwelt a young Gentleman of the age of twenty or one and twenty yeares, more noble in bloud, then rich in wealth. Hee had a goodly preſence; he vvas vertuous, able, actiue, and in his owne perſon very valiant. This Gentleman fell in loue vvith a Damſell, a young Gentlewoman here in *Rome*, about the age of ſeventeene; being wonderfull both faire and honeſt; they vvere both equall in ſtate and condition, but more in their good vvill and loue to each other. For if the one did loue, the other did burne. His name vvas *Dorido*, hers *Clorinia*. Her Parents bred her vp ſo retiredly, that they did not ſuffer her to treate or converſe vvith any, from vvhence any danger might ariſe vnto her; neither did ſhee ſo much as ſhew her ſelfe at the Window, and did ſeldome looke out, vnleſſe it vvere by chance. For ſuch vvas the exceſſe of her beauty, that it vvas able to be a Loadſtone, to draw all the youthfull Nobilitie of *Rome* to deſire her loue. Her Parents, and one onely brother that ſhee had, vvere very jealous of her honour; inſomuch that theſe two Lovers could not enjoy each other as they vvould.

Dorido *and* Clorinia, *a payre of faithfull Lovers.*

True it is, that *Clorinia*, as one that vvas truely in loue, could by no meanes be hindred from ſhewing her ſelfe to *Dorido*, as often as he paſt that vvay. For neere adjoyning to her owne Window, there vvas another of a friend of hers; vvho (for that ſhe vvas married) might vvith more liberty ſtand there, vvhen

ſhe was diſpoſed ſo to do. And for that ſhe had acquainted her with her loue, as often as *Dorido* paſt that way, ſhe would giue her ſome ſigne or token, thorow a little hole that they had made of purpoſe in a partition Wall that was betweene them, whereupon ſhee would preſently make haſte to the Window to ſee him; And ſo received from her Louer that ſhort, yet full content, which the covetouſneſſe and ſtrictneſſe of thoſe times could afford.

This continued thus a good while: for other comfort had they none, then what they tooke in this fugitiue pleaſure, ſeeing each other onely *in tranſitu*, as he paſt along the ſtreet; which (like a ſhadow) was as ſoone gone, as ſeene. But *Dorido*, impatient of this poore content, and deſirous to improue theſe favours he receiued from her, ſought meanes, how he might with more conveniencie enjoy ſo ſweet a ſight, ſeeing he might not be permitted to proceed any farther. Wherevpon he began to enter into a ſtrict league of amitie with her brother, whoſe name was *Valerio*; into whoſe friendſhip he had wrought himſelfe, with that faſtneſſe and fervour, that *Valerio* could not liue without *Dorido*. Which was an occaſion that moved him many times to carry him home with him to his houſe, wiſhing him to be maſter thereof, and to make as bold therewith (if hee wanted any thing) as if it were his owne, and to command it with the ſame freeneſſe. So that by this meanes, he had both liberty and leiſure to contemplate the divine beauty of his deareſt Loue.

Valerio, *brother to* Clorinia.

With theſe baytes, their loues were led along, gaining ſtill more ground, and gathering more ſtrength vnto them, manifeſting more and more their loues, by their lookes. But *Clorinia* being the weaker of the two, and peradventure more inflamed, opened her minde to a maide of hers, called *Scintila*; who deſirous to doe her Miſtreſſe ſervice, went to ſeeke out *Dorido*; whom when ſhe had met with, ſhee ſaid thus vnto him.

Scintila, *Servant to* Clorinia.

Dorido, it is bootleſſe to diſſemble the buſineſſe any longer, it is now no time to hide thy ſelfe from me, for it is not vnknowne vnto mee what good liking there is betwixt you and my Miſtreſſe, and what good loue yee make each to other; And that you may ſee, that I doe not goe about to deceiue you, my Miſtreſſe her ſelfe hath revealed ſo much vnto me, intreating mee, that I would be a meanes to lay open her heart vnto you, and to ſignifie vnto you, how much ſhee loues you; and for farther declaration thereof, hath by mee ſent you this greene ſilke Riband, as a hopefull token, deſiring you for her ſake, thou you will honour her ſo much, as to weare it about your arme. I aſſure my ſelfe you are perſwaded, that it comes recommended vnto you from her owne hand, for that your ſelfe haue ſeene it many a time hang in the dreſsing of her hayre. So that from hence-forward, you may reſt confident of my faithfulneſſe towards you, ſo great is the deſire that I haue to doe you ſervice.

When *Dorido* heard this, it ſtrooke amazement into him, neither did hee ſeeme to like well of it, for that he had never any great good conceit of this Wench, as being jealous of her diſcretion, not holding her to be a fit inſtrument for a buſineſſe of that great truſt and conſequence as this was; fearing leſt their loues might, through her weakeneſſe, come to be diſcovered; But ſeeing there was no other remedie, and that it was *Clorinia's* owne Act, and none of his, he diſſembleth his diſlike, and in the beſt manner that hee could, made ſhew vnto her, in how much he did eſteeme this her loue and ſervice; and how ready he would be vpon all occaſions, to deſerue this her free and voluntary offer.

Some few dayes being paſt, and *Dorido's* deſire increaſing to ſpeake face to face with his Miſtreſſe, and finding no meanes how to doe it, Loue, that can overcome all difficulties, and make thoſe thinges facill, that ſeeme almoſt impoſſible, opened a way therevnto: ſhewing the meanes vnto him, whereby he might come to compaſſe his deſire. There was faſtened to the Wall of

that

that houſe where *Clorinia* dwelt (which butted on the open ſtreet) a piece of an old Wall, whereof the one halfe was falne downe, and runne into decay, being ſcarce ſo high, as to reach vp to the Window belonging to the houſe, and a little beneath that, was a hole ſtopt vp with a moueable ſtone that might be taken out, and put in againe at pleaſure. This did ſerue *Clorinia* ſometimes in ſtead of a Lattice, viewing thorow it, (without being ſeene) thoſe that did paſſe to and fro in the ſtreet.

This was well knowne to *Dorido*, for that he had often ſeene his Miſtreſſe peeping out at that hole. This opportunitie ſeemed to be favourable to his deſire; wherevpon hee brake with *Scintila*, and intreated her, that ſhee would ſtand his friend; telling her: Since (*Scintila*) my good fortune hath beene ſuch, that I haue found you well affected to our Loues, and willing to pleaſure mee all that you can, and to afford me your beſt furtherance therein; I will not refuſe to put my ſelfe into your hands, aſſuring my ſelfe, that you will alwayes and in all things haue that care, which the loue you beare to your Miſtreſſe, and the deſire you haue to doe me any courteſie, doth oblige you vnto. You know, that ſince the time that I ſurrendred vp my ſoule to *Clorinia*, and put her into the poſſeſſion of my heart, making her the true Lord and Owner both of it, and of my life, I haue got no other thing thereby, ſaue a correſpondence of affection expreſſed only by lookes, having as yet no other interpreters of our mindes, but the eyes, and all for lacke of better commoditie, and more fit and convenient meanes. Which the more I am debarr'd of, the more it augmenteth my deſire. For evermore priuation ingendreth appetite.

Priuatio generat appetitum.

Now, there is a thing come into my head, how by your good helpe, my deſire may reſt honeſtly ſatisfied. You cannot but know the hole, that is vnderneath the Window; this muſt be the place, and thou the inſtrument of my good fortune. Thou ſhalt ſpeake vnto *Clorinia*, (intreating her as from me) that ſhee will be pleaſed to correſpond with me in this my juſt requeſt; and in caſe ſhee ſhould refuſe, as not daring out of feare to venture ſo farre, thou mayſt then labour to perſwade with her, and to guide and rule her will, to be brought to yeeld to this ſo eaſie a condition; and that this night, ſeeing that the darkneſſe thereof is ſo much our friend, when all the people of the houſe ſhall be a-bed and a-ſleepe, ſhe will be pleaſed but to ſpeake with me at that hole. As for any other thing, I neither intreat it, nor pretend it.

This ſuite ſeemed to *Scintila*, very eaſie, and without any danger in the world; ſhee puts him in good hope, promiſes him to ſollicite it, till ſhee had effected it; ſhee comply'de with her obligation, and pointed him the houre when he ſhould come; giving him a certaine ſigne, what he ſhould doe, when he came to the Window.

Dorido, when night was come, diſguiſing himſelfe, went to the place appointed, where he ſtood waiting for a good occaſion.

When all thoſe of the houſe were ſure and ſafe enough, as ſleepe could make them, *Scintila* went to the Window and opened it, taking occaſion to throw out a little water. Which being ſeene by *Dorido*, who had got vpon the Wall, ſtanding there to wayte a good houre, and knowing that it was *Scintila*, he ſaid ſoftly vnto her, Here I am. She willed him to ſtay a while, and ſhutting the Window, in ſhee goes.

Dorido's heart in the meane while fell a leaping in his boſome, beating and thumping thereat, as if it had ſought to get out, being ready to burſt with deſire, inflamed with the fire of loue, fearefull of the various ſucceſſe of things, leſt ſome croſſe accident might interpoſe it ſelfe betwixt him, and this his glory, wherevnto he was now ſo neere, ſtudying with himſelfe what words he were beſt to vſe vnto her, and in what kinde of phraſe he ſhould begin his Court-ſhip. His thoughts ranne through a thouſand ſeverall things, and his

eyes were never off from that hole, looking as farre there-into, as that ill-placed ſtone would permit him.

He might one while heare *Clorinia* talking with *Scintila*; another while with her father and mother; now perceiue how ſhee roſe from the place where ſhee ſate, and by and by againe paſt to and fro, one while to this, another to that ſide of the houſe, till that (her Parents being a-bed) I ſaw her approching to the place appointed, whither ſhe came ſo troubled, (ſuch a conflict was there betwixt Loue, and Shame; Modeſtie, and Affection) that ſhe was about to goe backe. But inforced there-vnto by *Scintila*, at laſt ſhe came.

Now, when they were come to this inter-view, and ſaw themſelues thus happily met together, *Dorido* was ſo tranſported therewith, that although he had premeditated before-hand what he would ſay vnto her, hee was ſtrucken quite dumbe, and had not a word to ſay. And ſhee no leſſe trembling, not having any by in that conjuncture, which might giue breath either to the one or the other, to bring them to pronounce but ſo much as one word either good, or bad; at laſt by little and little, when their frozen tongues had recovered a little warmth, they made a ſhift to exchange ſome few words on both ſides, where-with they ſaluted each other.

Dorido intreated her hand, and ſhee willingly gaue it him; he tooke it, and kiſt it againe and againe, bleſſing and ſtroking his face therewith, never ſuffering it to depart from his mouth. After he had thus taken his pleaſure of her faire hand, hee ſtretcht forth his to her, pleaſing his touch with the delicate ſoftneſſe of her beautifull countenance, vnable to enjoy any other pleaſure, nor could that place and time affoord him any farther content.

In this ſweet exchange of mutuall loue they entertained themſelues a great while. And whileſt their hands did ſpeake, themſelues were ſilent. For the talke of the one, did hinder the ſpeech of the other. And becauſe *Scintila* made haſte to part them, for feare of being diſcovered, if they ſhould dwell any longer vpon theſe complementall kindneſſes, *Dorido* with many intreatings of his loue, tooke leaue of his *Clorinia*, intreating her, that the next night following, at the ſame houre, and the ſame place, he might enjoy the ſame *Regalo*, and ſweet comfort againe. Shee promiſt him he ſhould. And ſo for that time, they tooke leaue of each other, both of them remaining wonderfull well contented. But much more he, who was ready to leape out of his skinne for joy. And wiſhing that night and the next day would poſt away apace, hee went home to his lodging.

Where offering to ſit downe, he could not reſt himſelfe there; and ſeeking to eaſe himſelfe by riſing vp, he ſought ſome place where-againſt to leane; and when there likewiſe he could not be at quiet, hee romed vp and downe the roome, walking to and fro on the vnſteddy legges of *Diſ-reſt*, and *Deſire*; ſo that nothing could giue him eaſe and content.

Thus did he ſuffer, and thus weare out that wearieſome time, till the night following, and the time appointed, whoſe minutes he meaſured out by thoſe glaſſes which diſtinguiſh the houres, giving himſelfe over to this idle curioſitie.

The houre being come, hee went to the place appointed, expecting when the ſigne ſhould be given; he had placed himſelfe in the hollow nooke of an old gate, which joyned to the wall neere vnto the window; and being about to get vp to the hole, hee ſaw two Gallants paſſe by, which were in loue with a couple of Gentlewomen in the ſame ſtreet, who walked there vp & downe, giving many a turne to and fro, waiting when the ſtreet ſhould be cleare, that they might make benefit of the like occaſion. They were *Dorido's* very good friends, and were not ignorant that he was inamoured of *Clorinia*. They were well acquainted the one with the other. But becauſe *Dorido* was ſomewhat more reſerved in the loue that he made to *Clorinia*, he would not diſcover himſelfe

himſelfe vnto them, for feare of giving ſuſpition of that, which he was not yet Maſter of. And therefore whileſt they continued walking there, hee durſt not mount the wall, leſt haply they might chance to ſee him. For albeit that the night was very darke, yet the bulke of his body might, like a confuſed lumpe or maſſe, be diſcerned by thoſe that walkt vp and downe in that ſtill and prying faſhion, though by thoſe that walkt along the ſtreets at large, and minding no ſuch matters, it was not ſo eaſie to be perceived. And therefore, becauſe they ſhould not know him, getting him thence, he removed himſelfe a little farther off, looking ſtill when they would be gone, or elſe entertaine themſelues in their owne ſtandings, that he might betake himſelfe to his.

But when he ſaw that they ſtayd there ſtill, and that his houre was now come, he thought with himſelfe, that if his Miſtris ſhould come, and not finde him there, not knowing the cauſe thereof, ſhe might taxe him of too much careleſneſſe; or accuſe him of his lacke of loue.

This draue him, (holpen on by choller) into that deſperation, that he was fully reſolved to ſet vpon them, meaning to chaſe them away, if they did not make head againſt him; and if they did ſtand to it, and ſeeke to defend themſelues, then to kill them if he could. Which he might well haue done, as well in regard of the greatneſſe of his ſtrength and courage, as alſo for that he was every way well provided for them. Beſides, that his anger, which had now ſet him all on a raging fire, (being the whetſtone, that ſets an edge on Fortitude) would haue added greater force to his Valour, eſpecially when he ſhould ſet vpon them (which is no ſmall advantage) vnawares.

But conſidering not ſo much the perill of his owne perſon, as the preſent eſtate of his buſineſſes that he had now in hand, that they might not be overthrowne by being ill managed, and by raſh and inconſiderate courſes, he pawſed on the matter, and grew a little cooler, biting his lips, wringing his hands, caſting his eyes vp to heaven, and beating the ground with his feet like a madman.

And when he perceived, that the time was paſt, he was now as ſad and melancholly, as the night before he was merry and jocond.

The very next day after, theſe two Gentlemen went to looke out *Dorido*, whom they had no ſooner met withall, but they told him; You know, Sir, that we two are your friends, and that we truely loue you; and being ſuch, (as we vnfeignedly profeſſe our ſelues to be) it is neither fit, nor juſt, that we ſhould conceale any thing from each other, but be free and open-hearted to one another: And it is likewiſe meet, (if you bee the ſame to vs, as wee be to you) that you doe the like on your part, telling vs the truth of that which we ſhall aske you, if it be no way vnlawfull, or prejudiciall vnto you ſo to doe.

Yeſterday, ſome foure houres after night was in, we two, walking through our ſtreet (for ſo we may tearme it) in regard that both our hearts haue there their abode: ſeeking, I ſay, our adventure at that time of night, we might perceiue a third man, which dogged vs all the way, following vs almoſt cloſe at the heeles, ſcarce loſing ſight of vs all the while, ſo long as a man might ſay his *Pater-noſter*.

We had a great deſire to know who this ſhould be, but we let him alone, becauſe we would not cauſe any ſcandall. We could not ſo much as ſuſpect, much leſſe conceiue, who this ſhould be, till we were afterwards certified (by that which ſucceeded) that you were the man. And the aſſurance that wee had thereof, was; that we hauing ſtaid a while about your Miſtreſſes window, we might heare it open, and perceiue *Scintila* put forth her head, who ſeeing our outward Bulkes, and not knowing who we were, ſpake in a low voice, and ſaid.

Dorido, why do not you come vp? When we heard her ſay ſo, out of an impertinent curioſitie (relying on your friendſhip) I anſwered; Which way?

This

This word was no ſooner vttered, but without replying farther vnto me, ſhe clapt to the window, and away ſhe went. From whence we imagine you had made ſome ſet match, and becauſe we would not hinder you of your purpoſe, we preſently departed thence, and went to looke after you, but could not finde you. So that wee could not till now acquaint you with what had paſt.

But becauſe we deſire to ſerue you, and that (by conſerving this good loue and friendſhip betweene vs) our particular pretenſions may the better proceed, without any hindrance or impediment each to other, let vs devide the night betweene vs.

We will take our time from mid-night, till it be day, leaving the former part of the night free to you; and if you will exchange turnes with vs, liking perhaps, better of ours, then your owne, be it as you pleaſe, and take which of the two you haue moſt minde to, for to vs it is indifferent, being all one in the reckoning.

Dorido would faine haue diſſembled the buſineſſe with them; but finding himſelfe by theſe pregnant proofes, and forcible reaſons, too faſt ty'de to get loſe from them, he could not ſo ſhift them of. And therefore accepting their friendly offer, he made choiſe of the former part of the night, according to their owne agreement.

And with this plaine proceeding, he proſecuted his Viſit the third night, though without hope of obtaining it, doubting ſhee would not doe him that favour, in regard of that vulucky accident that fell out the night before.

But for that *Clorinia* lov'd, (and that ſhee truely lov'd) nothing could detaine her from him, but with a great deale of care, was ſtill inquiring, whether her Gallant meant to come againe, to glad her heart with his chearefull and comfortable lookes, being very inquiſitiue to know what ſhould be the reaſon, that cauſed him ſo to faile the laſt night of his promiſe.

Now, whilſt her Father and Mother were at ſupper, riſing from the table, ſhe went to the fore-ſaid hole, which ſhe might ſafely doe, for that the chimney, neere wherevnto they ſupt, ſtood on the one ſide of the Hall, (being a very large one) and the window where the hole was, on the other ſide, neere adjoyning to the corner; in the midſt whereof, were certaine things placed betweene, which did ſhadow and hinder the ſight from the one ſide to the other. Her father and her mother ſate ſo, that ſhe might eaſily goe thither, and ſpeake ſoftly, without being heard of any.

The truth is, ſhee watcht an occaſion (having well adviſed with her ſelfe what might happen) to make quicke diſpatch, and to riſe from table as ſoone as poſsibly ſhe could. Who came thither ſo opportunely, & in ſo good a time, that *Dorido* was there ready expecting her comming; for from out the ſtreet, he might heare the footing of certaine ſteps in the Hall, which was a ſure ſigne vnto him, that thoſe paces were trodden by his Miſtreſſe, ſo that he made all the haſte he could to get vp to ſee her. And becauſe this was the ſecond time of their meeting, they were a little better fleſh't, then they were before, & met not with thoſe ſtoppages, which heretofore had hindred their ſpeech. So that they now diſcourſed more boldly, and more freely, as farre forth as the time would giue them leaue, (which that night was but ſhort, and in a manner ſtolne) and afterwares they tooke their leaues vvith a great deale of tenderneſſe on either part, having agreed betweene themſelues, that as long as the Moone vvas in her wane, they would injoy the fulneſſe of their loues, which increaſed now apace, till ſome better meanes ſhould be found for their freer acceſſe.

In this *interim*, a young Gentleman, a very great friend of *Dorido's*, called *Horatio*, fell in loue with *Clorinia*: He courted her, he ſerv'd her, and obſerv'd her, as became a Lover, notwithſtanding, that he knew, that ſhee was his friends

friends Miſtreſſe. But he knew withall, that he did not treat with intent to take her to wife, but him ſelfe did.

Relying therefore vpon this their great friendſhip, the juſtneſſe of his requeſt, and the honeſty of his cauſe, he intreated him of all loues, that he would deſiſt from making loue to *Clorinia*, and giue way to him, ſeeing their endes were ſo different.

Horatio's affectionate words, and lawfull requeſt, were of that power, and prevailed ſo much with *Dorido*, that he told him, that for his part he was vvell contented therewith, promiſing him, that if his Miſtreſſe ſhould ſo like of it, and that ſhe could finde in her heart to fancy and affect him, hee would giue over his ſuite, leaving the field open vnto him to take his pleaſure without any contradiction in the world; and that he ſhould reſt himſelfe aſſured, that he would no way ſtand in competition with him. For the better effecting whereof, he would doe two things: The one, to diſ-deceiue *Clorinia*, by delivering plainely vnto her, that by reaſon of a certaine Vow, that hee had made to himſelfe, it was not in his power to be married vnto her, which he would not breake for all the world. The other; the better to make her forget him, he would goe about to make loue elſe-where. Yet, for that great friendſhip, that was betwixt himſelfe, and *Valerio*, he muſt hold him excuſed, if he did not forbeare now and then to viſit her, which might turne much to his good, but no hurt at all; being that his true intent and purpoſe was, to favour his pretenſion, vpon all occaſions that ſhould offer themſelues vnto him.

Herewith *Horatio* reſted content, and was wonderfull well ſatisfied, and gaue *Dorido* many thankes; not conſidering, that having left it to *Clorinias* choyſe, and putting himſelfe vpon her Election, till that he knew her minde, and had gained her good will, he had negotiated little or nothing at all. And the offer made by *Dorido*, was vpon the confidence that he had, and to ſpeake thereof vnto *Clorinia*, was no other, then the tearing of her heart from forth her breſt. But *Horatio* carried away with vaine confidencies, and various hopes, intreated *Dorido*, that he would ſpeake a good word for him. He promiſed he would, that he might ſtill maintaine his friendſhip with *Horatio*, and not giue any note or ſcandall to their loue.

To comply thereof with his promiſe, and to make good his owne offer, when he met with his Miſtreſſe, he made a long diſcourſe vnto her of all that had paſſed betweene them; Telling her, that if he could finde in her heart to loue *Horatio*, and he brought to ſettle her affection vpon him, God forbid that ever he ſhould goe about to hinder ſo honourable an intent. But in caſe ſhe could not, yet at leaſt was ſhe bound in thankefulneſſe to accept of this his good will, by not ſhewing her ſelfe coy and ſtrange vnto him; and if he paſt by the ſtreet where ſhe was, ſhe ſhould not ſcornefully ſhut the Window againſt him, and flie from his ſight, and ſhould ſhew him a chearefull looke, though it were but feigned.

To this *Clorinia* anſwered betwixt anger and ſcorne, telling him; that hee ſhould ſurceaſe, to lay any ſuch command vpon her, and that he ſhould ſpeake no more thereof vnto her; for if for this cauſe, he ſhould leaue and forſake her, ſhe would rather bee content to be hated and abhorred by him, then to wrong either him, or her ſelfe, by placing her loue elſe-where: Who as he had beene the firſt, ſo he ſhould be the laſt as long as ſhe liu'd; which life of hers, ſhe would preſently ſacrifice vnto him, for to take away all occaſion from him of commanding her to loue another, or to forget him; as for the reſt, he might doe as he ſaw cauſe, ſhe would not hinder him, let him take what courſe it pleaſed him, ſo as it liked him, ſhe would not ſtand againſt it.

Dorido tooke wonderfull contentment in hearing this anſwere come from her; for theſe words of her, were the true Chriſole wherein the Gold of

their

their loues was refined, and that touchſtone that tryde the pureneſſe of their affections, and gaue aſſurance that it was not counterfeit metall. So he treated of this matter no more, but followed his wonted Viſits both day and night, having firſt given an account to *Horatio* of what hee had done. Hee would not beleeue it, yet waxed wondrous ſad, when he heard it. But for all this, he did not leaue off to ſerue her, but could never finde her in diſpoſition to doe him the leaſt grace or favour, but rather to vſe him with all ſharpeneſſe and rigour.

Whence it came to paſſe, that ſeeing himſelfe diſdained, and *Dorido* preferred before him; furie provoketh his patience, ſetting his heart on fire with an infernall rage; inſomuch that his loue was now turned into hatred. And whereas before he was alwayes deſirous to doe her ſervice, from that time forward he laid wait to doe her a miſchiefe, beating his braines, and bending all his wits and ſtudie to worke her overthrow; or at leaſt to put ſome foule diſgrace vpon her. So that this *Horatio*, having dogg'd *Dorido* divers times, till he had learned the houre, the place, and the meanes how he got vp vpon the Wall, and the manner of his carriage and faſhion when hee came to ſpeake with her, and ſhe with him.

One night amongſt the reſt, he did anticipate and prevent the comming of the true Lover, and feigning himſelfe to be *Dorido*, he clambered vp to the place, and made a little noyſe, by jogging the ſtone that was in the hole of the Wall, as he had obſerved him to haue done the like divers times heretofore. Now *Clorinia* taking notice of the ſigne, but not conſidering the great anticipation, and prevention of the time, came preſently at this call, and taking out the ſtone, with many ſweet and kinde words, he received this feigned Lover, who remained ſilent all this while, which loving language of hers, did but the more incourage *Horatio* in his intended treaſon; and putting his hand into the hole, tooke hold on *Clorinias* faire hand, and tooke it forth, feigning that he much deſired to kiſſe the ſame. And holding her faſt thereby with his left hand, and with his right, plucking out a ſharpe Knife, which for that purpoſe he bare about him, with little difficulty, but a great deale of impiety, he cut it off, and carryed it away with him, leaving this poore afflicted Damſell lying in a ſwoune vpon the floore, by ſtriving to ſuppreſſe her ſorrow, which ſhe ought to haue vented with her voyce, and with her cryes and lamentations; but ſhe did ſmother them, offring force as it were to this her womanly weakeneſſe; and did ſhut them vp cloſe in her heart, and ſo offending the vitall ſpirits, ſhe remained in a manner dead. And there queſtionleſſe would ſhee haue breathed her laſt, if ſhee had not had preſent helpe; for her Father and her Mother miſsing her, and not ſeeing her in the roome where they were, they called vnto her, and becauſe ſhe returned no anſwer, they marveling much thereat, went forth to ſeeke her: they found her weltering in her owne bloud vpon the ground, hard by that hole, vvhich vvas left open in the Wall, and trickled downe with the bloud that came from her, vvhich ſtreames of bloud were as ſo many proofes and evidences of the cauſe of her death; for ſo they deem'd her to be, becauſe they could not finde in her any ſigne of life.

Her ſorrowfull Parents, ſeeing this cruell and dolefull ſpectacle, and the trunke of her arme without a hand, being vnable to bridle their griefe, fell downe in a ſwoune cloſe by their vnfortunate Daughter, no leſſe breathleſſe then ſhe was. But comming preſently to themſelues againe, they began with the greateſt lamentations that were ever heard, to bewaile this ſo great a misfortune that had befalne them, being able to moue any other eye to pitie, and to powre forth teares in aboundance, to ſee ſo young and handſome a Gentlewoman ſo butcherly and ſo inhumanely abuſed. But in the midd'ſt of this their exceſſiue ſorrow, they began to conſider vvith themſelues, that if the

the life of their Daughter ſhould be loſt, vvith it they ſhould likewiſe loſe their honour which is their diſcretion, they held not fit to hazard together with her. They reſolued therefore with themſelues to keepe this deed ſecret, and ſo leaving off their lamenting, drying their eyes, and ſmothering their ſight, they likewiſe quieted thoſe of the houſe, and bearing *Clorinia* from thence, after many remedies, which they applyed to her, they had ſomewhat brought her to her ſelfe: Who, when ſhee ſaw her ſelfe in the midſt of her mournefull Parents, and in that pittifull manner, her ſorrow redoubled vpon her, which receiuing increaſe from her ſhame, ſhe ſwowned a new. Wherewith her Parents griefe was a freſh renewed in that terrible manner, as if their hearts had beene rent from their bodies by the rootes. And with the tendreſt and kindeſt words they could vſe, they did ſeeke all they could to comfort her; ſpeaking vnto her in the in the ſweete and loving language of ſuch a Father and Mother, that ſo dearely lou'd a Daughter, indeavouring by thoſe ſoft and gentle phraſes, to cure the wound of her minde, which was more then that of her body, With this, poore wretched *Clorinia* began to gather breath, and bewailing her misfortune (which till then ſhe was not able to doe) ſhe did moue the very ſtones to compaſſion, and to take pitie of this her wofull and miſerable condition.

Then they preſently began with great ſecreſie to treate of her Cure. *Valerio* her brother went forth-with to fetch a Surgion, a friend of his, of vvhoſe ſecreſie hee vvas confidently aſſured. The night vvas exceeding darke, and therefore hee tooke a Lanthorne along with him, and as hee was croſsing the ſtreete, it vvas his hap to diſcry *Dorido* a farre off, who in a careleſſe kinde of faſhion was comming along the ſtreete, with purpoſe to goe ſee his Miſtreſſe, being ignorant of vvhat had paſſed. Hee began to call vnto him with a ſad and mournfull voyce, and when hee drew neere vnto him, with a heavy cheere hee ſayd; O my true friend! Whither art thou going? Goeſt thou peradventure to condole vvith vs our great diſaſter, and that Tragicke ſorrow, which muſt ſhorten our life? Haſt thou either ſeene or heard of the like mis-hap vnto ours, and of the vnfortunate accident that hath befalne our deareſt ſiſter *Clorinia*? Woe is mee; yet to thee, that art our true friend, I cannot conceale that, which vvee muſt hide from all the world beſides, For I know aſſuredly, that thou wilt beare a part in our ſorrow, and be a Companion of theſe our miſeries; nay I know thou wilt, as one of vs, vſe all diligence in revenging this wrong, and labour all thou canſt to finde out him, that hath beene the cruell murtherer of my ſiſter. Wilt thou *Dorido*? I am ſure thou vvilt.

Dorido, whileſt hee vvas hearing this ſad ſtorie, ſtood amazed like a man, that had beene bereft of his ſenſes: And it was a wonder hee vvas able to ſtand vpon his legges, being ſo vvord-ſtrooken to the heart as he vvas, but recollecting himſelfe by degrees, which was holpen on by the deſire which hee had to vnderſtand hovv the vvorld vvent, ſtriving to fortifie himſelfe againſt this fierce aſſault, which had already ſhaken the very Wals of his heart, with a troubled voice he began to inquire vvhat the matter vvas.

Valerio, from point to point delivered vnto him all the particulars, and told him that hee was now going to call a Surgion; intreating him, that hee vvould go along vvith him, fearing leaſt the life of *Clorinia*, through too much delay, might runne ſome hazard. *Dorido* accompanied him; and albeit hee had more neede of comfort himſelfe, then to giue comfort vnto others, yet notwithſtanding, framing himſelfe thereunto as well as hee could, at length hee brake thus with him; Friend *Valerio*, this dolefull misfortune of yours, and the Lamentable caſe of your vnfortunate ſiſter *Clorinia*, doth ſo neerely touch mee, and worke that true ſenſe of ſorrow in mee, that no leſſe then to your ſelfe, they may giue me the *Peſame*: and come and condole with me this diſaſtrous

disastrous mischance, for I am so truly sensible thereof, that I dare avow, you haue no advantage of me, nor can your sorrow exceed mine.

But seing our griefe can do vs but little good, and that it is to no end to weepe, and take on for that, vvhich cannot now be holpen; My advice is, that you vvould consult what is to be done in this case; and if I may perswade, I would haue all diligence vsed for the finding out of that Traytor which hath done this villanous Act, to the end that vengeance and full revenge may be taken of him, which was never yet executed vpon any other. This taske you shall put vpon mee, I vvill take this charge to my selfe, and doubt not, but by one meanes or other I shall come to finde it out. Goe you, and call the Surgeon: For it it not fit, where so many things are to be done, wee should be all busied about one and the same thing, especially, that which belongs to my charge, being a businesse, which will require much labour. Let every man take his Qu. and perfect his owne part. Follow you yours, and I will follow mine; and so farewell; for I haue not the patience to deferre it any longer. And so they parted.

Now *Dorido* had a strong beliefe, and did confidently assure himselfe, that *Horatio*, and none but *Horatio*, could be the authour of so great wickednesse and falsehood, induced there-vnto by those many reasons, which did concurre to confirme this perswasion, the least vvhereof vvas a manifest token, and apparant evidence that it was onely his Act, and none but his. Whereupon hee resolued with himselfe, to inflict such a punishment vpon him, as should be equall to that his just disdaine, and answerable to the heinousnesse of his offence.

With this determination hee went home to his owne house; and being entred into his lodging, shutting the doore to him, hee let loose the reines to his teares, grievously lamenting this sad mischance that had thus vnhappily befalne his Mistris.

O *Clorinia* (sayd hee) the delight of my eyes, and the joy of my heart, I see what harme thou hast suffered for my sake; I (vnfortunate I) was the cause thereof. It was that Traytor *Horatio*, that thus deceiu'd thee, whom thou supposedst to haue beene beloued *Dorido*.

O vnhappy Mistris of my life, I haue brought thee to this miserable passe, it is I that haue kill'd thee, and no body else; for it was I that did disturbe thee of thy rest; it was I, that drew thee out from thy retyred and reserved course of life. O accursed chinke! O accursed eyes, that ever yee peep't thereinto! O accursed tongue, that madest the motion, that vvee should there meete, and talke together. O my deare *Clorinia*, *Clorinia*, my life; yet not my life, but my death: since that mine must follow thine: I was the cause of all this ill. Yet will I spare my selfe so much life, as to liue to revenge this notorious wrong; and liue thou too, *Clorinia*, till thou see the vengeance that shall be done vpon this Traytor, which shall be as exemplary, as just: that it may remaine as a memoriall to all succeeding Ages.

And here I solemnely vow to sacrifice to thy sacred and innocent ashes, the impious blood of that vile Traytor *Horatio*. For that one hand which he hath taken from thee, I vvill giue thee two of his. Hee cut off one, that vvas innocent and harmelesse, and I will cut of two that were vvicked and sacrilegious. Let Heaven lengthen thy life so long, till I effect this my purpose, and suffer thee to injoy that recompence, vvhich I do owe vnto thy loue.

And thou (sweete *Clorinia*) pardon so much of the fault, as vvas in mee. And if my death will doe you any pleasure, or that it stand vvith your liking, mine owne hands ere this should haue made vvay there-vnto, and layd it downe at your feete.

With these and other pittifull complaints, did hee bevvaile this heavy accident, vvorthy of eternall teares; and surely sorrovv vvould there and then haue made

made an end of him, ſo extremely had it ſeazed vpon him, and with that violence of paſsion, if his afflicted ſoule had not beene vnder-propt with the deſire of revenge; and thus betweene death and life did hee ſpend that night.

The next day following he went to viſit *Clorinia*; whither when he was come, her Parents, and her Brother began afreſh to renew their teares, imbracing and weeping one over another, till at laſt the father of *Clorinia* began, as well as his griefe would giue him leaue, to ſay; O ſonne *Dorido*, what misfortune can be ſo great, ſo miſerable as ours? What rigour of the heau'ns hath conſpired againſt vs? What infernall fury ever invented the like miſchiefe? What thinkeſt thou of this ſad chance? What deem'ſt thou of our honour? What cloake will cover ſo foule a ſpot? And what revenge may mitigate ſo great a wrong as this? and giue ſatisfaction anſwerable to theſe our ſorrows? Tell vs (I pray) what comfort can we looke for? Or how can we liue without her, who hath given vs life? *Dorido*, not being able to abſtaine from teares, comforting her afflicted Parents, and Brother, told them: We are not now to ſpend the time in teares and lamentations, but in that which may import vs moſt.

And albeit, that which I am willing to propoſe, ought rather to proceed from any body elſe, then my ſelfe, yet the occaſion, and the ſecreſie wherewith it is fit it ſhould be carried, obligeth me there-vnto:

You all know very well, and haue ſeene to your griefes, the generall misfortune that hath befalne vs all, being as well yours, as mine; and rather mine, then yours, for that your ſorrow is joyned vnto mine; which addition makes but the heape of mine owne the bigger. Beſides, I ſee the thred of my life cut off before my face, that now I expect a death as bittter, as I thought it would haue beene pleaſant vnto me, if it had made an end of me, before *Clorinia*. Ye are not ignorant what I am; and I likewiſe know your great worth and quality; which if it ſhall not over-ſway mine, it is the ſingular loue and friendſhip ye haue borne me, that muſt equall the ſcales, laying an everlaſting obligation vpon me to deſerue the ſame. This caſe then I make to bee mine owne; I challenge it as a thing proper vnto me.

And that the world may ſo vnderſtand it, and ſo take it, that which hereafter I ſhall intreat you for by a third perſon, I will now demand of you by way of grace and requeſt: Which is; That you will be pleaſed to giue me *Clorinia* to wife. Wherein ye ſhall doe theſe two things: Firſt, ye ſhall thereby recover your honour. Secondly, ye ſhall execute your revenge by this hand of mine. If heauen ſhall bee ſo propitious and favourable vnto me to bleſſe me with her life, ſhe ſhall liue and remaine with me, though not according as her worth deſerveth, yet anſwerable to that deſire which I haue to ſerue her; making that vp in my loue, which is wanting in my meanes. And if ought ſucceed hereafter in the righting of this wrong, it is fit the world ſhould take notice, that her husband did that where-vnto he was obliged; and not *Dorido*, her parents friend. Make good therefore this my requeſt, for the good which from thence may redound to vs all.

To the Parents, as alſo to the Brother, this did ſeeme to be a very juſt and honeſt motion, and gaue him many thankes for this true teſtimony of his loue, both to them, and their houſe. But becauſe there was one as yet vn-askt, which was to be a principall party in this buſines, which was *Clorinia*, they would ſee if they could draw her to conſent there-vnto. Which when it was broken vnto her, the teares guſhed out of her eyes for very joy, and ſhe ſaid vnto them:

This is that alone, which I hope, will keepe life in me: and if I ſhould buy it at as deare a rate, as death, yet I ſhould thinke it cheape enough, and that I had a good penny-worth of my bargaine. I truſt in God that I ſhall liue contentedly, and dye comfortably. And therefore, I beſeech you, that I may bee

eſpouſed to *Dorido*, according as hee hath deſired. Preſently herevpon they call'd him in, and (when they came to ſee each other) for a good while, they were neither of them able to ſpeake a word, both their hearts were ſo full, and their ſoules ſo overwhelmed; hers with joy, and his with griefe.

That fit over-paſt, they plighted their trothes, and were made man and wife, vſing thoſe diligencies therein vvith the beſt ſecreſie they could, till the time ſhould come, that they might be openly eſpouſed in the Church.

Three dayes were ſpent in this Solemnity, and with this content *Clorinia* ſeemed to be vpon the mending hand. But it was but a lightning before death: for through the ſtore of blood which ſhee loſt, ſhee liu'd not long after. *Dorido* perceiuing, that it was impoſſible that his Spouſe ſhould eſcape with life, to the end that ſhee might die fully contented and ſatisfied, (if there may be any ſuch thing in death:) on the fourth day, holding it now a fit and convenient time, to put that in execution which he had deviſed and plotted with himſelfe, on the fifth he invited *Horatio* to his houſe, as hee had done at other times heretofore. Who truſting in the ſecreſie wherewith he had committed this foule offence, and that there was no talke thereof in the Towne, nor ſo much as a word ſpoken of it, went thither as ſecurely and as boldly, as if he had done no ſuch matter, and without any ſuſpicion or jealouſie at all.

Dorido, to lull him the more a ſleepe, and to make him more ſecure, feigned, not to know of any ſuch thing, hee entertain'd him with a cheerefull looke, laught, and was merry with him, that growing thereby the more confident, hee might the willinger accept of his invitation. *Dorido* had put ſuch a kinde of Confection into one of his Bottles of Wine, that it ſhould caſt him that drunke thereof, into a moſt deepe and profound ſleepe. Which hee ſecretly commanded hee ſhould be ſerved withall at the table, as oft as hee call'd for any Wine. And as hee had commanded, ſo was it ordred. And when hee had even now dined, the laſt morſell being ſcarce out of his mouth, hee ſate mee in his Chaire like one that had beene dead.

Dorido, when hee ſaw hee was ſure enough now in his hands, and that the Fowle could not eſcape the ſnare, binding his legges and armes as hard as hee could for his life, to the legges and armes of the chayre, and having made faſt all the doores of the houſe, hee put to his noſe a kinde of little round ball (like a Pomander) made for that purpoſe, which hee had no ſooner ſmelt vnto, and taken the ſent thereof vp into his head, but that hee preſently awaked from that deepe ſleepe, wherein hee had before beene buryed. And finding himſelfe bound in that faſt manner, without being able to wagge, hee knew then that his puniſhment was at hand, for that hand which hee had ſo cruelly cut off. *Dorido* was as quicke in cutting off both his hands, as hee was nimble in vnjoynting that of hers. That done, throwing a cord about his necke, making vſe of one of the corners of the Chayre, hee gaue him the *Garrote*, wherewith hee was ſtrangled to death. The next morning, before it was peepe of day, hee droue him along before him in the Chayre vpon a Horſe, till he came to the houſe, where *Clorinia* dwelt, and putting a piece of Timber Gibbet-wiſe, into that hole in the Wall, vvhere hee had committed this odious and vn-manly act, hee left him there hanging with his hands ty'd about his necke in a ſtring, (like a childes paire of Mittons,) and ſome verſes hanging at his Hempen chaine, to giue ſatisfaction to the world, vpon what reaſon this was done. And ſo *Dorido* when hee had thus revenged himſelfe vpon *Horatio*, left *Rome*, vvith purpoſe never to ſee it againe; thinking with himſelfe, that without his *Clorinia*, neither Country, nor life, nor any thing elſe could be comfortable vnto him. And about the breake of day, when this ſpectacle began to be ſeene, and talkt of, *Clorinia* within a little after finiſhed her life.

This lamentable Accident cauſed great both ſorrow and admiration in the Embaſſadour. But his houre vvas come, that he muſt to the Palace, which made

made them breake off for that preſent, and to take their leaues. I thanke God a thouſand times, that hee made mee not a Louer: And if I had not beene a Gameſter, peradventure I ſhould haue done worſe, as you ſhall ſee in the ſecond part of my life, wherevnto (if my firſt haue pleaſ'd thee) I invite thee.

The Verſes, vvhich were hung about *Horatioes* necke, turned into our vulgar tongue, ſound thus:

I was raſh Hee; blind with jealous loue,
Seeing my friend, preferr'd in my Loues choice,
(Counterfeiting his Signall, cloathes and voyce)
Whom deepe Diſdaine did to foule hatred moue.

To Heau'n and Men, I cruell traytor grew;
Faire Clorinia *(with innocence bedeckt)*
I wrong'd (vrg d by my Loue, and her Neglect.)
Whoſe Story, may all eyes with teares bedew.

Her Hand and Life (that I on her might wrecke
Revenge) I did cut off: Cauſe of her end,
Her Hate to mee, and loue vnto my friend,
Hee hung theſe hands of mine about my necke.

Was Party, Witneſſe, and Iudge: Whoſe ſentence
Was too ſmall a puniſhment for my Offence.

FINIS.

THE

THE ROGVE:

OR,

THE SECOND PART OF THE LIFE OF *GVZMAN* DE *ALFARACHE.*

WRITTEN IN SPANISH
by MATHEO ALEMAN,

Servant to his Catholike Majestie, and borne in SEVILL.

Printed by W.T. *for* ROBERT ALLOTT.
Ann. Dom. 1630.

TO THE CVRIOVS READER.

ALbeit I was ſtill afraid to expoſe this my Second Part to the light, after it had bin ſome yeares finiſhed and pervſed, (though more had beene too few, for the preſuming to publiſh it) and that it were better for me to vphold the good opinion gotten by my firſt, (which with open armes was generally ſo kindly embraced by all) then to hazard their good wills by this ſecond; I was in doubt with my ſelfe, whether I were beſt to put my reputation vpon ſo tickliſh a pin; either becauſe it ſhould not perhaps be well accepted, or that I might chance to fall ſhort of my deſire, miſsing the marke whereat I aymed: For commonly where the greateſt care is taken, thoſe that are vnfortunate, are wont to faile moſt. Yet notwithſtanding, it being with me, as with that bad ſervant, who with blowes and kicks, is awaked out of his deep ſleepe; being rouzed vp by ſo violent a ſtroake, that hapned to my ſelfe, which is wont to befall lazie and ſlothfull perſons; to doe one thing twice over. For having beene too prodigall in communicating my papers, & the conceptions of my braine, they caught me when I was vpon my wings. So that ſeeing my ſelfe (if I may lawfully vſe that phraſe) robbed and defrauded, I was enforced to fall a-freſh to my labour, ſeeking out ſome new ſupply of moneys, wherewithall to pay my debts, & to diſingage my word, which I had formerly paſt. So that by this meanes I was driven to differ, as much as poſſibly I could, from that which I had written before. Surely it was *Eſaus*

owne over-ſight,ſome peculiar ſlip or fault of his,that being tyred out in the chaſe, and killing of his game, gaue occaſiou to *Iacob* to ſteale away his bleſſing from him.

Truly,I muſt ingeniouſly acknowledge in this my Competitor,Concurrent,or Corriuall (who ere he be) his great learning, his nimble wit, his deepe judgement,his pleaſant conceits,and his generall knowledge in all humane and diuine letters, and that his diſcourſes throughout, are of that qualitie and condition, that I doe much envie them, and ſhould be proud that they were mine. But by the way, let him giue me leaue to tell him (which is no more then what others ſay) that if vpon any other occaſion ſaving this, hee would haue beene pleaſed to make vſe of theſe his good parts,ſo honourable would his paines haue therein appeared,that the graueſt perſon that is , neede not to haue beene aſhamed to diſcover both his name and his face; but to deale after this manner, was to foiſt into (*caſtile*, the coyne of *Aragon*. But herein,that ſucceeded vnto him, which vſually (we ſee) befalleth many women,whoſe parts and members, conſidered ſeverally by themſelues and apart, are of that rare and ſingular perfection, that deſire cannot wiſh it more,nor the penſill expreſſe it better.But afterwards,when all theſe diſtinct parts ſhall be conjoyned, made one whole peece,and examined together,they fall ſhort in the making vp of faire and well-favour'd face.But hee proceeded therein diſcreetly;taking that courſe, which they vſe to doe,who goe(preſuming on the actiueneſſe of their perſon)with their Lance in their wreſt, masked and diſguiſed, to encounter their adverſary. But becauſe theſe are things of adventure, and depend much vpon fortune,if they hit right, they make themſelues knowne, but if they miſſe, they goe away aſhamed,and you ſhall never ſee the face of them.Well,whatſoever hath beene done in this kinde, or howſoever carried by him,he hath inforced mee to defend my ſelfe. For that he argueth; That the great paines that hee had taken, and ſo worthy of excuſe, in following the tracke of my ſteps, and the imitation of my workes, grew firſt from this, that hee eſteemed them to be good. I pay him againe in the ſame money,

money, by following of him. Onely we differ in this; That he hath made a ſecond part out of my firſt; and I onely imitated his ſecond. And ſhall doe the like in the third, if being elder hand, he ſhall vye vpon me. Wherevnto if I be put, I ſhall not refuſe to ſee it. Aſſuring my ſelfe, that I ſhall not be ſhut out, but haue a place amongſt the reſt. For the field being ſo large, through the pleaſantneſſe of the ſubject, wherevnto the ſharpneſſe of the appetite will likēwiſe giue ſome helpe, more parts will daily come out of this booke, then Conies out of their Berryes, and more gloſſes made therevpon, then on the faire *Angelica* in the dayes of *Caſtileio* But I adviſe in this caſe, that they Would not be too nimble-fingerd in taking pen in hand, till they haue wearyed their eyes with perving, and inlarged their vnderſtanding, that it may be made capable to receiue whatſoever ſhall bee brought vnto it. Nor would I haue them to write, till they be well read, if they will attaine to hit the white, and not ſhoot beſide the butt. For our *Guzman* hauing purpoſed to play the good Student in the Latine and Greeke tongues, and in the ſtudie of Rhetoricke, and hauing gone forward in his ſtudies with a full purpoſe to profeſſe Religion; to take him now out of *Alcada*, thus on the ſodaine, ſo quite alienated from his former inclination, and ſo bad a Proficient, were *cortar el hilo a la tela*, to cut the thread before the web were woven; contrary to that which is pretended in this Hiſtorie of his Life; which was onely to ſerue as a ſentinell, to diſcover all ſorts of Vices, & to draw treacle out of divers poyſons: That is to ſay; To deſcribe vnto you a man, perfect in his parts and perſon, puniſhed with troubles, and afflicted with miſeries, and falling afterwards into (of all other) the baſeſt roguerie, is put into the Gallies, where his wings were clipt, that he could not get thence in haſte. Let vs ſlip it over, That he could not be called a moſt famous theefe, for the ſtealing of three cloakes, howbeit two of them were very faire ones, & of much value, but the other a poore one: Let vs likewiſe omit, That it is improper to fabulous Hiſtories, to introduce publike & knowne perſons, naming them by their proper names: And let vs come to

that obligation, which he had to returne to *Genoa* to revenge the wrong wherewith he threatned his kindred in his last chapter of the first Part: And many other things which without giuing satisfaction, he passeth ouer in divers different fashions, altering and reiterating not onely the accident it self, but even the very words vsed therein. So that vndoubtedly I am of opinion, that it is a thing of more difficultie, then every man is aware of, to vndertake the pursuit of another mans discourse. For it leadeth its vndertaker along even from his purposed, and first intended course, to those things, whose chase he cannot choose but follow. Nay should hee come to conferre mouth to mouth, with the party himselfe, It is impossible but he should goe out of the way: For there are many conceits, that are thrust into by-corners, and there hid; wherewith even its owne proper Author is much troubled, vpon a sudden and present occasion, with calling them to minde, time having worne them almost out; whereby men may fall into mistakes, quoting *K. Don Fernando* of *Zamora*, instead of the *Infanta Dona Vrraca*, his daughter. This doth not argue want in the vnderstanding, nor is it a defect, that another should jumpe vpon my conceit, & think my thoughts. But I say it is rashnes in him, that will offer to run with that man, who must needes out-strip him through the others slowvnes of footmanship, or that hee runnes not right vpon the marke. I here the phrase be not so significant, the stile not so loftie, the language not so sweet, the proverbs not so pithie, the stories not so pleasant, nor so cleanly carryed as I could wish; My excuse must be; Many oversights cannot be avoided in the writing but of a little; which will aske a larger time to correct and amend them. But having finished my third Part, and following *Horace* his counsell therein, that I may be the better able to offer it to your view (which shall be shortly) I could not excuse this passage, as being very necessary for those ends which I pretend.

Accept of my good will, which is to serue thee. For the
times are not still alike; nor the starres alwayes
favourable; nor *Calliope* continually
set vpon the merry pin.

ANCI-

ANCIANT LVYS DE VALDES HIS ELOGIVM To *Mateo Aleman.*

AS if Armes, and Learning were not Sisters, some pratling Sophister seemeth (me thinkes) to tell me, That I should doe well to follow my military profession, and let Elogiums *alone, leaving them to Schollers, it seeming vnto him, that these two, are of too different a nature, to consort together. But I shall be able to point forth vnto him, not one, but many* Cæsars, *as dextrous in Letters, as disciplin'd in Armes. And that I may take away all occasion from such Cavillers, of alledging against mee, That I am too forward in vsurping the Office of an* Oratour, *taxing mee of too much boldnesse and inconsiderate rashnesse, I will march as farre off as I can, from their dangerous style of* flattery *and* ostentation, *safely retyring my selfe into mine owne Trenches, and there to defend and maintaine the truth, a thing as proper to a Souldier, as is his Sword and Target, or his Pike and Corslet.*

I will be but the Eccho, not the Chronicler, of what I haue seene, heard, treated, and knowne abroad in the world; for I haue beene in my time in many, and different Nations, and Countries. I will goe on, and comply with my desire, not fearing the face of Calumniation, *because I know my selfe to be dis-interessed, and a free-man. For loue, interest, and feare, are those three ropes that halter Iustice.*

And for that it is so just a thing, to reward mens labours, encouraging the vertuous with a shout; as they doe in warre, giving it them as a thankfull pay, which being truely deserved, is a true treasure. I haue therefore beene willing, seeing so many so drowzy in the businesse, to take vp the pen for them, though least of all obliged thereunto in the common opinion of the world, by reason of my profession. But no man shall out-strip me herein. Wee are all beholding to Mateo Aleman, *wee are all indebted vnto him, and of all he doth justly deserue condigne commendation For wee must acknowledge him to be the first, that till this very day, hath in such a kinde of style as his, come to discover and excommunicate Vice: (with such a sweetnesse and softnesse) which being to them a venemous Aspe, robs them of their liues, when they are in their sweetest sleepe.*

ELOGIVM.

Many Physitians minister to their sicke Patients, pils of Aloes for to purge their head, but few or none of them haue taken pleasure in chewing of them, nor so much as to touch them with their tongue, neither haue they beene able so to sweeten them, that moving a desire to to eate them, they should procure a generall appetite. Onely Mateo Aleman, *hath taught vs the way to tast things with delight, instructing vs by other mens actions how to governe ours: with no small hurt to his health and estate, having much wasted both the one and the other by his painfull studies. And wee may very well say of him, That never Souldier had a poorer purse, and a richer minde, nor a life more vnquiet, and full of trouble, then was his; and onely, because hee accounted it a greater honour vnto him, to be held a poore Philosopher then a rich flatterer. He left (as it is well knowne to the world) voluntarily, and of his owne accord, the Kings Palace, where hee served almost twenty yeares, being the best, and as it were the very creame of his age, in the Office of* Contador de resultas, *to King* Philip *the 2. and in many other waighty businesses, besides visitations and surveyes, which were committed vnto him, in all which hee behaved himselfe so well, that hee evermore gaue wonderfull good satisfaction, proceeding so vprightly, that hee grew to be so poore, that not being able any longer, by reason of his wants and necessities, to continue these his services, hee retyred himselfe from that course of life, to one of lesser both estimation and attendance. And though hee wanted the goods of fortune, yet was hee rich in the endowments of the soule, which are of much more estimation and price, then worldly pelfe, whereof no man could more truly boast himselfe.*

Let the tongue of men be listned vnto, and yee shall heare nothing so common as the publishing of his praise: no lesse in Spaine *(where it is no small wonder to haue a Prophet liked in his owne Countrey) then in* Italy, France, Flanders, *and* Germany, *which mine owne eares and eyes can truly testifie and avow. And I might (if neede were) boldly sweare, that I never heard his name mentioned but with the addition of some honourable Epithite, even to the giuing of him this noble Attribute,* El Espoñol divino, The divine Spaniard.

Who, like him, in lesse then three yeares, and in his owne life time, saw his owne workes translated into so many sundry languages, that like your Cartillas *in* Castile, *his bookes ran posting for* Italy *and* France? *What Authour ever writ, who at the very time when hee was willing to bring forth his Labours to the Light, they haue scarce come forth of the wombe of the Presse, but that they were strangled in the mid-wifes hands, and left for dead. And these his workes, that came forth into the world aliue, and did breathe; and injoy their life, as these of this our Authour, they flew abroad with such swift and nimble vvings, holpen by those of Fame, that vvith extraordinary speede they past through all parts of* Christendome, *insomuch that there was not one Province, whereinto they haue not flowne, and receiued where ever they came, most honourable entertainment?*

What vvorkes can yee instance in, that in so short a time, haue had so many Impressions? The vvhole number of those bookes that haue beene printed amounting to more then to fifty thousand volumes. There haue beene (of my knowledge) six and twenty severall impressions, vvhereof hee was rob'd

whereby

whereby others became rich and the Owner of them, poore. Against whom but him, did yee ever finde the gates of Murmuration *shut? Who, but hee, had so perfectly learned the way to beat Malice out of the field, and to put her to flight? If this be so; or if (as by evident Mathematicall demonstrations) it shall require a necessary proofe of witnesses, let the best of the world be brought forth, I meane the famous Vniversitie of* Salamanca, *where being celebrated there, by the best wits of that Academy, I haue heard many speake of him, as the* Grecians *of their* Demosthenes, *and the* Romans *of their* Cicero; *reputing* Mateo Aleman *as the Prince of eloquence in the Spanish tongue, as well for the modesty, and dextrousnes of his style, as for his elegancies, and choyce phrases. Of which opinion, was a religious* Augustine, *as discreet, as learned; who maintained in that Vniversitie, in a publike Act, that there was not from the beginning of the world, to this present day, that the first Part of this was printed, any booke of like nature to this, (being no divine subject) of greater either profit or pleasure.*

Valenciano *testifieth this truth; who (denying his name) falsly styles himselfe* Mateo Lujan, *that hee might be taken for* mateo Aleman. *And albeit hee might parallel him in his name, and Countrey, yet that he should be the same man in his workes, it was not possible. Onely therein his malice may be discovered, and that hee did that he did, moved thereunto out of the benefit that hee should reape thereby: which if it had fallen out (as he expected) had beene no small matter; But it fell out, (as fit it was) contrary to his expectation. For in that very selfe-same yeare that it came forth, I bought one in* Flanders, *which in the Frontispice, had it's Impression in* Castile, *taking it to be authenticall and good, till I had read a little of it, and then it was not long, that his eares (a) shot out of his skin, and so came to be knowne what he was.*

But to let this passe, and to speake of those that admiring such a deale of depth and profoundnes both of wit and learning, being wonderfull willing to haue some learned and graue Fathers to adopt this childe of his begetting, they all laboured to seeke out some one, who for his quickenes of wit, greatnes of Schollership, and singularity of eloquence, might be able to vndertake so rare and admirable a piece of worke; all which doth argue the worth thereof, and redound to the greater glory of the true Author. And then shall they free themselues of this doubt, when they shall haue perused his S. Antonio de Padua, *which out of a vow that hee had made, to set forth his life and miracles, made him so slow in publishing this his second Part. They shall see how miraculously he treateth of them, and it may almost be counted a miracle, if we will but consider how wonderfully hee carryed himselfe in the printing of them. For putting his papers from hand to hand to the Presse, and wanting matter for that dayes worke, I knew for certaine, that over-night hee composed so much stuffe, as did serue to keepe the Presse going all the next day following: for hee was troubled at that time with divers other businesses, which did necessarily require his helpe and assistance. And in those short houres of the night, he was seene to imploy himselfe with a great deale of diligence, as well in the affaires of his other businesses, as in the ordering and sorting of papers to send them to the Printers, as also, in the composing of more matter for the Presse, besides*

a Mostrar las orejas fuera del pellejo, *is metaphorically an Asse.*

sides his attendance vpon other things, importing his owne person and house. Every one of which would haue well required a whole man, free from all other incumbrances. And that, which he wrote in this manner, was all the whole third Booke. And though every-where through out in all the rest of his writings, he hath show'd the Ocean of his wit, being that therein they shall finde a most rich treasure of diverse Histories memorized, and expressed with all the elegancie that can be devised, yet this is that enamelling, that beautifies that Iewell, and sets it best forth. As all those haue affirmed, who had the good hap to haue a sight thereof.

What shall I say of this his Second Part of Guzman de Alfarache, and in how short a time hee made it? Which seemeth almost a thing impossible, being so differing from his former, which he was forced to change and to alter casting it in a new molde, for the reasons before delivered. This will render sufficient testimonie of his worth, and bridle those rash tongues and head-strong spirits, which shall kicke against him, and vainly and foolishly runne on to the wronging of their judgements. If all that I haue said be truth, if the learned approue it, the vulgar deny it not, if the world confesseth it; (for here every one may meete with that, which shall please his appetite, which Horace holds so difficult a thing,) if vnder a prophane name hee doth write so divinely, that he may serue for a bridle to the bad, for a spurre to the good, for studie to the learned, for entertainment to ordinary capacities, and in generall, for a fine Politicall, Ethicall, and Oeconomicall Schoole, and soe full of sweetnesse and pleasure, that it may invite any man to looke thereinto, and to dwell vpon that, which hee shall finde there set downe, both for pleasure, and for profit. What do I throw vpon him? or what do I in this, more then to pay him that, which hee so justly deserveth? O happy Seuill, that may'st amongst thy many Greatnesses, nay one of thy greatest, glory in this thy Sonne, whose laborious endevours, and indefatigable studies, (equalling the very best both Latines and Grecians,) haue thus truly merited and deserved, that all the nations of the world, crowning his head with Bayes, and celebrating his name, should willingly, and with a great deale of triumph, sing forth his due praise.

VPON

VPON THE BOOKE
and the Author thereof.

POore *Guzmans* life, the map of Vice and Sinne,
Story'ed by *Aleman*, is as a Voyce
From Heav'en, shewing how thou shouldst make thy choyce.
The word, *Shunne thou to be what I haue bin.*
Who stands here as a marke; that thou may'st see
Where his ship was drown'd; How the same was split,
More through lacke of Wisedome, then want of Wit.
Which was the cause of all his Misery.
The dainty style of this his pleasing quill
By *Guzmans* roguish life, adviseth thee
What an vpright and honest life should be.
How this, doth leade to good; how that to ill.
How slight so e're this fiction seeme to be,
None can be fuller of Morality.

FRATRIS CVSTODII LVPI, LVSITANI,
Ordinis Sanctissimæ Trinitatis de libri vtilitate,
EPIGRAMMA.

SVnt duo quæpariter virtus perfecta requirit:
Quòd pravè nunquam, quòd benè semper agas.
Hæc tibi, si cupias, vllo ne tempore desint,
Auctoris geminum perlege, Lector, opus.
Antoni *nunquam ponat tua dextera librum,*
Nec tibi Guzmani *pagina displiceat.*
Si referas divi mores: infanda prophani
Si scelera adjcias: omnia puncta feres.
Reddite Matthæo *grato pro munere grates:*
Quo duce conspicuum sit pietatis iter.
Planius hoc fiet, postquam ex incudibus Auctor
Sustulerit plenos vtilitate libros.

AD MATTHAEVM ALEMANVM
de suo *Guzmano.*
ΤΕΤΡΑΔΙΣΤΙΧΟΝ.
Ruy Fernandez de Almada.

VIlibus exemplis Pharij quid grandia celant?
Planaque cur simulant abditiore typo?
Nempè vetant Sophiæ mysteria prodere vulgo,
Intimiusque animo pressa figura manet.
His ducibus Guzmane *geris, ceu* Proteus *alter,*
Plana sub obscuro, magna minore typo.
Ergò cum scitè Μαθαῖ μαθήματα *dones*
Te sibi μάταιον, *Hispalis alma canat.*

IOAN-

IOANNIS RIBERII LVSITANI
ad AVTHOREM,
ENCOMIASTICHON.

LAus, Matthæe, tibi supereſt poſt fata perennis,
Quam nullo minuet tempore, tempus edax
Orbe pererrato virtutem extendere factis,
Factum ingens: opus eſt Martis, *&* Artis *opus,*
Fortunam major variam ſuperare labore,
Herculeis *major* Quiribus *iſte labor.*
Majus opus, major labor eſt coluiſſe Minervam:
Major & ex proprio condere Marte *libros.*
Heroas decorare ſolent duo nomina, Mars, Ars:
Munera tu pariter Martis, *&* Artis *habes.*
Mars *dedit invictum, quo tendis ad ardua, pectus:*
Excoluit mentem docta Minerva *tuam.*
Ingenij monimenta tui ſuper æthera nota,
Teſtantur larga præſtita dona manu.
Multa Hiſpana canit Muſa: atqui nullus Ibera
Dogmata pinxit adhuc Φθέγεται ἐν μάτηδ ὁ
Teſtis hic eſt codex modico qui venditur ære,
Attalicas ſuperant, quas dabit emptus, opes.
Cujus ab aſpectu morſas compreſſit inanes
Invidia, heu multis injurioſa nimis.
Zoile tranſverſo calamo, qui vulnera figis,
I procul, en contra numina bella paras.
Contra Mercurium, Phœbum, *contraq;* Mineruam
Mortalis poterit tela movere manus?
Quiſquis avarus ades, redimis qui ſanguine gemmas,
Gemma tibi parvo venditur ære, veni.
Hauris ab effoſſa pretioſa pericula terra:
Hic liber arcanas fundet, & addet opes.
Decolor eſt dives, fulvo quod pallet in auro,
Non ſunt divitiæ delitiæque ſimul.
At liber hic auri venis qui pulcher abundat,
Nunc tibi delitias, divitiaſque dabit.
Aureus hic certe gemma eſt pretioſa libellus,
Quis tenui gemmam reſpuat ære datam?

TO

To the Tranſlator.

LIue (*Guzman*) to a Caveat; Liue to praiſe
This languag'd Man, who hath renew'd thy dayes
By a new birth. Tranſlating thee, as tho
The *Engliſh Rogue*, were not the *Picaro*,
But a more liuely peece. Loe, what Art hath done.
Here the *Reflection's* brighter then the *Sunne*.
One Language is too narrow to containe
The boundleſſe raſcall-froath of *Guzmans* braine.
It cry'd for more. This Author, hearing it,
Imployes his Penſill, drawes it to the quicke
In Engliſh colours: and ſo ſets it forth,
As *Guzmans* ſhame, and furtherer of worth.
For me, to *Guzman*-it in Rime, or to rehearſe
His Proſe; were but to ſpoyle a *Rogue* in Verſe.
No: Let the Proſe remaine: Let it commend
Him, (whom I dare not praſe) becauſe a Friend.

E. B.

To the Tranſlator.

BVt is the *Rogue* reviu'd? Is *Guzman* made
A Spaniſh-Engliſh Raſcall by his Trade?
'Tis ſo. And (as our home-bred *Spaniards* gheſſe)
Hee's printed liuelieſt in the Engliſh Preſſe.
Tongues, haue but one *Horizon*, if they proue
Each others true Interpreters, and moue
Alike to all the world. But if they feare
To joyne; each Language has his *Hemiſphere*.
And ſo had *Guzman*. But this Engliſh ſtraine,
Makes it appeare to Vs, as well as *Spaine*.
Thus, like a blazing Starre, each Author is
Stretcht to a ſtreaming length of Languages.

To the Tranſlator.

WOuld any man ſit ſtill, and yet ſurvay
The world at large? Or ſtudy to betray
All humane *Quiddities*? Or would he view
All men vnmaskt, diſcerning falſe from true?
Would any man ſee *Proteus*? Would hee ſee
Proteus againe, and ſay; that this is hee?
Or ſee the Moone? And when ſhee waxes light,
Know her to be the ſame, at ſecond ſight?
In this ſame Optick-Art, who ſtriues to thriue,
Let him vſe *Guzman* as a *Perſpectiue*.

Guzman

Guzman, is all the World; know him alone,
And then yee know a Multitude in One.
The *Spaniſh* lim's him: But this *Engliſh* phraſe,
Adds life and colour; and prolongs his dayes.
The *Spaniſh* was too ſmall a Mapp But this
Drawes him at large; and ſhewes him as hee is.
Nor let the ſubject of this booke ſeeme ill,
Becauſe 'tis *Guzman*. Painters, ſhew their skill
No more in *Beauty* then *Deformity*:
No leſſe in *Devils* then a *Deity*.
All's one to them. Nor doe they thinke it more
To draw fayre *Virgins*, then a *Blackamore*.
Why then, ſhould not a *Raſcall* honour thoſe,
Whoſe Language ſhowes him to the life in Proſe?
Reade him: and as his labour ſhall appeare,
Commend his Pen by which hee landed here.

Edw. Burton.

To the worthy Gentleman the Tranſlator.

SIR, I embrace th' occaſion and am glad,
After that worthy mention I haue had
From both our equall Friends, of you, I finde
A meanes to know the perſon with the minde.
By what you giue vs here, you, from a wrong
Wherewith ſhe travel'd, vindicate our Tongue.
The *Spaniſh Rogue*? Why twas a *Ladd* ſo hye
So full of *Nationall propriety*,
Sententious and *Proverbiall*; that his *Nation*
Would ſooner ſheath them in the *Iriſh* faſhion
Then he could put on *Engliſh*. As if here
Our Language were but juſt as one poore Shire
For one of his profeſſion to walke in.
This Miſt, wherein ſo many men haue bin,
You haue diſperſ'd. And till an *Engliſh ſtraine*
Be taught (as well as this) the tongue of *Spaine*,
Our Nephews ſhall reproach it to their Heires,
This way our *Wits* haue over-maſter'd theirs.

W. Browne.

The Contents of the Second Part.

THE FIRST BOOKE.

CHAP. I. GVzman de Alfarache *excuſeth the proceſſe of his diſcourſe, craveth attention, giues notice of his intent; ſheweth that Lying of all other things is the worſt He treats of the ill government of great men; Of Courtiers, and their vices: Of the* Spaniards *loue to Radiſhes. Of the order and end of this Worke.*

CHAP. II. Guzman *tells what place he ſerved in, in the houſe of his Lord Embaſſador: And that Fooles and Ieſters, are both fit and profitable for Princes: falling into a deſcription of their conditions and qualities.*

CHAP III. Guzman *recounteth that which hapned vnto him with a Captaine and a Doctor at a banquet, which the Embaſſadour his Lord made.*

CHAP. IV. *The Doctor finding himſelfe aggrieued, that* Guzmanillo *had wronged him in the preſence of ſo many Gentle-men, would be revenged of him. The Spaniſh Embaſſadour takes vp the quarrell: The French cauſing another of the Gueſts, that was there at table, to relate an accident that befell the Conſtable of* Caſtile, Don Aluaro de Luna.

CHAP. V. *A Roman Matron, not knowing how to free her ſelfe (without ſuffering in her honour) from the perſwaſions of* Guzman, *who ſollicited her in his Lords behalfe, the French Embaſſadour, put a jeſt vpon him, which was the occaſion of a ſecond diſgrace that afterwards befell him.*

CHAP. VI. Guzman de Alfarache *recounteth, how in the houſe, whereinto he had withdrawne himſelfe, to make himſelfe cleane, another diſgrace befell him, and many other misfortunes. And that which paſſed afterwards, betweene him and his Lord the Embaſſadour, with whom he diſcourſed of politike and graue matters.*

CHAP. VII. *The jeſt being publikely knowne through* Rome, *which befell* Guzman, *together with the ill ſucceſſe that hee had with the* Bore; *for very ſhame he departs from thence, and goes for* Florence. *In which journey, a thiefe enters into friendſhip with him, that he might the better vnder that colour, rob him of all that he had.*

CHAP. VIII. Guzman de Alfarache *diſcourſeth of Deceit. He departs from* Rome. *Hee deſires to ſee* Siena, *where certaine theeues meet with his trunkes, which he had ſent away before, and rob him of all that he had.*

CHAP. IX. Guzman de Alfarache, *not recovering his loſt goods, ſhrewdly complaines of the ſmall puniſhment that is laid vpon theeues. Wherein hee delivereth many things worthy the noting.*

THE SECOND BOOKE.

CHAP. I. GVzman de Alfarache, *leaues* Siena, *and goes for* Florence. *Hee meets with* Sayavedra, *whom hee takes into his ſervice. And before he comes to* Florence, *he recounts vnto him on the way, many admirable things concerning that Citie. And when he was arriued there, he ſhewes him all, that was worth the ſeeing.*

CHAP. II. Guzman de Alfarache *goes to* Bologna *in purſuit of* Alexandro, *who had ſtolne his trunkes from him; Whither, when he was come, going about to impriſon* Alexandro, *himſelfe was clapt vp.*

CHAP. III. Guzman de Alfarache, *diſcourſeth on the injuſtice, which ſome Iudges doe, blinded by gaine, or by paſſion.*

CHAP.

CHAP. IV. Guzman de Alfarache, *being freed out of prison, fals to gaming gets money, Wherevpon he resolues with himselfe to goe to* Milan.
CHAP. V. Guzman de Alfarache *trauelling towards* Milan, Sayauedra *vpon the way, recounts his owne life vnto him.*
CHAP. VI. Sayauedra *meets in* Milan *with a friend of his that serv'd a Merchant;* Guzman de Alfarache *layes a witty plot how to rob him.*
CHAP. VII. *The robbing of the Merchant of* Milan, *as* Guzman de Alfarache *could haue wisht it.* Aguilera *shares so much with him, as of right belonged vnto him: And hee and his servant* Sayauedra *goe to* Genoa.
CHAP. VIII. Guzman de Alfarache *comes to* Genoa, *where being knowne by his kindred, he is feasted by them. Hee perswades every one to liue vertuously; And showes the hurt, which Murmurers, Hypocrites, and false witnesses, bring to mens soules, honours, & riches: He delivereth the great profit, we shall gaine, by avoyding such venemous* Basiliskes. *And concludes with telling vs, who are true theeues indeed.*
CHAP. IX. Guzman de Alfarache *robs his Vncle and Kinsmen in* Genoa, *and imbarkes himselfe in the Gallies that were to goe for* Spaine.
CHAP. X. Guzman *sayling toward* Spaine, Sayauedra *by reason of a great storme, growes Sea-sicke. Hee fals into a Calenture or burning feuer. Hee waxes light-headed, and looseth his wits. Hee cryes out, that he is* Guzman, *and growing mad, throwes himselfe into the Sea, where he is drowned.*

THE THIRD BOOKE.

CHAP. I. GUzman de Alfarache, *having taken his leaue of Captaine* Favelo, *telling him that hee was to goe for* Sevill, *makes for* Saragoça, *where hee peruses the statutes of* Gotam College, *otherwise called,* The Hospitall of Fooles.
CHAP II. Guzman de Alfarache *goes from* Saragoça, *& comes to* Madrid; *where he turnes Merchant, and is marryed. He breakes his credit, and turnes bankrupt. He treats of womens subtile trickes. And of the inconuenience of counter writings; and of their remedie.*
CHAP. III. Guzman de Alfarache *prosecutes the successe of his marriage, till such time as his wife dyed, and how her dowry returned backe to her father in Law Hee discourseth of bad wiues, and the hurt they doe their husbands.*
CHAP. IV. Guzman *being now a widower, resolues to goe to* Alcala de Henarez, *to studie the Arts, and Diuinity, that he might make himselfe fit to say Masse. And having fulfilled all his tearmes, and duly heard his Lectures, hee leaues all and marries againe.*
CHAP. V. Guzman de Alfarache *leaues off his studies; he goes to liue at* Madrid; *he carries his wife with him; from whence they were both banished.*
CHAP. VI. Guzman *and his wife come to* Sevill: *Hee findes his mother to be now somewhat ancient, and well strucken in yeares. His wife gets her away to* Italy *with one of the Captaines of the Gallies, leaving him alone to himselfe, and exceeding poore: wherevpon hee falls to his old trade of theeving.*
CHAP. VII. Guzman *being preferred to a Gentle-womans service, robs her: Vpon this theft hee is apprehended and condemned to the Gallies during life.*
CHAP. VIII. Guzman de Alfarache *is taken out of the prison of* Sevill, *to be carried to the Port, to be put into the Gallies He recounteth that which befell him on the way; as likewise in the Gallies.*
CHAP. IX. Guzman de Alfarache *prosecutes that which hapned vnto him in the Gallies: And by what meanes he came to be freed from thence.*

THE ROGVE,
OR,
THE SECOND PART OF THE LIFE OF GVZMAN DE ALFARACHE.

The first Booke.

Wherein, hee recounteth what befell him, from the time that he ſerved his Maſter the Lord Embaſſadour, till he left *Rome*.

CHAP. I.

Guzman de Alfarache *excuſeth the proceſſe of his diſcourſe, craveth attention, gives notice of his intent; ſheweth, that Lying, of all other things is the worſt. Hee treats of the ill government of Great men; Of Courtiers, and their Vices. Of the Spaniards loue to Radiſhes. Of the order and end of this Worke.*

COme, let vs away. Thou haſt now baited and refreſht thy ſelfe in the Inne; Come, ſay: Ariſe, and let vs be gone, if thou beeſt willing to haue my Company, and that I ſhould doe thee ſervice in this journey; though there is another journey that I muſt goe through with, for whoſe happy end I goe travelling through theſe ſtony and deſart places. *Company makes the way leſſe tedious.*

Through theſe craggy Rockes, and vneven wayes, beſet with Buſhes and Bryers, I doubt not but I ſhall make this journey ſeeme eaſie vnto thee, with that aſſured promiſe which I ſhall be able to make vnto thee, of bringing thee ſafe to the end of thy deſire. *The Author goes excuſing himſelfe.*

Pardon my bold proceeding, and taxe me not of incivility, that I treat with thee in this manner; I confeſſe that I faile in that reſpect which is due vnto ſuch a one as thou art.

But conſider, I pray, that what I ſay, it is not ſpoken to thee, but that thou ſhould'ſt reprehend others, vvho perhaps haue as much neede of reproofe as my ſelfe.

I goe talking at randome, (like thoſe that play at blind-man-buffe) and thou maiſt very well tell me, that my tongue runs ryot, and that I talke like a foole, or a mad man, becauſe I ſhoot my bolts without feare or wit, and vnadviſedly throw the ſtone out of my hand, not knowing where it may light, or the harme it may doe.

But I ſhall anſwere this, with that which a foole once ſaid, that fell a throwing of ſtones, who as oft as he threw, would cry out aloud, ſaying, Take heed, take heede, my Maſters, for it cannot fall amiſſe; where-ever it light, it muſt needes hit right. So I likewiſe tell thee, *Que como tengo las hechas, tengo ſoſpechas.* That if I haue ſate vpon any bodies skirts, or ſhall chance to ſit cloſer vnto them, I haue reaſon to ſuſpect, that they will pay mee home if they can. For he that reprehends other mens faults, cannot but liue in feare of being told his owne.

Proverb.

Chi riprende l'altrui diffetto, viue con ſoſpetto.

Proverb a Mal ſeria, ſi todos los Coſtales fueſſen tales.

I imagine vvith my ſelfe, that all men are juſt ſuch men as I am; weake, facill, and full of naturall paſſions; nay, ſometimes ſtrange and extravagant humours. But it were a thouſand pitties, that all Sackes ſhould be alike. But being bad my ſelfe, I thinke no man good: ſuch is my wretched condition, and of as many as beare the ſame minde. I convert Violets into poyſon, throw durt vpon Snow; and in my thought, trample the freſh and fragrant Roſe vnder my feete. It might in ſome ſort haue beene happy for mee, that I had ſtayd vvhen I vvas vvell, and had not gone on vvith this my diſcourſe.

I know, that albeit I haue beene troubleſome vnto thee, thou wilt hold mee excuſed, and therefore I ſhall not neede to craue thy pardon, and to begge thy good word and attention; the purchaſing whereof, is that which I principally pretend: And albeit many, and peradventure all thoſe that haue taſted of the Apple, vvill deeme it to be impertinent and ſuperfluous.

But mee thinkes it is not poſſible that it ſhould be ſoe. For albeit I ſhould be as bad as thou vvouldſt make mee to be, or that I vvere ſuch an arrant Aſſe and Coxe-combe, as you forſooth in your *Idea* would forme mee to be, yet cannot I perſwade my ſelfe, that thou hadſt ſet thy figure right, or that thy judgement were truly groundded. For no man thinkes himſelfe to be the ſame man, that other men vvould make him to bee; nor judges himſelfe by anothers opinion. I thinke of my ſelfe, as thou thinkeſt of thy ſelfe. Every man holds his owne faſhion the beſt; his owne life, the vprighteſt; his owne cauſe the juſteſt; his owne honour, the greateſt; and his owne conceits, thoſe that hit righteſt. I tooke counſell of my pillow, it ſeeming vnto mee (vvhich indeede is true) that a prudent conſideration doth evermore beget happy events; and that too much haſt is the mother of various and vnfortunate iſſues; vvhoſe Handmaid is repentance. For doe you grant but one abſurditie, and a thouſand will follow vpon it. And therefore, that the ends may not erre, (as too too vſually it happeth,) it is fit that wee make a faithfull examination of the principles; which being found out, and vvell choſen, they affoord vs that helpe, that wee may boldly ſay, that the better halfe of the worke is already finiſhed, reaching forth ſuch a reſplendour and fulneſſe of light vnto vs, that a farre off, by naturall ſignes and tokens, they diſcover thoſe things vnto vs, vvhich are likely to happen hereafter.

Principia prius quærenda.

And howbeit in themſelues, they are in ſubſtance ſmall, yet in their vertue and operation, they are great, and are in a diſpoſition to matters of much importance.

And therefore, when vvee will experiment them, vvee muſt propoſe all the dif-

difficulties, examining them with all diligence, seeking to draw all the goods out of them that we can, and the soundest counsell; but when wee are once resolved that they are actions of Prudence, and so generally taken and esteemed, they ought in all mens judgements to be brauely followed, and put in execution: And by so much the more, by how much the more noble shall that enterprize be, which we pretend to vndertake.

To begin things, and not to goe thorow with them, argues lightnesse. Proverb.

And it is an imperfection, and a notable note of lightnesse, to enterprize those things, which we cannot effect, especially if they be not crost by some sudden and vnexpected accident, or some great impediment or other; for in their end, consisteth our glory.

My purpose onely was (as I told thee before) to benefit thee, and to teach thee the way, how thou mightest with a great deale of content and safety, passe thorow the gulph of that dangerous sea wherein thou saylest. The blowes I shall receiue, thou the good counsells; The hunger is mine, but the industry must be thine, that thou mayst not suffer hunger. I endure those affronts, from whence thy honour rises. And since thou hast heard it said, *Que a que se te hizo rico, que te hizo el pico.* That is, that hee that made thee rich, made thee likewise to open thy beake, that thou mightest be ready to receiue a blessing.

How a good son in Law ought to carry himselfe towards his father in Law

And therefore thou must striue to imitate that discreet sonne in Law, who knowes by the sweetnesse of his behaviour and courteous carriage, how to gaine the good will of his hard-laced father in Law, and to draw him gently along, to pay his house-rent, to bestow vpon him his dyet, and his lodging, to put money in his Purse, and for an vp-shot, a faire wife in his bed: And these are those father in Lawes which (like slaues, and common jesters) breed, serue, and entertaine their children.

I am now imbark't, I haue set foot a Ship-boord, & cannot goe backe. The Dice are throwne; my promise is past, and I cannot recall it. I haue begun, and I must goe on. The Subject is meane and base; the beginning small; But that which I intend to treat of, if like the Oxe, thou wilt ruminate thereupon, and chew the Cud, suffring it to passe from thy stomacke to thy mouth, it may proue important, graue, and great. I will doe all that I can to satisfie thy desire; knowing, that I should haue rather given thee trouble, then content, in vnfolding one part of my life, and hiding the other from thee.

I perswade my selfe, that many will, or haue already said it; But had it beene, that God had never given it thee, and by consequence, that thou hadst never spoke of it; for being notoriously bad and wicked, it had beene better for thy selfe to haue smothered it; and for others, that they had not knowne it. Thou art farre wide of the truth; thou hast no good ground for that thou say'st: much lesse therefore can I be perswaded, that thou meanest well, or that thy drift herein is so faire and honest, as thou wouldst seeme to make shew of; But I am rather afraid, and doe shrewdly suspect, that because they touch thee to the quicke, the very wagging of the rod doth (though it ne're come neere thee) much affright thee; thine owne guiltines makes thee to shrinke; and it is the gall'd backe, that makes the Horse winse, before the Saddle touch him.

(a) In Germany, there was a Sect of Heretickes, called Flagellantes, that were notable Villaines, and Drunkards, and condemned for such. Vide Covarruuias. Verb. Disciplinante.

There is no (*a*) *Disciplinante* that whips himselfe in the holy weeke, that doth at any time complaine of his owne lashing, nor doth halfe so much feele the smart of those stripes which he giues himselfe, as he doth the paine and anguish of anothers hand, when he comes to dresse and cure his wounds.

Lyes haue euer the best attention.

I either tell thee truthes or lyes. Not lyes. Would to God they were lyes. For I know, that out of thine owne naturall inclination, thou wouldst be well content to heare them; nay, to play and champe vpon that bitt, it would make thee carry a white mouth, pleasing thy selfe with the fome and froth of vntruthes. But I deliver truthes vnto thee; and these are as bitter

To see are fooles, and as abominable as Baals Priests The Prelates of the Church and other secular Magistrates should take order to debarre those to goe in Procession that vse it so prophanely, and to punish them severely, for these their notorious excesses, which I am asham'd to speake of.

Pills vnto thy Palate. Thou findeſt fault with them, becauſe they lay open thy faults. Onely diſpleaſed, becauſe they pleaſe thee not. If thou finde thy ſelfe ſound and in health, and thy neighbour ſicke and weake; if the Lightning ſhall light vpon another mans houſe, and thine owne ſcape the flame, thou wouldſt the better beare it, ſo as thou be left vntoucht, no morſell is vnſavory to thy mouth, all is Pheſant and Partridge, and I ſhall be well receiued, and kindely entertained by thee. But that thou mayſt not (like the Eele) ſlip out of my hands, I will ſeeke out ſome Fig-leaues againſt theſe your ſlippery tricks, I will hold you faſt while I haue you; you ſhall not for this once, ſo eaſily (as you thinke) eſcape my hands.

I tell thee, (if thou art willing to heare me, if thou wilt not, thou mayſt chooſe) that this generall confeſſion that I make; this publike opening of my Packe, laying before thee all my Knacks, and my Trinkets; I doe not therefore ſhew theſe things vnto thee, that thou ſhouldſt either imitate me, or my evill actions; but rather, that (when thou ſhalt come to know them) thou mayſt learne thereby to correct thine owne. If thou ſeeſt me falne, becauſe I was wilfull, and would not be ordred; looke thou ſo well to thy ſteps, that thou mayſt hate and avoyde thoſe occaſions, that wrought my fall. Set not thy foot, where thou haſt ſeene me ſlip before thee, but let my trippings and my ſtumblings, ſerue as ſo many markes to make thee more wary. For thou art a man, mortall as I am, and peradventure neither ſtronger, nor wiſer then my ſelfe.

Take the good, and leaue the bad.

Looke well into thy ſelfe; runne over very leiſurely and carefully, the houſe of thy Soule, and ſee if thou haue not made there, even in the greater and better part of it, Dung-hills of filth, and all manner of beaſtlineſſe; and doe not ſift and prie ſo narrowly into thy neighbours, to ſee if thou canſt finde but the feather of ſome bird at the foot of the Stayres, whereat thou mayſt picke a quarrell.

Looke well into thy ſelfe, and let others alone.

But here I know thou wilt tell me, that I preach vnto thee, and that he is a foole, that will ſeeke his cure, from a ſicke Phyſitian. And that he that cannot helpe himſelfe, can hardly giue health to others.

Medice, cura teipſum.

What wholſome Medicine, or good Cordiall, can a man haue from a Vipers tooth, or the ſting of a Scorpion? How ſhall he, that is ill himſelfe, adviſe another not to be ill? I doe not denie, that I am ſuch a one as thou ſayſt: But that will befall me with thee, which betideth ſome nimble and cunning Carver at his Lords table, who curiouſly cutteth vp the Brawne, the wing, or the legge of ſome dainty Fowle, and having reſpect to the quality of the Gueſts, whom he is to ſerue, giues every man his ſeverall Plate, ſtudying to pleaſe and content them all; They all eate, all reſt ſatisfied and well contented, whileſt he himſelfe goes away both weary and hungry.

At mine owne coſt and paines, I diſcover ſhelfes, quick-ſands, and dangerous rockes vnto thee, to the end that thou maiſt not fall vpon them, and daſh thy ſelfe in pieces againſt them, or runne thy ſelfe on ground, where there is never any hope of comming of.

Your Arſenicke is not altogether vnprofitable, but that it will ſerue for ſome good vſe or other; it is worth money, and it is ſold in Apothecaries ſhops. And though it be bad to eate, as it may be applyed, it will proue good. In a word, with it thoſe Wormes and Vermine are poyſoned, which bring hurt and prejudice to mans body.

The hurt which ill government cauſes in great mens houſes.

My example might ſerue as Treacle to a Common-wealth, if theſe fierce beaſts that governe it were poyſoned; not excuſing houſe-keepers, though never ſo much in appearance, ſeeming familiar and friendly vnto vs, as being one of the worſt qualities that they haue. For, figuring forth our ſelues vnto them, to be men of fleſh and bloud, kinde-hearted, and ſubject vnto paſſions, wee depoſit our ſecrets in their boſomes, and truſt them with all that

we haue, as relying on their faith and their loue, and they cunningly shed feigned teares in a seeming commiseration of our miseries, when in the meane while notwithstanding, they rend our flesh, & teare our very sinewes from the bone with their tyrannies, injuries, and violencies.

Tricks of Courtship.

O that it were in my power to consume and destroy another sort of cruell beastes, as those that looke bigge, and grow proud of their ease and plenty, goe vaunting and boasting of their valour, tearing vp the stones in the streets, world-wandrers, Vagabonds from Countrie to Countrie, from Parish to Parish, and from house to house, making themselues skimmers of other mens pottes, being no way of any profit, or serving for any other vse, then the Porters in the (*a*) *Alhondiga* of *Sevilla*, to lay in one burthen, and to take out another; venting lyes in one place, and taking them vp in another, carrying newes to and fro, reporting those things, that he ought to haue silenced, being trusted therewith, and will'd to be secret, vttering them in prejudice of the person to whom he revealeth them, who cannot but take it ill; maliciously causing differences, and relating things worse then they were meant; bearers of false witnesse, raysers of dissension, robbers of mens honours, defaming the good, persecuting the just, stripping men of their wealth, and murthering and martyrizing the innocent. It were a pleasing sight to see all such perish, and to be made a publike spectacle to the world. Nor is there in all *Bruxels* any such good hangings, that doe either so much adorne, or halfe so well become any Noble mans house, as these would the Common-wealth, if they were hung vp one after another by the Common Hang-man.

(*a*) Alhondiga *is a house appointed for Country people, to bring their corne into the Citie, and there to lay it vp. It signifieth also a Ware house for merchandize, where some bring in, and some carry out.* Vid. Covarru. pag. 48.

For, it is very fit, that there should be *Pœna & præmium*; A punishment and a reward. For if all were good and honest, Lawes had beene superfluous and impertinent. And if all men should haue beene wise, Writers had beene fooles. Physicke was made for the sicke; Honours for the vertuous; and the Gallowes for lewd livers. And because I likewise know, that Vice is so powerfull, for that it rises out of a desire of liberty, without acknowledgement of any Superiour either humane or divine, I am much afraid, that these my written labours, and my many indured misfortunes, will not be of force to bridle thy vnruly appetite, and to bring forth that good fruit which I could wish; Holding that paines vaine and fruitlesse, which is vndertaken vpon any respect whatsoever, if it doth not in that it pretendeth, obtaine it's desired end. But because that the Rhetorician doth not alwayes perswade; nor the Physician cure; nor the Pilot arriue safely at his Port; I must together with them comfort my selfe, in that I haue performed my duty, by giving thee good counsell, and by affording thee light, being therein like the Flint, which being strooken, giues fire to others, to be kindled in this or that place, though it selfe remaine without: In like manner, the lewd liver loseth his life, receiueth punishment, and indureth affronts, making himselfe an example to all those that shall looke vpon him.

Lawes were made for the wicked.

When a mans labour is best.

But here I will betake me to that way, which presents it selfe vnto mee in this place; Imitating therein your rude Clownes, as also your nice Courtiers, who passing along by the (*b*) *Roperia* (which is a publike place where all sorts of cloathes are to be sold;) if by chance they lift vp their eyes, and looke vpon them, those Merchants that sell these commodities, (like your *Birchen-Lane* men) fall presently a balling and plying of them; one drawes him this way, another that, and keepe such a calling, and such a tugging of them, that they know not well which way to turne or winde themselues; they are so distracted by them.

(*b*) Roperia i. Locus Vestimentarius.

For they having an opinion (if not a thorow perswasion) that they doe all deceiue, all coozen, and lye, they goe warily to worke, when they buy any wares of them; & I well wot the cause why, which I need not to tell you,

The knauery of some Trades-men

becauſe that which they ſell, will ſpeake it out aloude, without any other bodies helpe.

Receiuers of ſtolne goods.

Well, let vs now giue them way, and ſuffer them to paſſe by, if for no other reaſon, at leaſt for thoſe favours and courteſies which I haue had from them, in the buying of things that were never bought, giving mee good money for that which I brought, and ſold vnto them; and for teaching mee from over-night againſt the next morning, how to make Caſſocks of Cloakes, ſelling them the ſhreds for to foot Stockins, and to make ſoles to keepe the feet warme, and free from vvet.

The caſe of a careleſſe traveller.

Or ſhall I here tell thee, that the ſame is like to befall mee, which vſually happens to the careleſſe traveller; who not knowing the way, goes from home, never inquiring how he may hit it, which hand to take, or what turnings to make; ſo that vvhen hee hath gone ſome halfe league on his journey, hee chanceth to come to the foot of a Croſſe, where hee meetes with three or foure ſeverall wayes; and ſtrayning himſelfe vpon his ſtirrops, writhing his body, he turnes his head about, to ſee if he can eſpie any body, that is able to direct him in his way?

But ſeeing none there at hand, hee falls to a Coſmographicall conſideration with himſelfe, chooſing either this, or that, which ſhall ſeeme likelieſt vnto him, to leade directly towards that place, whither hee intended his journey.

The divers guſts and palates of men.

I ſee here preſent before me ſo many divers diſpoſitions, and ſuch various and ſundry ſorts of taskes, all of them hanging about mee, every one ſtriving to hale and pull mee as it were by force, to come into their ſhop. But God he knowes, why, and wherefore they doe it.

One would haue ſweet and pleaſant things; another, thoſe that are tart and ſowre; this man will haue his Olives fryde; that will no ſalt, no not with an Egge.

(a) *The Spaniſh word is,* pie de la perdis, *but the other fits better with our phraſe of ſpeach* (b) Papeliſtas. Los que ſon dados à entender en papeles. Couuarruuias. *A ſhort tale of a covetous Spaniard.*

And if one man haue a minde to eate the legge of a (a) Larke roſted in the ſnuffe of a Candle, another would not be wanting, who ſhall make no bones to tell thee, that of all the pulſe and rootes that God made, there was never any yet that could compare and come neere to the Radiſh for goodneſſe.

The truth whereof vvas to be ſeene in a certaine (b) *Papeliſticall* Miniſter, a kinde of Officer (as I was to tearme him) betwixt a Clerke and a Scriuener that is converſant in Paper-buſineſſes; a fellow wonderfull ill beloued, a notorious lyer, and aboue all, extremely covetous; who removing from one houſe to another, after that he had carried his houſhold-ſtuffe, and other old moueables belonging therevnto, he ſtayd there behinde alone by himſelfe, ſearching and prying very diligently into every nooke and corner thereof, rifling and ranſaking it from the floore to the roofe, not ſo much as leauing a nayle to the walles, for to hang a Hat on, or the like neceſſary vſe.

At laſt, it was his hap to come into the Kitchin, where hee lighted vpon an odde hole in the chimney, wherein were three or foure Radiſhes, which had lyen there a long time, being drie, tough, withered, and good for nothing. Theſe hee charily tyes vp in one bunch, and very carefully brings them home to his Wife, and vvith a Black-Smithes face, looking frowningly vpon her, he ſaid vnto her; Is this your good houſ-wifery, this your care of my houſe and goods, to let things runne to ſpoyle? Is money ſo eaſily come by (thinke you) that you make no more reckoning of ſaving a penny? But as you brought me nothing in Dowry, ſo you care not (it ſeemes) which end goes forward; ſinke, or ſwimme, all's one to you. See you this waſte of yours? Looke I pray vpon theſe Radiſhes, they coſt money I can tell you. You haue done well, haue you not, to looke no better vnto them? Keepe them I pray againſt I call for them. I thinke there is not a more waſtefull woman

man in the world; but I am the worſt of the two, and may thanke my ſelfe, that I would bee ſuch an vnthrift as to bring a whole bunch into the houſe at once, when a fewer would haue ſerv'd the turne.

His wife laid them vp ſafe, as he had willed her, and that very night (that they might not fall out any more about them) the crafty Hileding, very demurely and with a ſober countenance; vvithout any the leaſt ſhew of choller or diſlike, ſets them downe before him, vvhen hee vvas ſitting downe to ſupper, vvho falling earneſtly vnto them, ſpake to his Wife, and ſaid:

Now in troth (Wench) I ſweare vnto thee, there is no meat in the world can relliſh better, or hath halfe ſo good a ſavour and taſte with it, as an old Radiſh. I proteſt vnto thee, I like them better a thouſand times, being thus lyther, and withered as you ſee, then when they are freſh and cripſie. I prethee Wife proue one of them, and then tell me if it bee not as I ſay.

The poore woman had as little fancie to make tryall thereof, as ſhee had faith to beleeue it; but my Spaniard (carrying as they doe all a kinde of high hand over their wiues) forcing her in a manner there-vnto, by his ſterne both lookes and words, made her to eate one, ſore againſt her will, and much againſt her ſtomake.

The Spaniard generally carries a great command over his Wife.

There are a certaine kinde of men, vvhich are not contented onely to commend that, vvhich they themſelues like, (bee it what it will) but they will (and are angry and offended if it bee otherwiſe) that others doe the ſame, preſsing them, as it were, to follow their humour, and contrarie to their owne will, ſeeme to approue it, at leaſt not ſticke to praiſe it.

The capricious humours of ſome extrauagant perſons.

And there are likewiſe another ſort of people, which diſcommend other mens taſtes; not conſidering, that *de guſtibus non eſt diſputandum*, for that they are divers and various, as are the conditions and countenances of men.

For though peradventure two may bee found, that may reſemble one another, yet it is impoſsible that they ſhould bee ſo like, that you may not perceiue ſome difference. And therefore I muſt be driven to doe that heere, which was my hap once to doe at a Comedy; where, for that I was one of the firſt, it was my fortune to be one of the formoſt before the Stage.

Now theſe that came after, being nothing ſo well fitted, ſpake vnto me, that I would leane a little on t' one ſide. I did ſo; but in this my moving ſome-what aſide, others thought much of it, complaining that I hindred their ſight; for whom likewiſe to giue them content, I was forced to ſhift a foote. So that, both the one and the other, made mee to ſtand where they would haue me. For they were all willing to ſee. Inſomuch, that not knowing how to accommodate my ſelfe for pleaſuring of them, I put on Merchants eares, not vouchſafing to giue them the hearing: and ſtanding ſtiffely on my right legge, gaue them leaue to ſhift for themſelues, to heare, and ſee, as well as they could.

Writers, whereunto they are likened.

Proverb

The Melancholly man, the Sanguine, the Cholericke, the Flegmaticke, the Civill, the Swaggerer, the Rhetorician, the Philoſopher, the Religious, the Reprobate, the Courtier, the Clowne, the Rude, the Diſcreet, nay, even my Lady *Ninny-hammer* would that I ſhould onely write for her pleaſure, words finely pleyted, and curiouſly folded, and that I ſhould apply my ſelfe to her conceit, and conforme my ſelfe according to her ſtile, making her Miſtreſſe both of my pate and Pen.

No writer can pleaſe all.

It is not poſsible for me to ſecond ſo many humours, and to ſatisfie ſuch different deſires: For then had I need (beſides the making for every particular man his ſeverall Booke,) to liue ſo many mens liues, as there are ſundry opinions.

The Author approueth this to be his next Second Part.

I haue liu'd but one onely; and that which they would falſely intitle mee withall,

withall, is a teſtimonie againſt ſome, of the great wrong they haue done me therein.

My true life, I ſhall onely ſet it downe my ſelfe. I will goe proſecuting of that, though they goe perſecuting of me. For there will not another (a) *Gil* be wanting for the third Part, to come forth againſt mee, as in the Second; and charge me with that, which I never either did, ſaid, or thought.

That, which I intreat at thy hands, is; That thou wilt neither feare mee ſo much, nor bee angry with mee in ſo high a meaſure, that (I know not out of what humour) thou ſhould'ſt wiſh me hang'd; for I finde not my ſelfe fit for it at this time, neither indeed doe I deſerue it. Suffer mee therefore to liue, ſince it hath pleaſed God to giue mee life, that I might correct my errours; and time, that I may amend my faults.

(a) Gil Nunca falta vn Gil, que nos perſigua. Dando a entender, que aunque deſiſta vn emulo no falta otro que ſe ſubſtituya en ſu lugar. *No ſooner one corrivall gone, but another comes in his place.*

For my puniſhments, and my mis-fortunes, if thou wilt truely informe thy ſelfe of them, will ſerue thee in ſtead of a Looking-glaſſe, whereby thou may'ſt ſee how to linke a little better together the paſt, and the preſent, with that which is to come in the third Part; to the end, that thou making it all one continued piece of worke, weaving it well and handſomely, running along in even threds, thou maiſt the better (which is no more then becomes thee) be inſtructed in the truth of things.

The Authors end and purpoſe.

And this is that marke whereat I haue aymed, and the white, which I ſeeke to hit. Nor am I dainty in diſcovering my conceits, to thoſe that will bee pleaſed to ſaue mee this labour: yet, let it be ſo carried, that they may boaſt them of that's there owne. For I hold it as a thing vndecent, and vnſeemely, for a man to deny his owne name, and to put forth his workes vnder that of another, which hath and ſhall vpon the like occaſion, oblige mee at any time, to write ſo much againe as this, that I may not be taken for a Foole, by taking vpon mee other mens over-ſights. But let this reſt, leſt I might ſeeme to ſome, to ſpeake more out of paſsion, then reaſon; though the judicious (I am perſwaded) will excuſe this my juſt complaint, and not thinke it in this place to be impertinent to the purpoſe.

Of the order and end of this Booke: And wherevnto it is likened.

But to returne againe into the way, whence we haue ſtept a little aſide, I ſay; That I would haue every man to make choyſe of his owne Plate, and to fall to that diſh (amongſt thoſe many, that we ſhall ſerue into this boord) which hee hath moſt minde vnto; Leaving that vnto others, vvhich ſhall not pleaſe his palate, or not agree with his ſtomake. Nor would I haue my gueſts to thinke, that this booke of mine ſhould bee like vnto *Heliogabalus* his banquet, whoſe boord was furniſhed with many and ſundry ſorts of meates, yet all of them only ſerving for the food & ſuſtenance of man, whether they were Peacocks, Chickens, Pheſants, wilde Boare, Fiſh, Milke. Sallets, or Conſerues, it was one onely kinde of Vyand, but like Manna, differenced by mens ſeverall taſts; howbeit thoſe of Manna, were as every man would haue them to reliſh as himſelfe deſired; but theſe other, according as the Cooke was willing to ſeaſon them, ſeeking therein to pleaſe the filthy luxurious throat of his Maſter. With varietie, nature is adorned; this is that, that beautifies the Fields, to ſee heere Hils, there Vallies; in this place Brookes and Rivers; in that Fountaines ſprinkling and ſparkling forth their pearled drops.

Let not men be ſo covetouſly minded, as to deſire to haue all to themſelues. I haue ſeene the beſtowing of many Liveries in my life time, and the little Page, (I haue perceived) vvas as well contented with his, though it were not ſo full of Silke, as the talleſt man, that had twice as much as hee, in regard of the largeneſſe of his ſtature. I am reſolved to follow that path, that ſhall ſeeme beſt vnto me, for the more direct bringing of me to the end of my deſire, and to that place, wherevnto I intend my journey. And thou (my diſcreet Hoſt) who ſtay'ſt looking for me, ſince thou doeſt ſo well vnderſtand

and

and know the miſeries, that he ſuffers and indures, who (like my ſelfe) goes travelling abroad to ſee the world; doe not looke ſcornefully vpon me, when thou ſhalt meet with me in thine owne Countrie, and though I come to thy Gate like a Rogue, poore and pennileſſe, dis-favoured by fortune, and forſaken of my friends, yet doe thou vouchſafe mee a chearefull countenance, and giue me that kinde entertainment, which thou oweſt vnto thine owne worth. For my errand is only to thee, thee only doe I ſeeke after, and for thy ſake haue I vndergone this journey, not for to put thee to any charge; nor with purpoſe to oblige thee to more then thy good will and affection, which thou naturally oweſt vnto him, who offers thee his loue: Which if I ſhall receiue from thee, I ſhall reſt fully ſatisfied, and remaine beſides, in requitall of thy good will, indebted vnto thee in an infinite number of thankes.

But if they which take pleaſure in hearing me talke, if they ſhall likewiſe be deſirous to ſee me, let them beware, that doe not befall them, which is wont to happen to thoſe that are over-curious, who watch and liſten, to heare what is ſaid of them; Which kinde of men doe alwayes *Malè audire*, heare no great good ſpoken of them. For with the fineſt gold, is the bittereſt Pill covered. And often-times, that moveth ſome to laughter, which indeed ought to draw teares from their eyes.

Proverb. Con oro fino, ſe cubre la pildora.

Beſides, if any man ſhall long to know the life that I lead, and the place where I liue, he ſhall therein bewray his owne needleſſe curioſitie, and giue me juſt cauſe to ſuſpect the vnjuſtneſſe of his intent, and the little good loue that he beares me.

Let him firſt apply himſelfe to conſider my ſtate and condition, and the great miſerie, wherevnto my diſorder brought me. Let ſuch another as I am be ſet before him, or let his owne imagination repreſent it vnto him, and then ſhall he preſently be able to goe diſcourſing with himſelfe, what paſſe-time may be made with him, who doth paſſe his time (being a Priſoner and laden with Irons) with a *Renegador*, or ſome ruffianly blaſpheming officer, that looks to the ſure chaining of the ſlaues in the Gallies; vnleſſe happily he will take pleaſure in my miſeries, and make himſelfe merry with them, as ſome doe with the Bull that is brought in the Market-place to be bayted, whoſe Dartes ſticking in his ſides, whoſe ſtroakes and wounds glad the beholders; though I for my part, hold it an inhumane act. And if thou ſhalt twit mee in the teeth, and tell me, that either I cauſe nauciouſneſſe in this my Diſcourſe, or that I ſell it vnto thee at too deare a rate, ſeeking forſooth to be intreated, or that I ſtraine too much courtſie, or that I am a little too coy, and too nice with you, making my ſelfe more daintie then needeth, or that by my indearings and flatteries, I ſhould commend it for good vnto thee; it would grieue me, that thou ſhouldſt haue that conceit of me.

For albeit it be well knowne, that I alwayes ſerv'd my Lord Embaſſadour as a merry companion, and to make his Lordſhip laugh at my pleaſant and witty conceits; for I could then make him ſport, when I knew not ſo much as I doe now; and now that I know more, I cannot doe it. For it is a thing that coſts a man deare, and the times are not ſtill alike.

But that thou maiſt well vnderſtand what I ſay, and know what my jeſts and merriments were then, and what now ſhall be thought neceſſary in that kinde, hearken, I beſeech you, with attention to that, which I ſhall deliver vnto you in this inſuing Chapter.

CHAP.

Chap. II.

Guzman de Alfarache *tels what place he ſerv'd in, in the houſe of his Lord Embaſſadour: And that Fooles and Ieſters, are both fit and profitable for Princes: falling into a deſcription of their conditions and qualities.*

Why great men reſpect more a pleaſant conceited fellow, then a faithfull and painfull ſervant?

From the great power, & little vertue now a-dayes in men, it ſo commeth to paſſe, that faithfull ſervants are not ſo much rewarded for their good ſervices, and perſonall paines-taking, as for the ſweet words, flowing from their vaine tongues; For the one, they thinke to be due vnto them, out of their powerfulneſſe and their greatneſſe, and therefore are not pleaſed to accept it in good worth, or thankefully to eſteeme and acknowledge it. And for the other; they afford them, (for their wits ſake) many graces and favours; and becauſe they want it themſelues, they buy out this default with their money. It is great pitie, that theſe men ſhould thinke, that Vertue ſhould derogate from Nobleneſſe; and by their ill-conceived opinion of it, will not (as a thing abhorred by them) vſe and exerciſe the ſame.

Why great men ſtudy not vertue

And for that it is likewiſe to be purchaſed and gotten with a great deale of difficultie, and by hard and ſharpe meanes, (things that are contrary to their ſenſualitie, and quite repugnant to their power and greatneſſe) they are never without flatterers at their eares and elbowes, ſmoothing vp vice, and ſtroaking their evill actions, with a ſoft and gentle hand.

This is that milke which they haue ſucked; theſe, thoſe ſwathing-cloathes wherein they were wrapped; They made it their naturall Center by vſe, and by abuſe it continueth ſtill with them. Hence ariſeth thoſe ſuperfluous and exceſsiue expences, thoſe profuſe prodigalities, and thoſe vaine magnificencies, which are ſoone payd, and quickly told out, (when the money is powred forth on the table) but with a great many ſighes and teares, when they ſee how they haue fool'd it away.

Why great Lords, favour flatterers.

It is a lamentable caſe to ſee, that a Noble-man ſhould beſtow a rich ſuite of cloathes vpon a Foole and common Ieſter, and ſcarce giue a caſt hat to the vertuous to cover his head. But this is a reciprocall kinde of giving, a chop and change, that runnes currant among them. For they apparell their bodies with good cloathes, and theſe in requitall, cloath their mindes with toyes, and idle vanities: They throw many favours on thoſe, who ſoftly ſmooth their humours, with ſweet and pleaſing words, ſuch as ſhall ſound handſomely, and haue their cadence and conſonancie correſpondent to their diſpoſition.

But they buy this their pleaſure at too deare a rate, and not vnjuſtly neither, for that their praiſe paſſeth thorow the mouthes of ſuch kinde of men, leaving their gate careleſly open, for the better ſort to publiſh their vanities; they falſely conceiving, that they ſhall redound greatly to their honour and praiſe, which in truth and in very deed they ought to eſteeme as a reproch and ſhame vnto them. Yet will I not therefore ſay; that great Princes ſhould not haue their Paſtimes; it is fit, that they ſhould haue their entertainments and recreations; but withall, in their due place and ſeaſon: For all things haue their time and their reward.

Fooles and Ieſters, are ſometimes neceſſary. Proverb. When money is well ſpent.

A witty Ieſter is ſometimes as neceſſary, and as vſe-full as a wiſe Counſellour. Nor doe I thinke it meet, that their hands ſhould be bound from giving, gratifying, and favouring of them; For money, (as I ſaid before) *Nunca ſe goza, ſi no quando ſe gaſta.* We never injoy it, but when we ſpend it. And it is never ſaid to be ſpent, when it is well and wiſely beſtowed. For I my ſelfe

(in

(in punishment of my sinnes) haue had experience of the one and of the other' and can make this good vnto you out of mine owne proper actions, the smart vvhereof I haue since soundly felt. For at that time as I seru'd my Lord Embassadour (as you haue formerly vnderstood) I was his Favourite; and as it were the apple of his eye; And I can assure thee, that any other corporall labour would haue beene of lesse trouble vnto mee, and not haue lane halte so heavily vpon my shoulders: for to vtter pleasant conceits, vvitty jests, and to giue a trumpe, or a flout with a grace, that it may take handsomely, there must many things concurre and jumpe well one with another.

A Iester, a painefull kinde of Trader.

Herevnto will be required a particular gift of nature, which shall giue credit and grace therevnto, vvith a joint conjuncture in the carriage of the countenance, shape, and motion of the body and eye; So that the one may helpe the other, and every one by it selfe, haue it's particular grace, that meeting all together, they may moue the more.

For one selfe-same thing may be delivered by two different pers ns; The one after such a manner, that hee vvill make the vnbutton [a] thy doublet, and be ready to burst with laughing. The other, with that ill grace, that thou wilt thinke the doore too farre off, and too narrow to get out quickly, and be gone. And let such a one striue all that hee can, to giue his jestes that life, and that grace, that is fit and necessary for them, yet it is not possible (if they doe not well become him, and come cleanely and nimbly from him) that hee should hit the marke he aimes at.

[a] *The Spanish phrase is*, Quitar el calçado, y desnudar la camisa.

There vvill likewise be required a continuall reading, to know how, and vvhen; and from what hee is to forme his Conceits. Hee hath likewise neede of a strong and able memorie, for the keeping in minde of those accidents that haue and do daily happen abroad in the world, and the knowledge of all sorts of persons, that hee may know how to apply and accommodate that which is to be sayd, with that of whom it shall be said.

Necessary things for a Iester.

Hee must take a great deale of care in the inquirie of those things, that are most worthy the reprouing of other mens liues, and most of all, in those that are most noble. For, neither making of faces, freenesse of tongue, gestures of the body, life and quicknesse of the eye, sundry sorts of *Matachines*, and mimicke actions, nor all the skill and wit in the world shall be avaylable to moue the minde of one that is vaine, if they be not seazoned with the Pepper and Salt of Murmuration.

That little touch of tartnesse, that corne of Salt that drops of Vineger, is that which giues a good relish, and a pleasant farewell to all the rest, be it never so simple, never so vnsavorie. For vvhat is otherwise, is accounted but a dull Picture, a course piece of worke, and the plaine artifice of a poore wit.

Tart jests take best.

It will also much concerne him, to consider the opportunitie, and the time, when, and wherein he is to breake his jests. For being delivered out of season, and not to the purpose, they vtterly loose their grace. For men will not alwayes be vvilling to heare them, neither are they alwayes, and at all times to be vented; nor they themselues alwayes able to broach them. Aske but this question of him that hath the strongest and ablest wit amongst them; Take the best Iester of them all vpon the sudden, and put him to exercise his jerkes of wit, and to play his pleasant prankes, and you shall finde him frozen, and not able to open his mouth.

Iests must not be unseasonable.

This befell *Sisneros*, (a most famous Comedian) talking with *Manҫanos*, (who was no lesse famous then himselfe, and both of *Toledo*) being a paire of wits, not to be paralel'd in their time; to whom *Sisneros* said; Thou seest, *Manҫanos*, that all the world doth take vs for two of the pleasantest and happiest wits that this present Age affordeth.

Sisneros, & Manҫanos, Two famous fellowes for their quicke wits.

Tell mee doest thou thinke, that vpon this fame that goes of vs, the King our Master will cause vs to be sent for, and to come before him? But say it should

ſhould ſo fall out: then let you and I come in together, and when wee haue both done him that due reverence that becomes vs, if wee ſhall afterwards ſtand ſolemnely before him (having ſent for vs vpon the opinion of our wits) it is a thouſand to one, that the firſt queſtion that hee will aske vs will be this; Are you *Mançanos* and *Ciſneros*? Then you ſhall make anſwere and ſay, Yea and it like your Majeſtie, for I will not ſpeake a word. Then will he (as it is very likely) ſay againe vnto vs; Come, let vs heare ſome pleaſant conceits come from you.

Now, I would faine know of thee, what wee ſhould doe in this caſe, and what anſwere vvee ſhall make him? *Monçanos* told him; Brother *Ciſneros*, when it comes to that (which God forbid) there is no other to be made, but this; That they are not yet fryde. So that, neither to all nor of all, nor at all times are they to be ſpoken, when they are to be in requeſt, they are not worth a figge, nor the leaſt haire of thy head, vnleſſe they be nipping ones, and dipt in the lawce of Murmuration. And I held this to be one of my greateſt vnhappineſſes, that like a ſetting dogge, I was driven to winde out other mens weakeneſſes.

A Ieſter muſt apply himſelfe to pleaſe others.

But becauſe this was the fifth element, without the which thoſe other foure cannot vvell ſubſiſt: and that repugnancie and contrarietie doth conſerue them; I was continually carefull in ſeeking out that, which to that office which I now profeſſed, was neceſſarily required, that I might ſtill goe getting of ground, and accomodate other mens taſtes to mine owne. For the better and more eſſentiall part is, to winne the good will of thoſe that heare him, that they may the more willingly commend that, which by him is either ſaid, or done. So that, thoſe indowments which Nature had deny'de mee, I was forced to make good by trickes and devices, aſſuming to my ſelfe illicit licence of language, and vſing prejudiciall darings and boldneſſe, which were much holpen by a particular kinde of vivacitie, liuelineſſe, and quickneſſe both of wit and ſpirit that I had in mee, having (God he knowes) no learning at all. For then I had no more knowledge but of a few languages, which I had learned in my Lord Cardinalls houſe; and thoſe too were as yet but rawe in mee, in regard of my greene yeares.

Conſider therefore I pray' with mee (which you may eaſily gather out of that I haue told you) what I might haue in mee, and what was wanting vnto me, being not left to mine owne libertie, and liuing in neceſſitie.

In thoſe my yonger dayes, and in that Spring-time (as I may ſo tearme it) of my flouriſhing yeares, all went currantly with mee; all that I did, became me well, and to all did I fit and apply my ſelfe.

Guzman, the onely man with his Maſter.

For theſe, and other the like things annexed there-vnto, I was alwayes well clad, much made of, I was the Favorite, the familiar friend, the Maſter of my Maſter, as alſo of all thoſe that were intereſſed in his friendſhip.

I vvas the principall doore whereby, they entred into his grace and favour, and onely I the Lord of his Will. I kept the golden key of his ſecrets. Hee had ſold his liberty vnto mee, and I was bound to looke vvell vnto it, and to take care thereof, not onely out of that, but even for charities ſake, and the reſpect I owe to the Law of Nature, as alſo of the perticular loue, that hee bare to mee, and I to him. For hee was not ignorant, but had made often tryall of my ſecreſie, and vvith vvhat ſufferance I did ever ſilence thoſe things that hee committed to my boſome; vvhich I would none ſhould vnlocke but my ſelfe, who onely had that key, to open and ſhut at his pleaſure.

It comes now into my minde, and ſo liuely repreſents it ſelfe to my thoughts, that mee thinkes I vvas then like to a trumpe Card, which every one vſes, vvhen, and how hee liſt; or as a common pack-Saddle, that ſerues for all Horſes. All did make vſe of mee, though after a diverſe and different

faſhion; ſome, of my actions, for their owne proper intereſt; and others, of my words, for their pleaſure and delight; onely my Maſter drew in the ſame yoke with mee, both in words, and deedes.

I haue taken occaſion to ſpeake thus much, that men may not conceiue this opinion of mee, that I goe about to taxe thoſe Princes, that keepe Fooles and Ieſters in their Palaces, for their intertainment, and pleaſure.

Nor ſhall it be amiſſe that they intertaine them in their houſes, not ſo much for ſport and paſtime, as by that conduit-pipe, to draw ſome-thing to their knowledge, which would not ſo well and ſo cleanely be convayed otherwiſe to their eares. And ſuch occaſions often offer themſelues, whereof theſe kinde of men may make very good vſe, by adviſing, counſelling, and revealing graue and weighty matters, vnder the colour of foolery, which wiſer men dare not adventure to vtter in earneſt.

Why Ieſters are to be permitted in Princes Courts.

There are ſome witty diſcreete Ieſters, vvhich ſpeake Sentences, and are able ſo ſoundly to deliver their opinions, that their Maſters will not ſtoope to aske advice of any of his other ſervants, although it might much concerne them, and vvere great Statiſts, and very vvell able to giue counſell. Nor indeede vvill they conſent, that they of all other, ſhould giue them counſell, that they may not to their interiours confeſſe their ignorance, or to ſeeme to vnderſtand leſſe then they. For even in this, they would faine ſhew themſelues to be Gods.

Why Princes refuſe the advice of their Counſellors.

And ſuch kinde of ſervants as theſe, are thoſe Parrats, which *Iupiter* deſired to haue ſhut vp in a Cage; Nor is this miſchiefe of a day old, or vvas borne but yeſterday, that great Perſons ſhould ſcorne and contemne the counſailes of vviſe, vnderſtanding, and vvell qualified men. So great in theſe men is their pride, and ambition, that they ſeeke to aggregate and draw all things to themſelues, making themſelues Maſters and abſolute Lords, both of our ſpirituall, and temporall; good, and bad; vvithout controulement. Inſomuch that they thinke with themſelues, that by their onely breath, they giue grace vnto others, and not doing them any good in the vvorld, they looke to be prayſed and extolled, as if they vvere the onely men, of whom they did hold their life, their honour, their wealth, and alſo their vnderſtanding, which is the vtmoſt blaſpemie, wherevnto in this caſe their folly can reach.

There is alſo another great inconvenience, vvhich is this; That as in a chappell of Miracles, vvee muſt hang, vp to ſooth their vanity, the ſpoyles, and Trophees of our miſeries. For if wee recover our lamenеſſe, and be once able to goe, we muſt offer vp our Crutches vnto them, whereof wee made vſe, when we were benummed, and oppreſſed with povertie.

If vve eſcape any dangerous ſickneſſe, or miſchance, wee muſt ſacrifice vnto them that winding ſheete, which fortune had cut out for vs, but tie Tapers, and ſet vp Images of Waxe, declaring to the vvorld, that this miracle was wrought by them, and muſt hang vp thoſe chaines in the Temple, wherewith wee came forth from out the captivity of our miſeries, and were now brought home, and landed in a ſafe Haven.

But this were not altogether ſo much to be blamed, if theſe things did onely occurre vpon vertuous occaſions, and that they had truly done theſe men good.

For there is a kinde of thankefulneſſe, due to every good turne that is done vs. And then we make it knowne that wee haue receiued a benefit, when rendring thankes vnto God, vvee do likewiſe publiſh the vertues of thoſe men, that did do theſe good deedes: becauſe with an ardent zeale, and fervent affection, they did vſe their beſt induſtry, imployed their perſons, ſpent their friends, tooke hold of all occaſions, let ſlip no time, and therein vvaſted

A good turne requires thankefulneſſe.

and consumed their money. So that things being once fairely carried, those that are benefitted by them, shall vvorthily deserue much blaime and reprehension, if they shall not render them all fitting and convenient thankes. But they fall as short of these good things, as they doe excell in all filthy and beastly vices; vvherein they striue and exceede, and be counted the onely men.

A short Tale of a Noblemam, that was much giuen to Lying.

As was to be seene in a certaine Noble-man, that was exceedingly given to Lying, and lash out so vnreasonably in that kinde, as no man could outstrip him, who one day talking in conversation vvith diverse other Gentlemen of qualitie, told them that hee had killed a Stagge, bearing so many branches or antlets on his head, that it did plainely appeare to be a Lye, though hee carried it very handsomely. They all admired it, they sayd; (but not gaine-said it) that it vvas one of the strangest things, that ever vvas seene, or heard of.

This lik't the Noble-man vvell; But whilest hee and the rest were thus wondring at it; Why (quoth an ancient Gentleman, a neere kinsman of his that vvas there then a company, after a pretty kinde of fashion bringing it forth;) doth your Lordship and these Gentlemen make such a vvonder at this? This is nothing, my Lord; For, within these few dayes I my selfe did kill one in the same Forrest, that had two more then this that you talke of.

When hee heard him say so, the Noble-man blest himselfe, saying; It is not possible: and looking angerly vpon him, (scorning as it should seeme to be out-lyde) sayd vnto him; Sir, speake no more of this, tell it no farther, for it is such a thing, as was never yet seene, nor will I for my part ever beleeue it, though I hold it a courtesie so to doe.

The Gentleman, with a sterne contenance, and vndaunted courage, (his Age and Alliance heartening him on) in a discomposed kinde of voyce, boldly brake forth, and told him; Zwounds (my Lord) mee thinkes your Lordship should content your selfe, thot you haue [a] sixty thousand Crownes a yeere comming in more then I, vvithout seeking to out-strip mee in Lying, as you do in Liuing. Let mee (I pray) though I am a poore man) lye as I list: I begge nothing of you, nor any man else; nor do I rob any man either of his wealth, or his honour.

a *The Spanish word is*, Setenta quentos. *Now* vn quento, *is* diez vezez cien mil. *But that is not likely, hee had so much: and therefore we set it* 60000. Couarruuias verb. Contar.

There are likewise a certaine kinde of witty conceited fellowes, that are naturally simple and ignorant; from whose mouth oftentimes, drop mysticall sayings, and vvorthy the consideration, which God (it seemes) permits them to bolt forth now and then, making them also to keepe in such things as are fit to be silenced: who (though simple as they seeme) haue an extraordinary grace in the delivering of them. Which happinesse lighted vpon one, that was a simple ignorant fellow from his cradle; in whom one of the greatest Princes in Christendome tooke much pleasure, who for some secret causes, best knowne to himselfe, had discarded one of the gravest, and chiefest Ministers; and this simple fellow, comming one day into his presence, (which vvas shortly after the other was dismist the Court) hee was no sooner entred in, but the King askt him: What newes in Court? Hee told him, that his Majesty had done very ill, in putting *N. D.* away: And that it was without any reason, or justice in the world.

An answere of a simple Foole, to a great Prince.

The King imagined, (that cause having beene justified by many other of his Ministers) that this had proceeded simply out of his owne mouth, and told him, Thou speakest thus for him, because perhaps he was thy friend, not that thou hast heard any man else say so besides.

The Foole replyd. My friend? In faith thou lyest. Thou art more my friend then hee: I say nothing, but what all men say. The King was offended, that any should dare to question his actions, or to examine his brest. And being

being desirous to know, if any man of worth had presumed so farre to trench vpon what he had done. Hee replyde and said; Since thou professest that so many haue said it, and that thou art my friend, name one of those vnto mee, of whom thou hast heard this complaint.

The foole paus'd vpon the matter. And when the King thought that hee had beene calling to memory, whom he should name vnto him, hee angerly made answere; The blessed Trinitie told it me. Now see which of these three persons thou darest apprehend and punish. The King therevpon thought that it was a businesse of heaven, and so forbore to speake any more of it.

There are another kinde of pleasant Companions, which are good for nothing else but to dance, to play vpon Instruments, to sing, to murmure, to blaspheme; to swagger, to lye, and to devoure victuals, good drinkers, (a) and bad liuers. And of these, some are onely good at one of these qualities; other some at all. Wherein some great ones take such delight, that they shall haue what they will of them, doing them many extraordinary graces and favours, which is a most grievous sinne.

(a) Buenos beuedores, y malos viuidores.

The vanitie of some great Men in rewarding Fooles and Iesters.

To these, (and onely for these Iigges) they giue Iewels of great value, rich suites of cloathes, and hand-fulls of gold; which is more then they will doe for a wise, vertuous, and honest servant, which shall treat with them of the ordering of their Estates and Persons, illustrating their names, and honouring their house with glorious Titles. But rather when it so falleth out, that these come vnto them about matters of importance, and which neerely concerne them, they reject them, and will not be advised by them.

Your Presidents, Governours, Counsellors, and every other Officer in Court, or that haue ought to doe in the Palace, being greedy of honour, and blinded with passion, if they be called to speake their opinion, they often say that in publike, which their owne private opinion approues not, though it be never so good; because they conceiue that in so doing, they shall conforme theirs, to that of their Lord and Master, and so mannerly seeme to runne along in the pleasing of his humour; As also, for that it would grieue them to the very heart, that another should get the start of them, in gaining their Princes grace and favour from them. So that many are not admitted therevnto, for that they had not this trumpe in their hand, and would not play the like tricks, these getting more by their foule, then they by their faire play. By reason whereof, many things remaine without remedy and redresse; and great businesses often-times overthrowne.

Why Counsellors of State speake not their minder truly to their Masters.

Plaine speaking speedes not alwayes best.

And if consultation shall be had of such things, whereof great profit may redound to themselues or to the State, they will tell the Author thereof coldly and drily, because they will neither thanke him, nor reward him; Wee knew this before; but there are a thousand inconveniences in it.

Good labours ill requited.

But cursed be those Counsellours, who because they were not the first in delivering that sound opinion in such a businesse, blame the Author thereof, and carried away with the winde of their vanitie, and greedinesse of gaine, send him away empty: but vsing them first as Apothecaries doe their Simples; who first distill or pound them in a Morter, and when they haue squeez'd all the juyce, and wrung the substance out of them, throw out the cake on the dung-hill. They will first informe themselues thorowly of the busines, the best that they can; and when they finde they are well and fully informed, they take it to themselues, casting from them the true Author thereof; and that good counsell of his, they sell for their owne; and this they doe *cum privilegio.*

Some there are, that are like vnto those glasses or other vessels, that haue great bellies and little mouthes, they vnderstand things amisse, and fill their stomacke with all that they heare, and whatsoever is said vnto them: But al-

Shallow heads neither good for themselues nor others.

though men tell, and powre into them never ſo much, and though they be as full as they can hold; yet becauſe they know not how to conceiue things well, they cauſe others to comprehend as little. And for this reaſon their buſineſſes miſ-carry, and take not ſo happily as they ſhould; for they cannot be ſo well informed of that they treated vpon, as thoſe that were the proper Authors thereof, and had beaten their braines about it many dayes and nights, breaking their ſleepes, and loſing many a meale, for the better examining of all the contrary obiections, and for the advancing of their pretended profitable ends. Much good may it doe them, let them goe beyond me this way and ſpare not; for I would be loth in the end to rent ſuch kinde of gettings, or to farme them out of their hands.

For what ſervices the Embaſſadour made much of Guzman.

My Maſter tooke pleaſure in hearing me, and liked me for ſomething elſe too beſides my talke. For like a good Gardiner, he did gather thoſe flowers together, which ſeemed fitteſt vnto him for the making vp of his Noſe-gay, picking out the beſt and the choyſeſt for his particular vſe, and the reſt (which were but as it were the riffe-raffe and refuſe flowers,) he reſerved onely for entertainment.

The Embaſſadours noble diſpoſition.

He treated with me of that in private, which others did not ſtick to ſpeake in publike: And theſe his ſecrets he did not onely communicate to me alone; but when he deſired to know any thing, and to attaine to the true vnderſtanding of buſineſſes, that he might not erre, he would conſult with men of wit, and thoſe that had the beſt abilities, he would make very much of them, favour and honour them; and if they were poore and needy, he would ſupply their wants as well as he could, and more particularly in thoſe things whereof he knew they ſtood moſt in need. And this he faſtned vpon them in that wiſe and diſcreet manner, that it ſhould not ſeeme to be beſtowed vpon them by the way of Almes, leaving them thereby well contented, fully ſatisfied, & aboue all, exceeding thankfull. It was his faſhion to haue two or three of theſe vſually at his table, where were propounded graue politicke queſtions, and buſineſſes of State; and eſpecially touching thoſe things, which did preſſe and import him moſt, and neareſt concerned his owne particular ends. By this meanes, without opening and diſcovering of himſelfe, hee receiued their opinions, and reaped the chiefeſt fruits that their wits could afford him.

His courſe to come to know what was done abroad, and in Court.

The like courſe he tooke with the Officers in Court, particular Gentlemen, and ſome Citizens of the beſt eſteeme in *Rome*; with whom he holding friendſhip, came to know the wrongs they receiued, the remedies to be applyed, and how and which way they ſtood affected. And then afterwards having a good judgement of his owne, he did ſo diſpoſe of things, as might make moſt for his advantage, and the King his Maſters ſervice; ſo that he did ſeldome erre or faile in thoſe things that he vndertooke. Hee was very diſcreet, of a ſetled and well compoſed behaviour, vertuous, courteous, well ſtudied, and a great louer of thoſe that had in them ſuch commendable parts of learning as were worthy the recommendation. Hee was indued with all thoſe good qualities, which were to be required in a perſon of his place and imployment; hee was like a goodly roome, furniſhed with all thoſe rich ornaments which might ſet it forth, and make it appeare faire and beautifull in the eyes of the beholders, but in the midſt thereof, even in the very beſt part of all the roome, there was a (a) choake-Peare ſowne and growne vp, which did much blemiſh it.

(a) *The Spaniſh* Refran. Eſtaua ſembrado y nacido vn pero.

He had one ill qualitie, which did drowne all the reſt. I take that to be the ſenſe, though I haue not elſewhere met with the vnfolding of this phraſe of ſpeech.

This Apple was our generall ruine; this Peare the perdition of every particular. Hee was an *Enamorado*; one that was over head and eares in loue. For there is no fleſh ſo ſound, that hath not ſome corruption; nor no body ſo free, that hath not ſome one infirmitie or other. And his was, that he did but loue too well; yea, even to exceſſe. But in a matter of this nature, let every

man

man judge, as ſhall ſeeme beſt to his owne liking. Howbeit, many wiſe men haue ſaid, that a man cannot be abſolutely perfect, vnleſſe he haue once in his life-time beene in loue.

And of this opinion, it ſeemeth, was that pleaſant-conceited Countrie fellow, that was the common Cryer in his Pariſh, who having often cry'd an Aſſe, that another Countrie fellow had loſt, and could by no meanes heare any newes of him, (for it ſhould ſeeme ſome Gypſies had ſtolne him, who that he might not be knowne againe, had put new markes and colours vpon him) did earneſtly intreat him, that he would doe him the kindneſſe to crie him once more vpon the Sunday following, after high Maſſe was ended; and if hee ſhould chance to heare any tydings of his Aſſe, he would for his labour giue him a little young fat Pig that he had at home. *A tale of a Cryer*

The knaue Cryer greedy of the Pig, did as he had requeſted him. And all the people being met together in the Market-place, hee ſtood in the midſt thereof, and cry'd out with a loud voyce; To all manner of people, that are dwellers in this Towne, or borderers thereabout, be it knowne, that if there be any man or woman, that hath never yet beene in loue, let them come in; and tell their name, and they ſhall haue a fine young Pig for their labour. And God ſaue the King.

There was placed right againſt the ſame, leaning himſelfe againſt the Wall of the Councell houſe, a lubberly-Lad of ſome two and twenty yeares of age, with long ſhagge haire, a ruſſet Caſſocke on his backe, welted with the ſame cloth, open about the ſhoulders; and cloſe before; Breeches of white cottond Bayes, gathered and playted beneath at the knees; a Shirt with a band thereunto, ſo hard quilted throughout the ſtocke, that a Turkiſh bow with a very ſharpe Arrow, was not able to pierce it; a poore thread-bare Cloake; a paire of high ſhoes of Neats-leather, knit together with two ſtrings of twiſted Hempe, and bare-legged, who comming in all haſte to the Cryer in his Clowniſh kinde of language, ſaid vnto him; Brother *Sanz*, giue me the Pig: for by theſe ten bones I vow vnto you, that I was never yet in loue, never had my head puzled with it, nor ever payd any Tole to that Mill.

Then the Cryer calling the Owner of the beaſt in all haſte, and pointing to this Chop-loch with his finger, ſaid vnto him, *Anton Berrocal*, giue me my Pig, and take you here your Aſſe.

But that this may be proved, & that truly by ſome Preſident of theſe preſent times wherein we liue: There was in *Salamanca* a principall Doctor of the Chayre, one of the famouſeſt and graueſt Advocates in all that Vniverſitie, that often viſited (for his entertainment) a certaine Gentlewoman, that had profeſt her ſelfe a Nunne, very faire ſhee was, well deſcended, and wonderfull diſcreet. And he being inforced to abſent himſelfe from thence for ſome few dayes, he went his way, without taking his leaue of her, thinking that he had now attained to the perfection of his loue, and that there was no need of theſe fineneſſes, and niceties betweene them. *Another tale of a Doctor of* Salamanca.

Afterwards, when he was returned from his journey, hee went (as hee was wont) to viſit her. But when he ſaw, that ſhee would not admit of his Viſit, hee became very penſiue and ſad there-vpon; becauſe hee could not imagine what ſhould be the cauſe of this ſudden ſtrangeneſſe, having alwayes heretofore ſhew'd her ſelfe very kinde and loving vnto him. But when he came (by ſome diligences, that he had vſed) to know the reaſon of it, he was wonderfull well contented therewith, it ſeeming vnto him, that this in ſome ſort was rather a kinde of grace and favour of hers, then otherwiſe.

Well, he ſent vnto her to excuſe himſelfe, earneſtly intreating her, that he might be ſo much beholding vnto her, as to ſee her, vſing therein the meanes of ſuch Ladies and Gentlewomen as were friends to them both.

At laſt (through much importunitie) ſore againſt her will, ſhe came forth to receiue his Viſit, but with that anger and diſdaine, that ſhe could not containe her ſelfe, but muſt needs ſhew it: for the very firſt words that ſhe let flie at him, were theſe:

Baſe, and ill-nurtur'd as thou art; for ſuch baſe thoughts, argue no leſſe then baſeneſſe of bloud; which is confirmed by thy vngentlemanly proceeding; whereof, to thy ſhame thou haſt made too open ſhow. For having thy beeing, as it were from mee, and for my ſake, and having come thereby vnto that height, wherein now thou art, forgetting all the good I haue done thee, and all the charge that I haue beene at to qualifie thee, and put thee forward in the world, thou haſt loſt all that due reſpect and thankefulneſſe, which I deſerved at thy hands; but ſince the fault was mine in raiſing thee, it is no marvell, that mine ſhould be the puniſhment.

To theſe ſhee added many other more ſharpe and bitter words: ſo that the poore Gentleman being daſht quite out of countenance, becauſe many were there preſent when ſhee vſ'd him thus courſely, and gaue him ſuch a ſound ratling; incenſed with the exceſſe of this her rigour, he made her this ſhort and cutted reply:

Gentlewoman, touching this complaint of yours, be it with, or without any juſt cauſe, I will not ſtand to diſpute it; And for your accuſing of my vn-mannerly proceeding, let that likewiſe paſſe; For, *Cada vno, ſiente como ama.* Every man beſt knowes, how, and how much he loues. And I acknowledge, that all this ariſeth from the many and great favours, that you haue beene pleaſed to conferre vpon me.

But whereas you touch mee in my reputation, (being forced there-vnto by you,) it is fit and neceſſary that therein I ſhould ſatisfie thoſe that are here preſent, I muſt be ſo bold with you as to tell you plainely; That ſince God hath beene pleaſed to raiſe me to that I am, I come not thereto either by corruption, or favour, but by mine owne great paines, and continuall ſtudies, haue I procured my preferment. Shee then interrupting him, and not ſuffering him to goe on, returned him, but with a great deale of choller, this quicke anſwere:

Thou lyeſt like a Villaine. Thou riſe by thy learning? Thou had'ſt not come to that great knowledge that thou haſt, nor had'ſt ever had ſo much wit, as to learne to mend ſo much as an old ſhoe, if I had not put ſpirit into thee, quickned thy wit, and perfected thy vnderſtanding, by giving thee leaue to make loue vnto me. This whet-ſtone put an edge vpon thy dull ſconce; and but for this, thou might'ſt haue ſunke, and never beene able to lift vp thy head.

Touching loue

By this then wee may ſee, how much it may import a man to loue; and that it is not ſo great a fault as ſome would make it. Miſtake me not; I meane, when the ends are good, and honeſt.

But in my Maſter it was taken in the worſer part; for his ends did exceed and paſſe their bounds; and the blame of all that ill was laid vpon me; every man conceiving, that I was the cauſe thereof: Complaining; that ſince I came to ſerue him, I had opened his ſcull, and put into his head nothing but Hawkes-bells and Rattles: All that he tooke delight in, were merry tales, idle jeſts, and the like vanities: which till then, he had never formerly beene given vnto.

It might very well be, that with my heate I might cauſe ſome buds or little ſprigs to ſprout forth. But for to ſpeake the truth (ſeeing the Parties are not here to be examined, and I am the man whom they thus accuſe) I aſſure you, that others had the handling of him before, that wrought him this harme.

For when I entred into his ſervice, and that hee came to put his cure into

to my hands, the Phyſitians deſpayred of his recoverie, and had given him quite over, and would haue no more to doe with him; I will not deny, but that I might miniſter much thereof vnto him; for by reaſon I was in ſuch fauour with him, I had likewiſe the freedome to vſe many odde fooliſh jeſts, and prejudiciall liberties of ſpeech.

I was familiarly acquainted with all *Rome*, I had as free acceſſe into every houſe, as into our owne; excuſing my pretentions, that I onely repaired to ſuch and ſuch places, to giue leſſons to ſome to ſing to the Gitterne, and teach other ſome to dance.

Guzmans *courſe of life in* Rome.

I did entertaine your young Wenches in good converſation with merry and pleaſant jeſts; and your widdowes, with whiſpering tales in their eares; and entring into a league of friendſhip with your married men, I got likewiſe the good will of their Wiues, to whom they would bring mee to laugh and make ſport, wherewith they were well pleaſed, for the good contentment they tooke in my harmeleſſe mirth.

And all this I did, to the end, that from this good ground, my Maſter might take occaſion to declare and open himſelfe more freely to me. For I relating vnto him, what, and how things paſſed abroad, it was an eaſie matter for me to kindle with the breath of my words, the fire that was in his heart, by blowing firſt away the aſhes from off thoſe coales, that were already throughly tinded, aliue, and very quicke within him. He was in a good diſpoſition there-vnto, and therefore any the leaſt occaſion would ſerue the turne. He was a kinde of houſe made all of thatch, ſo that a little ſparke was enough to raiſe a great flame, having ſuch combuſtible ſtuffe to worke vpon, being ſtill affectioned to that, which himſelfe had moſt minde to, without having reſpect to that diſcreet carriage, which he formerly obſerved in all his actions.

I doe ingeniouſly confeſſe, that I was an inſtrument of his exceſſes and flying out, and that in regard of my being ſeene to walke here and there to and fro, to enter into this houſe, and to come out of that, many houſes, and women of good qualitie, were ſpotted and branded with infamy.

Guzman *an ill inſtrument to his Maſters deſires.*

But let vs heere leaue my Maſter as a man, to whom albeit theſe things did cauſe him to bee noted, and to haue his good name called in queſtion, yet was not hee ſo much to be blamed, as thoſe who did know well enough, what manner of fellow I was.

I would many times demand of them, what honour or profit I did reape, by being intereſſed in theſe buſineſſes? Why ſhould Widdowes take delight in hearing of tales, and pleaſant jeſts? Why Parents bring ſuch ſtraggling wanderers home to their Daughters? Or why Husbands make their Wiues merry with ſuch dangerous entertainments? What other good can bee expected from your neat Pages (ſuch as I then was) who doe ſcarce touch the ground that they tread on? What doe your Princes witty Ieſters, and your Great mens Dwarfes ſerue for, but to talke with Ladies and Gentle-women, and to indeare vnto them their Maſters loue? who againe inquire of them, what good tables they keepe, how gallantly they liue, how much they ſpend, what in Amber, and other odours and ſweet perfumes, what in the pompe of apparell, and what in Muſicke that they dayly beſtow vpon their friends and Miſtreſſes?

Pages & Dwarfs of what vſe.

Why doe they talke and giue eare to ſuch things, whereby they afterwards giue occaſion to others to open their mouthes, and to vtter with their tongues all that they either know or imagine? Doe not they perceiue, that in ſo doing, they build but their owne priſon, and weaue that winding ſheete, wherein their good names muſt be winded and buryed? What benefit can the content they take in hearkening to merry tales bring them? which are to no other end in the world, but to giue way vnto them, that they may report

report to their Maſters, what they take moſt pleaſure in, beſides the queſtioning of their good names amongſt their neighbours? Let theſe a Gods name make themſelues merry with the reward of their errours; and if they be lovers of jeſts, it is no ſmall marvell if they bee jeſted withall. They deſire a life to haue muſicke play at their windowes, whileſt others in the meane while are making Ballads of them, to ſing forth their ſhame at every mans doore.

A leſson to Widdowes.

A Widdow, that ſuſpects her honour, and will haue a care of her credit, muſt keepe her doore ſhut, her daughter chambr'd vp, her caſement cloſe, and aboue all, not ſuffering her to haue her owne will, and to doe what ſhee liſt; that ſhee be viſited but ſeldome, but be alwayes occupied; for, of idleneſſe, (*a*) growes wantonneſſe. And it ſtands with good reaſon, *Que la madre holgazana, ſaque hija corteſana*: That a light mother, ſhould breed a looſe daughter. And if ſhe loue to haue her traine plaid withall, that her daughter will proue a Wagge-tayle. And if ſhe hap to be married, ſhe will turne ill huſwife, becauſe ſhe hath beene ill taught.

Trou.
Del oçio naſce el negocio.

A leſson to Parents.

By this you may ſee, what obligations the Parents haue to looke well vnto their Children: Let them take away all occaſions of ſcandall; Let them weigh with themſelues, what (vpon the like occaſions) they murmure and whiſper of others. And then let them conſider, how much better it were, that their Wiues, Siſters, and Daughters, ſhould rather learne to handle their Needle, then to play on the Gitterne; to governe well, rather then to dance well: For hence it commeth to paſſe, that many women, not knowing how to looke ſo well as they ſhould, into the corners of their owne houſes, buſie themſelues, in working ſtrange alterations in thoſe of others.

Speake I truth, or no? I know, ye will tell me that I doe. For ſuch truthes as theſe are not to be treated, or mentioned, but vpon neceſſitie, and vrgent occaſion.

I confeſſe it to be ſo, and for my part, I approue it. But becauſe that which I haue ſaid, toucheth none of thoſe that heare me; it is therefore well ſaid, to the end that when it ſhall be needfull, and men ſee their time, they may be the better able to giue good counſell vnto others, when they ſee them ſtep out of the way, and goe awry.

proverb.
Guzman, *his Maſters Bawd.*

Malo es lo malo, que nunca puede ſer bueno. Ill is that ill, that never can be good. It was not good, I confeſſe, that I ſhould bee a Bawd to my Maſter: But every man would faine liue. And this Office I preformed by thoſe tricks and devices I told you of before, taking occaſion by my familiar and generall acquaintance in *Rome*, to goe as boldly into every mans houſe, as I would into mine owne, excuſing this libertie of mine, by thoſe pretenſions I made, of teaching ſome to play vpon Inſtruments, and ſome to dance; entertaining in the meane while Maidens with merriments; Widdowes, with old wiues tales, and what was whiſpered abroad; and entring into amitie with married men, good honeſt kinde Cuckolds.

But I was in ſome ſort to be excuſed, (if not borne withall) for that my wants and neceſsitie draue mee to doe as I did, and opened that doore vnto me, whereat I might get forth to ſeeke my living.

But what excuſe can they haue, who for the light toyes of this world, will venture the loſſe of their reputation vpon earth, and thoſe rich treaſures that are laid vp in heaven for thoſe that liue well? which two things every man ought moſt to eſteeme, and haue ever before his eyes. But what I did herein, was to wedge my Maſters affection vnto me, and to worke my ſelfe into his favour, both which I came to bee poſſeſt of; and not with intent and purpoſe to reclaime him from this his weakeneſſe, and to perſwade him vnto better courſes, but rather to ſpurre him on in this wretched race that he ran.

But he that would truſt me in ſuch like buſineſſes as theſe, and communi-

cate

cate himselfe vnto me in this kinde, what could he looke or expect from me? I know there are many men, who thinke it is a great credit vnto them, that they doe nobly, and get a great deale of reputation and esteeme, by these their visits, their ingresses and their egresses, when indeed, it is quite contrary.

For your women that entertaine chat with your crack-rope Pages, with your giddy-headed Poets, that never goe without a muske (a) Comfit in their mouth, or chewing the rinde of a Lemmon, with your flat-Capt Citizens, your countrie Lads, and the like; some perhaps may hold them discreet; but I am sure they lose the name of chast, which as an inestimable Iewell they ought highly to esteeme, being for their labour ever after accounted fooles.

(a) *The Spanish word is*, Alcorça. i. vna costa de azucar refinado con mezcla de poluos cordiales. Arcorcillas, *we call* Pastillas de boca. Vid. Couarruuias. Verbo Alcorça.

Now the profit that I made by this my occupation, trading with this person, and with that, with t'other and t'other, this my conversation being so generall, it was the onely meanes, that kept me from being discovered to be a Bawd.

But (to say the truth) they might very well haue put the implumed Hat vpon my head, which I haue seene worne by many others in my dayes, who did lesse deserue it then my selfe, in token they were Loue's Embassadours, whom he imployed in his chiefest and most secret affaires.

Here, in me, may you see how misfortunes fall to men by inheritance. Hitherto it hath beene delivered without any disguise or masking, how I led my Master aleng, never suffring him to take any rest or quiet; and how hee made me another *Adonis*, in the neatnesse and gallantry of my cloathes, and delicacie of perfumes, for the great care and diligences that I vsed in these and the like businesses.

But true and certaine it is, that murmurings and whisperings attend such Actions. And if a good man be now and then bitten, what wonder is it, that a bad man should be bruised and crusht therewith to pieces? *Y que aya sospechas, donde no faltan hechas*; And that there may well bee suspition, where deeds make confession.

False murmuration bites, true kills. Proverb.

It were a great deale of simplicitie and ignorance in me, and other such as I am, for to seeke after any better name, or to goe about to make (as they say) a stone Wall of (b) mudde; thinking to stop mens mouthes, and to hinder their ill imaginations and bad conceits of vs, when as we our selues giue them such evident occasions to conceiue amisse of vs.

(b) *Proverb.* Tapiar, a piedra lodo.

None can impose, or set any sessing or ratable fine vpon mens censures and opinions; for that were, *Poner puertas al campo*, to set vp gates to shut in such a vast circuit, as it *Salisburie*-Plaine.

Mens censures not to be auoyded.

Thou canst no more limit a mans thoughts, then thou canst number the sands of the Sea. It is not I that can make them to thinke, or not to thinke as I would haue them; I cannot be master of their thoughts; nor will it boote any one man to deny that which all men affirme. It will be but trouble without profit, a needlesse and endlesse piece of worke; wherein we shall shew our selues as foolish as he was, who went about to locke vp the smoake, to make doores to shut it in, and to keepe it close prisoner.

But what shall we now say of our foolish Masters, who perswade themselues, that this their businesse passeth secretly and safely thorow our hands? Shall I deale truly with you? I will. Take it then from me, and I know it to be true, *Que no ay çiençia, que corrijavn enamorado*. There is no scourge of wit or learning, that will lash a wanton Lover out of his lust.

Proverb.

For matters of Loue, there are no *Bartuli*, no *Aristotles*, no *Galens*; their counsels faile them; their wisdomes are too weake; and their Medicines can doe no good vpon them. Nor there is not any thing, that doth more publish and manifest this truth, then mens solicitude and care in these things, from the which none (that are taken therewith) can containe themselues. For with

Loue hardly removed.

two

two Visits of ours, and one intercourse of theirs, or but a passing by their doore, make the little children (those shrill trumpets of truth) to sound forth their lightnesse aloud thorow the streets.

The greatest punishment that lighted then vpon me was; that my hayres began to sprout; and my Chinne to put on a beard, the which the more I shau'd, because I would not haue it perceiu'd, the thicker it came, & grew the faster. And for that it is a peculiar Office belonging to handsome and witty Pages, to be *Venus* and *Cupids* chiefest Ministers, the more diligence I vsed in tricking, adorning, trimming, and setting my selfe forth in lascivious manner, the more occasion I gaue the world thereby to talke and judge of me accordingly. I studied to be neat and handsome in my cloathes, but tooke no heed how foule the fashion of my behaviour was; and therefore it was no marvell if they threw durt vpon me with their tongues. In a word either actiuely or passiuely, every one would bestow vpon mee *El nombre de las pasquas*, and force me to weare his Livery, you know what I meane; and though I told them they lyed like a company of Rogues and Villaines as they were, they would laugh and hold their peace, giving by this their mysticall kinde of silence, a more open way vnto the truth. Their taunts against me were true, and strooke deepe, but whatsoever I reply'd vpon them, they made but a jest of it; my words were but as the picking of strawes, theirs as the piercing of Dartes.

Proverb.

There are a kinde of considerate and discreet men, which take the sayings of men, not as the words sound in themselues, bnt as they are, from whom they come; regarding more the speaker, then the thing spoken. And this is a great point of wisdome.

A cunning tricke to defame in this manner.

Againe on the contrary, there are some (I know not whether I may be so bold to call them fooles or no) who from some dis-favour of their Mistresses, forme an injury, and as if it either were, or might be so, they will be revenged of them; and laying some imputation vpon their honour, seeke to scandall and defame them, without any reason or cause in the world. I was not able to stand against so many, nor could my Sword cut out his way thorow such a multitude that set vpon me: I saw they had reason on their side, and therefore I was willing to bee-hush, and to pocket vp these wrongs with patience.

And albeit it bee an Act of true humilitie; patiently to suffer reproach; yet in me it was cowardize, and dejection of the minde. For that I held my peace and said nothing, there was good cause why; because I knew all the speaking in the world could not helpe it. It might well haue made matters worse, but never a whit the better. And seeing that I had not one sparke of shame in mine owne house, I would not for shame goe seeke it else-where; the fire of my zeale to good was quite out, there was no recovering of it. And therefore (making a vertue of necessitie) I was forced to passe over all these bobs and jerkes they had at me, some-times with a smile, some-times a jest, and some-times with both.

Proverb.
(a) Tenia como el melon la cama hoca.

In conclusion, howbeit I ought rather to haue indured any the greatest hurt that could come vnto me, then submit my selfe even in the least degree to base gaine; yet notwithstanding, I had, like the *Melon* (a) my bed made for me. I saw I could not well be worse thought of then I was already, and therefore casting aside all thought of amendment, I counted it a credit vnto me, and tooke rather a pride in it then otherwise, and so making light of it, and jesting it out, I did sett a good face on the matter, when they said any thing to me, that I might not seeme to be dasht out of countenance, or bound to giue them an answer, which would but haue made them to vexe me the more, and done my selfe no good. So that by this they persecuted me the lesse, and I past the more quietly along by them.

To passe things by with patience.

And

And why should I take (seeing this did serue my turne, and that I past well enough with it) any other course with them? Which in these dangerous cases, if I should haue attempted any other way to pacifie them I should never haue beene able to doe it; and should thereby haue but made the fire more to flame, by seeking to effwage it with Flame and Rozin.

Let him therefore, whosoever will take vpon him to set open a shop to Vice, provide himselfe of a *Tortoyse* shell, arme his backe with patience, and keepe his eares, and his mouth shut. And let not any man flatter himselfe, that having foule conditions hee shall get him a faire report. For, *El nombre, sigue al hombre*; As is the man, so is his good name. And as every one deserues, so shall hee be esteemed.

Chap. III.

Guzman de Alfarache *recounteth that which hapned vnto him with a Captaine and a Doctor at a banquet, which the Embassadour his Lord made.*

THere is so thinne a Pale put betwixt Deceiuing and Lying; and are so neere kinne the one to the other, that I know not who can tell, or is able to distinguish and difference the one from the other: for though they are different in name, they are one in identitie, and of the same paritie in effect; and in essence alike. For there is no Lye without Deceit, nor no deceit vvithout a Lye. *Of deceiving and lying.*

Hee that will lye, doth deceiue; and hee that will deceiue, doth lye. But because they are commonly receiued after a different manner, and for different purposes, I vvill take them as they stand in vse, and accordingly discourse thereof.

Deceit then, in respect of Truth, is as Truth, in regard of a Lye: or as the shadow of a Glasse, and that naturall forme vvhich it representeth. It is as aptly disposed, and is made as facill to effect whatsoever great hurt, as it is hard and difficult to be found out at the first; for that it is so like vnto good, that representing the very selfe-same figure, fashion, motion, and proportion, it doth the easier destroy it. It is a most subtill net, wrought of the slendrest and smallest threds, in comparison and likenesse whereof vvas framed that other, vvhich the Poets feigne, vvas made by *Vulcane*, when hee caught him that cuckol'd him.

It is so imperceptible, and so fine, and thinne, that there is not any sight so cleere, any judgment so subtill, nor any discretion of that discerning, nor any wit of that nimble apprehension, that is able to discouer it, nay scarce to perceiue it.

It is so artificially wrought, that though it be spred out abroad, and layd forth as plaine, as may be to our view, yet are wee not able to escape it, in regard wee walke on securely, not so much as once dreaming of any fraud or deceit. And by this meanes it is so strong, that few or none do breake it, vvithout leaving some signe of the harme that they haue taken. And for this cause, it is justly called *Maximum vitæ damnum*, the greatest hurt that can happen vnto vs in this life. For vnder a tongue of Waxe, it carries a heart of Diamond; it clothes it selfe with Hayre-cloth, though it never come neere the skinne; it keepes a chopping and sucking in of the cheekes, for

for to make it seeme leane and meager, vvhen its belly is ready to cracke vvith good cheere. And having store of health to sell to others, it speakes pulingly, and pittifully; and onely that it may seeme to be sicke, it puts on a sorrowfull countenance; powres but its teares, offers vp its bosome, and vvith open armes, runnes to receiue vs, but as *Ioab* did *Amasa*; imbrace, to kill.

Of all mischiefes, deceit is the greatest.

And as Birds giue the Empire to the Eagle; Beasts, to the Lyon; Fishes, to the Whale; and Serpents, to the Basiliske; so amongst all other mischiefes, there is none greater or more powerfull, then that of Deceit. As an Aspe, it kils vs sleeping; it is that *Syrens* voyce, whose delight (like a Butchers Curre) first seaseth on the eare, and next on the throat; its ravishing, is murthering; it offers a faire assurance of peace, and with a great deale of smoothnesse, professeth friendship; but neglecting all humaine and divine Lawes, breakes them at her pleasure, leaving vs vvith as much wrong, as scorne.

Shee promiseth cheerefull contentments, and certaine hopes, vvhich shee never performeth, nor do they ever come to passe, because shee goes chopping and changing them from Fayre to Fayre, to make her owne market. And as a house is built of many stones; so one deceit is an addition of many other; and all of them serue for one and the same end. It is the Headsman of all goodnesse, for with a seeming kinde of sanctitie, it makes every man secure, and there is none that are either aware of it, or feare it. It comes vnto vs in the habit of a Hermit, the better to execute its ill intents.

This contagious infirmity is so generall, that not onely men, but Beastes and Birds doe likewise therein suffer vvith them. Also the Fishes in the Waters exercise deceits; and this they doe, the better to preserue themselues. Trees and plants doe deceiue, promising pleasant flowers and fruites, which fayle vs at their time, passing brauely away with it. Stones, though they be but stones, and without sence, trouble our sence, vvith their counterfeit splendour, and lye, in that they seeme to be that they are not. Time, occasions, and our sences deceiue vs; and aboue all, our best & most considerate thoughts. In a word, all things deceiue, and we do all deceiue, one of these foure manner of wayes.

Foure manner of wayes of deceiving.

The one is, vvhen one vseth a deceit, and goes cunningly away vvith it, leaving the other deceiued: As it hapned to a certaine Student of *Alcala de Henares*; vvho, vvhen the Feast of Easter vvas drawing neere, and having nothing vvhere-with to make himselfe merry against that good Time, hee called to minde a neighbour of his, who had a Court or yard, vvith great store of Hens in it, vvith the vvhich hee did himselfe no good at all.

The first. A Tale of a Scholler of Alcala.

Hee was a poore beggerly fellow; and as hee was very poore, so was hee extreeme covetous; an erranter mizer was there not in all the Country. He fed them vvith the bread that was giuen him of Almes; and a nights hee shut them vp in the same lodging where he lay.

This Student vvent plotting with himselfe, how hee might steale them away, but lighted vpon none that did yet like him. For in the day time it vvas impossible, and in the night they roosted in the same roome where hee himselfe lodg'd.

a In Spaine, they do not pay for the carriage of their Letters before-hand, but put so much Port vnder the Superscription, to be paid by him that receiues it.

At last he bethought himselfe of feigning a packet of Letters, and to put there-vpon two Ducats' Port, directing it to *Madrid* to a certaine principall Cavallero, and a Gentleman very vvell knowne: and before the breake of day, he very secretly laid it on the threshold before his doore, that as soone as hee opened it, hee might presently finde it. Hee got him vp in the morning, and as soone as he saw it, not knowing what it was, he tooke it vp.

This

This Student paſt that vvay in the meane vvhile, as it vvere by chance. VVhom this poore man eſpying, came vnto him, and intreated him to tell him what thoſe papers vvere. The Student told him; Marrie ſuch (ſayd hee) as I vvould be glad vvith all my hart I could light vpon the like.

Theſe (quoth he) are Letters directed to *Madrid* with two Ducats Port vpon them, to a rich Gentleman that reſideth there, who ſhall no ſooner receiue them, but will ſee you truly paid for your paines.

The poore man beganne to looke vp, and vvas ſo overjoyed therewith, that the teares did trickle downe his cheekes. Hee thought with himſelfe, that one dayes travell was a thing of nothing; eſpecially being that hee might performe this journey by noone, and though he went thither a foote, he might in the evening, without any trouble, returne home in ſome one Cart or other that was to goe for *Alcala*. Whereupon hee went and fed his Poultry, ſhut them vp ſafe, leaving out ſuch food as hee thought ſufficient for them, and ſo hies him away with his Letters.

The Student that night made a ſhift, by getting over ſome back-ſides, and out-Courts, to get into that yard, vvhere the poore mans houſe vvas, and heaving the doore off the hindges, hee gets mee in, taking nothing away thence but the Hens, leaving no more but one onely Cocke behinde, with a mourning hood on his head, and a Mantle of blacke Bayes, ſo ſurely ſowed on, that they could not fall off; which done, hee with-drew himſelfe home-ward to his lodging.

When the poore man was come home to his houſe the next morning, and ſaw the mis-fortune that had befalne him at home, and that hee had beſtow'd his labour in vaine; for there was no ſuch Gentleman to be found in all *Madrid*; hee, and his Cocke did bitterly bewayle this their ſolitude and vviddow-hood, making lamentable moane each vnto other: the good man vvith his mournfull words; the poore Cocke, vvith his mourning weedes.

The ſecond.

Another kidde of deceit is: When together with the deceiued, the Deceiver in alſo deceived. As it hapned to this Student in this very caſe. For, hee being not able to effect this buſineſſe alone by himſelfe, and that hee muſt needes vſe the helpe of ſome body elſe, hee tooke vnto him one of his *Camrades*, whom hee acquainted with the buſineſſe, promiſing if hee would aſſiſt him in this theft, he ſhould ſhare halfe with him.

This his Companion diſcovered it to a friend of his; hee, to a third; ſo that the word paſt from one to another, till it came to the eares of certaine madde Wagges of *Andaluzia*; And for they were old *Caſtilians*, (and their Oppoſites for this cauſe) they agreed together to ſtrip them of their Hens, by another pretty device.

They knew the houſe from whence they were to come; and the ſtreetes, through which they vvere to paſſe; They faigned themſelues to be the Iuſtice, and they vvatcht till they ſhould returne, at the turning of the ſtreete: whom they had no ſooner eſpyed, but they iſſued out[a] vpon them in forme of a Circle, hedging them in on every ſide, vvith Lanternes, Swords and Bucklers, having appointed the formoſt man to aske, Who goes there? What are yee? Stand. Vpon this, they verily thinking, that hee was one of the Iuſtices ſervants, and being loth to be either knowne or taken with that badde word of bidding them Stand, they threw downe their Hens, and beganne to take them to their heeles, as hard as they could driue. So that there vvere not ſome vvanting, vvho did alſo coozen, and deceiue them.

[a] *This is the faſhion, and language of the Iuſtices in Spaine, when they make the Round.*

The third.

The third kinde of deceit is; When it is without prejudice. Neither deceiuing others, together with themſelues; nor deceiued, when they goe about

to deceiue. And this may be done two manner of wayes; either by Workes, or by Words. Words, by recounting Stories, telling of Tales and Fables, and other things of intertainment. Workes, as by juggling, sleights of the hand, tricks on the Cards, and other the like devices, vvhich are done without any harme or prejudice to any.

The fourth.

The fourth kinde is; When hee that thinkes to deceiue, is himselfe deceiued; that tricke that hee would put vpon another, being put vpon himselfe: As it befell a great Prince of *Italy*, though some report the same of *Cesar*: Who, that hee might grace one of the famousest Poets of his time, carried him home to his house, where at first hee vs'd him wonderfull kindly, made exceeding much of him, did him many favours, and bestow'd many gifts on him, as long as his humour was pleased with those Poems that hee presented vnto him.

A pretty passage betwixt the Prince of Italy, *and a Poet.*

But this lasted not long, the Princes affection falling off by a little and a little, till at last the poore Poet vvas faine to content himselfe vvith his bare lodging, and some short allowance. So that hee suffered much want and necessitie; and was growne so poore both in his purse, and his apparell, that hee durst not goe abroad for shame, because hee had not vvhere-withall to cover his nakednesse.

The Poet vveighing and considering this his vnhappinesse; and seeing himselfe shut vp as it were in a Cage, and that neither (vvhich is permitted vnto Parrats) the Prince himselfe, nor any about him, vvould vouchsafe to heare him speake, hee resolved vvith himselfe to rowse vp the Princes long sleeping favour, and waiting an opportunity to doe it, vnderstanding such a time, that hee vvas to goe abroad, hee attended at a certaine place, vvhich hee thought fittest for his purpose, and vvhen the Prince drew neere, hee made toward him, and kneeling on his knees, vvhen hee came at him, hee presented him vvith a Poeme that hee had made; vvhich the Prince receiving, hee thought by this meanes to reviue that remembrance of him, vvhich had so long lien dead. Hee continued in these kinde of diligencies so long, that the Prince being vvearied out vvith these his importunities, vvas determined to put some jest or other vpon him, to make him to desist from giving him farther trouble in that kinde.

And having himselfe made a Sonnet, and going out, to walke one Evening, vvhen hee saw the Poet vvas comming towards him, preventing him in the presenting of his Poem, hee drew the Sonnet out of his bosome, and clapt it in the Poets hand; the Poet vnderstanding the tricke, as one that vvas discreete, feigning to haue read it, highly commended both the Verse, and the invention, put his hand in his pocket, and pluckt out a Royall of eight vvhich hee had there, and gaue it to the Prince, telling him vvithall; Such a good wit vvell deserues a reward. I giue you all that I haue, had I more, you should haue it.

A royall of eight, is foure shillings English.

With this the Prince was fast, being caught in the same snare, and paid with the same tricke that he purposed to put vpon him. And from that time forward hee favoured him as he had done before.

Many other dangerous deceits.

There are many other kindes of these deceits; and one aboue the rest; which is a very dangerous one; which is that of those who would make vs to beleeue that for Gospell, when as our owne eyes and knowledge do both see, and know the contrary.

Proud fellowes.

A fellow that is basely both bred and borne, and vvell enough knowne to be such a one, vvill seeke by his hawtie carriage and proud lookes, to gaine vnto himselfe the name of a great man, though (God hee knowes) hee is scarce worth foure *Marvedis*; giving (by his ill proceeding) occasions to others, to scoffe and langh at him: And to say, vvhat fellow is this? What vvas his begin-

beginning? Of what continuance his Anceſtours? Whence doth he fetch his Pedigree? What did his Gentilitie or his Office coſt him? What trade was his Father of? and of what occupation his Mother? Theſe men thinke to deceiue others, and they deceiue themſelues. For not by this meanes (that is to ſay, by pride) but by humilitie, affabilitie, and faire behauiour, they goe by degrees, throwing in their earth, till they come in time to fill vp thoſe ditches, and to be levell and equall with the beſt.

Others ſeeke to deceiue with their fierce lookes, thinking thereby to be counted valiant, as if wee did not know, that they are the onely men, that dare not meddle with a Mouſe; or tread vpon a Worme, if hee ſhould but offer to turne tayle. *Swaggerers.*

Others with their too much prattle, and quoting of Authors, ſeeke to be held wiſe men, and learned Clearkes, not conſidering that many Stationers haue farre more in number, who notwithſtanding in matter of knowledge are meerely ignorant men. For neither the long Gowne, nor the broad-brim'd Hat, nor the Mule, for all his graue Foot-cloth, ſhall be ſufficient to cover the diſeaſe they are ſicke of, but at three or foure ſhakings of the Vrinall, wee ſhall diſcerne thoſe ragges, and cloudy ſtreakes that are in their Vrine, and then they will plainely be diſcovered what they are. *Talking Schollers*

I haue ſaid of ſome, that they repute themſelues wiſe and learned, becauſe they haue ſtore of bookes, and that your Stationers haue many more then they; but many of them are worſe then theſe blocke-headed Doctors, who with a great deale of paines, and by tradition, vnderſtand the *Frontiſpices* of bookes, and yet notwithſtanding, being often therein deceiued, they fall headlong into the pit of ignorance; now would I haue thee to tell me which of theſe two doe deceiue moſt? I ſhall tell it thee. They are both of one graine, ſowne and reaped vnder one and the ſame Moone, bread of the ſame meale whereof moſt men doe eate, and is their onely nouriſhment. *Stationers.*

But out of the number of theſe, doe I except *Paulus* and *Aldus Manutius*; *Henricus*, *Robertus*, and *Carolus Stephanus*; *Adrianus Turnebbius*, *Franciſcus Sanſonius*, and many other like vnto them, not onely meere Stationers, and Printers, but learned and famous Schollers, and of great note in the world, whoſe workes and labours doe and ſhall ever render thereof a perpetuall teſtimonie. There haue beene divers other worthy vnderſtanding men in this their Profeſſion; who in their life-time, haue publiſhed and brought to light many moſt noble and excellent Authors; who, if they had not by them beene revived, had beene buryed for ever in the Church-yard of oblivion. Whereas now many of them by theſe mens great paines and induſtry, are rayſed from their graues to immortalitie. *Printers.*

Others are growne ſo fooliſh, (and indeed are accounted no better) who being now growne old, decrepit, and vnable for any kinde of vſe or exerciſe, and this their weakeneſſe being notorious and well knowne to all the world, and this their rotten building ready to fall, yet are they willing to deceiue themſelues, and every body elſe (if they could) contrary to all truth and reaſon, by dying the haires of their heads and beards, as if any man were ſo ignorant, and did not know that there are none of theſe changeable coloured beards, but at every motion of the Sunne, and every caſt of the eye they preſent a different colour, and never a one perfect, much like vnto thoſe in the necks of your Doues and Pigeons; for in every haire of theſe Cox-combes, you ſhall meet with three divers and ſundry colours; white at the root, yellow in the middle, and blacke at the point, like vnto one of your Parrats feathers. *Old men.*

Old women.

When women doe the like, there is not any one haire of theirs, which hath not it's different colour. There was a certaine Gentlewoman in the world, that ſhall be nameleſſe, (which of mine owne knowledge, I am able to affirme) who did vſe this dying and colouring of her hoary haires, which one day I did diligently marke and obſerue; and beleeue me (for let me not liue if I lye vnto you) ſome of them ſeemed greene vnto me, ſome blue, ſome yellow, ſome vermilion, and others of divers other colours; and in ſome one odde haire, all theſe colours did conjoyne and meete together. So that ſeeking thus to deceiue Time, and to diſſemble her Age, ſhee diſcovered her folly, and became a laughing ſtocke to as many as lookt vpon her.

Young folkes.

That ſome young folkes ſhould vſe the like deceit, who by inheritance haue beene borne with gray haires, (who like the fruits that grow in the fields of *Placençia*, grow ripe before their time) it is no great marvell. Yet even theſe too (though better to be borne withall) giue occaſion of having that freely ſpoken of them, which they willingly would avoyd, whereby it comes to paſſe, that as they increaſe in yeares, they decreaſe in credit.

Old age, a venerable thing.
Old age neceſſary, yet not regarded.

O thou vnfortunate, miſerable, and wretched old Age, thou ſacred Temple, thou Sanctuarie of ſafety; thou ſtop to the deſperate carreeres of this life; thou Inne of reſt to our weary bones; How is it that thou art ſo much abhorred in this life, being that thou art the Haven, which all men deſire to attaine vnto? How is it that they, who reſpect thee a farre off, when they come neerer vnto thee, ſticke not to prophane thee? How is it, that thou being the veſſell of Prudence, thou art derided as fooliſh? How is it, that thou that art honour it ſelfe, reſpect and reverence, art by thoſe that are thy beſt friends reputed infamous? How is it, that thou being the Treaſurie of knowledge, art deſpiſed and contemned? Either there is ſome great defect in thee, or ſome evill diſpoſition in them; whereof the latter is moſt certaine. They come vnto thee (wanting the ballaſt of graue counſell and ſound advice) like a Ship without ſand or gravell in the Keele of her, to keepe her ſteady; through lacke whereof the Barke goes roulling and tottering to and fro, becauſe their ſhallow braines want that due weight and counterpoyſe, that ſhould ballace their vnderſtanding, and keepe it ſtraight and vpright.

To this purpoſe I will tell you a tale, worthy of long conſideration, though the diſcourſe be ſhort, and feigned for this effect.

A pretty Tale.

When *Ioue* had made the fabricke of this Vniverſe, it ſeeming vnto him, that all was faire and perfectly good, before he created Man, he formed all other living creatures; amongſt the which, the Aſſe being deſirous to be the moſt remarkeable & renowned of all the reſt, (which had he not done, he had not beene an Aſſe) as ſoone as he had ſcarce newly opened his eyes, beholding this glorious and beautifull frame, he was wonderfull jocund and merry; began to leape and to skip from one place to another, and to bray (as they vſe to doe) aloud (being the firſt trumpeter, that ever was in the world) till being quite wearied out, and glad to take his eaſe, being a little gentler and cooler then he was before, it began to come in his minde; How, from whence, and when he was an Aſſe; for that hee had not beene an Aſſe from the beginning, nor begotten by an Aſſe. Which made him to examine with himſelfe why, and to what end he was created, and what place ſhould be provided for him, where hee might take his reſt; it being a thing proper vnto Aſſes, to take the ends of things into their conſideration, when they are already paſt all remedie, and (as we ſay) at the laſt caſt, when the jollitie of their youth is paſt, their merry dayes ſpent and gone, and their pleaſures at an end.

Iupiter and the Aſſe.

(a) Temprano ſe recoje, quien tarde ſe conuierte.

And yet would to God, that ſome would come to this amendment, and perſevere therein, (a) *Que temprano ſe recoje, quien tarde ſe conuierte.* For he recalls

recals himselfe in time, that returnes at last. In this melancholy humour, my honest Asse comes me to *Iupiter*, humbly beseeching him, that he would be pleased to reveale vnto him, who he was, and for what end he had created him? *Iupiter* told him, For the service of Man, and told him by piece-meale one after another, all those duties and services belonging to his charge, and what manner of burthens he was to beare.

Which newes was so vnpleasing vnto him, that vpon the very hearing of it, there suddenly came bruises and gallings vpon his backe, and hardnesse of hoofes, with his head and eyes hanging downe to the ground for very griefe. And out of a conceited feare of his future labour, (for evils not yet indured, out of the noyse and rumour that they make, doe, at the first nomination of them, feare vs more then when we afterwards proue them) he remained in that sad and melancholy dumpishnesse as wee now vsually see him, conceiting that to be a most irkesome and painefull kinde of life wherevnto hee was destinated.

Wherevpon he farther intreated of *Iupiter*, that hee would be pleased to tell him, how long he was to leade this miserable life? *Iupiter* told him, he was to continue therein, the full tearme of thirty yeares.

The Asse herevpon began to mourne and grieue anew, it seeming vnto him, to be as it were a perpetuall and eternall slauery, if it should last so long: And therefore once more he humbly besought *Iupiter*, that hee would haue compassion of him, and not suffer him for so long a season, to indure so hard a servitude. And being that he had not yet dis-merited of him, by any fault that he had committed against him, nor would (if otherwise he could choose,) ever offend him, that ten yeares might suffice for his living in this base fashion; all which time he would faithfully promise vnto him, to serue man well and truly, like an honest Asse, with all meekenesse and fidelitie. And those other twentie, which were over and aboue remaining vnto him, that he would bestow the over-plus of those yeares vpon some one, that were better able to beare them,

Iupiter being moved with these his humble and earnest intreaties (looking, poore silly foole, most pittifully,) granted him his request. Wherevpon the Asse was not altogether so sad as he was before.

Iupiter and the Dogge.

The Dogge, whose nature it is, to winde and sent out thinges, stood all this while attentiuely hearkening to all that had passed betwixt *Iupiter* and the Asse. And being desirous likewise to know something concerning his good or bad fortune; albeit hee carryed himselfe herein like a Dog, seeking to nose out that which was not lawfull for him; to wit, the secrets of the gods, which are onely reserved to themselues, (of which nature are future things, and such as are to fall out hereafter;) yet notwithstanding his errour therein was worthy some excuse, because hee had the manners to craue this kindnesse of *Iupiter*, and did not, as some women doe, and some of those peradventure that now heare me; who without God, (but not without the Devill) seeke after Witches and Gypsies, to tell them their fortunnes.

Witches and Gypsies, full of fraud and deceit.

But how can they tell thee any good, who themselues are so bad? They tell them a thousand lyes, and fraudulent inventions, and steale from them (be it good or bad) all that they can finger, leauing them afterwards amazed, ashamed, mocked, and deceived, and laught at for fooles as long as they liue.

But to returne to our Story that wee haue in hand; The Dogge came to *Iupiter*, and besought him, (seeing that he had proceeded with the Asse, his Companion, so graciously, giving him vpon the hearing of his Petition, satisfaction to his demands) that hee would likewise afford him the like favour.

The Dogs Office.

Who made him this answere; that his Office must be to runne a hunting, and to kill Hares, and Conies, but not to touch or eate one bit of them, but with all faithfulnesse to resigne them vp vnto his Master. And afterwards, when he should returne home weary and stiffe with hunting, and following of his Game, he must be content to submit himselfe to be tyde to a post, to guard the house, where hee should wait the eating of late and little suppers, feeding on a few cold scraps, and be glad to gnaw vpon a bone, that had beene already pickt and throwne away. And besides, (which was worse then all the rest) hee should haue many a bang about the loynes with a Cudgell, and many a spurne and kicke with the foot.

Then did he aske him againe, for how long a time hee should indure all this paine? *Iupiter* told him, thirty yeares.

The Dogge, when he heard this his doome, was very much daunted, and discontented, as thinking it too intolerable a thing to be indured; But relying on that grace and favour, which *Iupiter* had shew'd the Asse (hoping that hee should taste as much of his goodnesse, as his fellow before him) intreated him to take pitie of him, and that hee would not permit, that hee should receiue so much wrong, and be so hard and coursely vsed; for hee was the workeman-ship of his hands, and no lesse his creature then was the Asse; and besides, he was more loving and faithfull, then all the other beasts of the field. And that therefore he would vouchsafe the favour, if not to lessen the time of his troublesome life, yet at least to equall him with the Asse. *Iupiter* condescended. The Dogge, in token of his thankefulnesse, bowed his nose to the ground, remitting into his hands the remainder of those his other twenty yeares.

Iupiter, and the Ape.

Whilest these things were a doing, the Ape did not sleepe, but lay close, and listened very diligently to all that had past, longing to see what would be the end and successe of these their supplications. And because it is a peculiar property belonging to the Ape, to imitate that, which others doe, hee would likewise in this follow his fellowes, being desirous also to know, what should become of him? Perswading himselfe, that hee that had shewed so much mercy to the Asse, and the Dogge, would take no lesse pitie of him.

Here-vpon, hee goes me to *Iupiter*, and humbly intreats him that hee would deigne to giue him some light of that, which was like to befall him in the passage of this his life, and for what end he had created him; for it was not a thing to be doubted, that he had made him in vaine.

The Apes Office.

Iupiter signified vnto him, that it should for the present be sufficient for him, onely to know, that he must goe trayling of a chaine vpon the ground, with a great clogge at the end of it, that should continually accompanie him, and be bound as a Surety for him, in case he were not ty'de fast to some Post, or the barre of a Window; where, in the Summer hee should suffer heate, and in the Winter, cold; indure hunger and thirst; eating his meat, leaping, and skipping, and fetching many a triscall. And that for every bit they gaue him, he must first make a thousand chatterings with his teeth, and as many mowes and mops with his mouth, in requitall whereof he should receiue so many lashes with a whip, onely to provoke others to laughter, and to make them merry.

Hee thought this was hard teaching, hee did not halfe like it, it was too curst a Schoole for him to be trayned vp in, and would then, (if he could) haue made show thereof by his many teares; but putting a good face on the matter (as your Apes can when they list) and patiently brooking his hard fortune, hee would faine likewise know, how long he must be ty'de to this hard course of life? Hee receiued that answere from him, as the rest had before, to wit, thirty yeares.

Grieued with this answere, but comforted with the hope that hee had in the all-mercifull *Iupiter*, he besought him that they might not be more then those of other beasts, and even those few, he thought were too many to bee indured.

Iupiter made good his request, and granted him what he desired; and the Ape kissing his hand (as if hee had beene borne a Courtier) with a low Conge tooke his leaue, and went away with his other Companions & friends; the Asse, and the Dogge.

Iupiter and the Man.

After these things were thus finished and set in order; *Iupiter* at last created Man; making him a more perfect creature then any of the rest, giving him an immortall and discursiue Soule; He gaue him power and dominion over all that he had created vpon earth; making him the vsu-fructuarie Lord thereof. Man was very well pleased therewith, and tooke great delight in beholding how goodly a creature hee was; how faire and beautifull; how curiously organized; how handsomely shap't; how strongly set; how great and powerfull a Prince; insomuch that hee beganne to thinke with himselfe, that such an excellent fabricke, was worthy immortality. And therefore he intreated *Iupiter* to tell him; not, what should become of him heareafter, but onely, how long he was to liue? *Iupiter* replyde; That when he first determined the creation of all kinde of living creatures, and more particularly of Man, he was then resolved to haue given every one of them thirty yeares of life apiece.

Man here-vpon, beganne much to marvell, and wonder at the matter, that for so short a time, he had made so admirable a piece of worke; for in the opening and shutting of the eye, like vnto a Flower, his life should passe away, and should scarce bring his feet from forth his mothers wombe, but that he is entring with his head into that of the earth, rendring vp his body to the graue, not injoying his age, nor that delightsome and pleasant seat, wherein he had beene created.

And therefore considering with himselfe what had lately passed betwixt *Iupiter* and those other three beasts before-mentioned, hee humbled himselfe before him, and with a lowly (but pleasing) countenance bespake him thus:

How man should treat with God?

Supreme *Iupiter*; if my demand shall not bee troublesome vnto thee, and against thy divine Orders and Decrees, (for my intent shall never extend it selfe to any the least breach of the least of them; nor shall I ever require any thing of thee, but what shall be fitting for me to craue, and shall stand with thy willingnesse to grant, alwayes conforming my will to thine) I humbly begge this boone at thy hands, that thou wilt bee pleased, (since that these brute beasts, vnworthy of these thy favours, haue refused that life which thou gav'st them, the hapinesse whereof, as being deprived of reason, they did not well vnderstand, in that they haue every one of them surrendred twenty yeares of those, which thou granted'st vnto them,) to bestow those yeares vpon me, which they haue refused, that my life may thereby be inlarged; and thou, by me, the better served.

Iupiter gaue eare to this his Petition; and granted vnto him, that (as Man) he should liue but his owne thirty yeares. Marry when they were spent, hee should inherit those of the other three in their order.

First, he should injoy the Asses twenty, supplying his Office, in moyling and toyling in the world, tumbling and tossing to and fro, first to one place, and then to another; carrying and re-carrying home, and out againe, carking and caring to provide for the necessaries of this life. This thou must doe, (if thou meane to liue another day) from thy thirty, to fifty.

Now from fifty to seventy; thou shalt liue like a Dogge, barking at one, snarling at another; grumbling at this, and growling at that, vexing thy selfe, and offending others.

And

And lastly, from seventy to ninety, thou must play the Ape, counterfeiting those thy defects of Nature, and vsing of tricks and toyes, and I know not what fooliſh and fantaſticall devices.

The folly of some old men.

And hence it is, that wee often ſee thoſe that come to this Age (for all they be ſo old) would faine ſeeme young; Tricking themſelues vp ſo neatly and ſo ſprucely, jetting it (like young Gallants) vp and downe the ſtreets in gay cloathes, viſiting this Lady, making loue to that Miſtreſſe, and vndertake, I know not what impoſsibilities, that they may be accounted jolly ſtout Gentlemen, repreſenting that, which indeed they are not, even juſt for all the world, as the Ape doth, who is never quiet, nor thinkes himſelfe well pleaſed, but when in his actions he is imitating man, though he can never come to be a man.

It is a terrible thing, and not to bee indured, that men will, in deſpight as it were of Time, (which diſcovers all deceits, and ought likewiſe to put them out of this their errour) apply themſelues to runne a courſe contrarie to the truth, and that with their tinctures, playſtrings, lees, and ſlibberſlabbers, ſhould play as it were with a Iugglers boxe, to coozen others, and diſcredit themſelues.

As if by theſe Artifices, they could eate the more, ſleepe the ſounder, liue the longer; or bee troubled with the fewer infirmities and diſeaſes; or that by this courſe they take, the teeth which they haue ſhed, would come againe, or to keepe thoſe from falling from them, which are yet remaining. Or as if by this meanes, they could repaire their feeble limmes; recover their naturall heat; quicken anew their old and frozen bloud; or as if thereby they did thinke they had the power in their owne hands, to make themſelues what they liſt, and as luſty as they liſt: In a word, as if they were ignorant what the world talkes of them; when as they themſelues talke of nothing elſe, then which is the better lye, and which the better dye; which either this, or that other man makes. Nor is all this, which I haue now delivered vnto you, much amiſſe from the purpoſe; being that I am to make my concluſion touching this point, the propoſitions conſiſting of two Gentlemen, both free-men of this fooliſh Company, for whoſe ſake you haue had the Premiſes.

A Tale of two Gentlemen, that dined with the French Embaſſador.

My Lord the Embaſſador (as you haue already heard) kept a free Table, was rich, and tooke great pleaſure in keeping a good houſe. And becauſe all gueſts doe not alwayes giue content; it one day hapned, that hee made a feaſt for the Spaniſh Embaſſador: and amongſt divers other Gentlemen, there came two to dinner vnto him, that were principall Perſons: the one a Captaine; the other, a Doctor of Law: But to his Lordſhip both troubleſome and weariſome alike, for the great pleaſure that they tooke to heare themſelues talke. Of whoſe impertinencies, and frivolous diſcourſes, my Lord had in private ſome ſpeech with me heretofore.

Lyers and Flatterers, hated of all good men.

For albeit hee tooke great delight and contentment in hearing men of wit and learning, ſpeakers of truth, and ſuch as were diſcreet in their carriage and behaviour; ſo on the contrary, could hee by no meanes indure any kinde of falſehood or lying, though it were but in jeſt and merriment.

He could not abide an Hypocrite, or a flatterer; plaine dealing with him was a jewell; He would, that mens words and workes ſhould bee ſimple, without ſophiſtication, and truly noble, without any manner of doubling, and diſsimulation.

And howbeit in theſe two men, there were very good motiues and reaſons to cauſe men to hate and abhorre them, yet I am of the minde, and hold it infallibly true, that in the liking, or diſliking of this, or that man, one more then another, there is ſome Celeſtiall influence conſpiring there-withall; and on theſe two had it wrought with great efficacie, and ſtrong effects; for there was no man but did hate them.

My

My Maſter would faine haue rid his hands of them, and haue ſhak't them off, but he could not; for that they met him in the ſtreet in his way homeward, and would needs wait on him to his houſe, as men that did much honour his Lordſhip, and did owe him a great deale more ſervice, then this their willing attendance vpon his perſon, wherevnto they owed all reſpect. So that my Lord (being ſo noble a Gentleman as he was) was driven by force to invite them to ſtay dinner, who had as it were by force accompanied him to his houſe. Nor is there any vexation, that can vexe a man more, then ſuch petty vexations, which a man would faine put off, but knowes not handſomely how to doe it. O this incroaching kindeneſſe, what a croſſe it is, when it ſhall bee inforced vpon a man whether he will or no, vnleſſe the one will be as vncivill as the other is impudent!

As ſoone as I ſaw my Lord enter within the gates, I perceived preſently by his countenance, that ſomething, what-ever it were, did trouble him. I looked earneſtly vpon him, and he vnderſtood my meaning. Hee told me what it was, (ſpeaking vnto me with his eyes, by caſting them vpon thoſe two Gentlemen;) and I needed no farther inſtruction to direct me, what I had to doe.

I held my peace for the preſent, and diſſembled my anger, beginning to caſt about with my ſelfe, what courſe I were beſt to take, to make thoſe men, (who had ſo diſtaſted my Maſter) a ſport and laughing-ſtocke to all the reſt of the company, and ſo to make them pay dearely for their dinner.

I had no ſooner entertained this thought, but there came preſently into my head a pretty odde pranke, that made fit for my purpoſe. Nor did I take much paines in the finding of it out; for they came thither handſomely interlarded, and the jeſt, themſelues had brought it along with them ready dreſt, and very well ſeazond. Only I expected a fit occaſion, to ſet it before them, which was now neare at hand. But I did referre it, till the laſt courſe ſhould bee ſerved in, and al-moſt ended, that it might take the better. For the (a) mouth, that will bee filled with laughter, muſt not haue it's bellie emptie. A merry heart, and a hungry maw, ſeldome meet. *Tanto ſe rie, quanto ſe come.* As a man likes his fare, ſo hee laughes; proportioning his mirth, according to his meat. The Cloth was laid, meat on the boord, the Gueſts were merry, healths went round, and when I ſaw their blouds grew warme, and that they were ſet vpon the merry pinne, talking and laughing on all hands, ſome of one thing, ſome of another, a little before they were to waſh, the Towell being not yet throwne on the boord, nor the Baſon and Ewer ſet downe, I came cloſe to the Captaines ſide, and rounding him in the eare, told him a notable *non ſequitur*; Hee laught heartily at it; and being bound to requite with me another, made me bend downe my head towards his boſome, that he might the better tell it me in mine eare; and ſo in ſecret, we made two or three paſſages one vpon another; and when I ſaw my time, and that it ſerved fit for my purpoſe, I began to raiſe my vovce a note higher, and with a cheerefull looke, ſmiling merrily vpon him, (as if we had talked all this while of that which I ſhall now tell you, when (God he knowes) we had never a word of any ſuch matter) I told him, No, my *Sennor Capitan*, no, you ſhall pardon me, I will not; if your Worſhip will vent it your ſelfe, you may better doe it then I, for you haue a good tongue to put it home, and a better arme to maintaine it. I will hatch none of your egges (good Captaine) forth with them your ſelfe. For theſe are no fit and ſavory Ieſts, for ſuch a poore Youth as I am, and being ſo great a ſervant of Maſter Doctors, as no man in the world can be more.

With that, My maſter, and all the reſt of the Gueſts beſides, began to crie out vnto me at once, How now *Guzmanillo*, what's the matter? I know not, Sir, vnleſſe my noble Captaine here long to ſee my crowne ſhaven, and to haue

proverb.
(a) Que la boca ſe hunca de riſa, no ha de eſtar el vientre bazio de vianda.

Guzman puts a tricke vpon the Doctor and the Captaine.

haue me to make my Degrees, which it ſeemes, hee would faine haue me to doe, ſeeking to ſet the Doctor and mee together by the eares, and put vs to the paring of each others nayles, till wee bee both toucht to the quicke.

The Captaine when hee heard me ſay ſo, was froſt-bitten, and marvelling what the miſtery of this roguerie ſhould be, ſuſpected there was ſome knaverie in it, though he knew not what. And not knowing what to doe, fell a laughing, without ſpeaking any one word at all.

But the Spaniſh Embaſſadour call'd vnto me, and ſaid, Friend *Guzman*, now by my life, you ſhall not ſmother it; what's the matter, I prethee? Let vs know of thee, why at one and the ſelfe-ſame time, thou laugheſt, and yet ſeemeſt angry? It muſt needs be ſome good conceit or other, and therefore out with it.

Seeing your Lordſhip hath laid downe ſo great a pawne as your life, I ſhall (though loth, and much againſt my will) tell you what it is; and I proteſt vnto your Lordſhip, that I had rather haue held my peace; and had you not ſworne by your life, I would ſooner haue had my tongue drawne backwards out of the nape of my necke, then to vtter the leaſt ſillable of that which I ſhall now fully deliver vnto you. Your Lordſhip ſhall therefore vnderſtand, that my Captaine here laid his Command vpon me, that I would breake a jeſt vpon this Doctor, my worthy and noble friend; girding at the cut of his beard; for he ſaith that the faſhion of his beard, is juſt for all the world like one of thoſe vpon your Flemniſh Iugges, and that a-nights hee puts it in a Preſſe, made of two thinne Trenchers ſcru'de wonderfull cloſe, that no Ghitterne can bee cloſer ſhut vp in it's Caſe, that it may come forth the next morning with even corners, bearing in groſſe the forme of a Broome, narrow aboue, and broad beneath, his Muchatos, Ruler-wiſe, ſtrait and levell as a line; and all the other haires, as juſt and as even as a Privet hedge, newly cut; anſwering each other in a vniforme manner, having the point thereof in forme of a Quadrant, drawne neatly out, that it might make the fairer and larger ſhow. For ſuch a goodly Beard accompanied with a Roman Bonnet, (like your Briefes and your Larg's in a Singing-mans Booke,) doth grace his leſſer and groſſer notes. As if this were ſufficient to make him be held a great Scholler; As if this faire out-ſide, were a qualification for him; as if men had not ſeene your *Caualios Argeles*, ſome horſes with one only white foot on the farre ſide behinde, having all the other parts of their body of another colour, and yet come of a very good race. And ſome great block-heads, (though bred vp in Vniverſities,) whoſe ignorance is a great deale larger then their Gownes; being like herein vnto ſome kinde of Melons, which coozen vs with the glorioufneſſe of their colour, ſeeming to be good Melons to the ſhow, but indeed are worſe then Pompeons; no ſtuffe, no goodneſſe in them. And this is that, which my Captaine would haue had mee ſaid, as from my ſelfe. And this was it which made mee cry, No, no; and that he ſhould tell it himſelfe, and he would, for I would none of it. This is all, my Lord: if there bee more behinde, your Lordſhip may be pleaſed to lay your Command on the Captaine, who (I know) will be ready in this, or any thing elſe to doe your worſhip ſervice.

The Captaine bleſt himſelfe, when he ſaw whither I had driven the nayle, wondring at this my ſubtilneſſe of wit, and cunning conveyance, himſelfe and all the reſt of the company laughing at it, but none of them witting whether it were a truth or a lye, that had paſt thus betweene vs.

But my Doctor, having his head well warmed with Wine, knew not whether he were beſt to be angrie, or to turne it to a jeſt? But becauſe they lookt ſtill more and more vpon him, and every ones eyes was fixed on him, he paw-

ſed

sed a while, and carrying a countenance betwixt anger and shame, at last hee vented himselfe, and spoke thus vnto them.

My Lord, if my profession vvould permit it, that I should giue my selfe that satisfaction, vvhich such an impudencie as this deserveth, your Lordship might easily beleeue, that I would comply with that obligation, wherein I stand bound to my progenitours, and the honour of my House.

But being that your Lordships presence doth priviledge this insolent boldnesse, and that this place vvill afford mee no other vveapons then my tongue, your Lordship may be pleased to giue mee leaue to demand of this Captaine, How old he is? For if that be true, vvhich hee sayes, that hee served the Emperour *Charles* the first in his warres, being with him at the battell of *Tunez*, how comes it to passe that hee has never a white haire in all his beard, nor blacke one in his head? And if hee bee so yong as hee would seeme to be, why doth hee say, that hee was present with him, at such an ancient piece of service, and so long agoe as that was? Let him tell vs, I pray, in what *Iordan* hee hath washed, or to what Saint recommended himselfe; to the end that we may all offer vp Tapers to his shrine, and haue recourse vnto him for helpe, when we shall haue the like neede? Let him first declare this, and then let him goe on with his game, and I will play mine as well as I can. And since he hath first trumped about, let vs trie, who can soonest beate out one another and winne most Trickes. For there is no reason hee should so carry it away, nor shall hee get any thing by his crossing of mee, while I haue a trumpe in my hand.

All the whole boord fell a laughing a fresh, but especially my Master, for that two things were then treated, which of all other hee did hate and detest, and desired the reformation of them, as no man more.

And having well obserued all that had passed herein, hee sayd vnto mee; Now tell mee, *Guzmanillo*, what thou doest thinke of this? Since thou hast proposed the Argument, I will haue thee to resolue the Question.

I then told him, All the answer that I can make your Lordship, is onely this: That they haue both said Truth, and yet both of them lye in their beards.

The Conceit consists in the word, Lye; for that they did colour the haires of their Beards, with lees made of purpose for that vse.

CHAP.

Chap. IV.

The Doctor finding himselfe aggrieued, that Guzmanillo *had wronged him in the presence of so many Gentlemen, would be reuenged of him. The Spanish Embassadour takes vp the quarrell: The French causing another of the guests, that was there at Table, to relate an accident that befell the Constable of* Castile, Don Aluaro de Luna.

THey did all highly commend the jest, and some did indeare it so farre, that the Doctor thereby vvas the more inraged, insomuch that they were sorry they had prest it so farre, and giuen it so great an applause.

But the Embassador of Spaine, through his great wisedome, threw in his [a] *Warder*, and tooke vp the quarrell, making it (by his discreet handling of the matter) a merry meeting onely of friends, where no exception was to be taken at any thing that should merrily passe amongst them.

The Captaine was a good natur'd man, vvell behau'd, an old beaten Souldier, and a good fellow who laught heartily at it, let it passe as a jest, and blessed himselfe, vowing and protesting that hee never spake any one such vvord vnto mee, nor was it ever in his thought to touch vpon any such point. And though hee were nipt, yet because hee was a discreete Gentleman and a Souldier, (amongst whom now and then jests are broken, as well as Lances) should the Doctor haue vs'd him worse then he did, hee vvould either not haue heard it, or seeme to set light by it, for that he thought he had some reason so to doe, because what he then spake, came from him, as one that had beene much injur'd and abused.

But when the Doctor certainly knew, that I had beene the onely Authour of all this mischiefe, hee did set vpon mee in that fierce and terrible manner, that hee did cut his words with his teeth, not being able to pronounce them plaine, through his too much eagernesse, and heat of choller. And hee would faine haue risen from the table to haue had mee by the eares, and to haue pummeld mee soundly about the head and the nose, and to haue buffetted my cheekes; but they would not suffer him so to doe.

And seing hee could not be reuenged on mee as hee would; and having no other weapon to beate mee withall but his tongue, hee roundly laid about him, and letting the reines loose to his rage, he bestowed his livery vpon mee, calling mee by all the vile names that hee vvas able to recken vp; vvhereof I made little reckoning; but did rather helpe him on, by teaching him what he should say.

This madded him more then all the rest, to see mee thus mocke and scoffe at all that hee sayd, which made him breake out vvorse then before, and to grow farre more violent and outragious with mee. For, as if this bitter jest had beene some Excommunication, that by a joynt consent, and generall Councell as it were, had gone out against him, and that every one of vs had a finger therein, hee car'd not whom hee payd; and almost, nay, more then almost, (if my Master had not stopt him in this furious course, as one that knew vvell, vvhat a huge dust, a foolish cholericke fellow will sometimes raise, both to his owne and others hurt) this businesse had growne exceeding foule.

Hee sought to pacifie him with the best reasons hee could then vse vnto him, as one that would faine turne the water another way, and divert these his

[a] *The Spanish word, is meter, el baston. A metaphor borrowed from a Master of Defence, who when his Schollers grow hot and angry at play, throwes in his cudgell betweene them, whereupon they hold their hands. So that meter el Baston signifies metaphorically, the reconciling of friends, when they begin to grow cholericke one with another.*

The Doctor grows very angry with Guzman.

The French Embassador seekes to pacifie the Doctor.

his evill intenſions towards mee; Which that hee might the better doe, hee began to ſhuffle the Cards anew, ſundring the one from the other; and that he might wholly cut off all that former offenſiue converſation, he turned himſelfe towards *Ceſar*, that Neapolitan Gentleman, who had told him of that ſad accident, that had befalnne *Dorido* and *Clorinia* (who was likewiſe one of his gueſts) and ſaid vnto him.

Señor Ceſar, ſince the hard hap, and vntimely death of the faire *Clorinia* is now knowne to all *Rome*, and to theſe Gentlemen that are heere preſent, let vs intreat you to doe vs this favour, to deliver vnto vs, vvhat became of conſtant *Dorido*; for I haue a great deſire to know how hee ſped. That, and it may pleaſe your Excellencie (ſayd *Ceſar*) you ſhall heare in its due place and time; for this is no fit ſeaſon for it; it being not meete to mingle ſuch mis-fortunes amidſt our merriments, nor will it ſuite ſo vvell vvith this day of feaſt and jollitie, eſpecially conſidering what hath paſſed here already to the diſturbance of this good company, that are met here of purpoſe to be merry.

But ſince that vvee haue now dined, and the time of each mans taking his (a) nap, drawes on, I vvill recount another Story vnto you, vvhich this preſent occaſion repreſents unto mee: Which for that it is a true one, I doubt not but yee vvill be much delighted therewith. They all kindely entertained his proffer; and vvhen hee ſaw they vvere attentiue to heare him, hee thus began.

(a) *The Spaniſh word is Sieſta.*

A tale of diverſe and ſundry accidents that haue.

The Conſtable of *Caſtile*, *Don Aluaro de Luna*, in the time of his greateſt Greatneſſe (his honours increaſing dayly more and more) reſiding in *Valladolid*, tooke great pleaſure in the Summer to riſe betimes in the morning, to goe abroad to vſe ſome exerciſe, and to take the freſh aire of the fields. And after that hee had beene walking thus abroad, hee vvould (before the Sunne ſhould be able to offend him) vvith-draw himſelfe home to his houſe.

But hauing one day amongſt the reſt inlarged his Walke, and intertained himſelfe longer then hee was wont to doe, in a pleaſant garden, neere adjoyning to the river *Piſuerga*, recreating himſelfe in beholding the varietie of Walkes, the beautifull Flowers, the delicate Arbours, the ſhadie Trees, and ſavourie fruites, the heate entred in ſo farre, before hee vvas aware of it, that vvhat out of his feare of not returning backe vvith conveniencie, and the content that hee tooke in this his ſweete and delightfull recreation, hee was reſolved to remaine there, and to take his full pleaſure of that place vntill ſuch time of the evening, as the heare ſhould be overpaſt.

And vvhileſt his other ſervants were buſie in providing all things neceſſarie for his dinner, that hee might the better in the meane vvhile paſſe away the time, hee intreated two Gentlemen, that accompanied him thither, the one *Don Luys de Caſtro*; and the other, *Don Rodrigo de Montaluo*, that each of them would tell him ſome Loue-Story, whoſe ſucceſſe had beene full of dangers, and full of cares, as none could be greater. For, hee very well knew, that theſe two Gentlemen were the onely Gallants then in Court, and great Lovers of Ladies, being both of them, beſides Noble in their Name and Blood, diſcreete; valiant, actiue in their perſons, of faire both feature and behaviour, curious in theis cloathes; vvitty in their jeſts, vn offenſiuely pleaſant; in a word, ſo generally well qualified, and ſo adorned vvith all thoſe ornaments, that might grace either their ſpeech, or their actions, that they were very vvell able to giue him that ſatisfaction vpon this ſubject, as more could not be deſired. And the better to animate them on, hee promiſed, in reward, a rich Diamond Ring, that hee then vvore vpon his finger, to him, whoſe tale, for the ſtrangeneſſe of the ſucceſſe, ſhould beſt

deſerue it. *Don Luys de Caſtro* vvas firſt to beginne, and thus hee proceeded:

It may be (my Lord Conſtable) that other Lovers, in the recounting of their misfurtunes, goe painting and ſetting of them forth, vvith feigned ſorrowes, Hyperbolicall amplifications, ſuch delicacie of phraſe, and tenderneſſe of words, to worke compaſſion; that with the ſmoothneſſe of their ſtile, and the meltingneſſe of their language, they moue many to pity; and of theſe in this kinde much hath beene written. But that really and truely ſtript naked of all kinde of dreſſing, and the neate cloathing of eloquence, there ſhould happen in theſe preſent times a buſineſſe of the like nature, as is mine, that I haue now in hand, is a thing impoſſible. For it is one of the ſtrangeſt, and the moſt to be wondred at, of all that ever I yet reade, or heard of. And becauſe your excellencie is to be my Iudge in this caſe, I am very well perſwaded you will acknowledge as much, vvhen yov know my ſufferings.

Don Luys de Caſtro his Loue-Story.

I loued a certaine Lady of this Kingdome, hat was a Virgin, and ful-filled with all thoſe laudable and notable qualities, which might be found in any other who-ſoever; being as faire and beautifull, as ſhee was diſcreete and honeſt. whereof, (and much more then I will now ſpeake,) I make *Don Rodrigo de Montaluo* here preſent, my witneſſe; as the onely friend, that bare mee company, and was thorowly acquainted with all that vvhich paſt betweene vs; I ſeru'd her many, (and thoſe the beſt part) of my yeares vvith that punctualitie and ſecreſie, that there was never any the leaſt notice taken of it, yet ſtill obſerving her with that diligence, as the like was never knowne; and indeavouring alwayes to giue her all thoſe contents, which ſhee could poſſibly deſire from mee. For her I ranne at the Ring, and ever made my ſelfe one; at the *juego de toros, y cañas*, maintained Turneys, and Tiltings, ordained Royall Feaſts, and Maskes; and what not? And for to quit all ſuſpicion, and to carry the buſineſſe ſo handſomely, that none might finde mee out, and diſcover this my loue; nay that they might not haue any the leaſt preſumption thereof; at all theſe great and ſolemne meetings, my eyes were never placed vpon her, but ſome other of the Ladies that were there, though ſhee notwithſtanding did really and truly know, that thoſe of my ſoule vvere never off on her, but ſtill waited vpon her, and that ſhee was the ſole Miſtris of my heart, and that for her ſake onely, and none but hers, I invented all theſe honourable pleaſures, and delightfull intertainments for her.

Vpon theſe kinde of Feaſts and Sports, and other the like occaſions, directed only to this end, I ſpent ſo much, that I vvaſted and conſumed a great deale of wealth, letting my money fly the faſter, in hope it might make her come the ſooner; and ſelling away my poſſeſſions, that I might compaſſe the poſſeſſing of her; which was to mee a treaſure of more worth then all the worrld beſides.

My father (it is well knowne) left mee wonderfull rich, both in goods, and in lands, but in ſhort, I ſent it packing; and paſt away one thing after another, till in the end I became ſo poore, that your Lordſhips favour is the onely proppe that doth vphold mee, vvithout the which I muſt haue falne. And though this (I muſt tell you) be none of the leaſt griefes, to ſee a Gentleman of ſuch parts and qualities as my ſelfe, to be outed of all that hee has, to become ſo poore and needy, that neceſſitie muſt tye him to ſerue, vvho vvas vvont heretofore to be ſerued; (howbeit, I acknowledge it a happineſſe vnto mee, that I am your Lordſhips ſervant.) Though I muſt confeſſe vvithall, they are the happier men, and the more beholding to fortune, vvho leade a quiet and ſecure life, free from other mens commands, not beating their braines, nor breaking their ſleepes, in ſeeking meanes, hovv to creepe into

A free contented life the beſt.

into this mans favour, and to ſerue himſelfe into that, or t'other Lords good grace and opinion.

But of all my misfortunes, the greateſt that ever befell mee, and which ſits cloſeſt to my heart, and doth fret the very ſoule of me, and fill it with anguiſh, was, That my Miſtreſſe having entertained me with falſe hopes, and vaine promiſes, vowing, that ſhe would never beſtow her favours vpon any other, but that in recompence of my conſtant loue, ſhe would be marryed vnto me, where-vnto ſhe plighted me her faith and troth. But whether theſe were the words of a woman, or the workes of my ſhort fortunes; now when ſhe ſaw my meanes were ſpent, and my ſelfe growne poore, vn-mindefull of all thoſe indearements, vowes and proteſtations that had paſt betweene vs, ſhee ſhooke off that hand of hers from mine, to whom ſhee had firſt given it, and gaue it to another, and forſaking me, married him; failing (falſe as ſhe was) in her faith, and qualitie: for ſcorning my poore condition, and not eſteeming thoſe my other good naturall parts, ſhe made choyſe of thoſe goods of fortune, taking a Husband farre vnequall to her ſelfe; for, as he exceeded in wealth, ſo he did in yeares. But ſuch is the force of money, that it can ſupply all defects, and driue vnequall matches, to draw in one yoke.

Thus haue I briefely diſcourſed vnto your Lordſhip touching my loue, ſhewing you how happy the beginning was, and how diſaſtrous the end. And although (that I might not weary and tyre out your Lordſhip, I haue beene ſo briefe, that the ſhortneſſe of my Diſcourſe may ſeeme to leſſen my misfortunes, and the miſeries that I then indured;) yet I preſume, your Lordſhips diſcretion will ſupply that want, and fully conceiue what, and how great they were; As alſo take into your conſideration, how many troubles they haue ſuffred, and how many perils they daily runne thorow, who wing their thoughts with ſuch high-flying feathers, and who vſe ſuch great diligence and ſecrecie in the carriage of their loue, to the end that nothing on their part ſhould be wanting, which they thought belonged to their dutie, in that behalfe. Which my ſelfe had ſpeciall care of.

I doe not thinke that either *Don Rodrigo*, or any other Gentleman whatſoever can inſtance in a ſucceſſe of more misfortune then this of mine; for that loving her with that firmeneſſe and conſtancie, (as I did) and ſerving her with that loue and faithfulneſſe, (as none poſſibly could be more;) I loſt my time, I loſt my meanes, and laſt of all (to make the roll of my miſeries the fuller) I loſt my Miſtreſſe. Only there is left vnto me by fortune, (in exchange of theſe my many miſchances) the receiving of this Ring, by way of reward.

And here *Don Luys* made an end of his amorous diſcourſe, and *Don Rodrigo de Montaluo* entred vpon his, in manner following.

The Ring (*Don Luys*) is none of yours, you haue loſt it, and I ought of right to haue it. And turning himſelfe towards the Conſtable, he thus went on in his ſpeech:

Moſt noble Sir, Though I confeſſe that to be true, which *Don Luys* hath delivered vnto your Lordſhip, for that I was an eye-witneſſe of all this buſineſſe, in regard of that great loue and friendſhip, which was ever betweene vs; yet now at this preſent, he hath no reaſon to pretend the Diamond; for if he would but free himſelfe of paſſion, and put on temperate conſideration of the paſſages in this his loue, and that he and I might but change places, I doe aſſure my ſelfe, that he would judge this cauſe in my favour, and giue ſentence againſt himſelfe. But being that hee is now blinded ſo with paſſion, that he cannot diſcerne things with indifferencie; your Excellencie may be pleaſed to judge firſt of his Loue, and afterwards to cenſure the bad ſucceſſe of mine: which ſhall take it's beginning from the end of his, which your Excellencie hath already heard him recount. And thus (may it pleaſe you to giue me the hearing) did things paſſe.

It is not long agoe, that he and I went walking abroad neere to this River side, where now we are, talking and discoursing of some things farre out of the reach of our hopes; when vnlooked for, there came to *Don Luys*, an ancient servant belonging to this Gentlewoman his Mistresse, from whom he secretly delivered him a Letter. Which he having opened, and read it over, when he had done, he gaue it me, that I likewise might peruse it. Which I did againe and againe, wondring very much at the Contents thereof. For which cause, (as also having a reasonable good memory,) I carried it all away; which speaketh after this manner:

DEare Sir, you haue little reason to accuse me of ingratitude, onely because it seemes vnto you, that you haue some just cause so to doe. For it is not possible that any one should forget (as you haue thought of me) him, whom he truly loues. And since I know mine owne Obligation, and your constancie, I would haue you likewise to vnderstand (though perhaps you will not acknowledge so much) that I neither now doe, or haue heretofore committed any fault against you. And that my Actions did not correspond with your deserts, the reason was, because they could not stand with that Decorum, *which was due to my Mayden-state, and the danger that might ensue thereupon. My Marriage with you (which I desired more, then I did mine owne life) the obedience of a Daughter did disturbe, and the Commands and earnest importunities of my Parents, who were violently carried away, moved thereunto by vaine interest, and the Title of a Countesse, which I hold against my will, since they did force me to yeeld my body vnto him, to whom I could never surrender my soule, being in condition and yeares so contrary vnto me, I haue beene yours, I am yours, and shall be yours all the dayes of my life. I shall giue you to vnderstand, that the Count my Husband is to vndertake a long journey; hasten hither vnto me as soone as you can, and bring no other person along with you, saue your friend* Don Rodrigo. *And when you shall come to this Towne, you shall finde in a Heremitage adjoyning thereunto, order given you for that, which you are to doe. Loue me with all your heart (as you were wont) and as I doe you. And liue you as happily, as I wish you; Concluding my Letter with deare embracements, which attend your comming.*

These were the Contents of the Letter; which *Don Luys* having well seene and considered, did expect nothing lesse, then what was therein contained, which was the onely thing he wished and desired aboue all other happinesse in this world. So that if I would, yet I should not be able to expresse vnto you, those amorous passions which he then felt. Hee read it over and over, dwelling vpon every word and sillable of this Letter. Hee looked vpon every line, more then once or twice, weigh'd them as a man would weigh gold; and when he had ballanced them in his judgement, and found they were not light, but bare their full poyze, putting them to his mouth, hee kist them a thousand and a thousand times over. Hee first look't earnestly on the Letter, then on the bearer, and my selfe, as if hee stood expecting that wee should speake our mindes, and with a loud voyce proclaime the certainety of this his promised good, and the great content that hee tooke in this fortunate, but vnexpected newes. For as yet he doubted thereof: but at last, when he had recollected his spirits, which had beene all this while a wool-gathering, with somewhat a troubled, but more cheerefull countenance, hee said vnto mee, What is this (*Don Rodrigo*) that we see? Am I out of my wits? Or is this a dreame? Art thou sure, that it is thee and I, that haue read this Letter? Is this happely the Countesses Letter, this her owne hand? and that, her old Servant? Doth my judgement peradventure faile mee? Or, as an afflicted Lover, growing on to desperation, doe I feigne imaginations to my selfe, to deceiue my phantasie?

After

After that hee had thus continued a while, driven to and fro with theſe diſtractions, as a Boat that waues this way and that way, having the tyde with it, but the winde againſt it; I aſſured him, that theſe were not illuſions, or idle apparitions, but things really true, and that carried along with them aſſured hopes of recovering and enjoying his loſt Iewell. And thereupon I heartened him on, that he ſhould haſten his departure with all poſſible ſpeed, that hee might comply with that, which his Miſtreſſe had given him in charge. This was preſently put in execution; for wee ſtreight tooke horſe, and away we went. And when we came to the Heremitage, we found therein a very graue and reverend Dame, who, for that ſhe had notice given her before hand, of the day and houre that we were to come thither, ſtayd there, expecting of our comming.

Now, when ſhe knew that we were the men ſhe looked for, ſhee delivered vs a Meſſage, the effect whereof was this; That her Lord, the *Conde*, was gone forth vpon his journey, but was now newly returned, by reaſon of a certaine indiſpoſition of body that ſeazed on him vpon the way: But intreated vs notwithſtanding, that vve vvould haue the patience to ſtay there, till ſhee vvent to the Palace, to acquaint her Lady the Counteſſe, of our comming. Shee went; we ſtaid; I much amazed, and *Don Luys* quite out of heart: I for thoſe difficulties, which might offer themſelues; He in conſidering his croſſe fortune, which did never leaue off to perſecute him.

Now, while this good vvoman vvas gone vpon her errand, in the meane while, till ſhee ſhould make her returne, vve ranne over many ſtories, and I know not what idle tales and diſcourſes, vvhich being of different ſubjects, are not fit to be inter-ſerted with this that vve haue now in hand.

Well, about eleven a clocke at night, ſhee came backe againe vnto vs, and told vs, vve muſt follow her. We did ſo. The darkeneſſe of the night did much befriend vs, ſo that by this good helpe, ſhee brought vs vnſeene, and with much ſecrecie, into a Lodging in the Palace, where we no ſooner were, but the Counteſſe comes forth, and receiues vs with extraordinary tokens of joy and gladneſſe. And after that ſome few ceremonies were ended, and that the *Para-bienes* had paſt to and fro of this long deſired inter-view; which Compliments were very ſhort and briefe, the Counteſſe ſaid vnto mee, *Don Rodrigo*; the time, that is now offred vnto vs, to enjoy this faire occaſion, you, in your owne diſcretion may judge, how ſoone it will be gone. You know likewiſe the obligation of true friendſhip, and the firme affection, which you haue alwayes made ſhew to beare vnto *Don Luys*: but ſay, this ſhould faile (which I no way miſ-doubt,) yet for my ſake, who beg it at your hands, you are bound in courteſie to grant me my requeſt. You haue already vnderſtood, how the Count my husband not finding himſelfe halfe well, returned (being well advanced on his way) backe from his journey, who came home ſo weary, that he preſently got him to bed, where I haue left him faſt aſleepe. But becauſe it may ſo fall out, that in turning or waking, hee ſhould ſtretch out a legge or an arme, towards that ſide of the bed where I lye, and ſhould finde my place empty, and no body there, it muſt be a great deale of danger, that I muſt runne, beſides the great ſcandall, that would grow thereby to the houſe, that therefore, whileſt your friend *Don Luys* and my ſelfe ſhall entertaine the time in talke, (which at the moſt ſhall be but ſome quarter of an houre, or there-abouts,) you would be pleaſed to goe ly downe in my place, and remaine there in bed, that I may in the meane-while abide the later here. And I will aſſure you on my honeſt word, that you ſhall not thereby incurre any danger. For beſides that the Count is old, and that he never wakes a-nights, vntill it be broad day, and doth ſeldome or never turne aboue once, and then preſently fall aſleepe againe; Hee is ſo tyred with his journey, and of that indiſpoſition of body at this preſent,

that there is no feare to be had, that hee will ſo much as but offer to ſtirre, or moue himſelfe at all. But ſay hee ſhould, and that hee ſhould turne and touch you, for the foreſaid reaſons, he will not dreame of any bodies being there but my ſelfe.

God he knowes (and your Excellencie may conceiue) how much it troubled mee, that the Counteſſe ſhould put mee vpon ſuch a perillous piece of ſervice. But becauſe the actions of cowardize are ſo foule in themſelues, and ſo ill-beſeeming a Gentleman, it ſeemed vnto mee, that if I ſhould now flie off, and refuſe to vndergoe this buſineſſe, I ſhould not giue ſatisfaction either to mine owne Honour, or my friends Loue, or the Counteſſes requeſt, I told her, I would very willingly, and with all my heart doe her this ſervice: but withall, did very earneſtly intreat them, that they would not ſtay too long in the entertaining of their loues, ſeeing they were not ignorant of the danger, where-into for their ſakes I did thus voluntarily thruſt my ſelfe. They promiſed, nay ſwore vnto me, that they would not; and that at the moſt ſhe would not tarry away aboue halfe an houre.

The Counteſſe put mee into a night-dreſſing; and a Smocke: and when I had put off all my cloathes, ſhee led me along to her With-drawing chamber, and afterwards made mee to lye downe in her bed. There was no light at all in the Chamber, all was as darke as hell, and in a ſtill ſilence. I ſoftly laid my ſelfe downe vpon the very edge and brimme, as it were of the bed, as farre from the Count, as I poſſibly could deviſe, and in that manner, I remained there, not a quarter, or halfe part of an houre, but fiue good long houres and more, till it was breake of day.

Now let every man conſider and thinke with himſelfe, in what a poore caſe I was, being in ſuch a place as this, and at ſuch a time; with what a deale of care that I might not be knowne, and with what a deale of feare, leſt this deceit ſhould de diſcovered, and did leaſt of all thinke on that, which did moſt concerne mee, which could be no leſſe then death, if the Count ſhould chance to awake. For in regard that I went in thither naked, and warmed, I muſt fight it out with my fiſts onely, and trie how the ſtrength of my armes would helpe me; and admit I ſhould haue ſtruggled with the Count, and had the fortune to eſcape his hands, yet could I not thoſe of the ſervants of his houſe, becauſe I knew not how, nor which way to order my flight.

But theſe were not all the griefes I then indured, they went on a little farther. For *Don Luys* and the Counteſſe, did laugh and talke ſo loud, that I might heare every word almoſt that they ſaid, as I lay in the bed, wherewith my feare was much increaſed, leſt happely their diſ-compoſed carriage might chance to awaken the Count; and it did mightily vexe me, and almoſt mad mee; that I could not call vnto them to keepe leſſe noiſe, ſeeing they would not yet breake company, it grieving me to the very ſoule, that they ſhould ſeeme as forgetfull of themſelues, as they were of mee. This made me to bite my fingers ends for very anger; as alſo, that I durſt not for mine eares ſtirre a jot from the place where I lay, for feare of ſpotting mine honour; and leſſe did I dare to call vnto them, for feare of waking the Count.

After all theſe lingrings, and fearefull paſſages, when they ſaw that day was now ſo nigh, they came both of them laughing hand in hand to the beds ſide, with a light in their hand, (I being frighted almoſt out of my little wits) where they ſportingly frisked and skipped about me, making a great noiſe, as well with their tongues, as their feet.

Then I beganne to imagine with my ſelfe, that through too much content, they had both runne madde. So that now, I was as ſorry for their misfortune, as mine owne; for that the infamie and puniſhment was like to be generall, and to light vpon vs all, not permitting any to eſcape; vpon them,

for

for offending; vpon me, for consenting. I was in that pittifull taking, that within a very little space, I had a thousand imaginations in my head, but not one that could doe me any good, or stand me in stead.

And whilest I was thus puzzled, in the midst of my greatest conflict, they drew neerer to the bed it selfe; and the *Countesse* drawing the Curtaine, that we might now plainely see one another, then was I quite out of my senses; insomuch that I would haue faine fledde away, had I well knowne whither: but I quickly came to my selfe againe. For I, who had hitherto thought, that I had the *Count* lying by me; the *Countesse* lifting vp the cloathes of the bed, cleared that errour, and gaue me to vnderstand, that it was not hee, but the *Countesses* Sister, a pure Virgin, yet as faire as *Venus*. Whereat, as likewise the jest, (which I now perceived they had put vpon me) I was so ashamed, and dasht out of countenauce, that for my life I was not able to speake a word, nor knew not what in the world to doe, but to rise vp in my smocke (for in that case was I then) and to get me over to looke my cloathes; so that my feare before was not halfe so much, as my shame was now. Let your Excellencie therefore bee pleased now to consider in what danger I did put my selfe, and then to giue your judgement, which of vs two doth best deserue the Ring.

The Constable, langhing heartily hereat, said in the end, That *Don Luys* had no reason to complaine of his Loue; seeing, though late, and vvith a great deale of cost and trouble, yet at length hee had obtained his desire; so that hee could not be a deserver of this promised reward. And *Don Rodrigo*, as little; for that hee was not in any danger by sleeping with the *Count*; howbeit, the jest they had put vpon him, was a witty and a good one. And therefore his Sentence was this, that neither of them deserved the Diamond; yet, taking it off from his finger, he consign'd it to *Don Rodrigo*, which condition that he should send it as a token to this Gentlewoman, by whose side he lay; for that shee onely had incurred the danger, and had also runne the hazzard of her honour, if she had beene knowne what she was.

With this, they gaue an end to their Loue-Discourses, they all remaining very well satisfied. And it being afterwards discussed, vvhether the Constables Sentence were discreet and just; all the Courtiers highly commended it. And so every mans businesses, calling some one way, some another; this conversation was broken vp, and taking their leaue of my Lord Embassador, they went whether their occasions call'd them.

CHAP.

CHAPTER. V.

A Romane Matrone, not knowing how to free her ſelfe (without ſuffering in her Honour) from the perſwaſions of Guzman de Alfarache, *who ſollicited her in his Lords behalfe, the French Embaſſador, put a jeſt vpon him, which was the occaſion of a ſecond diſgrace that afterwards befell him.*

The nature of Lightning.

THey that write of Lightning, report, (and vvee ſee the ſame confirmed by experience,) that ſo great is it's pride, that ſcorning the vveaker, it workes it's effects on the ſtrongeſt. It breakes the ſteely hardneſſe of the Sword, and leaues the ſcabberd whole: it ſplits in ſunder, and rendeth vp by the rootes the ſtrong and ſturdy Oake; and not once toucheth the feeble and yeelding Cane. It over-turnes the tops of your higheſt Towers, and levelleth your ſtately buildings with the ground; and pardoneth your poore Shepheards humble Cottage, that is made of ill composed twigges. It killeth your biggeſt beaſts, and cracketh man, as if hee were but Potters Clay in pieces; it bruiſeth and breaketh the bones, and leaues the cloathes vntoucht; it melteth Silver, Gold, Metall, and Money, and yet hurts not the Purſe wherein it is put. And albeit, it be of this proud nature, and haughty condition, yet is it's force broken, in it's comming to ground. This onely is that, which makes its reſiſtance againſt it. And therefore, in ſuch tempeſtuous times, thoſe that doe feare it's terrible effects, doe vſe to get themſelues into Caues, or to hide themſelues deepe vnder ground, becauſe that they know, they are there ſafe and free from danger.

The violence of youth compared vnto Lightening.

The violence of Youth is ſuch, that wee may truely compare it vnto *Lightening*; for it never bends it's force againſt things that are fragile, ſoft, and gentle; but doth commonly aſpire to things of greateſt difficultie, and ſuch as are beyond all reaſons of atchinements; it obſerveth no Law; it excuſeth no kinde of Vice; it is a Horſe that runnes on in his Carreere, without any eye to it's way, or once thinking on the place or the end, where, he is to take vp himſelfe, and make his ſtop. It alwayes followes it's owne furie; and like an vntamed Colt, will not ſuffer himſelfe to bee ſaddled by reaſon; and without it, diſturbs both himſelfe and others, not induring any burthen, bee it never ſo light: In ſuch ſort it flyes out, that it will not (no though you let it haue it's owne will) be at quiet with it ſelfe. And yet this being ſo furious a beaſt, as wee haue heere ſet forth vnto you, it is onely corrected by humilitie; this (and nothing but this) tames and keepes it in order. This is that earth, againſt which it's force cannot prevaile; this that Dock, that driues out the Nettle; and this that Fort, where it findes it's ſafety. Inſomuch, that there is not any good to bee hoped from that young man, who ſhall not bee humble. For that youth in it ſelfe is the entrance to evill, and the doore that opens vnto ſinne.

The defects and various effects of youth.

Ill education the cauſe of all Vice.

I was wantonly bred vp, ſuffered too much to haue mine owne will: I would not indure reproofe, much leſſe correction. And for that Wiſedome is the Daughter of Experience, which is gotten by the tranſcurſion of Time, it was not much, that I ſhould erre as being a Youth. But that having befalne me (which you heard before) in the loue that I made at *Malagon* (*a*) and *Toledo*: And being that I ſhould, like the Dogge which is ſcal-

(*a*) *See the firſt Part.*

ded

ded with hot, feare alſo cold water; after all thoſe faire warnings, it may ſeeme ſomewhat ſtrange, you will ſay, that I ſhould giue any more credit vnto women, and that I ſhould ſuffer my ſelfe to be taken anew in their ſnares. That I ſhould be ſuch an Aſſe, as not to know, by my many the like experiences, that they alwayes goe ſubtilly to worke with vs, and deale deceitfully; which muſt either bee imputed to our too much ſimplicitie, or muſt otherwiſe bee attributed to the intemperate paſsion of our appetite. And would to God this fooliſhneſſe of mine might here take it's ſtop, and here in this Port ſet vp my *Plus vltra*, by erecting the pillars of my wofull prooſes, and often skarrings, without (as you ſhall ſee here-after) my frequent fallings into the like weakeneſſes, being vnable to make my vaunt, that I had once got of them by the hand, and made my party good with them. But becauſe he that loues, doth alwayes make a free donation to the partie, whom he loveth, of his will, and of his ſenſes, it is no marvell, if being ſtripped of them, multiplying my errours, I commit a thouſand fooleries.

He is a foole, that makes him ſelfe a prey to Women.

My Lord Embaſſador fell in loue with a principall Gentle-woman, nobly deſcended, whoſe name was *Fabia*; her husband, a Gentleman of *Rome*; before whoſe houſe I did often vſe to walke; whereof, no ſmall notice was taken, and hee himſelfe began to conceiue ſome ſuſpition of me, though without any juſt cauſe; for ſhe for her part never gaue conſent therevnto. But becauſe every man may loue, proteſt, and runne his head, if he will, againſt a Wall, and none ſhall hinder him; my Maſter did that, which his paſsion did dictate vnto him, and ſhe, that which was befitting both her owne, and her husbands honour.

A ſtory of the French Embaſſadours loue.

True it is, that we were not ſo blinde, that we could not ſee thorow the holes of a (*a*) ſiue; for although wee were deprived of the clearer kinde of light, yet we had ſome glimpſe and glimmering thereof, though it were but little. Her husband was old, poore, and ill accoutred; three ſtrong and powerfull enemies againſt a woman, that was young, faire, and well brought vp. For theſe reaſons, and by the helpe of a Maid of hers (which had beene a Virgin heretofore) but was now my ſweet-heart, and mine owne deare Loue, I was verily perſwaded, what by the meanes that ſhe, and what by thoſe, that my ſelfe ſhould vſe, as alſo by making benefit of the fore-ſaid occaſions, we ſhould eaſily get the game. But who, (ſaue ſuch an vnlucky and vnfortunate Rogue, as my ſelfe) could haue loſt ſo faire a ſet, having ſuch ſtore of ſound Trumpes, and other good Cardes in my hand? But I had wonderfull croſſe-Carding, and every tricke that I plaid, fell out to the worſt; ſo that, *No es todo façil, quanto ſe pareçe*; A man may be deceiv'd, when he thinkes himſelfe moſt ſure. Vertue will trip vp the heeles of Vice, and winne the Goale away from him, play he never ſo cunningly; Nor is there any thing in the world that can make a vertuous woman to ſpot her honour.

Proverb.

(*a*) No eſtauamos tan ciegos, que dexaſſemos de ver por la tela de vn ſedaſo.

The greateſt enemies, that a faire woman hath.

Proverb.

When this Gentlewoman vnderſtood, what had paſſed betwixt my ſelfe and her ſervant, ſhe began to deviſe with her ſelfe, how ſhe might be revenged on vs both, without any hurt to her ſelfe, but as much prejudice as might be, both to my perſon, and the plot that was laid betweene vs, for the effecting of my Lords deſires. And this ſhe did the rather, for that ſhe ſaw, that her waiting-Gentlewoman, for my ſake, did ſo earneſtly ſollicite this cauſe, and that for my intereſt, and to doe me a pleaſure, ſhe did follow this buſineſſe with all care and diligence, taking her fit times to put her often in minde thereof, not ſuffring a Card to paſſe without a Vie; and ſometimes making many falſe ones, vſing many other tricks, as ſhe was well skill'd in them, and knew handſomely how to put them home: Inſomuch, that when this honourable Matrone ſaw, ſhe could not be in quiet for her, but was thus hardly ſet vpon in her owne houſe, and barked at abroad in the ſtreet by a company of malicious

The wickednes of ſome ſervants.

malicious mouthes, ſhe made no Vociferations, nor Out-cryes, no ſqueamiſh replies, no cunning impoſtures, which ſome women vſe to doe, for to qualifie their honeſtie, that vnder that ſhield, they may ever after the more ſafely offend. For, an honeſt woman will, by honeſt meanes, manage her affaires; not beating the ayre with her clapper, not ringing out the bell that hangs in her mouth, ſo loud, that all men may heare the ſound thereof, and cenſure her accordingly, and giue every one occaſion thereby to conſtrue her Actions, as they liſt themſelues. For in regard the good are the feweſt, the moſt doe judge amiſſe: And the reaſon of this ill is, becauſe they themſelues bee ill. And this common voyce choaketh a good name, as your Tares doe corne.

The diſcreet carriage of a woman tempted to lewdneſſe.

Now, as this Gentle-woman was a Roman, ſo did ſhe performe a Roman Act. She knowing, that we went about to worke her overthrow, ſhe wiſely ſought to prevent it, feigning her ſelfe to bee ſomewhat touched with Loues paſsion, and that ſhee was now vpon the point of yeelding, if not wholly overcome.

One day, when as her Maid was making of her ready, and was inſtant with her in this buſineſſe, looking vpon her vvith a ſmiling and chearefull countenance, ſhe ſaid vnto her, *Nicoleta*, (for ſo was ſhe called) I aſſure thee, that if thou hadſt not wrought vpon me, vſing ſo many ſtrange inventions, and hadſt not ſpent ſo many elaborate and well ſtudied words in this ſuit of thine, thou hadſt e're this made that will of mine to yeeld, which hath hitherto ſtood out ſo long. For I wiſh well vnto *Guzman*, and approue his diſcreet proceeding in this buſineſſe. Beſides, his Maſter is of that merit, that any woman whatſoever, be ſhe of never ſo honourable qualitie, without being ſo much ſollicited, as I haue beene, ought to imbrace his loue and friendſhip, and offer her ſervice vnto him. But as thou thy ſelfe both knoweſt, and ſeeſt, I doe not know how it will be poſsible, that this our Treaty ſhall be ſecure from ſcandalous tongues, being that now vpon no juſt cauſe given, and I for my part hauing as yet yeelded no conſent vnto that, which perhaps I ſo much deſire, that is whiſpered already in every corner, nay thorow all *Rome*, which neither in mine owne houſe, nor with thee, (which canſt only be the inſtrument of our pleaſure) did I ever yet communicate. And ſince it is now come to this paſſe, that the popular voyce runneth on with ſo great libertie, and that I am not able any longer to hold out in vnderſtanding the loue of this noble Gentleman, all that I would intreat at thy hands, is; that thou wilt diſpoſe and order it, with the greateſt ſecrecie that may be. Speake therefore to *Guzman*, that he waite and attend here-abouts for ſome few nights, for I will finde opportunitie ſome one night or other, to giue him entrance, that I may ſee him, and talke with him concerning the carriage of our loues.

Nicoleta fell downe vpon her knees to the ground, not knowing which ſhe ſhould kiſſe firſt, her feet or her hands, with a face ſet all on fire with too much joy: for a great while together, ſhe never left giving of her thankes, qualifying the eaſineſſe of effecting it, and diſgracefully laying open the faults of her old Maſter. Then did ſhe reduce vnto her remembrance thoſe former diſtaſtes, which ſhe had received from him; in what wretched eſtate, through his miſerie, ſhe liv'd in; his baſe kinde of carriage, and what drie fodderings he did giue her, and all, that ſhe might incourage her the more to goe brauely on in this her reſolution, which ſhe did ſimply beleeue, ſhe had now entred into.

Herevpon ſhe came forth-with flying vnto me, ſlinging her armes abroad, and ſtrongly twining them about my necke, ſhe claſpt me as hard as ſhe could for her life, demanding (*a*) *Albriçias* at my hands. Which when ſhe had received, ſhe would relate vnto me what had paſt betweene her and her Miſtreſſe. I tooke her by the hand, leading her along with me, (as thoſe that carry with them the ſpoyles and trophees of ſome famous victorie) into my

(*a*) *A reward for good newes.*

Maſters

Maſters withdrawing Chamber, vvhere, vvith a great deale of joy wee celebrate this gladſome newes; plotting and contriving vvith our ſelues touching the houre, how and vvhere I might finde entrance to ſpeake with *Fabia*. And my Maſter giuing to *Nicoleta* a little Purſe which hee had in his pocket, cramm'd vvith Spaniſh Piſtolets, ſhee made as if ſhee were vnwilling to take them of him, but did not all this while cloze her firſt, nor pull backe her hand, but out of modeſty held it betweene forward and backward like a Phiſician, vvhen hee is offred more then his fees, and with a jocund ſmile, gaue him thankes for this his courteous liberalitie; and vvith this ſhee tooke her leaue both of him and mee. But my Maſter continued with mee, rendring me an account of his loue, and I giuing him the *Para-bien* thereof, in which kinde of diſcourſe, and the like, wee ſpent all that Evening. And when it was night, at the appointed houre, I tooke vp my ſtanding, gaue the watch-word, and made ſuch ſignes, as were ordred betweene vs, but neither that night, nor ſome three or foure more following, could this agreement made betweene vs, take effect.

One day amongſt the reſt, there hapned to fall a ſmall, but withall a ſhrewd driving raine, wherein at my wonted houre I was to make my accuſtomed walke, being dabbled (as they ſay) vp[a] to the girdle, I came thither reaſonable well vvet, the night being very darke, which ſuited not amiſſe with my fortunes. It vvas my hap (but vvould to God it had never hapned) to haue the end of my deſires. And for that, in things of intereſt, and matters that concerne our pleaſure and content, it importeth much, to caſt off all feare, and to vndergoe all difficulties vvith a daring reſolution, I did ſhew more courage at that time, then became diſcretion, in that I vvas ſo forward to come to the Call, beating my fore-head againſt the Walls and corners of the houſe, when the raine powred downe on my head from heaven, and my feete ſtood vp to the ankles in durt. As ſoone as I had giuen the ſigne, it was knowne who was there, yet notwithſtanding they made mee to waite a good while in the raine, till I was ſo thorow-wet, that the water that came in at my Pole, dropt out at knees, and went guttring downe into my ſhooes, and then at laſt, after I had beenea long time in this cold bath, they called vnto mee, and willed me to haue the patience to ſtay yet a little longer.

In the end, when all my cloathes and my ſelfe were dung wet, and that I had not a dry thred about mee, I might perceiue the doore to open very ſoftly, and *Nicoleta* to call vnto mee. And then (mee thought) that very breath which came from that voyce, brought that comfortable heat with it, that I was thorow drie all over on the ſudden. Now did I no more thinke on my fore-paſſed troubles, being cheered vp with the ſight of the [b] *Fregonçilla* of my ſoule, and the comfortable hope of injoying the beloued *Fabia*. *Nicoleta* and I exchanged but a few words; for ſhee had ſcarce bid mee wellcome, when lo, her Miſtris came downe, and calling to her ſervant, ſaid; Doe you heare (*Nicholeta*?) Get you vp, & ſee what your Maſter in a doing, and if he chance to aske for mee, come and call mee, whileſt I in the meane-while ſtay talking here with *Señor Guzman*.

Now, all this *interim* we were in the darke, ſo that we could ſcarce diſcerne one another, and if vvee did, it was as much as poſſibly wee could doe. Then did ſhe begin to queſtion mee concerning my health, and how it was with me, as if ſhe had ſeemed to wiſh very vvell vnto me, or as if my welfare had beene a matter of importance, and much to her contentment. I replyde vnto her with the like demande. That compliment performed, I delivered her a large meſſage from my Maſter, in acknowledgment of thoſe many thankes vvhich he did owe vnto her, for the vndeſerved favours which ſhe had vouchſafed to ſhew vnto him, and how great a ſervant hee vvas of hers, inlarging this Theame with an elegant Oration, vvhich I had ſtudied of purpoſe onely to this

proverb.
a Con lodos, Haſta la cinta.

b *A Maid-ſervant, that waſhes and ſtarches, and does the like ſervices of keeping all things cleane.*
Muger de buen fregado. La diſhoneſta que ſe refriega con todos. Couarruias. p. 413.

this end. But before I was come to the concluſion thereof, and when I was in the greateſt force of this Argument, and my wordes began to gather ſtrength for the gaining of her good will, I could not faſten her farther attention, nor like Waxe, worke her as I would; becauſe ſhee ſeeming to be amazed and ſtartled with ſome ſudden perturbation, abruptly ſaid vnto me:

Guzman *notably mocked by* Fabia: *and in what manner.*

Señor Guzman, as you loue my life, let mee intreat you to hold mee excuſed; for vvith a conceiued feare, that at this very inſtant hath ſeazed vpon mee, mee thinkes, every bodies eye is vpon mee, all in the houſe watch and obſerue mee. And therefore for Gods ſake, let mee intreate you to enter in here this way, and there right over againſt you, you ſhall finde a lodging Chamber, get you quickly into that, and tarry there till I haue given a turne or two about the houſe, to ſee if the coaſt be cleare, and all my people ſafe, and I ſhall preſently returne againe vnto you; but I pray haue an eſpeciall care in the meane while, that you ſtand ſtill and make not any the leaſt noyſe in the vvorld. I gaue credit vnto her, and vvent ſtraight on as ſhee had directed mee, and thinking that I had gone athwart a little open entry, making more haſte then good ſpeed, I lighted ere I vvas aware into a huge beaſtly Hog-ſty, that ſtood in a filthy durty Court, where I had no ſooner gone ſome two or three ſteps, but I ſtumbled (through too much haſte) vpon a great dung mixen, and fell with my head juſt againſt the wall, giuing my ſelfe ſuch a ſound knocke, that I lay there for a while ſenceleſſe. But with that little life that was left mee, by little and little I came to my ſelfe againe, and ſcrambling vp againe as well as I could, I went groping along the walles with my hands (as children doe when they play at blind-man-buffe) to ſee if I could finde out this appointed Chamber: but I could finde no other out-let, ſaue that whereby I had made my entrance. I rounded it once againe, imagining with my ſelfe, that by reaſon of my new receiued blow, I could not haply meete with it ſo vpon the ſudden.

The Spaniſh word is patio. la parte de la caſa des cubierta. Couarru. verb Potio.

And vvandring thus vp and downe this Maze, it vvas my hap to light vpon a little narrow Lane, as it were, whereat there was no going forth, hauing a houſe of Office at the end of it, ill covered, and that not wholy neither ouerhead, where was onely the t'one halfe of an old broken great Pitcher, vvhich was full of Ordure, being fixed faſt to the ground and beaſtly berayd round about, yeelding no very ſweete ſent, whereby I began to conjecture the danger I was in, and to conſider with my ſelfe the many mis-fortunes that had befalne mee.

Well, when I ſaw how the vvorld vvent, I ſought to get out vvhere I came in: but I found the doore vvas faſt ſhut vpon mee, and that there was no hope of getting forth. It rained extreemely, and ſhowred downe ſo faſt vpon mee, that I was forced to ſhelter my ſelfe vnder that poore miſerable old ruinous open, I cannot tell whether I ſhould tearme it rather Houell, then Houſe, ſtanding vp to the knees in durt, vvhoſe perfume vvas none of the pleaſanteſt.

Theſe two misfortunes of his are mentioned in the firſt Part.

There I did paſſe over the remainder of that night, which vvas farre worſe, then that I indured at *Toledo*, and of no leſſe perill to my perſon, then that vvhich I vvas put to in the houſe of the proud *Genoues*, my kinſman. Nor was it onely the falling of the raine, that did now afflict mee, vvhich came not drizling or mizling downe vpon mee; but with a full and open gutter, and when at leaſt, with drops as bigge as Peaſe. But I beganne to thinke with my ſelfe what ſhould become of mee; for I could not but imagine, that ſhee that had made that Mouſe-trap for mee over-night, would the next morning deliver mee over to the Cat.

After this conceit had runne a vvhile in my head, I entred into other diſcourſes, vvherewith I might comfort my ſelfe, ſaying; Free mee (O God) from the ſtormy bluſtring Northerne windes of this tempeſtuous night, and

and giue mee leaue to eſcape with life till it be day, that when the Maſter of the ſhip ſhall finde mee here, all that I will ſay vnto him, ſhall be, that his Maid brought me hither, and that I am her husband. For it would be the leſſer harme vnto mee of the two, to be married vnto her, then to ſee my bones marr'd with torment, to make mee to confeſſe what I made there; and I would rather ſeeke to content them with this anſwere, then that they ſhould kill me, and bury me afterwards in this ſtinking Church-yard, and ſo end my life in this miſerable manner.

Thus I went beating my braines about, diſcuſſing too and froo, vvhat would be the iſſue in the end of this buſineſſe; when lo, anon after two of the clocke in the morning, I perceiued that the doore was opened, wherewith all the miſery that I had ſuffered, was turned into joy, and flowers of comfort, thinking that *Fabia* vvas now returned. But vvhen I came to the doore, and found it vnlockt, and no body liuing there-abouts; I beganne to be more afraid then I vvas before, and my heart beganne to mis-giue mee, conceiving, that behinde ſome vvall or doore of the houſe, they ſtayd vvaiting for my comming forth, that they might with more eaſe and ſafety rid mee of life. I vnſheathed my ſword, and taking that in one hand, and my dagger in the other, I vvent by little and little, taking notice (by that poore little morning light) of all thoſe ſteps vvhich I had trod (vvhich, vvere not many, nor very hard to be hit againe) by vvhich I entred. So that, vvith more feare, then ſhame, I got at laſt to the ſtreete doore, which I likewiſe found was open.

When I had once ſet my feete vpon the threſhold, I opened my eyes, and then plainely perceiued, that what had already paſt, was in puniſhment of my over-boldneſſe; and albeit this tricke that had beene put vpon mee was not ſo eaſie to be digeſted, yet this jeſt might haue falne out farre worſe. I comforted my ſelfe as well as I could, looked into my errour, and acknowledged my fault, and champing vpon theſe things, as I walked along the ſtreetes, I came at laſt home to our owne houſe, and opening my Chamber doore, I put off my cloathes, and got mee in betweene the blankets to recover ſome heat, which through the waters and the windes I had loſt.

In this manner did I lye, till it was about ten a clocke in the morning, tumbling and toſſing, not being able for very ſhame to fall aſleepe, thinking and deviſing vvith my ſelfe, vvhat anſwere I ſhould make vnto my Maſter. For if I ſhould deale plainely and truly vvith him, and acquaint him vvith the vvhole paſſage of this buſineſſe, it vvould be a great affront vnto mee, and that I ſhould be playd vpon every moment vvith whole Vollies of jeſts, and moue even the very children in the ſtreete to ſcoffe and laugh at mee. And to deny it, and intertaine his Lordſhip vvith vaine and idle hopes, mee thought that likewiſe was not fitting. For *Nicoleta* had already recovered her *Albriçias*, and vvas vvell rewarded for her good newes; and therefore this might ſeeme vnto him to be a meete invention to defeat him of his money. (a) *Todos eran matas, por rozar.* All the fat I ſaw, vvas in the fire; and that this buſineſſe did not goe on vvell and handſomely, but had many inconveniences in it; it went ill on the one ſide, and worſe on the other. Which way ſo ever I ſought to winde mee, vvas but a (b) leaping out of the Frying Pan into the fire.

And whileſt I was thus muſing with my ſelfe, how I might invent ſome meanes to ſet all right, one of the ſetvants of the houſe came knocking at my doore, and told mee, That my Lord would haue mee come to him. O vvretched and vnfortunate man that I am (ſayd I to my ſelfe) vvhat ſhall I doe? For they haue now found mee with my (c) finger in the Creame-pot; they haue taken mee in the manner, the theft is diſcovered, I am put to my ſhifts, and muſt anſwere for my ſelfe as well as I can. *Coragio* then (quoth

Proverb.
(a) Todo lo veo matas, y Por rozar Del negoçio, que no eſta bien compueſto, y tiene muchos inconvenientes. Couarru. verb. Mata.
(b) *Proverb* Saltar de la ſarten, y dar en las braſas.
(c) *Proverb.* Traer las manos en la maſa. Andar metido en algun negocio.

I) *Coragio, Guzman!* When were thy ſpirits wont to faile thee in this manner? When wert thou ever as yet put to that plunge, from which at length thou didſt not fairely come off? The Sunne is as yet clouded; and Time will diſcouer the true path. And who tooke thee by night out of the yard, will bring thee as well out of my Lords with-drawing roome.

Well, I got mee vp, ſhifted my cloathes, and put on a freſh ſute, the beſt that I had; and being then as fine and as gallant, as if no ſuch diſaſter had hapned vnto mee; I hy'de mee vp vnto my Lord, who expected my comming, and had no ſooner ſeene mee, bnt preſently askt mee, how the world went, and how chanced it, that I had no ſooner come to giue an account of what had paſt betwixt *Fabia*, and my ſelfe? I told him; That they made mee ſtay waiting in the ſtreete vntill it was midnight, expecting a faire birth of this buſineſſe, but it prou'd in the end to be a ſhitten-arſ'd Girle; ſo that I was diſmiſt with a *non licet*; telling mee, that ſhee could not poſſibly either ſpeake with mee, or open the doore.

I alſo then ſignified vnto him, that I would goe and lye downe a while vpon my bed, to ſee if I could take ſome reſt, for I did not finde my ſelfe halfe well. Hee gaue mee leaue ſo to doe. Where-vpon, I went to my Chamber, put off my cloathes, got mee to bed, and there fell to my victuals, where I remained till it was almoſt night, hatching a thouſand conceits in my head, vvaſting my wits, and Limbeking my braines, without drawing any juice or ſubſtance thence at all. And becauſe, what in regard of my rage and anger, as alſo the ſundry thoughts and imaginations that troubled my minde, I vvas not able to take any reſt on either ſide, but lay tumbling from t'one to t'other; If I lay on my backe, I ſtraight-way vvaxed vveary; if I ſate vp in my bed, my Hips vvere too feeble to beare vp my body. Wherevpon I reſolued vvith my ſelfe to riſe. And I had no ſooner taken my cloathes into my hands, and put my feete out of my bed, but one of the Groomes of the Stable came into my Chamber, and told mee. *Señer Guzman*; There are ſome pretty Wenches beneath at the ſtaires foote vvhich inquire for you and ſtay waiting your comming in the Portall vvithin the gate. Apockes vpon them, quoth I: What haue I to do with them? The Devill take them for mee. Goe downe, and either bid them goe to the Stewes, or elſe tell them, that I am not within. For I imagined vvith my ſelfe, that all *Rome* by this time had rung of my diſgrace, and that theſe were ſome roguiſh harlotries, that came to laugh and ſcoffe at mee, and to make themſelues merry with my mis-fortunes. I was very jealous that they came of purpoſe to play the Wagges with mee, and therefore willed him to diſmiſſe them: and ſo they went their wayes.

That night my Maſter willed mee to continue my wonted Station. I told him, that I found my ſelfe not halfe well; wherevpon he adviſed mee to get me betimes to my lodging, and that I ſhould call for any thing that I wanted; & if neede were, hee would ſend a Phyſician vnto mee. I kiſt his hands, thanking him in the beſt faſhion I could, for this his great favour and loue towards me; and got me forthwith to my lodging, where I remained retired, and all alone, as I had done the reſt of that day.

The next morning, I vvas no ſooner vp, but I receiued a Letter from my *Nicoleta*, complaining of mee, that having come to viſit mee the day before, I would not be ſpoken withall, nor giue her notice of that, which had paſt the other night betwixt my ſelfe and her Miſtris, and vvhat great buſineſſe I had, that I did not round that ſtreete the next night following, telling mee that ſhee had waited there for my comming, till it was after midnight.

Vnto theſe, ſhe added ſome other words, which left mee no leſſe perplexed then confounded. And that I might cleare all doubts, I vvrote her an anſwere,

ſwere; telling her, that I would not faile ſometimes that Euening to come and viſit her in the back Lane, that was behinde the houſe. For *Fabia's* houſe ſtood as it were betweene two ſtreets; on the back-ſide whereof, right againſt the principall gate, was a little Poſterne doore, and over that a pretty little lodging Chamber, with one little window belonging vnto it, from whence *Nicoleta* might very conveniently talke vnto mee even in the day time, for that the Lane was little frequented, as being ſcarce paſſable, for that it was very narrow, and full of durt and mire. And even then at that time, it was ſo bad and ſo foule, that very hardly and with much adoe, (conſidering the late raine) could I get to that place, where I was to ſpeake with *Nicoleta*.

Well, when I was come thither, and ſhee ready to receiue me, ſhee began to aske mee; what was become of mee? What great occaſions did hinder mee, that I had not come and ſeene her the night before? And if not for her, yet for her Miſtreſſes ſake, I might haue taken that paines. She formed many complaints againſt me, accuſing the inconſtancie of Men, who made loue vnto Women, not ſo much for any good affection that they bore them, as to get the conqueſt, and Maſtery of them; And when they had gotten what they deſired, and receiued ſome Pledge from them, they did quickly ſlight them, if not wholly forget them.

The inconſtancie of idle young men.

By this, as likewiſe by that profeſſion, which ſhe made of her loue vnto me, I knew her innocencie, and *Fabia's* ſubtiltie, who went about to deceiue vs both. Thereupon I told her; My *Nicoleta*, thou art quite out of the way, and ſo mightily deceiued, as no woman can be more. For, I would haue thee to know, that thy Miſtreſſe hath play'd the Iacke with vs both. Then I vp and told her all that had befalne me, and how vilely ſhe had vs'd me. Shee bleſt herſelfe, croſſing and recroſſing her ſelfe over and over, thinking it to be a thing impoſſible. I ſtood thus talking with her, being gallantly clad, and in my beſt brauery, ſtrutting my legs abroad, ſtrerching out my necke, and diſcourſing of my misfortunes, being careleſſe of that preſent diſgrace, which my evill fortune had too neere at hand for me. For it ſo fell out, that whileſt I was thus diſcourſing with her, by that little Poſterne; (thorow which there was a way to goe in and out to the Stable) it hapned, that there entred in thereat (whileſt the Groomes had led the Horſes forth to water,) a huge big Bore; this Bore one of the Groomes found nuzzeling in the litter, which he had made ready for his Horſes, turning it topſie-turvy, and ſcattering it all abroad the Stable. He being much moued thereat, tooke vp a great bat in his hand, and belaboured his backe and ſides, as hard as hee could lay on for his life. It was a fat rogue and a great; and like a Bull that is bayted, came running forth, as hard as he could drive. And for that theſe kinde of beaſts, either out of cuſtome, or nature, vſe to runne alwayes foreright, and ſeldome or never turne aſide, he came directly vpon me, and tooke mee ſo on the ſudden, that I could by no meanes avoyd him, and perforce made his way juſt betweene my legs; ſo that I rode as it were a-ſtride on horſe-backe, but the cleane contrary way; and to keepe my ſelfe from falling, I tooke hold on his tayle with both my hands, vſing that in ſtead of a Bridle, which I held as faſt as poſſibly I could. I was not able all this while to recover my ſelfe, and had my life laine vpon it, I knew not for the preſent how to quit my ſelfe handſomely from his backe: and whileſt I was deviſing with my ſelfe how I might come fairely off, he ranne with me thorow the midſt of a durtie puddle, that was nothing but myre and filth, ſo that for to ſaue my ſelfe from falling, and that he might the better beare me thorow the durt, I was forced to let goe his tayle, and to claſpe my armes about the ſides of him, with all the might and force I could. And as if wee had playd at binding of barrels, or (a) *à punta con cabeça*, giuing him many a rap at

(a) Iuego de miños.

the wrong doore, flinging vp his ſnout, and huffing and puffing with his noſtrils, he carried me (in ſpight of my teeth, for I was forced to hold faſt, for feare of falling in the durt) in his hoggiſh kinde of gallop, ſome three or foure ſtreets from off that place, grumbling and grunting as he went along, and with his whining and crying, calling the people together to ſee what he ayld, whileſt I perceiuing the ſhame and danger I was like to runne, fell off from his backe of mine owne accord, not regarding when, or where I ſhould light. And much better had it beene for me, had I done this before in mine owne little durty Lane; for beſides that, I ſhould not haue there receiued ſo much harme, the diſgrace would not haue beene ſo publike, and I ſhould haue met with a remedie for this miſchiefe neerer at hand.

Well, I got me vp as well as I could on my legs, but all bemyr'd, and berayd with durt, being hooted at by the people, and affronted by all the women and children in *Rome*, my face being all beſmeared with durt, and my cloathes from top to toe, all playſtered over with myre, that I ſeemed to haue beene throwne out of the belly of ſome Whale. The people from out their doores and windowes ſhouted out ſo loud, and the boyes did ſo flocke about mee, that as one that was out of his wits, and depriued of judgement, I ſought where I might beſt hide my ſelfe. At laſt I ſpyde out a houſe hard by, where I thought I ſhould finde ſome good entertainment. I entred there-into, and made faſt the doore, and ſo barrocadoed my ſelfe vp cloſe againſt all that company, that were deſirous to ſee me. But it did not fall out ſo well with me, as I could haue wiſht; For it is not fit, that any thing (*a*) ſhould ſucceed well with the wicked. It is a puniſhment of his fault: and ſo it fell out with me, by that bad entertainment which I there receiued, as you ſhall heare more at full in the chapter following.

(a) Al malo, no es juſto, ſuceder de coſa bien.

CHAP. VI.

Guzman de Alfarache *recounteth, how in the houſe, where-into hee had withdrawne himſelfe, to make himſelfe cleane, another diſgrace befell him, and many other misfortunes. And that which paſſed afterwards, betweene him and his Lord the Embaſſadour, with whom he diſcourſed of politicke and graue matters.*

THe night was now darke, but much more my heart. Every houſe was full of lights, but my ſad ſoule was fuller of darkeneſſe. I did not weigh and conſider with my ſelfe, that it was now late, nor that the Maſter of the houſe was not willing that I ſhould ſtay there, but reviling me with odious tearmes, ſought to driue me out with evill language, thinking every houre a yeare, till hee had thruſt mee out of doores. For, hee was jealous of mee, and began to ſuſpect, that this was but ſome tricke or ſtratagem of mine owne plotting, having taken hold on that occaſion to get into his houſe, and to bring my purpoſe more eaſily to paſſe. Nor was this my honeſt Gentleman much out of the way. For the Gentle-woman his wife wore the Breeches, ſhe was Maſter of the houſe, a friend to her owne will and pleaſure, very (*b*) head-ſtrong, and not ſure of foot. So that it was no wonder that her husband would ſee Viſions, and dreame of ſtrange apparitions, taking every ſhadow to be ſome fearefull ghoſt, and conceiving, (out of his

Guzman *makes every one ſuſpicious of him.*

(*b*) *The Spaniſh word is*, Serrada Sienes. *I would be glad to be informed of the propriety of this phraſe, if any can render it better.*

his jealous humour) that all the world went about to coozen him. So that every the leaſt appehenſion (though of never ſo farre-fetcht a ſuppoſition) made him preſently to take the Allarme. Whereupon, hee no ſooner ſaw me within his doores, but he called all his people about him, and leauing mee all alone in the outward Porch to the great Gate, would not ſuffer his ſervants to doe me ſo much kindeneſſe, as to afford me a bucket of water to waſh my ſelfe withall. So that I (poore man) with my cloathes all to be-myrde, my hands all to be-durted, and my face ſo fouly beſmear'd, that there was not one white ſpot to be ſeene, I went entertaining my going forth with a great deale of feare, leſt ſome might chance to be ſtill waiting at the gate to looke vpon this my new Liuery, which might better beare the name of Leproſie. And for that they, who beheld this my misfortune, were not a few, the company increaſing, and ſtanding in a round thicke together, they related it afreſh to them that were newly come into their company; and for that they had a generall diſlike of me, they detained all that paſt by, relating vnto them the diſgrace that had befalne me, whereat they all laughed out aloud, making great ſignes and tokens of joy. And it may be, that moſt of them had reaſon ſo to do; and by this their rejoycing, did revenge themſelues of thoſe wrongs, which they had heretofore receiued from me. There might you ſee that verified of me, which is commonly ſung vp and downe the ſtreet.

Guzman *laughed at by common people.*

Romance.

Mas enemigos, que amigos, tienen
Su cuerpo cercado;
Dizen vnos, que lo entierren,
Y otros, que no ſea enterrado.

More foes then friends, his body haue
Incompaſt round about;
Some crie, to put it in the graue,
And ſome, t'ſhall lye without.

Guzman *hated and perſecuted.*

The ſtreet was full of men and boyes, which did perſecute mee with ſhrill ſhoutes, and loud cryes, calling in a ſharpe and high key; Thruſt him out; Thruſt him out; Why doe yee let this foule beaſt abide with you? put out this ſame pickled pigge amongſt vs. O theſe baſe Raskals, how had they almoſt made mee to loſe my patience, and my judgement! There were ſome honeſt folke amongſt them, that tooke part with mee; and all thoſe that were ſuch as I was, ſhew'd themſelues on my ſide. Theſe ſought to defend mee from their fury, labouring to pacifie that rude rabble with threats and menaces; for they were growne ſo ſhameleſſe, and ſo impudent, that they began to throw ſtones againſt the gate, being very deſirous to haue me come forth amongſt them.

Curioſitie admits no reſpect.

But I neither blame them, nor excuſe my ſelfe. For I would haue done the like my ſelfe, vpon the ſame occaſion, againſt mine owne father. For, thoſe things of curioſitie, which doe not (like Shroue-tide) come once a yeare, I doe not hold it any great exceſſe to be deſirous to ſee them. And I aſſure thee (nor doe I ſpeake this, to make the matter ſeeme more then it is) that if for to make profit, I would haue ſuffered my ſelfe to be ſeene, I might by this meanes haue got a good ſumme of money; For I was nothing all over, but a meere lumpe of durt, having like your *Negro's*; no more white about mee to be ſeene, ſaue onely my eyes, and teeth; this mis-fortune befalling me in the moſt liquid kennell, and rottenneſt mixen that was in all the ſtreet.

True it is, that with the knife that belonged to my Sword, I ſcrap't away as much of it as I could, but all was but a thing of nothing, be-

ing either little or nothing the better; for the myre, by reaſon of it's liquidneſſe, had ſoked it ſelfe quite thorow my cloathes, ſo that they remained as wet about mee, as if they had beene ſteeped in ſome bath. And I held it ſome happineſſe vnto mee in this my miſery, that I did not goe dropping through the ſtreets, like a basket of Buck-cloathes, when they are taken from the waſhing-Bole, and carryed forth to be dryed in the Sunne.

In this pittifull manner, it being now late, and all the people gone, I ſneaked out in that lamentable pickle, as I would haue wiſht them to haue beene in, who tooke moſt pleaſure therein. If there be happineſſe in vnhappineſſe, in regard of the comfort which wee receiue from thence; this day it ſhould ſeeme that fortune did play the wanton, and went ſporting her ſelfe at the *juego de Cañas* with mee; for, though ſhee had diſfavour'd mee with theſe and like troubles, that you haue heard; yet did ſhee afterward aſsiſt mee with the night; yea, and with ſuch a darke night, that the people went their way, giuing me leaue to depart thence, ſound, ſafe, and free, from the clamour of the boyes and children, which ſtayd watching for mee. I got me forth, throwing my Cloake over my face, without being knowne by any, and making large ſtrides, ſeeking (if it vvere poſsible) to flie from my ſelfe, in regard of that ſtore of durt, and that evill ſavour which I bare about me in my cloathes. But this could not be diſſembled; for which way ſoever I went, I left ſome ſigne thereof behinde me, beſide the heat of the ſent, which might very well be followed a-farre off, it was ſo ſtrong. And none that paſt by mee, would turne backe to looke vpon me, becauſe they did ſuſpect no harme. And if any did chance to finde fault with me, others would excuſe me, and ſay; Let the poore fellow alone, it is but a little ſlipperineſſe of the Guts, a looſeneſſe of the Hilts, a little laxatiue oyle that is come from him, which vpon occaſion may be every mans caſe, as well as his: He would haue hope it and he could, and therefore you muſt pardon him. Others would ſay; Inquire no farther into the matter, make no more doe about it, but giue over the haunt; for the Crow (*a*) cannot be blacker, then are his wings. Others, ſtopping their noſes as they went along by me, would cry out *Foh*; There hath more ſtore of raine falne, then we were aware of. Others, This *Diſciplinante* muſt needs haue giuen himſelfe ſome great wound, he ſtinkes ſo vildly, (for they ſaw me muffled vp in my Cloake, like thoſe, which come from whipping themſelues in the Holy Weeke.) Let me adviſe you, friend, to make all the haſte you can, and call quickly for ſome water, before you begin to ſwound.

I had matter enough for all of them to worke vpon, and there was not any that paſt by mee, but had a fling at mee. And ſome would not ſticke to aske me; Tell me (friend) how ſell you a pound of this Waxe? And others; What's the price of your Honey-combes? And a third; Sure this muſt needs be ſome perfumer or other, ſince he ſmels ſo ſweet. I anſwered them all with ſilence, and replyde not a word vnto them, by which meanes I paſt the better along by them, though ever and anon they would be girding and ſcoffing at mee. But for thoſe that cryde a pocks on mee, and bid the Devill goe with me, calling me Pole-Cat, and the like ſtinking names; mumbling ſoftly to my ſelfe, as your young Novices doe their Mattens in a Monaſterie, I payd them againe in their owne coyne: And ſo hanging my head in my boſome, I hy'd mee homewards as faſt as my durt-loaden legges would carrie mee.

That, which did moſt trouble mee, vvas, to ſee the Dogges in every ſtreet come barking after me, who the faſter I went, did ſo much the more fiercely ſet vpon me, and eſpecially your (*b*) Mongrell Curres, which followed me cloſe at the heeles, and would now and then giue me a nip at the Calues of my legges. I would faine haue fraid them away, but I durſt not, fearing leſt

Thoſe that are vnfortunate ſeeke to ſhun the ſight of all men. Proverb

(*a*) No puede ſer el Cuervo mas negro, que las alas.

(*b*) *The Spaniſh word is,* Gozquejo. *A kinde of Dogge, which at firſt was in great eſteeme, when they were brought out of* Gothland *into* Spaine, *a Country in* Europe, *which confineth vpon* Denmarke *and* Norway, *called in the* Almane *tongue* Gott, *from whence came the* Gothes, *which came into* Caſtile. *This race of Dogges is now baſtardized, and in a manner loſt. So that now your* Gozques, *are a kinde of Mongrell Curs, which your poore and baſer ſort of people breed vp and keepe. They are ſhort-legged, long ſided and headed, balling and barking at their neighbours, troubleſome to your Gallants, and abhorred of theeues. They ſleepe all day, and this makes them wake, and barke all night long. And your Tradesmen and Shopkeepers, will rather endure that you ſhould ſtrike his Sonne, then kicke his Dogge.* Couarru. verb. Gozque.

leſt by making that defence, greater Dogges and more in number, hearing the noiſe that they would haue made, would thereby haue beene drawne forth of doore, and come mainely running vpon me, and haue torne me (like another *Acteon*) all in pieces.

At laſt, after theſe my many mis-fortunes, like a Ship that comes from the Weſt-Indies, beaten at Sea, and rent and torne by Pyrats, I arriv'd ſafe at *Sevill*. I was now come to my old home, and being vnſeene and vnheard of any, had got me vp to my lodging. And I ſhould haue held it no ſmall happineſſe, if I could haue got in as ſoone as I came to my Chamber doore. I put my hand in my Pocket, to take out the Key, but could not finde it. Then did I feele for it in the other Pocket, but could not meet with it. I cut two or thee capers in the ayre, hoping to heare it gingle; but all was one; then did I fall a ſearching of my breeches, to ſee if happely it had got in betwixt the linings of my Hoſe; but the Divell a Key that was there. I rummaged every corner about mee that I could ſuſpect it to bee in, but all to no purpoſe. For queſtionleſſe I loſt it in that houſe, whither I had with-drawne my ſelfe, when I tooke out my Handkerchiefe to wipe my face and my hands. This was a great griefe vnto mee, and did vexe mee more then all the reſt; in which agony and anguiſh of minde, lifting vp my eyes to Heaven, as a man in deſperation, I breathed forth theſe vvords of complaint.

Guzman laments his misfortune.

Poore, miſerable man, as I am; What ſhall I doe? or whither ſhall I goe? what will become of mee? What courſe ſhall I take, that my Maſters ſervants, and other my Companions and fellowes of the houſe, may not come to the knowledge of this diſgrace that hath thus vnluckily befalne mee? How ſhall I cloake and diſſemble this buſineſſe, that I may not bee made a laughing ſtocke amongſt them? I may boldly tell all the world beſides, that they lye, but I cannot doe ſo to thoſe of the houſe, if they ſhould hap to ſee mee. To others I might deny it, either in part, or in whole, as ſhall ſeeme beſt vnto mee: But here, if they chance to light vpon me, I am openly taken in the matter, the theft found about mee, the cauſe opened, and my mouth ſhut, not being able to alledge any thing in mine owne defence, nor can I invent that Lye, that will bee able to giue them ſatisfaction, and make good what I ſhall ſay in mine owne excuſe. Thoſe that envy my inwardneſſe with my Maſter, will bathe themſelues herewith in Roſe-water; it vvill bee meat and drinke to them, and they vvill not ſticke to call their friends about them; vvho like ſwarmes of Bees, will flye in preſently vpon mee, and come buzzing about mee, to vvorke my more ſhame and amazement. I am vtterly vndone, my Barke lyes all a t'one ſide, and is ready to bee drowned, becauſe it hath no Pylot to ſet her vpright, and to ſteere her in her right courſe, nor any Maſter that is able to governe her.

With theſe exclamations (wretched as I was) I rent the ayre, and was ready to runne out of my vvits: but was not ſo wiſe at that time to call to minde, what an ill name I had gotten in *Rome*, and yet vvith outcryes and lamentations muſt thus pittifully bewayle an accident of fortune. O would to God, that (conſidering the great troubles of this world) wee would bee as ſenſible of the adverſities of the minde, as wee are mooved with the afflictions of the body! But that doth happen vnto vs, which is vvont to befall thoſe, which ſweepe all cleane before the doore, and when they haue done, throw the duſt into the houſe. Thus did I ſtand, making funerall lamentations over my mis-fortunes, when lo, there came a thing into my minde, which had hapned ſome few dayes before, vvhich was of great comfort vnto mee, adding new courage and ſtrength vnto mee againſt all ſuch accidents as might hereafter ſucceed vnto mee, And thus it was:

There

The reuenge that a Roman Curtizan tooke of another woman, for being too lauiſh of her tongue.

There was a Curtizan of *Rome*, who cauſ'd another woman, becauſe ſhee had beene ſome-what too laviſh of her tongue, to bee ſlaſht over the face, cutting her athwart the noſe, from one cheeke to the other, the cut running equally on either ſide of her face. And while the Surgeon was a dreſsing of her, after that hee had given her ſome ſixteene or ſeventeene ſtitches, ſhe weeping ſaid; O what an vnfortunate woman am I! Gentlemen, let me intreat you for Gods ſake, that my Husband may not know of this. A waggiſh fellow, that ſtood there by, told her, If this ſlaſh had beene vpon your buttocks, as it is vpon your face, it might haply haue been hidden from him; but ſeeing there is no Vayle to cover it; why doe you injoyne vs to keepe it ſecret?

In like ſort, it ſeemed ſimplicitie, and meere foolery in mee, to vſe ſuch a deale of nicety in the buſineſſe. And the rather, for that this miſchance was publike. And becauſe, (by reaſon of the generall knowledge thereof) it could not bee conceiled, I thought it the beſt vvay for mee, to get the game by the hand, and to ſpeake of it firſt my ſelfe, telling as many of it, as I ſhould meet withall, making a jeſt of it, and recounting the vvhole ſtory thereof vnto them, before they ſhould receiue it from ſome other hand, and ſo at laſt come to know what a badde and long voyage I had made. Which if they ſhould haue done, it had beene better for me, that I had beene out of this miſerable world.

The beſt way to ſhake off a nick-name, is to ſet light by it.

Haga nombre de mal nombres quien deſſea, que ſe le cayga preſto.

Let him indure the title of a badde name, that deſires to haue it dye quickly. For, with the more violence wee ſeeke to ſhake it off, ſo much the cloſer it cleaveth vnto vs. Inſomuch, that it continueth many times to the fifth generation; and then thoſe, which ſucceed them, doe glory and boaſt themſelues thereof, and blazon that for their Armes, which their Anceſtors held for an affront. The like hath befalne this my poore booke, which I haue intituled with the name of (a) *Atalaya de la vida humana*; The Watch-Tower of mans life, they haue put the nick-name of (b) *Picaro* thereupon, and now it is knowne by no other name.

(a) Obſervatio vitæ humanæ.

(b) Picaro, *is a Rogue.*

I was much perplexed, and as yet vnreſolved what I were beſt to doe. And for that I thought with my ſelfe, that in our miſeries there is no other Sanctuary on earth to flye vnto, but thoſe that are our friends; though I muſt confeſſe I had but a few, and almoſt thoſe never a true one, I held it not amiſſe to haue recourſe to ſome one of my Companions, that had profeſt much loue vnto me, and had made me the faireſt ſhowes of friendſhip.

This being now concluded on, I got me to his lodging, and knockt at his doore, which he preſently opened vnto me: where I did remaine, while the locke was ript off from mine. You may conceiue with your ſelfe in what a wofull caſe I was, that I durſt not ſit downe vpon a trunke that was there in the roome, for feare of leaving therein the print of this my errour. This vnhappy Accident could not be kept ſo ſecret, but that it muſt needs be knowne. And it is a miſerie, that followes great mens houſes, that there is not a ſervant therein, that doth not ſtriue and labour all that hee can, to flatter and ſoothe vp his Lord and Maſter, although it be with merry jeſts, and fained tales, when as there is no ſuch matter. For they deale with him, as thoſe that play booty, ſeeking to ſerue one anothers turne, vſing all their art and skill to coozen and deceiue him: Whereby every Maſter knowes, how and to what end his ſervants loue him, and with what affection they ſerue him. And he is a kinde of vnfortunate man, and in a miſerable and wretched taking, if he thinke to winne them by rigour, and to worke them to loue him for feare. For few or none haue ever beene able to bring this to paſſe. For the heart of man is a noble thing, and muſt be wonne with gentle vſage; it muſt not be roughly dealt withall, but ſtroaked with a ſmooth and ſoft hand.

Seruants given to flatter their Maſters.

Loue is gained by loue, and not by rigour.

Mans heart, a tender thing.

I had ſcarce ſhifted my cloathes, and waſht my ſelfe cleane, but that my Maſter

Maſter knew I was all bedurted. They had told him in what caſe I was, but none of them could tell him the cauſe of it. This was all they could ſay of me, and ſo they left me, as they found me; ſo that by this meanes, I had a faire white to ſhoot at, and might make my ayme as I would my ſelfe. Hee demanded firſt of one, and then of another, how this came about, but none could informe him farther, then what they had ſeene.

Afterwards it was told me, (which was no more then I heard from his owne mouth) that he conceited with him-ſelfe, that they had caught mee in *Fabia's* houſe, and that knowing my tricks, and cunning carriage, they had turned the keele of me vpwards, and had thus trimm'd and pitcht me over, as your Sea-men doe your ſhips: and that I ſeeking to eſcape their hands, fell by misfortune into ſome durty puddle, or filthy dung-hill: Or elſe, that wreſtling and ſtriving with ſome of the ſervants, that were ſent out after me to catch me, they had throwne me downe in the durt, bemoyling mee in that beaſtly manner, being more willing to doe me ſhame and reproach, then to take away my life. I likewiſe at the ſame time was caſting vp my Account with my ſelfe, making me a (*a*) wedge out of the ſame piece of wood, that I might driue this buſineſſe the better, and come home vnto him, by jumping with his conceit, and cleaving the ſame blocke, that hee had already entred vpon, hoping thereby to giue him the better ſatisfaction. And though his Cardes and mine were not the ſame, yet were they both of a ſute, and the Trumpe was turned vp right for either hand; and by different (*b*) wayes we hapt both to meet at one, and the ſame place: only wee did differ in this; that he by his wiſedome did conjecture, what was the moſt likely; and I, out of a vaine and idle humour, made report of that, which might be leaſt prejudiciall to my reputation. He had all that night beene buſie a writing, and making his Diſpatches for *France*; but laying his Papers awhile aſide, out of the great deſire that he had to know the truth of the matter, hee preſently ſent for me in. But when I was come, and had preſented my ſelfe vnto him, hee ſaid not a word vnto me, till he had retired himſelfe into his withdrawing Chamber, and diſmiſſed his ſervants, and that we two were all alone.

(*a*) Haziendo cunna del miſmo pàlo. *Proverb.*

(*b*) *Proverb.* Por caminos diferentes, y bomos ambos à vn parador.

Then did he begin to aske me, how I came by my fall, and where? I told him; that I ſtood at a neighbours doore, that was right over againſt *Fabia's* houſe, vvatching very diligently, if I could haue the opportunitie to ſpeake with her; and whileſt I was carefully attending this buſineſſe, her Maid *Nicoleta* came forth, making ſignes vnto me, that I ſhould quickly come away. And being overjoyed vvith this vnexpected good fortune, I would needs croſſe the Lane, where the way was worſt and fouleſt, (becauſe I would not loſe time in going about by that which vvas the cleaner) fetching a nimble leape thinking to pitch ſure with my foot vpon a ſtone, that was not ſo firmely laid as it ſhould haue beene, it tottred aſide, and ſo my foot ſlipt; I ſought to recouer my ſelfe, but could not, and ſo fell into the durt, where I was moſt pittifull bemyred. Wherevpon, *Nicoleta*, the people that paſſed by, beginning to flocke about me, with-drew her ſelfe, and went in. So that I was inforced to come home, without effecting that I went for; Which did much more grieue me then my fall. But all things doe not alwayes fall out as we would haue them. He then ſaid vnto me, I ſuffer more in this, then thy ſelfe. The harme is more mine, then thine.

This buſineſſe (*Guzmanillo*) goes not luckily along with thee. It was a worke of darkeneſſe, thou wentſt about it late in the Euening, in an vnfortunate houre, and vpon a Tueſday: this diſgrace could not haue befalne thee, in any mans ſervice, but mine, nor haue lighted ſo vnluckily vpon any but my ſelfe, ſuch is my misfortune.

Wherevnto I reply'd; I would not that your Lordſhip ſhould make this ill conſtruction to your ſelfe, nor would I haue you to reckon this in the number;

ber; but I am rather perſwaded, that it would haue beene worſe with vs, if this mis-fortune had not befalne me. For we haue a Proverb in *Caſtile*; (a) *Que breme vn pie, quiças por mejor.* I brake my legge, and it may be, it was all for the beſt. And I am the bolder to tell you ſo, for that her Husband was at that time at home in the houſe, and therefore it makes me to ſuſpect, that there was ſome trap laid for me, and that I was called in to ſome ill end; but ſuppoſe it were otherwiſe, and that the winde had blowne faire in the Poope, and that I had entred into the Haven; ſay, that the ſervants of the houſe ſhould either haue ſpy'd me, or over-heard me talking with their Miſtreſſe, what doth your Excellencie thinke, would then haue become of me? Aſſure your ſelfe, they would haue cudgell'd me ſoundly, and haue vs'd me ſo hardly, that I ſhould not haue ſcap't their fingers, till they had broken all my bones, and ſent me home without a noſe. For my ſo often rounding of that houſe, hath cauſed ſome notice to be taken thereof; and albeit that ſome doe thinke that I only doe it for *Nicoleta's* ſake, yet many, that doe not know the good loue that is betweene vs, are apt to conceiue the worſt. And I haue of late obſerved, that the good old man, *Don Beltran*, hath lookt askew vpon me, as if hee were not well pleaſed with mee. Hee was wont heretofore to ſpeake kindely vnto me, asking my opinion concerning the Ladyes, and Gentlewomen of this Court, and if I knew of any good Spaniſh ware in that kinde; but now he paſſes along by me, not ſo much as once offering to ſpeake to me: and if I put off my Hat and ſalute him, hee lookes another way, as if hee did not ſee me, and goes along by mee like a logge, without any life or motion towards me at all.

(a) *Proverb.*

This was the effect of that which I then ſaid vnto him; my Maſter all this while being very attentiue vnto me, and ever and anon knitting his brow, and caſting vp his eyes, whereby I knew, that I had ſtung him, and made him to ſit muſing, as one that had beene amazed vpon the report of ſome ſtrange and ſudden accident. I ſaw all his Cardes, and knew what game he had in his hand, and how hee would play it, and found by him, that he was afraid both of his reputation, and his perſon, and that it would be little for his honour, if any diſgrace ſhould befall him in that houſe, in regard it was one of the greateſt and the nobleſt allyed in all that Citie. I taking hold of this occaſion, came in a little cloſer vnto him, helping to turne the Key about, when I ſaw which way it was winding; and ſo thinking it fit to ſtricke the Iron whileſt it was hot, proſecuting my purpoſe, I ſpake thus vnto him; There is not any thing now in this world, that can worke aſtoniſhment in mee, nor make me to abate one haire of my courage; for I am well acquainted with misfortunes, know how farre Diſgrace can throw the barre, and the vtmoſt harme ſhe could doe me. For he that ſhall tread in my ſteps, and runne thoſe courſes that I haue done, ſhall hazard both the loſſe of his life, and honour. But I haue armed my ſelfe with patience, to indure any misfortune whatſoever. I haue learned long agoe couragiouſly to ſuffer and abide the changes of Fortune with an vndaunted minde, for I alwayes ſuſpect the worſt, looking for the hardeſt meaſure ſhe can giue me, and prevent her better vſage, by expecting no good at her hands. Her effects are never ſo great, as are her threatnings; and if I ſhould haue beene cowed with them, they would haue followed me ſtill cloſe at the heeles, as the Greyhound doth the Hare, and never giue mee over, as long as ſhee could wagge her taile, or fetch her breath.

From Fortune, we are to ſuſpect the worſt.

No great heed is to be given to that which hath ſucceeded in this buſineſſe, nor that I entred into it vpon a Tueſday; For I am neither wedded to ſuperſtitions, nor thinke that your Lordſhip is deſcended of the Houſe of the (b) *Mendoças*, that you ſhould bee taken with theſe vaine and idle toyes of the Spaniards, as if all other dayes had a particular priviledge, aud Tueſday only

(b) *Tueſday obſerved to haue beene an vnfortunate day to the houſe of the* Mendoças.

onely had receiu'd a curſe from heaven. And if fortune ſhould fall vpon mee, with all the forces ſhee can make, come what can come vnto mee, be it never ſo bad, all her rigorous dealing towards mee, ſhall not wring one word out of my mouth, that ſhall be prejudiciall to any man. Your excellencie may doe well to diſſemble this buſineſſe, and to ſeeme to take no notice of vvhat hath paſt, nor to care a pinne for it. For mine owne part, I ſhall evęr truly ſerue you to the death, fall backe, fall edge, hap what will hap, all is one to me. Yet withall, true it is, and I ſhall make bold to tell you ſo, that if the Caſe were mine, as it is yours, I would not onely deſiſt there-fro, conſidering how croſſe things goe; for of a thouſand dayes, I cannot get one day of Audience; ſo that it is likely to proue an endleſſe piece of worke and an immortall kinde of buſineſſe, like vnto that of our (*a*) *Mayoraſgos*, or Primo-genitureſhip, which your fathers ſettle vpon their eldeſt ſonnes, but ſhall not come to injoy their eſtate, till they be dead. Beſides, I may not well ſet my foote any more in thoſe parts, by reaſon that my haunting of that place is now generally noted, and ſome ſticke not to talke too liberally of it.

(*a*) Mayoraſgo, *is the heire of a houſe.*

There are not wanting in *Rome* as good, and better ware then ſhee, vvhich may be had with leſſe danger, at an eaſie rate, and giue your Lordſhip more content, and leſſe trouble. I know not how it is with others, but my loue is not ſo fervent, as to loue for loue, but for faſhion ſake to laugh and be merry, and to make ſport, as they vſe to doe in my countrie. I am like a Melon-mongers Knife, cutting here a ſlice and there a ſlice, now at this corner, then at that, changing and altering my markes, roving ſometimes at one, ſometimes at another, here to day (as they ſay) and to morrow in *France*. I take thought for nothing, nor am I wedded to my will in any thing, nor am I conſtant in my purpoſes, eſpecially in matters of loue. For if one will not, another will, I eate, and ſleepe at my due houres; I ſigh not, when I am out of my Miſtreſſes ſight; but in her preſence, I fetch many a grievous groane, and vtter my complaints. And this is that mill, vvherewith I grinde. But your Excellencie runn's a cleane contrary courſe. For you doe all that you doe, with a great deale of gravity, and with a Lordly kinde of carriage and greatneſſe. And being a great and powerfull man, you haue thoſe things in chaſe, which are hardeſt to be atchieued, and like the Falcon flye at the Hearne, making wing after her till ſhee be quite out of ſight; purſuing your game to the vtmoſt you are able, coſt it what it will coſt, or come what will come of it, you care not. For as you haue force and ſtrength to make reſiſtance, ſo you accommodate all things handſomely by your diſcretion and wiſedome; you haue a good ſtaffe to truſt too; and good legges to beare you vp.

You do not well vnderſtand (*Guzmanillo*) what you ſay, ſayd my Maſter vnto mee; but is rather all quite contrary to that, vvhich thou haſt ſpoken. For there is nothing now at this preſent more prejudiciall, nor more noted and obſerved, then any the leaſt ſpot or weakeneſſe in a publike perſon. For men of my qualitie are bound to weare ſuch cloathes as befit ſuch Miniſters, and not as ſhall fit beſt with our owne fancie. Otherwiſe, vvee ſhall be taxed by thoſe that caſt an eye vpon them. And every little indecencie in them, turnes to a ſtaine at leaſt, if not a foule blot. A little breath (yow know) vvill make the biggeſt Organs goe. And your greateſt men ſound lowdeſt in the eares of the world, when the noiſe of their actions are blowne abroad by the bellowes of the peoples breath. And I ſweare vnto thee, that if I had not ingaged my ſelfe by my word, and more particularly im-pawned my credit, to *Nicoleta*, by giuing my faithfull promiſe, that I vvould come and viſit *Fabia* in perſon (beſides it would grieue mee, to be accounted inconſtant, or cowardly, blaming mee of lightneſſe, that my loue ſhould be like that of children, or like water in a Siue, or that I vvent about but to try of what mettall ſhee vvas made, and then

Every little ſpot, a foule blemiſh in a publike perſon.

then to laugh and ſcoffe at her coozening of both her and my ſelfe of theſe our hopes, and that it ſhould be ſaid of mee, that I did then turne tayle, vvhen I might haue ſeazed on my game, and had the Partridge in foote, vvhich I might haue truſſed, if I would my ſelfe) I vvould not haue car'd a button. Beſides, being (as thou ſayſt) that this buſineſſe goes on ſo ſlowly, and ſo coldly, I doe not finde my ſelfe ſo faſt intangled in her loue, and ſo tranſported with paſſion, that I do not vnderſtand and conſider vvith my ſelfe, that ſhee hath a husband, that is one of the principall, and chiefeſt in *Rome*, rich, and noble, out of which reſpect vve ought to vvalke very vvarily, as profeſſing to haue ſome honourable beginning, and not to diſ-honour the houſe vvee came of, for vvhich cauſe I ought to keepe a good *Decorum*, without doing wrong or injury to any. And although ſhee bee yong and faire, (and as ſuch a one obliged to take hold on thoſe faire occaſions that are offered) yet ought I not to follow her blandiſhment, and perhaps to my too great coſt, but with a great deale of caution and heede, as ſhall beſt ſtand with that dutie vvhich I owe to my nobleneſſe of bloud, and to the honour of their houſe and kindred.

Many times without due conſideration, wee vnadviſedly will ſee a mans game, and vpon badde Cards (though wee haue little reaſon for it) ſet vp our reſt, and when wee are once in, wee cannot giue over the Vye, vnleſſe wee will be accounted ſimple, cowards, and weake.

But ſince that on our part, wee haue vſed all poſſible diligencies, and that they prevaile ſo little, and coſt vs ſo much, (as the caſe ſtandeth now with the honour of this Gentle-woman) if my ſenſuall appetite, like Gunne-powder, hath vvith its fire ſcorched, if not burnt my reaſon, by acknowledging now the ill, vvhich I haue taken in hand, that furie is now over-paſt, and proſtrating my ſelfe on the earth, I confeſſe my fault. I vvill goe no more (as thou ſayſt) following of that, which flyeth from mee. But with this Lady, which was in a manner in my hands, I will deale with her, as doth the generous Hawke, by letting his Bird goe; by which nobleneſſe of mine, that ill name ſhall be quite buried vnder ground, which for my ſake hath beene raiſed of her; taking therein the beſt courſe that I can, that may make moſt for both our reputations.

This was that hee ſayd vnto mee. And mee thought that this his reſolution vvas my ſalvation. For therein I found the Paradiſe of my deſires opened vnto mee; and prayſing this his good purpoſe, the iſſue vvas the eaſier, not ſo much for his intention, as for my reputation. And therefore I ſayd vnto him, Your Excellencie ſhall herein do like your ſelfe, and proceed in that which you both ſay, and doe, with that correſpondencie, which is moſt agreeable to your vviſedome. For albeit it be a great happineſſe, to obtaine that which we deſire; yet I hold it a greater, not to deſire that, which our ſenſualitie ſuggeſteth vnto vs; much leſſe, if it incite vs to the hurt of others, and more eſpecially towards perſons of qualitie.

What a ſervant ought to do to maintaine himſelfe in his Maſters favour.

This is a Chriſtian conſideration, and a Daughter worthy the birth of your Lordſhips braine; and therefore fit that you ſhould father it, and not caſt it off. And for the manner how you ſhall come off from this buſineſſe, leaue that to mee. For a faithfull ſervant, although for to maintaine himſelfe in his Maſters loue and favour, hee is wont to giue a heat vnto that appetite which hee findes to be in him, yet is hee bound, when hee ſhall ſee this humour corrected in him, to turne the reines, incouraging him to continue in this his good purpoſe. This being ſaid, he licenſed mee from him, ſaying; Farewell (*Guzman*) and thinke vpon this buſineſſe, which I put into thy hands as I haue already done mine honour. And ſo we parted.

CHAP.

CHAP. VII.

The jeſt being publikely knowne through Rome, *which befell* Guzman de Alfarache, *together with the ill ſucceſſe that hee had with the* Boore; *for very ſhame he departs from thence, and goes for* Florence. *In which journey, a Thiefe enters into friendſhip with him, that he might the better vnder that colour, rob him of all that he had.*

I Haue often conſidered with my ſelfe, how much paſſion blindeth him, that is in Loue. And I begin now to thinke vpon my Maſter, that hee ſhould recommend his honour vn to me, as if I knew how to handle it, without ſoyling it. It comes likewiſe vntō my remēbrance,)nor can I chooſe but laugh when I thinke vpon it) how it it was poſſible for mee, beeing ſo notorious and offenſiue a Lyer, as I was, to ſtand in ſuch favour as I did with my Lord: and that his Excellencie ſhould treat with mee, more then any other, of matters of importance; as alſo that hee ſhould truſt mee with his ſecrets, and his ſubſtance, admit of my opinion, and giue credit to all that I ſhould ſay; and that I being ſuch a one as I was, from whoſe mouth never came any Truth, which was not adulterated by mee in its going forth, yet I could not indure a Lye in another.

Paſſion blindeth Louers.

And for that very cauſe did I hate that man to the death, and could never afterwards abide him, that ſhould abuſe mee (though but once) in that kinde. Nor was this any wonder in mee, being that it is naturall to all thoſe that negotiate buſineſſes, to be much offended, if they be not in all things punctually dealt withall; when as they themſelues know not how to ſpeake a true word, and are neuer weary of lying. They begin with the higheſt, and end with the loweſt. For what can be more noble then Truth? and vvhat more baſe then Lying? If you are to receiue any courteſie from them; or that you would haue them to doe you a favour (though this kindeneſſe ſhall coſt them nothing) how many ſleights; how many trickes; how many delayes, and putings off from one day to another, and from this to the next morning, which morning never comes; beeing like vnto that of the Crow, which cryes ſtill *Cras*, promiſing that which ſhee never performeth?

A Lyer loues not a Lye in another

The effects of a Lyer.

But if you are to giue them any thing, and that you doe not keepe touch vvith them at the time appointed, (and which is the fault now then of your beſt Watches) that you miſſe but one minute, if you faile never ſo little of your promiſe, if you do not juſtly make payment, and delay them but one houre, you are no man of your word, nor do you know vvhat belongs to good dealing, nor are ſo honeſt as you ſhould bee. I did the like with thoſe that I had to doe withall. I did conſider (but fooliſhly I muſt confeſſe) vvith my ſelfe; What will it benefit mee to tell truth? What does it concerne mee, that it is the Vice of thoſe that are vile and baſe, and the repaſt and food of beaſts? What harme ſhall I receiue, if men will not giue credit vnto mee, if I haue got the ſame already, although they apparantly ſee that I lye, and that ſuch is their paſsion, that they will not diſ-deceiue themſelues of my deceit? What honour haue I to loſe? How can I faile in my credit? I am well enough knowne, and the world in now come to that paſſe, that onely for this cauſe of my lying, they vphold, maintaine, favour, and eſteeme mee.

Lying, the food of beaſts.

Notable inſtructions for great Princes, and men of qualitie.

Lying, and Flatterie, is meate alone for great men, it is the onely diſh that

pleaſeth their palate, the onely muſicke that delighteth their eares. But you are no welcome man vnto them, if you come and tell them, that it is time for them, to leaue off gaming, that they haue waſted and conſumed their eſtate, and that their Vaſſals and Tenants, are growne poore and beggerly. That they ſhould not play the *Fanfarrones*, royſting and ſwaggering vvhere e're they come, nor ſhew themſelues diſſolute, and looſe in their behaviour, either in the open ſtreets, or in the Church, vvhich muſt needes giue occaſion of much both hurt and ſcandall. That they ſhould not be ſuch laviſh and prodigall ſpenders, as to ruine themſelues, and to breake their neckes through too much haſte, by taking Poſt-horſes, as it were to runne out of their eſtates. And ſeeing that they can finde in their hearts and make no bones of it, to foole away ſuch a deale of money as they doe, and that ſo vainely, and ſoe idly, that they vvould yet make a conſcience to pay their ſervants their vvages, and not to let them goe totter'd and torne, and ready to ſtarue for hunger. That if they be rich, and in favour vvith the Prince, that they diſpence a part of theſe their good fortunes to the poore. That if they haue their Kings eare, and are inward vvith him, that they ſhould make benefit of this their privacie, by procuring themſelues good and ſure friends; for there is no firmeneſſe in Fortune; nor no Princes favour ſo fixed, but it may fall off. That at leaſt, on feſtivall dayes, they ſhould riſe betimes and get them to Church to heare Maſſe. And that they ſhould truly and ſincerely make confeſſion of their ſinnes, and not onely for faſhion ſake, to cumply with the Pariſh, being therein onely nominall, but not reall Chriſtians, having the name, but not the nature of true Chriſtians; for there are a kinde of men, that make a ſhow of having faith, and that obſerue the precepts of the Church, but for no other end, leaſt they ſhould be puniſhed, if they ſhould do otherwiſe. that they ſhould looke well into themſelues, and learne to know that they were but men.

Deaths ſentence what manner of thing it is?

And in caſe that they ſhould be old and ſtrooken in yeeres, that they are now vvraſtling vvith death, vvho is ready to trip vp their heeles, and throw them into the graue, vvhich lyes ready open to receiue them; Their ſentence is already notified vnto them; and as they that are to be executed, take leaue of their friends, and haue thoſe Enſignes borne before them, vvhich are prepared for that conflict; So muſt they at laſt take their farewell of all thoſe things, vvherevnto they liuing bare moſt affection: As their taſte, their ſleepe, their ſeeing, their hearing, and the like; to vvhich ſweete Sences ſentence of death is dayly, if not hourely notified, by the Reynes, the Kidneys, the Liver, the leſſer Guts, and our Vrine: The ſtomake begins to languiſh, the ſtrength of it vvaxes weake, its naturall heate begins to faile; here the eye-teeth drop away, there the gumm's fall on aking: all vvhich are as a mouldring away of theſe our clods of earth, and that the timber of this our houſe is rotten, and the roofe ready to fall about our eares, and that there are no buttreſſes to vphold this tottering wall; from the foundation to the very top, it is wholly runne to decay, and the ruine thereof is at hand.

Neceſſary leſſons for yong Gallants

Admoniſh a yong man of theſe, and the like things; or ſome rich yong Gallants, vvho is as daring, as hee is indiſcreet, and ſo head-ſtrong, that hee vvill not be ruled; repreſent, I ſay, vnto him, that hee doth not know his friends from his foes, that for ſpeaking thus, looking there, commending that, and peradventure for but walking by, if not entring where hee ſhould not, hee vvill be ſuddenly ſtab'd at one time or other, not having ſo much time as to receiue the bleſſed Sacraments, nor to call vpon God, to helpe him in this his extremitie; or to adviſe him to conſider, that his bloud is corrupted, ill humours abound in him, that hee liues diſorderly;

as

as giuen to all exceſſe and ryot, that he vieth little exerciſe, and that his often ſurfeitings will bring him to an Apoplexie, or ſome other dangerous diſeaſe, that will quickly make an end of him, or that the Lambe goes as ſoone to the Shambles as the ſheepe; and that he ſhould not flatter himſelfe, becauſe hee findes himſelfe ſtrong in his armes, ſound in his feet, luſty in his legges, able in his body, and free from all aches, either in his head, or thoſe his other parts, that therefore hee is ſafe, is priviledg'd from ſickneſſe, hath an eſtabliſhed health, and aſſurance of long life.

The poore reaſons that the rich alledge againſt the poore.

And here (me thinkes) I heare this young gallant ſay; Such poore Raſcals as thou art, muſt come to die, and ſuffer ſuch miſ-fortunes as theſe; For I am rich, ſtrong, valiant, diſcreet, and nobly deſcended. I haue a faire houſe to dwell in, a ſoft bed to lie in, I eate what I liſt, I want nothing that my heart can deſire, I liue at pleaſure, and doe what I will, without controlement; and where there are no troubles, nor no care-taking, there is no ſickeneſſe, there no doore open for old age to enter. Ah, poore ſilly foole that thou art! *Samſon*, *David*, *Salomon*, and *Lazarus* were more good, more diſcreet, more valiant, more gallant, and more rich then thou, and yet they dy'd, when their time was come.

None liue for ever in this world.

There haue beene many millions of men from *Adams* time to thine, and yet there was not any one of them that liu'd for ever in this world. Hee then that ſhall tell them this Truth, or any thing elſe that may be for their good, they will take him to be a foole. Who then will adventure to tell them their faults? Or who dare ſpeake their minde freely vnto them? Let (*a*) *Vargas* ſpeake to this point. He muſt be either deſperate or fooliſh, that ſhall preſume to tell Princes and great Perſons of theſe things; for if thou be a man of vnderſtanding, and haue any thing in thee worthy commendation, they will preſently call thee into the Court, and frame a bill againſt thee, executing that Statute vpon thee, of *Scandalum magnatum*. And if thou beeſt a *Buffone* and common Ieſter, they will ſend thee to the Porters Lodge, and there haue thee whipt. Therefore thou muſt neither jeſt with thoſe that are rich and mightie, nor yet be ſo plaine with them, as to tell them the truth. For, I am not bound to ſpeake the truth, where I know it will not be accepted, and whence I am ſure I ſhall get great hatred; if not harme, for my good will. It ſhall be ſufficient for my vnderſtanding, and all ſuch as I am, to know that all things in this world paſſe away, and that we ſhall paſſe away likewiſe with them. I could be content to ſay this over and over a thouſand times together, and repeat no other leſſon; For, to vnderſtand this truth alone, is that which moſt importeth vs, and doth moſt neerely concerne vs. And why ſhould we promiſe that vnto our ſelues, which wee cannot accompliſh? Hee that holdes himſelfe to be the ſtrongeſt man, of the ſoundeſt conſtitution, of the beſt compoſed humours, and the pureſt mixed elements, this man, I ſay, (for all his well ordered frame of nature) hath no aſſurance of his long continuance, but is more apt to fall, then thoſe other houſes of Clay, which are leſſe ſubſtantially built. There is not any mans ſtrength, be it never ſo great, that can reſiſt but a puffe of ſickneſſe; the beſt of vs all are but dung-hills, and heaps of duſt, which a little blaſt of winde will ſcatter away, and lay vs levell with the earth. Let no man flatter and deceiue himſelfe: let him not feigne that to himſelfe, which is nothing ſo: nor entertaine that, which his lying ſenſualitie ſhall dictate vnto him. For ſhe will ſpeake that vnto thee, which ſhe vtters to all the world beſides. Shee will tell thee; Thou art great and powerfull, and may'ſt therefore doe what thou liſt. That thou art a Gallant, and mayſt therefore goe vp and downe, and take thy pleaſure. Thou art faire and rich, and mayſt therefore be diſhoneſt and diſſolute. Thou art noble, and mayſt therefore lawfully ſcorne thy inferiours, and thinke none to be equall vnto thee. And if thou receiueſt an injury, it is not for thine

(*a*) *There is a Spaniſh Proverb that ſayes,* Aueriguelo Vargas. *Let* Vargas *approue it, which is to be vnderſtood, when a buſineſſe is very intricate and hard to be decided. This Proverbe grew firſt from the* Licenciado Franciſco de Vargas, *of the Colledge of* Santa Cruz *in* Valladolid, *a man of a ſtrong braine, and of a quicke diſpatch, whom King* Don Fernando *made choyce of to be his Secretary. And becauſe hee did remit all his Memorials to his ſcanning, and to giue him an account of them, he would vſually ſay, when any made ſuit vnto him;* Aueriguelo Vargas. Couarru. *Verb* Vargas.

Wee muſt neither jeſt with great men, nor tell them the truth.

Wee are all of vs but weaklings. Wee ought not to flatter our ſelues.

honour to put it vp, but to reuenge it to the full. Thou art a Gouernour, and ſet in authoritie over others, and therefore mayſt governe according to thine owne will, and order buſineſſes for thine owne beſt advantage, though it be to the hurt of others, let them maunder their worſt, or come what will come, thou need'ſt not to care. Thou art a Iudge, and mayſt therefore judge in thy friends favour, mayſt tread juſtice vnder thy foot, and pervert the Lawes at thine owne pleaſure. Thou art favoured by the King, and art able to ſhew favour vnto others; thou mayſt therefore vſe this thy favour, as thou ſhalt thinke fit, and ſhall ſute beſt with thine owne liking, & blow (a) ſmoake in the noſes of the poore, not regarding how thou doeſt offend, and diſtaſte them. For it ſtands not with thy reputation, thy Office, thy Dignitie, nor thy honour, that they ſhould aske thee that which thou oweſt them, nor ſpeake to thee for that his cloake, which thou haſt wrongfully taken from him.

Proverb. (a) Dara vn humo a narizes. i. diſguſtarle, y enojarle. Couarr. *Verbe* Humo. *None is ſo good as he thinkes himſelfe to be. Man is but duſt; and what kinde of duſt.*

But, in good faith (my Lords) I muſt be ſo bold to tell you, that be yee never ſo great, or be yee ſo great as yee imagine your ſelues to be, (though you can never be ſo great, as you conceit your ſelues to be) yet the very beſt of you, when you are at the beſt, are no better then a little duſt. Make your choyce of which duſt you will; be it earth, or aſhes; for there are no other ſorts of duſt. If of earth; let it put yee in minde, that your beginning was duſt, though tempred with a little water, giuing yee thereby to vnderſtand (if your greatneſſe make yee not like beaſts, that vnderſtand not) that you ſhould make your ſelues fruitfull for heaven, by entring into a due conſideration of your ſelues, and an acknowledgment of your owne vnworthineſſe, Yee know well enough, that the earth cannot, without water, yeeld any fruit; And if this earth of yours become drie through your vices, and that it be not vvatred with the deaw of heaven, with holy inſpirations, and vvith good workes, that it may fructifie and bring forth fruit, by pardoning of injuries, asking forgiueneſſe for thoſe wrongs which yee haue done to others, by paying thoſe debts that yee owe, and by ſhewing true repentance, yee ſhall be but as heapes of Aſhes, good for nothing, and caſt out vpon the dung-hill. And that in the end ſhall befall yee, which wee ſee to happen vnto Aſhes, whereof that Sope is made, that ſerues to take out the ſoyles and ſpots that are in cloathes, and are afterwards as things of no vſe, throwne forth vpon ſome one filthy-ſtinking mixen, or other. Yee ſhall by your bad examples, ſo terrifie others, and make them ſo afraid of following the evill courſes, that they ſhall thereby be ſaued, and yee damned to the pit of hell, that everlaſting burning coale-pit, vvhoſe fire ſhall never goe out. Theſe I tell yee, are truths, and now it is time to tell yee them. And if I told yee lyes in my youth, out of a kinde of pride and brauery that I tooke in them, now experience teaches me another leſſon, and riper yeares haue brought me to the knowledge of thoſe many errours; vvhich I then committed.

We muſt not deferre our amendment vpon hope of long life.

Nor let any man indanger himſelfe, for to thinke that that may happen vnto him, vvhich hath befalne mee; to vvit, Long life; and relying thereupon, grow ſlacke and careleſſe of their amendment, hoping that they may doe that time enough hereafter, vvhen they begin to vvaxe old; for a ſharpe Eaſterly vvinde ſhall come vpon thee on the ſudden, ere ever thou art aware of it, and nip this thy flower of youth, vvith the cold bitter froſt of death, and ſheere thee downe to the ground in this thy greene and flouriſhing ſtate, as graſſe is cut downe by the Sithe of the Mower, and thou ſhalt preſently vvither, and be carryed cleane away, never more to be ſeene. I was never ſure that I ſhould come to liue thus long, nor can any man elſe warrant his owne life. For we are all of vs but as Birds that flye abroad in the fields ſinging and ſporting, while in the meane time the Eagle comes, and ſeazed vpon all of them, which ſeemed beſt vnto him. Or elſe comes the owner of thoſe grounds, vſing a thouſands tricks and devices to take them. None of vs know

the

the ſet houre of our death, but all of vs know this, that we muſt goe one after another. I likewiſe, haue followed mine owne idle humour, not thinking vpon any ſettled courſe in this world; but becauſe the end which I intend, is to build vp a perfect man, ſtill as I meet with ſtones fit for this building, I goe ſetting of them vp; theſe occaſions, are my Center, and by them, as by ſo many lines, I come thereunto. But here I will lay downe this load of ſtones, and when time ſhall ſerue, I will returne againe with another, and it ſhall not be long e're I gather more, and bring them in place.

The Authors intention.

Returning therefore to our preſent purpoſe; I ſay, that I was wholly compacted of lyes, as I had ever beene. With ſome I would be a Martyr, with other ſome a Confeſſor. For all things are not to be communicated to all. And therefore I would never truly impart my troubles to any, nor punctually publiſh them; but when I was forced to manifeſt the ſame, I would tell one man one tale, and another, another; and no man had it without it's comment. And becauſe a Lyer (ſay they) had need of a good memory, I, that had none of the beſt, to day I would recount the caſe one way, and to morrow another, and ſo many times, ſo many different wayes did I varie from that which I firſt delivered: So that, bearing my ſelfe in this manner, I gaue occaſion to thoſe that knew me to be a Lyer, not to giue credit ſo much to me, as to the generall voyce and report that went abroad. For they did all of them truly and really agree vpon the thing it ſelfe, they did jumpe in the matter, but not in the manner. For every one did either take away, or adde thereunto, as he thought beſt; and as thou thy ſelfe perhaps art wont now and then to doe.

Guzman, *a notable lyer.*

A lyer had need of a good memory.

Now, for ſome few dayes, as a noveltie that had beene newly ſet abroach, there was no other thing talkt of in all *Rome*. My miſ-fortune was the theame of their Diſcourſe, and my being be-myr'd, the ſalt that ſeaſoned their converſation. It came likewiſe to my Maſters eare, but he being wiſe, gaue it the hearing, but ſpake not a word of it. For a Maſter is not alwayes bound to take notice of all that is done; for then he ſhould be ty'de (by the Law of goodneſſe, and out of the nobleneſſe of his nature) to remedie what is amiſſe. Hee did diſſemble it all that he could, but not ſo cunningly, but that by ſome inter-ſmilings, and caſting of his eyes, he made it knowne. He plough'd with me, and therefore knew what furrow I had turned vp. And as it was fit for him to diſſemble it, ſo was it for me to denie it. We were ſilent on all ſides, but not very long, for the Devils cloven foot at laſt brake out at his ſhoes. There was a certaine friend of his, and conſequently my enemy, who taking him one day all alone, told him, how much it importeth both his quality and credit, to rid himſelfe of me, in regard of the publike and open language, which I vſed of thoſe things which his Lordſhip had in-truſted me withall, and that every one might ſcrue what he would from mee, and draw all thoſe ſecrets from me, which he had committed to my boſome. That Gentlemen of his place and profeſſion ſhould proceed according to that, which repreſented it ſelfe vnto them, and that his Lordſhip doing the contrary, it would proue very prejudiciall to his owne reputation, and his maſters ſervice. This diſcourſe is mine owne; and though happely theſe formall words were not delivered juſt in the ſame phraſe, as I haue now delivered vnto you; yet I veliry beleeue, they were like vnto theſe, if not more effectuall then what I haue here ſet downe. But howſoever they were the ſame, or not the ſame, I am ſure that none of them all could tell him more, then he himſelfe already knew, nor adviſe him better then he was able to adviſe himſelfe. And I make no queſtion, that he was not well pleaſed with that which they ſaid vnto him. But he ſpake not one word thereof vnto mee at that time, nor made any ſhew of alteration, or carryed any other kinde of countenance towards me, then he was wont to doe. Onely, becauſe Lent was now newly come in, he made

A Maſter is not bound to take notice of every ſlim-ſlam tale that is told him.

An Embaſſadour muſt haue a care as well of his Maſters, as his owne reputation.

vſe of that occaſion, to liue a little more retyred, and not to talke of prophane and idle matters, and particularly, not of women.

Thus did thinges runne along. But in regard that I was become the common Table-talke of all the Towne, thoſe that wayted on my Lord in his Chamber, his Pages, and other his ordinarie ſervants, tooke a little more libertie and licence of language vnto them, then did well beſeeme them. For, to make themſelues merry, and to entertaine the time, what betweene jeſt and earneſt, they did ſo nip mee with their wittie jeſts, and pay mee home with their Satyricall laſhes, that your Mariners doe not more ſtraine their tacklings in a tempeſt, then they did wreſt and wring the very bowels within mee. So that now at laſt, neither at home, nor abroad, had I any place, wherein I might reſt ſecure; nor any wall, whereagainſt to leane, and from whence ſome Eccho did not ſound, that did voyce forth the ſinnes that I had done.

How a wiſe man may be made to turne Foole, or mad-man.

I had now ſo loſt all patience, and was ſo in a manner beſides my ſelfe, that one day as I paſt along the ſtreet, I was almoſt inforced to haue committed many fooleries. Hee ſaid well, who being ask't, in how long a time, a wiſe man might turne foole? Anſwered; That is according as the boyes in the ſtreet ſhall flocke about him, abuſe him, and hoote at him. This was it that brought the water vp aboue my chinne, and was ready to drowne me; this was it that made me to for-ſweare all ſufferance, and to renegue my wonted patience.

Guzman *perſecuted by boyes and children.*

Many little children, as well as the greater lubbers, did perſecute mee, whereſoever I went, laughing and ſcoffing at mee, with ſtrange out-cryes, and loud ſhowtings, making a moſt hideous noyſe. I tooke vp ſtones, and vvould haue throwne at them; but a young man of mine owne ſtature, qualitie and yeares, well-behaued, but ſome-what hot and cholericke, came running in vpon mee, and held my arme ſo faſt, that I was not able to moue a finger to doe them any hurt; yet did hee deale ſo honeſtly with mee, as to take part with mee againſt them all, and to defend mee againſt this their rage and fury, drawing in two or three other of his friends, that came along in his Company, making reſiſtance both in deeds, and in words, againſt thoſe Hobber-de-hoyes, which like ſo many Hob-goblins, or little Devils, did haunt mee vp and downe from ſtreet to ſtreet, and from houſe to houſe. And hauing now quieted and layd theſe vnruly ſprites, hee tooke me by the hand, bringing me himſelfe alone home to his lodging, leaving his Companions behinde to keepe backe the boyes.

When he had brought me thus home, I would faine haue had him to ſtay with mee, that I might haue faſtned ſome kindneſſe vpon him, and haue done him all the courteſie and honour the houſe could afford: But could by no meanes get him to accept thereof.

Then did I intreat him, that hee would tell mee his name, as alſo where was his lodging, that I might come to kiſſe his hands, and giue him thankes for the vn-deſerved kindneſſe I had receiued from him; but hee would neither acquaint mee with the one, or the other; promiſing to returne ſome other time to viſit me. Onely he told me, that he did beare particular affection as well to my perſon, as my Countrey; for that I was a *Spaniard*, and that hee was as ſenſible of this diſgrace of mine, as if it were his owne. And with this we tooke leaue each of other. I came home with my colour ſo changed, my eyes ſo inflamed, and my vnderſtanding ſo confounded, that (not conſidering vvell vvhat I did) comming juſt in the nicke, when dinner vvas a ſerving vp, I vvould needs goe vp with the reſt of the Pages to vvait at his Lordſhips table. But vvhen I vvas come into the dining roome, and found vvhat Gentlemen vvere there attending on his Excellencie, I then ſaw my ſimplicitie, and ſaw how egregiouſly I had playd the foole; and would faine

Guzmans *indiſcretion.*

haue

haue holpe my ſelfe, by getting forth from amongſt them: but it was too late; for my Maſter had already perceiued by my countenance what I ayled, and (without caſting my water) that all was not well with mee, and that I was inwardly much troubled. Whereupon hee demanded of mee, what was the cauſe of this my perturbation? I beeing taken thus on a ſudden, having no leiſure to fall then a coyning, and having never a new lye in ſtore, went plainely to worke, and told him all the whole truth of the buſineſſe, and every particular paſſage thereof, which was all out, before I was aware, telling that, which I was not willing to vtter. And this was the firſt Wine, that came out of my Taverne without water, and the firſt truth that I ever told in my life. My Maſter ſaid nothing to it: but thoſe that waited at the boord, not beeing able to forbeare laughing, one claps mee the cover of the Cup that hee held in his hand before his face, another the Plate that hee held betweene his Thumbs, a third the Napkin where-with hee ſerv'd as Server, and thoſe that were empty-handed, laying one hand on their face, and with the other ſtopping their mouth, their hearts being ready to burſt in their bellies, hy'de them (for feare of blurting in my Lords face) as faſt out of the roome, as their legges would carry them. And they paſt ſo farre therein beyond the bounds of modeſtie, that his Excellency was ſome-what mooved thereat, and call'd out aloud vnto them to be quiet, rebuking them with ſharper words then ever heretofore he was wont to doe, reprehending them for their over-boldneſſe in his preſence. Where-with I was ſo aſhamed, and ſo quite altered from that I was before, as if I had beene ſenſible of the tearmes of honour, or had ſome ſignes thereof ſtill remaining in me.

The firſt truth, that ever Guzman *told.*

O how many things doth Rigour correct, which Loue is not able to effect! O, how much doth it import oftentimes, for to take a good fall, that a man may the better learne to looke to his feet hereafter, and to know how to walke more ſteddily, and more ſurely! Then did I take notice of mine owne deformitie, in that glaſſe did I ſee every ſpot that I had about me; and was ſo quite daſht out of countenance, and ſo confounded in my ſelfe, that for all the Maſters, and women that were in the world, I would never more take vpon mee to treat of their Loue-matters, nor be a Broker in that kinde for the greateſt Prince in Chriſtendome. O, what a braue reſolution was this, if it would haue held!

It is good ſometimes to fall into an errour, that man may learne thereby to take better head hereafter.

The ſtorme being now laid, my Maſter remained very ſad, leaning his cheeke on his hand, and his elbow on the boord, holding his Pick-tooth in his mouth betweene his teeth, beeing much diſcontented, that theſe things of mine ſhould runne on in that manner, that he muſt be forced to doe that, which he never thought to haue done; how-beit it was requiſite for him ſo to doe, for the avoyding of a greater miſchiefe; ſeeing himſelfe now ſo farre ingaged, that hee ſhould giue ſome notable touch to his Reputation, if hee ſhould declare himſelfe in my defence; eſpecially, conſidering that mens ſervants are the reall and true marke of what goodneſſe and fineneſſe is their Maſters cloath. He will'd me to get me downe to dinner; And from that time forward, neither I, nor any of my fellowes did for many dayes together, ſee his countenance ſo cheerefull, nor finde his tongue ſo affable, as heretofore it was wont to be.

Now I durſt not goe (as before) out of doores but by night. So that all day long I kept my ſelfe cloſe in my Chamber, ſpending my time, either in reading good bookes, or playing vpon ſome Inſtrument, or talking vvith my friends. Inſomuch, that this retiring of my ſelfe, wrought in thoſe of the houſe a new reſpect; and in thoſe abroad, ſilence; And in my ſelfe, another courſe of life, differing from that which I led before.

Now every mans tongue was ſtill, and now by abſenting my ſelfe from their

their ſight, all theſe my buſineſſes were forgotten, as if they had never beene. The Young man came often to viſit mee, that had taken my part, when I was ſo vilely mockt and abuſ'd by the Boyes. Hee made mee many offers of his Purſe and his Perſon; hee acquainted mee with his Country, his Name, and the cauſe of his comming to *Rome*, which was to get a Diſpenſation of his Holineſſe, and that hee had ſpent therein a great deale of money and time, and yet was as farre from effecting his buſineſſe, as the firſt houre that hee ſet foot in that Citie. I held my ſelfe bound to doe him all the good offices that I could to further this his pretenſion, giving credit to all that hee told mee. And becauſe I did deſire, that ſome faire occaſion might bee offered, whereby I might repay part of that debt, wherein I ſtood bound vnto him; I intreated him, that hee would acquaint mee with his buſineſſe, and I would petition my Lord Embaſſador in his behalfe, and negociate it with all the ſpeed I could. Hee returned mee many thankes for this my kinde offer, and told mee that hee had now hit into the right path, wherein hee was to walke, and that hee had now very good and aſſured hopes to bring his purpoſe to paſſe. But in caſe this courſe ſhould faile him, whereinto hee had now put himſelfe, hee would then entertaine that courteſie whereof I had made him ſo willing a tender. And thus wee paſt the time a while in complement, giving and taking by turnes ſome Ceremonies of Court-ſhip, till at laſt hee askt mee, whether I vvould take the paines to walke along with him to the Palace? I excuſed my ſelfe vnto him, and told him the cauſe why I had retyred my ſelfe, and how well it ſped with mee; for by my not going abroad, mine owne minde was now quieted, and the noyſe and hurry of the Towne very well allayd.

This young fellow was as very a Wagge as my ſelfe, much of my age, and his Beard (like mine) newlv budding forth; he preſently caught hold of theſe words, as thoſe, which he moſt deſired to heare to come from me; and when I had herein ſatisfied his longing, he ſaid thus vnto me.

Señor Guzman, you haue carried your ſelfe with that diſcretion, as is proper vnto you, and may truely bee termed your owne. And I hold this for as good and ſure a remedie, as I find it difficult for you to put it in practiſe, and to make continuall vſe of it; For ſometimes ſuch neceſſarie occaſions repreſent themſelues vnto vs, that men are inforced, whether they will or no to breake theſe their firme purpoſes, and religious reſolutions. If I, Sir, were in your caſe, rather then I would bee thus mewed vp, and for ſo long a time, I would weare out this diſgrace by travelling abroad, rounding all *Italy*, before I would returne. In which you travell, your ſhall not onely take ſingular content, but you ſhall likewiſe obtaine your intended end, and with more advantage, then you can poſsibly pretend, by this your private ſhutting vp of your ſelfe in your Lords houſe. For *Time* and *Abſence*, weare out all things, and are the beſt Phyſicians that can bee found for ſuch kinde of diſeaſes as theſe.

Travell yeeldeth much delight.

Hee went likewiſe leading me along with the relation of divers and ſundry curioſities, preſenting vnto mee the great excellencies of *Florence*, the beauty of *Genoa*, and the incomparable government of *Venice*, and other things of great delight, which did ſo diſpoſe mee to vndergoe this courſe, which (after that hee had taken his leaue of mee) wrought ſo vpon mee all that night, that I could not take any reſt, nor thinke vpon any other thing. Me thought, that I had already pluckt on my Bootes, and put on my Spurres, and that I vvas now onward on my way. Wherevpon I got mee vp as ſoone as it was day, and brought my Lord his cloathes; to whom, while hee was making him ready, I gaue an account of this my reſolution. Hee liked very well of it, holding it a commendable, and an

honeſt courſe, that it would make much for my good, and ſtop all thoſe mouthes, that were now ſo clamorous againſt me. He then told me, what others had ſaid of mee; and that, which hee ſate muſing on at boord, when he ſhew'd himſelfe ſo ſad, how he was then beating his braines about my good, & how much he did deſire to ſee me well accommodated, for the great affection that he bare vnto me, and that he had ſet his wits aworke for me; but ſeeing that mine owne invention had hit ſo well; he told me, that if I had a minde to goe into *France*, I ſhould haue Letters of recommendation to his friends there in my favour; or if that I ſhould make any other choyſe to my better liking, he would not be wanting vnto me, but deale well and worthily with me, as one that had done him true and faithfull ſervice.

A loving Maſter, what manner of man he is.

I had a great deſire to haue gone into *France*, for the great ſtate and Majeſtie that I had often hard of that Kingdome, but much more of that their noble and renowned King; But things were not then in that caſe that I could conveniently execute my longing. I kiſt his hands, and thank't his Excellencie for theſe his favours towards me; and told him, that (if it might ſtand with his good leaue and liking) I was very deſirous to travell firſt thorow all *Italy*, and eſpecially ſee *Florence*, whereof I had heard ſuch large commendations; and from thence goe to *Siena*, where *Pompeyo* did then reſide, one that was my eſpeciall good friend, and well knowne to his Lordſhip, for we did ordinarily converſe together by our Letters, though we had never ſeene one another. Which correſpondence had knit a ſtrict knot of friendſhip betweene vs.

My Maſter was very glad of this motion; and from that day forward, began to ſet things in order for my journey. Purpoſing with my ſelfe to make hereafter a new Booke, waſhing away by my vertues, thoſe ſpots, which Vice had ſtained me withall.

CHAPTER VIII.

Guzman de Alfarache, *diſcourſes of Deceit. Hee departs from* Rome. *He deſires to ſee* Siena, *where certaine theeues meet with his Trunkes, which hee had ſent away before, and robbe him of all that he had.*

THat moſt famous Philoſopher *Seneca*, treating of *Deceit*, (whereof wee haue ſaid ſomewhat already in the third Chapter of this booke, though all that ſhall bee ſpoken thereof, vvill bee too little) in one of his Epiſtles ſaith; That there is a deceitfull kinde of promiſe, vvhich is made to the Fowles of the ayre, the Beaſtes of the field, the fiſhes in the vvaters, and men themſelues vpon earth. *Deceit* comes vnto vs in that ſubmiſsiue kinde of manner, in ſo lowly, and ſo humble a faſhion, that they that doe not know her, may be condemned of ingratitude and incivilitie, if they doe not ſet wide-open the gates of their ſoule, and runne out to receiue her with open both armes and heart. And for that the arte thereof, which is now a dayes profeſſed, the ſtudies, the watchings, and the diligences, which are vſed therein, are all done with a double minde, and ſet themſelues a-worke with a falſe intent; by how much the more the thing that is treated of, is in it's nature of that qualitie, that we may therein eaſily commit many errours, that may turne much to our prejudice, by ſo much the more ſecret ſubtilties, crafty

Seneca's ſaying, touching deceit.

The nature of deceit.

craftie Counter-mimngs, cunning Stratagems, ſtrong Artillerie, and warlike munition, ſhee fortifies her ſelfe, furniſhing her ſelfe with all neceſſarie proviſion, when ſhe meanes to come into the field. And therefore wee need not ſo much to wonder, that we are now and then, but that we are not alwayes deceived. And the caſe ſtanding ſo, I hold it a leſſe evill, to be deceived by others, then to be the Authors of ſo ſacrilegious a ſinne.

It is better to bee deceived, then to deceiue.

Amongſt other things which King *Don Alonſo* would (who was ſurnamed the Wiſe) in-diſcreetly reforme in nature, this was one amongſt the reſt; that he did blame her, that ſhe had not made a Window in mans breſt; that we might ſee that, which he was plotting in his heart, and whether his manner of proceeding were faire and ſincere, or whether his words were feigned, or whether (like *Ianus*) he had two faces vnder one hood? And the cauſe of all this, is Neceſsitie; for if a man finde himſelfe laden with obligations, and knowes not how to eaſe himſelfe of them, he goes about to ſeeke all the helpes and meanes he can, to lighten him-ſelfe of this load, and to come off as handſomely as he can. Neceſsitie teacheth vs the way to all this, and makes the hardeſt and moſt vntrodden paths, to appeare even, and eaſie to be hit. It will breake thorow the thickeſt Briers, and clamber vp the rougheſt and ſteepeſt Rocks. It is in its owne nature (as is before mentioned in our firſt chapter) full of daringneſſe, and of Lying. And for this cauſe, even your ſimpleſt and moſt innocent Birds haue their tricks and their ſubtilties. The Doue flies with a ſtrong and ſwift wing, ſeeking food for her tender young ones, whileſt another of her owne kinde, from the higheſt top of ſome one Oake or other, cals her, and invites her, that ſhee will entertaine her ſelfe there awhile to eaſe aud refreſh her ſelfe, and only to the end, that the cunning Fowler may come the more conveniently to make his ſhoot, and kill her. The poore harmeleſſe Nightingale, in a wilde and careleſſe faſhion, goes thorow the Woods ſweetly thrilling forth her loue-ſicke complaints, when lo, another Bird of the ſame feather, that is clapt into a Cage, awaking new jealouſies, deceiues her with a falſe call, and brings her into the Net, by meanes whereof, ſhe becomes a perpetuall priſoner during her life.

Neceſsitie makes men bold.

Birds and Beaſts ſeeke to deceiue.

Auianus the Philoſopher tels vs in one of his Fables, that even your Aſſes haue alſo a minde to deceiue, and he maketh mention of one, that had put on a Lyons skinne, to make all the reſt of the beaſts of the Forreſt afraid; who being ſought after by his Maſter, when he ſaw him in that kinde of cloathing, not being able therewith to hide his huge long eares, he preſently knew this his Aſſe, and ſoundly baſted his backe and ſides with a good cudgell, and ſtripping him of his counterfeit skinne, hee remained as very an Aſſe as hee was before.

The tale of an Aſſe, that ſought to deceiue.

Of all creatures living, there is ſcarce any one, but will, for the effecting of his purpoſe, vſe ſome deceit againſt him, who is careleſſe thereof, and thinkes not on it; As is expreſſed in that Impreſſe, of a Snake that lay aſleepe, and a Spider, that came ſecretly downe for to nip him by the head, and ſtrike his poyſon into him, and ſo worke his death; whoſe Motto ſpeakes thus: *No ay prudençia, que reſiſta al engaño.* No wiſdome can withſtand deceit. It is folly for any man to thinke, that a wiſe man can fore-ſee, and prevent thoſe deceits, which like ſo many Traps and Gins, are laid in his way. I was not ſo circumſpect, as I ſhould haue beene, I ſuſpected no trecherie, I received good deeds, I heard good words, I ſaw a man in an honeſt and faſhionable habit, who ſought to giue me good counſell, and ſeemed to favour me, who had put his life in danger, to ſaue mine, who viſited me (as I thought) without any hope of intereſt, or particular profit to himſelfe, not being able to faſten vpon him (ſo vnwilling did he ever ſeeme to receiue any courteſie from me) ſo much as a Cup of cold water. He told me, that he was my Country-man, an *Andaluzian*, borne in the Citie of *Sevill*, a principall Gentleman of the

All vſe deceit.

An Impreſſe of the Snake, and the Spider.

The qualitie of a cunning theefe.

houſe

house of the *Sayauedras*, and one of the noblest, the ancientest, and best qualified of all that Familie; and who, from one of such a qualitie, would haue suspected such deceit? But all were lyes that hee told mee; for hee was of *Valençia*, whose name, for some just causes I conceale; but he spake the Language of *Castile* excellent well, and had the true tone thereof, that it was not possible to discerne him to be other. Hee was a handsome well-fauoured yong man, well spoken, of a faire behaviour, and a fine Companion in his conversation; Who would haue once suspected, that hee should haue prou'd such a Conny-catching Rascall, and that with such ceremonious and feined friendship, he should thus deceiue mee? But all this cunning carriage of his: was but like a Peacocks dressing, making this so faire a show, that therby he might the better deceiue me, and that hee might haue the freer accesse into my Lords house, and into my Chamber, to filch from thence whatsoever he could handsomely finger. I had no mistrust of him in the world, but rather held him so honest a man, that I durst haue pawn'd my life for his truth.

Sayauedra, *a notable theefe.*

Hee came the other day to visit me, and finding that I had altred my habit, and put my selfe into another kinde of fashion of cloathes, differing from my wonted weare, he startled and stood afterwards as one amazed, not knowing what he might thinke of it, or what might be the cause of this change. At last he askt mee the reason of this sudden alteration? I told him, that I had taken his counsell, and that I was resolued to goe to *Siena*, where I should meete with *Pompeyo*, a great and intire friend of mine, and from thence to passe for *Florence*, and so afterwards to visit all *Italy*.

Sayauedra *visits* Guzman, *onely that hee might rob him of that he had.*

When hee heard mee say so, he began to take fresh breath, and seemed to be very glad therof, much commending this my resolution, and altring vvith-all his owne determination: for if his designe vntill then, were onely to seeke out some fit occasion to steale thence an odde sute of cloathes, some trifling Iewels, or some odde pieces of Gold, not worth the talking of; having now heard this newes of my sudden departure, no lesse would now content him, then my whole store. Hee vvas very diligent in obserue how I did make vp my Trunkes, putting his helping hand therevnto. He marked where I had layd a set of Gold Buttons, a chaine, and other Iewels that I had; and aboue three hundred Spanish Pistolets that I carryed along with mee. For my Lord Embassadours house, being I did not now vse to play, but to hoord vp what I got, yeelded mee, in the space of some foure yeares that I serv'd him, good store of money, what in gifts; what for good lucks sake, Gamesters bestowd vpon me, when they had a good hand; what by Cardes, which I was ever ready to furnish them withall, and vvhat vvith other Presents, that now and then came vnlook't for vnto mee.

When I had lockt, and nailed vp my Trunkes, I layd vp the Keyes vpon my Beds-head, whereon *Sayauedra* had set his heart; for then did hee desire nothing more, then to meete with some fit occasion, how he might come to the fingring of them, and finde meanes to falsifie them. And it fell out just, (*a*) as hee would haue it. For, as hee and I were talking of my journey, and telling him that I purposed to send away my Trunkes before, and that I would stay some sixe or seven dayes in *Rome*, to take leaue of my friends, by which time they would be at *Siena* where I should finde them ready for mee, when I came thither; in that very instant there came one of my Lords seruants vnto mee, and told mee, that there were some beneath did inquire for mee, and did much desire to speake with mee. And because my Chamber was out of order, vnswept, and not fit, by reason it was so foule, to receiue any visit, I went downe to see who they were.

(*a*) *The Spanish phrase is*, A que quieres boca, *that is*, Darle todo lo que quiere, y quanto pidiere. Couarr. *Verbo.* Boca.

In the *Interim*, *Sayauedra* had oportunity to take the print of all my keyes in certaine pieces of some Waxe Candles ends that lay about the Chamber, if hee had not purposely brought some along with him in his pocket.

Sayauedras. *craft in couzening* Guzman.

pocket. Thoſe that ſought for mee, were certaine Muleters, or Carriers, which came for my luggage; they came vp, I delivered it vnto them, and they carried it away.

This buſineſſe diſpatcht, my friend and I continued talking together: and becauſe hee did not offer to goe away, I thought hee did it out of courteſie, and the friendſhip that was betweene vs, and that it was out of his loue to keepe mee company, for that little while that I was to ſtay. Whereas indeed he onely ſtayd in Towne, till theſe counterfetted keyes were faſhioned by the Smithes hand, and to make mee to breake my ſleepes, as by and by I ſhall tell yon.

Hee continued his Viſits with mee for three or foure dayes together: and vvhen hee thought hee had made all cock-ſure, and that the Bird could not now eſcape his hand; hee came one evening vnto my Chamber, where hee had not ſate long, but that his face changed colour, and beganne to put on that faigned hiew, which hee was vvilling to giue it, hanging his head in his boſome, making ſhow as if hee had beene taken with a great paine in his head, an extreme Ach in his ſhoulders, a ſtrange kinde of ſowreneſſe or bitterneſſe of his mouth and palate, and aboue all, vvith a wonderfull heavineſſe in his eyes, that hee was ſcarce able to hold them vp. Hee ſeemed to be as it were in a Lethargie, or the like drowzie diſeaſe; complaining, that hee was ſcarce able to ſtand vpon his legges, deſiring mee that I would giue him leaue to goe home to his lodging. I vvas very ſorry, and held it a great vnhappineſſe, that that my Chamber was not fitted for to lodge him, and to giue him that friendly intertainment, as my heart deſired: Intreating him, (when I ſaw hee would needes be gone) that hee would acquaint mee with his lodging, that I might come and viſit him, and ſend him ſome phyſicall curioſities, fit for ſicke folkes, to reliſh his taſte, and comfort his ſtomake, or that I might ſerue him in any thing elſe, wherein I might be vſe-full vnto him. Hee told mee that hee lodged in the houſe of a certaine Gentle-woman, that liu'd very ſecret and private; but in caſe this his ſickneſſe ſhould not ſuddenly leaue him, or that hee ſhould chance to grow worſe and worſe, that then hee would adviſe mee thereof, that I might come and viſit him. And ſo taking his leaue of mee, that very day hee tooke Poſt, and rode towards *Siena*, where hee found his Companions, that went along with the Muleters, that they might ſee where, and to whom theſe Trunkes were conſigned.

Sayauedra *rides Poſt to* Syena, *and finely robs* Guzman *of his Trunkes.*

When hee was come to *Siena*, the people ſeeing a Gentleman come in that good equipage by Poſt, tooke him to be ſome principall *Spaniard*. Hee alighted at the chiefeſt Inne that was in all the Citie, where preſently his Companions came about him, who had there attended his comming, and giuing it out that they were his ſervants,. they waited diligently vpon him.

That very day, as ſoone as hee was arriued, hee ſent one of them to *Pompeyo*, to giue him to vnderſtand, that hee was newly come to Towne. And when my friend had receiued this meſſage, and knew that I vvas in the Towne, hee was ſo over-joyed, that going to put on his Cloake, it was a good while, ere hee could finde the way to vnfold it, and to ſet it right vpon his ſhoulders. And hee himſelfe afterwards told mee, that hee firſt threw it one way, and then another, one while with the wrong ſide out-ward, another with the cape doubled in, and out of order, and in the end, when he could not hit the right, through his too much joy, hee careleſſely flung it onely vpon one ſhoulder, and in this vnmannerly kinde of manner, hee came from home in all haſte, ſtumbling and tripping in the ſtreets, and ſometimes ready to fall vpon his noſe, through his too much haſte, and the longing deſire that he had to ſee mee.

Being

Being come to the Inne, vvhere *Sayauedra* had put on my perſon, hee tooke it very vnkindely, complaining much, that I ſhould make him ſuch a ſtranger, and deale ſo vnfriendly vvith him, as not to alight at his houſe, which I might command as freely as mine owne. Which *Sayauedra* having excuſed as vvell as hee could; they afterwards fell into diſcourſe, talking of his journey, and ſome other things of *Rome*, vntill it vvas night.

At vvhich time *Pompeyo*, for the preſent, taking his leaue of him, that hee might leaue him to his reſt: *Sayauedra* gaue (in his preſence) the key of one of his Trunkes, to one of his ſeruants, ſaying vnto him vvithall; Doe you heare, Sirrha? Goe you along vvith *Señor Pompeyo*, and take mee out ſuch a ſute, which you ſhall finde in ſuch a part, for I vvill put on that to morrow.

They vvent away together, and his ſeruants punctually performed that, vvhich his Maſter had commanded him; vn-cording, in the preſence of *Pompeyo*, the very ſelfeſame Trunke, wherevnto he was directed, and taking forth the fore-ſayd ſute of cloathes, hee lockes mee the Trunke, and putting vp the key in his pocket, hee comes his way. That night *Pompeyo* ſent him a very good ſupper, a neate collation of Comfits, and ſweete meates, and admirable rich Wines: Wherewith when *Sayauedra* and his fellowes had ſupt, and had eate and drunke their fill, they got them to bed, where they ſo ſoundly ſlept, that they did not wake till the next day.

That morning *Pompeyo* came ſomewhat earely to viſit him; but his ſeruants intreated him to hold his Maſter excuſed; for hee had not taken any reſt all that night, and was now newly falne aſleepe. Hee told them, hee was very ſorry that he had ſo ill a night of it; he would not therefore now trouble him, but would goe his way and come anon. But they would by no meanes giue way to that, telling him, that their Maſter would be very angry vvith them, vvhen hee ſhould know that hee had beene there, and that none of them had either ſo much vvit, or manners to tell him of it. Wherevpon, they went preſently vp into his Chamber, and ſignified vnto him, that *Señor Pompeyo* was come to ſee him. Hee was very glad of it, and commanding one of them to ſet ready a Chaire for him, ſent down another to intreat him to come vp.

Pompeyo, as ſoone as hee came in, asked him how hee did, and vvhat vvas the cauſe of his laſt nights indiſpoſition? Hee told him, that for vvant of vſe, hee was ſo weary with riding Poſt, that hee found himſelfe ſomewhat diſtempered, his body being over-heated, and that hee had a purpoſe to be let bloud.

Pompeyo was very earneſt with him, that hee would change his lodging, and take his houſe for his Inne. *Sayauedra* excuſed himſelfe, telling him, that his ſeruants were vnruly and giuen to diſorder, and that hee was reſolued to put them away, and to take new within theſe eight or nine dayes, and that then he would promiſe him to receiue this courteſie at his hands, which hee had ſo kindely offered vnto him: Intreating him in the meane while, that he would doe him the kindneſſe, as to ſend his Trunkes by one of his owne ſeruants, becauſe he had no great truſt in any of his owne; and fearing, that giuing them the Keyes to fetch ſuch things as he needed, they might put ſome trickes vpon him.

Pompeyo liked well of it, and thought that hee did therein very wiſely and diſcreetly, onely hee ſeemed not to be ſo vvell pleaſed, that hee ſhould treat of taking Phyſicke in an Inne. But reſting contented vvith the promiſe that hee had made him, hee performed what hee deſired, and vvas no ſooner come to his lodging, but hee laded certaine Porters with his Trunkes, and ſending one of his ſeruants along with them, hee ſaw them

safely delivered to *Sayauedra*. Hee ſent him that day a very dainty dinner; and thoſe two friends having taken leaue of each other for that night, that they might goe to bed in a good houre, *Sayauedra* and his Companions conveyed ſecretly into another houſe that which they had brought thither, and taking Poſt, departed preſently for *Florence*; whither when they vvere come, they divided the ſpoyle amongſt them.

Sayauedra and his companions Poſt away to Florence, where they divide the Spoyle.

Theſe copartners with *Sayauedra*, where their crafts-Maſters, ſubtill fellowes, and ſtout Rogues; and the principall Plotter and contriver of all theſe pilfring projects, was a *Bolonian* borne, hee was a great Scholler and a very learned Doctor in this kinde of Art; his name was *Alexandro Bentinoglio* the ſonne of a Doctor in that Vniverſitie, who was a rich man, and a great projector, but of no extraordinary Diſcourſe, but one that did build caſtles in the ayre, and frame in his imagination mighty matters, and things of great intertainment.

This man had two ſonnes, in condition quite oppoſite, and contrary one to the other. The elder was called *Vicencio*, an ignorant yong fellow, a ſilly Aſſe, the laughter of the people, vvith vvhom your Noblemen, and Gentlemen made ſport; hee would bolt you out the famouſeſt fooleries that could bee deviſed: One while, hee vvould boaſt his Nobility, another while his Valour; ſometimes hee vvould take vpon him to be a great Muſician, and then falling off from that, hee vvould brag of his Horſemanſhip, and his Poetry; and aboue all, hee vvould profeſſe himſelfe to be the onely *Enamorado*, and perfecteſt Loue-proficient in all the Country. So that of him, it might be ſaid, *Dexalas* (a) *penen*. Suffer ſuch to dye in their folly.

(a) Dexalas penen, *is ſome phraſe tending to that purpoſe, as I turne it, or ſome catch of a Song. I would be glad to be better informed.*

The other was this *Alexander*, a notable thiefe, nimble fingar'd, and of a ſtrong and able body. Who, though hee were well borne, yet was he ill bred, and for want of good education, became an excellent Vagabond, and a notorious Rogue, by keeping of ill company. This mans companions, were other ſuch like ruffianly fellowes as himſelfe. For like will to like; and all ſorts of things haue recourſe to their proper center.

Ill company hurtfull.

Now, becauſe hee was the Ring-leader, and the onely principall man amongſt them, and that did all in all, hee made *Sayauedra* content himſelfe with a little, giuing him ſome, but the worſer ſort of my cloathes. And thinking that he could not remaine there in ſafety, he got him into the *Popes* territories, where his father was *Alcalde*. So that he poſted to *Bologna*, carrying away with him the Buttons, the Iewels, and the Piſtolets, retiring himſelfe home to his fathers houſe. And the reſt of his fellowes, that ſhared with him, fled to *Trent*, as they afterward told mee in *Bologna*, and there they diſperſed themſelues.

When *Pompeyo* returned to viſit mee, not finding my *Statua* there, nor any of his fellowes, he askt my Hoſt of the houſe what was become of them? He told him, that the night before they went away from thence with their Trunkes, but whither they knew not. He tooke this for an ill ſigne; and ſuſpecting what this might chance to proue in the end, vſed great and extraordinary diligence in the ſearch of them; and having notice that they rode Poſt by the way of *Florence*, hee ſent Hue and Cry after them, vvith a vvarrant to apprehend them. But leauing them to this their buſineſſe: let mee returne now vnto my ſelfe, and God grant, that in the meane while, they may haue the good lucke to meete with theſe Theeues, and recover my loſt goods.

Thoſe few dayes that I afterwards ſtayd in *Rome*, I was jocund and merry, and did not ſo much as once dreame of any ſuch roguerie intended againſt mee. And out of a great deſire that I had, to know how my ſicke friend did, whether hee had recovered his health, or were in worſe caſe, then vvhen he

hee left me; I ſtaid foure dayes waytíng for him, but ſeeing he came not at me, nor ſent vnto me, I continued foure dayes longer in Towne, making inquirie after him amongſt ſome of his Country-men, giving them all the markes and ſignes, whereby they might know, or at leaſt gheſſe at the man, but this was to aske for (a) *Entunes* in *Portugall*, or to looke to heare a *Magnificat* at Mattens, or to ſeeke after the man in the Moone, for there was no ſuch kinde of thing to be heard of. All the diligences that I could vſe, were to no purpoſe. I did verily beleeue that he was very ſicke, if not dead. I likewiſe thought with my ſelfe, that ſince he had concealed his lodging from me, that the reaſon thereof was, becauſe he had not a convenient Chamber to receiue the viſits of my friends. I did as much as lay in me to looke him out: but when I ſaw it was all loſt labour, and that I could not poſſibly heare any newes of him, I left a large recommendation of my loue vnto him in my Lords houſe, and ſo taking leaue of my Lord Embaſſadour, I reſolved the nex day following to begin my journey.

Proverb (a) Preguntar por Entunes en Portugal. *Where there is no ſuch thing to be found.*

Guzman *is ſorrie that he cannot ſee* Sayauedra *before his departure.*

My Lord grieued much for my departure, clapt both his hands vpon my ſhoulders, and taking a chaine of Gold from off his necke, which he did vſually weare, and putting it on mine, hee told me, while hee was doing me this honour; *Guzman*, I beſtow this vpon thee, that thou mayſt, as oft as thou look'ſt vpon it, haue me in thy remembrance, as one that wiſhes thee all good. He gaue me alſo, beſides that which I had of mine owne, good ſtore of Crownes, which would ſerue conveniently to defray my charges for ſome reaſonable while very well, and plentifully, that I needed not to want any thing that was needfull and fitting for me.

The Embaſſadours kind vſage of Guzman *at his departure.*

When hee had thus furniſht mee, hee laid his Command vpon mee, that where-ſoever I ſhould hap to be, I ſhould from time to time giue him an account of my health, and how things did ſucceed with me, aſſuring mee, that none ſhould rejoyce more in my well-doing, then himſelfe; hoping, when I had made an end of my travell, to ſee me againe in his houſe, whither I ſhould alwayes be moſt welcome.

Theſe his words and kinde vſage of me, ſavoured of ſo much loue, and the advice and counſell which he gaue me at this my farewell, was ſo ſweet and ſo ſound, and delivered with that tenderneſſe, exhorting me to good and vertuous courſes, that I could no longer hold from bathing my eyes with teares. I kiſt his hand, kneeling on the ground; he beſtowed his bleſſing vpon mee, and with it a good high-way Nag. This done, downe I went, got vp, bid my fellowes farewell, and rode my way, making vſe of this Nagge in all my travell, which did never faile me.

My Lord and his ſervants were ready to melt for the ſorrow they had conceiued of my departure. Hee, becauſe he lou'd me, and ſaw he muſt now loſe me, and would doubtleſſe finde a want of me for ſuch ſervices as I could beſt doe him, and himſelfe tooke moſt content in: And they, becauſe, albeit my actions were ill for my ſelfe, and turned much to mine owne hurt, yet were they never prejudiciall to my fellowes: and when occaſion ſerved (if they had beene put to the tryall) I dare ſweare they would haue hazarded their liues in defence of my perſon, rather then they would haue ſeene mee take any wrong. I was alwayes their good friend, never did them ill offices, told no tales of them, never nouriſht any quarrels amongſt them, never croſt their pretenſions with my Lord, or hindred them in thoſe their ſuites, wherein they were intereſſed, but did further them all that I could; ſo that I was generally well beloved of them all. For by doing them theſe reall courteſies, and in that free and friendly faſhion, I could not but gaine the greater loue thereby, if not profit. For they were reckned of by my Lord but as ſervants; but I was vnto him, as if I had beene his ſonne: So that I receiued from them the commendation of a good brother, and from my Maſter, of a faithfull

How a ſervant ſhould behaue himſelfe, to be belou'd of his fellowes.

ſervant. Inſomuch, that neither my ſervice diſ-merited with my Lord, nor their friendſhip fayled me at my need.

And if that publike fame which was ſpread abroad of me, touching that which ſo vnfortunately befell me in *Fabia's* houſe, had not beene divulged abroad by that Aſpine-leau'd tongue of *Nicoleta*, who to as many goſſips, and friends as ſhe had in *Rome*, babbled forth the jeſt, which was put vpon mee by her Miſtreſſe in the backe Court of her houſe, I had never forſaken that commoditie, which I found in my Lords houſe, nor his Lordſhip haue loſt ſo good a ſervant, who had ſo well and faithfully ſeru'd him. See what miſchiefe a wicked womans tongue can worke; who, without doing her ſelfe any good (playing the tattling huſwife) diſcredited her Maſters houſe, and diſordred ours.

Much miſchiefe in an evill woman tongue.

Let no man truſt a woman with a ſecret, no (if it were poſſible) not the wife of his owne boſome. For vpon every light offence, that ſhe may be revenged of thee, to plucke out one of thy eyes, ſhe will content to loſe both her owne; making of a little bracke a great hole, and working thee much trouble vpon ſmall occaſion.

I went out of *Rome* like a Prince, well intreated, and better provided, having ſtore of Crownes to ſpend abroad, till the durt I had taken ſhould become drie, and be rub'd out. For when ſuch vnluckie chances as theſe doe light vpon vs, there is no ſuch remedie for them, as Time and Travell to weare them out. *Mingo* never went abroad with more contentment, then I did now; I was gallant, rich, out of the gun-ſhot of ill tongues; with a full reſolution, never to returne the ſame man I went forth, but like a new *Prænix*, receiuing freſh life from theſe my old aſhes.

I was now on my way towards my friend *Pompeyo*, who lookt for me every houre, having provided for me a neat lodging, with a handſome bed, and Table, and all other furniture fitting therevnto. I came at laſt to *Siena*, and inquiring after him, they directed me to his houſe; thither I came: I found him within, he received me, I cannot ſay whether more cheerefully, or more heavily, ſometimes ſhewing a joyfull, ſometimes a troubled countenance; not knowing either what to doe, or what to ſay, concerning the forepaſſed ill ſucceſſe of my Trunkes. Hee was inwardly very ſad, as well for the value of that I had loſt, as alſo for the tricke that was put vpon him, and the ill account that he ſhould make me of thoſe my goods, which I had configned vnto him. He ſaid never a word vnto me touching my Trunkes, and would faine haue kept it from mee; but it was not poſſible. For I had purpoſed with my ſelfe, to ſhew all my brauerie the next day, and like the Peacocke, proudly to jet it vp and downe the ſtreets of *Siena*, and for that purpoſe requeſted him to helpe me to my Trunkes, that I might change my cloathes.

Herevpon he was inforced to open all the whole buſineſſe vnto me, putting me in good hope, that there were ſuch diligences vſed, and that good courſe already taken, that he did not doubt but that I ſhould haue all againe, and loſe nothing of that which they had thus cunningly ſtolne from me. I was ſtrooke with this blow to the very heart; and was therevpon ſo ſad, as thou thy ſelfe wouldſt haue beene, hadſt thou beene in my caſe, being thus ſtripped of all that thou hadſt in a ſtrange Countrie, farre from thy friends, and forced to ſeeke new, having but little ſtore of money in thy Purſe, and no more but one ſute of cloathes on thy backe, and two Shirts in thy *Port-manteau*. God deliver vs from the hands of theeues and robbers, and from the frauds and deceits of wicked men. It was now too late to looke after them; the harme was already done, but no remedie to be had. *Que forçoſo lo aueys (a) de beuer, y no lo aueys de verter.* Whether I would or no, I was conſtrained to drinke of this cup; there was no avoyding of it.

proverb
(a) Darſela à beuer. i. dar dis guſto, y dar vn mal trago. Nadie diga. deſta agua no beuere. Couarru. *Verbe* Beuer.

Well, when I ſaw how the world went, and that there was no helpe for it;

I pluckt vp my ſpirits, ſet a good face on the matter, and drew ſtrength out of weakneſſe. For, if I ſhould in publike haue expreſſed my griefe, and made open ſhew thereof, I might, in private mens opinions, beene held baſe-minded, and a man of no metall; and might thereby haue hazarded *Pompeyos* friendſhip. Nor, had I kept never ſuch ſtirre, never ſuch a coyle and adoe about it, ſhould I thereby haue repayred my loſſes, or done my ſelfe any good by it.

Adverſities ſtoutly to be withſtood.

And therefore ſound was that counſell; that we ſhould encounter adverſities with a cheerefull countenance. For thereby our enemies are overcome, and our friends recover breath.

CHAP. IX

Guzman de Alfarache, *not recovering his loſt goods, ſhrewdly complaines of the ſmall puniſhment that is laid vpon theeues. Wherein he delivereth many things worthy the noting.*

THree dayes (according to the common ſaying) I continued booted and ſpurd, expecting what newes I could heare from thoſe, that had theſe theeues in chaſe, and whether they had had the good lucke to finde the track of their footing, and ſo follow them vpon the heate of that ſent, till they had them in view, and ſhould come to overtake them.

While my friend and I were ſitting at table, anon after we had din'de, as we were talking of this miſ-fortune of mine, and the cunning carriage of theſe theeues that had thus rob'd me, I might heare a great trampling of the ſervants of the houſe and ſome others, who making haſte vp the ſtaires, came in and told vs; Wee haue him, wee haue him, the principall thiefe is taken, and the theft confeſt.

This put new courage into me, quickned my bloud, and the tokens of my inward content, ſhewd themſelues in my face. For it is not poſſible, that any mans heart ſhould diſſemble a ſudden joy. Though it ſometimes ſo hapneth, that exceſſe of joy, doth ſuffocate the naturall heat, and depriue it of it's life. You might now haue lighted a Candle at mine eyes, they did ſo ſparkle, and were growne ſo quicke; me thought then I was giuing *Albriçias* to as many as demanded it of me, and that I ranne with open armes to receiue this welcome newes. We roſe vp from the table, (where wee ſate talking before on this buſineſſe) to goe and meet and ſalute this Officer, that had beene imployd in this ſervice, who (as if hee had beene no leſſe affected therewith then my ſelfe) came towards me with his mouth full of joy, and hauing kindely imbraced one another, I askt him how the world went? He told me, it was like to goe well. Then I farther demanded of him, In what manner? Hee replyde, that one of the theeues was taken, the reſt he could not meet with, but that this would diſcover all.

The joy of the heart, cannot but expreſſe it ſelfe in our lookes.

Thou haſt haply obſerved, that when ſtore of water hath beene ſuddenly throwne vpon quicke burning coales, there hath riſen vp at that very inſtant a thicke & ſowltrie hot ſmoake, yeelding almoſt ſuch a ſteame of heate, as the coales themſelues gaue before they were quenched. Even in the like caſe did theſe his words leaue me. For all thoſe manifeſt ſignes of joy, which had before diffuſed themſelues thorow-out my whole body, were quite quenched

What the effects of ſorrow are likened vnto.

with the water of this bad newes, and at that very instant, there was stirred vp in me an infernall smoake of choller, which I had much adoe to suppresse; but because I knew, it would not helpe mee, I dissembled it the best that I could.

Pompeyo call'd for his cloake, & went presently to the Iudge of the Court, to intreat him, that he would vse therein the best diligences he could, (which was no more then was fitting to be done.) But all this did me no good. For, he neither denied the theft, nor confessed that he was in the fault. He said that the others had committed it, and that he was but their servant, and that they had onely bestow'd vpon him one poore suit of cloathes, which he sold and spent partly in *Florence*, and partly vpon the way in his returne to *Siena*.

The condition of wicked people.

And this is the common course of such kinde of wicked people; They farther, and favour each others evill workes and counsels, but vvhen they haue vvrought their purpose, and effected their intent, they forsake one another, leaving every man to shift for himselfe, some going one way, and some another.

Vpon this Confession, (because it was the first theft that ever he had beene taken with, together with that which hee had alledged in his owne defence, and for those other considerations, which offered themselues vnto the Iudge) hee was sentenced to publike shame, and afterwards to remaine a banished man from that Citie for a certaine time.

Now while this businesse vvas a handling, one of *Pompeyos* servants stood diligently wayting there, expecting the issue of this businesse, that hee might come and advise mee thereof. And when hee had his sentence giuen him, as if hee had brought my Trunkes along with him, he came running vp in all haste to my Chamber, laughing all the way as hee came, and as jocund as a Pye, crying out aloud vnto me; O *Señor Guzman*, laugh and be merry; the Thiefe that holpe to rob you is condemned to open shame, I saw him vp on the Asses backe, before I came away: if you will see him, hye you to the window, and looke out quickly, for it cannot be long ere he come. O, how much would I haue giuen, that this Foole, this Block-head, this Coxcombe had beene mine owne servant, and in mine owne house, or in some other place, vvhere I might haue had my will of him, that I might haue pumeld him about the pate, bob'd him about the nose, strooke out the teeth of him, and beaten the jaw-bones of this Asse so sore, that hee should not haue beene able for a moneth after to fall to his feeding. I was mightily out of patience at these his fooliish words. O thou Traytor, (said I to my selfe) seest thou in what poore case I am, and in a manner quite vndone, and doest thou goe about to comfort me with such a poore satisfaction as this? I was ready almost to burst with choller; but even then, when it was in its greatest force, there did offer it selfe vnto my remembrance just such another comfort as this; which was told mee for a truth had passed in *Sevill*; which made my sides to tickle againe with laughing, the very thought whereof, had made me quite forget my former anger. And this it was:

Guzman *telleth a tale of a stout Iudge, as a foolish Attourney.*

A Iudge of that Citie, by especiall Order from the supreme Councell, tooke a delinquent, that had beene a famous falsifier of Deeds, had often counterfeited his Majesties hand, and fained many false Patents, by meanes whereof, hee got a great deale of money in divers parts, and at divers times; for the which hee was by the said Iudge, condemned to be hang'd; notwithstanding that this Offender did alledge for himselfe, that hee was *de Evangelio*, a kinde of Church-man, and therefore did appeale from his Sentence, challenging his priviledge of being tryde by the Ecclesiasticall Power, as by his competent Iudge. But the Iudge being resolu'd, not to reverse his Sētence, being perswaded, that he likewise falsifide these his Orders,

stood

ſtood to his tackling, and haſtened the execution thereof, vvilling him forth-with to bee ledde to the Gallowes, commanding thoſe that were to ſee the ſentence executed, to hang him out of hand; charging them to let this be firſt done *de facto*, and hee would anſwere the matter afterwards as well as he might.

The Eccleſiaſticall Ordinarie, was not in the meane while wanting on his part, vſing all the power that hee had, to ſaue this man from death, aggravating and heaping his Cenſures vpon the Iudge, threatning him, that in caſe he proceeded therein, that there ſhould *Excommunications* goe out, and that in the Churches there ſhould bee *Ceſſatio à Diuinis*. But being not able there-with, nor all that hee could doe, to hinder the Sentence; the Delinquent was brought to the Gallowes, and when hee was vp vpon the Ladder, and had the Rope about his necke, there came a certaine Notary to the foote of the Ladder, who had ſollicited his buſineſſe, and laying his hand vpon his breſt, ſaid vnto him;

Sir, you ſee, all poſsible diligence hath beene vſed, and not any one eſſentiall thing left out, that might make for you; but this (you ſee) will not hold water nor doe vs that good wee thought it would haue done; For, as you may perceiue, the Iudge (out of a wilfull humour) hath proceeded *de facto* with you. But I vow and ſweare vnto you (by that my Place and Credit, which I hold in the world) that hee hath done you therein a moſt notorious wrong, and contrary to all Law and Iuſtice; but ſeeing it cannot now bee otherwiſe, and that for the preſent there is no helpe for it, I ſhall wiſh you, Sir, to arme your ſelfe with patience, and to take your hanging quietly: And put your truſt in mee: for I will ſtay with you to the laſt, I will not leaue you till I ſee you hang'd. And leaue it to mee, to right the wrong he hath done you.

Conſider now, I pray, and tell me, what comfort can it bee to thoſe men that are to ſuffer death, to heare ſuch idle and fooliſh words as theſe to come from a mans mouth? What pleaſure can that miſerable wretch, that is forthwith to bee hanged, take, that hee hath left a good Sollicitour behinde him, to follow his buſineſſe, vvhen hee is dead and gone? Mee thinkes, this poore Clyent that ſuffered, might very well haue ſaid to his Attourney, I ſhould like it much better (Sir) that you would come vp heere and take my place, and giue me leaue to goe and follow mine owne buſineſſe.

To ſuch a one as I, who vvas rob'd of all that I had, and left ſo poore as I vvas, what credit or comfort could I take in it, to ſee a Thiefe ride vpon an Aſſe, to haue his hands bound, and his backe whipt, and to bee put to this open ſhame? Will his diſgrace doe mee any honour? Or vvill the repeating either of the cauſe, or his puniſhment, procure mee meanes to liue, or furniſh mee with thoſe neceſſaries that I vvant? I got mee out of that, into another Chamber, thinking vpon the ignorance of theſe men, and the loſſe that I had ſuſtained by thoſe that rob'd mee; for that vvas the thorne that did ſo ſorely pricke and grieue mee. And as I was thus diſcourſing with my ſelfe of divers and ſundry things, one vvhile of this, another while of that: And amongſt many other things, that I went examining with my ſelfe, one (amongſt the reſt) vvas: Of what ſmall importance, and how light were theſe kinde of puniſhments! For what ſhame can either bee put into, or taken from a Thiefe, who hath no ſhame at all, nor makes any reckoning of it? And who, before that hee begins to play the thiefe, doth reſolue with himſelfe to receiue that puniſhment for his theft, wherevnto hee ſhall bee condemned, and ſhall (by the Lawes of the Land) bee inflicted vpon him? A thiefe (forſooth) ſhall robbe a private houſe; and all his puniſhment muſt be, to walke his publike Stations vp and downe the Towne. A pretty piece of Iuſtice. For mine owne part, I haue no great

Theeues know not what ſhame is.

great ſtore of wit, and leſſe judgement, and therefore I know not well what to ſay againſt thoſe Lawes; which before they were made, I make no queſtion, but they were well weighed and thought vpon; and with ſound and mature counſell ratified and confirmed. And that before their publication, they were throughly ſcann'd, aud approved by the generall opinion of thoſe, that were learned in the Lawes; yet notwithſtanding it will not ſinke into my head, that this is a ſufficient puniſhment for a Thiefe to leade him onely through the Citie, for to doe him ſhame, by making him a publike ſpectacle to the people, or to baniſh him from thence. But it ſeemeth vnto mee, to bee rather *præmium*, then *pœna*, a reward, then a puniſhment. For thereby, in my judgement, they doe nothing elſe, but ſecretly ſay vnto him; My friend, you haue hitherto made your benefit of our goods, and haue made your ſelfe merry at our coſt. You ſhall now doe well to get your living elſe-where, I pray therefore get you gone, leaue off to doe vs any more harme, and goe robbe ſome other of our neighbours. I cannot bee perſwaded, that this miſchiefe lyes in the Lawes, but in thoſe that execute them; for that they are either ill vnderſtood, or not well executed.

To carry a Felon through a Citie, riding on an Aſſe, and to whip him, and baniſh him the Towne, is no fit puniſhment for him, but rather an incouragement to returne to his former roguery.

A Iudge ought to vnderſtand and know, as well the man as the matter for which hee condemneth him. For baniſhments were not made for theeues that were ſtrangers, but for the Citizens of the ſaid Citie, the naturall Inhabitants, and ſuch as were noble, and well borne, whoſe perſons vvere not to ſuffer any publike puniſhment, nor affronts. And to the end that the faults which they committed, ſhould not bee exempted from puniſhment, therefore your Divine Lawes did ordaine theſe your baniſhments, which without doubt, was the greateſt puniſhment of all other, that could bee inflicted vpon ſuch kinde of perſons. For thereby they are inforced to forgoe their friends, their Parents, their Kinsfolke, their Houſes, their Lands, their ancient acquaintance, their Wiues, and their Children, their pleaſures, and delights, and their buſineſſes both private, and publike; being to goe, they know not themſelues whither, and to liue and converſe with they know not whom. Which was certainely a great puniſhment, and no leſſe then death it ſelfe.

Wherefore baniſhment was firſt invented.

And it was the permiſsion of Heaven, and will of God, that he that made this Law, and was the firſt Inventer thereof, ſhould be paid home with the ſame puniſhment that hee had ordained for others, beeing baniſhed himſelfe by his owne Countrymen the *Athenians*. Many were much grieved thereat, and indured a great deale of ſorrow, accompanied with infinit inconveniences, and perill of their perſons; and many of them likewiſe did take it no leſſe heavily, then if they had ſuffered the bitter pangs of death.

The firſt inuenter of baniſhment, baniſhed himſelfe.

It is reported of *Demoſthenes*, that famous Grecian Orator, and Prince of Eloquence, being baniſhed by his Citizens, left his Country like a man in deſperation, ſhedding many a ſorrowfull teare; and the more in regard that his fellow Citizens had ſo cruelly proceeded againſt him, conſidering that hee had alwayes protected, favoured, and defended them, both with his head, and his hand; his wit, and his ſtrength; and therefore he did the more reſent it, making theſe his troubles and afflictions to ſeeme the more intolerable to be indured.

Demoſthenes *baniſhed to his great griefe.*

And as hee was wandring abroad in the world, it was his hap to come to a place, where hee lighted by chance vpon ſome of the greateſt and mortalleſt enemies that hee had: Who then made no other reckoning vvith himſelfe, but that they would ſurely kill him; but they did not onely giue him his life, and pardon all former injuries, but ſeeing him in this miſerable and afflicted ſtate, taking pittie of him, they comforted him the beſt they could,

Demoſthenes *cheriſhed by his enemies.*

could, treating him with all courteſie and kindeneſſe, and furniſhing him with ſuch things as were neceſſarie for him in this his baniſhment. Which was, as it were, a throwing of oyle into the flame, and the meanes of augmenting his ſorrow, to ſee that hee ſhould bee more kindely vſed by his enemies, then his friends, as did plainely appeare, when beeing comforted by them in this his baniſhment, he returned them this anſwere:

How would you haue mee to carry my ſelfe, how beare my baniſhment with patience; how not complaine of my hard fortune, having ſo great cauſe as I haue to bemone my mis-hap? Being that I am baniſhed from that Citie, wherein I was borne and bred, and am forced by you to ſeeke my fortune in forraine Countreys, where I meet with ſuch enemies, that I doubt to finde (and I ſhall account it a great happineſſe vnto me, that I haue made ſo good a purchaſe) the like friends elſe-where. They likewiſe baniſhed *Themiſtocles*, who being graced more in *Perſia*, then in *Greece*, told ſome private friends of his; *Perijſſemus, ſi non perijſſemus*. We had beene vndone, if wee had not beene vndone.

Demoſthenes *his anſwere to his friends.*

Themiſtocles *baniſhed, and his ſaying.*

The Romans baniſhed *Cicero*, induced therevnto by his enemie *Clodius*, anon after that he had freed his Countrie from ruine. They did likewiſe baniſh *Publius Rutillius*, who was ſo valiant, and of that ſtoutneſſe of courage, that afterwards, when thoſe of *Syllas* faction (vvho were the cauſe of his exile) would haue reverſed his baniſhment, he would not accept of this their faire offer, but ſaid; I will make them bluſh for ſhame, by neglecting this their kindeneſſe; for by this meanes, they ſhall come to ſee their owne errour, and to acknowldge the wrong they haue done me, by this their vnjuſt perſecution. They alſo baniſhed *Scipio Naſica*, in requitall of thoſe benefits and good ſervices that he had done them, in delivering them from the tyranny of the *Gracchi*. *Hannibal* the *Carthaginian* dy'de in Exile. *Camillus* the Roman, a man of that worth and valour, that it was ſaid of him, that hee was a ſecond Founder of *Rome*, for that hee had freed it from it's enemies, when the whole State lay at ſtake to be wonne or loſt; yet notwithſtanding this meritorious Act of his, he was baniſhed his Country.

Cicero *baniſhed*

Publius Rutilius *baniſhed. He is recalled, but will not come home.*

Scipio *baniſhed.*

Camillus *baniſhed.*

The Lacedemonians baniſhed their *Licurgus*, though a graue and wiſe man; and one that had made them very wholſome Lawes for the good of that Common-wealth. Nor did they reſt contented with this wrong they had already done him, but they threw ſtones at him, and ſtrooke out one of his eyes. The Athenians very impudently and vnjuſtly baniſhed their *Solon*, and confined him to the Iland of *Cyprus*; as they did likewiſe their great Captaine *Thraſibulus*. Theſe, and infinite other the like were baniſhed; and anciently they inflicted this puniſhment vpon the nobleſt and principalleſt perſons, as one of the greateſt and grievouſeſt puniſhments which they could impoſe vpon them.

Licurgus *baniſhed; beaten out with ſtones, and his eye ſtrooken out.*

Solon *and* Thraſibulus *baniſhed.*

I my ſelfe haue knowne a thiefe, who becauſe he was vnder yeares, and not capable of greater puniſhment, having beene often-times baniſhed, but never went forth of his Countrie to finiſh this his Exile, and his thefts likewiſe being of no higher nature then matter of victuals, for his greater puniſhment, the Iuſtice commanded, that he ſhould haue a coller of Iron clapt cloſe about his necke, which ſhould bee riveted ſo faſt with an Iron pinne, that it ſhould not poſsibly be taken off, hanging thereat a little Bell, to the end that the ringing thereof, as oft as he did ſtirre or moue, might giue the people warning to take heed of him. This may truly be called a juſt, and a witty-conceited puniſhment.

A juſt puniſhment inflicted on a little young thiefe.

Now, by this that hath beene ſaid, thou maiſt know how grievous a puniſhment baniſhment is to the good, and how ridiculous a thing to the bad: To whom all the world is their common Countrie; and who account that to be their Countrie, where they can beſt filch and ſteale. For whereſoever a thiefe

thiefe comes, he enters into that place, as a new Commer, and vnknowne; Which is no ſmall advantage for him, for the better exerciſing of his Office, the people not thinking any harme of him, nor ſuſpecting him to be ſuch a one as he is. I know not, how they vnderſtand this, who doe puniſh them thus. It were the leſſer evill of the two, to let them goe among the people with the fore-ſaid Coller and Bell, that men might beware of them; and not to ſend one thus abroad, where he is vnknowne, with letters as it were of credence, to robbe all the world. No, no, this is no good courſe, it is not profitable for the Common-wealth, nor is their any pollicie at all in it, to doe theeues ſo great a favour. But for every light theft, it is fit they ſhould be ſoundly puniſhed: As to condemne them to the Gallies, to confine them to ſome Garriſon Townes, and there to ſerue, and to inflict other the like puniſhments vpon them for longer or leſſer time, according to the nature and qualitie of the offence. And in caſe they ſhall be of an inferiour kinde, and not deſerving the weight of your heavieſt ſentence, I would haue them branded, as the vſe is in other Countries, with a hot Iron in the ſhoulder, that may leaue the print of the marke behinde; whereby, vpon the ſecond theft they be taken with, it will plainely appeare, what lewd livers they be. By this courſe they beare not onely the marke about them, but the cauſe thereof. This will be accuſation enough, to giue in evidence againſt them, both what they are, as alſo their courſe of life. And I would haue this re-incidencie and relapſe of theirs to be ſeverely puniſhed. And many (I make no queſtion,) this courſe being taken and truely executed, will for feare, turne over a new leafe, and that this their firſt correction will keepe them in a great deale the more awe, leſt the continuance of their lewd courſes, might chance to bring them to the Gallowes. This and only this (I ſay) is juſtice; all the reſt is *Fruta regalada*, delicious Fruits, and mini[illegible]y occaſion to your *Eſcriuanos*, to be as arrant theeues as they; and I [illegible] whether I may be ſo bold to ſay, that they are willing to ſet them[illegible]t they may goe abroad, and ſteale afreſh, whereby they may afterw[illegible]e occaſion to take that from them, which they haue ſtolne: and ſo of the two, proue the greater theeues. But I will hold my peace, and harpe no more vpon that ſtring. For I am a man, and may erre, and I haue beene already vnder their hands, and haue ſuffered too much through their falſe dealing, and I know not whether I may chance to come againe vnder their laſh, and then they will vſe their pleaſure vpon me, and revenge themſelnes on me without controlement: for I know not who can hinder them, when they are diſpoſed to worke their will. My thiefe was freed, he had confeſt, who were the principall Offenders, and which way they went; for which cauſe, as alſo that he had rounded the Citie on an Aſſe, and had beene put to open ſhame, he was ſet at libertie; leaving mee (poore man) in the wretched priſon of povertie: Where I muſt now take my leaue of you, and bid you all Good night. To morrow morning if you be deſirous of the reſt, and would faine know, what in the end was the iſſue of this buſineſſe; you ſhall haue it with all my heart, which I ſhall truly and faithfully deliver vnto you.

FINIS.

THE ROGVE, OR THE SECOND PART OF THE LIFE OF *GVZMAN* DE *ALFARACH.*

The Second Booke.

Wherein *Guzman de Alfarach*, treateth of that which befell him in *Ftalie*, till hee returned into *Spaine*.

CHAPTER. I.

Guzman de Alfarache, *leaues* Siena, *and goes for* Florence. *Hee meetes with* Sayauedra, *whom hee takes into his seruice. And before he comes to* Florence, *hee recounts vnto him on the way, many admirable things concerning that Citie. And when hee was arriued there, he shewes him all, that was worth the seeing.*

Phocion, *and his poverty,*

Dionysius *the Tyrant.*

PHOCION (a famous Philosopher in his time) was so poore, that though hee tooke a great deale of paines, hee could hardly get wherewithall to hold life and soule together. Wherevpon, as oft as any in the presence of *Dionysius* the Tyrant, and his mortall enemy, [redacted] of himselfe, or of the manner and course of his life, he made a scoffe and a jest both at it, and him, flouting at his poverty and deriding his miserie, thinking with himselfe, that hee could not do him any greater disgrace, nor injure him more, then to mocke at the meanenes of his fortunes. As if he would haue inferred thervpon, that if he had beene a man of that great learning, as the world held him to be, he might therewith haue gained bread to put in his mouth, and not needed to liue in that want, as now hee did.

Phocions censure of Dionysius.

When this came to the Philosophers eare, hee vvas not onely not grieved thereat, but laughing at this his folly, hee answered him, that reported this vnto him; It is true sir, that *Dionysius* sayes of mee in terming mee poore, for I am truly so; but, I must tell you withall, that hee is much poorer, then my selfe, and hath a great deale more reason to be asham'd of himselfe, if hee shall but consider his owne wretched estate and condition. For though I lacke money, I want not friends: I abound in the more, and faile in the lesse. But as for him, though hee be rich in money, he is poore of friends. For I know not any one that he hath. This Philosopher could not satisfie himselfe better, nor with a righter or fuller blow hit out his eyes, then by stiling him, *hominem sine amicis*: A man that hath not so much as one friend in the world, that hee could truly say, was his friend. And albeit it oftentimes so falleth out, that they are purchased with money, and that this is a principall meanes to winne, and wedge them vnto vs, yet this Tyrant had never yet the wit either to get or keepe them. And it is no wonder, that hee should, of all other, want them. For he, that sayes *friend*, sayes (in that one word) *Goodnesse* and *Vertue*; comprehending in that all the good, that speech or thought, can reach vnto. Whosoever therefore shall desire to conserue friendship, and to continue in his friends loue, and that the bond of amitie be not broken betweene them, must haue a care, that his workes correspond with his words. But *Dionysius*, being tyrannie it selfe, and of too ill a digestion to keepe friendship long, and his conversation being worse then his concoction; and for that friends are not so much gotten out of the greatnesse of our fortune, as our vertue; wanting that, he wanted them.

Friends are the greatest treasure

How friends are often got, & kept.

He that hath friends, hath all things.

For mine owne part, ever since I had the vse of reason, and knew what discretion was, I made it my chiefest studie, to get mee friends, though at never so deare a rate, thinking no cost too much, to purchase so great a treasure. They seeming vnto mee (as indeed they are) our greatest helpes and comfort, as well in prosperous, as adverse fortune. Who doth enjoy the content of contents, but he that hath true friends? What doth so much lengthen and preserue our peace, our life, our honour, and our wealth, as to see our friends to joy with vs in our prosperity? And in adversitie, from whom, but from them, can wee finde any refuge, kindenesse, comfort, helpe, fellow-feeling of our miseries, as if they were thir owne? A wise man, ought to want all whatsoever goods, rather then good friends. For they are better then our neerest kinsmen, or our owne naturall brothers.

Friends better then kinsfolke or brothers.

Of the qualities, and conditions of friendship, many haue spoken much, (and one day, God willing wee shall say something thereof:) but in my opinion, where friendship is professed, there must be all true and plaine dealing, and such a faire and even carriage, that it neither leane to alteration, nor giue any offence, nor cause any trouble, nor to adventure (through our rash and inconsiderate actions) the loosing of a friend. Two friends ought so to loue one another, as each of them doth severally loue himselfe. For that I, and my friend, are as it were all one. And as you see, how quick-silver dealeth with gold, how close it adheres vnto it, how it workes it selfe into the very entrailes and bowels of it, and being two diuers metrals, are so incorporated, that they become but one masse or lumpe, nothing in the world being able to sunder and divide them but the pure fire of the furnace, wherein the quick-silver is consumed: So a true friend, who is now become another mans selfe, and by an intermixture of their hearts and mindes made as it were one selfe-same thing, nothing ought, nor can indeed dissolue this vnion, but death, which is the Chrysoll, wherein wee must at last be all melted one after another.

True friends what they are like.

Men ought to make the same choise of their friends, as they doe of good bookes. For their happinesse consists not neither in the greatnesse of their number, nor the curiousnesse of their binding, but rather to haue a few, and those

How to make choise of our friends.

thoſe good and approued Authors. For oftentimes, it falleth out, that many friends are rather a hinderance, then a helpe to true friendſhip: For he is a friend to none, that is a friend to all. Nor are we to chooſe a friend for our entertainment only, and merrily to ſpend the time withall, but to make choiſe of ſuch a one, as may benefit both our ſoule, and our bodie: one that without reſpect of humane intereſt, will adviſe him to obſerue the divine precepts. Not only to repreſent them vnto him, but to ſpeake to the purpoſe, to admoniſh him to the obſervation of them, and to inſtruct him in the true knowledge of them. And if he be called a true friend, who meerely out of friendſhip, tells his friend the naked truth without masking or diſguiſing it, not as to a third perſon, but as to one, that is properly his owne, and as freely as if he ſhould treat of any thing belonging to himſelfe, or that he himſelfe would deſire, his friend ſhould ſay the ſame to him, on the ſame occaſion, of which ſort of friends, that carrie that ſinceritie and plaineneſſe with them, few are now a-dayes to be found, in whom a man may haue that aſſured confidence, and entire ſatisfaction.

Then queſtionleſſe (and that with very good reaſon) a good booke is a good friend; nay I dare boldly ſay, there cannot be a better. For from thence, we may draw that *vtile & neceſſarium*, that good & neceſſarie counſell, which we ſtand in need of, without incurring the ſhame, of that vaine and idle humour, which is too common now a-dayes, to be rather content to continue ſtill in ignorance, then by asking the queſtion, to ſeeme to doubt of any thing. But to bookes, we may boldly put the queſtion, and never need to be afraid, that they will bewray our ignorance: And beſides, we ſhall receiue this ſatisfaction from them, that they will faithfully, without flatterie, deliver vs their opinion. And this one advantage (and it is a notable one) *bookes* haue of *friends*: That our friends, dare not alwayes tell vs what they thinke, and know; for feare of particular intereſt, or out of tenderneſſe to offend (as we ſhall by and by briefly tell you) their friends. So ſoft a hand hath *Loue*, when it comes to touch, where it loues. Whereas on the contrary, the counſell that is giuen thee in bookes, is downe-right and plaine, and ſtands before thee ſtarke-naked, as be-ſtript of all manner of vice. And therefore (theſe things conſidered) it hath ever beene held one of the hardeſt and difficulteſt things in the world, to find out a true and faithfull friend.

Bookes, true friends.

Of which ſort, many are ſpoken of in ancient ſtories, and we finde a great number of them recorded of old, and painted forth vnto vs in your feigned fables; but that there either now are, or haue beene ſuch heretofore as are there decyphered vnto vs, I doubt it very much, at leaſt I am fully perſwaded, they were very rare and few. One only friend haue I found to be true, and is of the ſame nature and condition, as we are. And this friend of ours, is the beſt, the bountifulleſt, the trueſt, and the faithfulleſt of all other; for this is never wanting to it's friend, but continues firme and conſtant for ever, nor is at any time weary of giuing: And this good friend of ours, (that I may not hold you any longer in ſuſpence) is the *Earth*.

One only friend. And what that friend is.

This affords vs pretious ſtones, gold, ſilver, & divers other mettals, whereof we ſtand in need, and ſo earneſtly thirſt after. It bringeth forth graſſe, and all ſorts of herbes, wherewith are not only fed our flocks of ſheep, our cattell, and other beaſts for the vſe & ſervice of man, but thoſe medicinable ſimples, which conſerue our health, free vs from diſeaſes, and if we fall into ſickneſſe, ſet vs vpright againe, preſeruing this life of ours, in a ſound and perfect ſtate of health. It yeeldeth vs all ſorts of fruits, that are either ſavorie to the taſte, or nouriſhable to the body. It giues vs wooll, and flax, and by conſequence, all kinde of woven ſtuffes, wherewith we cloath, and adorne, this naked fleſh of ours. It opens it's own veines of it's own accord, whileſt frō it's full breſts, ſprout forth thoſe ſweet and delicate waters, which we drinke; thoſe brookes

A commendation of the Earth, & it's faithfull loue, and true friendſhip.

and rivers, which get the fields with childe, and make them fruitfull, and not only that, but doth facilitate commerce, and make an easie way for trafficke, bringing the strangest and remotest parts of the world to shake hands, and to communicate their commodities one with another, and to liue in a league of loue and friendship together. Nay more, it is so good, and so sweet a friend, that it suffereth, and willingly consenteth to all that we will our selues. Be shee vvell or ill vsed by vs, all is one to her, so as we be pleased. Shee is like a sheepe, from whom you shall heare no other language, but *omnia bene*: All is well. Leade her forth to feed, or bring her to the waters to drinke; shut, and pen her vp, or let her loose; take her lambkin from her, her milke, her wooll, nay her very life, to all she alwayes answers *bien*: all is well. And all that *bien*, or good that we haue on earth, the *Earth* giues it vs. And for an vpshot of all, when we are now dead, and lye stinking aboue ground, when there is neither wife, father, sonne, kinsman, nor friend, that will abide and endure our companie any longer, but doe all of them vtterly forsake vs, and flie from vs; then, even then, doth not shee refuse vs, but hugges vs, and makes much of vs, and opening her owne wombe, takes vs in vnto her, where vve quietly lye, as it were *in deposito*, till she render afterwards a faithfull account of what she hath receiued, and delivers vs vp to a new and eternall life. And amongst many her other excellencies, one of the worthiest things in her, and deserving most commendation, is; That shee doing so much for vs, as shee doth, and not so continually and without ceasing, being so generous, and so franke-hearted, that shee is never tyred out, never growes weary, yet doth shee not looke for any requitall, shee neither askes, nor expects any returne of kindnesse, nor doth shee talke and tell of it, nor twit thee in the teeth vvith it; vvhich some kinde of friends, more vsually, then commendably, doe.

Amongst so many friends, as I had, and did daily converse withall, I found very few, who had not an eye to the north-starre of their owne proper interest, and shap't their course by the Compasse of their owne private ends; having onely a desire to deceiue, not having any respect at all to the friendship they profest, being devoyde of all loue, truth, and shame: I was of an easie & tractable nature, my condition was facile and apt to be mis-led, their tongue vvas all honie, but their heart vvas very gall it selfe: vvhose bitternesse, I had too often tasted to my cost.

Considering therefore the falshood that now a-dayes is vsed in friendship, and mens craftie and subtle carriage, vve are not so much to vvonder that vve are; as that vve are not deceiued. For I finde them, as liberall in promising, as niggardly in performing; as facile in their vvords, as difficile in their deeds. There are now no more *Pilades*, nor *Orestes*; they are dead and gone; and with them, almost the remembrance, that there were ever any such kinde of men. I onely speake this for my *Pompeyos* sake; whom I therefore condemne the more, for that I lou'd him more then any other, and tooke him to be my especiall friend. For, most of my friends, I gained by my words, but this man, I presum'd I had purchast by my deeds. When I was in my prosperitie, I had many friends, all men did desire my loue, made much of me, feasted me, and did offer their service vnto me: But my moneys fayling, they also fayled; so that their friendship, and my money had an end at once.

The greatest miserie that can befall man in this life.

And as there is no misfortune, that toucheth vs so neere, as to call to minde the happy estate, wherein heretofore we did liue; so there is not any sorrow, that equals that, of being forsaken by those friends, whose loue and friendship we did ever desire to conserue. That little wealth that I had, was stolne from me, vvhich vvas my vndoing. I continued some dayes (though but a few) in my friends house, howbeit he thought them too many; in which short time, he fell off from me by degrees, by a little & a little vnwedging himselfe from mee, and vnlooſing those knots, vvhich had knit vs in friendship together;

finding

finding at laſt, that I had but a ſlipperie eele in my hand, who when I thought I had ſureſt hold of him, ſlipt when he ſaw his time from me, leauing my hand empty. He was a *Cordoueſe*, in the freeneſſe of his offers; and would ſay vnto mee after that wee had dined; Sir, is there any thing elſe, that you would be pleaſed to command? If there be, I pray Sir make as bold of any thing this houſe affords, as if it were your owne: But theſe were but generall words, and matter of complement; for he went not vpon certainties, nor promiſed me any thing, that I might truſt vnto, but did rather ſeeme to proffer this his kindneſſe doubtfully and fearefully, leſt I might chance to take him at his word. And that little courteſie, which he ſhewed me, was not ſo much out of any hearty good will, that he had to doe it, as for feare leſt I ſhould ſeeke to recover my loſt goods of him, by courſe of law.

A feigned friend compared to an Eele.

I read his thoughts in his lookes: And as mine were alwayes noble, ſo on the contrary, his were baſe and vile. And as oft as he ſpake of my loſſe, if he vſed any complement with me, it was all diſſimulation, and counterfeit ſtuffe. Well, whatſoever it were, either better or worſe, I was much offended at it, and thought that he did me therein a great deale of wrong, and did ſeriouſly reſent this his double dealing, and theſe faire but falſe ſhowes of his loue. But he, on the other ſide, did as earneſtly perſiſt in the purſuit of his ſimulations, as if he had meant nothing leſſe, then to play vpon me, and abuſe me; or as if they had ſome ground of truth with them: And becauſe I ſtoutly ſtood to it, and bore out this buſineſſe as well as I could, that he might not perceiue any dejectedneſſe in me, he tooke heart thereupon, and made ſleight of it, as a matter of little, or no importance. For the loſſe was mine, and not his; and therefore he made the leſſe reckoning of it.

Wherefore, that I might not giue him farther trouble, perceiuing how much perplexed he was, and how willing to be rid of me, I reſolued with my ſelfe to free him of that feare, and to goe for *Florence*. I imparted this my purpoſe vnto him, telling him, that I much deſired to ſee that Citie, for the great commendation, that I had heard of it, and thoſe famous ſights that were there to be ſeene. And becauſe this my determination ſuted with his deſire, he tooke hold on this occaſion, relating vnto me many memorable things, worthy my ſight, wherewith my will was the more inflamed, and the deſire which I had to ſee it, much increaſed. But he did not doe this ſo much, to commend it vnto me, or out of any good deſire, that he had, that I ſhould ſee it, but onely that he might ſee me no more in his houſe; & for that he is an vnwelcome (*a*) gueſt, that is a mans gueſt againſt his will. After that I had thus broken my minde vnto him, he began to blow the winde a-freſh of his kind vſage of me, that he might oblige me thereby to get me the ſooner out of his houſe, and to depart from thence peaceably and quietly; for he was not a little afraid of mee. Hee then ſignified vnto mee, how ſorry he was that I would needs be gone; but vſed no intreaties, nor any the leaſt reſiſtance, to haue me to ſtay. He demanded of me, when I was minded to begin my journey, but never asked, what I wanted; which hee might haue done out of good manners, though he had no meaning to pleaſure me. Which proffer, had he made it me, it ſhould not haue beene performed by him ſo much out of complement and ceremonie, as that he might thereby learne, how long, or how little a while I meant to ſtay with him, not knowing as yet the houre, when I meant to be gone. It is an eaſie (*b*) thing, to ſee; more eaſie, to ſpeake; but it is a hard thing to fore-ſee. For all that ſee, doe not know; and all that ſpeake doe not doe. And for that he now ſaw, that he ſhould haue no farther need of me, for that I like a foole, told him ere I was aware, that I was not minded to reture any more to *Rome*, he began to caſt with himſelfe, What good can this cocks-combe doe me now? or of what vſe and profit will this foole be vnto me hereafter? And ſo from that time forward, he vſed me accordingly, which was no worſe, then

Proverb.
(*a*) Es triſte hueſped, el de por fuerça.

Proverb.
(*b*) Facil coſa es, el ver; y mas lo es, el hablar; pero muy dificultoſo el proveer. -No conocen todos los, que miran, ni los que hablan, hazen.

Many make reckning of their friend, no longer then they haue need of him. And when he can ſerue his turne no longer, hee turnes him off.

mine owne indiſcretion deſerued. Then did I learne to my coſt, how a man may come to know a generous and noble minde; which is ſeene in nothing more, then in a thankfull acknowledgment of benefits already receiued.

In this alteration of fortune, there were ſet before mine eyes a thouſand dangers, that I never dream't of. But becauſe I had as yet ſo much ſpirit left me, as was able to put me forward, I was not vtterly diſmaid, nor quite diſheartned. I ſtudied to forget that, which I could not helpe; making my meanes, the thinking on my journey. And becauſe noveltie, and things of a ſtrange nature, doe draw the mindes of men after them, out of the deſire that they haue to know them, I made all the haſte I could to get me gone from *Siena*, as well out of this reſpect, as alſo that I might leaue *Pompeyo* well pleaſed therewith; who, I knew, would never thinke himſelfe well at eaſe, till he were well eaſed of me. For albeit men commonly ſay to their gueſts; I pray fall to your meat, and be merry, for I aſſure you, you are heartily welcome; yet whether you be merry, or not merry, welcome, or not welcome, they thinke you are bound vnto them for a meales meat, and put every morſell to account, that goes downe thy throat.

This hoggiſhneſſe of his, this his vncivill carriage, this diſſembled care of his, and this his great feare that he had, that I would continue longer with him, did much trouble me. Well, I tooke my leaue of him; and becauſe I was ſtill the ſame man, as I was wont to be, as alſo in regard of that loue and friendſhip, which I truly bore vnto him, at the time of this our departure each from other, I did ſo grieue thereat, that I was not able to ſpeake a word, or not ſo much as to bid him, farewell; yet could not this my inward ſorrow, draw ſo much as one teare into his eyes, or to make any the leaſt ſhow of griefe. And ſo all alone, I ſet forward on my journey, but more then well accõpanied with a world of melancholy thoughts, nor ſlightly attended by a multitude of cares, wherewith I was ſo over-laden, that my horſe was ready to ſinke vnder me, as vnable to beare ſo great a burthen. And therefore I rode plotting and deviſing with my ſelfe, how I might make them lighter, and ſo eaſe both my ſelfe and my horſe of them.

Guzman *leaues* Siena, *and goes to* Florence.

I had not gone thus muſing many miles, but it was my hap to light on *Sayavedra*, who had left *Siena* to comply with his baniſhment. Whom I no ſooner ſaw, but my kinde heart began to melt, and I could not chooſe but take compaſſion of him, and withall I muſt needs ſalute him; placing my eyes, not vpon the hurt, which he had done me, but on the harme, from which he once had freed mee. Eſteeming more of that kindneſſe I then receiued from him, then of all that, that he had rob'd me of. And hee is a bad pay-maſter, and doth ill deſerue a courteſie, who doth not with advantage requite a receiued kindnes. Beſides; Liberalitie ſuppoſeth a generous and noble ſpirit, and is of that high eſteeme, for that it is originally deſcended frõ heaven, that it is alwayes found in thoſe mindes, that are deſtinated therevnto. I could not for my life refraine from ſpeaking lovingly vnto him, nor he abſtaine from receiuing mee with teares, which guttring downe his cheekes, dropt downe vpon my feete, as he bowed himſelfe to kiſſe my ſtirrop, whereof he taking faſt hold, fell downe on his knees, craving pardon for this his error, humbly and earneſtly beſeeching me, that I would be pleaſed to forgiue him; rendring me likewiſe thanks, that during the time of his impriſonment, I never offred to accuſe him; excuſing himſelfe alſo, that he had not, as ſoone as he was ſet at liberty, come to viſit me, laying the fault thereof, in his lacke of boldneſſe, and the largeneſſe of his offence. Yet, for to make ſatisfaction and payment of this his debt, he would become my ſlaue, and doe me faithfull ſervice all the dayes of his life; I, who ever knew him to be a man, that had both a ſtrong braine, and a nimble wit, which did him rather hurt, then good, becauſe he did not well imploy them; yet, for that theſe did adapt him, and make him fit for any imployment whatſoever,

Guzman *meets with* Sayavedra.

Courteſies are to be returned with advantage.

Sayavedra *askes* Guzman *forgiueneſſe.*

ſoever, I was the more willing to accept of his offer. And ſo taking him into my ſeruice, we joggd on along by little and little like a couple of good fellowes, talking of divers things on the way.

Guzman entertaines Sayauedra for his ſeruant.

And albeit I was not ignorant, that he was a notorious theefe, and a notable cunning rogue, yet I held it the leſſer inconvenience of the two, to haue a knaue, then a foole, to my man. For fooliſhneſſe did never yet but walke hand in hand with wickedneſſe. And both of them being joyned together, are ſufficient to vndoe not only a private houſe, but a whole Common-wealth. For the ſimple, or fooliſh man, cannot keepe counſell, nor knowes when and where to hold his peace; nor the wicked and malicious man, to judge of things aright; and if either of them, vttereth what he thinketh, (for commonly their tongue blabbeth what their hearts conceiveth) ſcandals, and troubles are already entred within the doores of our houſe, and like impudent rogues, ſticke not to preſſe into our priuateſt roomes, to ſee what they can get from thence. I thought with my ſelfe, if I would haue any one to ſerue me, (good ſervants being ſo few, and ſo hard to be got) that this would bee leſſe bad then any other, becauſe by thoſe his cunning tricks, that he had plaid with me already, he made me the more warie of him, and taught me (as if I had beene ſome *Lacedemonian*) to throw my beard over my ſhoulder: that is, to haue an eye vnto him, and to be the more circumſpect and warie of him, and to take the better heed, looking ſtill behinde me, as thoſe doe that haue enemies, turning their head one while this way, another while that, that they may not be ſet vpon vn-awares. And therefore knowing him ſo well as I did, I thought it as good, if not better, to entertaine a knaue that I knew, as a knaue, that I knew not. For I knew well enough, that I muſt looke narrowly to his water, and watch him at every turne, wherein I meant not to be negligent: Whereas, in taking of another, that ſhould ſeeme to beare the face of an honeſt man, and make ſhow of being faithfull and truſtie vnto me, I might haply grow careleſſe out of the confidence that I haue in him, and by this my credulitie be coozened of all that I had, and afterwards be left to looke after moone-ſhine in the water.

Better to haue a knaue, then a foole to ones ſervant.

As well in this reſpect, as alſo for that I had not much now to loſe, nor was my condition or qualitie ſuch, that I ſhould ſtand ſo nicely vpon theſe points, I admitted him into his ſervice. Hee askt me (as ſoone as I had entertained him) which way I meant to take? I told him, I was for *Florence*, led thither out of a deſire that I had to ſatisfie my longing, by ſeeing that Citie, whereof I had heard ſo much. Wherevnto my ſervant replied, and ſaid; Sir, whatſoever you haue heard thereof, I make no queſtion, when you come there, but your ſelfe will confeſſe, report hath beene too ſhort with you. For I aſſure you, there are ſo many admirable things therein to be ſeene, that they cannot ſufficiently be commended. For the naked relations of things, that are curious and good indeed, neuer fill the vacuitie and emptineſſe of our deſires. I haue liued there ſome time, yet all the while as I remained there, as if I had beene but come that very day to towne, whereſoever I went, new things were ſtill offered to my view: and I would never with my good will haue left that Towne, if my friends had not forced me from thence.

Proverbe. ¿Traer la barba ſobre el hombro Vivir recatado, y con recelo, como hazen los, que tienen enemigos, que van bolviendo el roſtro, á vn lado, y a otro. de onde, naçio el refran. Couarr. verb. Barba.

I began to aske him ſome queſtions, touching the foundation of that Citie, and whence it had its firſt beginning? Sir (ſaid he) ſeeing we haue day enough before vs, and that we may talke and vvalke faire and ſoftly, and that the relation, vvhich I am to make you is but ſhort; I ſhall, for the better ſatisfying of your deſire, acquaint you, and that truly, with all thoſe curioſities, that did then offer them-ſelues vnto my knowledge.

Then did he forthwith begin to diſcourſe of thoſe civill warres, which were occaſioned by *Catiline*, betweene thoſe of *Fieſole*, and *Florence*; the ouerthrowes, which one while thoſe of the *Roman* faction received, another while their enemie, *Bela Totile*. How in the time of Pope *Leo* the third, the Emperor *Charles*

Sayauedra *diſcourſes of* Florence. Leo 3. *Pope.*

Carolus Magnus *Emperor.*
Clement 7. *Pope*
Charles 5. *Emperor.*

Charles the Great, ſent a great Armie againſt the *Fieſolani*, leaving *Florence* re-edified in the hands of the *Florentines*, till that Pope *Clement* the ſeventh, and the Emperor *Charles* the fifth recovered the ſame, for to reſtore it to its ancient poſſeſsion, from which the houſe of *Medici* had beene put out. Which ſucceeded in the yeare of our Lord, 1529. Ever ſince which time, the *Florentines* haue alwaies been gouerned by one ſole Prince; which, though it ſeemed ſomewhat harſh vnto them at the firſt, yet now they ſee their error, and finde now at length how much more quietly they liue vnder the protection of their owne Prince, and with how much more ſafetie, both of their liues and goods. It is ſaid, that the firſt Prince, that ever they had, was *Aleſſandro de Medici*; who, for his ſweetneſſe of nature, his magnanimitie, and valour, though violently he loſt that principalitie in the very flower of his youth, yet might he juſtly be termed *Aleſſandro*. After him, ſucceeded, that wiſe, and worthy *Coſimo*, great Duke of *Tuſcanie*, whoſe memoriall, for his heroicall actions, and great vertues, as alſo for his courteous behaviour, his religion, and good government, ſhall liue eternally in the mindes of the living. This Prince was ſucceeded by *Franceſco*, who, for that he died without iſſue, the Crowne came to that famous *Ferdinando* his brother, the liuely image, and true picture of his father *Coſimo*, being as well heire to his Vertues, as his Eſtate. Who gouerned ſo worthily, and ſo wiſely, that I doe not know any other, with whom I may equall him for the loue that his ſubjects bare him.

Aleſſandro de Medici.

Coſimo, *great Duke of* Tuſcanie.

Franceſco 2. *Duke of* Florence.
Ferdinando 3. *great Duke*

If the relation, he then made me, had beene a little longer, he muſt of force haue referr'd it till the next day; but it ſeemed, that he had meaſured it out juſt with the time: for we were come as neere night, as we were to our Inne; whereinto we went to lodge. And having there well reſted and refreſht our ſelues, we got vp betimes in the morning, and that we might the ſooner get into *Florence*, we did ſet the beſt foot before, and made a little more haſte, then otherwiſe we would haue done. But when we came within ſight of it, I was ſo over-joyed, that I am not able to expreſſe it, ſo faire and ſo beautifull did it a farre of preſent it ſelfe vnto me. For though I could not take a full view of it, yet from the one end to the other, and from almoſt the bottome to the top, I might reaſonably well diſcerne it; and a more pleaſing ſight, did mine eyes never ſee. I did examine the pleaſantneſſe of its ſituation, I beheld the beauty of many great and goodly buildings, the inexpugnable ſtrength of its ſtately walls, the majeſtie, and firmeneſſe of its high and well formed Towers. In a word, the whole pile thereof, ſeemed ſuch vnto me, that I ſtood amazed at it, and could not (me thought) too much admire it. I would not willingly, haue mou'd out of the place where I ſtood, nor haue drawne neerer to the Towne, but haue kept my ſelfe at that very diſtance; as well, for that mine eye was wonderfull well pleaſed therewith, as alſo for that I would not wrong that delight, which I now received, when I ſhould draw neerer therevnto; if peradventure (as it vſually falleth out with moſt things) it ſhould leſſen it ſelfe, and fall ſhort of that goodly proſpect, which I did here injoy.

The beauty of Florence.

But, when I did conſider with my ſelfe, that all this glorious ſhow, was, but as it were the outward caſe of it, my judgement did then begin to inſtruct me, that the jewels therein contained, muſt needs be richer, and farre more glorious, as indeed they were. For when I was entred thereinto, and ſaw the ſpatiouſneſſe of the ſtreets, how ſtreight and levell they were, how plaine and ſmooth, paved all with cleane hewen ſtones of goodly faire marble, and their houſes built with beautifull ſtones, ſo coſtly, ſo curious, ſo neatly poliſhed, ſo artificially wrought, and with ſuch a deale of skill and cunning in the architecture thereof, I was ſo confounded, that I could not tell what to thinke of it. For I could not imagaine vvith my ſelfe, that any other Citie in the world, could haue compar'd with *Rome* for beauty: But having well viewd this for its bigneſſe, it goes farre beyond it. For thoſe buildings that are in *Rome*, the beſt

best of them are gone to ruine, and few of them left standing; and those that are now remaining, are but meere shadowes, and the very ruines and fragments of those, that were so famous in former times. But *Florence* is the flower of the world, all is therein so flourishing, so costly, and so well set forth, that I said vnto *Sayauedra*; Certainly, if the inhabitants of this Citie be as curious in the tricking of their women, as they are in the adorning, and beautifying of their houses, they are vndoubtedly the happiest men in the world. I was so strucken with admiration, that I was desirous to haue dwelt a long time in contemplating and beholding every particular peece of building; but because night was now growing on, and that the day would not befriend vs any longer, I vvas faine to retire my selfe to my lodging. And vve were not slacke in hastning to our Inne, vvhether when we vvere come, we were so neatly and so daintily entertained, that I cannot so much indeare it, as it truly deserveth. Such plenty of provision, such cleanlinesse in their lodging-chambers, such sweetnesse in their linnen, such diligent attendance, such affable language, and such good vsage, did I never meet withall else-where in all my life. I was so taken therewith, that it made me almost to forget that which I most desired. I slept so soundly that night (thankes to the good bed, that was vnder me) that it seemed vnto me scarce halfe an houre, since my first lying downe.

When the morning was come, (though with a heart full of sorrow, for that was then my *Mount Tabor*) I call'd to *Sayauedra*, to giue me my clothes; and for that he was so well acquainted with that Citie, I will'd him to make himselfe ready to goe along with me, that he might show me all, vvhatsoeuer was of any note, and held (as curiosities) to be vvorth the seeing. And that first of all he should bring me to the chiefe Church, vvhere having heard diuine service, and recommended our selues vnto God, all things vvould prosper afterwards the better vvith vs. Thither he led me, and hauing ended our deuotion, I stood like one amaz'd in beholding that most famous Temple and fabricke *del Zimborio*, vvhich they there call [b] *Cupula*, vvhich in my opinion, may be better termed *Cupula*, for that it seemed not only to my selfe, but as many as beheld it, that therein vvas copulated, and joyned as it vvere together, all that curious Architecture, vvhich the writing of the best and skilfullest professors, in that profession, either *theoricke*, or *practicke*, haue published to the vvorld, so admirable a peece of workemanship, such a deale of greatnesse, strength and curiositie, (vvithout any vvrong or injurie to any other fabricke of *Europe*) may justly challenge the name of *the eighth wonder of the world*. Let him consider vvith himselfe, vvho hath any knowledge in Architecture, it being fowre hundred and twenty handfuls high, besides the spire that is on the top of it, vvhat [d] diameter, this *Cupula* will require; and by this he may come to ghesse vvhat manner of thing it is.

From thence I vvent to the *Annunciata*, a Church so called, to see the image, that vvas painted there vpon the vvall, vvhich might more properly be termed *Heaven*; so admirable a peece of worke, is that picture of the *Incarnation of the Son of God*: Insomuch that it is held there for certaine, that it was drawne by one, that was no lesse excellent in his Art, then holy in his life. For, when he had made an end of that which there you see painted, and that there remained no more to be done, but to finish and make vp the face of our blessed *Lady* the *Virgin*; being wonderfull timerous and fearefull, much misdoubting and musing with himselfe, whether or no, he should be able to giue it its true life, and to fit it every way in its age, in trueuesse of its colour, its complexion, in its honest and sober countenance, and in the demure and modest posture of its eyes, in this confusion of his, and these his distracted thoughts, not devising with himselfe, what he were best to doe, he laid himselfe downe a while to sleepe, and awaking anon after, and minding to betake him to his pensill, and to put his hand (by the helpe of God) to that peece of worke, he found it made

[b] Zimbro, es el hueco del chapitel.

[c] *A high Arche, or round vault of any high Church or steeple.*

The Cupula *of* Florence *what a curious peece of buildings it is.*

[d] Diametro, *of the Greeke word* διαμετρεω. Linea dimetiens, super medium secans, recta in longitudine ducta. *It is a Geometricall terme.*

The Annunciata *of* Florence, *wonderfull worth the seeing.*

made to his hand. And therefore, it needs not our farther commendation, for it being to be presupposed, that it was there miraculously wrought either by Gods owne hand, or some one of his Angels, it can be said to be no lesse, then an *Angelicall picture*. And for this cause, the rest of that peece being considered, which the Painter made, we may easily conceiue, what kinde of spirit he had who could finde so much favour, as to haue the hands of heaven (as if for the time, they had beene bound prentises to his Trade) to helpe him to grinde and mixe his colours, and to make an end of his worke for him.

So many miracles doth it daily worke, such a concourse of people doth continually flocke thither out of devotion, and so great are the almes, that are there distributed & giuen to the poore, that I did much wonder, that all the beggars were not wondrous rich; which put me in minde of that poore man, who (as I was told, and you haue heard) made in this Citie, that his famous last Will and Testament, wherein hee bequeathed his Asses pack-saddle to the Great Duke; That seeming now vnto me but a little small summe, in comparison of that, which such a one as he, might very well haue gained in that place. And for that it is a know truth, *Que el hijo de la gata, ratones mata*: That the sonne of a Cat, will kill his Rat. Or (as our English Proverbe hath it) Cat will to his kinde; a thousand, and a thousand times, did I bethinke my selfe of many things that I had done in my younger dayes, and did now as it were plainely perceiue; that if as I went to *Rome*, it had beene my good hap to haue lighted in this Citie, what with my roguish tricks, my counterfeit scurffs, leprosies, and sore legs, I might haue come to be a *mayorazgo* amongst them, and to haue purchased some great Lordship.

Guzman *scoffes at the rogues and beggars in* Florence.

I did likewise obserue, that few of these rogues, were curious, and cunning, or that they were their crafts-masters; but were for the most part, fooles, meere block-heads, and had little or no wit at all, in comparison of those in my time. And when I did perceiue, what poore counterfeits they were, and how sillily they did order their affaires, it was sport alone to me. I tooke a great deale of pleasure in looking on them, and I did secretly wish to my selfe, that I might haue had the opportunitie, to reforme a thousand imperfections, which I presently saw in them. Who did ever see, that an honest poore beggar, that was a good proficient in his trade, nay, say he were never so meanely bred to it, would when he had most, (vnlesse he were a very cocks-combe) haue more then sixe, or seven *Maranedis*, or some such like trifle, and not aboue, in his hat? nor to haue such a summe of money lie open to the peoples eyes, that they may thereby be taught to tell him; you need no more, you haue as much there already, as will very well serue to supply your wants for this day, and to put bread enough in your belly; and therefore, that he should get him gone, and giue way to other poore folkes, that had more need, then he had? When was it ever knowne, that there was ever seene any beggar, of that poore vnderstanding, though he were but a new beginner, that would beg, having a loafe of bread vnder his arme? or to stand, as I saw another, with a tooth-pick in his eare? Which I no sooner saw, but I said to my selfe: O thou poore silly theefe, thou traytor to thy profession; Art thou such an Asse, as to let every man know, that thou hast eaten so much, that there are some remnants yet left behinde in thy teeth? I saw not one amongst them all, that could play his game handsomely, nay scarce know how to set his men in their right place, nor to take their due time for the hitting of a blot; I saw no order, no *decorum* amongst them; they had no skill in this kinde of musicke; many of them could say their *Gammoothe*, (and that too they had learned by rote) but knew not how to proue a note; others there were, that had a little paltry skill in plaine-song, but would bawle it out so scurvily and so vntuneably, that no eare was able to indure it: And none of all this dunghill crew, that like *Chaunticleere*, could chaunt it out lustily, descant and divide at pleasure, and so to

relish

reliſh and melt their notes, as to make their hearts to melt that heare them and to moue them to compaſſion of them.

There did I ſpie a yong man, one of my old acquaintance, who was now a pretty well-growne man; this was the onely Beggar (I meane compared with the reſt) that knew any thing amongſt them. And would to God (thought I) that I might be ſo happy, as to come once to ſet my hands where he had ſet his heart. For queſtionleſſe he could not chuſe but be rich. Hee was the ſonne of ſuch parents, as were able to leaue him much. His father was a notable cunning rogue, and could his craft wonderfull well. And this his ſonne, was every way like vnto him. He was leane viſag'd, lanke bellied, ſpindle-ſhank'd, and ſo alike ſuted in all the reſt, that a man might truly ſay of him; That, t'was fathers n'owne ſonne. But becauſe every thing hath its time appointed, and takes it courſe when it comes; and for that the Iuſtice did not there permit the having of an Academie, for the trayning vp of theſe freſh men, what through want of exerciſe, and not trying of concluſions, and putting them in practiſe, they may now throw away their caps, whileſt themſelues with their *breviaticke* Art, may lie wallowing in the durt. I knew him, but he did not know me: He might well ſay vnto me, *Talte veo, que no te conoſco*: The world is ſo changed with thee, that I do not know thee. O, what a terrible conflict had I with my ſelfe, what a ſhrewd temptation to goe and ſpeake to him: but I durſt not. I ſayd to *Sayauedra*; Seeſt thou that poore fellow? That rogue is able to make me rich. He then ſaid vnto me; Why doth he then goe a begging? I told him; When men haue once begunne to open their mouthes to craue an almes, and haue ſhut their eyes to all ſhame, and bound their hands from all labour, and that their feet are benum'd, and waxe ſtiffe from taking any paines, or care to liue in a lawfull courſe, their deſeaſe is beyond all cure, and there is no remedie to redreſſe this evill.

Guzman ſpies one of his old acquaintance amongſt the beggars in Florence;

proverbe.

Why beggars cannot giue over their lewd courſe of life.

The experience whereof I ſaw in a poore yong vvench in my time, who comming to *Rome* poore and ſicke, fell a begging for Gods ſake. And when ſhe was well recover'd of her health, & as ſtrong of her bodie, as any bull, ſhe ſtill continued her trade of begging. They, whoſe almes ſhee craued, told her, it was ſhame for her to beg, ſhee was yong, and luſtie, and was able to ſerue, and worke for her liuing. Shee anſwered; that ſhee was often troubled with a cruell paine and griping of the heart, which when the fitt tooke her, cauſed her to fall downe to the ground in a ſwound, beating her feete and her hands againſt the earth, renting and tearing all that ſhee could lay hand on, and kicking and ſpurning at thoſe that came neere her. In this ſort, did ſhee cozen the world a long time, and ſpent many yeares in this lewd faſhion, till at laſt one of her owne Countrimen being askt, whether he knew her father, and her mother? Anſwered, Hee did; And that they were both dead, and had left her a great deale of wealth. Wherevnto (as lawfull inheritrix) ſhee layd claime. Whoſe eſtate was now ſuch, and ſo great, that many principall men became Sutors vnto her, and ſought to haue her to wife, and ſome of them exceeding rich (for there is no yron ſo foule, that it will not be guilded; gold hides and covers all, be it never ſo ruſtie) ſhe vvas penny-white (as vve ſay) and ſo was married in the end to one of an honeſt condition, and well to liue, and an handſome man withall. But this wife of his, ſeeing ſhee vvas now depriued of her wonted liberty of begging, grew within a little while after deſperately ſicke, dayly withering and waſting away, the Phyſitians not being able to ſearch into the nature of her deſeaſe. And thus ſhe continued for a good while, till ſhe became her own phyſitian, and cured her ſelfe, by playing the hypocrite, making ſolemne profeſſion, that meerely out of humilitie, ſhee vvould goe a begging, and eate not any thing, but what ſhould be giuen her of almes, vvherewith ſhe would ſuſtain this ſinfull carkaſſe of hers. And to this end, would ſhe go vp & downe her houſe amongſt her ſervants, firſt to one, & then to another, craving and

A notable tale of a roguiſh wench.

proverbe.

e No ay hierro tan malo, que no pueda dorarſe. Todo lo cubre, y capa el oro.

and begging ſomething of them . And becauſe all did giue her almes, and none denie her, that did not fully pleaſe her, but did much trouble her; wherefore, oftentimes, ſhe would ſteale vp into a private roome that ſhee had, and there ſhut her ſelfe in, where ſhe had ſome pictures of certaine great perſons, that were fairely hung vp in frames, and euen of theſe (to ſatisfie this her ill habit, and to keepe her ſelfe in vre) would ſhee likewiſe demand an almes.

Sayauedra, marvelled much at it; Who brought mee from thence, to the outward Court belonging to the Palace; in the midſt vvhereof I might ſee a braue Prince, mounted on a beautifull horſe of braſſe, ſo curiouſly cut to the life, and ſo well proportioned in every part, that they both ſeemed to haue life and motion. My apprehenſion could not diſcerne, and therefore durſt not preſume to judge, which of the two were better, either this, or that at *Rome*; yet inclined in the end with that ſhort vnderſtanding of mine, to giue the praiſe to that which was there preſent; not for that it was preſent, but becauſe it did deſerue it. I askt of *Sayauedra*, whoſe ſtatua that was? Hee told mee, it was the great Dukes, *Coſimo de Medici*. Of whom I went diſcourſing vnto you vpon the way. And here great *Ferdinando*, his ſonne, (who lately was but is not now aliue) cauſed it to be ſet vp to perpetuall memory. I would needs know out of curioſity, of what height it might be, and not being able to reach therevnto to take the meaſure if it, I was informed, that from the very bottome to the top, was about fifty handfuls high, little more, or leſſe . Round about the ſayd place, were many other delicate peeces caſt into braſſe, & ſome, of ſubſtantial, yet very fine marble, ſo artificially wrought, that they did driue the beholders into great admiration; leaving even the beſt judgements in ſuſpenſe, and ſtaggering thoſe wits moſt, that were moſt acute; excepting onely ſuch, as had inckling afore-hand, what manner of things they were .

The Statua of Coſimo 1. great Duke of Tuſcanie.

Afterwards, we viſitted the Temple of *S. Iohn Baptiſt*, as being moſt worthy our particular remembrance; for I may truly ſay of it, that there is ſcarſe the like in the world for all in all. Which glorious fabricke, I then learned, vvas founded in the time of *Octavianus Auguſtus* the Emperour, and conſecrated to *Mars*. There did I entertaine my ſelfe in obſeruing its antiquitie, and foundation, wherein I tooke much content; and the more, for that it is reported of it, and receiued by tradition, as alſo grounded vpon reaſon, (in regard of its foundation) That it is to laſt and continue, to the finall conſummation and end of the world. Which we may the rather be induced to beleeue, for that neither length of time, nor thoſe continuall warres, accompanied vvith ſo many calamities, haue as yet had the power either to deface, or deſtroy it. All the Citie beſides being left deſolate and layd levell with the ground, onely this Temple remaining ſtill vntoucht. The body of it conſiſts of eight angles, all ſpatious, ſtrong, and marvellous beautifull to behold; eſpecially thoſe its three great doores, which are ſhut vp with ſixe halfe doores, all of braſſe, caſt in curious molds, and all of one entire peece, wrought with Hiſtories of embоſſed worke ſo daintily handled, ſo finely raiſed, and ſo proportionably equall in every point, as may well be preſumed from the Artizans of that Citie, who beare away the bell from all the reſt, in that kinde, that are in the world.

S. Iohn Baptiſts Church in Florence.

This Temple hath likewiſe another greatneſſe belonging vnto it, which is this; that there being in *Florence* one and forty Pariſh churches, two and twenty Monaſteries of Fryars, forty & ſeaven Nunneries, foure Colledges or Houſes for thoſe that are willing to retire themſelues from the world, eight and twenty Hoſpitals, and two bearing the name of IESVS; yet there is no baptiſme vſed in any of theſe, ſaue onely in that of *S. Iohn*, and in that Church, are all the children of this Citie baptized, from the meaneſt among the commons, to the principall Gentlemen, and the great Dukes owne children. For that time that we ſtayed there, we viſitted all the Churches one after another, which were of that admirable workmanſhip, and ſet forth with ſuch ſingular and

The Churches, and Covents in Florence.

and rare curioſities, that it is not poſſible to relate no not the leaſt part thereof, in regard of the muchnes of them, (the number of them being ſo infinite,) nor is the vnderſtanding capable of apprehending them, much leſſe our outward eye. For he that ſhould goe about to make a memoriall of ſo great a *Machina*, and ſuch a maſſe of things, whoſe admirable parts are ſo numberleſſe, & every one of them accompanied with ſundry peeces of ſuch ſingular Art, and exquiſite workemanſhip, beſides ſo many excellent pictures, ſome in tables, and ſome ingrauen in braſſe, and other mettals, had need to make thereof a huge great Volume, and to ſecke out ſome other Chronicler, that ſhall be better able then my ſelfe, to preſent theſe things to the eye of the reader, and to giue them their due commendation.

The Dukes Palace.

The great Duke, hath a Palace in the Citie, which is called *Il Palaggio de Piti*; whoſe excellencies, greatneſſes, and curioſities, as vvell in gardens, as fountaines, mounts, groues, ſports for hunting, & goodly roomes, may (without indearing) be truly ſaid to be a princely and royall ſeat; and ſuch a one, as may compare with any other whatſoever in all *Europe*.

The circuit of Florence.

I would not omit to know and ſee the circuit of this Citie, which containeth in it ſuch ſtore of wealth. And I found it to be much about fiue mile compaſſe: it hath ten great Gates, and one and fifty Towers. The Citie is ſeated all within the wals, & hath no ſuburbs adjoyning therevnto. Through the midſt of it paſſeth the famous riuer of *Arnus*, vpon which ſtand foure moſt ſtately bridges, all pau'd with ſtone, and very ſtrongly built, being large and ſpatious withall. And all theſe things, being thus done in perfection; the like perfection is alſo to be found in their government, their behaviour, and in the generall faſhion, and cariage of that people. And therefore juſtly, & with a great deale of reaſon, is this City called *Florencia*, as being *flos florum*, the flower of flowers, and as it were the only noſe-gay of all *Italy*. Wherein all things, as in a curious garden, do flouriſh joyntly together, but more particularly theſe eſpeciall and ſingular good things; As the liberall Arts, horſemanſhip, all kinde of learning, military diſcipline, true dealing, faire proceeding, ſweete behaviour, plaineneſſe and ſincerity in their actions, and aboue all I muſt recommend vnto thee, their loue and kindeneſſe towards ſtrangers. Shee like a true mother, imbraces them in her boſome, hugges them, makes much of them, and favours them more, then ſhee doth her owne Children; to whom in reſpect of them, ſhee may be termed a mother in law

Florence *a friend to ſtrangers.*

The time, that I ſtaid there, I came to know the Cauſes by their Effects: to wit, by knowing the nature and condition of the inhabitants, and the politicke lawes, by which they vvere governed, & their due obſervation of them, not erring a tittle from them. There they apply themſelues truly to know and eſteeme every mans merit, rewarding them with iuſt and due honour; to the end that all may be incouraged to vertue. And let not Princes thinke it a ſmall glory vnto them, for they ought to acknowledge it for one of the greateſt, that can be giuen them, when it is truly ſaid of them, that their noble and renowned actions, do jumpe and concurre vvith thoſe of their ſubjects.

The good government in Florence.

I likewiſe knew that to be true, vvhich *Sayauedra* had told mee about the factions in Court, and the croſſing and thwarting one another. I ſaw ſomewhat of that vvhich did exceed in other places, as Envie and Flattery, vvhereof no Princes Court is free, vvhich alvvaies raigne there moſt, vvhere is deſire of favour, but more eſpecially, when they labour to increaſe it, and to keepe themſelues in grace vvith their Soveraigne. Which oftentimes turne to the great hurt of both the one and the other. They are fine and vvitty relators of other mens actions, and ſubtile Mathematicians, for to deliniate and meaſure out that vvhich other men can doe, and ſometime that, vvhich others cannot. But let theſe things reſt, vvithout farther entring into them. For having painted forth vnto you, in ſo great a perfection.

Envie and Flattery, two great Courtiers.

this illustrious and noble Citie, it is not fit that I should blemish it with so foule a blot, and dash as it were vvith a cole, that faire commendation, that I haue giuen it.

CHAP. II.

Guzman de Alfarache *goes to* Bologna *in pursuit of* Alexandro, *who had stolne his trunkes from him; Whither when he was come, going about to impriſon* Alexandro, *himselfe was clapt vp.*

Guzman *sells his horse, and breakes his fast with his old shooes.*

IN *Florence*, I did eate out that horse, vvhich my Lord Embassador had bestowed on mee at my departure, and made me one morning one breakfast of his shooes. I say; To the end that I might sell him the better, I caused him to be new shod, giuing order to *Sayauedra* to make money of the old ones; whereof wee made our breakfast. If this heretike, *Necessitie*, had not kickt me out of Towne, and thrust me out by head and shoulders, I should never while I liu'd, of mine owne accord, haue gone from thence. And this thou maist as certainly beleeue of me, as of any one Article of thy Creed. For I had now well taken salt, and was throughly seasoned, and had sounded that Citie to the very bottome, yet I know not, how my minde might haue altered, and what I should haue done hereafter. For in conclusion, *todo lo nueuo, aplaze*: See what is newest, that we still like best. This rule, holding more especially in such as I was, who had *spiritum ambulatorium*, a wandring humour of mine owne, and was a great louer of novelties. But then I was of that opinion, for those many reasons I had on my side. For it was my hap to come thither, whē they were full of their sports and pastimes; and other yong fellowes of the same yeares with my selfe, led mee to these their delightfull pleasures along with them from house to house, from feast to feast, & from bridall to bridall.

Guzman *loth to leaue* Florence.

Proverbe.

The sports and pastimes that are vsed in Florence.

In one house you might finde them dancing; in another, playing vpon instruments; in a third, singing; and a in fourth, making merry vvith their friends. All was delight, and more and more delight still; one sets vp his rest at *Primera*, another vyes his game at *Tic-Tack*: some at one game, some at another. In a word, in all places of the City whereſoever wee came, we met with nothing but laudable exercises, and honest recreations. There might a man see many yong gallants, pompous in apparell, and richly clad, and many faire Ladies, and hansome Gentlewomen, who wanted no setting forth for curious and costly dressings with whom these yong bloods did dance. Whose tyres on their heads were so daintily adorned, their gownes on their backs so richly imbroydered, and their *Chapines* to their feete, so plated with siluer, and beset with pretious stones, that they did ravish both the eyes, and the soules of as many as did looke vpon them. I leaue it therefore to thee to consider, what kind of dressings those were, that had so much power to moue the beholders. See how I haue seasoned this dish, that I may not disgrace the goodnesse of the meate. Tell mee; hath it not a good relliſh? is it not pleasing to thy palate? Though I goe not into a Tauerne to drinke, yet I take delight to talke of it, and to looke vpon it, and to peepe in at the doore as I passe by, and sometimes slip in, to make my selfe merry. No man is wise on horsebacke; much lesse, in the vnbridled yeares of his youth. In a word, I was yong. And as old age is cold, & dry, so on the contrary, youth, is hot, and moyst. Youth, hath strength, and old age, wisdome. Thus are these gifts divided, & yet every one hath that which is fit, and necessary for him. And though for the most part, wee see that all old men turne to be yong, if not (as wee say) become children againe; yet

Proverbe.
f Sino beuo en la taberna, huelgome en ella. Deue ser entretenimiento ver en la taberna vnas monas tristes, y ortas alegres, ver cantar vnos; y todos con muy poca firmeza en los ies, y gran mo- Porra en la cadeça. Covarr. berb. Taberna.

it were a wonder, to ſee young men grow old. And I ſay againe, it were as great a wonder, to ſee a young man in yeares, to be an old man in diſcretion, as to ſee a Peare tree, to beare fruits in the heart of winter. But I ſpeake this in *Spaniſh*, that ſome of other Countries, whom I know, may not finde fault with me. And I would haue all men take notice, that I alwayes ſpeake according to the vſe and faſhion of mine owne Countrey: for I doe not know after what manner others dance in theirs.

The Authors proteſtation.

But that I may returne to my former diſcourſe; it grieued me very much to leaue *Florence*, (yet did it much concerne me to be gone) flying as it were from my ſelfe, not knowing to what end, nor whither to goe; nor yet knew I, why I ſhould ſtay any longer there, vnleſſe it were to ſpend that poore little ſtore of money, that I had yet left me, and that chaine, which the Lord Embaſſador my maſter, gaue me at my farewell as a token of his loue, and to thinke vpon him, as oft as I chanc'd to caſt mine eyes vpon it. And I muſt truly confeſſe vnto you, that he was never out of my minde, whenſoever I did thinke vpon that houre, wherein I muſt ere long be forced to turne it into money. And as it was giuen mee vvith a great deale of loue, ſo did it exceedingly grieue mee that I muſt ſhortly part ſo vnkindly with it. I would, if I could, haue kept it rather then my life; and never haue parted from it; but there are ſome ſuch occaſions, wherein parents may impawne their owne children. Patience, (quoth I to my ſelfe) I will doe the beſt I can; and more, I cannot. And therefore (my maſters) I pray pardon me; for he, that hath no other meanes to helpe himſelfe, and is conſtrained therevnto out of meere neceſſitie, is driven many times to commit many a greater error, and that ſhall proue farre more prejudiciall and hurtfull. I had a great wreſtling and ſtrugling with my ſelfe; and my thoughes had a cruell ſharpe warre with themſelues, as well touching this, as other the like buſineſſes. I conſidered with my ſelfe, what would now become of me, & what courſe I were beſt to take, for to ſupply & releeue my wants. God helpe me; How heavy is the heart, when the purſe is light! And therefore we ſay; A heavy purſe, makes a light heart. What little comfort doe we take in the world? And how faint and feeble, are the pleaſures of this life to him, whoſe purſe-ſtrings are too weake? And more particularly, to one that is in a ſtrange Country, and that hath put on a reſolution with himſelfe to forget his lewd courſes, and not to liue, as he had done, by tricks and by ſhifts; yet not knowing how to gaine a penny, and wanting the meanes, how to come by money; having no neere acquaintance with any, to preſume of ſuch kindneſſe from them, being farre from my friends, and farther from any the leaſt intention or purpoſe to cheat or cozen any man. For, if I would haue runne that courſe, and ſet my minde vnto it, I needed not to haue taken ſuch a deale of care and trouble in the buſineſſe. For I had my wits about me; and a hand that was able to finde me worke all the yeare long; I could not want, (if I liſted my ſelfe) to picke out a living whereſoever I ſhould come. For (thanks be to God for it) vvhat I had once learned, it was mine owne for ever: I never loſt it, if I once had it. Only, I might at firſt be a little to ſeeke, for want of vſe, but the tooles of my trade were never out of my hand, but alwayes carried them with me, whitherſoever I went. I departed from *Rome* with a full purpoſe to become an honeſt man; and fall backe, fall edge, come good, or come bad, all welcome, as it pleaſ'd God; for I had a great minde to continue theſe my good deſires, and to remaine firme in this ſo honeſt a reſolution. But ſeeing that Hell is full of theſe, what good could my holy deliberations doe me, if I did not put them in execution? For faith, without workes, is but a dead faith.

Guzman *begins to conſider with himſelfe.*

Now, I had gotten me a man to waite vpon me, Where by the way, I pray let me aske you, what a good direction was this, to addreſſe me to a Maſter? What a Letter of recommendation to be receiued into ſervice? I had beene now accuſtomed to command; how would you then, that I ſhould ſubmit my

Proverb.
g Apretado ſe halla vn coraçon, quando nolo eſtà la bolſa.
Money cheeres mans heart.

He that is vſed to command, will hardly be brought to obey.

Want, and honestie, can hardly stand together.

selfe to obey? I verily thought with my selfe (as perhaps many moe doe, for I doe not thinke that I am the onely man of that minde in the world) that I should haue beene an honest man, if answerable to that glorious show that I made; and the height whereat I liu'd, I had had wherewithall to spend accordingly, and that I had not wanted meanes to vphold this great spirit of mine, but had had money enough to maintaine & enlarge my generous disposition. But the summes (I feare me) which must haue seru'd to supply my wants, must miraculously by some holy Saint or other, be subministred vnto me: for no other hand could doe it. And certainely, I know not how it then fell out, that I was so honest, as I was; I verily beleeue, that this also was a Miracle, considering the condition of that present time, and mine owne evill inclination. I was young, left to liue at mine owne liberty, suffered to doe what I list, and rather accustomed to seeke occasions, to doe, then to shunne ill; and I could hardly by the helpe of my good desires, either lose, or lay aside my bad conditions.

A good discourse of Guzmans

Such a Lady, or such a Gentlewoman saith (which is their ordinary kind of language) I would faine be a good woman, I desire to leade an honest life, as no woman more, if that necessitie did not force me to doe that, which I doe. Indeed Madame, by your leaue, your Ladyship lyes. For, that you doe ill, it is onely, because you are willing to doe ill. O what a poore excuse is this? I confesse that I offend thus and thus, but it is against my will; for I am not of my selfe given to such, or such a sinne, nor haue any inclination thereunto in the world. In good faith it is otherwise, for I reade it in your eyes. And they consenting vnto sinne, who can be said to be the cause thereof, but your selues? For if you would but turne your eyes from your windowes, and throw them on your distaffe, or your cushionet, certainly necessity would not constraine you to ill. Womens hands are not of that length, nor so quicke and so nimble, that they should sodainly reach so farre, as to finde you foode, apparell, and house-rent: yet are they long enough, to put themselues forth to service; and they that set you a-worke, will bestow house-roome on you, and put meate in your mouthes, and money in your purse. But I expect you should say vnto me; Thou, that art a man, giu'st me this counsell; Thou art loath to serue thy selfe, and yet thou wouldst haue me to serue, that am a woman? Indeed, thou hast hit the nayle on the head; And this is that, which I say; That your Mistresse-ship, and I, and this, or that other woman (be shee vvhat shee vvill) are all of vs vnwilling to doe our selues good. We will put to no helping hand of our owne, but would, that what we stand in need of, should be put into our mouthes, and that it should miraculously be ministred vnto vs.

Youth, what a kinde of thing it is.

Twenty yeares of age, is a terrible beast: O how headstrong, and how wilde it is. There is no battell so bloudy, no skirmish so hot, and so hard to come off cleare, as that warre, which we wage with our youth. For if it goe about to make it's retreat frō Vice, it hath many fierce enemies that sharply set vpon it, never ceasing to assaile it, galling it here, and wounding it there, which will hardly be repell'd, more hardly ouercome, by reason of those many occasions of advantage which offer thēselues; it being besides a thing proper vnto youth, to stumble, if not to fall, at every step: Youth hath not (beleeue mee) any strength in it's legs, much lesse know they well how to goe. It is an vntamed beast, it is full of furie, and voyd of patience; and if it entertaine any good motion, a hundred ill thoughts disband the same by and by, and put it to route; not giuing it so much leysure as to set foot on ground, nor to put it in the stirrop, not to seate himselfe sure in the Saddle. Every one cannot get vp to it; and few that can bridle this beast. It will not be so soone over-mastered, as some doe thinke, not be easily brought to goe that way as a man would haue it. I was ever, like the Hog, vp to the very eyes, nousling my selfe in the mud of vice and wickednesse, (for albeit I did not alwayes practise ill, yet I never lost the sight of it) and I was loath to kicke and fling against it, lest by my too much

much ſtirring, I might looſen my lading, and cauſe it to fall to the ground; if not ſpraine, and hurt my ſelfe.

A Bullocke, or young Steere, when he is to be tamed, they firſt halter his legges, throwing him downe on the ground, then they fall a ſhooing of him, after that, they binde a rope or a cord to one of his hornes, vvhich they ſuffer him to traile after him for ſome few dayes; and when they are minded to bring his necke to the yoake, they yoake him with an old Oxe, that hath beene long vſed to the plough, and ſo by little and little diſpoſing him therevnto, they teach him by theſe degrees to beginne to draw handſomely, and in the end to be as perfect as the beſt of them.

Inſtruction, neceſſary for youth.

That young man therefore, that hath a deſire to be old, let him leaue to follow my ſteps, and let him ſtriue to ſubdue his paſſions; let him prepare, and diſpoſe himſelfe to labour, and in deſpight of his owne will, let him ſtrongly ſtruggle and wraſtle with his idle and fooliſh deſires, and throw them flat on their backes to the ground, that they may never riſe vp any more to make reſiſtance againſt him: And when he hath thus gotten them downe vnder him, let him binde them faſt with that double twiſted cord of Patience, and Humility; and let him traile after him, for ſome certaine dayes, theſe his ſtrange and dangerous appetites, ſpending his time in vertuous exerciſes, and many ſhall not paſſe over his head, before hee be brought to bow his necke to that holy yoake of repentance; and by yoaking himſelfe with good company, he ſhall quickly be invred to the plough, wherewith he ſhall breake vp the earth of his evill inclinations; But let no man thinke, that hee ſhall be able to doe this at the firſt daſh; and that once trying what he can doe, ſhall be ſufficient to make him grow perfect. Some (I know) will not ſticke to tell me; I would doe this, and I would doe that, my will is to it, but &c. Let him ſpeake this to ſuch another as himſelfe, and to one that is of the like quality and condition, as he is. For I know well enough already, that he is not willing to doe this, nor to doe that; For they, that are willing indeed, vſe other more effectuall meanes. And nothing is hard to them, that will ſet themſelues hard to it. Peradventure ſuch a one thinkes, or expects, that God ſhould open the heavens, and miraculouſly ſtrike him to the ground, as he did Saint *Paul*; But let him not looke to haue the like courſe to be taken with him; leſt he be counted a foole for his labour.

This ſame but, *or* Si non, *is the cauſe of much harme.*

God threw him to the ground, and humbled him ſufficiently, when he afflicted him with ſicknes, when he laid troubles vpon him, & when he ſuffered him to be toucht in his good name; if either then, or now, thou ſhould accept of grace, while it is offered thee, thou ſhalt be ſure to finde it. But thou waſt never willing to entertaine theſe good motions, much leſſe to humble thy ſelfe vvith Saint *Paul*, and to crie out with him; *Domine, quid vis, vt faciam?* Lord, vvhat vvilt thou that I doe? What is thy divine vvill and pleaſure? Thou wilt not like *Paul* be for God, & yet thou look'ſt that God ſhould be for thee. And if he dealt thus vvith Saint *Paul*, it vvas becauſe God knew the earneſt deſire that he had to know and ſearch out the Truth: and that it vvas his zeale to the Law that did thus overſway him; the current vvhereof being turn'd another vvay, he vvould be as fervent for the Goſpell. And you can inſtance but in a few that haue beene ſaued by a bare intention, without any good worke. Theſe two are to concurre in one, *Intention* and *Action*; I ſay, if we haue any time left vnto vs from action, or wherein we may doe any good worke. And then ſhall a firme intention of amendment of life, and a hearty ſorrow for our ſins paſt, be accounted a good worke, when the night of death ſhall ſodainly overtake vs, and ſhut vs vp in darkeneſſe. But having day enough to worke and labour in the Lords *Vineyard*, both theſe ought to goe together, I meane *Intention* and *Action*. For neither the ſpade alone, nor the hand alone, can digge, and dreſſe the ground; but hand, and ſpade, muſt both worke together.

If we will be ſaved, our good intentions, muſt be ſeconded by good actions.

But who hath put me into this theame? Was not I in *Florence* even now to my great content? Thither doe I returne againe. I assure thee, that the more I walked vp and downe that Citie, the more desirous I vvas to plant there my Pillars, and not to seeke for a *Plus vltrà*. For it was even as I would haue wisht it to be, all very beautifull and delightsome. And if therein resided either flattery or envie, I tooke no great heed thereof, but let it runne to others account, for I was none of those, that were comprehended in that Decree. I had nothing to doe (like *Iudas*) with the almes of the poore; nor could any prejudice thereby come vnto me, being that I pretended nothing in Court. And if they would any way haue holpen me, I had no need to vse them. Or had I stood in need of thẽ, I would not haue made any vse of them; they evermore seeming vnto me the greatest meanes of mischiefe, that ever came yet within my knowledge. For one onely flatterer is sufficient alone of himselfe to overthrow a Common-wealth, if not a vvhole Kingdome. Happy is that King, and fortunate that Prince, vvhose Subjects serue him for loue, and who out of his vvisedome leaues now and then an eare open to the peoples complaints, as also their advice; for onely by this meanes shall he come to know truthes, vvhereby he may redresse those things, that are amisse, and keepe off flatterers from abusing his eares.

Envy, and flattery, hurtfull to a Common-wealth.

There vvould I haue liu'd all the dayes of my life, and haue past away the time, like a Duke, had I had wherewithall. But I was in a manner blowne vp, and all my money was almost spent. I need not to confirme this vnto you with an oath, for you may very well (if you will) beleeue me on my bare word. The River now began to grow drie, and my store to faile me; for, *Del monton que sacan, y no ponen, presto lo discomponen.* Pull from your heap, and put nothing to it; you, or your heape (if not both) may rue it. So that my moneys still going out, and none comming in, if I should haue staid any longer there, I should quickly haue runne my selfe out at the heeles, and it would haue beene a great dis-reputation for me, to haue come in a horse-backe, and to goe out a-foote. I thought it good counsell to vphold mine honour, and to depart from thence, both to my credit, and content, before that being forced therevnto by necessity, I should come to discover my wants, and be bound to stay still there, for lacke of meanes to be gone. I acquainted *Sayavedra* with this my purpose, and plainely opened my minde vnto him; For by this time, I knew well enough, that hee was likely to be my onely helpe at a pinch, my strong forte, and the onely trench wherevnto I might vvith safety retire, and that I could not haue met with such another companion in all the world for my purpose. I went preparing him by a little and a little, working and disposing him by degrees, that hee might not afterwards thinke that he had seene strange visions, and vaine apparitions, and that whatsoever should hereafter befall me, might not seeme new vnto him, or accounted as a novelty.

proverbe.

When I had thus moulded him, he said vnto me; Sir, There is one remedy, that offers it selfe vnto me now on the sodaine, neither chargeable, nor hard, but very easie to be effected, and that may make much for your profit. Seeing there is no remedie, but wee must be gone, it is not much materiall vvhich gate vvee goe out at; for at any one of the ten, we may travell out on our ten toes, to goe abroad, and see the world. Let vs (if you will be rul'd by me) take the way, that leads to *Bologna*; for besides, that it is neere at hand, and that we shall there see that famous Vniversity, we may chance likewise to haue the good lucke to meete with *Alexandro Bentivoglio*, that Master of mine, who went away with the most part of your goods. For if we hap to finde him there, (as I verily beleeue we shall,) it will be an easie matter for you to recover your owne. For, vpon that information which was made of the theft in *Siena*, it is not to be doubted, that though you get not what you lost againe, yet he or his father will at least be content to giue you good satisfaction.

Sayavedra's counsell to Guzman, for the recovery of his stolne goods.

I tooke this to be no bad counſell, but was very well pleaſed therewith, not thinking on any other thing then the force of Law, and the juſtneſſe of my cauſe; and let juſtice deale never ſo indirectly with me, I could not conceiue the leaſt cauſe of doubt, in regard of the cleare notice I could make of the theft, which would, if not all, yet haue allotted me the greater part of my goods: perſwading my ſelfe, that this party, who was principall in this theft, knowing himſelfe guilty thereof, would haue come vnto me vpon his knees, deſiring my pardon, and that he would voluntarily haue offered to make me amends for the wrong he had done me, and to come vpon any termes to agreement with me; as well for that his parents, and kindred in that Citie, were perſons of principall note; as alſo, for that notwithſtanding all the meanes they were able to make to bolſter out the matter, yet would they never permit, that ſo foule a fact ſhould come to publike hearing, and be judicially tryde, nor that they, and their houſe, ſhould be blotted and blurr'd with ſo foule a ſtaine, and diſhonour, as this could not chuſe but proue, if it ſhould once come to be ripped vp.

Will you heare a ſtrange kinde of humour in me? you ſhall then know it by this. It is not long ſince you heard me ſay, what a delicate and delightſome place *Florence* was, and what a deale of pleaſure I tooke therein. And now vpon the ſudden, I was growne out of loue with it, the very name of it was growne ſo hatefull vnto me, that it was ready, out of a loathing that I had taken to it, to turne vp my ſtomach. It began now (me thought) to ſtinke, I could not endure the ſent of it; every thing ſeemed ſo foule and ſo filthy to my ſight, that I did now long to be gone, and till then, every day was to me a thouſand. You may ſee (my maſters) what wonders want of money can worke! You will in a moment hate thoſe things, which you lou'd moſt, when you lacke wherewithall to maintaine both your ſelues, and them. Now my minde gaue me, that there was not ſuch another Citie in the world, as *Bologna*; wherein I ſhould no ſooner ſet my foot, but I ſhould recover my ſtolne wares, and haue wherewithall to ſpend, and to keepe company with your young Students, lads of the right ſtampe, merry greekes, much of mine owne ſize and marke, with whom I might play three or foure venewes, whē I were ſo diſpoſed, without any great diſadvantage of weapon. And the dice might haply haue given me ſo lucky a chance, and haue hit ſo right, that I might haue had the good fortune to haue followed my ſtudies: for that learning, which my Lord Cardinall beſtowed vpon me, I had not as yet forgot it, but was very ready and perfect in all that had beene taught me. And queſtionleſſe, with that little learning, that I then had, I might very well haue proceeded Maſter, and made a ſhift to liue by that profeſsion, if that kinde of courſe had beene fitting for me, or that my ſelfe had beene willing to apply my minde herevnto.

Guzmans minde to leaue Florence, and to goe to Bologna.

But ſtay a while *Guzman*, be not thou too haſtie: Wilt thou offer to traile a gowne after thee, being ſo weake that thou canſt ſcarce hale a halter at thy heeles? Hold thy hand, this is not a taske for thee to vndertake. There is no talking of commencing Doctor, till the bowe of preferment be drawne home by the ſtrong arme of angels. What canſt thou hope for then, who art ſo poore, that thou art ſcarce able to wagge the ſtring.

I was now fully reſolued to begin my journey, and to make all the haſte I could. And ſo in an inſtant I put this my intention in execution. Away goes *Sayavedra*, and I together, making directly for *Bologna*. And becauſe I had flying thoughts in my head, I was willing to put wings to my horſe: making ſuch good ſpeed, that we came thither that night; but ſlept very little, for we ſpent the moſt part of it in plotting and caſting about how we ſhould beare our ſelues in this buſineſſe; and whileſt we were diſcourſing to and fro, what were beſt to be done; *Sayavedra* (hauing looked well as it ſhould ſeeme on his owne cards) ſayes vnto me: Sir, I hold it not ſo fit, that I ſhould be ſeene herein at all, eſpecially now at this my firſt flight, but rather to lye cloſe awhile, till we may ſee where

Guzman and Sayavedra being come to Bologna, are perplexed, and well knowing what courſe to take.

where it would be beſt to giue the vvound; and when we ſhall come to know, where the game lies, and that there is any hope of doing good, then let vs let flie, and ſtrike it dead. For if *Alexander* be in the towne, and ſhould know that I am here, (which he cannot chooſe, if I ſtir abroad, being ſo well knowne as I am,) he vvill queſtion me, vvherefore I came hither, and vvith whom? And that known, he will abſent him-ſelfe forth-with from the Citie, and ſo we ſhall be defeated of our purpoſe. Or if he chance but to ſuſpect, that I had a finger in this buſineſſe, and that I was the cauſe of this journey, and his ſhame, there is no way but one with me, he will ſurely kill me; ſo that neither of theſe two will advantage vs any thing, nor is fitting for vs to be adventured on. Beſides, if this web muſt come to bee woven in the Loome of Iuſtice, I muſt bee the maſter-thred to be wrought vpon, there is no avoyding of it: And therefore you haue no reaſon to ſuffer mee (conſidering that I can ſtand you in no ſtead, if I be taken and clapt by the heeles) to receiue any farther harme, then what I haue already indured. The beſt courſe then to be taken, I conceiue to be this; That to morrow morning you make inquirie after him, and by one meanes or other (with the beſt ſecreſie you can) ſeeke firſt to know him, and to take particular notice of his perſon; That done, wee will conſult thereof afreſh, and governe our ſelues therein, according as occaſion and time ſhall ſerue.

f Guzman *finds* Alexandro *with his cloathes on his backe, that he had ſtolne from him.*

I did not like amiſſe of this, me thought it was good wholeſome counſell. Well; as he had adviſed me I ſet my ſelfe to worke, I walkt vp and downe the Towne, and after the treading of ſome few ſteps, not being troubled (as fortune would haue it) to tyre out my legs in the ſearch of him, it was my good hap to haue him pointed out vnto me with the finger, telling me, Loe, that's the man. Which direction I needed not, for the cloathes on his backe did ſpeake what he was, and without others teaching, could tell me, This is *Alexandro*. He was ſtanding amongſt other young men at the Church doore; nor doe I beleeue, that his devotion was ſuch, as to goe in and out to heare Maſſe, but I was rather of opinion, that hee ſtood there regiſtring thoſe that went in, offering great ſcandall, but ſhowing ſmall reſpect, to that ſacred place. It is a foule ſhame, that this is ſo commonly vſed as it is in moſt parts of the Chriſtian world. I know what I ſpeake; Would to God I knew as well how to reforme this abuſe. Are there not ſtore of ſtreets, and other publike-places in the towne, for to make loue in, which wee ſcandall too much already with our lewd ſteps, wanton lookes, diſhoneſt ſignes, and tokens, and perhaps other things of a worſe condition, to intimate our looſe and luſtfull affections, but that wee muſt wrong Gods holy Temple with this our vncivill and beaſtly behaviour.

g An ill cuſtome, that is too much vſed in many great Cities in the world. Eſpecially in Madrid, *where to prevent this Church-courting, the men are to goe in and out at one doore, and the women at another.*

But let vs proceed in our former argument, that wee may not leape from a Maſſe, into a Sermon. It ſeemed vnto me, that hee ſtood not there with any great devotion, for he talkt[h] apace with his hand, and now and then he would breake out in a loud laughter. He had at that time a doublet of mine on his backe of cloath of ſilver, and a jerkin dreſt with Amber, and other rich perfumes, cut and ſlaſht cleane through, and lined with the ſame cloth of ſilver, ſutable to the doublet, and richly laid with lace after the *Seuillian* faſhion, and eight buttons of gold wrought vpon Amber, to make it ſit the cloſer to the collar, all which a Gentleman of *Naples* preſented mee withall, for a certaine diſpatch that I had procured for him, by ſoliciting his buſineſſe with my Lord Embaſſador.

Proverbe, *h The Spaniſh phraſe is* Hablaua por la mano. *That is, he talkt with his hand. Now to talke with the hand, is an ancient faſhion of ſpeaking, by forming letters, and by putting your fingers in divers and ſundry poſtures, whereby a man makes his minde knowne.* Couar. Verb: Mano. Guzman *in a great rage; and why?*

When I came to know mine owne, and ſaw another man weare it before my face, I could haue found in my heart to haue ſtab'd him, and to haue preſently ſtript him of it, ſo did it grieue and vexe the very ſoule of me, that ſuch deare pledges as theſe of my friends loue vnto me, ſhould thus ſore againſt my will, be in another mans poſſeſsion. My bloud roſe againſt him, add I was often tempted to haue gone and ſtab'd him, but I held my hand, and ſaid with

my

my ſelfe; No *Guzman*, no; This muſt not be ſo; Better it were, that this thy thiefe ſhould be converted and liue. For if thou let him liue, hee may chance to pay thee; but if thou kill him, thou art ſure to pay for him. And of the two, it is better to take, then to giue. And ſafer it is for thee, that others ſhould be indebted to thee, then thou indebted to others. And it will bee more for thy eaſe, and more eaſily compaſt, to get in a [i] debt, then to pay a debt. Make not thy ſelfe the *defendant*, if thou maiſt be the *plaintiffe*. Goe on faire and ſoftly, be not ſo haſty, for there is no body that runs after vs. And if there be any order or Law in gaming, and if the dice runne true, if the cards bee not packt, but are well ſhuffled and cut, and that there be faire play, vnleſſe the diuell be in it, or my lucke exceeding bad, all the world cannot winne the game from me. For I haue cards enough in mine owne hand to carry it. We are ſure the bird cannot now get from vs; which is that which importeth vs moſt. Let vs not feare the Chaſe, but hunt liuely, for the Buls are ſafe enough; they cannot eſcape vs. He is taken in the manner, the theft found about him, hee cannot poſsibly deny it. I ſweare I will put him to his necke-verſe, and ſee how well or ill he will come off, and make him to confeſſe vpon the Racke, who put him into thoſe fine cloathes, or in what Faire or Market he bought them.

Having conſulted thus with thy ſelfe, I got me houne to my lodging, acquainting *Sayavedra* with what I had ſeene. He had provided me my dinner ready for me, and had ſet it downe on the table, as ſoone as he ſaw I was come; And when we had din'd, we pitcht the hay wherewith we were to catch this Cony. We diſcourſed one while of this courſe, another while of that, many deſignes we had, many meanes prepounded to come by our owne; but *Sayavedra* (poore man) did ſtagger at them, and was loath to giue way vnto them: Hee repented him now of the counſell hee had given me, fearing therein his own danger. But we concluded in the end, that of all other meanes, *Peace* (if we could draw him to ſome reaſonable compoſition) were the beſt. For it is better to haue one bird in the hand, then two in the [k] buſh. And a bad [l] Accord, is better then a good Plea: Leſſe harme ever comming of agreeing, then ſuing. So that at laſt, we grew to this concluſion, that I, by a third perſon, ſhould vſe ſome meanes, to haue his father talkt withall, making him acquainted with the buſineſſe, and the whole manner how it was carried, giving him a large account of every particular thing, remitting my ſelfe to his good will and pleaſure, how he in his owne diſcretion ſhould thinke meet I deſerv'd to be dealt withall, and that he would not enforce mee (conſidering my faire manner of proceeding with him) to recover mine owne by rigour of Law, being there was *Euidentia facti*; beſides many other pregnant proofes to be produced, that theſe goods were mine. And ſo I did, as we had deviſed; having made choice of a diſcreet perſon, who ſhould ſecretly and with fitting language, deliver thus much vnto him. But becauſe *Power* is commonly accompained with *Pride*, and *Pride* is ſtill attended with *Tyranny*, he was ſo far from compounding the buſineſſe that he made little reckoning of it, taking it ill at his hands that treated with him about it, wiſhing him that hee ſhould ſpeake no more of it, deeming it as an *affront* done vnto his honour, and a meere defamation. He feigned him-ſelfe to be greatly wronged, though he knew well enough that I was he, that was injur'd; and without giving vs either good hopes, or good words, he diſpatcht my meſſenger.

When I receiu'd this anſwer, I hatched a thouſand evill imaginations in my heart. But becauſe I would not returne evill for evill, I reſolued to talke with ſome one Lawyer or other of that Vniverſity, that ſhould be recommended vnto me for the nimbleneſſe of his wit, and ſoundneſſe of judgement; to whom I opening my caſe (fearing the ſucceſſe thereof, for that my adverſaries father was ſo powerfull) might craue his opinion, and that hee would aſſiſt me with his beſt advice and counſell, for the better proſecuting of his buſineſſe. Hee plainly

Proverbe.
[i] Mas facil cobrar, que pagar.

Proverbe.
[k] The Spaniſh proverb is, Mas valia paxaro en mano, que Buey volando. *Better a bird in hand, then a Vulture flying. Signifying thereby, That what a man hath ſafe and ſure in his power, is much better then the vncertaine hopes of great matters by reaſon of thoſe many accidents that may interhappen.*

Couarr. Verb. Bueytre.

Proverbe.
[l] De menor daño mal conçierto que buen pleyto. *The tyranny of great perſons.*

plainly told me; Sir, it is well enough knowne in this Towne, what manner of man *Alexandro* is, as also his lewd and idle courses, which in some other place, would be a sufficient information against him. Besides, there is so much truth in that, which you vrge against him, that it is manifestly apparant to as many as know him, or shall heare you. You haue right on your side, a just and a good cause, and therefore I would advise you to frame an information against him, and to desire justice. All *Bologna*, hath taken notice already of this theft of his; for, as soone as he came hither with it, it was presently knowne, that these clothes were none of his owne; as well, because he caused them to be altred, and fitted to his owne bodie; as also for that he carried hence with him no lambes to sell, nor any other kinde of merchandize, whereby he should make so rich a returne. Besides, another companion of his, in whom he put much trust, stole a good part of these goods from him, that he might likewise gaine thereby a part of his Pardons, & Indulgences. You see now what course you must be faine to take, what lyes in me to releeue you, you may be assured of the best furtherance and the best counsell that I can giue you, for the countenancing of this your cause.

Wherevpon, I being very desirous, that a bill should be exhibited against him, he presently (according to my information) drew one out, which I forthwith presented to the *Auditore del Torrone*, who is there the Iudge in all Causes Criminall. But, be it as it may be, whether it were immediatly from the Iudge him-selfe, or from the Notarie, I know not which, nor from whence, nor how it came to passe, but sure I am, that this businesse of mine was instantly over all the Towne, and particular notice was given thereof vnto *Alexandro's* father. And for that he was a man of authoritie in that Towne, and carried a great hand there amongst them, hee hyes him in all haste to the Iudge, and there accusing me for this my bold attempt, and inconsiderate rashnesse, (as it pleased him to tearme it) he formed a complaint against me, that I had defamed, and dishonoured his house, and that therefore he was of purpose come vnto him to desire his lawfull favour, and that he would be pleased to doe him justice, to the end that I might be severely punished for this my presumption. I know not how, but the matter was so carried betweene them, that it had beene better for me to haue held my peace. Hee was a powerfull man in that Citie, and the Iudge (it seemed) was very vvilling to pleasure him. I began now to feare, that occasions of quarrell would be pickt against me; mole-hils made mountaines; and this my losse, turne to my greater losse; making my vndoing an occasion of my farther vndoing. For *Loue*, *Interest*, and *Hatred*, are ever maine enemies to the *Truth*. And in many places, As a man is befriended, so his Cause is ended. But hee that hath both money and friends, is sure to worke out his ends. Money is of no great thickenesse, yet it dulls the double edg'd sword of justice, if it but once offer to touch it. Gold, is a heavy mettall; and that makes the ballance of Iustice so light. I did spit as it were against heaven, the drivell whereof fell vpon my owne face; I shot my arrowes vp into the ayre, and they returned backe againe vpon mine owne bosome; the innocent paying for the [m] nocent; and the just for the vnjust.

Truthes enemies.

What abates the edge of Iustice?

Proverbe.
m Pagan los justos, por pecadores.
n Mucho daña, el mucho dinero.

Much [n] money, does much harme; But much more, the evill intention of an evill man. And therefore where an ill-minded man, and a great masse of money meet together and shake hands, there is much need of helpe from heaven to free an innocent soule out of their cruell clawes. Good Lord deliver vs from out their clutches; for they are more griping and tyrannous, then those of Tygers, or of Lyons. Their will is a law; whatsoever they desire, that they doe; right (when they list) shall bee wrong; and wrong right: And no man must controle them for it; nor dare to say, blacke in their eye; lest he chance to lose both his owne, for prying too neere into the secrets of these earthly gods. O that there were men of that goodnes and courage, that would not

not ſticke to tell them,and plainely giue them to vnderſtand;that the money, they thus vnlawfully take,ſhall laſt with them but a while;but the fire,wherewith they ſhall be tormented for it,ſhall continue for ever.

The Iudge did limit me a prefixed time for my proofes, but ſo ſhort that it was not poſſible for me to make my information according to that ſcantling. In this you may ſee the injuſtice that he did me. Who did ever till now know a Iudge reſtraine the Plaintiffe of lawfull time to make his proofe, as hee did mee, eſpecially when I did alleage for my ſelfe, that the information was to come from *Siena*, where the theft was committed, whence I was to procure it,for otherwiſe I could not haue it. But to alleage this,or not alleage it,all was one. I muſt be content,will I,nill I,to ſit downe with the loſſe. There was no fence for it. And to this purpoſe,before I paſſe any farther,I will tell you what hapned in a little Village of *Andaluzia*.

A ſhort tale of an Alcalde.

There was a certaine ſeſſiing to be ſet in a ratable proportion, vpon the Towne dwellers,& borderers thereabout, for ſome publike peece of worke, that was to goe in hand;and the Collectors that were appointed to gather the mony, had put into their rolle (to contribute therevnto) a Gentleman of as ancient a houſe,as any in thoſe parts;who taking himſelfe therein to be greatly wronged,made his complaint againſt the Collectors. But for all that,they did not ſtrike his name out of the rolle. Now,when the time was come for the levying of theſe moneyes, they went vnto this Gentleman to demand ſo much of him,as he was rated at in their note;He refuſed to pay it. Wherevpō they diſtrained on his goods, and paid themſelues. The Gentleman being much offended with this their proceeding, goes forthwith to his Lawyer, askes his counſell,who(in concluſion)drawes me a petition for him,grounded vpon all both Law,and Reaſon, wherein he layes open his ancient Gentry, and the nobleneſſe of his Houſe,and that in regard thereof he was priviledged from all manner of ſeſſings,and ſuch other the like payments, and that therefore he did humbly petition the Court,that they would be pleaſed to giue preſent order, that what the Collectors had forcibly taken from him, might againe be reſtored, and be deliuered backe vnto him, as in all equity it ought. When this petition was by them delivered vnto the *Alcalde*, having read it, and heard what they could ſay for themſelues,hee called to the Regiſter, and ſaid vnto him;Marke well,what I ſhall ſay vnto you,and ſee you ſet it downe in the very ſame words,as I ſhall deliver it vnto you. This Petitioner,(then ſaid he)as hee is a Gentleman, I will by no meanes debarre him of his priviledge, God forbid I ſhould deny him his juſt requeſt; but as hee is a poore man, his Houſe growne now to decay, and himſelfe(as you ſee)in want,I hold it very fit,that he pay as others doe.

That I had juſtice on my ſide,no man doubted it; it was ſo publike a thing that all the world tooke notice of it. But I was poore and needy, and therefore it was fit I ſhould pay for all,& there was no reaſon(in that reſpect)that they ſhould do mee juſtice. I preſently ſmelt a rat; I ſaw this was a bad ſigne, and was ſhrewdly afraid,that all my labour would be loſt. But I could not for all this perſwade my ſelf,nor could it ſinke into my head,that I ſhould be that man,of whom it is ſaid by way of proverbe; *Paçiente,y apaleado*: that I muſt goe away with the wrong,and the blowes too. Firſt be made cuckold, and afterwards knockt for my prating. Well ſuch was my hard fortune,that being not able to bring in my proofes in ſo ſhort a time, it ſo fell out with mee that my Bill of Complaint,was throwne out of the Court,and held as a thing of no validitie or force in Law,and that of the adverſe part,tooke place againſt me; declaring there in Court, that I by this my petition had framed an infamous Libell againſt his ſonne,by meanes whereof his Houſe, and his honour was much defamed;adding and interſerting,*in majorem cautelam*,I know not what a world of words,and what ſtrange and intricate termes. That I did *ſponte, indubitatè,*

Proverbe. Cornudo, y apaleado, *Is proverbially ſpoken of thoſe, who beſides the wrong they haue receiued, are themſelues condemned as faultie.* Covarr. verb. Apaleado.

dubitatè, &c. That I did it wittingly and willingly, impudently & malitiously, aggrávating the matter against mee with all the odious termes they could deuise, that if I should set them downe one by one, they would take vp a whole sheet of paper. Alleaging farther against mee, that forasmuch as his son, vvas a quiet, honest, and peaceable Gentleman, and of a good both report, and life, I did deserue I know not what exemplary punishment, hanging, burning, and drowning, all vvas too little, that I knew not what to make of it, nor vvhat a Gods name, they vvould do vvith me. Which things, when they vvere read vnto me, I said to my selfe; These men may haue healthy bodies, but I am sure they haue sicke soules; They may haue good purses, but I finde (to my cost) they haue bad Consciences. I vvas careless, (as one that was confident of a good cause) I never shrunke aside, and as I was afterwards going about my businesse, that my sute might not fall, for want of following, I was taken vp in the midst of the streete by an Arrest, and presently carried away to prison, without any other information against mee, saving only the putting vp of my petition, and acknowledging it to be mine.

Guzman clapt in prison.

There is no sword that hath so sharpe and keene an edge, as Calumnie, and false Accusation: and then cuts deepest, when it is in the hand of a tyrannous Iudge; whose force and power is such, that it is able to overthrow, and lay level vvith the ground, the best grounded Iustice that is, though it haue never so sure, never so strong a foundation. Which it doth then most, and most easily, when a poore mans cause comes in his way, vvho suspects (poore harmelesse soule) nothing lesse, then to receiue hurt from him, to whom hee flyes for helpe. My businesse was plaine, no tricks, no giggs in it, I did onely set downe the naked truth, but they made it I know not how, by their quillets and devices knotty and vneven, though there was not a man, neither within, nor without the Towne, that did not know, all was true, that I had delivered; and all this did plainely appeare to the Iudge to be so, and that I had sufficient information.

Little reckning made of the poore.

All this is very good; yet for all this (goodman *Guzman*) giue mee leaue to tell you, that you are a goose-cap. Thou art poore thou vvantest favour, and friends; and therefore art neither to be heard, nor beleeu'd. these are not Cases, that are to be brought before the Tribunals of men; but when thou hast occasion to haue thy cause tryde, go get thee to God, petition him, where the truth shal appeare face to face, without any need of the favour of thy frend, nor an Advocate to plead thy cause, nor a Register to record it, nor a Iudge to wrest it. But here they made a sport of Iustice, and like Iuglers plaid *legger-demaine* vvith mee. They punisht mee, as an vnmannerly man of my tongue, a lyar, and a lewd companion. I had spent my moneyes, lost my goods, put in prison, gyues clapt on my legs, treated with evill language, vpbraiding mee with many foule and vncivill reproches, vnworthy my person, without suffering mee to open my mouth in mine owne defence. And when I would haue answered their objections, and giuen them satisfaction by writing, when they saw how the world went with mee, my Proctor forsooke mee, my Solicitor would not come at me, my Advocate refused to plead for me, so that I onely now remained in the power of the publike Notarie. The onely comfort that I had, was the generall voyce of my wrong, comforting me, that that terrible & fearefull day, would one day come, that the powerfull shall for all his power, be condemned to Hell, and that there, your *potentes, potenter punientur*, your mighty men shall be mightily punished; for that they are accursed of God for perverting of justice. And that vvhich hee shall leaue behinde him, shall not continue to the third heire, though he tye his land neuer so fast, nor make never so strong a conveyance, that it shall not goe from the house: For he cannot (though he would never so faine) tye the inclinations of those that are to succeed him; nor is there any prevention, that he can vse, of that force as the least

haire

haire of his head, to make any reſiſtance againſt Gods divine will and pleaſure. And it is to be beleeued as an Article of thy faith, that their lands and eſtates muſt be ſpent and conſumed, for that they are the grindings of the face of the poore, vngodly gaine, the blood of the innocent, gotten in rage, and maintained with lyes.

But thou vvilt ſay vnto mee; Truſt them with ſo much more, till that day come, and you ſhall ſee whether they will make any bones of either taking the one, or thinking on the other. Where-vnto I anſwer, that how ſleight a reckoning ſoever thou mak'ſt of it, and that it ſeems ſo long a day to thee, that it will never come, I doe not know what theſe kinde of men may thinke of it, but I know very well, that it will come, and that quickly, and ſooner perhaps then thou art aware. And then it ſhall ſeeme ſo ſhort vnto thee, that thou wilt ſay; I am but newly come forth with my feete from out my bed, and the night is already come, and I muſt ſhut vp my eyes in darkeneſſe.

But perhaps, thou wilt reply vnto mee; I pray how cam'ſt thou by ſo many good ſuits of cloathes, ſo much money, and other things of value? Thou didſt not get them by the ſpade, nor the plough, thou didſt not digge, nor delue for them. What didſt thou make in that ſtreete, vpon that occaſion and accident you vvot of, vvhen you ſeru'd your Maſter the French Embaſſador? Is this (quoth I) the rod, you ſeeke to beate mee withall? Thou art caught in thine owne trap; thine owne words doe condemne thee. For thou would'ſt liken theſe goods of mine, to thoſe that are gotten by lewd women, whereas thou doeſt not, but oughteſt to vnderſtand, that their gaine is lawfull, though the act be vnlawfull; and thou art in conſcience bound to recompence her, if thou haſt had thy deſire of her, and didſt make vſe of her for thine owne intereſt. Beſides, the caſe is not alike. For it is publikely knowne to all the world; that though a corrupt Iudge commit neuer ſo many miſchiefes, never ſo vnjuſtly put men to death, neuer ſo wrongfully rob a man of his goods, and vndoe him by his partiall and corrupt dealing, thou ſhalt haue little or no remedie againſt him, nor canſt thou take that from him, which he hath ſtolne from others. For thou art not his competent Iudge, nor of that power as to adjudge againſt his will that to others, which he hath taken from them. For though it be true, that he is culpable therein towards others; thou ſhalt be ſure to be found culpable towards him. And howſoeuer he ſcape, thou ſhalt be ſure to ſmart for it. Beleeue mee, I tell thee what is true, nay, I tell thee truth it ſelfe; truth vpon truth.

But what good does this doe mee? My name is *Pero Garzia*, I am a kinde of *Tom-Tell-Troth*. A free *Aruntius*, that muſt vtter my minde plainly, though perhaps I may chance to ſmart for it. If wee ſhould all ſtriue to heare truth, & to make ſatisfaction for thoſe wrongs we haue done, we ſhould ſee the Hoſpitals to be quickly fill'd. And now in good ſooth, I bethinke my ſelfe, that it is better to enter into Heaven with one eye, then into Hell with two. And that *S. Bartholmew*, had rather haue his skin pull'd over his eares, then to ſleepe (as they ſay) in a whole skin, and to goe therewith to eternall torment. And that *S. Lawrence* made the better choiſe, when hee choſe rather to be burned here, then there. But (alas) we cannot be all *S. Bartholmewes*, nor *S. Lawrences*, ſo as we be ſaved, that is ſufficient. For mine owne part, I ſhould be glad of the like good fortune. For hee ſhall performe no ſmall peece of worke, that ſhall worke out his ſalvation. But to be ſaued, many things are required. And it ſhall be impoſſible for thee to be ſaued, by keeping thoſe goods in thy hands which thou haſt ſtolne, whē as thou art able (if thou wilt) to make reſtitution. Which thou art loth to do, or doſt not at al, that thou maiſt leaue it to thy heirs diſ-inheriting thoſe, that are the true owners thereof: And therefore doe not thou ſeeke to trouble either thy ſelfe, or vs, to excuſe theſe thy robberies and vnjuſt actions, by cunning ſhifts, to cozen thine owne ſoule, and by leſſening

and mincing of them, as though they were matters of nothing, and therefore need not much to trouble thy conſcience; for this that I deliver vnto thee is the Catholike faith; and thoſe other thy tricks and devices, the ſleights and ſubtleties of Satan. Miſerable, and moſt wreched is that man, who for the maintaining of his pride and pompe in the world, and that he may leaue either his children, or his nephewes great titles, and rich revenues, hath heaped vp riches by indirect meanes, and hath filled his houſe vp to the top with ill-gotten gaine, contenting himſelfe, ſo as hee may leaue a name here behinde him vpon earth, to leaue his ſoule, to liue hereafter for ever in hell. Theſe (I aſſure you) are no jeſting matters, they are not to be jeſted withall; for ere long thou to thine owne coſt ſhall finde that to be too true, which I now tell thee. I call thee thine owne ſelfe, to be a witneſſe of that which I haue ſaid; I deſire no other. And let me tell thee withall; That thou thy ſelfe doeſt not know when thy dayes ſhall haue an end, or whether thou ſhalt haue ſo much time of life lent thee, as too reade out theſe good leſſons, vvhich I reade vnto thee, howſoever fooliſh they may ſeeme vnto thee. But in that other world, thou wilt be of another minde. Nor doe not thou flatter thy ſelfe, That thou haſt built ſuch a Chappell, and maintaineſt ſo many Chaplaines to pray for this ſoule, but at mine and other mens coſt, ſtripping one of his coat, another of his cloake, wherevnto thou haſt no right in the world. For Maſſes (though S. *Gregory* himſelfe ſhould ſay them) cannot benefit the damned, there is no redemption, when the ſentence is once paſt.

O good God! When ſhall I make an end of troubling thee with theſe, and the like diſcourſes? For I know thou doeſt not looke for theſe Sermons from me, nor any other kind of wholſome doctrine, but expecteſt only ſuch things, as may ſerue to entertaine the time, or to bring the aſleepe. I doe not know how to excuſe this terrible temptation, that I haue to talke in this faſhion, ſaue only by telling thee, that it is with mee, as it is with drunkards, who no ſooner get a penny, but they goe and ſpend it at the Taverne.

There is not any [p] ſhauings, of metall, ſtone, or wood, that I can meet withall, good or bad, one amongſt another, but that I ſeeke to make ſome vſe of it, and ſtudie to ſerue my ſelfe with it, only that I may the better ſerue thee. And if that which I haue ſaid, ſeeme vnto thee to be well ſaid, it is well that I haue ſaid it: but if it ſeeme ill vnto thee, reade it not over any more, nor goe therein a jot farther. For it is all [q] mountainous matter, rough and craggie, vvherein perhaps, thou ſhalt meet with more paine, then profit, yet do thou but write the like, & I ſhall patiently endure whatſoever thou ſhalt ſay. But I will conclude this Chapter with telling thee; That when misfortune ſhall follow a man, no diligence, nor good counſell ſhall availe him; but ſhall, where hee thinks to gather wooll, goe away with his fleece ſhorne.

p *The Spaniſh word is*, Ripio. Circa de los canteros, ſon las piedras menudas que ſaltan de las pieças que van labrando. ò otro genero de piedras menudas, para rehinchir las paredes bezimo, meter vno mucho ripio, quando la meteria que va tratando, ingiere algunas coſas friuolas, à ſemejança del que haze paredes, que poniendo en las dos hazes piedras grandes, todo lo en de medio hinche deſte caſcaxo y ripio. Counrr. verb. Ripio.

q Todo es matas, y por rozarid eſt, Todo es trabajoſo, y difficultoſo. Ib. verb. Rozar.

Chap. III.

Guzman de Alfarach, *diſcourſeth on the injuſtice which ſome Iudges doe, blinded by gaine, or by paſſion.*

I Came out of priſon, as out of priſon. I need not to indeare it more vnto you. For, the leaſt I can ſay of it, is; That it is a true and liuely picture of Hell it ſelfe. I got forth, out of a deſire that I had to enjoy my former libertie; and had I not (thinke you) great cauſe to deſire it? For hee, whom they had ſo vnjuſtly bereaued of it, had good cauſe to feare greater dangers to enſue. For if ſo juſt and ſo faire a buſineſſe, as this was, did fadge ſo ill with me at the firſt, and that my Adverſary had the better of the day of me, when I thought my ſelfe ſureſt of the victory; I might very well, and with a great

great deale of reaſon perſwade my ſelfe, that in negotiating the reſt, I ſhould finde much difficultie: Perhaps theſe men thinke, that God ſleepeth. But doe not withall conſider, that even thoſe, who had no knowledge of him, both did, and doe feare him.

Eſope asking *Chilo*, what God did: How he ſpent his time: And in what he did buſie and imploy himſelfe: Told him; In exalting the humble, and in bringing downe the proud. I am a ſinfull man, a lewd liuer, and a naughty fellow; and ſithence they did inflict puniſhment vpon mee, ſure I muſt be in ſome fault. For it is not to be ſuppoſed, that an honourable Iudge, one that profeſſes knowledge, and holineſſe of life, will be wonne either by fauour, by gifts, or by feare, to pervert the courſe of Iuſtice, or to lay ſo heavy a burthen on his tender conſcience. Eſpecially conſidering with themſelues; That every man ſhall be rewarded according to his workes. But let them goe as they are. For the Iudges of the earth muſt be judged; and therefore I will not judge them, nor grinde them any more with this ſtone. I had now beene taught experience to my coſt, and ſufficiently beaten with mine owne rod, inſomuch that having beene once ſcalded with hot water, I was now afraid of cold. That from that day forward, I would neither paſſe by the *Torrone*, which was the place of Iuſtice, nor by the priſon, nor ſcarce come within foure ſtreets where they were. Not ſo much for my impriſonment, but for the wrong I receiued therein, contrary to all Law, and reaſon. I did not ſee a hackney-man vvith a wand in his hand, nor a Carrier with a cudgell vnder his arme, but I preſently thought vpon the [a] *Vare*, or rod of Iuſtice. Ever after I reſolued vvith my ſelfe, rather to ſit downe with loſſe, then to goe to tryall of Law; at leaſt to vſe all the meanes that I could to the contrary, till I ſaw there was no other remedie, being compelled therevnto rather by force, then neceſſitie. The reaſon mouing mee therevnto, is that counſell vvhich I gaue another in the time of my impriſonment.

God exalts the humble, and humbles the proud.

[a] Vare, quaſi Virga.

There vvas a certaine fellow brought to priſon, for that hee had bought a mandillion, vvhich they ſaid, vvas ſtolne, the owner vvhereof vvas my very good friend. Who told me, that albeit hee knew, that the party impriſoned, vvas a perſon not to be ſuſpected to be conſenting to any ſuch baſe kinde of pilfrings, yet at leaſt, he would make him, to bring forth him, that ſold it him; for vvhen that mandillion was ſtolne, hee loſt many other things with it, and therefore, though he might haue his mandillion reſtored vnto him, he would not reſt ſo contented, but vvould either loſe it, or recover the reſt.

I told him; Sir, you are my friend; The Law is coſtly, and therefore let mee adviſe you not to enter into it; you are fairely offered, and therefore (if you be wiſe) take your mandillion, leſt you ſpend your cloake, to recover your coat; you vvill get nothing in the end by the bargaine; cloake, and coat, and vvhatſoever elſe you pretend, will goe all away in fees, ſo that the Lawyer at laſt will haue all, and your ſelfe nothing. Hee vvould not be ruled, and being (as all ſelfe-will'd men are) ſtrongly wedded to his own opinion, he flatly told me he would goe to a tryall with him, and ſee what would come of it. For he aſſured himſelfe, that he had a great deale of reaſon on his ſide, and that his Proctor, & his Advocate had told him, that hee needed not to doubt of his cauſe, and that it would ſurely paſſe on his ſide. In concluſion, he had ſpent ſome fifteene dayes in following the ſute againſt him; in all which time there was no fault to be found againſt the priſoner; but prou'd himſelfe in the end to be an honeſt man; whereupon he was preſently freed out of priſon; my friend perceiuing at length, how hee had play'd the foole, repented himſelfe of the loſt time and charges, which he had ſpent in the ſute. So that he was forced to ſell his cloake, & was yet never a whit neerer the recovery of his mandillion; & I doubt not, but the Lawyers ſtript him to the very ſhirt, before they had done with him.

No good comes of going to Law.

Let thoſe therefore, that can excuſe it, leaue off to goe to Law; for your

The nature of Law-ſutes.

Law-ſutes, are like vnto your Mats; wherevnto, they that make them, goe adding one by one, ruſh to ruſh, and never make an end, till they cut them off, or cleane rid their hands of them.

Law-ſutes, for whom they are fitteſt.

Law-ſutes, belong properly to great perſons, and for great and important cauſes; for they haue wherewithall to hold plea, and are able to maintaine it. To theſe, the dooresare ſet wide open, they are vſherd in by the officers of the Court, all ſhew reſpect vnto them; and if they ſpend their money, they haue money to ſpend. But as for thee, and me, we muſt for the recovering of fiue Royals, ſpend fifteene, and loſe a hundred more in the loſſe of our time, beſides a thouſand troubles, and as many enemies, which we ſhall get thereby. And worſe will it goe with vs, if we ſhall chance to goe to Law with one, that is mightier then our ſelues; for, that a poore man, ſhould goe to Law with a rich man, is all one, as if he ſhould offer to wreſtle and trie his ſtrength with a Lyon, or a Beare. It is true, ſome ſuch there haue beene, that haue given them the foyle, and ſometimes quite overthrowne them, but this hath ſeldome happened, and when it doth, it is held ſo ſtrange a thing, that it is accounted as a wonder, or ſome rare miracle. Thoſe jeſtes are vnſavory [b], that turne to a mans hurt. It is no ſporting with edge tooles. Doeſt thou not ſee, and know, that theſe kinde of men, will make the Sunne to ſhine at midnight? And that they caſt out devils in the name of *Belzebub*? But as for vs, poore ſoules, *Lalochona, nos pare gozques*; All things goe croſſe with vs; eſpecially, in cauſes criminall, where the ſtreet of Iuſtice, is of that great bredth and length, where the Iudge may eaſily winde himſelfe, whither, or which way he will, goe on this, or that ſide of the ſtreet, or to keepe the middle way, as he himſelfe ſhall haue moſt minde to. Hee can either lengthen, or ſhorten his arme, and reach out his hand, either to helpe thee, to to hurt thee, according as it ſhall haue a feeling of the buſineſſe.

Proverbe.

b No ſon buenas burlas, las que ſalen á la cara.

proverbe.

Good counſell, for thoſe that goe to Law.

And therefore, to him that will not wilfully caſt himſelfe away, but deſires to haue a faire end of his buſineſſe, my advice is; That he guild the Iudges bookes, and preſent the publike Notary with a ſilver pen; So may he quietly lay himſelfe down to ſleepe, and take no farther thought for the matter, nor ſtand in need of *Doctor*, or *Proctor*, to plead and ſolicite his cauſe. If that courſe were taken in many Cities of *Italy*, which is vſed in diverſe other *Provinces*, yea alſo among the very *Barbarians*; with whom, when any one is abſolued or condemned, the Iudge ſets downe in his ſentence vnder his owne hand, the cauſe that moued him to giue ſuch ſentence, and vpon what grounds hee did it; ſurely, there would a great deale leſſe evill come of it; for, if he could ſhow good reaſon for that which he did, he need not be aſham'd who ſees it, and the party thereby, whom it concerneth, ſhall remaine well ſatisfied; But in caſe he ſhall not haue proceeded therein according vnto Law, but hath dealt vnjuſtly in ſentencing the buſineſſe, ſome other ſuperiour Iudge ſhall be appointed to rectifie that wrong, and to amend the others errour. And I knew a Iudge my ſelfe, to whom a Merchant paid a round ſumme to haue him paſſe a ſentence on his ſide, thinking thereby ſo to affright the adverſe party, that deſpayring of any hope of good in his ſute, he might draw him to what compoſition it pleaſed him: Which a particular friend of his vnderſtanding, came vnto the Iudge, and told him; I wonder, Sir, how you could ſentence this cauſe in this manner, being ſo contrary, as it is, to all Law and reaſon. To whom, the Iudge anſwered, That it made no great matter. For he was but a ſub-alternall Iudge, and that there were other Iudges, that were his ſuperiours, who might (if they would) reverſe that ſentence, nor ſhould the other loſe any thing at all by that, which he had giuen againſt him.

A Iudge on an ill condition, and a worſe conſcience.

Such kinde of men as theſe, will not ſtand much vpon committing theſe and the like errours, nor examine themſelues, whether they doe well or ill in it; for with them it is not accounted a fault, though it may truly be call'd *Error de*

pra-

præsenti, an error in the *Indicatiue Mode*, a most foule fault: for in so doing, he doth rather deceiue, then judge. But in my poore opinion, he is a foole, that may, and will not shunne Law-sutes; And in good Philosophy, *Minus est damnum vnum sufferre, quàm multos*; It is lesse harme, to suffer at one then many mens hands. When thy adversary does thee an injurie, it is one alone, that does it; and by him onely dost thou suffer. But if thou goe about to revenge it, goe which or what way soever thou wilt to worke, thou leap'st (as we say) out of the (c) frying-pan into the fire; and seeking to avoyde one inconvenience, thou run'st headlong into another; nay into many, one vpon the necke of another. Wilt thou see the truth of this? I will show thee the way then, vvherein thou must vvalke.

Wise is that man that avoydes going to Law injuries to be borne withall.

Proverbe.

c Sartaste de la salten al fuego.

First of all; Thou mayst chance to light vpon an *Alguazil* (who is a common Catch-pole, or apprehender of mens persons) a fellow, that hath neither soule, nor shame, who but the other day, was a *Tavernero*, a seller of wine, as his father was before him, though happely now they keepe no shop. And if the father were a thiefe from the beginning, the son is now the greater of the two. Who either bought that *Vare*, which he beares, to finde him meat to put in his mouth; or else hath hired it of another, as a man doth a mule; He is such a kind of poore, yet vnsatiable creature, that he must either steale, or starue; and doth therefore steale, that he may satisfie his hungry maw. And vnder pretence that he is the Kings officer, & carries the Kings white wand, or *Vare* in his hand, throating it out, whersoever he comes, *Alguazil soy, traygo la vara del Rey*; I am an *Alguazil*, & carry the Kings staffe: he neither feares the King, nor keepes his Lawes, but both against the King, against God, and against all law, will he offer thee a hundred excesses, a hundred indignities, both in deeds and in words, that he may moue thy patience so farre, as to make thee ready to runne out into resistance of justice (which is the trap, he lets for thee) and bring thy offence to be criminall; & though thou didst not make any the least stirre, nor hadst any such meaning, yet will he enforce it against thee, and perswade others (all that he can) to beleeue it.

d Tour Taverneros *in Spaine, are not of that credit as your* Vintners *with vs, being for the most part poore base rogues. Into whose Tavernes, no man of fashion will come; as holding it to bee a discredit so to doe. They haue but one poore lower roome, and dresse no meate.*

Alguazils *are to be avoyded.*

What kinde of fellowes they be

Iknew an *Alguazil* in *Granada*, that had two teeth, that were false & counterfeite, & fastned by Art to those other that he had in his head. And in a certaine broyle or quarrell that sodainly arose in the street, he cõming in among them, he secretly puts his fingers into his mouth, and cunningly pulling them out, causing his gumes therewithall to bleed; did not shame to say, that comming in to make peace in the Kings name, they were there beaten out. And albeit this businesse did not succeed so well with him, as he could haue wisht it, nor tooke it's intended effect, for that the truth thereof came to be known; yet did not he giue it over for want of following, but vsed all the diligences he could, to possesse the Iudges with this falshood. It will lie in his hands, if thou but speake a word, or wag but a finger, to proue that thou didst giue him either ill language, or blowes; & then will he presently deliver thee over to his *Corcheres*, with command to carry thee to prison. Behold now, what an honorable calling this is, what a gentle craft, what honest men forsooth, are these your *Corcheres*, your Sergeants Yeomen, infamous Villains, Traitors, Theeues, Drunkards, shamelesse Rascals, nay impudency it selfe. Insomuch, that a witty *Lackay* said of himselfe, when they had angred him; He that sayes the word *Lackay*, sayes a victailing house; hee that sayes the word *Lackay*, sayes a Taverne; hee that sayes the word *Lackay*, sayes *Cloacam immunditiæ*; all the vncleanenesse that man can imagine. And that woman, that hath taken the paines to bring forth a sonne, that proues a *Lackay*, there is not that wickednesse in the world, which may not be presumed, to haue proceeded from her. So doe I likewise say; that he, that sayes the word *Corchete*, (that is, Sergeant, or Sergeants Yeoman) there is not that vice, that villanie, that wickednesse, which doth not vtter it selfe in that one word. For they haue neither soule

A Tale of an Alguazil *of* Granada.

e Corchete, quasi curvachete, *which signifies a claspe, that fastens a garment, and shuts it close. And by allusion, those Ministers of Iustice, which hang about a man, and hale him to prison, are called* Corcheres, *because of their taking hold like hookes. They are the same with your Sergeants yeomen.*

The wicked conditions of these kinde of men.

not conſcience; And are the onely true pictures,& moſt liuely images,of the Miniſters of hell. So cloſe doe they cling vnto thee,when thou fal'ſt into their clutches; and if they doe not drag thee by the collar, haling and tugging thee as if they would pull out thy throat, (which thou muſt acknowledge for a great and ſingular courteſie) yet at the leaſt ſhalt thou be ſo baſely vſed by them,that the Eagle will carrie away the fearfull Hare with a great deale more clemency and mercy in her ſharpe tallons, then theſe Hell-hounds will thee. They will punch thee,and kicke thee,and elbow-beate thy backe if thou goe not forward as they would haue thee, and will revile thee with ſuch baſe and bitter tearmes, as if thou wert as bad as they: And for no other cauſe in the world doe they vſe men thus ſeurvily and vncivilly, ſaue onely to pleaſe their maſter, who they know likes well enough of it; as alſo for that it is a butcherly and beaſtly cuſtome that they haue long kept, and therefore either cannot, or are loath to leaue it. Deeming themſelues, both then, and at all times,to be the onely Lords and Maſters of the world; not conſidering in the meane while, that neither hee, nor they, haue any farther power, then to put thee in ſafe cuſtodie, and that without offering thee any the leaſt wrong or injurie in leading thee thither.

Priſons, and their keepers, what kinde of things they be.

Iuſt after this manner as I haue told thee, will they violently (though thou be never ſo willing to goe quietly along with them) thruſt thee this way,and that way,never leauing off to trouble and torment thee, till they haue brought thee to priſon. Now, will you that I ſhall tell you, what manner of houſe this is, what the vſage, what you are there to endure, and what kinde of life you muſt leade there? you ſhall meet with it hereafter in its proper place; Let it ſuffice for the preſent, that if it ſhall one day be thy hap to come thither,(which God forbid)after that they haue treated thee ill vpon the way in bringing thee thither,and peradventure pickt either thy purſe,or thy pocket,and rob'd thee of ſuch moneys as thou hadſt about thee, they will put thee into the hands of ſome churliſh Iaylor, or ſome vnder-keeper of his,(as dogged a rogue as his maſter)who,as if thou wert his ſlaue,will accommodate thee in that ill favored filthy manner, as he himſelfe ſhall thinke fit, nor canſt thou hope for better, vnleſſe thou come off liuely,and pay well for it. Be it better or be it worſe, thou muſt take all patiently, and pocket it with ſilence; for thou art in his houſe, not in thine owne; and in another bodies power, &c. There, neither brauings,nor threatning, great words, nor bigge lookes, will ſtead thee any thing at all;for they are ſuch bug-beares themſelues, that they awe all, but feare none.

The hard condition of priſoners.

Then will they bring thee before the *Alcayde*,or his Deputie,or ſome ſuch like imperious officer or other,before whom thou muſt be faine to come with cap in hand, crowching and creeping vnto him, ſtudying new inventions of doing reverence and reſpect vnto him;making new kinde of legges, and other vnaccuſtomed courtſies and congies vnto him; though I count this no ſuch great matter, being rather more troubleſome,then hurtfull. For I muſt truly confeſſe vnto you, that there are ſome *Alcaydes*, that carry themſelues as fathers towards thoſe that are brought before them;and for mine owne part, I ever found them ſo towards me, ſo that I cannot juſtly complaine of them. True it is,they will liue by their Offices,as other men doe;they haue no other meanes to maintaine them, it is the trade, wherevnto they muſt truſt. Beſides, they come not *gratis* to theſe places of government. If they will come by the, they muſt buy them. Wherefore they doe thee a great favour,if they doe thee juſtice;if by their meanes thou come to recover thine owne, and if they giue way to thee, either to eſcape with life,or to ſuſtaine it,or quietly to order thine own houſe,or to liue ſetled in thine own eſtate without diſturbance,or to defend and make good thy plea. But in fine he is thy *Alcayde*, he that muſt judge and cenſure, either thee, or thy cauſe; He may, or may not, wiſh thee well;

Iudges, doe a great favour, if they doe thee Iuſtice.

well; He hath the law in his owne hands; thy liberty, or imprisonment lyes in his power. Well; when thou com'st to follow thy cause, thou must goe adoring thy Proctor, or thy Lawyer; but beare this in minde too I pray, that I now say vnto thee, that I say nothing of him; for that hath its *When*, and its *Where*, its time, and its place, as your [f]*Savalo*-pyes for the holy weeke; its week shall come to, when it shall be best in season.

In briefe, that I may not trouble my selfe twice with one subject, and one and the selfe-same kinde of people; I plainly tell thee, that they will be thy masters, and that thou must suffer them and beare with them, and not only be a slaue vnto thy Lawyer, but to the Solicitour, the Notarie, the Master of the Office, the Clarke of the Pleas, the keeper of the papers, and the boy, that is to goe with the Plea to thy Lawyer. But in case, thou goe home to his house, or his office thy selfe, and thou finde him retired into his chamber, or some other private with-drawing roome, dispatching of others, and thou stand waiting, looking still when it will come to thy turne to bee called in, like those, that standing on the banke of a River, expect a boat to come over vnto them from the other side, thou wilt be so tyred out with knocking thy heeles against a forme, that thou wouldst rather stay the comming forth of some furious Bull, then of him. After all this, when thou hadst made a large relation of the whole businesse vnto him, and how the case stands, hee will tell thee, that hee will burne his bookes, and giue over the Law, if thy businesse goe not with thee; This is their common language towards all their Clients, but they neither satisfie their expectation, nor performe their owne promise; for I never saw any of them, when their causes miscarried, either burne their bookes, or leane their practise. And will haue one thing or other to excuse themselues; As that the businesse was not well followed, that diligence was not vsed therein, which sho uld haue beene, or that it was his Clarkes fault, and none of his, who was out of the way, when his businesse was to be done, being either gone, at that very instant, with his children to Schoole, or to wait on his Mistris to Church, by whose default the opportunity was lost of drawing the Petition. Your Advocate hath some smacke of the Law, but little of learning. He dictates, but does not write; and the reason is, because they take them too soone from Schoole, that they may with as little losse of time as they can, apply them to these studies, whether that they were sent thither somewhat of the latest by their frinds, being kept too long from Schoole at first; or whether out of a covetous desire that they had, to haue them fall presently vpon the [g]*Digests*, leaving the Principles indigested. As if good writing should not presuppose good reading and, good reading, and good writing together, beget good Orthography, and bring forth at last a good Latine-tongue, which like linkes that belong to one chaine, ought both to be learned, and joyned together.

But of this enough: Let vs now passe on to some other Theame. For here, we doe but eate out our cloakes, and spend our time to little purpose, and lesse profit. Let vs come to your ordinary Iudge, of whom I haue said some-thing vnto you already, nor know I well, what I should say more, saue that he makes open sale of *Iustice*, hucking with you, to bring you vp to their price, and if you refuse to giue them, what they require of you, they will plainly tell you, you shall looke for no Iustice from them; for it is worth more then they aske, and that such a one, that stands there by thee, payd a great deale more for it, then he now demands of thee.

But say thou should appeale, and come to some superior Iudge, which seldome happeneth, in regard the fish dies here first, or is at least so staru'd in this shallow brooke, before it can recover that sea, that it comes thither without any Spawne, poore, and vnprofitable. Thy money is all gone, thou art needy, and not able to wage Law, for want of meanes. There thou shalt not find those private interests, and particular profits which they make to themselues; but thou shalt

[f] Saualo. *A knowne fish, and of a very good relish. And may be called* quasi Sapalo, à Sapore. *In Latine they call it* Alopa, trissa, clupea. *It vsually dies, when it comes into fresh water.* Vid. Ron. delecius de Piscibus, lib. 7. cap. 15.

He that hath to doe with Lawyers, must dance attendance.

[g] *The Bookes of the Civill Law, which being in many huge Volumes, and scattered peeces.* Iustinian *the Emperor caused to be digested into a lesser number, and better forme whence they were called* Digests.

Your ordinary Iudge, what manner of fellow he is.

Your superior Iudge, what manner of man he is.

ſhalt meet perhaps with paſſions, which ſometimes proue as bad. And as their purſes, haue not paid for thy breeding, ſo what care they whether thou be whipt or hang'd. Six yeares, more or leſſe, for which terme thou art condemned to the Galleyes, what is it to them? It hurts not them; They are not ſenſible of it; they feele not that, which thou feeleſt; nor ſuffer that which thou ſuffereſt. Theſe, I tell thee, are the Gods vpon earth, they goe to their goodly houſes, where they are well attended; they paſſe through the ſtreets, where they are honoured, and adored, and feared of the people. What care then canſt thou thinke, or conceiue with thy ſelfe, that they ſhould take of ſuch a poore ſoule as thou art? It is in their hands, to ſaue thee, or condemne thee; and ſo they will deale with thee, as their owne paſſions ſhall incline them to thy good, or hurt; or as ſome great and powerfull friends ſhall perſwade with them.

A horrible ſentence of a Iudge of Sevill.

I knew a certaine Iudge in *Sevill*, who condemned a fellow *in pœna pecuniaria*, to pay ſuch a ſumme of money by way of mulct for his offence that he had committed. Out of which he awarded two hundred ducats to be paid into the Chamber of *Sevill* by way of fine: with this command or *proviſo* in the ſentence; That not being able to pay in the ſaid ſumme, he ſhould be ſent to ſerue in the Galleyes for ten yeares, and to rowe at the Oare like a ſlaue, of free coſt, without receiving one penny of pay. And when the terme of thoſe his ten yeares were expired, he ſhould be brought backe againe to priſon to the ſaid Citie of *Sevill*, and from thence to the market-place, where he was to be hanged on the common gallowes.

The anſwer of a country Clowne, to an ignorant painter.

Had it beene my caſe, before I would haue given ſuch a fooliſh ſentence, I ſhould rather haue ordered it thus; That he ſhould haue beene hang'd firſt, and afterwards ſent vnto the Galleys; ſure, the cart, in this caſe, ſhould haue gone before the horſe. Iumping for all the world with that which was ſaid to an ignorant and vnskilfull painter, who talking one day in company, that ere long hee would white his houſe, and afterwards paint it; nay, ſaid one of the ſtanders-by, you ſhall doe much better if you paint it firſt, and white it afterwards.

There are ſome Iudges, whoſe tongues, ſo out-runne their diſcretion, that whatſoever comes firſt to mouth, it muſt out, nay, and muſt ſtand for good, though his owne judgement vpon its better conſideration, chide his tongue for being too forward. And if hee that is Aſſeſſor with him, is joyned as his fellow-Iudge in Commiſsion with him, ſhall take vpon him to moderate the matter, and ſeeme but the leaſt way to croſſe what he hath done, or ſhall but abate the leaſt title of what he hath decreed, or in any manner at all to mitigate the rigour of his ſentence, it is as if you ſhould take a thing from the Altar; ſo ſacred, doe theſe vnhallowed Iudges, hold their owne actions; Taking it as an indignitie, not to be endured. Looke well into the buſineſſe then, and conſider with thy ſelfe, how much the leſſer evill it is of the two, that he that hath offended thee, ſhould goe away with this his inſolencie, and thou thereby remaine free from ſome great inconvenience. Which thou ought'eſt to permit, not only (as hath beene ſaid before) that thou maiſt not be ſubject to ſo many; but alſo that thou maiſt not hurt thy ſelfe, by putting thy houſe out of order, and (by conſequence) thy honour and perſon in perill, as alſo that of thy wife, thy children, and thy whole eſtate.

It is a good thing in any man, to neglect an injurie.

But perhaps thou wilt ſay vnto me: O, it is not fit, that this Villaine, that hath thus wronged me, ſhould carry it away ſo, and laugh at me when he has done. I confeſſe it is not fit, nor is there any reaſon, why it ſhould be ſo: yet, if thou muſt needs bee laught at, it were better but one ſhould laugh at thee, then many. For if thou wilt not hold thy peace, and ſeeme not to be moved at it, but to let it paſſe, and take no notice thereof, only he can laugh at thee in his ſleeue that hath done thee this wrong; but if thou ſeeke to right thy ſelfe by Law, and be afterwards overthrowne, thouſands will laugh at thee, that

thou

thou ſhouldſt be ſuch a foole, to caſt away thy money ſo wilfully amongſt the Lawyers, having bought nothing therewith but meere ſmoake, and a little of their vnprofitable breath; and that Lawyer, will ſcoffe and deride thee moſt, that hath put thee in moſt hope, becauſe by that meanes hee hath moſt pickt thy purſe.

Well, you will ſay, it may be ſo, I care not for all this; Let the worſt come, that can come, there are many Churches to flie vnto for ſhelter, and the world is wide enough for vs all. Tell me (thou ignorant man) thinkeſt thou to excuſe one error with another? Suppoſe the beſt that can befall thee in this caſe, it is no more but *temporis dilatio*, a little gaining of time. Neither there (no nor in the Church) wilt thou be able to endure either the Prieſt, or his Curate, or that worſhipfull maſter his Sexton. And what thinkſt thou, that thou muſt ſuffer, that they may beare with thee, and giue thee leaue to ſtay amongſt them? Thinkſt thou, there is no more in it then ſo, to ſay, I will goe to ſome Church, or other, and there take Sanctuary? Thou wilt meet with more troubles there, then thou art aware of. This incommodate accommodating of thy ſelfe, will coſt thee money, nor canſt thou continue there for ever. Thinkeſt thou it ſo ſmall an inconvenience, to leaue thine owne home, and ſo to goe ſeeke thy fortune in forraine Countries? If haply thou bee a *Spaniard*, (as I my ſelfe am) whereſoever thou ſhalt come, thou art ſure to be an vnwelcome gueſt, thou ſhalt be ill received amongſt them, how faire a ſhow ſoever they make thee; for we haue this aduantage of all other nations in the world, that we are more abhorred in all places, and of all perſons, then any other people vnder the Sunne; but whoſe fault it is, I know not. Thou goeſt wandring through deſarts, from Inne to Inne, from a priuate lodging, to a common vittayling houſe. Thinkſt thou, that they are all honeſt people, that haue for their Patron the good King, *Don Alonſo*? Inne-keepers, and Vittaylers, thou knoweſt not (poore ſilly ſoule) what kinde of vermine they are, and therefore thou ſet'ſt ſo light by them, and ſeek'ſt not to flie from them.

The Spaniards *hated in all places, and of all perſons.*

Laſtly, thou ſhalt endure many inconveniences in theſe thy travels abroad; ſuffering heats and colds, winde and raine, bad weather, and bad wayes, and with it the diſtaſtfull company of divers diſtinct Nations; one while it raines, another while it ſnowes, the rivers riſe, and thou canſt not paſſe, night is neere, and thy Inne farre off, it growes darke as pitch, and the clouds furiouſly diſcharge vpon thee their lightning and thunder; and for that thou art of an impatient ſpirit, thou hadſt rather die a thouſand deaths, then indure it.

The inconveniences that befall Trauellers.

Goe to then; goe thy wayes at laſt, leaue off theſe thy idle thoughts of going to Law; ſit downe rather with loſſe, and liue in peace. For it is better that the world ſhould ſay of thee, that thou art a patient wiſe man, then a revengefull foole. What haue they either done, or ſaid vnto thee, that thou keep'ſt ſuch a coyle, and that no man was ever ſo wrong'd, as thou art? If that be true, which they haue ſpoken of thee, it is thou that haſt given them cauſe ſo to doe; and if they lye, a lye is a lye, and he that lyes, let him goe like a lyar as he is. And therefore he did not thee ſo much wrong as himſelfe, nor haſt thou any reaſon to bee revenged on another by indangering thy ſelfe. Neglect him, and let him goe for a knaue as he is; for thou canſt not take a fuller revenge of him, nor puniſh him more then to let him paſſe for an idle foole, and follow thine owne buſineſſe. I haue ſpoken enough of this, thinke vpon it, it may make much for thy good, if thou wilt well weigh what I haue ſaid vnto thee. But I muſt returne againe into my old way, and now I am entring into it.

Good counſell for thoſe that will liue at quiet.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

Guzman de Alfarache, *being freed out of priſon, falls to gaming, gets money; Wherevpon, he reſolues with himſelfe to goe to* Mallayne.

Guzman *comes heavy and melancholy out of priſon.*

I Came out of priſon, and got me to my lodging, being as ſad and melancholy, as I was poore and miſerable: ſaying to *Sayavedra*; What doeſt thou thinke of the good market, that we haue made in this faire? We may make merry with the gaines we haue got, this will ſerue for once to keepe vs out of beggerie, we need no money now, let vs ſpend, and be liuely. Conſider now I pray with your ſelfe, vpon what a ſure ground they goe, who ſeeke to recover their owne by Law. He told me, Sir, I ſee how things are carried, for I haue beene an eye-witneſſe of all that hath paſt; but what remedy is there to be had, againſt the paſſions and private intereſts of Iudges, and the force and power of the potent? But that which toucheth me neereſt, and grieues me moſt, is; That you will finde fault with me, and be offended with me, that I haue beene the inſtrument of this your wrong, and more particularly at this preſent by that counſell and adviſe, which I gaue you, to recover your goods. Which though it were done all for the beſt, hath vnfortunately fallen out to the worſt. *Sed homo proponit, & Deus diſponit.* Man propoſeth one thing, and God diſpoſeth another. Who would euer haue dream't, that things would haue fallen out as they doe? What ſhould one ſay vnto it? There is now no helpe for it. For as a man cannot avoyde the ſtone, which a foole throwes by chance over a houſe, and kills him therewith: So, much leſſe was it to be imagined, or once to be ſuſpected by vs, that ſuch a buſineſſe as this, ſo faire, and ſo full of truth, ſhould proue ſo diſ-proportionable, and ſo quite oppoſite to our vnderſtanding.

Whileſt we were thus talking of this matter, there com's me a couple of gueſts that were ſtrangers into the Inne, challenged by a young man of that Citie, to play at Cards. And in a little ſquare roome, that divided their chamber from mine, they had ſet vp a table, and to play they goe. Now I walking vp and downe that way, in my paſſing to and fro, ſeeing what paſt amongſt them, I was deſirous (for to entertaine the time, and to driue away melancholy) to draw neerer vnto them, and to looke vpon them. I did ſo, and pulling a ſtoole vnto me, taking that which came firſt to hand, I ſate me downe, viewing one of their hands for the ſpace of ſome two houres, or more, in all which time there was little or nothing loſt on either part. The money went to and fro; loſing one while and getting another; Fortune had ſhow'd her ſelfe ſo equall, that ſhee had made them in a manner all ſavers; what was wonne, was not worth the ſpeaking of, there being no difference to be diſcerned in that they had drawne before they began. Euery man entertained himſelfe with his owne money which he drew at firſt, expecting a lucky pull, whileſt I in the meane while had a ſhrewder pull in mine owne boſome. They had not that griping them-ſelues, yet did they cauſe it in me, without any other why, or wherefore, ſaue only by my looking on his cards, by whom I ſate, when either hee loſt through want of good carding, or well-playing of his game.

The nature and condition of thoſe that ſtand by, looking vpon Gameſters.

O what a ſtrange nature are we made of, which I ſpeake not only of my ſelfe, but of all in generall; for not any one of theſe men being knowne vnto me, nor having ever ſeene them before in my life, (for this was the firſt flight I had made of comming abroad ſince the time of my impriſonment) having never converſed with them heretofore, being all alike ſtrangers vnto me, yet me thought

thought I was much joyed, and was glad with all my heart, vvhen hee did winne, my affection inclining to haue fortune ſhow her ſelfe more favourable vnto him, then the reſt; and on the contrary was ſorry, when I ſaw hee loſt. See what a kinde of ſinne this was in mee; how vnprofitable to my ſelfe? how fooliſh and to no purpoſe, to deſire that the other two might loſe, that hee might rife the winner, and go away with their money, as if my ſelfe had beene intereſſed therein, or as if they had got it from me, or vvere bound to let mee haue it.

O, what an indiſcretion, what an ignorance is it, to lay other mens burthens on our owne ſhoulders; vvhich are neither of moment in themſelues, nor of any benefit vnto vs! One ſtands peeping out out at his window, and another with his head halfe out at his doore, watching only to ſee, who went out of his neighbours houſe before day, who came in at midnight, vvhat they brought in, and what they carried out, led onely therevnto out of an idle and needleſſe curioſitie; by reaſon whereof they runne into a thouſand ſuſpicions, a thouſand jealouſies of ſuch things, vvhich never were, nor could be, much leſſe to to be gathered from them, or any vvay in the vvorld to be imagined by them. Brother or Siſter, who ere thou be, get thee gone, leaue off thy prying into others actions, God helpe vs all; thou doſt not know, vvhether ſuch a one ſinneth, or not ſinneth; whether hee doth this, or that other thing, or doth it not: and it may be, that hee doth not ſinne, but I am ſure that thou doſt ſinne in doing as thou doſt. Tell mee, what doth his death, or his like, his going in, or his comming out, concerne thee? What good doſt thou get by it, or what reward doe they giue thee, for that thy nights watching, ſo ill beſtowed on thy ſelfe, and others? What honour, ſhalt thou reape by his diſhonour? What contentment canſt thou take therein? Say, by this diligence of thine, thou maiſt haply haue occaſion to doe him ſome friendly office, and beſtead him in time of need. It may by ſo. But this is ſo contrary a thing, to men of ſuch baſe condition, that I aſſure my ſelfe, nay I dare to ſeale it with an oath, that thou wouldſt not do it.

Needleſſe curioſitie.

Men ought not to prie into other mens actions

If thy neighbour, fearing ſome theeues would come that night to rob him, ſhould ſpeake vnto thee to take the paines to ſit vp & watch his houſe for him, & ſhould very earneſtly entreat thee ſo to do, tell me & lye not, what wouldſt thou ſay vnto him? what anſwere wouldſt thou make him? Certainly, thou vvouldſt tell him, that thou haſt enough to doe, to looke into thine owne, that every man is bound to reſpect himſelfe firſt; and that thou wilt not ſtand freezing in the cold, nor indanger thine owne health for to benefit another. How comes it then to paſſe, that to doe thy neighbour a good turne, and to exerciſe thy charity towards him, thou wilt not watch a quarter of an houre with him, and yet, that thou maiſt bring his faults to light, and lay open his ſpots to the Sunne, thou wilt thus play the foole to ſit vp a whole night to ſee if thou canſt light vpon any oblique action that thou maiſt lay in his diſh hereafter? Doſt thou not perceiue by this time, how ill this doth become thee? Seeſt thou not, that I ſay the truth? Thou canſt not (if thou wilt but examine thy ſelfe) but know, that it were better for thee, and would ſtand a great deale more with thine owne health, to get thee to bed betimes, and to looke how things goe at home in thine owne houſe, and to let thoſe of thy neighbour alone. Wilt thou, to do him a deſpight, charge thine owne ſoule with thoſe ſins, of which thy neighbour is free, whence his comes to be ſaued, and thine to be damned? Such a one plaies to winne, and to increaſe his ſtocke, and it grieues me forſooth, that ſuch a one ſhould winne, or ſuch a one loſe. Iuſt ſo it goes and no otherwiſe. If thou take pleaſure in looking on thoſe that game; looke on (if thou canſt) vvithout paſſion. But thou canſt not do it; for thou art, as I am; and thou wilt doe, as I doe. Of the two, I ſhould hold it the leſſer evill, that thou ſhouldſt play thy ſelfe, then looke vpon anothers game vvith ſuch

Profitable counſell for curious observers of other mens faults.

Men that looke vpon Gameſters muſt be free from paſſion.

ſuch like paſſion;for hee that playes,it is well enough knowne,that he deſires to winne; and this is a battaile, that is fought betweene two wits, or foure. Thou, being confident of thy good fortune, doeſt adventure thy money, at leaſt thou deſireſt, that they may not carry it away from thee, thou ſeek'ſt to defend thy ſelfe as well as thou canſt,and thou ſetteſt thy ſelfe downe to play with that credence and beleefe,that thou maiſt as well loſe,as win,and as well get theirs, as they get thine; In this thou ſeem'ſt to haue ſome reaſon,and deſerueſt to be excuſed. But that onely by looking on, a man of reaſon,and vnderſtanding, whom the buſineſſe nothing concernes, ſhould be ſo blinded with paſſion,as to be affected,or diſ-affected in that violent faſhion,tell mee if I doe amiſſe,in ſtyling him to be a man depriued of true judgement, and whether I may not lawfully condemne him for it. But to returne to our purpoſe; Continuing their play, within a little while after, the Sea began to ſwell, the waues grew high, & the money began to ſwimme from one ſide of the boord to the other,their bloods vvaxed hot, and their choller began to kindle, they were now at their cloſe fights,watching but advantage to boord,or ſinke each other,they grapled hard for it on all ſides,& the cards likwiſe they plaid their parts,and la d about them for life,beſtirring themſelues luſtily, and gaue one of them ſuch a blow on the head with his club, that hee was ſtrucken over boord,and he and all his money ſuncke, hauing loſt in that fight aboue a hundred Crownes. And this man, that had this great blow giuen him,was hee in whoſe hand I lookt. Of whoſe loſſe I was as ſenſible, as if the caſe had beene mine owne; thinking with my ſelfe,that I had brought him this ill lucke, and that I was the inſtrument of this his bad fortune. Which did grieue me ſo much the more, for that I vnderſtood,that he was not worth in all the world ſo much more,as he had then loſt.

The effects of game, and gameſters.

Gaming ought to be vſed for two manner of ends; either for meere gaine, or to entertaine the time. If for gaine, I ſay nothing vnto it,ſaue that thoſe, who bend themſelues that way,are like vnto Pyrats,that put themſelues forth to ſea to purchaſe ſome prize. *Capiat qui capere poteſt:* ;catch,he that can catch; Let euery one arme his own ſhip as well as he can,& haue an eye to the bullets that flie about his eares, and thoſe other warlike weapons,which they vſe in ſuch kinde of fights. Who goe ſcouring the Seas a whole yeare, in hope to meet with one lucky day.

Gaming is vſed for two cauſes.

They that play for intertainment, ſhould be onely ſuch, whom the Cards themſelues do marke and point out vnto vs;In them,ſhall we picke out ſome learning;for if we ſhall but conſider the *Kings*[a], the *Queenes*, and the *Knaues*, that are there pictured and painted forth vnto vs, from the vppermoſt of all the other,to the loweſt,which is the Ace,you ſhall not finde any portraitures or ſhapes as in the former;giuing vs thereby to vnderſtand, that none ſhould play thereat but *Kings*, *Queenes*, and *Knaues*. I can aſſure you that in all the whole packe of Cardes,you meete not with any Merchants,Tradeſ-men,Lawyers,nor Divines,for they are not befitting their profeſſions. The very Aces, ſpeake as much vnto vs;for from the *Knaue*,or rather *Sota*,which is the *Souldier*,downe to the Ace,which is the leaſt and laſt Card,thou ſhalt ſee nothing elſe but ſpots,admoniſhing vs thereby,that all (except the aforeſaid) are but Aſſes, that ſhall offer to play at Cards. And ſuch another Aſſe was this my adoptiue ſonne,in looſing that,vvhich perhaps vvas none of his owne,nor had vvherewith to pay,at leaſt could hardly ſpare it.

[a] *The Coat-cards are called in Spaine,* Rey, Cauallo,y Sota. *The firſt is the King,as with vs;The ſecond ſignifies a Knight, which is all one with our Queene. And the third a Soldier, which is the ſame with our Knaue.*

But I will not ſtraine this ſtring ſo hard, that I ſhould quite debarre men of theſe noble entertainments;for I vvill not call him a *gameſter*, vvho plaies but now and then for his recreation, once or twice, halfe a dozen, or halfe a ſcore times in a yeare,for this cannot hurt him much; eſpecially if hee do not play out of a greedy deſire of gaine,but only for ſport and paſtime. Howbeit I hold it a thing impoſſible, that a man ſhould ſet himſelfe to play, without a deſire

All gameſters deſire to win.

deſire to winne, though it ſhould be but for a pinne, and that he play, with his vvife, or his ſonne. For although a man do not ſtake money (and ſo cannot be ſaid to play for covetouſnes of the coyne) yet the opinion of a mans vnderſtanding and judgement, lies then at ſtake, and there is no man ſo meane ſpirited, and of that weakeneſſe of nature that would willingly be beaten by another, it hee could otherwiſe chuſe.

This my man, I told you of, was one of the gueſts to the houſe, where I lay, the vvinnings were divided betweene his companion and the Citizen; the quarrell ceaſed for that time, and a freſh challenge vvas made againſt after ſupper. And ſo they brake off, the winners going each their way, as their ſeverall occaſions lay; and the loſer, to looke out more money. I doubt not but hee vſ'd all the diligence he could to get more (for gameſters ſeldome want mony to gaine, though ſcarce ever haue any to pay their debts:) but becauſe it is a maſſie kinde of metall, and waighes very heavy, it ſinkes downe ſtill to the bottome, and is long and hard a getting vp againe; hee could not (it ſhould ſeeme) get any money, yet hee came thither, though without it; more offended with thoſe that vvould not lend it him, then vvith thoſe who had got it from him. Hee went vvalking and raging vp and downe the roome, puffing and blowing like a Bull; all the whole chamber was too little for him. One while he vvalkes athwart it, another, ſtalkes along from one end to the other, then againe flings me from one corner to the other corner, huffing and chafing, nothing could content him, all was vexation of ſpirit, he railes vpon the Citie, and vpon that traytor, that was the cauſe of his comming thither, that that vvas no Countrey for honeſt men to dwell in, but for theeues and cutthroats, being that hee had in that towne, a hundred knowne friends, and all of them rich and well moneyd men, yet could hee not borrow one Royall of them all, and began to ſweare that hee would doe this, and that, and I know not what, if it ſhould be his hap to meet with any of them in his owne Countrie. I gaue him the hearing, and held my peace. And when he went into his chamber, I might heare him ſit downe on his bed ſide, and might from mine, heare likewiſe the blowes which hee gaue vvith his fiſt vpon the table that ſtood by him.

Money hard to be got.

Loſers grow impatient.

I cal'd *Sayavedra* aſide, and told him; Occaſion is now offered vnto mee, either to get out of my troubles, or to get me to an Hoſpitall. And ſeeing that ſmall ſtore of mony which is remaining vnto me, is not ſo much, as to ſuſtaine vs any long time, let vs ſup well, or goe to bed with a jarre of water, all's one, as good to day, as to morrow, for hold out much longer wee cannot. What thinkſt thou of this? tell mee thy opinion, whether I ſhall play the foole, or the wiſe man in doing that which I intend? Shall it not be well done, that after ſupper, when the ſame company ſhall meet again together, wanting a third to maintaine the combat, I ſhould come forth as a challenger into the liſts, adventuring to runne my Lance amongſt the reſt, putting my ſelfe vpon fortune either to loſe, or winne the honour of the day, by hazarding thoſe few Crownes that I haue? *Sayavedra* made anſwer vnto mee, That I ſhould haue him ever ready at hand vpon all occaſions, being that he had now ſet vp his reſt to doe me ſervice, and that he would carefully doe whatſoever I vvould haue him, ſpake I in earneſt, or in jeſt, and were it good, or ill that I ſhould vndergoe, hee would alwaies ſticke cloſe vnto me, & be ſtill at mine elbow, to performe that vvhich I ſhould be pleaſ'd to command him. Yet notwithſtanding, that vpon this occaſion, I might not come off vvith diſhonour (for we were then driuen very low, and almoſt brought to beggers buſh) it vvere good to ſecure the buſineſſe. Wherefore he vvould marſhall things in that manner, that both ſafely, and ſubtlely, he would range all over the field, and evermore giue mee advice of my adverſaries forces, and how and where their ſtrength lay, and when I was to charge them home, as likewiſe to make my retreat; ſo that he keeping a

Guzman *means to venture all his money at play, and to make himſelfe either a man, or a mouſe.*

Sayavedra *offers to diſcover, to* Guzman *the others games.*

true account of their Cards, & the numbers wherewith they were to set vpon mee, it was not possible that I should lose. When hee had said thus much vnto me, a man might haue pul'd the skin over mine eares, and I should never haue felt it, for I was for very joy, ready to leape out of it my selfe; for my ability at play, and the skill and cunning that I had in handling the Cards, being holpen by his advice, there was no doubt to be made, but that I might easily convert three parts of their money to mine owne vse. Saying secretly to my selfe; *No ay mal, que no venga por bien*: There is no ill, which doth not turne to our good. And it may be that by this meanes, I might recover my selfe of those losses which I had lately receiued. I did long my selfe to haue told him as much but I did desire this base action should proceed rather out of his mouth, then mine. For I was willing in this to keepe that *decorum* which beseemeth a Master with his servant. For otherwise, if this tricke should haue beene plaid out of my hand, *Sayauedra* would happely haue said to himselfe; See, what a fine Master I serue! I haue rid my selfe of a thiefe, and haue lighted vpon a cheater. What a tree haue I taken, wherevnto to leaue? Had it not beene better for me to haue gone and leaned against a wall? Yes certainly, for that would not haue thus deceiu'd me. Stay, stay, (*Sayauedra*) for all you were my friend, it was no part of my meaning, to open my minde vnto you in that straine, doe you enter first, and you will, vpon the point of my sword, and if you haue a mind to it, come on a Gods name, when you please; for I promise you, you shall first confesse your selfe to me, before you haue any confession from me; I will haue a pawne first from you, before you haue any pledge from me. But when we haue once vnmasked our selues, and cast off all disguises on either side, let vs come off freely, deale plainly one with another, I will speake what I thinke, and thou shalt speake what thou thinkst; Let vs jumpe as well in bredth, as in length, and then there will be little odds and difference betweene vs in the reckoning. There hee and I were disputing a great while with our selues, which signes would be best, wherby we might come to know both the others hands; And at last it was resolu'd on, that the best manner of doing it, would be by the buttons of his jerking, or the joints of the fingers, according to the art of the Gammuth, when we learne first to sing. And having made triall thereof some three or foure bouts, wee grew so ready and so perfect therein, that wee now vnderstood one another better by these our tokens, then our tongues.

Proverbe.

Masters must keepe all decorum with their servants.

Guzman *and* Sayavedras *drift.*

Now were the challengers entred the lists, whilst I was walking vp & down there in the roome with my *Rosario* in my hand, like a Hermite, my servant being in the meane while in my lodging. They began to talke of falling afresh to play; wherevpon, the third man told them what had passed, and that hee could not meet with those his friends that should haue furnisht him with money, but if they would trust him vpon his word, till the next day morning, see whatsoever he should lose vnto them vpon the ticket, he would truly pay thē. The Citizen said, that hee should be well content therewith for his part, but told him withall, there was no heart in it, and that it was a kind of dull & tedious sport, and that he had never any good lucke, but did alwayes lose, when he plaid vpon the Ticket. But the other would by no meanes giue way thereunto. Wherevpon their gaming was at the best, the company was vpon breaking off, and every one going his way; but when I saw this good conversation was vpon dissoluing, leaving my Beads to keepe their owne reckoning, I stept forth and said vnto them; Since this Gentleman doth not play, so as you vvill not play too great play, but onely for entertainment, and no more, but to passe away some part of the night, and that so holy a worke may not be left off for want of a third, if it please you, I will put my selfe vpon the Cards, and trie for a while how well they will deale with me. The other two, were very glad of this, the motion pleas'd them passing well; for they tooke me to be some yong Thrush, that was new crept out of the shell, and had not my bill growne out,

and

and vvas not able to pecke at any thing. Making reckoning, that all vvas their owne, if they got me in to play, and that my money was as ſure theirs, as if they had had it already in their purſe. And for that they thought, if I ſhould chance to loſe my money, I would alſo venture my chaine (which I of purpoſe diſcovered vnto them by vnbuttoning my jerkin) and if I were once bitten, and began to bleed, being a young man, as I was, I would not haue the patience to giue over, but throw the pot-hookes after the pot, and the helue after the hatchet, and loſe all, that I was able to make.

The cheating tricks that are uſ'd in gaming

Well, wee vvere now ſet downe, and ready to goe to the buſineſſe, vvherevpon I called for *Sayavedra*, and ſaid vnto him; Goe fetch me ſome money, if you haue any ſilver left, bring it me quickly. He preſently drew out a hundred royals, vvhich I had giuen him before, that he might haue them in readineſſe, when I called for them. He abiding a while in my chamber, till our play grew a little warme, and then calling him to ſnuffe the candles, I ſaid vnto him, ſeeming as if I had beene angry with him; Are wee to be vſed thus by thee? Haue you ſo much buſineſſe to doe in the chamber, or are you ſo drowſie-headed, that you cannot ſtay here in the roome, if vve ſhould at any time haue occaſion to vſe you? He ſaid never a word, but ſtood ſtill, and held his peace, inſomuch that no man in the vvorld vvould haue once ſuſpected any harme from him, for he never offered ſo much as to caſt but an eye vpon me, nor did he at any time remoue his hand from his boſome, by which meanes he gaue me true knowledge how their games vvent. And howbeit, vvee vnderſtood one another well enough, I vvould ſometimes of purpoſe ſeeme not to vnderſtand him, nor vvould I make vſe of his warie advice, but when I had wonne two or three hands, I tooke pleaſure now and then to loſe a little. I did ſuffer them now and then to draw my money, but neither much, nor often, leſt vvhen they had me on the lift, they might haue left off: I was content they ſhould touch it, but not enter vpon it; and afterwards I vvould charge them home, that I might, having once netled them, egg them on the more. I did skirmiſh vvith them in that cunning manner, that I made them ſtill come on more and more eager vpon my money. But when I began to ſuſpect, that they would giue over the fight, and ſound a retreat, and that they were to leaue the field, and be gone, I then thought fit to purſue them to ſome purpoſe, and to follow the chaſe a little more hotly, till I ſaw them ſafe in the net, and had them in my hands, to doe what I would with them, and then did I ſet roundly vpon them and their money, bringing it all vnder my ſubjection in a very ſhort ſpace, few blowes being ſtrucken in the battell. I had got of thoſe two, all that they had gained of the other before. Whereof they were ſo aſhamed, and ſo ſtung withall, that they ſwore they would haue another bout with me the next day, challenging me againe at the ſame game. I willingly accepted of it. They came, vvee playd, and I vvas vvilling to let them winne ſome thirty Crownes of me, which they carryed away with them, giving over play for that time; for, this loſſe, was but a bayte that I laid for them, knowing that this would fleſh them, and put them in heart a-new, and make them come on brauely at our next meeting. Yet one of them was willing to continue longer, and ſaid; Let vs play greater game, for that the night growes late. Nay (quoth I) by the ſame reaſon, it were better that we goe now to bed, and meet againe to morrow, which if you like of it, and be at leyſure, we may come together ſomewhat ſooner, and taking the day before vs, we may play at pleaſure, and as long as wee liſt. They were wondrous glad to heare me ſay ſo, and that they had yet loſt ſomewhat vnto me, hoping in the end that they ſhould get more by mee.

The next day they came, with their purſes well arm'd with double piſtolets, well appointed for warre, they threw downe whole handfuls of them vpon the boord, ſome being peeces of two, ſome of foure, and ſome of ten,

ſeeming to make no more reckoning of them, then if they had beene ſo many peeces of copper coyne. Saying, as they flung them downe; *Coraggio, coraggio* (*Senor Soldado*) ſee you what here is, to be ſpent in your ſervice? I told them; Although I am not ſo rich, as to be able to doe you ſervice with ſo large a ſupply of money, yet at leaſt my good vvill ſhall not be wanting to attend vpon you, as your ſervant. I was about to tell them, that I did not doubt ere long to ſee this faire companie of theſe glittering men at armes to come and march vnder my colours. We began to play, and I went wearying of them out by little and little, giving them line enough to runne themſelues out of breath, and when I ſaw, that I had now brought them even with me, and that I might ſtrike them both dead at once, I let flie a whole volley of ſhot at them, and in a few hands, I ſaw in theſe hands of mine aboue fiue hundred Crownes, which yeelded themſelues vp to my mercy, whom (out of the pitifulneſſe of my nature) I tooke into my protection. The maine battell being thus overthrowne, my two Captaines were faine to forſake the field, after theſe their bravado's, and to trie if they could levie freſh men, and raiſe new forces to encounter me againe the next day, promiſing to bid me battell, if I durſt abide it. I was not a little glad to heare them ſay ſo, as well for that I had let them bloud both alike; as alſo, for that my heart was now pretty well at quiet; holding my ſelfe very well pleaſ'd with that which I had gotten of them, being as vvell contented, as if I had wonne all that they had beene worth. For I had now enough to ſerue my turne, and what ſhould I deſire more? But I cannot expreſſe vnto you how glad I was, that they ſhould giue over firſt; for it was a rule, vvhich I ever obſerved in my play, that I vvould not vvillingly giue any the leaſt occaſion of difference; and therefore did evermore leaue it to the loſers owne good liking, to play, or not to play; referring it to his choyce, as he himſelfe had moſt minde to. They went away in a good houre; and I fearing, that this Townes-man, might put a Towne-tricke vpon me, and that the ſtranger, being in need, and in vvant, might doe me ſome vvrong (for I vvas lately, to my great coſt, too vvell acquainted vvhat good juſtice a man was to looke for in that Citie) I told *Sayavedra*, vvhen vve vvere alone by our ſelues, that vvithout any word ſpeaking, or telling any body, whither we intended to goe, vve vvould take horſe betimes in the morning, and poſte vvith all ſpeed to *Millayne*. And ſo vvee did, leauing them full of ſorrow, but not ſo much as one croſſe of ſilver, vvherewith to bleſſe themſelues.

CHAP. V.

Guzman de Alfarache, *travayling towards* Millayne, Sayavedra *vpon the way, reconnts his owne life vnto him.*

WE rode towards *Millayne*, vvith as great haſte, as feare. For *Bologna* ſtanding ſo high as it does, it is to be diſcerned a great vvay off, the very ſhadow vvhereof, did make my heart to tremble, fearing the danger, vvhereinto it had lately put me. For I vvas ever of the minde, That there is no fault, but hath his puniſhment; no ill, but hath his chaſtiſement. Now did I vviſh, that horſes had beene borne vvith vvings, that mine might haue flowne away vvith me. But miſerable vvretch that I am, what good would that haue done me? it had beene all one to me; for then others, vvould likewiſe haue had the like horſes, to haue overtaken mee. What vvay ſoever I tooke, I found it all full of thornes, buſhes, and brambles, vvhich did ſcratch, and pricke my guilty conſcience; vvhich vvay ſoever I vvent, I vvas fearefull of danger; and the

The condition of feare, and feare-full men.

the more ſlowneſſe, the more feare. And he never thinkes he flies faſt enough, that ſeekes to flie from a miſchiefe. I, accompanied with my thoughts, and *Sayavedra* with his, went jogging on along, but both as mute as fiſhes; though his were farre different from mine. For my care onely was, to ſee my ſelfe in ſome place of ſafety; and *Sayavedra* vvas thinking vvith himſelfe, how much of this money vvould fall to his ſhare.

Wee rode on a great while in this manner; at laſt, that I might bid feare farewell, which thus troubled me, I ſought to ſhake it off, and if I could, quite to forget it, by entertayning ſome one thing or other, to turne the ſtreame another way; it ſeeming vnto me, to be no leſſe fooliſh for a man, to be too ſilent vpon the way, then to babble and prate too much in the ſtreet. And therefore, that I might be the firſt to breake the yce, I call'd to *Sayavedra*, and ſaid vnto him; Come, let vs talke of ſome thing or other, to paſſe away the time; or doe thou tell me ſome ſtorie vpon the way, to giue me content; it will make our journey the ſhorter. He then, finding his bowle flung in amongſt the reſt, and that he was not ſhut out for a bungler, ſeeing there was occaſion now offered vnto him, to ſpeake that, which he longed to vtter, he began to breake his minde, and ſaid thus vnto mee.

I wiſh Sir, that I could tell you a tale, how glad I was, and what a deale of good it did doe me, to taſte of the ſweetneſſe of your gaines. But I am ſo confident of the nobleneſſe of your diſpoſition, and this my comming to ſerue you (ſeeing you haue beene pleaſed to entertaine me for your ſervant) ſhall not be onely for ſatisfaction of that debt, wherein I ſtand bound vnto you, but alſo make much for my profit. I was glad to ſee this arrow flie forth of his quiver, and that hee had touch't me vpon that ſtring; vvherevpon I thus replyed vnto him.

Friend *Sayavedra*; What is paſt, is paſt; and there is no more to be ſaid of it; for there is no man, ſo much man, and maſter of himſelfe, which either here, or there; this place, or that; this, or that time, doth not ſlip in one kinde or other. We liue all in the fleſh; and all fleſh is weake. Others, haue this weakeneſſe, ſome other wayes: Every one committeth his errour, one in one ſort; another, in another. As thou haſt in this thing, wherein my ſelfe am likewiſe faulty. God helpe me in my judgement; for I know not what vvill become of me. For I finde, I haue as much cauſe, as he that hath moſt, if not more, boldly to vndergoe any deſperate attempt whatſoever. And let him be who, or vvhat he will, (had he found himſelfe in that great want and miſerie, as we were) hee vvould haue done the like, as we haue done: which was no better then plaine theft, to cozen theſe poore men, of that little which they had, vvhich perhaps was all, that they had wherewithall to liue: Nor would I at that time, (being in that poore caſe as I was) haue ſpared any purſe whatſoever, had it had a thouſand Crownes in it, though it had beene of an Orphane, that had neither father, nor mother, to helpe it.

All men, ſpotted with one Vice, or other.

And ſeeing, that wee are fallen into this errour, and for that I perceiue thou haſt vnderſtanding and judgement to apprehend any thing, & to goe through with it, I perſwade my ſelfe, thou doeſt likewiſe comprehend, that I am no Trader in the *Indyes*, nor any of your rich *Fucaro's*, but a poore young man, (as thou art) rob'd of his ſubſtance, & deprived of his neceſſaries, by ſuch meanes, as are beſt knowne to my ſelfe; nor haue I any greater or better profeſſion to liue by, then that vvhich thou haſt ſeene in mee. Now, becauſe I would not doe any thing, that might ſavour of baſeneſſe, or vnlike my ſelfe, and to beare the ſame port I did heretofore, I muſt endevour to maintaine my ſelfe (at leaſt) in ſome reaſonable faſhion, as every honeſt man ought to doe, not falling a jot from the ſtate and condition of life, wherein my parents left me, and whereunto my fortune had rayſ'd me. For albeit I ſeru'd that Lord of mine, the French Embaſſador, and liu'd in houſe with him, it was out of that loue, which

Guzmans *craftie dealing.*

hee bore vnto me from a childe, and vpon the earneſt intreaty, that hee made vnto my friends, my father, and he, being of ancient acquaintance, and having liu'd and converſed long together in *Paris*. And ſo he begg'd me of him, ſaying; he ſhould take no farther care of me, and that he would one day make me a man.

But ſince that things haue ſo fallen out with mee as they haue, (as in part you your ſelfe know) and that I haue left his houſe, and am now come from him, I am not minded to returne thither any more, till I haue ſeene ſomewhat of the world, and that I may come home rich and in plenty, and be able to liue in eaſe and pleaſure, all the reſt of my life. Every place affords good bread; and that of *Rome*, agrees not with my ſtomacke, for it doth not digeſt very well vvith mee, but turnes to rawneſſe and crudities. And it is no marvell, that all men ſhould ſeeke out ſome meanes or other to liue; eſpecially, ſeeing they, that haue leſſer abilities, endevour the like.

Proverbe. a Donde quiera, ſe amaſa buen pan.

Turne thine eye aſide, and looke vpon as many men, as now liue in the world; view, and conſider them well, and thou ſhalt finde, that they all goe ſeeking to encreaſe their eſtates, to advantage themſelues the beſt that they can; and failing in thoſe obligations, wherevnto they are tide both in honour, and honeſtie, by one device or other, this or that tricke, every one ſeekes to advance himſelfe and his fortunes, as high as hee can. The King, ſeekes to augment his State, and enlarge his Kingdome; The Gentleman, to raiſe his Houſe; The Merchant, to encreaſe his wealth, and to driue ſuch a trade, as may turne to his great profit; And the Tradeſ-man, to gaine by his Trade: And that not alwayes (by their leaue) in that conſcionable and lawfull faſhion as is fitting they ſhould. For it happeneth ſo with ſome of them, that firſt growing knuckle deepe, and afterwards vp to the elbowes in vngodly gaine, and vnjuſt dealing, they never leaue off till they be vp to the very eyes, nay over head and eares (I will not ſay) in Hell, doe thou ſay it for me, whoſe tongue is bolder then mine, to lay this cenſure vpon them. In concluſion, all the world in this caſe, is as it were another *Rochelle*; Every man liue for himſelfe; get he, that can get; Onely they, that are vnfortunate, as thou art, pay the puniſhment of their ſinne. If thou hadſt beene a thiefe of the largeſt ſize, I ſay one of thoſe great ones, that ſhould'ſt haue gone away with three or foure thouſand Duckats at a clap, thou might'ſt peradventure haue made thy peace, bought out favour and juſtice, & might'ſt haue paſt well enough with them, and haue come off cleare, as they often doe: But thoſe poore wretches, which know not how to negociate, nor haue any ſet rents, no receipts, nor Bills of exchange, nor know how to get a great deale of money into their hands (compounding afterwards for a little) paying backe a third part, and that ſlowly, ill, or never; theſe poore rogues, I ſay, that neither haue the wit to invent, nor the power to aſpire to any great bootie, nor to vndertake great matters, are (as infamous theeues) ſet to the Gallies, and ſometimes hang'd, not for theeues (for theeues are not hang'd) but becauſe they did not well know what did belong to their office, and were not their owne crafts-maſters. And I will here by the way, tell thee what I heard of a Slaue, that was a *Negro, entre boçal y ladino*, one that was a novice, and was better skil'd in his owne, then the Country language wherein he liu'd, being ſcarce perfect in either; which ſtory will fall in here very fitly.

All ſeeke to make their beſt advantage.

A ſhort tale.

In *Madrid*, in the daies of my child-hood, where I reſided ſometime, there were adulterers led to execution; and although this ſin be very common there, and much vſed amongſt them, yet it is ſeldome puniſhed; for there are never wanting good meanes, and good moneys; by meanes whereof theſe kinde of crimes are well accommodated: but at this time, and with this womans huſband, they could worke no good. A world of people went forth to ſee them, eſpecially your women, inſomuch that the ſtreets, and the windowes were wholly

wholly taken vp with them, making great moane for that miſerable and vnfortunate woman. Now when her husband had cut off her head, this *Negro* ſpake out aloud, and ſaid; O God, how many here doe behold this ſad ſpectacle, who with a great deale of reaſon might haue the like meaſure!

The ſaying of a Negro.

We likewiſe, may very well ſay; How many, are there now adaies, who condemne others to the gallowes, whereon they might better, and with more reaſon, bee hang'd themſelues. I wonder at nothing in this age, nor am I of that queazy ſtomacke, that any thing ſhould offend mee; I will dance to the ſound of that Pipe, after which I ſee others dance; let things laſt, as they may laſt; and hold out as long as they can, and then there is an end of them; like vnto ſpoones made of a cruſt of bread, which we haue no ſooner ſupt vp our pottage with, but we ſend them preſently packing the ſame way with the other. And ſince thou ſaiſt, that thou lou'ſt my company, & tak'ſt much contentment therein, and that thou lik'ſt ſo well of it, I hope, it ſhall neither be hurtfull vnto thee, nor hard to brooke it. For I am ſo good a fellow, and of ſo ingenious a diſpoſition, that I know how to value and make a true eſteeme of thoſe kindneſſes which are done vnto me; the thankefull acknowledgement thereof, I ſhall referre to my actions, which in their due time, ſhall teſtifie, what I now profeſſe. But becauſe reward is the ſpurre, which puts vertue forward; and the onely whetſtone, that ſets an edge on mens affections; making them to goe on brauely and couragiouſly in all that they vndertake; And that it argues a baſeneſſe of minde, not to reward, when from thence ſome glory, or benefit may ariſe; And that a man doth not comply with his duty, when he doth not take any paines for his living; for to that end was he borne, and therewith is he to ſuſtaine himſelfe; it is fit and no more then what is juſt, that euery man ſhould haue a proportionable and equall gaine, according to the qnality of his adventure: And I am very well content to giue way herevnto, making this the firſt ſtone in this our building; and will treat farther hereafter of that, which is to be ordered and ſet downe betweene vs, in theſe, or any other the like occaſions, that ſhall offer them-ſelues vnto vs.

Vertue encouraged by rewards.

All that, which ſhall fall, or come vnto our hands, as well thoſe fruits already fallen, as thoſe that are to fall hereafter, ſhall be devided into three equall parts; of all which thou ſhalt haue one part for thee, and another for me, and the third ſhall goe for to defray the charges of *auerige*, for it will not be alwaies faire weather; nor ſhall wee ſtill ſayle before the winde; nor make evermore a ſpeedy voyage; as it happens when men are becalmed at Sea; and when we ſhall land and come aſhore, it is not fit that we ſhould want cloathes, and other neceſſaries, nor muſt we, if the enemy ſhould ſet vpon vs, be vn-provided of munition to defend our ſelues, and offend him; nor, ſhould wee chance by ſome ſtorme or other accident, to be caſt vpon ſome ſhelfe or quick-ſand, muſt we lacke a boate to put out, wherein to ſaue our liues, though we loſe our goods. This third part, we will ſtill lay apart by it ſelfe, that ſhall bee, as it were the *Erarium*, and publike Treaſurie, our common purſe, for to ſupply and relieue our neceſſities. For if we goe wiſely and diſcreetly to worke, and be not raſh and inconſiderate in our actions, ſeeing we want not vnderſtanding, and haue ſome skill in navigation, (at leaſt are both of vs good Coaſters,) I for my part will content my ſelfe with no leſſe, then ſome good place of command in my Countrey, and ſuch great ſtore of wealth, that I may afterwards liue happily all the daies of my life. And all this will I bring about, before I be ſixe yeares elder. Be therefore of good courage, and take heart vnto thee, for thou ſhalt make the like purchaſe, wherewith thou maiſt returne with credit to *Valençia*. I would not haue thee buſie thy ſelfe in baſe thefts, nor be none of thoſe ſneaking thieues, that ſteale Primers, Horne-bookes, and Ballads; for from ſuch kind of thefts, thou ſhalt reape no other profit, but infamie, and reproach. In a word, let vs brauely reſolue, *Morir ahorcados, ò comer con trompetas*; Either to hang

Guzman *purpoſes to prouide for a deare peare, and ſhowe how is may be done.*

Prouerbe.

hang together for company, or to haue our dinners ſeru'd in with Trumpets. Let vs dye like dogges, or liue like men. For a mans life is ended in a day; but pouerty, is a dayly death. And if we goe on as we haue begun, and vſe theſe and the like trickes, we ſhall with a little practiſe, grow to greater both cunning, and wealth, and bid a fart in Feares teeth; For all moneths are alike, be they faire or foule, euery one hath [c] his thirty dayes, and no more; Euery man muſt liue out his time, how happily, or how miſerably, I cannot ſay; euery one muſt be content with his fortune: And for as much, as in the darke, all *Cats* [d] are blacke, and *Ione* is as faire as my Lady; we will ſo carry things in the clouds, that we may not appeare in our right colours. We two will joyne together, keepe counſell, and deale fairely one with another, dividing the ſpoyle equally, that there may be no falling out betweene vs: For, as it is in the Proverbe; *Vn lobo, a otro, nunca ſe muerde*; One Wolfe, will not bite another. Loe here, if thou wilt, thou ſhalt preſently, before we goe any farther, haue a third part of what is already got; for it is not juſt nor honeſt, to debarre any man of his right, or to with-hold that from him, which is his. Much good may it doe thee; and thanke God, that with ſo fortunate a foot, and ſo propitious a ſtarre, thou haſt lighed thus happily into our company; deſiring him, that we may not fall into the hands of Pyrates, who haue an eye to nothing elſe, but to runne away with the meat, that others haue dreſt, to licke away the creame, that others haue laboured for; and to skimme away all the fat from off the pottage, not leauing vs any thing that good is.

proverbe. [c] Todos los meſes de a treynta dias.

proverbe. [d] A eſcuras todos los gatos, negros.

Proverbe.

With this kinde of language, and my liberall carriage, dealing thus kindly and bountifully with him, I went ſecuring his perſon vnto me, that he might nor forſake me, but ſtay, and liue with me. For if I ſhould haue ſought over all the world for a Mariner, I could not haue met with a better Mate for my Barke, nor one, that would ſo well haue ſuted for my purpoſe, as *Sayavedra*. Beſides, he being my equall, and euery way as good a man as my ſelfe, was contented to be come my ſeruant, and to acknowledge me for his maſter, it being no ſmall advantage to haue the hand, in moſt games that you play at. He, vpon theſe good words of mine, was ſo overcome, that he reſted no leſſe contented, then conquered by me. And ſo falling, in our future diſcourſe, from one thing to another, (as men vſe to doe when they talke vpon the way) I hapt at laſt to aske him the cauſe, that mou'd him to rob me? Sir (ſaid he) though I would, yet I cannot now forbeare, to acquaint you with the whole courſe of my life, and truly and faithfully to deliuer vnto you euery particular paſſage thereof, as well for thoſe favours which I haue ſo liberally receiued already from your hands, as alſo for that it is well enough knowne to the world, and therefore requires no ſuch ſecreſie; As likewiſe, for that with thoſe with whom we keepe company, and are daily to converſe and liue withall, plaine dealing muſt bee vſed; and all matters fairely laid open, without the concealing or hiding of any thing: For, not onely to our *Confeſſors*, our *Lawyers*, and our *Phyſitians*, are we to tell the truth, but to thoſe alſo that are of our owne profeſſion, birds of the ſame feather; nor was this vertue ever yet wanting amongſt vs, which is a powerfull meanes for the maintaining of friendſhip, and the faſter wedging of one man vnto vnto another. But that I may at length comply with thoſe many obligations, wherein I ſtand bound vnto you; I ſhall giue you (Sir) to vnderſtand, that I am of *Valençia*, borne of honeſt parents, (whom report may one day make knowne vnto you) for they (God be praiſed) are now both dead; onely their fame liueth. We were two brothers, and both vnfortunate; whether it were, becauſe from children, converſing continually together, we ran courſes alike, and did in all things ſort and ſute each with other; or whether it were, that ſuffering our ſelues to be carried away with the fury of our vaine appetites, without ſtriving to make due reſiſtance, we did giue way to this temptation, by conſenting therevnto, (or to ſay more truly) fell into this weakenes, not

Free and plaine dealing, holds friends together.

Sayavedra diſcourſes to Guzman of his courſe of life.

not thinking on thoſe future dangers, that were to follow therevpon, but drawne along with thoſe baytes, that for the preſent pleas'd our taſte, being now inured, and accuſtomed therevnto, vvee could not (though vvee would) goe backe. My other brother, is ſomewhat elder then my ſelfe, and though both of vs were of a reaſonable good capacitie, and had (as they ſay) our wits and judgements about vs, and were not put (as other men are) to ſeeke for them, yet could not this vnderſtanding of ours, put a bridle vpon our vnruly affections; ſuch is, or was the force of our malignant ſtarre, and ſo great the power of our evill inclination, that we could not avoid it. In ſo much, that laying aſide all reſpects of honor, and to apply our ſelues to any ſet courſe of life, more out of a deſire to ſee ſtrange Countries, then to get ſome honeſt meanes, whereby to liue, we went out into the wide world to ſeeke our fortunes. But becauſe things might not chance to fall out out ſo luckily with vs, as we did frame to our ſelues, and that if we ſhould come in trouble, we might not be knowne, nor diſhonor our houſe, we did agree betweene our ſelues, to change and alter our names.

My brother being a good Latiniſt, and a fine Scholler, fetcht his name, I know not from whence; His owne name being *Iuan Marti*, of *Iuan*, he made *Luxan*; and of *Marti*, *Mateo*; aud turning it by inverting the words, he cal'd himſelfe *Mateo Luxan*. In this manner, did hee wander through the world; and the world ſaith, that it gaue him the ſame payment, as it did mee. But I, for that I had no learning, and knew no more then a young Nouice in a Monaſterie, I would not trouble my head with theſe curioſities, but going the downe-right way to wòrke, and knowing that the *Sayavedra's* were of principall note, and ancient Gentlemeu of *Sevill*, I ſtyled my ſelfe to be of that City, and tooke their name vpon me. But I was never in *Sevill*, nor knew any more thereof, then what I haue ſaid already.

Being thus new chriſtned, we ſet forth both on one and the ſame day, and began our travailes together, but went each of vs a ſeverall way. Some haue told me, who knew him by ſight, that they haue ſeene him in *Caſtile*, and in *Andaluzia* very hardly vſed; and that from thence, he went to the *Indyes*, where it alſo went ill with him. I ſhap't my courſe another way; for I got me to *Barcelona*, where in the Galleys I paſt ouer into *Italy*: I had ſpent all that, which I had brought along with me from home, and at laſt became exceeding poore. And becauſe Neceſſitie, doth oftentimes (as they ſay) driue a man to doe that, which he never dream't of, toſt thus vp and downe, and cruelly encountred with hunger, I chanced in the end to arriue in the kingdome of *Naples*; vvhere, I had euer a deſire to reſide, for the great good which I had heard of that Citie.

I trauel'd all ouer that kingdome, ſpending that which I had not, till I came to be a notable *Picaro*, and began at length to conuerſe with as arrant Rogues as my ſelfe; and from one round to another I grew vp by degrees, to be a fine nimble-fingerd[d] Fuller, I could teazell cloathes ſingular well, I could picke a pocket very neatly, and cut a purſe handſomely, and doe many the like fine feats. I made my ſelfe a *Camerade* vvith thoſe that were the Maſters of our Company, and had recourſe alwayes vnto them, that they might cover mee vnder their wing in time of adverſitie; I was but there ſervant, and one of thoſe ordinary Souldiers as it were, that fought vnder their Enſigne. For my pouertie was ſo great, that I could neuer get me into a ſtocke to put me into cloathes, or to be able to ſet vp ſhop for my ſelfe. Nor was it an inability or inſufficiency in me, that I came no better forward in the world; for there was not ſuch a cunning ſharker amongſt them all, as I was; my ſheeres, would finde an edge, when theirs could not cut; they were all bunglers to me; I was able to haue read vnto them all thoſe foure curſory Lectures of thieuing; and thoſe other two of cony-catching and cheating, which I read for my degree, when I proceeded

[d] *The Spaniſh phraſe is*; Oficial de la carda. Por traſlacion dezimos carcar á vno, quando le dan alguna fraterna, y es tratado aſperamentè. Covar. verb. Carda.

ceeded Batcheler in that Art. For I was ſo well read in thoſe roguiſh ſtudies, and from the time that I firſt learn'd them, had them all ſo perfect at my fingers ends, that I was not to ſeeke of any one of them. I was that ſingular Saker, that excellent Ierfalcon, that neuer miſt my prey, but tooke all that I flew at either in Citie or Countrey. No game came amiſſe to me. None of them vnderſtood halfe ſo well as I, the Art in cutting of a purſe; nor to diue into a pocket, ſo deepe, as I could. I was dogge at it, and could diſpatch my buſineſſe in a trice. My eye, and my hand, went both together; they were here and there, and euery where, with a *preſto* bee gone. I was of all occupations; a mariner, a miller, a baker, a ſcout, a croſſe-biter, one of your vp-right men, a cheater, a cozener, a fox, that was full of craft and ſubtletie; none of my ſtanding, no nor ſix yeares elder then I, but would ſtrike ſayle to me, and acknowledge himſelfe as farre inferiour to me, as the fowle is to the Falcon.

But by reaſon of their ancient ſtanding, and the reputation they had got in thoſe former dunſicall times, they tyrannized and vſurped on the name of famous profeſſors: Theſe were the *Ceſars*; and we the poore rogues; whom they ſent abroad, from houſe to houſe, to ſcowre diſhes, to caſt an eye in every corner, to make one excuſe or other whereſoeuer we came; demanding in one place, whether ſuch a Gentleman were there or no; and in another, whether they wanted a young youth, that was willing to ſerue them. Asking ſuch a Gentlewoman, whether ſhee would buy a very fine paire of Twizes; which but a little before, we had cut from another Gentlewomans girdle, and having new ground and whet them, and made them very neat and cleane, and fitted them with a new caſe, and a new ribond, we ſold them afterwards away for new ware. Sometimes, we would make ſhow to goe into ſome houſe to make water, and if we found, that there was a ſtable there, or other by-roomes belonging vnto it, in thither would we goe, where we ſhould meet with a horſe-cloath, a curry-combe, a ſyue, or the horſe-mans cloake; and when we could not come to finger any thing elſe, we ſhould euermore be ſure of bridles, and collars, and ſtirrops, and the like kinde of tackling for their Mules and their Hackneys, and if by misfortue, any one ſhould come in, and ſee vs there looſing preſently our cod-piſſe point, we would quat vs downe in a corner of the ſtable, as if we had beene driuen in thither by neceſſitie to doe that ſervice, which no body can doe for vs but our ſelues. And in caſe they ſhould ſay vnto vs (as now and then they would) you rogue, you thiefe, what make you here? We would then preſently riſe vp, and pulling vp our breeches to make them faſt, and be gone, vve would vvhile we vvere a truſſing, mildly make anſwer; I pray Sir be not offended; take heed to vvhom, and of vvhat you ſpeake; for here is no ſuch kinde of man, as you talke of, no thiefe, no rogue, but one that is true and honeſt, and meanes you no harme; I vvas ouer-taken in the ſtreet, and forced to come in vpon meere neceſſitie, and therefore I hope you will hold me excuſed.

Some did beleeue vs, and ſome not, but how-ſoever vve paſt well enough with it. Sometimes, we would preſſe farther in, and rummage as it were all the whole houſe, from one end to the other, till we found ſomewhat that we might finger, and carry away; and if by chance we vvere ſpide by any, vve vvould come crowching vnto them vvith teares in our eyes, beſeeching them for Gods ſake, to giue vs an almes, being even ready to ſtarue for vvant of food. With theſe, and other the like cunning ſhifts, there was not ſo much as a nayle in any mans wall, which we did not keep a reckning of, and tooke away vvhen vve ſaw our time. I vvas a pretty little vvag, ſlender of growth, rather leane then otherwiſe, very vvitty, full of invention, and aboue all, as nimble, and light-footed as a Bucke. I alwayes laid vvait in the day time, how and where I ſhould compaſſe my exployts in the night, neuer imbroyling my ſelfe in any buſineſſe at vnſeaſonable times, for the better avoyding of all ſuſpition; and

taking

taking little sleepe vvhen I had any thing to set my selfe about. In the day time, vvee did (like good Christians) visit Churches, goe to Masse, heare Sermons, frequent your Indulgences, Iubiles, Feasts, and Processions. Wee were present at your Play-houses, and Courts of Iustice at all Executions, and all other publike meetings and assemblies, vvhere there vvas any concurse of people, any pressing or thronging in the streets, striuing to be alwaies in the thickest of the croud, entring in and out amongst them, passing to and fro a thousand times. For every bout afforded vs vvorke enough, making vpon every returne a good and gainfull voyage. One while vvee brought away daggers, stolne from mens backs; other-while handkerchers pickt out of their pockets; purses, *rosarios*, *twizes*, jewels worne by vvomen; and such odde toyes, as your children weare about their neckes. And when all fail'd, and that I could not make that purchase as I would, with my sheeres (which I had ever ready in my hand) looke where the best and fairest cloake vvas in all the companie, I did whip from behinde, or the one side of it (if by chance it slipt off from his shoulders in the throng) as much as would make three or foure paire of soles, or some such odde knacke, or other. Wherein, besides the profit, I tooke exceeding great pleasure, in seeing these gallants afterwards looke like the picture of *S. Martin*, with little more then halfe a cloake; which was a ridiculous thing to behold, and did often moue me to much laughter. And when they them-selues had found it out, they began to winde and turne it this way, and that vvay, putting the part offended, either vnder or over their arme, as vvould make best for the hiding of that blemish; and the people vvhen they once began to perceiue it, they straight way flockt about them, vvho blushing to see their garments cut short to their waste, discovering those parts vvhich shame bids vs hide, they vvent flinching away, and got them home through by-lanes, and such places, as vvere least frequented.

And vvhen this vvould not fadge vvith vs, vvee vvould cunningly steale to your silke, or cloth of gold hangings, for we never stood vpon termes of courtesie, or were more dainty with these, then the rest; for the greater was the value of it, the greater was our gaine; and from the lower part of these hangings, vvould we snip of a peece or two, according as occasion, or time, vvould giue vs leaue; endeavouring ever to cut in the best and choisest place, and in the turning of a hand, we made thereof either womens bodies, mens [a] *monteras*, purses, pimpillowes, sleeues for little children, and a thousand other the like fidling things; still ordering and husbanding it so, that we would not lose the least thread, but did alwayes contriue it in that manner, as might make best for that vse, wherevnto we would put it.

By little and little, we came approaching neerer and neerer vnto the Citie, drawne thither vpon the fame and report, that there vvas a nevv *Vice-Roy* already come thither, or vvould be there very shortly. For at such solemne feasts as these, where there is running of Buls, bayting of Beares, and the like pastimes, besides your great Fayres and markets, we will not sticke, for a need, to come a hundred miles off, that we may be present at them. Our expence vpon the vvay, vvas alvvaies very little; for vve still made our provision, as vve vvent along, & vvhat vve got in one place, that vve spent in another, taking vp hens here, capons there, in such a village chickens, and such a doue-house pigeons, pigs, gammons of bacon, and any thing that vvas tame, and would come to hand, never escapt our hands, furnishing our selues vvith all other necessary implements, that might serue for the conveniency of our journey, were it for our dyet, or our lodging. And as a man that desires to haue a good lodging in his Inne, must haue a care to come there before the Sun be set: so in that short time vvhich we had to spend vntill it vvere towards night, & that the houre was come, wherein we did vsually retire our selues, vve did runne over all the open places about the Countrey, & if vve found any breach in

[a] Montera, *is a cap made of stuffe, with little or no brims, to weare for ease within doores: your Clownes haue them of cloath.*

in any wall of a houſe, we would prie what we could proule from thence, and ſeeke to make our entry; Which that vvee might do with the more conueniencie, & leſſer hazard of our perſons, we would begin to beg an almes, ſaying; That we were poore Students, and being driuen to great neceſſitie, could not for want of meanes returne handſomely into our owne Country. Which vve did not ſo much demand of them, to the end they ſhould giue vs any thing, as thereby to ſeeke occaſion to ſteale ſomething from them, having an eye ſtill towards the hen-rooſt, caſting with our ſelues how we might dil-people that houſe of its pullen.

Beſides, for your Innes, and your Farmars back-ſides, I carried alwaies with me a good angle-rod with a ſtrong hooke & line, baited with a cruſt of bread, or ſome ſix graines of wheate, to catch there-with whatſoever came in my way, and I ſeldome put in my rod, but I pluckt out a fiſh as long as mine arme. But when it fell out ſo vnfortunatly with vs, that we could not get any booty, and that (as it is in the Proverbe) *Se caya la caſa*; the houſe was falne downe; and that there was no victuals there to be found; yet come the vvorſt, that could come, vve ſhould be ſure to meete with as good and fat a Calfe, as any man need to eat, the world could not afford better Veale. As ſoone as we came to *Naples*, at our firſt comming wee draue for ſome few dayes, a very good trade, and made very quicke returnes, with a great deale of profit to our purſes, and all things did ſucceed very vvell with vs; wee tooke great paines, and we reapt great gaines. I had put my ſelfe into ſuch apparell, that my preſence might promiſe the reputation of an honeſt man; ſo that any man might very well be cozned by this Carde, (this outſide I meane of mine) ſo faire did I colour for it. So that if the entrance which we made, like to our *juego de cannas*, glittering in gold, and all kinde of brauery, had not through my lacke of patience receiued in the end a foile, I might haue continued there in very good faſhion. But I had worke enough to doe, to ſaue my skinne, from being pluckt ouer my eares, and to keepe my bones from being broken. It was mine owne fault that my egges prou'd addle, and were not ſo well hatcht as they might haue beene. I may thanke no body for it but my ſelfe. But God be thanked, that it was no worſe with me; for I might haue receiu'd much more harme thereby, and therewith did I comfort my ſelfe.

Proverbe.

One of my Camerades was of that Country, ſervant to a Regent of the Collaterall Councell, whoſe father had alſo ſeru'd him heretofore, he was deſirous to make himſelfe knowne vnto him, whereupon he went to kiſſe his hands, nor did his owne returne empty from him; But (being very glad to ſee him) offered to doe him any kindneſſe that lay in his power; nor were they Courtiers words, ſprinkled with holy-water, for he did as well doe, as ſay; For ſeldome, and to few, doth it happen in Court, to eate together in one plate, & at one boord; but when the minde is generous and noble, it euermore takes delight to giue; and by ſo much the more is increaſed, by how much the more we craue. For it hath alwaies beene a peculiar property belonging to giuing, to make the *doner* famous and renowned to the world. And the more ſubjects they light on to conferre ſuch courteſies, ſo much the more glory do they gaine vnto them-ſelues. Preſently, without any more adoe, hee employ'd him in ſome buſineſſes, and thoſe of ſome worth and moment, and well deſerving a worthier ſubject. Vnder his protection we went vp and downe the Citie, as if we had beene ſo many Vice-Kings of the Country, liuing without controlment, and no man daring to meddle with vs.

Noble minds are ever liberall.

Being thus ſeated on the warme ſide of the hedge, preſuming vpon his favour and countenance, wee did laſh out a little too much, in vndertaking ſuch and ſuch things, as were beyond the reach of our braines, and would require ſtronger wits then we had any. He was the tongue, wherewith we ſpake; hee did direct vs, whither we were to goe; and what wee were to doe; at what houres

houres, we might with moſt ſafety be abroad; where we might beſt make our entry; whom we might beſt truſt; & of whom we had moſt reaſon to be afraid. For (as wee ſhall tell you hereafter) they that commit the greateſt robberies, and ſuch theſts as are more famous then any other, more cunningly carried, of a higher ſtraine and nature then the reſt, and of the greateſt importance, are thoſe that are neareſt in their attendance about the miniſters of *Iuſtice*. For theſe men feare nothing, they are in favour with their Lord, neceſſity oppreſſeth them, occaſion is offred; God bleſſe every good man from ſuch authenticall theeues, who thinke themſelues authoriſed to ſteale, and that the Law either cannot, or will not, take hold of them.

I went one day a wreſtling *à braço partido* (as they ſay) with my thoughts, that is to ſay, vpon equall tearmes, without any manner of advantage of my fellowes, out of a deſire that I had to ſeeke out ſomthing wherewithall to entertaine my ſelfe; for it was almoſt high-noone, and wee had not yet threaded our needle, nor wrought one ſtich of worke. And to come home empty handed, that I would not; I ſcorn'd not to ſend in my proviſion before-hand, as holding it a great diſgrace vnto mee. For if my companions ſhould chance to haue wrought their honey-combes, and that they were to be found at home in the hiue, where wee did all meete, if I ſhould bring nothing in, but feede vpon their ſtore, they would vpbraid me therwith calling me idle Drone; Titting and flouting at me, that I ſhould offer to ſit downe at boord with cleane hands. Meaning thereby, that I had not laboured for my liuing as the reſt had done, nor taken the paines to foule my hands, and yet muſt ſit downe and eate at other mens coſt. Holding him for a baſe minded fellow, that would come to a well furniſht table, and ſit downe to dinner, not having before-hand provided ſome proviſion of his owne, whereon to feed. I had caſt mine eye vpon a very faire houſe, which at the firſt ſight ſeemed vnto mee, to belong to ſome honourable perſon, or principall Gentleman of that Citie. I entred as boldly into it, as if the houſe had beene mine own. For (as it is in the Proverbe) *nunca el timido, fue buen cirujano*; The fearefull man never makes good Surgeon. Which kinde of Phraſe, your old women in *Spaine* vſe to their children, when they goe ſneakingly and fearefully about any buſineſſe. *Anda, anda, que pareçe que vas a hartar*; Get the gone, get the gone, thou goeſt logging and dreamingly about it, as if thou wenteſt a filching. So that alwayes, and in all places whatſoever, or whereſoever I came, mee thought I went into mine owne houſe, or that I did enter as it were by authority, with the *Vare* of Iuſtice in my hand, or the whole power of the Country.

I lookt about on this ſide, and on that ſide, longing that mine eyes might light on ſomething or other, that I might lay my hands on. At laſt it was my fortune to ſpy lying on the top of a little ſide-table, a faire blacke veluet Kirtle, richly embroydered, which would very well ſerue to make three ſeverall ſorts of garments, caſſocke, and hoſe, and ſomething elſe beſides; for there were full fifteene yards in it, and might very well beſeeme the wearing of the neateſt and braveſt Gallants in the Kingdome. I ſtood looking and peering on every ſide of me, if I might go cleanly away with this booty, that it might not coſt me the laying on; and eſcape without danger of being beaten for my labour; and by good hap I did not meete with any to hinder me in this my purpoſe; Whereupon I tooke it vp, and clapping it vnder mine arme, fetching two or three nimble friſcals, my feet were preſently vpon the threſhold of the doore, making their way to goe forth into the ſtreete. But I was no ſooner come thither, but there I met full but with the owner of the houſe, who was Maſter *Datario* *, a man of great place and authority in the City, who ſeeing me come forth with this fardle vnder mine arme, asked me what I was, what I made there, and what was that I carried away with mee? I being thus put to my ſhift, made a vertue of neceſſity, and was not long in conſulting with

Proverbe. e Luchar a braſo partido es proceder y gu almenté ſin ventaja de vno à otro. Covarr. verb. Braſo.

Proverbe. ſVieneſe à ſentar à la meſa con ſus manos lavados. Dizeſe del que no ha trabajado como los demas, y à la hora de comer, no haviendo en zuſando ſus manos, ſe viene con los demas à la meſa, y come de mogollon. Covarr. verb. Lavar.

Proverbe.

Proverbe.

Sayavedra as *ſtealing of a Kirtle.*

* Datario, a great officer in Rome, as alſo in other places.

my ſelfe for anſwere, and with an vntroubled, or rather cheereſull countenance, ſaid vnto him; Sir, it is my Miſtreſſes pleaſure, that I ſhould vntucke theſe pleats a little, to make the folds fall a little handſomer, and that I ſhould leſſen it a thought in the waſte, for that it ſits not well before; and hath giuen me a charge to diſpatch it preſently. Doe ſo I pray (my friend) quoth hee, ſee it be done quickly, and let it be your owne hand-working, that it may not be done amiſſe, and make all the haſte you can. I then ſaid to my ſelfe; I haue done this with mine owne hand, and I will make quicke worke with the reſt. And with that I hy'd mee downe the ſtreet, fetching more turnings and windings then a Snake, ſometimes this way, and ſometimes that way, now here, and now there, and all, that they might not finde any footing of mee, if hee ſhould chance to vncouple his hounds, and ſend them after me to follow mee vpon hot ſent.

Anon after (as ill lucke would haue it) hee came to know how the vvorld went, for hee was no ſooner come into the houſe, but hee found it all in an vproare, ſome in the hall, ſome in the kitchen, ſome in one roome, and ſome in another, the maids of the houſe ſome vnbraced, ſome their haire about their eares, ſome with one ſleeue off, and another on, ſome in one poſture, and ſome in another, but all in a combuſtion, brauling and calling one to another, giue me the Kirtle, giue mee the Kirtle, where is the Kirtle, what is become of the Kirtle? but the Kirtle appeares not: you tooke it from my Miſtreſſe, (ſaies one.) I layd it here, (ſayes another.) I left it here (ſaies a third.) Then falls the Miſtreſſe of the houſe a chiding, asking who came in, or out? No body could tell of any; Then (quoth ſhee) it is likely, that ſome of the houſe muſt needes haue it, therefore looke it mee out, and that quickly too, or elſe you ſhall ſoundly pay for it. There was ſuch an out-cry, ſuch exclamations, ſuch a howling, ſuch a bawling, and ſo hideous a noyſe, as if the whole houſe had beene fallen to the ground; in ſo much, that they could not one vnderſtand another.

In this hurly-burly comes me in the Maſter of the houſe, acknowledging now the error, that hee had committed, in letting mee go away in that faſhion; and going to pacifie his wife, hee told her that a thiefe had got into the houſe, and carried away the Kirtle, recounting vnto her, what had paſſed betwixt him and my ſelfe, when he met me comming forth of doores. He preſently made ſearch after me, but I ſo beſtir'd my ſtumps, that hee could not then finde me out, having by this time both ſecured my perſon, and the Kirtle.

Sayavedras theft at the Conſtables houſe.

That night I got me to the houſe of the great Conſtable, out of a deſire that I had to finiſh a peece of worke, which ſome few dayes before, I had drawne out; but my pen did ſo blur, that I did diſpaire at that time to come off cleanly vvith it, and though I had taken a great deale of paines that it might be neatly and handſomely done, yet could I never compaſſe (for want of a good opportunity) to haue it fall out fairely and fitly as I would till now. Many Gentlemen, vvere there met together to play, vvho had ordinarily three or foure tables ſet ready for them, and a page or two appointed to ſit vp, and attend vpon them, till they gaue ouer. Every table had his ſilke carpet, and two ſilver candleſticks; I carried thither with me a couple that were counterfeit, made of the pureſt Tinne I could get, and juſt of the ſame faſhion and proportion, & ſo like in every reſpect, that you could not for their fineneſſe, diſtinguiſh them from the other, jumping ſo truly, as vvell in the colour, as the making, provided of purpoſe, for the better effecting of what I intended. I carried likewiſe two candles along with me, and vſing cloſe conveyance, that they might not be ſeene about me, I leaned againſt one of the corners of the wall, as I had vſed to do heretofore, waiting for a faire occaſion to bring my project to paſſe, giuing thoſe that were there to vnderſtand, that I was a ſervant to one of thoſe Gentlemen that were at play. Two, were playing at [b] *çientos*, at one of thoſe tables, they call'd for lights, there was not any body there but one Page, and hee

b Cientos; *a witty game at Cards, much vſed in Spaine.*

he ſo ſlepie and ſo drouſie, that hauing call'd vnto him twice, hee did neither anſwere them, nor well minde what they ſaid vnto him: I made preſently in to them, and hauing my candles and candleſtickes in a readineſſe, which were not long a lighting, throwing one end of my cloake over my ſhoulder, as if I had beene one of the ſervants of the houſe: I ſhifted the candleſticks, putting the lights into thoſe that I had brought with me, clapping thoſe other of ſilver vnder mine arme; and ſo turning nimbly away from them, walking as Cats doe, ſoftly and without any noyſe, I got me quietly to my lodging, where I mixt them together with other peeces of plate, which I had in the like manner at divers times gathered together; And for to take away all occaſion of quarrelling and wrangling, and that I might not be askt whether theſe are thine, or mine? Let me ſee the marke; Compare it with this or that other peece, and the difference will ſoone be decided; How came you by it? Where did you buy it? What was hee that ſold it you? To avoyd theſe and the like cavills, I thought good to make ſure worke with it; ſo I melted it (that it might not be knowne by it's eare-marke) all into one maſſe, and putting it into a fine earthen pot, I carried it to my Captaine, that he out of the authoritie and credit that hee had abroad, might the better ſell it for mee.

Hee did ſo; and taking out a fifth part for himſelfe, he gaue me the reſt in very good Royals of plate, without defrauding me of one farthing, or the leaſt haire of my head. It was an order amongſt vs, that to him, as to our Chieftaine, we ſhould bring all whatſoever we got, whereof the fifth part was his fee, which we truly and juſtly paid vnto him, as a tribute that was as due to him, as that of the *Indies*, is to his *Catholike Majeſtie*. No Prince in the world had more punctuall payment. And for this taxe, tillage, impoſt, or cuſtome, (or whatſoever in that kinde you ſhall be pleaſed to call it) we were in all our dangers, protected & defended by him. Let no man thinke to chew his [k] meat on both ſides of his chaps at once; and to haue all the water runne through his owne mill, and none paſſe beſides. For there is no dignitie in this life without a penſion; and nothing that a man enjoyes of his eſtate, but he muſt part with ſome portion out of it. Every one hath his double rowe of teeth, together with his grinders, all would faine eat. Every poll, hath his polling. There are certaine rights and duties to be raiſed out of all things whatſoever. Impoſts, and Intereſts, muſt paſſe to and fro in the world. One hand waſheth [k] another, and both waſh the face. If one giue me a Capon, it is fit I ſhould beſtow the brawne thereof vpon him. And there is no money can be better imployd, then vpon ſuch a good Angell as this to guard vs. There are ſome kinde of people ſo cruell and vnconſcionable, that they thinke of nothing but deceit and cozenage, ſcooping like ſhovels all to themſelues; they will haue all the [l] bread, and the meat too; both a mans paines, and his profit; leauing vs nothing but the *periculum*, and the *pœnam*, the perill, and the puniſhment, if it be our misfortune to be caught. They will highly praiſe and commend vs, that they may incourage vs on to greater matters, as *Pizarro* did his people in the *Indies*. But whē they giue vs moſt, and reward vs beſt, they thinke they doe vs a great favour, if they giue vs the ſcraps and fragments, and what themſelues know not well what to doe withall, reſerving the beſt and greateſt part of the profit to themſelues; as *Alexandro* dealt with me. But afterwards, when they ſee vs in diſtreſſe, and that wee haue need of their helpe, they will not ſo much as know vs, they preſently ſtrike ſayle, and will not ſtirre a foot to ſuccour vs.

But we, and this our *Milaneſe* (whom we made our Commander) kept very good quarter; for he would by no meanes haue any more of vs then a fifth part, which by agreement belonged vnto him. And if at any time, hee hauing need of money, did intreat vs that we would lend him ſome, and put it to account to be paid out of his fifth part, as prizes came in; when we had furniſht him, he would preſently ſet it downe in his booke, with an *Item* ſo much due

Proverbe.
i Maſcar a dos carrillos. i. Hazerſe à ambas partes contrarias con diſſimulaçion. Covarr. verb. Maſcar.

Proverbe.
k Vna mano lava la otra, y entrambas la cara.

Proverbe.
l Quieren el pan, y las maſeras.

vnto ſuch a one, to be paid out of my next Vales, & vvhen that debt was ſatiſfied, hee would either croſſe it, or write repayd in the margent; ſo that there was evermore an even reckoning kept betweene vs. No, no, he was none of theſe ſhuffling companions, he vvas wonderfull honeſt in ſharing the ſpoyle vvith vs, levelling all accounts, and ſtill keeping an even reckoning with vs; & ſo as we had the fortune to make a good voyage, for the reſt, we needed not to feare. My fellowes did not loyter but beſtirred themſelues luſtily, and like good husbands, never came home with their hands in their [m] boſomes, nor dragg'd out an empty net.

proverbe.
[m] Con las manos en el ſeno.

Wee vvere foure of *vs* in the whole; three adventures, to enter vpon all kinde of enterprizes, and one Captaine to fight in our defence. Wee would ſometimes take him along with vs, and put him formoſt, to the end that if any one of vs ſhould be taken napping, and the theft found about vs, hee might ſerue to mitigate the matter, when vve were thus taken in the manner, making vs to reſtore that which we had taken, (that I may not ſay ſtolne away) giving vs two or three boxes on the eare, and as many kicks on the breech, diſmiſsing vs from thence in a devils name, ſaying vvithall; Get you gone, you rogue, be packing I ſay like an arrant raſcall, and falſe thiefe as thou art, ſirrha, let me ſee your backe, and I adviſe you let me never heare or ſee, that you fall any more a filching, leaue your ſtealing, and liue honeſtly, elſe I ſweare vnto thee by the faith of an honeſt man, I will cauſe thee to be whipt, or ſent to the Galleys. Being thus curſtly vſed by him, firſt kickt and beaten, and afterwards roundly rated, they that were preſent, taking him to be a good honeſt Gentleman, and a mercifull minded man, they were content to let vs goe, and ſo did we ſcape that ſtorme by his meanes, vvhereas otherwiſe wee had beene overtaken therewith.

But ſome againe, were ſuch hard-hearted people, and of that ſtubborne and perverſe nature, that they did ſet vpon vs like fierce dragons, & were ſo full of rage and choller, that nothing could pacifie their wrath, but did ſtill preſſe vs more and more, and nothing would content them, but our impriſonment, whipping, hanging, all vvas too little for vs. They would firſt ſee vs clapt vp ſafe, and afterwards talke with vs at leyſure. To ſuch rough-hewen natures, and boyſterous diſpoſitions, our Captaine would come to the parties, whom we had vvronged, and tell them; Doe not foyle your hands with ſuch a filthy rogue as this is; giue him a hundred kicks, and let him goe like a villaine and thiefe as he is, but doe not cauſe him to be apprehended, you ſee he is a poore raſcall, and if you commit him to priſon, there will he ſtarue, and be eaten vp vvith lice; and vvhat pleaſure can you take in the deſtruction of ſuch a ragged ſnake, vvho in himſelfe is ſo vvretched a ſoule already? And vvith that, crying out; Thou vngracious vnluckie villaine, they vvould giue vs ſuch jobs, ſuch puſhes, ſuch ſhocks, & juſtlings, and thruſt vs vvith that violence from them, that they vvould make vs to roote vp the earth with our noſes, and onely thereby to free vs out of their hands, who had vs in hold.

But if any one ſhould be ſo ſtiffe, & ſo hard laced, that nothing could moue him to pitie, nothing worke our inlargement, we vſed our beſt endevour to get from them; if that would not ſerue the turne, we would ſtand vpon our juſtification, & not ſticke (and that ſtoutly too) to tell this or that other to his teeth, that he lyde in his throat, and that wee were as honeſt men as hee, or the beſt of them all: And whileſt we were thus ſtriuing to be gone, our Captaine would interpoſe himſelfe vnder colour of pacifying the matter, and would helpe to part vs, by his comming in betweene vs, and ſo free vs from out their clutches, and ſet vs at liberty. And if need were, (when all this would not ſerue the turne) hee did throw a [n] bone amongſt them, and would ſeeke ſome occaſion or other, provoking them by words, to fall to blowes, quieting the leſſer tumult by the greater, and ſo made a ſhift to ſcuffle

proverbe.
[n] Deromavan el poleo, *ſayes the Spaniſh phraſe.* Lat. pulegium. *Eng. pennyroyall.* Quæ herba excitat oves ad balatum.

ſcuffle away, and to diſ-imbroyle our ſelues of this troubleſome buſineſſe.

At other times, vvhen vvee vvere running away vvith that vvhich vvee had ſtolne, and vvere hardly followed, even cloſe at the heeles of vs; one of our fellowes vvould come athwart him that purſued vs, and ſtepping out juſt before him, vvould detaine him for a vvhile, asking him what was the matter, and vvhat troubled him, that he made ſuch haſte, vvho it vvas that had done him vvrong, together vvith the nature of the injurie, and ſo would not ſuffer him to paſſe on, as if he had deſired to make peace, and to pacifie both parties. And albeit he would not giue him any anſwere, (for that his buſineſſe required haſte) yet vvere it more, or leſſe, that hee thus entertayned the time with him, every the leaſt delay, were it never ſo little, was enough to make vs, to our great advantage, gaine ground of him; howbeit they that flie, haue alwayes the ſtart of them that follow; and feare, in ſuch caſes, doth evermore clap wings to our feet. Whereas they that runne after others, doe naturally grow quickly weary, & beat themſelues out of breath, partly being ſtifled with the heat of paſſion, and partly out of the minde that they haue to doe another a ſhrewd turne, which doth much puzzle them, notwithſtanding that they ſtriue & labour all that they can to overtake him: but it is impoſſible to ſtriue againſt nature, which doth ever favour thoſe, that deſire to ſaue themſelues. Thus by one meanes or other, they were ſtill detayned, and miſt of their purpoſe.

Other-whiles, they vvould be bound for our forth-comming, giue their words for our truth and honeſtie, and though we had gone ſheere away vvith that which we had ſtolne, they would plead for innocencie, eſpecially, not being taken vvith the theft; for by this time we had convay'd it ſome three or foure ſtreets off, where there was no more newes heard of it. So that by their good words, their interceſſions, and their being bound for vs body for body, we were freed from that evill opinion, which before was conceiued of vs. So that by hooke, or by crooke, this way, or that way, one or another, we went through-ſtitch with our buſineſſe, *maugre* all the world, or though ſpite ſhould haue done her worſt; for we had ſtill one tricke or other, when it came to a dead lift, wherewithall to ſerue our turne.

But once, being more careleſſe, then I ought to haue beene, I vvould needs goe forrage alone by my ſelfe, vvithout ever a ſkout to ſcoure the coaſt, and though I ſhould haue taken one along with me, I perſwade my ſelfe, as the caſe then ſtood with me, he would haue ſteaded me little, or nothing at all. And thus it was.

Sayavedra's *ſtealing of ſhirts.*

My ſinnes (for it could be nothing elſe,) had drawne me one day forth of the Citie to walke abroad and take the ayre, and comming neere vnto a river ſide, where in a medow vpon the graſſe were laid out a great many linnen cloathes a drying, and the woman that lookt vnto them, ſitting cloſe, to ſhade her-ſelfe from the heat of the Sunne, in a little hollow cleft of an old wall, that was not farre off; me thought the linnen needed no more drying, and whether it did or no, it was all one to me, wet or dry, it made no great matter, either way (ſo I might haue what I look't for) would ſerue my turne well enough. I had a moneths minde, to fold vp two or three of the fineſt and neweſt ſhirts, that were there, thinking vvith my ſelfe, that they would fit well with my bodie, and ſo very eaſily and fairely I tooke them vp; but fearing leſt any body ſhould come in the meane while, and ſpie what I was a doing, I lapt them vpin haſte, not being willing to ſtay to fold them there, but to doe that at more leyſure, when I came to my lodging. The good woman did not ſee what I did, for her backe was all this while towards mee; but there was not one wanting, vvho ſhrewdly complayning of me, not running (to make me the more ſecure) but walking a good round pace towards her, adviſed her theteof.

This poore woman, when ſhee heard how the world went, ſets me out a throat, whoſe ſhrill ſound did aſcend as high as heaven. And leauing a little

girle, that ſhee had there, to looke vnto the reſt of the linnen, ſhee began to runne after me. So that I ſeeing my ſelfe in this ſtrait, I diſſembled the matter as well as I could, & without either turning my face towards her, or mending my pace, I walked ſoberly and demurely along, as if ſhee had nothing to doe with me; letting (as I went along) my ware fall to the ground, going on ſtill as I did before, without any perturbation of countenance, or inlarging of my ſteps; thinking with my ſelfe, that when this wicked woman had recovered that which ſhe loſt, ſhe would therewith haue beene contented, & reſted quiet: but ſhe did not leaue me ſo; for if ſhee cryde out before, now ſhee made ſuch a noyſe, and ſent forth ſuch a loud clamour, that the whole field did ring of the peale, which that ſhrill clapper of hers made. And for that we were not farre from the Towne, nor in a ſolitarie place, that was free from company, the out-cryes that ſhee made, were heard by many; inſomuch that great ſtore of all ſorts of people came running in, eſpecially boyes and little children, beſides a great number of dogs, barking and bawling, as if they had beene mad, comming about me as thicke as bees; being confounded, and ready almoſt to haue runne out of my wits vvith that tumultuous hurry, and horrible ſtirre they made. And ſome young lads, which fell in with theſe leſſer beagles, to make the crie the fuller, when they vnderſtood of the buſineſſe, were ready to ſwallow me vp aliue, from whoſe power (ſo violently were they bent againſt me) it was impoſſible for me to eſcape. From that day forward, I began to ſtand in feare of this little frye, which heretofore I was never afraid of. Theſe little minowes, were they, that by perſecuting of me, did vndoe me.

A ſhort tale of a drunkard.

When I heard *Sayavedra* ſay ſo, there preſently came into my minde a famous drunkard in *Madrid*, who being kickt and ſpurn'd, and mightily abuſed by the boyes that had got about him; when he came to the end of the ſtreet, hee ſtoopes mee downe and takes vp a couple of ſtones, and holding one in the one hand, and the other in the other, leaning himſelfe againſt a wall, hee ſaid thus vnto them: No more, no more (my good Boyes) it is enough; ſtay here, ſtay here (ſweet Children) for it is not fit you ſhould goe any farther. And therefore (my pretty hearts) let me intreate you to goe backe, and not trouble mee, or your ſelues any longer: for I am very well ſatisfied with thoſe courteſies I haue already receiued from you; for the which I kindly thanke you. Otherwiſe, I haue nothing to returne you in requitall, but theſe ſtones, which I ſhall freely beſtow vpon you, though it coſt me the laying on; ſo that ſome of you, I beleeue, will be better paid for your paines then you expect. Whereupon they ſeeing him thus reſolute, they ſneakt away one by one, and let the poore man alone, who afterward wēt quietly along about his buſines. If *Sayavedra* had taken the like courſe, he might peradventure haue had the like ſucceſſe.

But he, continuing his diſcourſe went on and ſaid; ſurely where this rude rabble once bands and lincks it ſelfe together, no good man can doe ought that is good, nor any honeſt man paſſe in quiet for them. I ſought now to flie from them, as a man would flie from the gallowes: and I was in a good way toward it, and wanted little of comming thither. For, by ſeeking to flie from their hands I fell into thoſe of the Iuſtice; who had now caught me in their net, whence there was no hope to ſcape.

When I ſaw this misfortune was fallen vpon me: I made no more adoe, but ſent preſently to my Captaine, adviſing him how the caſe ſtood with me, who as ſoone as he vnderſtood of it, made all the haſte he could vnto me, was with me (as they ſay) ere a man could ſay *this*; and well inſtructed me what I ſhould both ſay and doe. That done, hee went to the Notarie, telling him that hee knew mee to be well deſcended, that I was honorably borne both by Father and Mother, and of as ancient and noble a Houſe as any was in *Spaine*: and that it was not poſſible, nor vvas it to be beleeu'd, that ſuch a Gentleman as I vvas, vvould commit ſo foule a fact.

But

But say (vvhich cannot sinke into my head) that it should be true, it is not a thing so much to be wondred at; for that he might either doe it out of youthfulnesse (which is incident now and then to play such kinde of idle prankes) or out of want, lacking money, and being loath to begge or borrow, or forced therevnto out of pure hunger; and therefore chose rather to hazard than famish his person. Besides, it is a matter of no moment, a toy, a trifle, a thing not to be made any reckoning of, as well in regard of its small value, as also in respect of the Gentlemans qualitie, and the noblenesse of his house. What vvith these good vvords and something else that he did besides, within some tvvo houres after I vvas freed out of Prison: and (had God beene pleased so to haue it) I could haue wisht I might not haue come out then, nor three houres after that; nay, not till darke night: but since it was his good vvill and pleasure that it should succeed as it did with me, blessed be his name for euer, good or ill must be vvelcome from his hand. Sinne, that Catchpole of Conscience, that churlish Porter that keepes account of our actions, and has an eye to what vve doe, vvho had still persecuted me at the very threshold of the dores whereinto I entred, was not vnmindefull to do the like by me in that of the Prison, when I was ready to come out: for euen as I was putting my foote ouer the threshold, vvho should I meet full butte, but Maister *Dazario?* who came thither to free a Prisoner.

As soone as he savv mee, he presently knevv mee, and withall pusht me so violently backe, that I fell flat vpon my backe to the ground; and then comming fiercely vpon mee that hee might hold me, while hee had me at this advantage, and calling to the Keeper, committed me anew, and followed the accusation so hard against me, that neither intreaties nor any offers to make him satisfaction for his kirtle, were able to make him surcease his sute. Hee was a powerfull man, I vsed all possible diligences: but neither did my pleading that I was a Gentleman, nor the tendernesse of my yeares, prevaile so farre, as to bring me fairely off. And, as if they had done me a deed of charity, and bestowed an almes on me, by way of trans-action and agreement, as if they had shewed mee all the fauour in the world, they gaue mee such a heauy sentence that I shall neuer forget it vvhile I liue. I went for shirts, and they stript me of mine from my shoulder to my waste, banishing me from thence for euer. I had my payment, but the blockhead had not his Kirtle: see how a wilfull foole, such a one as this was, stood in his owne light; being more willing to doe me a mischiefe then himselfe a pleasure; and to lose his goods, rather then to let mee loose: which hee might easily haue recouered of mee, if he would haue suffered me to stay in that City.

Well, I was forced to forgoe *Naples*, and with it, all my old friends and acquaintance: I packt vp all my trinkets together, and that poore pittance that I had pickt vp by mine owne industry, and departed from thence, wandring vp and downe *Italy*, till I came to *Bologna*, where *Alessandro* receiued me into his seruice: who did vsually go out of that City, to fetch in some booty or other; and hauing sped well hee returned home in safety. When wee were in *Rome*, and came in vnto you, when you were in that thrust and throng of people, we did not so much intend your good, as expect that some further quarrell would haue growne therevpon, whereby wee might with the more safety haue got some Cloakes or Hats: but that occasion being taken away, missing thus of our purpose, wee began to plot how we might commit this theft, making me (as their manner was) *Cabeça de Lobo*, the Woulfes head, the instrument of their profit; whilst they kept their owne fingers out of the fire, and would be sure to bee out of danger of Gun-shot. This Story was he telling me, vvhen vve were now come to our journeies end. And so ceasing to talke any farther of it, vve came into our Inne, where vve presently had that provided for vs vvhich was fitting for trauellers that vvere not to make any long stay.

Proverb.
e Cabeça de Lobo. That is, the scraps that a man takes to benefit himself. As he that feeds a Wolfe, and carries the head to his Villages thereabout feasting, friending of each one by way of gratification, for the good that hath done him, by keeping and harbouring a Beast. Cotarr. Verb. Cabeça.

CHAP. VI.

CHAP. VI.

Sayavedra *meets in* **Milan** *with a friend of his that ſerv'd a Merchant;* **Guzman de Alfarache** *layes a witty plot how to rob him.*

With a great deale of attention and admiration, had *Sayavedra* all this journey tyed mine eares to his tongue. And during the reſt of the way, till wee reacht to *Milan*, vvee were never out of matter; but kept the ball ſtill vp; hee toſſing one tale to me, and I returning another to him: ſo that our Diſcourſe never made a fault; but vvas (being both good Players) vvell maintained and kept vp betweene vs. But I had a great contradiction in my ſelfe, and could hardly bee brought to beleeue that men of noble birth, Sonnes of ſuch vvorthy Parents, ſhould ſuffer themſelues to be thus violently haled by their Paſſions; that, forgetting the reſpect due to their bloud and Gentry, (the remembrance whereof ſhould cauſe them to goe on in an honourable and civill courſe of life) doe notwithſtanding commit baſe and infamous actions, by robbing others of their goods and honours: for in very truth, hee that loſeth his wealth, loſeth both the one and the other; for every man is ſo farre forth eſteemed and honoured, as he is rich and wealthy. Wherevpon I ſaid ſecretly to my ſelfe; ſurely if *Sayavedras* father left him ſo rich as he himſelfe reporteth hee did, how comes it (quoth I) to paſſe, that hee is turned thiefe? and that he takes more pleaſure to follow this lewd kinde of life, and to endure theſe ſhamefull affronts, then to liue in eſteeme and reputation in his owne Country? If wee doe ill, vvee therefore doe it becauſe it carries a faire appearance with it, and ſhewes vnto vs certaine ſhadowes, or a kinde of reſemblance of ſome goodneſſe or other; but in ſuffering ſuch indignities as hee hath done, there is no hope thereof, no colour at all for it. But I preſently recall'd this raſh cenſure, and ſodainly taking vp my ſelfe, I fell to excuſing of him, and began vpon better deliberation to ſay with my ſelfe; It may bee he wejt from home being a childe as I did. And ſo, conſidering the relation that hee had made vnto mee, mine owne proper ſteps repreſented themſelues vnto mee, and thoſe lewd courſes that my ſelfe had runne. But I afterwards came againe to my ſelfe and ſaid: But ſuppoſe all this to bee true which hee hath ſaid: Why did not hee turne over a new leafe when hee had the vſe of reaſon, and came to be a man, taking vpon him the profeſſion of a Souldier? He might anſwere likewiſe for himſelfe and ſay; Why did not I ſo to? I ſee a mote in another mans eye, and cannot behold the beame that is in mine owne.

Military Profeſſion is a pleaſing thing, and hath many motiues to draw a mans affection therevnto. They haue good pay, they paſſe well enough with it; it teacheth a man hardneſſe, it makes him to forget his dainty faire at home, and boldly to adventure his life to winne honour, and to doe his Countrey ſervice. But they pay dearly for it, they haue too hard a bargaine of it, it is a kinde of taking vp of money at extreame rates, and exceſſiue intereſt, for to ſatisfie a debt of leſſer value. They muſt ſerue long before they can come to any thing, riſe betimes in the morning, watch all night, haue his ſhoulders pincht with the heavy weight of Muſquet, ſtand Centinell for the ſpace of full foure houres, and two at the leaſt, when he is *Centinela perdida*, without budging or mouing but a foote from that place where they haue once ſet him: let it raine, thunder or lighten neuer ſo faſt; freze, ſnow, or blow the windes neuer ſo hard; let the weather be as ſharpe as ſharpe may be, all is one, he muſt ſtād to his tackling. And when he hath done all this, like a ſouldier and a braue fel-

low,

Money makes man to be eſteemed.

Men ſooner ſee other mens faults then their owne.

The ſweetneſſe and ſowreneſſe of warre.

a Dixoſe Centinela, à Scintillando. Porque ha de eſtar con los ojos abieros, y viuos, como çentellas. Otros dizen, que eſta corrompido el vocablo de centinela à ſentiendo. Por la viueza que ha de teneren todos los ſentidos: eſpecialmentè en la viſta, y eneloydo. Centinela perdida, *is he that is put out of a Caſtle, or out of a Campe into the open field, where in caſe of neceſſity, he cannot be conueniently relieued: and ſo he muſt ſtand to his aduenture. The French ſtile him.* Centinelle perdue. Coyan. Verb. Continela.

low, when hee ſhall returne home ſafe to his lodging (not reckoning thoſe that miſcarry by this meanes) hee hath not ſo much as a Candle to light him to bed, nor fire to dry either his wet or frozen carcaſſe, nor bread to put in his mouth, nor wine to waſh downe thoſe crummes, being hunger-ſtaru'd, all mire and dirt, all to be rent and torne, but not a ragge of comfort. And therefore conſidering the hard life that a Souldier leads, and how ill they are rewarded, hazarding their owne lines to ſaue other mens, I doe not much blame *Sayavedra* that he did not turne Souldier.

But for his elder brother, *Señor Iuan Marti*, or *Mateo Luxan* (leauing him to make choyſe of one of the two, as ſhall ſtand beſt with his Worſhips liking) who was of age ſufficient, when his father died, for to diſcerne betwixt ill and good, who had a good houſe to put his head in, and good meanes to maintaine it, and to haue liu'd richly and plentifully, and in good reputation and credit in his owne Country, what a Diuell mou'd him, or what helliſh temptation came into his minde, to neglect his owne buſines, and ſo fooliſhly thruſt himſelfe to intermeddle in other folkes matters, and to fall at laſt to ſtealing of cloakes. How much better would it haue beene for him to haue employd his perſon in ſome honourable entertainment or other? He was a good Gramarian, he had ſtudied the Lawes, and might (if he would himſelfe) haue eaſily come to be a Doctor.

But happily, theſe and the like doe thinke, That there needs no more to make a thiefe, then to ſay; I will be a thiefe. And that all ſhall ſucceed as happily with them as themſelues could wiſh it. But in good ſooth, I muſt beate them out of this errour, and plainly tell them; That there is more in it, then ſo. That it will coſt them no ſmall labour, and withall they muſt incurre a great deale of danger. Beſides I cannot well tell you, whether or no, there bee ſo many rules amongſt the Lawyers, as he needs to haue, who meanes to proue a good thiefe indeed. For ſay, that there be two in the Towne, that emulate one another, and contend for the victorie, and that the one after a great deale of ſtrife, and ſtiffe ſtanding out, will at laſt concurre with the other, who hath gotten him the name and fame of all that profeſſion that belongs to your *Cocoquiſmo*, and *Germania*, the true Art of filching and ſtealing, and hath ſhow'd himſelfe an excellent Proficient in that Science, I can aſſure you, on my credit, hee had need carry a cloſe hand, and looke narrowly to his buſineſſe. For, to my ſeeming, if that be true, (as I thinke it was) which *Sayavedra* deliuered vnto me; he was a poore vnfortunate pilchard, a kind or ſhotten Herring; and I, in compariſon of him, a great goodly Whale. Yet for all this, did not I dare, (fearing I ſhould proue my ſelfe a dunce, when I came to be examined by the maſters of that faculty) to ſtand for my grace, nor pretend the Cap and Hood, as doubting, how I ſhould be able to anſwer for my degree, if I were well canuaſt by thoſe that ſhould oppoſe me. *Sayauedra*, and his brother (doubtleſſe) did flatter themſelues, and were truly perſwaded, that with theſe poore dry pretty thefts, ill ſeaſoned, without any good taſte, ſweet ſauour, or any the leaſt pleaſant reliſh in the world, they might boldly goe into the Schooles, and there reade in the [c] *Regis profeſſor* his chaire, their ſolemne Lectures for their Doctorſhip. They did nappely thinke with them-ſelues, that there was no more in it, then what a good plaine Country-fellow ſaid, that was a kinde of poore ſilly *Alcalde*, in a little Village, called [d] *Almonaçi de Çurita*, in the kingdome of *Toledo*, who hauing made a watring place for the towne Cattle to

Thieuing is a trade that is full of trouble.

b Termes of Art amongſt theeues and rogues. Germania, elacento en la penultima, es el lenguage de la ruſianeſca; dicho aſſi; ò porque no los entendemos, ò por la hermandad que entre ſitienen. *A canting kind of language. Alſo taken for a fraternitie, or brotherhood amongſt theeues.* Couarr. verb. Germania.

A tale of a Country Alcalde.

c The Spaniſh word is; Catedra de prima. Valeranto, como ſilla pueſta en alto, qual es la de los Maeſtros que leen; con obligacion de leer à tiempo ſenalado, &c. Couarr. verb. Catedra. *d* Almonaſi de Curita, *is ſtated betwixt* Alualate, *and* Zorita. *It is an Arabicke word corrupted of* Almunaſi, *which ſignifies a place of oblation: ſeeming to haue its rout, from the Hebrew word* naſan, obliuiſci. *And in that Towne there is ſome of that ſtrength and goodneſſe, that Trauellers fit their journeyes ſo, as they may lodge there at night, where ſome of them ſo get themſelues, like Vlyſſes ſouldiers, before they get thence.* Otros dizen, que vale tanto como, huerta del Rey. Vid. Couarr. pag. 56.

drinke

drinke at, when he had finiſht it, and made it handſome, hauing fitted it with ceſternes, and whatſoeuer elſe hee in his wiſdome held to bee neceſſary, hee call'd the wiſdome of the towne together, the whole body of the Councell, where in their preſence, he caus'd the conduit pipes to be opened, and to let out the water, that they might giue their judgement and opinion, how they lik't of it? One ſaid, the trough ſtood too high; another too low. The *Alcalde*, ſeeing his worke found fault withall, was not halfe well pleaſed with it, but ſcorning to be daſht out of countenance, and ouer-borne by his inferiours, he ſteps himſelfe to the trough, and there his worſhip drinkes: And when he had done, ſtepping backeward about ſome two ſtrides, or thereabouts, looking angerly, yet grauely enough vpon them, he firſt ſpits, then wipes his mouth, and laſtly ſayes vnto them; Gods nigs, (my maſters) you need not find ſuch fault with it, there is no more to bee ſaid in this matter: for being that I can make a ſhift to drinke at it, there is neuer a beaſt but may doe the like, if he haue a minde to drinke.

Euen juſt ſo is it with your young thieues that are freſh-water-Souldiers, and not well beaten to the buſineſſe, who thinke all things eaſie, that they take in hand, and when they heare of ſuch a famous thiefe, and that he hath done wonders in that kinde, will not ſticke to ſay; Tuſh, this is nothing: We can doe as much as this and more too. But I promiſe you on my honeſt word, that ſuch as theſe, who haue ſo good a conceit of themſelues, that may bee ſaid of them, which another Country fellow, not farre from hence, dwelling in *Mancha*, ſaid to two other fellowes, who earneſtly contended about the foale of a Mare; One ſaid, it was a Horſe; No, ſaid the other, it is a Mule: Then a third perſon, that was in their company, drawing neerer and neerer, and rounding about the beaſt, and viewing, and viewing him againe, after hee had throughly marked his muſle, and his eares, hee cryes out aloud; Gods-bores, what a deale of doe is here about nothing? You are a couple of coxe-combes both of you; for I can aſſure you, this is as very an Aſſe, as my father. He that will boaſt himſelfe to be a thiefe, and deſires to be liſted into the rolle of thoſe that haue gotten greateſt fame, let him endevour to doe things brauely, let him be an honourable thiefe, and not of that baſeneſſe of minde, as to ſtoope ſo low, as to rob an hearbe-wifes ſhop of a rope of onions, or Tops and Gigs, and ſuch other toyes as little children vſe to play withall, which ſerue but from hand to mouth, to feed other thieues withall; who will vſe thee no otherwiſe, then men doe their ſlaues: you muſt pay them daily tribute, or elſe you muſt be packing; they will not care a pin for you. And yet for theſe petty thefts (though thou thinkſt to ſcape with them, as things of nothing,) they may chance to chaine thee to the gallies, if not halter thee at the gallowes. A man ſhould not (me thinkes) ſo much vnder-value his owne worth, as to proſtitute his life to danger, and to lay open his ſhoulders to ſhame for bables and trifles; nor, is it fit, that for ſo little, a man ſhould pay ſo much. That a man ſhould be ſuch a foole, as to indanger his necke for a Kirtle, or a couple of ſhirts. *Quien camiſas hurta, jubon eſpera*; He that ſteales a ſhirt, liues in hope to haue a doublet too. Let ſuch a white-liuerd-whoreſon, doe that, which that valiant Captaine *Capin Vitelo* adviſeth; *El mercader, que ſu trato no entiende, çierre la tienda*; That Merchant, that vnderſtands not his trade, let him ſhut vp his ſhop.

But to let theſe thieues alone and to come home to my ſelfe; what could I now doe, if I ſhould come to be put to it? What's become of all my cunning thefts? I doubt me, I ſhould be to ſeeke, how, where, and which way to begin. The Art of it, is gone from me, but not the feare. Every thing hath its courſe, and its time, it is now a great while agoe ſince I finger'd my *fleame* or *lancet*, or that I did let any man bloud, my hand is nothing ſo nimble as it was, it is growne ſlow and dull, and knowes not well where to pricke the veine. Beleeue it, There is no ſuch Maſter as *Practice*. Vſe, and exerciſe, are excellent things,

A tale of three country fellowes.

e There is alſo (which the Iuſtice beſtowes on rogues) jubon de aſotes: porque ſe los a juſtan alas eſpaldas. Covar. 492.

f proverbe.

Practiſe, a great matter.

to

to keepe the hand in vre: Which vvhen it is vvanting, the vnderſtanding gathers moſſe, waxeth mouldy, and growes ruſty.

When we vvere come to *Milan*, we kept vacation for three or foure daies. For I durſt not as yet adventure to play. I was loath to haue any thing to doe vvith your men of warre, for they alwayes play very vvarily. Your Souldiers are ſubtile cunning gameſters, and aboue all, beare a moſt malitious minde againſt a mans money. They are never quiet, till they haue it. All, or the moſt part of them, vvould ſeeke to play vpon ſome advantage or other. I could not make vſe of my tricks, nor would they permit me to put them vpon them, yet I muſt, whether I would or no, be forced to giue way to theirs. Beſides, of them I was ſure to get but little, but might be in election to loſe much. I was not minded to do any thing there, ſaue onely to round the City, to ſee vvhat a manner of thing it was, what their trafficke, and ſuch other greatneſſes as it ſhould afford our ſight, and ſo afterwards to bid it farewell. And being thus reſolued, I went to vvalke all that day from ſhop to ſhop, vvhere I ſaw ſo many curioſities that I was taken with great admiration in the beholding of them, as alſo in the great trade, that vvas there driuen, even in leſſer things that vvere of meaner value.

Gusman comes to Milan.

Standing one day in the midſt of the Market-place, there came to *Sayavedra*, a handſome young youth, honeſtly clad, and vvell behau'd, and both in his garbe and faſhion, a very fine *Spaniard*. But becauſe his backe vvas towards me, I could not then diſcerne, nor vnderſtand more of him, but that they went a little aſide off from me, vvhere alone by themſelues, they entertained talke a good vvhile: vvhich put me in a great muſe, thinking with my ſelfe, vvhat might be the cauſe, that theſe two ſhould treat together vvith that ſecreſie, not hauing (as I did imagine vvith my ſelfe) ever ſeene one another before. Notvvithſtanding, that I might not breake off their diſcourſe, to the end that I might ſee vvhither it tended, I ſtood ſtill, and did not moue from the place vvherein I vvas, having ſtill an eye, leſt they ſhould get out of my ſight, obſerving their proceedings, & that if they ſhould chance to goe towards my lodging, I might (take the ſtart of them,) be there before them. And ever and anon, mine eye vvas vpon them, but yet kept me ſtill where I vvas, to the end that they likewiſe might not ſhift a foot, and ſo ſlip from mee.

For, I did conſider with my ſelfe; if I ſhould now call him vnto mee, and aske him, vvhat it vvas they talked of, *Sayavedra* might take occaſion to make vvhat excuſe he liſt himſelfe, and might make mee this anſwere; that by reaſon of my calling him away, they had not finiſhed their diſcourſe, nor as yet entertained talke to any purpoſe. Whereupon for my better ſatisfaction, I thought it my beſt courſe to continue there a little longer, and to leaue them a large field, vvherein to expatiate their mindes, for I had no ſuch earneſt buſineſſe elſewhere, as might preſſe me to be gone. Now when it vvas almoſt dinner-time, this young youth tooke his leaue, and vvent about his buſineſſe; And I was likewiſe vvilling to doe the like; for all this while I vvas vvonderfull jealous, & had a ſtrong ſuſpicion, that they had plotted together to put a tricke vpon me. And *Sayavedra* not ſaying a vvord to me, nor I to him, my feare was thereby the more increaſed, and began more & more to doubt what their drift might be. Watching him vvith no leſſe care then a Cat vvould watch a Mouſe. For ſuſpition is a ſhrewd vvorme, vvhich lies ſtill gnawing at the heart; nor is it to be held a vice, vvhen it ſettles it ſelfe vpon a vicious man. For, accordingly as the natures and conditions of men are, ſo haue vve reaſon to be more, or leſſe ſuſpitious: Fearing every man ſo farre forth, as his faſhion and carriage may occaſion his feare. But for as much as the deſire vvee haue after this, or that other thing, makes vs to ruſh violently on, & break through the bars of all difficulties vvhatſoeuer, although I would faine haue held peace, and did ſtriue all that I could to keepe in this tongue of mine, yet could I hold no longer, (no though

The nature of ſuſpition and jealouſie.

though my life had layen vpon it) but I muſt needs aske him; vvho that young man was, and what might be the ſubject of this their long diſcourſe? yet did I forbeare for the preſent, making no words thereof till I had dined, and then taking my time, calling *Sayavedra* vnto me, I ſaid thus vnto him; That young man, that was with you this morning, mee thinkes I haue (if I be not much miſtaken) ſeene him heretofore in *Rome*. Is not his name *Mendoça*?

Aguilera, *a famous theefe*.

No Sir, (ſaid *Sayavedra*) his name is *Aguilera*; nor hath hee his name for nought: for he is an Eagle that will fly at any thing, nothing comes amiſſe to him, he is ſtill ready vpon all occaſions. He is a good fellow, and a fine companion; hee is likewiſe a brother of the Company, and ſuch a one; as none of them all can out-ſtrip him, he hath more trickes then a hundred of them, there is more reſort to his Lectures, then to all the other Readers beſide, put them al together.

O, this *Aguilera* hath tickling tallons, and what he once ſeaſes on, is ſure his owne, he goes ſheere away with it, and tis never heard of any more. Hee hath a quicke apprehenſion, a nimble wit, a ſtrong braine, a ſound judgement, hee is an excellent pen-man, and ſuch an Accomptant, either for the keeping of a Merchants booke, or ſumming vp of any recknings whatſoever, that I know not his fellow. We haue knowne one another this many yeares, wee haue travailed together, and endured many particular troubles, and perils. And now he hath beene at mee, to put mee vpon one, which may turne to our exceeding either great good, or hurt, it being with vs, as with thoſe that goe to Sea, either a happy voyage, or a miſerable ſhip-wracke. For hee that will goe to Sea, muſt reſolue before-hand to encounter vvith dangers; eſpecially, being that betweene our death, and our life, there is no more then the ſpringing of a planke, or the ſlipping of a cord.

He gaue me an account, how he came to this Citie, with a purpoſe to ſeeke as well as he could ſome meanes whereby to liue. But, becauſe he would not ingulphe himſelfe, before he had firſt ſounded the water, and that he might not within two dayes after his arriuall, be taken vp for a vagabond, or ſome maſterleſſe-hound, he had by good hap lighted vpon an entertainment, which might quit coſt without ſuſpition; for hee had now placed himſelfe with a Merchant of this City, who had receiued him into his ſervice for the goodneſſe of his hand, and hath ſeru'd him now a yeare, and ſomewhat more very faithfully and truly, looking when hee might play the jade with him, and giue him a ſound kicke with his heeles, and get ſafe away from him, as your Mules vſe to doe, when they once come to be ſeaven yeares old; who kicke at thoſe, that haue kept them.

He farther told me, that wee ſhould lay our heads together, and draw one or two good fellowes into our company, and joyne together, to knead ſuch a cake, and to make vs ſuch a ſwinging paſtie that wee might feed our fills, and free our ſelues from this poore and miſerable kinde of life, wherein now vvee liue. But I was loath to harken therevnto, holding it not ſo convenient, for two reſpects.

Firſt, becauſe I found my ſelfe already ſo well fitted to my minde, that I did not deſire to lead any better life, then that I now did with you: And ſecondly, for that a great deale of conſideration is to be required, before a man leape out of one courſe of life into another. A little (I knew) could not content vs; and to carry away much, it was impoſſible, wanting conveniencie of meanes to doe it. Here, wee could not hide our ſelues out of the way, or keepe our ſelues ſecret aboue foure dayes; nor could wee ſecure our ſelues by flight, but that wee ſhould be taken, before we had gone foure ſteps out of Towne, ſo that we ſhould either leaue our necks there longer thē the marke, or our perſons ſo rack't and ſo tortur'd, that they would never after be vſefull vnto vs. We gaue, and tooke; hee argued, I anſwered: In concluſion, he preſt mee hard vnto it;

but

but I ſtood off; ſo that wee did not ioyne iſſues, and all that had paſt betweene vs, was to no purpoſe. Many deſignes, many devices were told to and fro betweene vs; but I did not like of any one of his propoſitions. For when the concluſion does not handſomely follow, the meanes thereunto are impertinent, and the ground naught. So for that time he left mee, becauſe his houre vvas come, that he muſt hye him home; nor would he willingly be wanting, when his Maſter ſhould haue occaſion to vſe him. Haſtning perhaps his departure the ſooner, becauſe he ſaw he could do no good vpon me, and that all our talke was to no end in the world.

This, that *Sayavedra* had told me, did neither ſecure my ſuſpition, nor worke an abſolute vnbeleefe in me, becauſe I thought with my ſelfe, it was not a thing vnlikely. I call'd for my cloake, and out of doores vve went, with a purpoſe to walke abroad in the fields to recreate our ſelues. And albeit, the moſt part of that euening, we talk't of other things; this feare, was never out of my head, but where-ſoeuer I went, or what-ſoeuer I did, I was ſtill thinking vpon it, & it would never out of my minde; deviſing with my ſelfe, whether I vvere beſt to beleeue him, or no; or whether truſting to his honeſty, and depending on the profeſſion of his loue vnto me, he might play the Iacke with me, and ſtrike me, like a [f] ſhouell-boord peece (being now a ledger) into the boxe, and himſelfe remaine vpon the boord in my place. And if he ſhould thus play the box with me, of whom ſhould I complaine, but mine owne folly? or whom can I juſtly blame but my ſelfe? A man may beare with one ſlippery tricke that is playd him, and if he pocket it with ſilence, or otherwiſe diſſemble it, hee may very vvell be excuſed; but to be cozened twice one after another, and by one and the ſame party, hee deſerues to haue the Aſſes ſaddle clapt on his backe. What aſſurance can I haue from this man, [g] or how may I dare to truſt him, ſince (as it is in the proverbe) *nunca buena viga ſe hizo de buen cohumbro*; a crooked Cucumber, neuer made ſtraight rafter. He that is naturally giuen to knauiſh tricks, will hardly or never leaue them. And were not this a fine one aboue the reſt, that he ſhould put a full ſtoccado vpon me, and go brag when he had done, that he had beaten a maſter of defence at his owne weapon? Did I not deſerue to be laught at, if I ſhould ſuffer him to carry away the bucklers from me in this faſhion? But as mine [h] eye was never off from the doore; ſo my [i] hand was ſtill vpon my diſtaffe. I was now become another *Argus* in mine owne buſineſſe; and another *Vlyſſes*, to looke to his vvater. Plotting with my ſelfe, how (if that were true, which he told mee) I might helpe them to come off ſafely and cleanely with this buſineſſe, in caſe it might be a matter of ſome moment and conſideration, and that I might be ſure it would free them from beggery, and make them for ever after to liue like men. For, to beſtow a great deale of coſt vpon that, which will yeeld but little profit, were fooliſhneſſe, if not meere madneſſe. There is no thrift, no good husbandry in it. The imploying of our paines, and our purſe, ought to be anſwerable to the gaines and profits, that will come of it. For a man to limbeeke his braines, a whole, nay, many nights, for Moon-ſhine in the water, or ſuch a poore commodity, as will ſcarce pay for a meales meate, is ſuch a foolery, as no wiſe man will trouble his head about it. But becauſe it might happily prone a rich voyage, and might haply ſpeed better then wee were aware of, vvhen vve had done vvalking, and were now come home to ſupper, ſeeing *Sayavedra* looke ſomewhat ſad and heauy, as if ſomething did trouble him, I ſaid vnto him; Me thinkes (*Sayauedra*) thou robbeſt thy ſelfe of thy mirth, becauſe thou canſt not rob others of their money. This Merchants great wealth doth greatly diſquiet thee. Is that which thou muſeſt vpon (for I ſee thou art in a browne ſtudy) ſome rare plot, one of *Archimedes* his quaint inventions? I can aſſure thee, I know a friend of mine, that would make a third in this buſineſſe, and a fellow I tell you, that will not ſhrinke in the wetting, ſo as it may be a good fat purchaſe indeed, none of theſe

f *The Spaniſh phraſe is:* y me dieſſe vn cabe, que paſſaſſe la raya. Cabe un el juego de la argolla, es la diſtancia que ay de vna, à otra bolaſſaya que ſe ſeñala [illegible] del derecho [illegible] medio la palma, ſus voces, [illegible] gana de los dos, y de [illegible] el ſombrero en [illegible] el que eſta mas junto, que dezimos bolo à otra, no [illegible] à ſocabe del que [illegible] palma tendida, en medio, y en raſo, todo mynes, [illegible] y para ſer cabe, hade hauer que le baſta de ſin [illegible] da con el golpe dela [illegible] palle de la raya del [illegible] y vale dos [illegible] [illegible] Vid Argolla. [illegible] Nay in Spaine. Cayar, verbo. Cabe [illegible] g Tortuque per herbam, Cucumis ſerpens ſe vermem, cucumis Virgil. [illegible] Gaſtal. [illegible] h Semper tenet [illegible] in puppi. [illegible] i Nunes nuſquam [illegible] de la nueue. [illegible] [illegible] [illegible]

leane carrion commodities, but one that may haue ſome good tacke and ſubſtance in it.

What tacke, what ſubſtance would you haue, ſayes *Sayavedra?* There is twenty thouſand ducats, and a better penny to be had, if wee can handſomely light vpon it. There is cloth enough (Sir) to cut out, to content vs all, if wee will our ſelues, which we may order & diſpoſe, as we ſhall beſt thinke fit. Wel (quoth I) vnto him; I pray God, it come not to be cut out for vs into ſhrowds (you know my meaning) and then all will be well. But I prithee tell mee one thing; ſeeing thou ſtandſt thus plodding, and muſing on the matter, is it poſſible that thou haſt not yet ſetled vpon ſome one invention or other, that may ſerue the turne, make the game ſure, and ſtrike it dead at thy foot?

No in good faith (Sir) not any, replyes *Sayavedra*; I cannot hit vpon the right ioint; I haue now loytred ſo long, that I am as farre to ſeeke, as if I were but newly entred into my A.B.C. I haue taken my pleaſure, and liu'd ſo much at eaſe of late, that through too much idleneſſe, thoſe ſpirits and blood, that ſhould quicken my vnderſtanding, and put life into it, are growne dull and muddy; and my wits for want of vſe, as ruſty as old yron. A thouſand times, I ſeeke to fall into my old trot, but I haue ſcarce ſtrucken two ſtrokes, but I grow reſty and lazie, and am not able for my life to pace one true ſtep, or to bring my ſelfe to that perfection and readineſſe of hand, to winde you this way, or that way (or whither-ſoever you would haue me to goe) as I vvas wont to doe. Many projects proffer themſelues vnto mee, but I pitch vpon none, as miſliking all; propoſing this and that, and t'other courſe; but in concluſion, none ſorted to my liking.

When I heard him ſay ſo, I thus made anſwer therevnto. Since it is a buſines of that importance as thou ſaiſt, what ſhare ſhall I haue out of it, if I ſhall rid you of this care, & bring you (like valiant conquerors) brauely off with the victory?

Sir (ſaid *Sayavedra*) my part and my perſon are both at your diſpoſall; but as for *Aguilera*, you were beſt talke with him your ſelfe, and when you two are agreed, I make account the buſineſſe is as good as ended, and all ſhall be as wee would haue it.

Goe too then (ſaid I) goe and ſeeke him out, and ſee if he can come to ſpeake vvith him, but with that ſecreſie, that you be ſure you be not ſeene by any of his maſters houſe; and wiſh him (when his leaſure will giue him leaue) that he and I might talke a word together, and it ſhall not belong ere he and I be better acquainted, being I know him (by your report) ſo well already.

Hee did ſo: ſending a ticket ſecretly vnto him; and when we were met, I began to wyre-draw him, and to queſtion him ſomewhat more particularly, touching his Maſters diſpoſition, his condition, and quality, what ſtore of wealth he had, in what commodities it did moſt conſiſt; how and where it lay; what moneys he had in preſent caſh, and vnder what keyes? When I had done; he began to make his relation vnto mee, in this manner, as I here deliver vnto you.

Sir, I aſſure my ſelfe *Sayavedra* hath ſufficiently informed you of me; yet my ſelfe ſhall giue you to vnderſtand, that I am by my profeſſion a caulker of ſhips, and a reaſonable good mariner, but as poore, as poore may be. And albeit I am not ignorant, that thouſands with a great deale leſſe wit, haue growne to a great deale of wealth in the world, yet I haue ſeen ſome others more able, and more deſerving, to haue come to the gallowes, my ſelfe being none of thoſe, that haue leaſt deſerued it: for which eſcape, I render infinite thankes to his divine Majeſty. It is a yeare and ſomewhat more (which is the time of my abode in this City) that I haue ſerued a Merchant, and haue taken a great deale of paines in his ſervice. And it is about ſome foure moneths ſince, that he hath made me the keeper of his caſh. All his bookes, are in my hands, but his moneyes, in his owne. *Amo & timeo*: I loue, & yet I am afraid; nor can I reſolue

* *The Spaniſh word is*, Calafate: *That is to ſay*, el que con maço y eſcoplo apreta las junturas de las tablas, de modo que no pueda calarlo el agua. *It ſeems to be a* Flemiſh *word.* Becanus *in his fourth booke* Hermathenæ, pag. 74. *ſaith thus:* Caluarem, eſſe idem, quod vltimam manum navibus imponere, & efficere, ne aliquam per rimas vllas admittant: quod tamen verbum, per excellentiã navibus tribuitur; cum alioquin ad quævis vaſa integra reddenda ſpectet, vbi ratio ipſius requirat. &c.
But by Becanus *leaue, howſoever he would fetch this word from the* Flemings; *I muſt be ſo bold as to affirme, that it is derived from the Hebrew word*, Caphar bituminare. *And from thence*, Cafatar, *and* Calafatar, *by interpoſing the letter l, whence it comes to be* Calafate. Covarr. p. 172.

ſolue with my ſelfe, how I may ſo handſomely rob him, that I may not afterwards come to cut capers in the ayre; and to venture a ſtretching, for that which is not worth the catching, it were better for me to cõtinue ſtill as I am. But where much is to be had, a man will hazard himſelfe much. Here is ſtore of gold to be had, and hee is worthy to weare it, that winnes it. I haue communicated my minde to *Sayavedra*; for it is more then one man can doe, to manage ſuch a peece of buſineſſe, as is this. He had need to conferre with ſome confident friend, or other, or more, whõ he is aſſured he may ſafely truſt. For, as mens opinions are divers; and ſo many heads, ſo many mindes; every one delivereth (as his judgement ſhall direct him) which is the beſt courſe he thinks to be taken. And ſometimes it ſo falleth out, *Quod bonus dormitat Homerus:* That the wiſeſt man, doth not alwayes hit vpon the right: when as a ſhallower braine, doth now and then wade, and that happily too, through the deepeſt fords of humane affaires. And when, this laſt night, I receiued *Sayavedra's* ticket, wherein he ſignified, that he was deſirous to ſpeake with mee, I thought it was no idle errand, that he went about, but that there was ſomething in the winde, what ever it were. For I haue knowne him a long time; and that it is not his faſhion to put forth to Sea, but when he hath ſome good prize in chaſe. And I am verily perſwaded, that if this matter be wiſely handled, and that wee finde good firme footing in the paſſage of this ford, and through our owne indiſcretion, doe not wilfully caſt away our ſelues, we may bring this buſineſſe brauely about, and make our ſelues men for ever.

Touching this wealth, I can truly affirme vnto you, (as one that knowes and hath often ſeene it) that thoſe commodities, which he hath now in cellerage and other ware-houſes within his owne doores, which to Gentlemen, and others that want moneys, he [l] ſells vpon credit at exceſſiue deare rates, buying them afterwards at eaſie prizes by the helpe of his brokers, amount to more then twenty thouſand ducats. Whereof, oftentimes he delivers me the keyes, out of the great truſt and confidence, that he hath of mine honeſtie. Beſides, he knowes very well, that thoſe bales are too big for me to carry away, and therefore will ſpare the labour to lade my backe, with ſuch vnprofitable burthens as my weake ſhoulders are vnable to beare. That which he hath cofered vp in two yron cheſts, in ſeverall ſorts of coyne, come to ſome fifteene thouſand ducats, and better. And in his *Eſcritorio*, or Tye, that he hath in his ſhop, ſome twelue dayes ſince, did he ſhut vp a delicate dapple gray [m] Cat, as gentle, and as tame as my ſelfe, not with his eyes ſparkling, nor his nayles ſcratching, nor his teeth as ſharpe as any razor, but cram'd full with crownes, three thouſand crownes, in good, dainty braue ruddocks, all good double piſtolets, ſome peeces of two, and ſome of foure, not one ſingle one amongſt them all. Which he hath purpoſely laid aſide for a certaine Merchant, who is to take them vpon vſe for ſix moneths, which he will looke to be well paid for. There is not a man in all this Towne that hath ſo bad a name, or is ſo ill belou'd, as he is. There is no man, that wiſhes him good; nor any whom he doth not hurt. There is not a true word, that comes out of his mouth, he hath not one friend in all the world, he is counted one of the Caterpillers of the Common-wealth, and ſuch a one as would cozen his owne father (were he liuing) and negociates with none, whom one time or other, he doth not deceiue. And well aſſured I am, that whatſoever loſſe ſhoud light vpon him, it would be (as they ſay) [n] *en haz, y en paz*, with the good liking of all men. I know not one man that would be ſorry for it, but would laugh heartily at it, and make themſelues therewith exceeding merry.

He acquainted me likewiſe with his name, where he dwelt, in what place, and on which hand the cabinet ſtood, as alſo the box, wherein the Cat lay. He made me ſo good and perfect a relation of every particular, that I could haue gone thither blind-fold, and haue clapt my hand vpon it. I askt him, whether

l The Spaniſh word is, Mohatra: That is; When the Merchant ſells vpon credit at vnreaſonable price, and by his brokers buyes them afterwards at eaſie rates. Mohatra, is likewiſe, when a man buyes as aforeſaid, and ſells cheape. They that are in want, for to ſatisfie ſome debt, vſe theſe Mohatras. Some deriue it from the Hebrew word Hatar, fodere. Others ſay, Mohatra, quaſi mofatra, from mofar, to mocke, or delude. This ill manner of buying and ſelling, is forbid by the lawes of Spaine, and is ſeverely puniſhed, being proved. Ley. 29 tit. 4. lib. 3. de la nueua recopil. and Ley. 22. tit. 11. lib. 5. Covarr. pag. 552.

m Gato, is not onely a Cat, but is alſo taken for a purſe full of money, which is made of a Cats skin. To a coveteous rich miſer they vſe to ſay; Ata el gato. Covarr. verb. Gato.

n En haz, y en paz. Como ſi dixera, congruſto de todos. Covarr. verb. Haz. pag. 463.

ther there would be any matter of difficultie in procuring the print of his keyes. He told me, that might eaſily be done; for that he had them all tyde to one little chaine, as well thoſe that belong'd to the magazine of his merchandize, as thoſe that ſeru'd to open his yron cheſts, which I ordinarily brought vnto him; when, hauing occaſion to take out ſome thing that he was to vſe, he would call vnto me to fetch them. But being (as he is) a moſt covetous miſerable wretch, his ſuſpition and jealouſie was ſuch, that he would be ſure (for feare of the worſt) that his eye ſhould never be off from them, ſo loath was he to loſe their ſight. I was glad when I heard that this might be done with that facilitie, wherein I did imagine we ſhould haue found the greateſt difficultie. Whereupon, I ſaid vnto him; That then, vvhich vve muſt firſt of all begin with, and muſt be the ground, whereon we muſt worke, muſt be the getting of the print of theſe keyes in waxe, to the end that I may ſee the faſhion of them, and ſet ſome Smith a worke, to make them out of hand, juſt in every reſpect according to that impreſſion which ſhall be preſented vnto him in the waxe.

I moreover mentioned vnto him, that it were very fit, that we ſhould agree vpon that which we ſhould ſteale from him for the preſent, vvhich I vvould haue to be carryed in that diſcreet manner, that the muchneſſe of it, ſhould not ſo amaze vs, as that vve ſhould not well know, which way to turne our hands; nor the meanneſſe, draw vs on to adventure our perſons for a trifle; vvhere the danger ſhall be great, and the profit ſmall.

Neither muſt we forget, that it is worthy our conſideration, to determine before-hand, how the ſpoyle ſhall be devided, that we may not afterwards differ, when we come to ſharing. Well, this theft being reſolued vpon, ſay vvee ſhould come to finger this fine pretty puſſe, this ſweet cat, with a delicate pudding of three thouſand crownes in her belly, and ſo proportionably reckoning alike in the reſt, be it more, or leſſe, we will goe ſo much, or ſo much a peece, taking them out by the tale, as they vſe to doe, that ſell ſheepe. And for this money, if we ſhall rob him ſmoothly of it, all of vs running equally the hazard either of the gallowes, or the ſword, in all naturall reaſon, it ought to be, that as the danger was equall, ſo the gaine ſhould be equall. And ſo we being three of vs, every one ought to haue a third part. But in caſe we ſhall play this game ſafely, and wade drie foot through this forde, and that you ſhall not be able to lay any fault to my charge, nor receiue any puniſhment by my ill managing of the buſineſſe, every one of vs comming off with a good reputation both of his life, and fame, his credit vncrackt, and the nut (as they ſay) whole and ſound, ſo good an Architect, or Surveyour of the worke, ſhall very well deſerue ſome reaſonable allowance over and aboue his fellow-labourers, for his good directions, and onely for his cunning contriuing of the building, without any relation to the reſt of his paines, that he ſhall take therein. And this meane I to carry away, as in reaſon I ought, as a due that properly belongeth vnto me. So that if I enter vpon this buſineſſe, and be the only projector to bring it handſomely about, I will haue one entire third part, wholly to my ſelfe, you ſhall make no ſcruple of it, but let it come faire and quietly to me, and the other two thirds that remaine, ſhall be quietly devided into three parts, whereof you ſhall haue one; *Sayavedra*, another; and my ſelfe, the third. So that in this, we will all ſhare alike.

This vvas controverted to and fro, and much adoe there was about it. But becauſe I had the *major* part of voyces on my ſide, to wit, mine owne, & that of my ſervant *Sayavedra*, who was well contented therewith, and for that the goods which we ſtroue about, was not any lawfull partitiō of a father amongſt his children, we quickly agreed on the matter. Well, I had the print of them delivered vnto me in waxe, and cauſed the keyes to be made out of hand, and *Aguilera* inſtructed vs in the meane while, vvhich vvere vvhich; to the end that vvee being throughly informed, vvhich vvere for the ſhop, which

for

for the cabinet, and which for one thing, and vvhich for another, wee might know the better how to vſe them, when we ſhould come to put this our enterpriſe in execution. I afterwards told *Aguilera*, that I vvould come the next morning, and ſpeake with his Maſter, and that he ſhould diligently obſerue all that I did either ſay, or doe; for the better advancing of our future deſignes; and that every night we ſhould ſee one another, and lay our heads together for the better ordering and finiſhing of that taske, which we had now taken in hand. He ſaid it ſhould be done, as I vvould haue it; and ſo he vvent his wayes.

On the morrow I vvent to this Merchants ſhop, and in the preſence of his Servant *Aguilera*, after that we had complemented a little together, and ſaluted each other, I ſaid vnto him; Sir, I am a Gentleman, that am but lately come to this Towne, with a purpoſe to buy ſome rarities & curioſities, which this City affordeth, as well for mine owne vſe, as to gratifie my friends, becauſe I am ſhortly to be married in mine owne Countrey; and haue for that end brought along vvith me a matter of three thouſand Duckats, and ſomewhat more, which are now at my Lodging: I haue no acquaintance here in this Towne; nor doe I know the faſhion of this people; nor what their manner of proceeding and dealing is: Money you know is a dangerous commodity, and runnes many hazards; eſpecially, when a man hath it not in that ſure and ſafe cuſtody as he deſireth. I know not what this or that other man is: I lye in a Lodging, where many other lodge as well as my ſelfe; no leſſe then a hundred goe daily in and out; and though they haue giuen me a key to my Chamber; yet am I halfe afraid they may haue a fellow vnto it, and that ſome inconvenience may thereby happen vnto mee.

I haue beene informed of your quality, as alſo of the worthineſſe of your diſpoſition, of your plaine and honeſt dealing with all men; and therefore vpon the good report that I heare of you, I am imboldened to come vnto you, to intreat you that yon would be pleaſed to do me that kindnes as to keep them for me ſome few dayes, till I haue made choyce & bought ſuch things as ſhall ſerue my turne, & I ſhall returne you many thanks, & ſhall be ready vpon any occaſion that ſhall offer it ſelfe, to expreſſe my thankfulnes vnto you; I am a Gentleman, & know what belongs to the acknowledgement of a receiued courteſie.

My Merchant thought he had this money already in his poſſeſſion; and I doe ſtill ſtrongly ſuſpect, that he and I did jumpe both vpon one thing; hee, to make my money his; and I, to ſteale his, and make it mine. Hee made proffer vnto me both of his perſon and his houſe, and that I ſhould as freely command it as if it were mine owne; and that he ſhould be glad to ſerue mee in this or any thing elſe: hee bid me bring it when I would, promiſing to keepe it carefully for me, and that I ſhould haue it as oft, when, how, and in what manner my ſelfe ſhould demand it of him, as my occaſion required: ſo for the preſent wee tooke leaue each of other; hee, with a reſolution to keepe them; and I, with a promiſe to bring them thither: but I never came to him againe, till ſuch time as we were to execute our exploit.

When *Sayavedra* and I were come home, he ſtood ſtocke ſtill like an Aſſe, or like a maz'd man that had bin ſcarred out of his ſleepe, & dreamingly drawes me out his words, asking me vvhere this money vvas to be had, that he vvas to haue in his keeping? I fell a laughing, and ſaid vnto him; Dodſt not thou carry it him even now? With that he laught. Laugheſt thou, quoth I? Is this a matter to be laught at? I know that in the Cat, and the Cabinet, they are kept ſafe enough for me. Tell your friend *Aguilera*, that vve muſt needs ſee him about an eight dayes hence, and will him to bring along vvith him his Maſters *Borrador*, or booke of remembrances, wherein hee ſets downe his Solutes and his debts, what he is to receiue and what to pay. In the interim, while we were tarrying for a good tyde, and wayting for a fit time for the effecting of our purpoſe, *Sayavedra* hauing me one night to bed, finding when

o Borrador, el papel, donde primero ſe eſcriue o dibuxa porenſayo; y dixoſe aſſi, por que emendando, le van quitando, y poniendo, y aſſi ſe borra.

I had laid my ſelfe downe, no great deſire to ſleepe; for the working of my braines (thinking vpon old buſineſſes) kept me waking: I called to my ſeruant, who comming vnto me, I ſpake thus vnto him.

A ſhort tale of an Aſſe that made his Will.

Sayauedra; I haue a tale to tell thee, which though it be but ſhort, yet it is worth your hearing. I ſhall giue thee therefore to vnderſtand, that once vpon a time the Aſſe (that poore ſilly creature) fell ſicke, and finding himſelfe much oppreſſed and weakned with his diſeaſe, growing every day worſe then other, inſomuch that he was now almoſt brought to deaths dore; at the inſtance of his Kinsfolke, and the earneſt intreaty of his Children, which were very many, he was moued to make his laſt will and teſtament; and each of them ſtriuing who ſhould be beſt left, and goe away with the greateſt portion of their fathers goods, the lawfully begotten, and his baſtard Children went together by the eares about it. But their honeſt and well-meaning Father, deſiring to leaue them in peace, and for avoyding of farther wrangling, that every one ſhould know his owne, and what he ſhould truſt to after his death, was content in the end (for quietneſſe ſake) to make his Will, dividing his goods amongſt them in this manner following.

The Aſſes Legacies.

My Will and intent is, that my Tongue (when I am dead and gone) be beſtowed amongſt ſuch my Children as are Flatterers and Backbiters: to thoſe other my children, that are angry and cholericke, I bequeath my Taile for a cooler: my Eyes, I leaue to the laſcivious; my Braines, to Alchimiſts and judiciary Aſtrologers; my Heart, to the covetous; my Eares, to the ſeditious and ſowers of diſcord; my Snout, to Epicures, Gluttons, and Drunkards; my Bones, to the ſloathfull; my Loynes, to the proud; my chaine, to the obſtinate: Let my hinder Legges, be giuen to the Lawyers; my Fore-feete, to the Iudges; and my Head, to your Scriueners and Notaries. Laſtly, I bequeath my Fleſh, to the poore; and my Skinne, to be devided amongſt my Baſtard-Children.

I would not for any thing, that *Aguilera*, bearing vs in hand that we ſhould rob his Maſter, ſhould come to ſtrip vs of all that we haue, and leaue vs ſo naked, that we ſhould be forced to cover our ſelues with the skinne of this our Teſtator. And I aſſure you, if he ſhould chance to put ſuch a tricke vpon vs, he ſhould ſhew himſelfe a very wiſe and ſubtile fellow: and how we ſhould be afterwards able to helpe our ſelues, God he knowes; for I doe not. I ſpeake this vnto thee, for that for the better proſecution of our intent, and that it may goe well with vs, that out of thoſe *Doblones* of ten, which I haue here, we giue him ſome ten of them, which will amount to a hundred Crownes; which being no ſmall ingagement, may much further our affaires. But I would not in any hand, that giuing vs a backe blow, and ſhewing vs a faire paire of heeles, he ſhould ſlip his necke out of the collar, and by little and little fall off from vs.

True dealing amongſt theeues.

Sayauedra, perceiuing the doubts that I began to caſt with my ſelfe; to free me of this ſuſpition, made mee this anſwere; Sir, if we ſhould put all the fiue hundred into his hands; nay, ſay they were fiue hundred thouſand: yet, foraſmuch as it is a cuſtome amongſt vs, and a rule that we never breake, to vſe all faith and fidelity amongſt our ſelues, and never to be falſe one to another, in a thouſand yeares they will not deceiue you of ſo much as one poore mite; but you ſhall haue your owne againe to a farthing. And therefore feare you nothing; let me runne the hazard of it, and put it to my account: for I ſhall be content to ſtand to any loſſe that you ſhall ſuffer thereby.

CHAP. VII.

The robbing of the Merchant of Milan, *falls out as luckily as* Guzman de Alfarache *could haue wiſht it.* Aguilera *ſhares ſo much with him as of right belonged vnto him: And he and his ſeruant* Sayavedra *goe for* Genoa.

FOraſmuch as Hope doth not aſſure vs of a true and reall poſſeſſion, it evermore makes vs carry about vs a troubled and vnquiet minde, our thoughts never taking reſt, out of the great feare that we haue, leſt we ſhould faile of that which wee ſo earneſtly deſire: Onely, it is *Solatium miſeris*, the ſole comfort that afflicted ſoules haue; and that ſafe harbour vvhereon they relie; being that from it, a certaine ſhadow (as it were) of ſhelter and refuge, vvhereby thoſe cares and troubles are eaſed and lightned, which our hopes delay, doth lay vpon vs. And as that hope which is ſecure and certaine doth dilate and extend our hearts to an aſſured affiance of that which wee expect; ſo there is not any paine affordeth greater torment, then that which we endure when we once come to loſe it. And little leſſe is our griefe, when it defers its comfort. *Of Hope.*

How many and how various thoughts did diſtract in this ſhort time my two ſtipendary Penſioners: For, hauing not giuen them any more light, then what I haue already told you, of my deſigne; I had onely ſweetned their lips, and left them (as it is in the Proverbe) *Con la miel en la boca*, with a ſmatch of ſome honey in their mouth; and therefore they could not chooſe but reele this way and that way, ſtaggering and wauering with their thoughts, and in the ſeverall Maps of their inconſtant imaginations, one conceiuing this, another that, hatch a thouſand ſtrange inventions; chewing the cudde, as it were, and ruminating with themſelues, when (a Gods name) they ſhould ſet themſelues roundly to the buſineſſe, what the plot might be, and how to be effected, longing to ſee the iſſue of theſe promiſed and hopefull ends, which made them almoſt at a ſtand; being (as it ſhould ſeeme) ſomewhat doubtfull whether it would goe on or no: and if it did, yet could they not deviſe with themſelues how, and in what manner this buſineſſe was to be carried. *a Proverbe.*

But when they ſaw the Sunne of that day appeare, no leſſe by them, then my ſelfe, deſired; and that *Aguilera* had brought mee that his ſhop-booke of accounts, according as I had appointed him. I turn'd to one of the leafes towards the latter end of the booke, where I found ſome memorials booked eight daies before, and in a voyd place, or blanke, where nothing was written, I ſet downe this that followeth: Left with me by *Don Iuan Oſſorio*, three thouſand Crowns in gold, ſome being peeces of ten, but moſt of them, of two, and of foure. Ouer and aboue, he likewiſe left with me two thouſand Royals, in good Royals of plate. Afterwards I drew a line vpon what I had written, to ſhew that the booke was croſt: And wrote in a different letter on the margent, *Ilevolos, Ilevolos*; which is as much to ſay; All this money is mine. Afterwards I ſhut to the booke, and gaue it him againe, and together with it ten Doblones of ten; willing him, that when hee opened the Cabinet, he ſhould take a hundred other out of the Catt, and put thoſe in their roome. I likewiſe gaue him two billets; whereof the one ſaid; Theſe three thouſand Crownes belong to *Don Iuan Oſſorio*; And the other ſaid, Here are two thouſand Royals in plate, whoſe true owner is *Don Iuan Oſſorio*. I did moreover adviſe him, that if there were any other bill, or note, in the bag, hee ſhould take it forth, and leaue mine only there. And that of the two thouſand Royals, hee ſhould clap it into another great bag, wherein *Aguilera* had already told mee, there were ſome ſeven-

Guzmans *cunning plot, for to cozen the Merchant of* Milan *of his money.*

teene

teene thouſand more, or there-abouts, for he could not know the juſt number in regard they did daily put in other freſh moneyes amongſt them. And that he ſhould withall remember, that this great bag of ſilver, lay in a great cheſt, next vnto his Cabinet, and that the bag was marked with a great ſpot of inke, neere vnto the mouth of it. With theſe inſtructions, *Aguilera* went his way, hauing taken order with him, that he ſhould that night without faile, put euery thing in its right place, according as I had giuen him direction. The day following, as ſoone as I had dined, I walked leiſurely along to the merchants ſhop, with my man at my heeles, as if I had knowne no ſuch matter, diſſembling the buſineſſe very handſomely. When I was come thither, and that his eye was vpon me, as ſoone as he ſaw me, he was wondrous glad; thinking I had brought that with me, which I meant to demand of him. We did agree both in one, in reſpect of the purpoſe that we had to deceiue each other; but my plot was another kinde of gambol, then he was aware of. We had both one end but the meanes were divers. Now, vvhen vve had ſaluted one another, I ſaid vnto him; To morrow, Sir, ſhall I ſend this my ſervant vnto you vvith a bag, and a ticket with it, deſiring you that you will be pleated to giue a quicke diſpatch, and to ſend him backe vnto me as ſoone as you can, becauſe I ſhall haue occaſion to vſe his ſervice. My poore ſilly Merchant, vvhoſe minde was more bent, how he ſhould out-ſtrip mee by his cunning, then fearefull, that I ſhould goe beyond him, and proue in the end the craftier knaue of the two; thought that my meaning was, that the money ſhould be brought him the next morning; and ſo ſaid vnto me, Sir, your deſire ſhall be fulfilled: you ſhall haue it when-ſoever you pleaſe to ſend for it.

With that, I got me out of doores, and had ſcarce gone twenty paces but I returned backe againe, and ſaid vnto him; Sir, ſince I went from hence, I haue better bethought my ſelfe, and haue preſent occaſion to vſe this money, and therefore (I pray) let me haue it. The mans colour began to change, and ſeeming to be ſomewhat troubled, he ſaid vnto me; What money, Sir, is that you vvould haue of me? All, Sir, (ſaid I) all, for I haue occaſion to vſe all of it. Wherevnto he replied; What all? What all, quoth I? All the gold and the ſilver. He anſwered me, What gold, what ſilver? I told him, That ſilver and gold Sir vvhich you haue here of mine. I, any gold, or ſiluer of yours, No Sir, (ſaid he) I haue no ſilver, nor gold of yours, nor doe I know what you meane. Sir, ſaid I, (anſwering him ſomewhat roughly) doe you make it ſo ſtrange, thinke you I doe not know what I ſpeake? I am neither mad nor drunke; this is pretty fine dealing indeed: this tricke will not ſerue your turne. Nor yours neither, Sir, ſaid he; Me thinkes yours is the prettier of the two, in demanding that of me, vvhich you never gaue me; nor haue I any thing of yours. No Sir, quoth I, Take heed what you ſay. Let me wiſh you to be a little better adviſed. Leaue off your jeſting, and come to earneſt, for I can aſſure you this is no jeſting matter; I muſt not be ſo anſwerd, nor doe I take it well at your hands. Very good Sir, (ſaid he) very good ifaith: it is you Sir that are diſpoſed to jeſt, and to make your ſelfe merry with me. No more (good Sir) it is enough, I pray be gone, I haue ſomething elſe to doe, then to finde you talke. How Sir, be gone? Nay, by your leaue (quoth I) there is more in it then ſo. I muſt not goe hence without my money. Money, (ſaid he) what money would you haue of me? What is your demand? Marry, I demand (ſaid I) thoſe Crownes and Royals which I left with you the other day. With me, (ſaid he) you never left any Crownes nor Royals with me: Goe looke your Crownes and Royals elſe-where; the devill a croſſe that I haue of yours. Then ſaid I vnto him, Are you not aſhamed to auouch this before theſe Gentlemen, that are here preſent, vvho but even now before them, vvhen I told you that I would ſend my man to morrow for them; you anſwered mee, he ſhould haue them; and now that I come to you for them my ſelfe (having preſent vſe for them)

them) doe you deny me them with one and the ſame breath? Deny you Sir, (ſaid he) I deny you nothing; nor nothing ſhall you haue of me: for I receiued nothing of you; and nothing ſhall I returne you. How Sir, nothing? Did not I Sir, ſome eight daies ſince bring you theſe moneys, deſiring you to keep them for me, and did not you your ſelfe receiue them from me? Giue me therefore my moneys, and that preſently; for I will not that you keepe them one minute of an houre longer in your hands. In my hands, (ſaid he?) I haue not ſo much as one farthing of yours in my hands: and therefore God be with you Sir, I haue no more to ſay to you. It is the Deuill that deceiueth vs all. I thinke ſo indeed (quoth I:) for ſure the Deuill did deceiue me vvhen I truſted you with my money. And with that my inflamed choller, having ſet my vvhole face on fire, I angerly ſaid vnto him; What meaneſt thou by this, that thou wilt not reſtore me my money? before thee and I part, I will make thee lay it downe here on the board, euen to the vttermoſt farthing, or elſe I will know why I ſhall not; Be wiſe therefore in time, and well adviſe with your ſelfe (I would wiſh you) that you doe, for feare of after-claps. The poore man was ſo troubled, and ſtruck into ſuch a feare, when he ſaw I was ſo hot and chollerick in the buſineſſe, and ſo reſolutely bent vpon it, that he had not a word to ſay; yet at laſt, with a kinde of counterfeite ſmile, ſeeming to make a jeſt of my words, he bid me be gone, one while in Gods name, another in the deuils; ſaying, that he knew me not, nor who I was, nor what was my name, nor the thing that I demanded of him. Wherevpon, turning my ſelfe about to thoſe (which were many) that were there; Art thou ſo impudent (ſaid I) as to ſay, Thou doſt not know how, nor what I am, thinking thereby to out-face me, and to cozen me of thoſe moneys thou haſt of mine in thy hands? But I doubt not but I ſhall finde good juſtice in *Milan*, and that (though full ſore againſt his will) he ſhould be forced to make me preſent [b] payment. My man denies it more amd more, telling me, I had much miſtaken my marke; and that I might happely haue given it to ſome body elſe to keepe: for he ſtood ſtiffely vnto it, that he neitheir had any money of mine, nor did owe me the value of one farthing, though indeed (he ſaid) hee muſt thus farre forth confeſſe the truth; That I came vnto him, and that I told him, I vvould leaue ſo much money in his hand to keepe for me, but that I never brought them vnto him, nor that he did either ſee or touch, one farthing of mine: And therefore, if I had a mind ſo to doe, I might goe a Gods name, and complaine to the Iuſtice, and that if it ſhould appeare that hee ought mee any thing, hee ſhould bee very vvilling to giue me ſatisfaction. When I ſaw he had armed himſelfe with this reſolution, I did open the doores of my lips a little wider, foming at the mouth for very anger, and ſtraining my throat to a higher key, ſaid vnto him; O thou falſe traytor, heavens juſtice ouer-take thee, and let all the plagues light vpon thee that the earth can affoord, (vile and wicked man as thou art) wilt thou thus then rob me of my moneys before my face, and thus injuriouſly goe about to vndoe me? I muſt haue thy life, or my money. And therefore make no more adoe, but bring me hither preſently my three thouſand Crownes: bring them I ſay, and quickly too; it ſhall not boote thee to denie them; for I will either teare them out of thy throat, or make thee lay it downe here in good gold and ſilver, as thou hadſt it of me.

The houſe was all in an vprore, and thoſe likewiſe, which were preſent there from the beginning, that this difference happened betweene vs Vpon this coyle and ſtirre that was betweene them, there came in many into the ſhop as they paſt along the ſtreet, beſides a great number of the neighbours, asking one another, what was the matter? For now were we growne ſo loud that we did not well vnderſtand one another. All that were there, went enquiring, what was the cauſe of all this noyſe, what we quarreled about, not ſo few as a hundred were talking here and there, of it, and every one relating it each to other,

[b] *The Spaniſh phraſe is* Vn pie, a la Franceſa. Vale, al inſtante. Covarr. verb. Pie.

other; ſome in one matter, & ſome in another, whileſt we within drowned all that the other ſaid, ſo earneſt was the conteſting that was betweene vs. In the heate whereof comes in a *Bargello*, an officer of the ſame nature with our *Alguazill* in *Caſtile*, a kind of Sergeant or Catchpole, but he bare no Vare or white rod in his hand, as ours doe, and making the people to giue vvay, he came vp where vve were, being both (through the heate of our choller) as hot, and as red as coales. When I ſaw the Iuſtice preſent (howbeit he was a ſtranger vnto me, & I knew him no otherwiſe then as he was the Iuſtice) I ſaw my ſute at an end, and that the cauſe was like to goe with me. And here taking my Cu, I began in a milder temper to ſpeake thus vnto thoſe that were by: Gentlemen, you haue ſeene and heard that what hath here paſſed betweene vs, and how, and in what manner, this naughty man hath deny'd mee mine owne money; let his owne man ſpeake the truth concerning this buſineſſe, and if he (out of his reſpect to his Maſter) ſhall refuſe to deliver what he knowes, let his owne Booke ſpeake in my behalfe, wherein ſhall that appeare to be ſet downe, which he receiued of me, and in what parcels, and in what manner of faſhion I delivered the ſaid moneys vnto him; to the end that it may be knowne vnto you, which of vs is the honeſter man, and ſpeakes the moſt truth. Should I be ſo ſhameleſſe to aske a man that, which I never gaue him? Into a Cat-skin bag, that he hath, hee did put into that Cabinet three thouſand Crownes of mine, ſome of two, and others of foure, and for to make my proofes more plaine and cleare vnto you, he hath intermixed amongſt them, ten Crownes often, which in the whole make vp juſt the ſumme of three thouſand Crownes. And in a bag, which hee lockt vp within a cheſt, (wherein hee told me there vvere at that time I deliuered him my moneys, neare) together with mine (about ſome ſeuenteene thouſand Royals) did he put thoſe two thouſand, he had of mee: And if this (which I tell you) be not true, I am content to loſe it all, and that you take my head from off my ſhoulders, for the arranteſt traytor that ever ſpake with tongue; And if here in your preſence, before I ſtirre a foot from hence, I doe not make good vnto you all that I haue ſaid. Onely (Gentlemen) let me intreat (though a ſtranger) ſo much lawfull favour from you, that there may preſent inquiſitions he made concerning this buſineſſe (conſidering how neerely it concernes me) that he may not (by gaining of time) haue opportunitie to tranſport them to ſome other place. And turning my ſelfe toward the *Bargello*, I ſaid: See now (Sir,) I beſeech you Sir to ſee, which of vs two, treats falſehood, which intends diceit? The Merchant then ſaid; I am content to ſtand to this motion, and to put my ſelfe vpon this tryall, I ſhall bring forth my bookes, I care not who ſee them, let them be peruſed, if any ſuch thing be there to be found, you ſhall likewiſe ſee all the money, that I haue in the houſe, and if any ſuch thing ſhall appeare as this man would make you beleeue, I will confeſſe that he ſayes truth, and that I am in the wrong. Then ſaid they, that were preſent; This buſineſſe is now ended, they are both agreed vpon the point, and it will ſtrait be ſeene, which of theſe two are in the right.

The Merchant commanded his ſervant, that kept his Caſh, that hee ſhould bring him his great booke of Accompts; He did ſo: but when he had brought it, I excepted againſt it, and ſaid; O thou cozening companion; this is not the booke, it is a leſſer then this, a little kind of Manuall, that a man may eaſily hold in his hand. Then hee will'd him to fetch the Manuall that was in the Caſhe, being a little thing of ſome four ſheets of paper, like a note-booke. Which whē he had likewiſe brought; No, no, (ſaid I) what need ſo many trickes and devices? why doe you ſeeke to deceiue vs thus with your booke? this is not that which I would haue, you need not to beate ſo about the buſh, the bird that I looke for is not here; I askt for your chalke, and you giue me cheeſe; I would ſee that, wherein you did ſet downe thoſe particular ſummes of money, you receiued of me; it is a little long narrow booke; you know well enough which I meane,

meane, if you were disposed to bring it forth. Then sayd *Aguilera*, It may be Sir he meanes that wherein you write your Memorialls, for so it should seeme by the description of it; for there is not any other besides of this fashion, to my knowledge in the house. And bringing it before vs, hee turned himselfe towards me, and said; Is this, Sir, the booke that you would haue? I answered, yes, this is it, this is it, and none but this. Now (Gentlemen) I pray see whether I say truth or no. This will decide the controversie, his cunning can no longer cloake it selfe, and this will make his knauery plainly appeare vnto you. They began then (having the booke in their hands) to turne the leaues one by one, and when I spy'd mine owne hand, and what I had there set downe, I sayd; I pray (Gentlemen) will you be pleased to looke vpon this writing, and to see what it saith; Reade I pray these parcels of moneys, which he hath crost and blotted out, (though the summes are easie to be seene) and by that which I here perceiue, hee hath noted it in the margent to be paid. But this tricke shall not serue his turne, for I will haue my money before I goe from hence. They did all looke vpon it, and might easily discerne, those very summes, by me before mentioned. Whereat the Merchant was so mad, and so transported with passion, that he knew not what to say vnto it, but began to curse and raile, and swearing a thousand oathes, vowd that he did not know of it, nor how it came there, nor who had written it. To cleare that doubt, I answered; I wrote this my selfe, this I confesse to be my hand, but that in the margent to be a different letter, and the quotation as false as God is true; for he never return'd me one penny of it; and in that Cabinet that stands there, if hee haue not taken it thence, there are my Crownes.

Hereupon like a furious Bedlam, hee began to rage and raue extreamly, so that the standers by did vndoubtedly beleeue, that all I had said, was true. And seeking to pacifie me (for I seemed to be very angry with this foule dealing of his,) they wished me to quiet my selfe, and to rest contented, for the crossing of his book was not materiall, nor his writing in the margent, that he returned me my moneys, if those things should fall out right (as I had said) in the rest. What greater proofe, (then said I) or what truer token can you haue of my truth & his falshood, then his late protestations, that he neuer receiued any one penny of me, and yet you here see it set down, though having a purpose to play the rogue with me, he afterwards crost it out. If he receiued it, why does hee deny it? if he did not receiue it, how comes it here? I pray you cause that Cabinet to be opened, where I doubt not but you may chance to finde my *Doblones*, where you shall light amongst them, vpon ten *Doblones* of ten Crownes a peece? At this, the Merchant fell a fuming and a fretting, and stampt for very anger, refusing to open the Cabinet, and as stiffely striuing against it, as if they should haue offered to rip vp his belly, and take out his heart; vowing and averring with sundry hideous oathes, & fearefull obsecrations, that all was roguery and villany, and that there was no such matter as I talkt of; and for those *Doblones* of ten, he did there confidently avouch before them all, that hee had not one, or not aboue one, (if hee had that) in all his house. Such adoe there was, to get him to open the Cabinet, as was wonderfull; Hee denied to do it; The *Bargello* was as instant, as he was stubborne, and said hee should doe it. The latter insisted to haue the keyes; The other resisted, and said, hee should not haue the keyes. When the *Bargello* saw this, hee began to grow now as hot, as before he was jealous of his double dealing: and swore a great oath, that if hee would not fetch the keyes, and open the Cabinet by faire meanes, and that quickly too, he would take it out of his house, and carry it away with him, & giue particular notice of all the whole busines, to the *Signor Capitan dagustitia*, (which is there with them of the same quality & authority as a *Corregidor* in *Castile*) and there depositе it, that the truth thereof might be knowne. At last (though sore against his will) he gaue him the keyes; & when he had opened

the

the Cabinet; Sir, (ſaid I) there is ſuch a Boxe did hee put them in a dapple-gray Cat-skinne: they opened that Boxe, and pulled out the Cat by the eares, and going to tell the money to ſee if it vvere right or no, a peece of the Billet ſhew'd it ſelfe. When I ſaw that, vvith ſomewhat a more cheerefull countenance, I reard vp my ſelfe and ſaid: Let this Paper, I pray, be read; for that ſcroll will declare how much there is in the bagge, and whoſe it is. They read it, the contents expreſſing *Don Iuan Oſſorio*, to be their true owner. Well, they fell afterwards to telling of them and found them to be juſt three thouſand Crownes, with thoſe ten of ten a piece which I told you of.

Things being brought to this puſh, and falling out ſo pat as they did, my Merchant was ſtrooke as dead as a herring, he was abſolutely now gone, quite overthrowne horſe and foote, without hope of recovery; hee had not a word to ſay for himſelfe, nor knew not in the world what to alleage in his owne excuſe: it ſeeming vnto him to be *Opus Dæmonij*, that the Divell had a hand in it; for hee thought it was impoſſible that any man ſhould be able to doe it. Beſides, hee conſidered with himſelfe; that if I could finde hands, to put theſe things there, I might eaſier haue found hands to carry them away.

Hee was quite beſide himſelfe, and cryed out, that all was lyes and nothing but lyes; that his goods were wrongfully taken from him; that this money vvas his, and no bodies elſe, that the Diuell had put thoſe *Doblones* there, and not hee; that they ſhould lay hold on mee, for I had a familiar, and a great many the like broken ſpeeches.

Let them lay hold a Gods name on me (ſaid I) ſo that I may haue my money out of thy fingers. I gaue him very rough and harſh language, telling him; O thou impoſtor, thou cheating raskall, haſt thou yet a tongue to talke, ſeeing how evident thy wicked dealing appeares to all the world: open that cheſt too I pray; for there lies my ſiluer, I ſaw him put it in. There is no ſuch thing ſaid hee; for all the ſiluer that is there is mine, and ſo are theſe three thouſand Crownes. How yours, I pray Sir, being you did but now confeſſe that you had no *Doblones* of ten? It vvas Gods vvill to cauſe thee to forget that thou hadſt receiued them, that I might not loſe my monies. Hee that will denie another man his owne, had need of a good memorie, as alſo a care to remember what hee ſayes.

When I firſt came in hither, thou toldeſt mee here before theſe Gentlemen, that to morrow I ſhould haue them, ſending my man for them, and now that I came backe againe to demand them of thee, before the ſame Gentlemen, thou denieſt to haue any ſuch thing in thy keeping. Let that Cheſt therefore (I pray) be opened, take out all that is in it, and then it ſhall be knowne which of vs two is the honeſter man, and who it is that liues by cozening others, either hee or I? They opened the Cheſt and when I ſaw the bagge, though there were diuers other there, ſome of more, and ſome of leſſer ſummes, reaching forth mine arme I pointed out that vvith my finger, ſaying; this with the blacke ſpot is it. In concluſion, they found that to be true, which I had ſayd. And this truth vvas the more confirmed, when pouring out that bagge for to count the monies, they met vvith that other Billet, which ſaid, that my two thouſand Royals were in there amongſt the reſt: then I began to be louder then euer I was before, and cryde out vnto him. Thou vile naughty man, thou falſe crafty Merchant, thou common coozener, thou enemy to God, thou that haſt neither truth nor conſcience in thee: is this thy honeſt dealing? this the faire proceeding? this thy good vſage of thoſe that haue to doe with thee? No marvell thou be rich, if thou take this courſe with others, as thou haſt done with me: and if thou hadſt my monies (as it appeares to all the vvorld) how didſt thou dare firſt to croſſe and blot out what I had written; ſeeking thereby to defeate mee of my due? And then afterwards ſo impudently to affirme that I had giuen thee nothing, and that thou didſt not know whence I vvas, nor whither

whither I would, and that you did not ſo much as know either mee, or my name? What canſt thou now alleage for thy ſelfe? Haſt thou any more falſe money to coyne? any more lyes to ſtampe? See how thou art overtaken in thy miſchiefe, how blinded by thine owne wickedneſſe, that thou haſt not the wit (which was Gods juſt puniſhment vpon thee) either to take away theſe *memorandums*, or to hide the money? See how his divine Majeſtie hath beene pleaſed to make good my innocencie, and to protect my ſimplicitie, that downe-right plainneſſe, vvherewith I committed my moneys to thy cuſtody, preſuming that I ſhould haue them againe, whenſoever I call'd for them. But I now verily beleeue, that hee, that did adviſe me that I ſhould truſt thee vvith my moneys, was ſuch another ſharker as thy ſelfe; and one of your projectors for your profit, a bloodhound of your owne making, to winde out your commodities. All they that were preſent, with this that they had ſeene and heard, were as much amazed, as offended, at the Merchants baſe and roguiſh dealing, being now throughly ſatisfied, that I had a great deale of reaſon, and juſtice on my ſide. The common voice was wholy in my favour, the proofes, and evidences ſeene and allow'd, and the ill report that ran of him before, did now ring in all mens eares. Inſomuch, that not a man of them, but ſaid; Fie vpon him, doe you not ſee how this greedy Cormorant would haue ſwallowed this poore Gentlemans moneys, which hee had delivered vnto him vpon truſt? But it is no ſuch newes, that an vſuring knaue ſhould like a Harpy, prey vpon other mens goods. And had he not vſed the better diligence, and had his wits about him, it had beene all vtterly loſt, and damned for ever. The Merchant who with his owne eares heard not only theſe, & the like, but far worſe words ſpoken of him, had not ſo many mouthes, or tongues, wherewith to ſatisfie ſo great a number, as there railed againſt him; nor indeed was it poſſible for him (as things were carried) to juſtifie himſelfe, but ſtood like one, that did not well know, whether he were aſleepe, or awake. It ſeemed then vnto mee, that he rub'd his hands and elbowes, to call himſelfe to remembrance; or that he began to thinke with himſelfe, whether he had loſt thoſe two potentiall faculties of his vnderſtanding, and memory, and that onely his Will was remaining vnto him, conſidering what had paſt. He (as I told you before) had gotten himſelfe a very bad name, which made much for me, and was as good as halfe a proofe for the clearing of my buſineſſe. And this puniſhment ſtill lights vpon them that leade a lewd life, that ſleight proofes are ſufficient to overthrow them, and makes the cauſe goe currant againſt them. This onely of it ſelfe, without any farther adoe, would haue ſeru'd the turne well enough to helpe mee to my money againe, which was much ſtrengthned by thoſe that were there preſent at my firſt comming thither, who there tooke their oath, That he ſaid vnto me, that if I ſhould ſend my ſervant vnto him the next day following, I ſhould not faile of my money, and that within a little while after, I returning thither againe, and demanding it of him, he denyed it vnto mee. His owne ſervant likewiſe ſwore, that I in his hearing (as being then preſent) did intreat his Maſter that hee would keepe three thouſand Crownes for mee, and the aforeſaid ſome of Royals, but whether I did deliver them vnto him or no, hee could not anſwere to that, but muſt refer it to his Maſters booke of Accompts, which did not alwaies lie in the ſhop, but was often carried in, and more he could not ſay concerning this matter. My ſervant, hee on the other ſide ſwore, that he told out the moneys with his owne hands, and delivered them to the Merchant, in the preſence of divers others, that were then in the ſhop, but knew not who they were, for he was a ſtranger in that place, and therefore could not haue any knowledge of them. So that, what with the pregnant proofes of all that I had ſaid, what with ſeeing in what manner he had croſt the booke, what with finding the ſummes of money (by mee mentioned) to fall out ſo juſt, both in their place and number; as alſo, that every bagge had his particular billet, which told, whoſe the

money was; they all tooke part with mee, and were mainly bent againſt him, not ſuffering him to ſpeake a word in his owne defence, nor to heare any thing that he could ſay, to excuſe himſelfe. Hee had ſpent all his breath in vaine, and had not now the ſpirit to talke any more; for, being ſtrucken in yeares, and ſeeing ſo ſtrange, and vnexpected an accident as this, which he did not ſo much as once dreame of, thinking it impoſſible that he ſhould be thus ouer-reach't, waxed thereupon ſo pale and ſo wanne, as if hee had beene a dying man, continuing for a good ſpace in a ſwound. All that were there, did verily beleeue, that my Merchant was dead, and that it was a juſt puniſhment of God vpon him for his perjury, and falſe dealing; but hee afterwards came againe vnto himſelfe, but ſo ſtupid and ſenſleſſe, that I began to take compaſſion of him. But in theſe his ſwounings, I did comfort my ſelfe, that if he ſhould chance to dye, I ſhould haue leſſe miſſe of him, them of his money.

In a word, there was not any one, of all that were there, which did not ſay, Let the Gentleman haue his money, giue him his money. But I, knowing full well, that it was not the voyce of the vulgar (though I vvas beholding to their good wiſhes) that could aſſigne me my money; but that it muſt be awarded me by the power and authority of the Iudge, and by courſe of Law, I was very wary in adviſing with my ſelfe, how I might prevent all future miſchiefes, and that the end of this buſineſſe might be anſwerable to its good beginning. And therefore when they all with one vnanimous conſent, and voyce, cryde out; The money is his; giue the Gentleman his money, giue him his money; I anſwered very mildly, and gently; No, not I; I will none of it, I vvill none of it; let it be depoſited, let it be depoſited. So for the better juſtification of this buſineſſe, the *Bargello*, that were there preſent tooke away the money with him, and depoſited it in one of the neighbours hands, that was an honeſt man, and vn-intereſſed on either ſide. Which, vvith a little ſute, was vvithin a few dayes after by way of ſentence, delivered vnto mee; My merchant being not onely cozened of his caſh, but condemned in coſts and charges of Court, beſides the generall infamy, which by this meanes fell vpon him.

When I ſaw ſo much money in theſe poore and ſinfull hands, I did often thinke vpon that theft, which *Sayavedra* had done vpon me, which though it were not of that great value, yet was it not ſo little, but that then it fell out to my great hurt, albeit afterward, it turned to my greater good. For if that had not beene, I ſhould not haue knowne ſo much as I now doe, nor come off ſo cleanly vvith this theft. And therefore comforting vp my ſelfe, I ſayd; it vvas the better for mee, [c] that I broke my leg. It might haue hapt worſe with mee, had it not hapt ſo ill. My marring, was my making; my loſſe, my gaine. So that all fell out to the beſt. For from that time, ever ſince, haue I liu'd in greater credit, and better furniſhed with moneys, then before I was rob'd. I vvas growne rich, *Sayavedra* releeued, and *Aguilera* had well patcht vp a broken eſtate. I carryed my moneys home with mee, as merrily as the heart of man can poſſibly imagine. I clapt it ſafe vnder locke and key, I looked charily vnto it, and lapt it vp very warme, that it might not catch cold. And albeit all things ſucceeded thus happely with me, yet *Sayavedra*, though he felt it, had it in his hands, and toucht it againe and againe, yet could hee not beleeue it was there. It ſeemed vnto him as a dreame, and thought it an impoſſibility, that this buſines ſhould proue ſo lucky. He fell a bleſſing of himſelfe with both his hands, as oft as he thought vpon my craft and ſubtilty. For albeit when hee was acquainted with me in *Rome*, and knew my courſe of life, and did perceiue by my carriage, and manner of proceeding, that I had a ſubtle wit of mine owne, yet for all this did hee not thinke, nor could be brought to beleeue, that I had ſo much ſtore, as he now found to be in me. Or that I had beene ſo good an Archer as I was, [d] to kill birds, as they were flying in the ayre. He ſuppoſed, I muſt haue come much ſhort of himſelfe; for hee was many yeares my ancient, and

proverbe.
c Si me quebre la pierna, quiça por mejor.

Proverbe.
d Matarlas en el Ayre. ſer vn hombre muy agudo, y corteſano. Covarr. verb. Matar.

and might very well (for his ſtanding) haue beene my maſter, and I his apprentiſe ſome ſix yeares at the leaſt, to haue learned the Trade. I ſaid then vnto him; Friend *Sayavedra*; This is true knowledge, this is the right skill of it, this the Art, and the cunning, to ſteale without danger, [e] and to liue & thriue well by it. As for thoſe things, which thou diddſt preach vnto me vpon the way, they were leſſons of the *Turkiſh Alcoran*, meere toyes, and trifles to theſe. To ſteale a kirtle, & receiue a hundred ſtripes for it, every foole can doe this. Your expences, [f] exceed your receits; and the gaines, will not quit the coſt. And therefore, whereſoever I ſhall come, ſuch as you may vayle bonnet, ſtrike ſayle, ſtooping your ſtandard to mee, reverencing mee as your king and ſuperiour.

e Hurtar, ſin peligrar, y bien medrar.

f *The Spaniſh phraſe is*; Mas es la data, que el cargo.

Some two dayes after, comes *Aguilera* for his ſhare, ſtealing by night vnto vs. And had it not beene for *Sayavedra*, I had ſhow'd him *Velez* his tricke, who ranne away vvith the bride, and the bride-cake too. The devill a penny hee ſhould haue had of mee. But becauſe I was willing to vphold my reputation with him, and that he might not conceiue an ill opinion of me, by leauing ſo foule an impreſſion of falſifying my word behinde me, and that he might not take occaſion to ſay to himſelfe; Surely, if this man deale ſo vnjuſtly with another, it is a thouſand to one, he will vſe me in the ſame manner. I muſt drinke in the end of the ſame cup, as hee hath done; I would not hazard much, to get a little. *Aguilera* told vs, that his maſter was even ready to dye for very griefe, and almoſt mad with imagining how this was brought about, and that it would not ſinke into his head, but that this was the devils doing, and that hee, and none but he, was able to bring ſuch a thing to paſſe. I told him out a hundred crownes, for thoſe *Doblones* of ten, which he had receiued of me with his owne hands, & gaue him juſt to a haire, as much as his ſhare came too. Hauing diſpatcht him, I came to *Sayavedra*, and offred him his part, together with the gaines of the former fiue hundred crownes. But he told me, that he knew hee was ſure enough of them, whenſoever he ſhould haue occaſion to vſe them, and that not knowing well where to keepe them, he was content they ſhould remaine ſtill in my hands, till he ſhould finde ſome fitter opportunitie to diſpoſe of them.

Guzman *ſhares the theft with* Aguilera, *and* Sayavedra.

We continued in *Milan*, ſome ten or twelue dayes after this, though not altogether free from feare, leſt the winde might chance to chop about; and therefore we did agree to goe from thence, and to get vs to *Genoa*, making no body living acquainted with our intended journey, nor ſpake ſo much as one word of it our ſelues, for feare of what might follow therevpon. But rather gaue out, that wee vvere to goe for ſome other place, farre wide of that, faigning a buſineſſe, vvhich did much concerne vs, to make all the haſte vve could.

It was my chance (before I went away) to walke through one of the ſtreets in *Milan*, wherein there was ſuch choyce and variety of wares, and in that abundance, that I ſtood amazed at the ſight of them; and by chance I eſpyde a chaine in a certaine ſhop, which they had ſold to a Souldier: which in my eye, vvas one of the faireſt that ever I ſaw. I had ſuch a great good liking vnto it, and vvas ſo earneſtly affected with it, that I vvas reſolved either to buy it, in caſe they had not already agreed vpon the price, or to take order to haue juſt ſuch another made me. Wherevpon, I drew neere vnto the ſtall, and ſtanding by, began to looke vpon it, without giuing them to vnderſtand that I had any minde therevnto; but it pleaſ'd mee ſo well, and I was ſo taken with it, that vpon the ſodaine, in that little ſcantling of time, taking it to be fine and pure gold, I had preſently plotted in my head, how I might haue it along with me to *Genoa*, and that without any great labour. I ſtood liſtning, while hee was bargaining for it, and while they were thus bearing the price, the ſeller demanded very little for it, which me thought was dog-cheape; wherevpon I began

to ſuſpect, that what he asked, was rather for the workmanſhip of the chaine, then the chaine it ſelfe: but they, not agreeing on the price, I began preſently to pitch my hey; asking him what it might be worth, and what it weighed. I had no ſooner made him this queſtion; but the Merchant caſting vp his head, lookes vpon me, and falls withall a ſmiling, telling me; Sir, this is not to be ſold by the weight; but taking it altogether as it is, wee ſell it as reaſonably as we can afford it.

This word alone was enough; for by this I knew that it was falſe and counterfeit: and holding it a great baſeneſſe for ſo ſlight a toy to hazard much treaſure, and that this plot of mine, which I had already caſt in my head, might ſtead me better hereafter, reſeruing it for ſome great occaſion, and of more importance then this could be; beſides, being that no wiſe man will aduenture his perſon for nifles in a bagge, I forbore to execute my purpoſe; wiſely conſidering with my ſelfe, that if I ſhould haue gone on with this, and miſcarried therein, it would haue beene a ſufficient proofe againſt me, that I had plaid the Impoſtor in my late buſineſſe vvith my Merchant. I preſently therefore came to his price, & paid it him with as good a will as if it had bin a thing of great value: and I muſt tell you, that I made no ſmall reckoning of it, in regard of thoſe deſignes for which I intended it; and particularly in that, which (as it afterwards fell out) turned to my exceeding great good and benefit. For which purpoſe, (hauing the plot already in my pate) I reſolued with my ſelfe to make me one of gold out of hand, juſt of the ſame making and faſhion as that was in every reſpect, that you ſhould not be able to diſcerne which was which: ſo like would I haue them to be the one to the other.

Guzman plotteth a new deceit.

Wherevpon I got me to a Gold-ſmith, who made it according to my minde, ſhowing himſelfe ſo good an Artizan, that ſhould you haue taken them both into your hand, & compared them together, it was impoſſible to judge which was the true one from the counterfeit, ſaue only by the ſound and the weight; for the falſe one was ſomewhat lighter then the other, ſounding more bell-like; whereas that of gold was more maſſie, and had a more churliſh kinde of ſound with it: it coſt me in the whole, about ſome ſixe hundred and thirty Crownes, and I ſhould not haue beene ſorry, if I had beſtowed a thouſand; for then that counterfeit one ſhould haue yeelded me as much. With them I bought likewiſe two little curious boxes, as like as like might be, to lay vp theſe chaines in, each by himſelfe in his ſeverall boxe, which were fitted and faſhioned as I could haue wiſht them.

Turne to the firſt part of Guzman, *the third Booke, and the firſt chapter.*

And becauſe all the ioynts of my body did ſtill paine me very much, conceiting with my ſelfe that my ribs and my huckle bones were diſlocated and ſlipt out of their right places, ever ſince that nights kind entertainment, which my worſhipfull Vncle gaue mee; which I haue kept hitherto written in my ſoule, the inke thereof being not as yet dry: and being now vpon the way for *Genoa*, I imparted ſome part of my minde to *Sayavedra*, not recounting vnto him all the whole Story of it; but onely acquainting him, that when I paſt that way, being but a childe to ſpeake of, ſome of my friends had done me an affront, and put a jeſt vpon me; becauſe I was not either in ſuch good cloathes as might honor & grace their company; or ſo fluſh of money, that they might get ſomething by me. And I was heart-angry with my ſelfe that I had told him ſo much; becauſe he ſhould not take me in a lye, if he ſhould chance to remember what I had told him before.

** Hee here taxeth* Mateo Luxan Sayavedra, *the Author of the falſe ſecond part, for his omiſſion of a promiſed revenge mentioned in the firſt part, by our Author,* Mateo Alemán.

But letting that paſſe, and dwelling no longer vpon it, I went on in my diſcourſe, and ſaid farther vnto him: if thou *Sayavedra* wert that true friend as thou profeſſeſt thy ſelfe to be vnto me, thou wouldſt ere this haue beene * at *Genoa*, and haue revenged the wrong that I there receiued. But I muſt be inforced to doe it my ſelfe, ſupplying thy default, and neglect thereof, by mine owne induſtry. It will alſo well beſeeme me ſo to doe, that I may cancell

that

that obligation, and pay this debt that I owe them, to the end that thoſe good turnes which they did me, may be fully requited; and receiue not onely the principall, but vſe for forbearance. But to remoue all ſuſpition, wee muſt doe that which you and your brother did, change both our apparell & our names. I like very well of it (ſaid *Sayavedra*) & farther promiſe vnto thee, that I will inherit thy true name, that I may the better both imitate and ſerue thee. From hence forward therefore I ſtyle my ſelfe *Guzman de Alfarache*: & I (directing my ſpeech to *Sayavedra*) will inveſt my ſelfe with mine owne proper name, which I inherited from my Parents, and vntill now, haue not hitherto taken it vpon me. For, a *Don* ought to be a gift which comes from the Holy Ghoſt; becauſe it is admitted, and well receiued of others, or it muſt be derived from the direct line, from father to ſonne. For your *Dons*, that now ſtrut it vp and downe Italy, glorying more in this title, then the Peacocke in his painted plumes, are nothing but infamy and ſhame. For there is not a Spaniard in theſe parts, (though the ſonne of a Cobler) but goes adorning himſelfe with the name of *Don*, that he may be held a Gentleman. And if it goe there as it doth here, a man may very well aske, without offence; who keepes the Swine? Henceforth, I call my ſelfe *Don Iuan de Guzman*: and with this title will I content my ſelfe. Then ſaid *Sayavedra*, with a jocund heart & a cheerefull countenance; *Don Iuan de Guzman*, [g] *Victor, Victor, Victor*: which name can become no man better then your ſelfe; ſo well it ſutes with your noble action: confuſion light vpon that Traytor that ſhall ſeeke to ſpot it. Hee (my braue boy) that ſhall take it from thee, my curſes ſhall purſue him to death. I had furniſhed my ſelfe in *Milan*, with as much rich ſilke Grogram, as would ſerue to make me a cloake, and a [h] *Sotana*; and ſo being provided of all things neceſſary, wee began our journey for *Genoa*.

g In Spaine when a Comedian acts his part exceeding well, the applauditie they there giue him, is to cry, Vitor, Vitor, Vitor, *ſuch a one,* Pinedo, *or* Fernandez.

h Sotana, *a garment much like our Clergie-mens Caſſocks here, which reacheth no farther then the knee: which is the common weare of your* Grandes, *and other Noblemen and Gentlemen in Spaine.* Dizeſi Sotana, porque ſe trae ſoto el manteo. Covarr.

CHAP. VIII.

Guzman de Alfarache *comes to* Genoa, *where being knowne by his kindred, hee is feaſted by them, He perſwades every one to liue vertuouſly; And ſhewes the hurt, which Murmurers, Hypocrites, and falſe Witneſſes, bring to mens ſoules, honours, & riches; He delivereth the great profit, we ſhall gaine, by avoyding ſuch venemous* Baſiliskes. *And concludes with telling vs, who are true theeues indeed.*

LOng will the veſſell keepe that his ſent and ſavour, wherewith at firſt it hath beene fully ſeaſoned. If the courſe of my life, the occaſions and the chances that befell mee, Loue and Feare, had not opened the eyes of my vnderſtanding; if theſe I ſay, could not awaken me, and rouſe mee vp from the ſleepe of my ſinnes, and thoſe vices, wherein I was lull'd ſo faſt aſleepe, I cannot perſwade my ſelfe, that any other humane forces are of power to doe it. And howbeit, with ſtratagems, inventions, devices, and divers other meanes, it might be brought otherwiſe to paſſe; yet not with that eaſineſſe and facility, (as ſome may imagine.) For it will require a large Diſcourſe, how, and in what ſort, a man ought to make his election, by diſtinguiſhing profit, frō diſ-profit; juſt, from vnjuſt; and good, from ill. And when it once comes to this point, the buſineſſe ſo ſtands then with him, That hee that will be but willing to put his owne helping hand to get out of that mire of ſinne, wherein he lies wallowing, and endevour to free himſelfe from that muddy ſinke of vice, thoſe good inſpirations of heaven, ſhall never be wanting vnto him, which favouring, and furthering his vertuous actions, will adde ſtrength vnto his weakneſſe,

Quo ſemel imbuta recens, &c.

The force of vertue.

neſſe, and raiſe him vp from the death of ſinne, to the life of grace. To the end; that knowing and acknowledging his for-paſſed errors, he may learne to correct his faults for the preſent, and for the future, grow vp to perfection. But they that are devoyd of reaſon, who, like the Bull, ſhut their eyes, and bowe downe their heads to giue a blow, following their owne willfull appetite, ſeldome or never, ſhall come to the knowledge of their owne miſery. Becauſe, like they that are blind, they will not ſee; and like thoſe that are deafe, they vvill not heare: and out of a head-ſtrong & wilfull humour, will not giue way, that any ſhould croſſe them in their lewd courſes. They take great ioy and delight in walking in the path of their owne luſts; it ſeeming ſo long vnto them, that it ſhall never haue an end, or that this life of theirs ſhall ever come to be cut off; whoſe happineſſe (they make account) doth onely conſiſt in this their vaine and idle idolatry. Theſe are men of a large life, but a farre larger conſcience. They loue the broad, better then the narrow vvay. They know full well, that they doe ill; and therefore doe ill, becauſe they haue no minde to doe well. They feigne themſelues to be ignorant of that, which they are not willing to vnderſtand; yet wot well enough, that the thread of their life, goes daily wearing and waſting away; and that the ſtring by which it holds, muſt cracke and breake in ſunder, in the end; and then their perpetuall downe-fall, will fearefully and with a great deale of terror, preſent it ſelfe vnto them.

Men without reaſon, and who they be.

But becauſe vvee ſee that Gods hands are nayled faſt, that they ſtirre not againſt vs, and that he is much grieued and afflicted for vs; we thinke it would much vexe him, that we ſhould be vexed. Such fooles as theſe, ſay to themſelues; we feele no paine, nor haue any aches, but are ſound and luſty; wee want no money, but haue the world at will; our houſe is well furniſht, we haue plenty of proviſion; let vs lye downe and ſleepe, and take our eaſe, ſtretching our ſelues on our yvorie beds; let vs liue as merry as the day is long, ſport while we may; we haue time enough before vs, we need not to make ſo much haſte to goe vnto God, ſhortning that life, (by leſſening our pleaſures) which God hath allotted vnto vs. They deferre their doing of good, and put off their amendment of life, from an houre, to a day; from a day, to a weeke; from a weeke, to a moneth; from a moneth, to a yeare; and from one yeare, to many: ſo that houres, dayes, weekes, moneths, and yeares, runne poſting along by vs; but this *quando*, this *when*, is not yet come; this time, that we ſhould repent and amend our ſinfull liues; And when it doth come, it ſhall be happy for vs, if it come not too late. This is that debt which is ſaid to be recovered at three ſeverall payments; but if neither in our youth, our manhood, or in our elder age, vve doe ſatisfie this debt, the puniſhment that will light vpon vs for *non payment*, vvill be certaine, ſharpe, and ſodaine.

The language of fooles.

What meanes the Vſurer, that he hath not God in his minde, nor doth once thinke vpon him, acknowledging no other God, but his vngodly gaine? What the Wanton, vvho to pleaſe his luſt, adoreth her, whom he ought rather to hate? and placeth all his happineſſe in that, which he knowes muſt turne to his eternall torment? What the Epicure, or the proud man, that ſonne of Lucifer, who makes it his common practice, to martyr the innocent, being more cruell therein, then *Diocleſian*, oppreſſing the righteous, and perſecuting the vertuous? What the vnprofitable Murmurer, who hoping to make himſelfe a fortune, ſeekes to vndoe other men? Scraping, like the hen, to her owne hurt; whilſt vſing diligences to prejudice others, they light vpon that, which vvorkes their owne bane?

An exageration againſt the enemies of vertue.

The man, that is honeſt, well able to liue, and of a good life, and civill converſation, doth not rob, filch, nor ſteale; for he liues contented with thoſe favours which God hath beene pleaſed to beſtow vpon him; hee maintaines himſelfe with that, (be it more, or little) that he hath, feeds his familie, and ſuſtaines both himſelfe, and others. And ſuch as theſe, are wont, in their contemplations,

Proverbe.
a Eſcarua la gallina por ſu mal.

templations, to lift vp their eyes to heaven, and to breathe forth this ſweet and thankefull meditation: O Lord, I haue as much, as is needfull for me, and ſomewhat (I thanke thee) to ſpare, to giue vnto others. And theſe good Chriſtians count it an happineſſe and honor vnto them, when through Gods bleſſing, and goodneſſe towards them, they are able to ſay; that they haue ſomething yet remaining of their ſtore, to giue vnto the poore, and ſuch as need their reliefe. *The honeſt Chriſtian.*

The thiefe he ſteales, becauſe it is his onely maintenance, having no other meanes to liue. And when all is gone, and that he hath nothing of his owne, he ſeekes to ſnatch from others, if he can but once come to ley his hands on it. He that is a noble Gentleman, will euer ſo farre forth reſpect his honour and credit as is fitting for him, and ſeeke to maintaine his port, and to liue like himſelfe, in a liberall and plentifull manner; but yet will not ſticke to grace, and doe good to others. *The Thiefe.*

But on the contrary, the Murmurer maintaines himſelfe with the honor of his friend, and of his neighbour, robbing him of his good name, and leſſening his worth, as much as in him lies; for if he rob not others of it, he thinkes he ſhall not haue any for him-ſelfe. It is as ſtrange, as to bee pittied, that the ſea, ſhould breed fiſhes, that haue no tongue; and the earth bring forth men, that haue too much: that the ſea ſhould afford vs Soles; and the earth, men that haue no ſoules. *Murmurers.*

Your Hypocrites, who boaſt their letters of credit, which they haue given to the world, are like vnto thoſe that play at Tennis, who ſtrike the ball againſt the ground that it may the better come to their hand, and toſſing it to and fro in the ayre, keepe it vp a good while till it come to be either a chaſe, or a loſſe. But of all other, moſt wretched, and moſt miſerable are thoſe men, who make long prayers with their lips, and devour with their mouthes, the goods of the poore, the vvidow, and the fatherleſſe. Wherefore God will ſeverely puniſh theſe holy offenders; holy in outward ſhow, but not in heart. An Hypocrite, is like vnto a gun, that is charg'd; for euery man doth not know, what is within it, or whether it be charg'd or no; but if you once put fire to it, the leaſt ſparke will ſend forth a bullet, that ſhall ouerthrow a gyant, and lay him on the ground: So, your Hypocrite, vpon every little occaſion, how-ſoever he may ſeeme for the preſent to haue no harme in him, will vent his malice, and be ready to doe you a miſchiefe; and when you leaſt thinke of it, giue you ſuch a blow, that you ſhall never be able to riſe againe. *Hypocrites.*

There are a certaine ſort of men, that are like vnto your dry withered Peare-trees; leane, tall, and ſtooping; hanging their heads in their boſomes, as if they would ſeeme to be Saints, and goe lapt vp in a long thred-bare cloake, as if they were to accompany a Coarſe to the graue, or were themſelues to be interred. Theſe are fooles of the firſt forme; and will with this their diſſimulation and graue carriage, make vs beleeue, that they are wonderfull wiſe, and of great vnderſtanding. Theſe I ſay are principall fooles; they will ſteale you foure or fiue ſentences out of this, or that other Author, whereof they make a Gallimafrie, ſeruing them in, as a diſh of their owne making, recommending it vnto vs as theirs. They feigne their juſtice, to be equall with that of *Traianes*; their ſanctitie, with that of Saint *Paul*; their wiſdome, with that of *Salomon*; their ſincerity, with that of Saint *Francis*; yet vnder this cloake, what ſhall you find? If you ſearch it well, you ſhall find, an hypocriticall knaue, a ſeeming *Sanctificetur*, but as arrant a villaine, as ever trode vpon a ſhooe of leather. They carry a leane, and meager countenance, but their workes flouriſhed ouer with painting; little breeches, but large conſciences; nothing but yes verily, and indeed, in their mouthes; but their heart is full of lyes; a publike kinde of charitie, but an inſatiable ſecret avarice; they manifeſt a kinde of abſtinence and faſting, as well from meates as temporall meanes; but their throats are ſo drie, and *Diſſemblers.*

and their thirſt ſo great, that they will ſwallow vp the vvhole Sea, devoure other mens eſtate, and yet be ſo farre from being ſatisfied therewith that they remaine as thriſty as they did before. They ſay, they haue enough, and more then enough, and that much leſſe would ſerue their turne, and is more then they are worthy of; yet are they ſo greedily giuen, that they are neuer contented, and nothing can fill their hungry maw. They are like vnto your Dates; ſoft and ſweet without, but hard and ſtonie within. They carry hony-combes in their mouthes, but wormewood in their hearts. They haue ſweet tongues, but ſowre ſoules. Great pittie is to be taken of theſe men, for that they ſuffer ſo much, an enjoy ſo little; and are finally condemned to Hell, for this one poore fading vanitie, to be eſteemed honeſt and religious, when indeed they are nothing leſſe. So that, they neither cloath their backs, nor feed their bellies, according to their owne content and liking, but goe vp and downe in a miſerable kinde of manner, afflicted, hunger-ſtaru'd, withered, pale, and wanne, denying themſelues ordinarie neceſſaries for the vſe of this life, not being able truly to ſay, that they haue had one houre of content in this world, bearing alwaies about them a trobled bodie, and an vnquiet minde, their corps, and conſcience equally ſuffering. Now if this, which they thus, and in this manner ſuffer, as they doe it, and endure it, onely for the worlds ſake, and to ſeeme outwardly holy, that thereby they may gaine a good opinion amongſt men; if they would doe this, I ſay, for Gods ſake, laying aſide their diſſimulation, and not debarring themſelues of thoſe good bleſſings, which God hath created for mans vſe and comfort; queſtionleſſe, in ſo doing, they might lead a happy life in this world, and enjoy everlaſting happineſſe in the world to come.

False witneſſes.

Let vs ſay ſomething of your falſe vvitneſſe; vvhoſe puniſhment doth giue ſatisfaction to the people, and is pleaſing vnto all men, taking pleaſure in their chaſticement, in regard of the hainouſneſſe of their offence. For, for a matter of ſixe *Marauedis*, a thing of nothing, you ſhall haue them ſweare ſixe thouſand falſhoods, and take away ſixe hundred thouſand mens credits, and eſtates from them, which lies not afterwards in their power to make reſtitution thereof. And as your day-laborers, and other workemen, repaire to certaine ſet-places, appointed for that purpoſe, to bee hired by thoſe that haue occaſion to vſe them; ſo doe theſe kinde of men come to your Courts, your Conſiſtories, your places of publike buſineſſes, euen to the very Offices where your Notaries are a writing, to learne how things goe there, and to offer their ſervice to thoſe that haue need of them. And if this were all, the matter were not great, but it is worſe then you thinke it is; for the very Officers of the Court themſelues, doe maintaine and countenance theſe lewd fellowes, that in thoſe cauſes that occurre (as occaſion ſhall ſerue,) they may make vſe of them for their advantage, ſuborning them to beare falſe witneſſe, for the proving of ſuch, or ſuch a buſineſſe, which they will not ſticke to teſtifie vpon oath. This I aſſure you, that I now tell you, is no jeſt; nor doe I therefore ſpeake it vnto you, to make you beleeue that which is not ſo; nor doe I lie one jot, in all that I haue ſaid vnto you. For there are falſe witneſſes enough to be found, if any man be diſpoſed to buy them. And are as frequent in our Notaries Office; as Concerues in an Apothecaries ſhop. Or like horſe-leeches in a glaſſe, ready prepared for the buſineſſe, when-ſoeuer you ſhall be pleaſed to put them vpon it. Let thoſe that haue a minde vnto them, goe to *D. N.* his Office; I was about to name him, before I was aware, but tis all one; for I am ſure you all know him, or can giue a ſhrewd gueſſe whom I meane; there ſhall you haue theſe Knights of the Poſte, at all kinde of prices, as you ſhall haue pies in a Cookes ſhop; ſome for eight Royals, ſome for foure, ſome for two, and ſome for halfe a Royall, as chooſing rather to play ſmall game, then wholly to ſit out.

But if it bee a weighty cauſe indeed, there is alſo another ſort of them, of a higher ranke, and at a higher rate, as we ſee there are pies for weddings, and for

great

great feasts, vvhich vvill cost you somewhat more then ordinary; these are those, that are Musket-proofe, and will (to strike the matter dead) not sticke to sweare, that vpon their owne knowledge, for these foure-score yeares, they remember such and such a conveyance was past thus and thus, such a piece of land past ouer after this or that manner, and a hundred the like.

A Country fellowes mistake: for ochenta años, *he names* ochocientos.

Like to that Country-clowne, vvho being a shallow braind cox-combe, a very lob-cocke, being brought into the Court by his Land-lord, to witnesse a thing in this behalfe; and instructed by him, that vvhen hee should be askt how old hee vvas, should answer, hee was eighty yeares old. The silly fellow did not well vnderstand him, but being desirous (as it should seeme) to doe his Land-lord a pleasure, being demanded touching his age, tooke his oath, that he vvas eight hundred yeares old. And albeit the Notary wondring at this so inconsiderate and vnadvised an oath, did advise him to take heed vvhat he said; he clownishly made answer, Doe thou take heed how thou writest, and stand not a sifting of other mens liues, but let every man bee as old as hee vvill himselfe. Afterwards, the Notary reading the report of this witnesse, vvhen he came to the point concerning his age, the Iudge apprehended it to bee the Notaries error, and vvould haue punisht him for it; but hee excused himselfe, saying; That he did no more, then vvhat did belong to his office, in setting that downe aright, which he receiued from the witnesse his owne mouth; and that although he had admonished him thereof, and bid him be better advised, yet he stood stifly in it, and ratified vvhat he had said before, saying; That he was of that age, and that he should so set it downe. The Iudges caus'd the witnesse to make his personall appearance; and demanding of him, vvhy hee had sworne, that he was eight hundred yeares old Because (and it like your Lordships,) it was for the service of God, and the Conde, my master.

There are store of false vvitnesses euery vvhere, the streets are full of them, they are to be hyred for money, but he that will saue his purse, and haue them for nothing, let him seeke out some kinsman or other that is his enemie, vvith whom thou wagest law; for he to be revenged of him, will sweare any thing against the whole generation of thy adversarie. But from those malitious minded men, good Lord deliver vs. For they doe vs the greatest hurt.

But let vs leaue these kinde of men, and come to those of mine owne occupation, and to that our Company, or Brotherhood, which is the ancientest and greatest that is in the world. For I would not haue thee to tit me in the teeth, that I haue a pen for others, and let mine owne stand idle in my standish, or else cause it to runne another way. I will not passe by this doore, without knocking at it, and that soundly too; I will not lye lazing in the shade, nor making my selfe merry in the Taverne.

Of Theeues. Who be the braue theeues.

A Thiefe, what will he not doe, to steale? Which word *Thiefe*, I apply to such poore sinfull creatures as my selfe. As for your great rich theeues, such as ride on their foot-clothes of veluet, that hang their houses with hangings of tissue and costly arras, and cover the floores of their chambers with gold and silke, and curious Turky-carpets, and often hang such poore snakes as vvee are, I haue nothing to say to them. For vvee are farre inferiour vnto them, and are those little fishes, which these great ones doe devoure. They liue braue-ly, vpheld by their reputation, graced by their power, and favoured by flatterie; These are of that strength, that they breake the gallowes, hempe vvas not sowen for them, nor for them were your Galleys built, except it be to beare command in them. Of which command, it may be, that wee shall remember to say something in its proper time and place, if vve hap to come thither, as I hope in God, we shall. But let vs now speake of those theeues, that are not fit to be left out, such as my selfe, and my servant *Sayavedra*. We will not touch vpon those that rob Iustice; for there are none such I trow that will doe so, nor is it knowne, who they be. And if peradventure there be any such, that haue done

done ſo, we haue already ſpoken thereof at large in our firſt Part. Nor will we ſpeake of our Rulers, nor Governours, nor your Counſellors of State, for we haue likewiſe treated thereof heretofore; beſides, their managing of theſe matters, is not of any importance at all, or worth the talking of. For take them out of their tracke, put them from their whole-ſale, and turne them to retayle, or remoue them from that pond, wherein they haue liu'd, and that they are to ſeeke which way to winde them-ſelues; I will not giue a button for the beſt of them.

But ſome perhaps will taxe me, and ſay; That thou art, as they are; both birds of a feather; ſeeing thou art ſo willing to ſmother their lyes, their deceits, and their falſhoods. For, if it ſhould be demanded, what meanes hath Maſter *N*? The anſwer would be; Sir, He is a *Regidor*. What, is he no more then a *Regidor?* How liues he then thus gallantly? How can his Office alone maintaine his bravery, hauing no ſet reuenues, or other rents comming in beſides, conſidering what a port he carryes, what a houſe he keepes, what ſtore of ſervants and horſes, that continually attend him? You ſay well Sir. But I perceiue by you, that you doe not truly vnderſtand the myſterie of it, nor rightly conceiue, how this may bee brought about. True it is, that he hath no rents, but he hath his renters, and none can execute that Office without his licence, paying him ſo much rẽt for it; whereof the greateſt part comes to the *Regidor*, the reſt remaines to the renter, to the end, that he alſo may liue, and haue where-withall to diſcharge his rent. But why doeſt thou not ſpeake freely what thou knoweſt concerning theſe men? I may not, nor I dare not; for if any man ſhould preſume to ſpeake of them, oppoſe himſelfe, though neuer ſo little againſt them, or but once offer to queſtion either their liues, or their actions, they will make him hold his peace with a peſtilence, they will neuer ſuffer him to liue in quiet, but force him for his owne eaſe to flie the Country. For being (as they are) men of great place and power, they will preſently fall a feeling, to finde a [b] ſtraw in thine eare; that is, they will ſeeke a hole in thy coat, and picke ſome one quarrell or other againſt thee, and either by right or by wrong, they will ouerthrow thee, if not vtterly vndoe thee. They are like vnto your Cupping-glaſſes; which (where they once faſten) ſit cloſe and hard to thy skin, and never leaue drawing and ſucking, till they haue haled from thee what they would haue, nor is there any taking of them off, till they be as full as they can hold. I could alſo tell thee, that no man dares ſay; Blacke is their eye; or goe about to haue them puniſht. For whoſoeuer hee be, that offers that, it fares with him, as it vſually doth with your pipkins; which when they are ſet full of water ouer the fire, they no ſooner begin to boyle, but the water runneth ouer, and puts out the fire that was the occaſion thereof.

Proverbe.
b Buſca la paja on el oydo.

Vnderſtand you me now? Yes marry doe I: And, it may be, they paſſe ouer theſe things the better, by reaſon of their good Angels of guard, vvhich free them from thoſe blowes, that would otherwiſe fall vpon them, and rid them out of all their troubles. I could tell thee likewiſe ſomewhat which thou haſt left out, that if theſe men, after they were hanged, ſhould haue their cauſes heard, and ſee what they could ſay for themſelues, even thoſe very men would then plead ſtiffely againſt them, who heretofore were in their favour; but now for the feare, that they haue of them, they are well content to eat their meat in quiet, and to hold their tongues. I could tell thee beſides, if I would vnmaske thoſe men, that they fare daintily at other mens coſt, haue what they will, either for nothing, or dog-cheape, making the poore to pay for it, who muſt pay moſt and fare worſt. But it is now time to make a full point, and to leaue them with their *Agentes*, and *Conſentientes*, their inſtruments, and their copartners to themſelues: For in concluſion, they are, as thou art; and worſe then thou, and doe much more hurt; for thou doeſt but damnifie one houſe alone; but theſe a whole Country.

O;

O what good counſell doſt thou giue mee! But let mee wiſh thee (my friend) to make vſe of it thy ſelfe. Think'ſt thou perhaps to ſaue thine owne fingers from burning, to take the 'Cat by the foote, and therewith to take the coales out of the Ouen? If thou knoweſt this to be true, or haſt any thing elſe to ſay of them, ſpeake it your ſelfe for me: for I haue told thee all that I know, and I would not willingly that they ſhould deale with mee, as thou ſayeſt they deale with others: for I haue no minde to come vnder their laſh. Suffice it thee that contrary to that decorum that is fitting for the greatneſſe of their place and quality; I haue inlarged my ſelfe in ſpeaking more already, then may well become mee. Nor am I willing to oblige my ſelfe anew, to ſift their liues, nor diue into their doings, being there is no good to be gotten by it, if things runne along in this ſtraine there in *Italy*, God be thanked, that I am going for *Spaine*, where no ſuch robberies as theſe are vſed. But becauſe I am a *Spaniard*, thou wilt ſay, that all the world is my Countrey; it is true, and in ſaying ſo, thou doeſt not lye. But ſhall I tell thee one thing? I know how all this may be remedied, and that very eaſily too, to the great augmentation and good of the Common-wealth, and by the generall conſent of all good ſubjects, to Gods good ſervice, and the Kings great honour: but for the better effecting thereof, I muſt be forced to follow the King, preſenting his Majeſty with memoriall vpon memoriall, petition vpon petition: and when I ſhall haue brought the buſineſſe to a good paſſe, and as it were to the very vpſhot, ſuch a Favourite, or ſuch a great Lord, *Don B.* buzzes him in the eare, and tels him, that it is an idle and fooliſh project, and vnable to take effect. For it reflecting generally vpon them all, they out of their great power will trample me vnder foote, and cruſh mee, that I ſhall never be able to lift vp my head any more, leaving me in farre poorer taking, then I was before. But I am affrayd to wade too farre in this deepe water, for feare of drowning. A ſhallower ford is ſafer, and fitter for me to dippe my foote in: becauſe I ſpeake the truth, they count mee a baſe and obſcure fellow; and for that I preſume to giue them wholſome counſell and ſound advice, they call mee Rogue, brand me with the name of *Picaro*, and thruſt me out of doores by head and ſhoulders, ſcorning ſuch a Iack-ſauce, and downe-right raskall as I am. But they ſhall not carry it away ſo. Let them take their courſe, and wee will take ours, treading in the ſteps of our noble Anceſtors: and (God grant) that they that come after, doe no worſe then vve doe, Onely, I will be bold to tell you thus much; that there are farre more theeues then there are Phyſitians. Neither neede any man to make himſelfe ſuch a Saint, as to take offence when hee heares the name of a theefe ſpoken of, ſhewing himſelfe queaſie-ſtomack'd, and ſeeking to diſgrace him, till hee aske this queſtion of himſelfe; vvhether, either here, or there, hee hath not in his life time plaid the theefe himſelfe? And to this end, I vvould haue him to know; that to ſteale, is no other thing then to detaine that which is another mans, contrary to the will of its owner.

Proverbe.
'Sacar las braſas, con la mano del gato.

What ſtealing is.

For mine one part, I vvould make no more reckning, that a man did not know that I had any thing of his, then if hee did know it, and had giuen it mee with his owne hand, ſo as hee be not able to hurt mee, and haue not the power to take it away from mee againe by force. I learned this Leſſon from my Childhood, though I did not alwayes put it in practice. I vvas like vnto a tree, that is cut downe to the very roote, which leaues ſome liue-ſap ſtill remaining, by meanes vvhereof it growes in time to be a new Plant, and begins to beare the ſame fruit it did before. And you ſhall ſee by and by, how quickly I returne to my old bias. While I left off ſtealing, I vvas like vnto forc'd-earth, I vvas out of my proper Center; now, vvith a little vſe, I am come to the ſame lewd courſe that I ran before. When I vvas a Lad, I was quick & nimble, I had a facility in filching, and could lay hand on any thing, vvere it never ſo hard to come by. But now that I am turn'd Man, me thought at the firſt, I was

growne gowty, both in my feete and hands; I found my ſelfe much ſlower, and duller then I was wont to bee: but in a very ſhort time I recouered my former health.

I continued my accuſtomed thefts, and tooke ſuch pleaſure in them, as a Souldier could not more in his armes; nor a Ginet in his trappings, and other his rich furniture. When any doubts did ariſe, I did reſolue thē; if they were to ſeeke for Plots, I did inuent them: & in all weighty buſineſſes, I was their ſafegard and defence: they would hearken vnto my advice, as to the anſweres of ſome Oracles; there being no man that would contradict my rules, nor vvithſtand my lawes, nor reply to any thing that I ſhould once determine. Thoſe that were beſt practiz'd amongſt them that frequented the Hoſpitall of *Saragoca*, and *Guadalupe* came ſhort of me; though I vs'd the trade but now and then, like the intermiſſions of an Ague: for, when all things elſe fail'd mee, and that I knew not what ſhift to make, I had this, my fiue fingers for a helpe, this did never forſake mee in the time of neede: it was ſure money in my purſe, and ſtucke as cloſe to my necke, as my Lord Embaſſadors chaine did, which a long time eſcaped many a faire danger. The trade of theeuing vvas as proper to me, as laughing is proper to man; nay, I had almoſt ſaid, that it was as a Character not to be blotted out, ſuch deepe impreſſion had it taken in my ſoule. But when I did not exerciſe the ſame, it was not any want of good will; for that was euer ready, and at hand.

Guzman goes for Milan.

I, and *Sayavedra* went out of *Milan* well lined, and better provided of all things that were needfull for our journey: ſo that there is no man but would haue taken me for a very rich man, and one of note and quality. But how many be there that might very vvell haue ſaid, Sit downe[d] Gallants, and fall to; for this feaſt is provided for you. For, as a mans apparell is, ſo is his eſteeme: And they that know not a man otherwiſe, make their cenſure according to his cloaths. If thou wert *Cicero* himſelfe, and ſhouldſt go ill clad, thou ſhouldſt be no longer *Cicero*, at leaſt a ſcurvy *Cicero*, vvhom the vvorld vvould ſcorne, & count a mad man. For there is no other vviſdome, nor learning in the world, then the hauing of ſo much more vvealth, and ſo much more land then another man. And he that is not ſo, may like a dog, go ſhake his eares vvithout doores: he is like money that is not currant; hee paſſes not for any thing vvhereſoever he come. They vvill neither offer the a chaire to ſit downe, nor giue thee the vpper hand, vvhen they ſhall ſee thee vvithout a feather, though thou be rich apparelled with vertue and knowledge; but of ſuch now a daies, there is little or no reckoning made. But if thou be glorioufly ſet out, and richly ſuted, though thou be never ſo baſe a Groome, every mans eye is vpon thee, every mans hat ready to honour thee. Bee thou as baſe and vile as any dung hill; yet if it bee couered over vvith greene graſſe, many will ſet themſelues down vpon it, and there recreate and refreſh themſelues. But *Catulus* vvas not of this minde; vvho vvhen he ſaw *Nonius* riding in a triumphant Chariot, ſtickt not to ſay, vvhat a deale of dung doth this Cart carry? Giuing, vs thereby to vnderſtand, that dignities do not grace the vicious. But there are now but few *Catuli*, though there be many *Nonij*. Nay, vvert thou but good Alchimie, that ſhall be adored in thee, becauſe of its glorious and gaudy glittering. Men doe judge now more by the eye, then the eare; by vvhat they ſee, then by vvhat they heare: the outſide is more looked on, then the inſide looked into: a rich rayment ſounds louder then a good report. No man conſiders vvhat thy knowledge is, but vvhat thy vvealth is: they talke not ſo much of thy vertue, as of thy purſe: and of thy purſe, not what thou haſt in it, but what thou ſpendeſt out of it. I vvas vvell appointed, vvell apparelled, and growne foure inches thicke, vvith other folkes fat.

[d] Comè, mangas, que a voſotras es la fieſta. *Proverbe.*

[e] Iuzgan a cada vno, como lo ven tratado. *Good cloathes recommend a man more then knowledge.*

Catulus *his ſaying of* Nonius.

[f] *The Spaniſh word is* Enxundia. Adeps porcinus, interior pinguedo porci inueterata. *Alſo*; lo gordo, que las aves tienen en la oueta.

When I came to *Genoa*, they knew not in my Lodging vvhat chere to make me, nor how to pleaſe me in my diet, I vvas growne ſo dainty and ſo curious.

I

I then began to call to minde the first entrance that I made into the City, and in how different a manner I was there receiued; and how I was forced from thence, carrying my Crosse vpon my shoulders; and how now they receiue mee, spreading their cloakes on the ground. Wee alighted and fell to our victuals. That day I was willing to take mine ease, and to rest my selfe after my journey. The next morning I apparelled my selfe, *à lo Romano*, no *Romane* of them all could weare a fairer Cloake, *& Sotana*, in which I walked vp and downe the streets. All mens eyes were cast vpon mee, as vvell for that I was a stranger, as likewise in regard I was well clad, and of a presence not to be despised. They askt my servant, who I vvas? Hee told them, *Don Iuan de Guzman*, a Gentleman of *Sevilla*: And when I heard them inquire after mee, I would pop vp my head, stretching out my necke, somewhat more then ordinary, thinking with my selfe, that I had some ten pound vveight of Bread more in my belly, then I had before: so Peacocke-like was I blowne vp with Pride, and such store of this puffe-past of vaine-glory had I swallowed downe my throat. Hee told them that I was newly come from *Rome*. They demanded farther of him, if I were rich; because they saw mee come from thence in a differing fashion from the rest: for they that goe to the Court at *Rome*, and to other Princes Courts, are like those that goe to the warres, vvho thinke all the world must now be theirs, and that they haue already finished vvhat they went for; with which vaine hopes they vsing to flatter themselues; they lash out into extraordinary expences vpon the vvay, as likewise in the Court; till the Court leaues them so curtail'd, that they haue scarce ere a ragge left them to couer their breech; returning home afterwards, vveary in their bodies, poore in their purses, discontented in their mindes, and driuen to that extreame want, that they must either almost starue or begge their bread. They goe thither fresh and liuely, flush of money, and rich in cloathes; vvhom I can liken to nothing better, then to the fish called the *Tunny*; vvhich, vvhen it is full of spawne, is also full of fish, fat and faire to see to, and is very good meate; but when her Spawne is gone from her, shee turnes lanke, leane, and vnseasonable; prouing as vnprofitable to the stomacke, as it is vnpleasing to the Palate.

Guzman arriues at Genoa.

The effects of Pride and Vain glory.

The fruits of following the Court and Wars.

They likewise enquired of him, whether I were to continue there for any long time, or past onely along as a Traueller, taking it in my way. To all which questions, *Sayavedra* gaue such answers, as I could my selfe haue wisht: Telling them that I was the onely son of a vviddow-gentle-woman, of very good quality, being a wonderfull wealthy dame, which was wife to a certaine Gentleman of *Genoa*, and that I was come thither to expect certaine Letters & dispatches, and then to returne backe againe to *Rome*; and that in the interim, I would recreate my selfe here in *Genoa*, taking much pleasure in the sight of this stately City; for that I knew not when I should make my returne, nor for what part, or whither I should ever haue the like opportunity to see it againe. The Inne where I lay, was the best in all the Towne, and is commonly called, *L' Hosteria di santi Marta*, whither the most part of your Noble-men, and Gentlemen did vsually resort. There we remained, making merry, and spending our money, without doing our selues any [g] good at all in point of profit, nor did we as yet goe about it. And in keeping thus our ground, vvee came to gaine ground. The Clocke doth not alwaies strike, but stayes till its houre comes, and when by a little and a little the time creepes on, that is limitted therevnto, why then it strikes. I playd now and then, but not for much money, with some other guests, that were in the house, more for company sake, and to passe away the time, then any thing else, not vsing any other helpe then mine owne fortune, and skill in gaming; *Sayavedra* had now no hand in the businesse, nor did I vse to set his plough a worke, saue in deepe and fat grounds, where there was hope of a plentifull harueſt; I kept him for Holidayes, his attendance

g *The Spanish phrase is*, Sin bolar, y tocar, en cosa de provecho.

tendance was, when there was a great feaſt, and a full boord; but for ſuch poore pittances as theſe, not worth the ſitting downe for, I was vvell content hee ſhould ſpare his labour. For, when the looſings or the gettings could not be much, the beſt courſe then (me thought) was to proceed plainly and ſincerely. Yet, when I plaid ſmall game, I went along with a leaden foot, marking and obſerving this, and that other Card; and if Fortune did not favour me, and that my croſſe-carding was ſuch, that I could not light on a luckie encounter, I would giue off with a little loſſe: but if the winde blew faire, and that I found good fortune was comming towards me, I never left following my good lucke, till I had ſwept vnto mee all the money on the boord.

The common courſe amongſt gameſters.

And it ſo fell out, that having one day won a matter of a hundred Crownes, and ſomewhat more, it was a Captaines hap, that had the command of a Gally, to ſit by mee, who I perceiu'd, lik't very well of my manner of play, and was very glad that I had got the money; and reading in his lookes, that hee had no great ſtore of Crownes in his purſe, but was rather in extreame want and neceſſity, I gaue him ſix *Doblones* of two, which in that conjuncture, conſidering his poverty, ſeemed vnto him to be ſix thouſand.

There is a time when one ſingle Royall, is more to a man then a hundred; nay a thouſand perhaps at another time, will not doe him ſo much good. For the which he made me ſuch a thankefull acknowledgement, as if the favour I had done him, had beene much more then it vvas, or ſome matter of greater moment. And this fell out very happily for mee; for hauing afterwards vnderſtood from himſelfe, of what diſeaſe he was ſicke, and where his griefe lay, at that inſtant, was mine owne remedy likewiſe repreſented vnto me, & quickly found out, that I was to make him the needle that muſt knit my net. In a word, I effected what I deſired. Hee ſpends nothing, vvho buyes that hee hath need of. I diſtributed likewiſe ſome few Crownes amongſt the reſt of the ſtanders by, to make them the better devoted, and affectioned towards mee, and that I might leaue every man well pleaſ'd and contented. Inſomuch that by this my affable, franke and bountifull carriage, I grew into that credit and good opinion amongſt them, that I had wonne their hearts, and got the good will and loue of all men; and it is an old ſaying, That hee that ſowes[b] well, reapes vvell. And I can aſſure you that as many as converſed vvith me, vvould haue hazarded their liues for me, if neede had beene. Wherewith I found my ſelfe ſo jocond, my body ſo lightſome, my heart ſo comforted, my blood ſo cleare, and my ſpirits ſo quickned, that my cheekes were as freſh, and red as the Roſe, and mine eyes did ſparkle, and lookt ſo merrily, as if they had laught for joy.

Proverbe.
b Quien bien ſiembra, bien coge.

This Captaine vvas called *Favelo*; not that this vvas his proper name, but becauſe it vvas giuen him by a certaine Miſtreſſe of his, whom hee ſometimes ſerued; vvhich he vvas vvilling ſtill to retaine in remembrance of her beauty, and his owne misfortune; the vvhole ſtory vvhereof, hee at large related vnto me; as how dearely ſhe loued him, how much ſhee made of him, indearing the ſweetneſſe of her diſpoſition, her gentle behaviour, and the gracefulneſſe of her perſon; all vvhich commendable qualities, poyſoned vvith ſome vaine and falſe appearances, were drowned in the end by a deſperate torrent of jealouſie, and ſuch other beaſtly thoughts, as are ſtill vvaiting vpon it. And from that time forward he vvould never ſuffer me to be alone, but vvas for the moſt part continually vvith me, and did embrace my friendſhip, vvith the greateſt loue that could be. Wherevpon I intreated him, that hee would be pleaſed to make vſe of my perſon, if I might be any way ſerviceable vnto him, and to be my gueſt, & take ſuch fare as I had, and though I knew I did bid him to his loſſe, as keeping a better Table of his owne, yet for my ſake, and the contentment I ſhould take therein, he ought in courteſie to accept of it. I omitted no meanes, for the obliging him vnto mee, and the continuing of him ſtill to be my friend.

friend. He had me along with him to his Galley, feaſted me, and made me take my pleaſure in her, all along the coaſt, plowing daily ſuch deepe furrowes for the better taking root of this our new friendſhip & acquaintance, that if mine had gone on in the true courſe of vertue, thereit might haue found a Haven wherein to haue harbour'd it ſelfe. But I vvas made of nothing but fraud and deceit. Yet would I be alwayes laying a firme foundation, that might well haue ſeru'd for the raiſing of a better building: but at laſt it came all to nothing; being (like that fooliſh builder) who knew better how to beginne, then to make an end of his building. Wee did communicate many particular accidents and ſecrets each to other, but he came not within my ſhirt, he had not pierced into my boſome, *Sayavedra* onely kept the key of that Cabinet, and none but hee knew the ſecrets of my ſoule.

This *Favelo* was of a good behaviour, witty, diſcreet, valiant, patient, and yet full of mettall, qualities well befitting ſo valiant a Captaine, and ſo amorous a Souldier, by meanes whereof he liu'd alwayes in want. And it is a common misfortune that accompanies theſe good qualities, that they are ſtill wayted on by poverty (or to ſpeake more properly) by beggery. Now I, who was not ignorant of his wants, ſought in all that I could to releeue his neceſſities, and to free him from theſe his extremities, that thereby I might bind him the ſurer vnto me. I carryed my ſelfe ſo fairely & ſo cunningly, both with him, and as many as I converſed withall, that (like Hawkes) I made them all to ſtoope to my lure. And within a few dayes, my name and credit was ſo good amongſt them, that I could battle largely vpon it, and might haue receiued any courteſie in that City, if I had beene willing to make vſe thereof. Wherevpon, partly out of this, and partly the ancient deſire that I had to know ſomething concerning my ſelfe, leſt the not knowing of it, might make me take thought, and ſo ſicken, and dye of griefe; conſidering with my ſelfe, that beng in that good ſtate I now was in, a handſome young fellow, well clad, good parts, and a good purſe, no man whatſoever could hold it any diſparagement vnto him, to acknowledge me for his kinſman; but that which did moſt ſway with me, was the earneſt deſire that I had to be fully revenged of him, who had abuſed mee in that baſe manner. This did often trouble me; nor could I ſleepe in quiet, as oft as I thought vpon it.

Guzman begins to thinke vpon the revenge he means to take of his kinſman.

I had not ſtaid long in towne, but I found out a father and a mother, and came to know all my kindred. Thoſe, which before threw ſtones at me, as if I had beene ſome ſtrange curre, vvhom they would chaſe out of their doores, did beginne now to quarrell, who ſhould haue me firſt home to his houſe, who make me greateſt cheere, who giue me the nobleſt entertainment, one ſeeking to out-vye another. The very firſt day that I made this enquiry, my kindred vvas more (I imagine) then my credit, & might be better knowne then truſted amongſt them; for no man is aſhamed to owne a rich man for his kinſman, though he be vicious and ill giuen; but all flye from a vertuous man, if they once haue him in the winde, and finde that he ſtinkes of poverty, I need not to indeare this poynt vnto you, it is ſo common a thing.

Riches compared to fire.

Proverbe.

i Mas fuego, mas calor.

Riches, is like vnto fire, which albeit it belong to a different place, and is only provided for one particular roome, yet notwithſtanding as many as come neere vnto it, warme themſelues, though they take not ſo much as a coale from thence; & *i* the more fire, the more heate. How many ſhall you ſee warming themſelues by the fire in a rich mans hall? of whom, if you ſhall but aske what they make there, or vvhat's their buſineſſe? They vvill anſwere you; No great buſineſſe. Doe they perhaps giue me any thing? Alas, vvhat doeſt thou get, by curring favour with them, by ſoothing them vp, by crowching and creeping vnto them, by aſſiſting day and night in baſe and ſervile offices, miſſpending that time, which thou mightſt better beſtow in gayning thy meate elſe-where? It is true Sir, that I benefit my ſelfe here but little, yet can I not

chooſe, but come and warme my ſelfe at *Señor N.* houſe, as others doe. You, and ſuch others as you be, tell me I pray, what you are? and be not angry vvith me, if I plainely tell you, you are all fooles.

But to returne againe into our way. Many of my kindred came vnto mee, every one deſiring to make himſelfe better knowne vnto me, and offering his ſervice in ſuch complementall manner, as was befitting my faſhion; and there was one amongſt the reſt, who for to honour, & oblige me the more, did challenge ancient kindred of me, even from our great grand-fathers. I would, for curioſitie ſake, faine know, what was become of that good old man, vvhich put that former tricke vpon me; and that I might doe it without any the leaſt ſuſpition or jealouſie in the world, I demanded of them, whether my father had any more brothers? or if he had, whether any of them were yet aliue, or no? For, I was ever of the minde, that he that plaid the rogue with me, was my Vnckle. They told me, yes. That there were three of them in all, my Father, and two more: and that the middlemoſt was dead, but that the eldeſt of all was liuing, & that he dwelt here in the Citie. They told me that he had liu'd a bachelor all the dayes of his life, that he was a man of great meanes, and the top of all our kindred, and gaue ſuch particular tokens of him, whereby I came to know him. I ſaid that I would goe kiſſe his hands the next day: But when this was told him, and that he vnderſtood of my qualitie, albeit he were very old, he came trudging with his ſtaffe in his hand, as decrepit as he was, to viſit me, accompanyed with ſome of the chiefeſt of our linage. I knew him as ſoone as ever I ſaw him, though he was now growne very lame and aged. I was glad to ſee him, but ſory that he was ſo old, I could haue wiſht him much younger, that he might the longer haue felt the ſmart of thoſe jerkes, that I was reſolved to beſtow on him. I count that man a foole, vvho to revenge himſelfe of his enemy, will take away his life; for that being ended, all his paine is ended with it. When I vvould take a revenge, I vvould handle it ſo, as I did with theſe my kinſmen, that they may not forget it as long as they liue, but beare the wofull remembrance of it with them to their graues. I deſired to be revenged of this man, and vviſht that he had beene at leaſt in the ſame ſtate as I left him, that I might in the ſame, haue paid him the debt I ow'd him: who had vvithout any cauſe or reaſon in the world, vs'd me ſo vnworthily. Hee made me many offers of his houſe; the very naming onely whereof, made my bloud to boyle in my breſt.

Now (me thought) the Bats were fluttering about mine eares, that the Gnats began to ſting mee, and that from vnderneath the bed, crept out thoſe old Hob-goblins, and fire-ſpitting devils, which tormented me heretofore. No, no; once was enough of this jeſt; I would bite no more at this bayte. The Cat hath * cozened me once, and is gone away with her prey, but ſhee ſhall ſerue me ſo no more. I ſhall take heed of her againſt another time. Marry, I ſaid to my ſelfe; Onely *Sayavedra*, may put another tricke vpon me, but it vvill not be much for his profit. But (excepting him) let any man elſe deceiue me the ſecond time, and I will freely forgiue him.

Proverbe. * Vna fue, y lleuoſeua el gato. *I cannot find whither this* vna *is refer'd, and therefore re-ferre it to others to finde it out*

We talked of many things; and amongſt divers other queſtions, he demanded of me, if I had beene heretofore in *Genoa*? Are you thereabouts (thought I;) I ſhall watch you well enough for that, you ſhall not catch me with this trap, as old and crafty as you be. So (lying at my cloſe fights) I anſwered him, that I had not; onely I told him, that much about ſome three yeares ſince, that I paſt that way, but could not (though I vvould) ſtay longer then one night, becauſe I was going in great haſte to *Rome*, vpon pretenſion of a certaine benefice. Then he told me, with a great deale of pauſe & deliberation, dreaming perhaps that he had lighted on a ſtory that ſhould pleaſe me wõderfull well. Some ſeven yeares agoe, little more or leſſe, there came hither (my good Coſen) to this towne, a little roguiſh boy; whom none that ſaw him, but would haue taken

This Story you ſhall finde more at large, in the firſt Part, firſt Chapt. and the third Booke.

taken him to be a thiefe, or at leaſt a young diſciple of theirs; who, that hee might the more eaſily rob mee, came to my houſe, giuing me ſome particular ſignes and tokens of my brother, that is now in glory; as alſo of your mother; telling mee, that hee was his ſonne, and my nephew; This is true that I tell you (Cozen) thus, and in this manner came he vnto me: but hee lookt ſo like a Rogue, and vve had that ſuſpition of him, that not owning him for our kinſman, leſt his infamy might reflect vpon our family, and turne to our diſgrace, vve ſought to make him leaue this Citie, and ſo he did, by meanes of a pretty plot vvhich we had deviſed for him. I can aſſure you (Cozen) that hee vvent flying from hence, like a dog that hath a bladder, with ſome few ratling pibles in it, tyde to his tayle; we could never more ſet ſight on him, nor doe we know whether he be dead or aliue, as if the earth had ſwallowed him vp quicke. With the levaltos and high-bounding capers that he cut, flying finely in the ayre, with no other helpe then a Coverlet, vvithout the vvhich, (you know) your tumblers cannot handſomely doe their feates of activity; I very well remember that he left my bed, (vvhether out of feare, or what other accident, I know not) full of honey-combes. This jeſt prou'd a very good one; for fearing (if he ſtayd any longer here) to haue a worſe put vpon him, hee got him packing, and ſo we were fairely rid of him. And I cannot chooſe but laugh, as oft as I thinke vpon it: For queſtionleſſe this Rogue had a purpoſe to deceiue vs. But I beleeue he vvill remember this nights lodging (if he be yet aliue) the longeſt day that he hath to liue. And I haue beene often angry with my ſelfe, and haue beſhrewd my fingers a thouſand times over and over, that I vs'd him no worſe.

All that had formerly paſt, he related vnto me very ſolemnly, omitting no one circumſtance: As the contriving of the plot, his making him goe ſupperleſſe to bed (ſuppoſing that might haue holpe to ſaue his ſheets) and which was vvorſe then all the reſt, his toſſing in a blanket.

I poore man, that was this little rogue that had ſuffered all this, and had receiued ſuch hard meaſure from them, apprehended it ſo feelingly, as if I had beene afraid I ſhould haue gone to this geare againe: My fleſh did breake out (me thought) into chops; and like the wound of a murtherd man, did open of it ſelfe, and began to bleed afreſh, (vpon the hearing of this tale) as if the murderer were preſent. And albeit, I ſenſibly perceiued in my ſelfe, that the colour of my face did receiue ſome alteration, hauing changed its naturall hew, yet did I diſſemble it the beſt that I could; and then, even then at that very inſtant, did I whet the razor of my revenge. Not ſo much moued therevnto, out of my former hunger, that I had to doe it; as this his preſent boaſting, vvhat fine feats he had done; ſeeming to take a pride and a glory in doing an vndeſerued miſchiefe. For I hold it a greater ſinne (and doubtleſſe ſo it is) to boaſt an ill, then to doe it. I did itch all the while this tale vvas on foot, and knew not which way to looke, nor what to ſay. At laſt I ſaid vnto him; I cannot call to minde, vvho this youth ſhould be that did ſo earneſtly long to haue honourable parents; yet are we beholding vnto him, (if haply he be aliue, and haue eſcaped with life frō *Roncesvalles*) that of all other noble Houſes (whereof there are ſo many in the world) he would vouchſafe to make choyce of ours, to honour himſelfe therewithall. And if ſuch another ſtripling as hee, ſhould chance to come to my houſe, I vvould ſhow him all the kindneſſe I could, till I had fully inform'd my ſelfe of the truth, & had aſſured knowledge, whether hee came vnto me out of an evill, or good intent. For there are ſome Caſes, and ſome ſuch ſtrange and vnexpected caſualties, wherevnto mans courſes are incident, that even perſons, of great, both worth and valour, eſcape in that miraculous manner, and are by their misfortunes, brought to that low ebbe, that they are aſham'd of themſelues. But this wag, when I had lifted and ſounded him throughly, and found out his intent, I would haue dealt with him, as hee

would haue dealt with mee: For Povertie neither quits Vertue, nor Riches giue it. And in caſe it ſhould not haue fallen out as my ſuſpitious thoughts had ſuggeſted it, and that (for ought I ſaw) he had no evill intention towards me, nor any purpoſe to doe mee any harme, I ſhould haue favour'd him all that I could, and haue ſecretly diſmiſt him from me. And in a word, though he had not beene my kinſman, yet for the good choyce that he made, and the good liking he had to our name, preferring it before any other, ſurely hee ſhould not haue fared the worſe for that. And if I had not given him any money in his purſe, yet would I at leaſt haue vs'd him civilly, and not ſent him away diſcontented, who (as it ſhould ſeeme by him) was not very well pleaſed with his entertainment. Goe to, goe to, (Coſen) (ſaid the old man) had you ſeene him, as I did, you would haue told me another tale then now you doe. And for mine owne part, (I muſt confeſſe vnto you) it did me good at the heart, that I had thus firkt my young Rogue; and (as I told you before) I am very ſory that I did not handle him worſe, and giue him that condigne puniſhment, which the heynouſneſſe of the offence did deſerue. For you never ſaw ſuch a tatterd Raſcall as he was in all your life; & being thus all to be rent and torne, and not a ragge (ſaving your reverence) to cover his breech, yet this ſhake-rag, this young impudent Rogue, did not ſticke to challenge kindred of vs, and that hee was lineally deſcended of our houſe, and in ſo neare a degree, as you haue heard. And becauſe hee brought not his wedding garment with him, but was thus poore and baſely clad, we gaue him *Iacke Drums* entertainment, and ſhut him out of dores, having lapt him firſt in a blanket, where he was handſomely canvaſt; & with this he went his way. Iuſt about the ſame time (ſaid I) was I with my mother in *Sevill*. And it's not yet full three yeares ſince I left her. I was their onely ſonne, nor had my parents any other children ſaue my ſelfe. It vvas even at my tongues end, and almoſt out of my mouth ere I was aware, that I had two fathers; but quickly mending that fault, I went on, as followeth: My father left mee well to liue, being neither ſo much, as therewith to be able to ſpend laviſhly; nor yet ſo little, that with good government, I might not liue handſomely. I cannot boaſt my ſelfe to be rich, nor juſtly complaine that I am poore. Beſides, my mother vvas alwayes a prudent and provident woman, well gover'd, a ſmall waſter, and a great huſwife.

All they that were there preſent, were willing to giue me the hearing, and were wondrous glad of it, not vvell knowing in what Sanctuary they might place me, nor how ſufficiently to feaſt me, nor could they ſatisfie themſelues in point of good manners, if they did not giue me the right hand, and being two, if they did not put me in the [l] midſt betweene them both. Then did I ſoftly ſay to my ſelfe; O vanity, whither wilt thou? how doeſt thou runne after thoſe that are fortunate, as long as they ſayle with a faire winde. But vvhen that fayles thee, how in a moment doe thy friends forſake thee, how many changes doeſt thou find in an inſtant? And how truly, did I now come to know that they are evermore favoured and reſpected, from whom any hope may be had, that one way or other, they may be benefited by them? and this is the reaſon why few doe helpe the needy, and all runne after the rich.

We are the children of pride, and rather flatterers then friends. For if vve vvere true friends indeed, and vvere charitably minded, vve ſhould haue recourſe to the contrary. Eſpecially, we knowing how acceptable a thing it is in the ſight of God, that every one ſhould be as ſenſible of his neighbours miſeries, as his owne, ſeeking to doe the ſame good vnto him, as we would haue to be done vnto our ſelues, vvere vve in the ſame wretched caſe, as he is. I vvas now become the idoll of my kindred, ſo much vvas I adored by them. I had bought me at an [m] *Almoneda*, a faire Cupboord of plate, which coſt mee almoſt eight hundred Ducats; and for no other end in the world, but to cloſe vp this my wound the better, I invited all my kindred together, with ſome other of my

l The middle place eſteemed in Spaine, to be the beſt.

m A publike outcrie: Or an open ſale of goods at the ſecond hand.

my friends one day to dinner, I made them a great feast, bestow'd a costly banket vpon them, cheared them all vp, made wonderfull much of them, and gaue them all the kinde entertainment I could possibly device. After dinner, vvee goe to play, I get the money, but gaue it almost all away in *barato* to the standers by. And with this conjuring tricke thus I carried them through the Ayre, I was able to doe what I would doe with them. O that I could haue then whispered them softly in the eare, and haue told them; Know (Gentlemen) that you feed vpon your owne flesh; that the [a] wolfe is in the midst of your flocks; and that hee, vvhom they make so much of, is hee, vvhom they so much wronged. O, if they did but know so much, how vvould they blesse themselues, vvhat a vvorld of crosses vvould they make in every corner of their houses, that they might not bee troubled vvith a double labour all the dayes of their life after to doe the same thing againe, a thousand and a thousand times over? For now their mattresses were a quilting, and their beds a making, vvherein they vvere like to take but little rest; and fetch more friscalls in the ayre, then vvhen they tost mee in the blanket; so that they shall haue as good cause to thinke vpon mee, as I vpon them; and remember one another the better as long as vvee liue. But my paine was already past; and theirs vvas now comming vpon them. O, if they but knew, that he that is thus with them in sheeps-cloathing, shall ere long breake sodainly in vpon them, like a roaring and raging lyon, how would they looke one vpon another? But it is well as it is; for ere they and I part, we will quit scores, and make them to know me a little better, and what it is to abuse one in that manner as they did me, and to scorne and despise their owne blood. It is a fine stale, or call, to take a bird withall, to haue a good *coram vobis*, to spend brauely, to goe gallantly, and to be a *Don Iuan de Guzman*; but it had beene better for them, that I had beene poore *Guzman de Alfarache* with his tatterd cloathes, then *Don Iuan de Guzman* in all his gallantry. They vs'd me with a great deale of courtesie, and gaue me very kinde entertainment, but because I had a queazy stomake, and was troubled with many qualmes, like a woman that is a breeding, out of that longing desire that I had to be revenged, nothing would downe with me, or if it did, it would make no stay, but I should presently puke it vp againe. For in such cases, a mans thoughts are ever of a bad digestion; it being the nature of injuries, not to be easily concocted. So that I did continually beat my braines about it, plodding with my selfe how I should best effect it; and in this vertuous exercise had I set my wits a working, and all these my noble entertainements tended to no other end then this. For it had beene great folly in me, to haue made such great preparation to no purpose. And vnprofitable is that power, which is not reduced to act. I did but waite for a happy conjuncture, for every thing hath its [b] *quando*, its when it should be done. For we cannot execute all things, at all times. Besides there are some houres that are vnlucky, some starres that are crosse, and some planets that are malignant; whose contagious breath we are to flie from, and keepe our selues aloofe from their infectious ayre, lest they chance to worke our destruction.

Thus then did I ley surely stay looking for a fit occasion, passing those dayes that I remained there, in feasting and banquetting, and all other delightfull pleasures; one while vvalking downe to the Sea-side, to take the fresh ayre; otherwhiles, going to recreate my selfe in their sweet and pleasant Gardens, vvhich are very curiously kept; and now and then visiting the faire Dames of *Genoa*.

My Kinsmen, vvould faine haue made mee to marry a Gentlewoman of very good quality, but of a small Dowry: but I durst not venture vpon her, for the reasons before recited: and being besides to steale away from thence very shortly, our egges must haue beene buried in the ashes; yet did I shew my

proverbe.
[a] En el hato está el lobo.

Inanis potestas, quæ non reducitur ad actum.
proverbe.
[b] Cada cosa, tiene su quando.

proverbe.
[c] Auiamos de dar con los huevos en la ceniza.

my ſelfe very thankfull vnto them for theſe their good vviſhes towards mee, neither accepting, nor refuſing their offer, that I might goe entertaining and leading them along till I had hit the marke that I aymed at. For, certaine it is, that a man may then eaſilieſt knock out his enemies braines, vvhen his adverſary thinkes there is no ſuch treachery intended againſt him, and reſts moſt ſecure. And here will we reſt a while.

CHAP. IX.

Guzman de Alfarache *robs his Vncle and Kinſmen in* Genoa, *and imbarkes himſelfe in the Gallies that were to goe for* Spaine.

Touching Revenge.

Proverbe.

a De donde no pienſan, ſuele ſaltar la liebre.

AN injury, never ought to bee ſlighted; nor he ſleepe that does it. For Revenge comes vp from beneath the earth, lurking in the ſecret corners thereof, lying ſtill in Ambuſh, watching but a fit time to ſally forth; and to doe thee a miſchiefe. The hare oftentimes ſtarts out of that buſh, where we did leaſt dreame of his ſitting. Let not the rich man truſt in his riches; nor the powerfull man in the greatneſſe of his power; nor the ſtrong man, in his ſtrength; nor the valiant man, in his courage: for time alters the ſtate of things, and turnes them topſi-turuy. A little hayre in a Pen, makes a great blot; and a little ſtone in the way, overturnes a great Waine. And when the Offender thinks himſelfe moſt ſecure; then the offended finds the better opportunitie. I haue told you here-tofore that Revenge is baſe Cowardiſe, which ſprings from a weake womaniſh minde; to which kinde of Creatures it is commonly competible, and ſutes beſt with them. And albeit I haue mentioned ſome, nay many vnto you, that haue made their names immortall, by ſcorning and contemning of it; yet here I ſhall not omit to tell you a ſtory of a woman, wherein ſhe well ſhew'd that ſhe was a woman.

Revenge a womaniſh affection.

A Story how a wronged Gentlewoman revenged the injury that was done vnto her.

A Gentlewoman, that was young, faire, rich, and of a noble linage, being married to a Gentleman in every reſpect equall vnto her ſelfe, chanced within a ſhort time after to become a widdow: who diſcreetly conſidering the dangers, whereinto by reaſon of her tender yeares, ſhee was like to fall, and what ſpeeches the world is wont to caſt out, through a too much aptneſſe that men haue to whiſper and murmur ſtrange tales: for euery man judgeth ſo of things as they repreſent themſelues to his imagination; and as he is inſtructed by his private either fancy or affection; and takeing notice of one onely action of this or that man or woman, it is a common practiſe amongſt them, to vary their opinions therevpon, and giue their ſeverall cenſures. And yet not alwayes doe theſe tongues of theirs ſpeake the truth; nor their judgements hit vpon the right. She, holding it therefore very inconvenient to put theſe deare pledges of hers vpon the tips of mens tongues, and to occaſion her honour to come in queſtion; ſhee reſolued (as on the leſſer evill) to marry. Two Gentlemen became Suters vnto her, both equall in their pretenſion; but farre vnequall in their deſerving. The one, to his as much content, as his heart could deſire, the match being in a manner concluded; but the other rejected and quite caſt off, running a contrary fortune to his Corriuall. And beſides, that hee vvas not of that ranke and quality as the other, he had likewiſe ſome other defects, which might very well excuſe a woman of a farre meaner indowment, to admit him to bee her Companion. Now, the former being made ſure to this Gentlewoman, and having paſt their promiſes each to other; ſo that nothing

was

was wanting but their going to Church, and there to performe those Ceremonies, and Solemnities in that case required. The second seeing his hopes dasht, and his sute at an end, and that there was no recovering of her; for that shee was already betrothed to the other: a divellish toy tooke him sodainly in the head, by perverse and indirect meanes, to fetch such a leape, as should put himselfe forward, and cast the other behinde.

Hee resolved with him-selfe to rise vp one day very early in the morning, which he did accordingly; and having hid him-selfe in a secret place, where no body could see him, there did he lie close, till such time as the servants of the house had opened this betrothed Gentlewomans doores; and then presently taking his time, without being heard or perceived by any, he steps mee in, and there stayes mee a pretty while behinde the porch, till such time, as to his seeming, the people were stirring in the streets, and all the rest of the houses and shops were open. And then fayning to come out of the Gentlewomans house, as if he had lyen there all night, he stands strutting him-selfe vpon the midst of the threshold before the doore, with his sword clapt vnder his arme, making show as if he were setting and ordering his Ruffe, and buttoning vp the buttons of his Doublet; so that as many as past by and observed the manner of his carriage, did verily beleeue, that hee was espoused vnto her and had now enjoyed this Gentlewoman.

When this plot of his fell out thus handsomely, that for his purpose hee could not haue wisht it to haue taken better effect: this businesse was whispered of at first by a few; but afterwards spred it selfe by degrees, and came to be divulged all over the street, till at last the noyse thereof entred into her owne private chamber. The tricke had hee played twice over. And this businesse was so publikely talked of, and the Gentlewoman growne thereby so infamous, that it was the Table-talke of all the Towne: every man admiring this her inconstancy, and wondring at her indiscretion, that shee should forgoe her first bargaine, being so advantageous for her owne good, and make choice of this other, whom she had formerly cast off, and not without cause. But when this newes was thus scattered euery where abroad, and euery mans mouth was full of the manner of it; as that hee was seene to come out halfe naked, all vndrest, and his points vntrust: when this (I say) came to the knowledge of her other Suiter, hee did so risent the wrong she had done him, was so overcharged with sorrow, and so inflamed with choller, that albeit he lou'd her before so tenderly, that he desired nothing more then to make her his wife; now did hee cruelly hate her; flying now as fast from her, as before hee sought after her: and did not onely abhorre her; but all other women for her sake: it seeming vnto him; That since she, whom he so much esteemed, and so dearely loved, accounting her so good, so chaste, and so reserved a creature, that shee should commit so foule a fact, there was little hope of faith to be found in the rest: and if there were any left on whose loyalty men might trust and relye, they were so few, that hee despaired of meeting with that happinesse. Hee weighed their inconstancies, their delayings, their passions, and with them the dangers, the troubles, and the cares whereinto men put themselues. And passing from these to other discourses which he made with himselfe, inspired by God, they wrought so vpon him, that hee changed the loue of the creature, into that of the Creator, resolving with himselfe to turne Fryer. Which deliberation, hee putting in execution, sodainly entred into a religious Order. This came to the Gentlewomans knowledge, and with it, the report that ran of her, as also the occasion of it, who, when shee saw how things stood, and that it was not possible for her to repaire her honour; nor to take away that foule blot which the other had laid vpon it, she tooke-on like a mad woman: and how can you blame her, that shee should thus lose her selfe in her passions; having lost at one blow, her honour, her Husband, her preferment, and

her

her chiefeſt happineſſe? hopeleſſe for ever, either by this, or any other the like meanes, to receiue any future content, or to returne to the former ſtate wherein ſhee ſtood, or to recover her reputation, which was thus ſhamfully loſt.

Wherevpon ſhee began to bethinke her ſelfe, how ſhee might ſalue this her innocency by ſome exemplary puniſhment. And having ſumm'd and caſt vp theſe reckonings with her ſelfe, ſhee found her honeſty ſo deeply ingaged, that it was impoſſible by any other courſe but this, to cleare it: and that ſuch a treachery as this, could not be quitted, then with one no leſſe treacherous, though more cruell. Wherevpon, ſhe did put on ſo infernall a fury, and went on in that violent rage, that ſhe buſied her thoughts in nothing elſe, ſaue how ſhe might bring this buſineſſe about. God bee mercifull vnto vs, and deliver vs from a wronged womans revenge; for all of them are commonly ſuch as ſhe, who here preſents her-ſelfe vnto vs.

The firſt thing that ſhee reſolued on, was to vſe her beſt endeavour to become a Nunne; (and if ſhee had ſtopt there, ſhee had ſpunne a good thred) and imparting a great part of her troubles to an eſpeciall friend of hers, that was of that Monaſtery, whither ſhe had determined to goe, after ſhee had broken her minde vnto her; ſhee, with great ſecrecy, effected her deſire. Then did ſhee convey into the Monaſtery, all the chiefeſt of her houſhold-ſtuffe, her Iewels, and her monyes, annexing therevnto, by publike conveyances and inſtruments drawne and ſigned for that vſe, the greateſt part of her wealth. This being done, ſhe ſtood daily expecting, that this Gentleman her enemy, ſhould come and renue his ſuite, and treat with her, touching their marriage; which (according to her expectation) within ſome few dayes after, he did: alleadging in his excuſe, the great loue that he bare vnto her; for which cauſe, being deſperate of his hopes, hee vſed thoſe ſubtill meanes, that he might obtaine the end of his wiſhed deſires. But now, acknowledging his fault, and that hee had beene the cauſe of this error, that was voyced abroad, craving pardon for the ſame, he was willing to ſolder vp this flawe, by tendring himſelfe to be her husband. She, who deſired nothing more, then that this his wicked intention ſhould come to light, and that her honor thereby might recover its former ſplendor, made anſwer vnto him; That ſeeing there was now no other meanes left vnto her for the ſaving of her credit, nor no better courſe to bee taken for the recovery of her loſt reputation; ſhe did willingly accept of his offer. But told him withall, that ſhe had made a vow, the preformance whereof would be accompliſhed with theſe two months, or little more, and vntill that time were expired, ſhee could not giue him that ſatisfaction which hee deſired. But, if he would be pleaſed to haue the patience to ſtay till then, hee ſhould obtaine his ſuite. But, if he were ſo eagerly bent vpon the buſineſſe, that impatient of ſo long an intermiſſion of time, he longed to come ſooner to this his deſired end, ſhe would not ſtop him in this his journey; but would haue the buſineſſe to bee carryed with all poſſible ſecrecy, till the terme of the aforeſaid two months ſhould be fully accompliſhed; and then afterwards ſhee did not care (leaving that to his diſcretion) how ſoone this their marriage were manifeſted to the world.

The Gentleman accepted of the condition, holding himſelfe (therein) the happieſt man in the world. And having provided all that was fitting and neceſſary for a buſineſſe of this Nature, they were ſecretly contracted together, by vertue whereof, they were eſpouſed each to other. They continued together on theſe termes ſome few dayes, he entertained himſelfe with that aſſured hope which hee had of his abſolute injoying of her, and ſhe being no leſſe contented then hee, vvith the vviſhed end that ſhee had to worke her revenge.

One night, after they had ſupt, her husband went to bed, ſhee enters into

to the chamber, and ſetting her ſelfe downe neare vnto the bed-ſide, feigning to be buſying her fingers about ſome trifling thing or other, (as women are never without a thouſand ſuch idle toyes) ſhe waited by him, till he was falne aſleepe, and when ſhe ſaw that the ſoundneſſe of his firſt ſleepe had ſeized forcibly vpon him, ſhe ſoftly puts her hand into the ſleeue of her gowne, and taking out a keene cutting knife, as ſharpe at any rayſour, to that firſt ſleepe of his ſhe added the laſt minute of his life; for in an inſtant ſhe had cut his throat, and left him dead in the bed, wallowing in his owne blood. Afterwards, telling the people of the houſe, that her husband had had a very bad night of it, and that none ſhould goe in for feare of waking him, till he himſelfe were willing to call to them, or that her ſelfe ſhould returne from Maſſe; ſhee ſhut the doore after her, and hy'd her as faſt as ſhe could, to the Monaſtery, where ſhee preſently receiued the habit and was made a Nunne, after that ſhee had thus waſht away her infamy, with his blood, who had beſpotted it, giuing a notorious token of her honeſty, and a terrible demonſtration of her cruelty.

I will likewiſe tell you (becauſe it ſiteth well to this purpoſe) that vvhich *Fuſtillos* ſaid; a foole that went vp and downe *Alcala de Henares*; one vvhom I afterwards very vvell knew. This foole, a dogge had bit by the legge, which hurt though he was afterwards well healed of it, yet his heart was not at quiet: for he had ſtill a ſpight at that dogge. Whom he finding one day by chance lying all along before his doore, ſleeping in the Sunne, hee went to a certaine place neere vnto the Church of *Santa Maria*, and taking vp a great ſtone, as much as he could lift with both his hands, he came ſoftly ſtealing towards the dogge, without being perceiued by him, and lifting it vp as high as euer hee could reach, let it fall juſt vpon the head of him. The poore Curre, hauing receiued this cruell blow, being in extreame torment, and neere vnto his death, began to make a moſt pittifull howling, and fell (his laſt pangs being vpon him) a bounding in the ayre. *Fuſtillos* the foole, ſeeing in what caſe hee was, ſaid vnto him; Doe you heare brother, doe you heare? [b] *Quien enemigos tiene, no duerma*: He does ill to ſleepe that has an enemy. I remember I told you once before; That ill is alwaies ill; But of all ils, I hold revenge to be the worſt: For a revengefull heart knows not how to be mercifull. And he that ſhall not ſhew mercy, let him not looke for mercy, neither from God, nor man. For every man ſhall be meted with the ſame meaſure that hee meteth vnto others. And in the ſame balance that thou weigheſt thy neighbour, in the ſame ſhalt thou be weighed thy ſelfe. This, thou canſt not deny, but I muſt haue thee alſo to confeſſe, That they are in an error, who knowing mens evill inclination, will yet be ſo ſimple, as to truſt them; eſpecially thoſe, whom we haue formerly injured; for few or none of your recóciled friends, but proue rotten at the heart; & how faire a ſhow ſoever they make, not one of them of a thouſand that is ſound and good. He doth offer a pleaſing ſacrifice vnto God, who for Gods ſake only, remitteth the wrongs that he hath receiued. Few miracles haue we ſeene in this caſe; Onely I was an eye witneſſe of one my ſelfe in *Florence*, which happened without the wals of the City, in the Church of *San Miniato*, that ſtands within the Caſtle. Which becauſe it is but a ſhort one, & worthy your memory, I will briefely relate it vnto you. A Gentleman of *Florence*, called Captaine *Giouanni Gualberto*, the ſon of a noble Knight, that was a *Titulado*, going to *Florence* with his company, well armed, & on horſeback, he met vpon the way with a mortal enemy of his, who kild his brother; who ſeeing the danger wherein hee was, giuing himſelfe for a loſt man, (for that he knew not how to eſcape him) humbled himſelfe at his feet; & croſſing his breſt with his armes, beſought his pardon, and that for Ieſus Chriſts ſake, that was crucified he would be pleaſed to ſpare him his life. *Giouanni Gualberto*, had theſe words in that reuerence, that pricked with a charitable compunction, taking pitty of him, he vvillingly pardoned this his enemy. And taking him along with him, he made him to goe backe

A tale of Fuſtillos the foole.

b Proverbe.

Revenge, of all ills the worſt.

Proverbe.
Por la medido, que midiere, ha de ſer medido.

Truſt not a reconciled enemy.

A ſtory of a miracle, wrought in San Miniato, and vpon What occaſion.

backe againe with him to *Florence*, and brought him to *San Miniatos* Church, to offer thankes vnto God. And kneeling downe before a *Crucifix*, which was a very liuely peece, *Gionanni Gualberto*, kneeling also on his knees, desired of God, That he would so forgiue him his trespasses, as he did freely forgiue this his enemy that had trespassed against him, in killing his brother. Which words were no sooner vttered by him, but Christ bowed his head vnto him, *Gionanni Gualberto*, humbly acknowledging this great grace and fauour there showne vnto him in the presence of all those that were there, presently entred into a religious Order, in which holy profession, he continued to his dying day. This image of Christ stands to this day, with his head bowing it selfe downe, even in the selfe same manner as it stood then: and is there reverenced as a great relicke, not onely by the *Florentines*, but all other Catholickes.

Of Revenge.

And now (laying Miracles aside) let mee truly tell you, That when a man does pardon his enemy, but takes not this for his ground, it leaues some embers behinde, some quicke coales couered over with a few ashes, which being stir'd neuer so little, breakes forth againe, inflaming the soule, and soliciting it to revenge. And howbeit outwardly this fire seeme to be dead; yet God keepe vs from this still water; for many a time and oft, this fire is only sprinkled ouer with a litle Court-holy-water, which is as good as nothing; or sleightly cover'd over with the ashes of a false forgiuenesse. But if you shall but offer to blow it with *Occasions* bellowes, though never so little, it soone discovers it selfe, the coales kindle by and by, and the flame of their hatred breake forth afresh, and to as deepe a reuenge, as if there had never beene any attonement betweene them. And this I am able to justifie vnto you, as having made experience thereof my selfe: For I was ever so mightily pricked on to revenge, as if (like a beast) the spurres thereof lay still gagging at my sides. And well may I say beast, for hee is no lesse, that is thus beastly-minded. I had still before mine eyes, that dis-jointing and ratling of my bones: when like the winnowing of vvheat in a fanne, they tost me vp on high, and no sooner done, but hoist mee vp againe, every bone of mee seeming to gingle like so many bels. What vvith this and that delight and pleasure that they tooke in the recounting of the jest, and the evill intent wherewith they did it, besides their telling of me, that nothing did so much grieue them, as that they had not vs'd me vvorse, I could not choose but beare it in minde, and say to my selfe; O ye misbegotten rascals, ye villaines, ye enemies to goodnesse, ye dogges: I came to your gates, being poore and needy, and vvhat a fine refreshing did ye giue mee, that I might the better go forward on my journey! This their course vsage, had stir'd vp such store of choller in mee, that I did now desire nothing more, then to cry quittance with all those that had a hand in this conspiracie. And not so much to be reuenged on them, as that old dogbolt, who was the principall plotter, and actor, both of it, and my hurt.

The time passed on, and with it I gained more friends, vvedging them closer and closer daily vnto mee, I knowing them, and they mee. The proposed marriage was hotly pursued by them, they all very earnestly desiring to haue mee naturalized amongst them. I visited them and they mee: my friends resorted to my lodging, and I to theirs. Now, as if I had beene a towne-borne child, I had free accesse in all parts of the Citie, I went and plaid amongst them at their Ordinaries, and publike houses of gaming; and they likewise would come and meete at my lodging; sometimes loosing and sometimes getting, till one night amongst the rest the Cards fell out so luckily, and shew'd themselues so favourable vnto mee, that I carried home with me, at one clap about seauen thousand Royals: wherewith my Gentlemen were nettled, that the next night after, they were very desirous to play greater game. I misliked not the motion; for the time of my reckning vvas now neere at hand; if not past; my nine[d] mouthes, (as the common saying is) that I had gone with child,

looking

proverbe.
d Yo estava fuera de cuenta: ò, en las nueve meses.

looking to be brought a-bed of this birth, begotten of mine owne braine, were now fully expired; and every moment I expected a happy houre. For Captaine *Favelo* had already told me, that the Galleys were now ready, and that he was fully perſwaded, they vvould very ſhortly goe for *Spaine*. This made me beſtirre my ſtumpes, and to get all things ready to goe aboord, conceiuing they were now [a] hoyſing ſayle, fitting their oares, & ready to launch, being reſolued, whitherſoever they went, to goe along with them; yet I durſt not make it knowne, till going out of the haven, they were to put forth to Sea. I accepted that night their challenge, and continued play with them, but to no other end in the world, but to entertaine the time, that I might afterwards be the better provided, to giue them a wipe for a farewell, & to tickle them with the latter arrow, or (as they vſe to doe in *Portugall*) *darles de pancada*

That night I loſt, but no more then I was willing; for now I did employ all my skill, to bring my purpoſe to paſſe. I did float vp and downe vvith a ſide winde, and got to winde-ward of them, ſtill beſtowing *barato* (howſoever the world went) vpon my old friend the Captaine; becauſe I knew he vvas to returne it backe againe in the end, to my greater advantage. Some few dayes after, I perceiu'd my Captaine grew ſomewhat ſad; I askt him what might be the cauſe of this his melancholy, and that he was not ſo merry, as he was wont to be: He told me, it vvas onely the ſorrow, that he had conceiued, that he & I, ere long muſt part; for that ſome ten dayes hence the Galleys vvere vvithout faile to goe away, by expreſſe order giuen for their departure.

His vvords vvere pearles; and this language of his, as a voyce from heaven, as if I had heard it once more ſay vnto me; Open this Cabinet, vnlocke that cheſt, and pull out that other Cat by the eares, and carry away with thee, what thou liſt. So that now, I thought this buſineſſe was in a manner quite ended. And ſo taking my Captaine aſide, vvhen I ſaw that he and I were all alone, I ſaid vnto him; Sir, you haue ſhow'd your ſelfe ſuch a friend vnto me, and I doe ſo highly eſteeme of your loue and friendſhip, that I know not how either to indeare, or requite it. There is offered now vnto me by occaſion of this your voyage, an abſolute remedie to all my deſires, and a fit opportunitie to effect, what I haue long ſince intended; and without your helping hand, vvherein it chiefly conſiſteth, I vtterly deſpaire of obtayning my purpoſe. And if I haue for-borne till now to giue you an accoũt thereof (which I ought to haue done, in regard of that true affection, and faithfull friendſhip, that is betweene vs) it was becauſe I was loath, out of my loue vnto you, to cauſe any diſquietneſſe in you, which the acquainting you therewith, muſt needs bring with it. I would haue you therefore to vnderſtand, that I came not hither, either out of any deſire to ſee this Citie, nor for that kinde entertainments ſake, or any other courteſie, that I haue here receiued; but onely for to diſ-oblige my ſelfe, and to revenge a certain wrong, which my father being an elderly man, receiued at the hands of a young *Spaniard*, that reſideth here in this Citie: vvho vvas forced therevpon to forſake his Country, as being aſhamed of the affront that was done him. And not being able (in regard he was an old man) to right himſelfe as hee ſhould, hee held it his beſt courſe, to leſſen it by his long abſence; the griefe vvhereof continued with him to his dying day. And he that had no reſpect vnto thoſe reverent hayres of an aged father, cannot juſtly complaine of me, if being his ſonne, I loſe all reſpect towards him in the working of my revenge. And becauſe it may ſo fall out, that after I haue ſatisfied my deſire, that his friends, either by the great favour they ſhall finde in this place, or by the ſtrength of their purſe, which is no leſſe prevalent, ſhall goe about to doe me any injurie, that you afford me your beſt aſſiſtance, by which good furtherance only of yours, without any perill to your owne perſon, you may by your ſecrecy ſecure me, and bring me fairely off. Which friendly office ſhall binde me ſo faſt vnto you, that (during life) I ſhall acknowledge my ſelfe to be your

[a] The Spaniſh word is Leva. termino nautico, y vale la partida, y arrancada que hazen las galeras del puerto, à levando.

ſlaue. For a ſonne hath no more honour, then what he inherits from his father: And if my father hath none to leaue me, this trayterous enemie of his, hauing taken it from him, I likewiſe liue without it, and muſt recover it my ſelfe by theſe hands of mine, & by mine owne proper induſtry. Which if my kinſmen haue not ſought to repayre, it was, for that they were not either willing to hazard themſelues, or their fortunes; or for that after my fathers abſence, all was buryed, and not ſo much as a word ſpoken thereof, whereby the remembrance of the wrong might haue beene revived. Holding it the leſſer inconvenience of the two, to let it ſleepe thus quietly as it did, then by awaking it, to giue occaſion to the people to publiſh this his ſhame the more.

Favelo all this while hearkned very attentiuely to every word that I ſaid, & would that I ſhould haue remitted this buſineſſe vnto him, to the end that hee might make himſelfe a party in this revenge, as became a true friend; not doubting but that he ſhould giue me good ſatisfaction therein, and performe it as well as I my ſelfe could wiſh. And albeit he was very earneſt with me, vſing many violent intreaties, that he might take this burthen wholly vpon him, yet notwithſtanding could he not bring me to giue way vnto it; Telling him, that it was neither juſt, nor fitting; That the injurie being mine, the revenge ſhould be anothers. And that onely for this end, I was come out of my natiue countrey of *Spaine*, with a reſolution never to returne thither againe, till that I my ſelfe had giuen my enemie his payment, and in that coyne, that he ſhould know from whom, & wherefore he receiu'd it. Adding withall, that he ſhould doe me a great deale of wrong, to thinke that I wanted either ſtrength or courage to put my ſelfe vpon ſuch a buſineſſe as this is, conſidering how neerely it concernes me, and how it toucheth my ſoule to the very quicke. When hee heard me ſay ſo (ſeeing me thus peremptorily bent) he grew ſo quiet, that he would preſſe that point no farther; and though he made no reply therevnto, yet he told me; If I haue any thing of worth in me, if I can doe any thing, if my whole eſtate, life, and honour, may import your ſervice, I lay them downe at your feet, they are wholly yours to be diſpoſed of. And if, for feare of the worſt (becauſe a man knowes not what may happen in ſuch a caſe) you will (for to make ſurer worke) that I and my ſouldiers ſhall aſſiſt you, or (at leaſt) giue vs leaue to ſtand at a gaze, to ſee how the world goes with you, command vs ſo farre forth as you pleaſe; your will ſhall be ours; and we will not be wanting to the vttermoſt of our power, to afford you our beſt ayde, and to giue you all the content we can. And I will promiſe you vpon mine honeſt word, and therefore put that to my account, that if you once but ſet your foot within the Galley, all *Italy* (would they never ſo faine) ſhall not be able to fetch you thence, and vvould rather runne all dangers my ſelfe, though never ſo great, then that you ſhould ſuffer the leaſt.

Noble Captaine (ſaid I) I beleeue you both in this, and the reſt, and am very confident that you profeſſe no more, then what your true heart vnto me, doth ſincerely ſuggeſt. But I thinke, there needeth not ſo much water to driue this mill. Firſt, becauſe my enemie reſts ſecure, and ſuſpects not the revenge that I ſhall take of him: And ſecondly, for that my ſelfe and *Sayavedra*, ſhall be able well enough to goe through with that which I pretend. Which being accompliſhed, my deſire is, the buſineſſe may be ſo carryed, that when his friends would right themſelues vpon me, and ſhould haply chance to purſue me, or make ſome diligent ſearch after me, they might by your favour, miſſe of their purpoſe, and come too late to lay hold vpon me. That which preſſes, and imports me moſt, and which I require at your hands, is; That I may know the ſet day, when the Galleys are to depart, & when you meane to weigh anchor, that I may not loſe either time, or occaſion, He promiſed me, I ſhould: And ſo we were agreed in the end, that by little and little, and that very ſecretly, I ſhould by *Sayavedra* convay my trunkes, & my cloathes aboord the Galley, to the

the end that I might not deferre the doing thereof to the very laſt puſh, and haue nothing elſe to buſie my ſelfe about, but onely my imbarking.

I cannot tell you, how much *Favelo* joyed, nor expreſſe vnto you the great content he tooke, vvhen hee knew that he ſhould haue me along vvith him; wherevpõ, he made very good proviſion of divers delicacies to entertaine me withall, as if I had beene Admirall of the Galleys. I call'd my ſervant vnto me, and told him, what had paſt betwixt me and Captaine *Favelo*, and that it vvas now time to tucke vp our ſleeues to our elbowes, becauſe we had much to knead, and a great deale of dowe to mould, to make tarts: and therefore vvee muſt roundly ſet our ſelues to worke. I had ſcarce ended my diſcourſe vvith him, but that he vvas ready for joy to leape out of his skin, he was all a gogge vvith content, the tindar had now taken fire, the Deere was rouz'd, & he was ſet ſo hot on following the game, that there vvas no holding of him backe. Then preſently did we ſit in councell concerning the manner of the revenge, and hauing well adviſed with my ſelfe, I ſaid thus vnto him: The beſt, the profitableſt, and the leaſt dangerous to our ſelues, will conſiſt in matter of money. This is that which I deſire (ſaid *Sayavedra*) this chaſe will be better then fifteene, if we looke well to our play. Beſides, the wounds that are given vs on the bodie, are quickly cured; but thoſe that light vpon our purſe, are long a healing, and paine vs a great while after, if not all the dayes of our life.

Proverbe. *f* Arremangar los braços haſta los codos. *When a man ſets himſelfe roundly about a peece of buſineſſe.*

Goe to then (ſaid I) that we may fall the more handſomely to vvorke, the firſt thing that is to be done, is to buy foure trunkes, two of which thou ſhalt put in that part of the Galley, which *Favelo* ſhall appoint for them. And the other two, thou ſhalt fill with ſtones, and letting no man know vvhat there is in them, thou ſhalt cunningly and vn-eſpyde, ſecretly convey to my lodging, and put them in my chamber. Theſe ſtones ſhalt thou wrap vp cloſe in ſome old rags, that where-ſoever they be, or whither-ſoever they ſhall be carryed, and tumbled to and fro, they may not rattle, nor make any noyſe; charging him to haue a great care, that he leaue not any one empty place, but with ſome traſh or other, cramme them as cloſe as he can for his life. As alſo to ſee, that they be not heavier, then he, in his diſcretion, ſhall thinke it fitting, making each of them to weigh ſome ſix *arrobas* a peece, which vvill come to about a hundred and a halfe good vveight. I alſo acquainted him with every particular thing, that he vvas to doe, leauing him vvell informed vvith thoſe inſtructions that I had giuen him.

Guzman *goes about his plot that he had laid for the cozening of his kinſmen.*

When theſe wheeles were thus ſet a going, I got me to *Don Beltran's* houſe, that good old man, my Vnckle, & being in converſation with him, I began to fall into talke, how fearefull I vvas to goe abroad a-nights, in regard of the trunkes that I had in my lodging, two of them eſpecially being worth the looking to, for that they were full of plate, jewels of good value, & good ſtore of crownes, & (to ſay the truth) all the little wealth that I had. This is your owne fault, Coſen, ſaid he vnto me; and if any harme come vnto you, blame no bodie but your ſelfe. For my houſe might very vvell (had it pleas'd you to accept of it) haue excuſed both your lodging, and your feare. For albeit, that vvhere you are, be the beſt in all this Towne; yet haue you not any Inne, (though you ſhall travell all the world over) vvhere you ſhall finde that goodneſſe and that honeſtie, as to keepe any thing there in ſafety. You (Coſen) are but a young man, and know not the world as I doe; I am an old Lad, and haue a great deale of experience of theſe things, & therefore let me adviſe you, that you never truſt your trunkes, but with a ſure and ſtrong locke; and when you are journeying vpon the way, carry along with you in your pocket, or your port-manteau, ſome good pad-locke, to faſten to the ſtaple of the chamber doore, where you lodge. For either your Hoſte, or his wife, or his children, or his ſervants, haue two or three keyes to all the chambers, and you ſhall no ſooner turne your backe, but in the twinkling of an eye, you ſhall loſe all that you

What a Traveller muſt doe, when he comes to his Inne.

you left there within, and hardly recover it againe. And therefore be ſure, to make all ſure. For if you ſhall call mine Hoſte, or any of his in queſtion, and ſeeke to recover your owne by Law, they will anſwer to your ſute, and after a great deale of coſt & trouble, they will alleage for themſelues, that either you carried it away your ſelfe, or that you brought no ſuch thing thither, or at leaſt, that they knew of no ſuch thing, becauſe you had not, when you came in, conſigned it vnto them, and committed it to their charge; ſo that what was thine before, they will by this meanes make it their owne. Into an Inne, [g] bring nothing in; for it is no ſooner in, then loſt, vnleſſe you looke narrowly vnto it. But being a young Gallant, as you are, though it pleaſe you not, out of your *Iouiall* diſpoſition, and the loue to good company, to take this for your houſe, vvhich is moſt freely yours, yet could I wiſh you to fetch away your trunkes from thence, and to bring them hither, and not to leaue any more plate, or ſilver there, then what ſhall ſerue for your neceſſary vſe. For here in my *Eſcritorio*, all ſhall be kept ſafe for you, ſo that you ſhall not need to be afraid thereof, as long as it remaines here in my houſe. I thank't him as much, as if my trunkes had beene worth a Million, and ſo I thinke he did conceiue as much, or little leſſe. As well in regard that he had ſeene ſome of my veſſels of ſilver, as likewiſe my chaine, my gold, and other things, that I had brought thither vvith me: As alſo, for that I ſeem'd to be ſo deſirous to haue them ſecured in ſome place of ſafety.

Proverbe.
g En la poſada, no ay coſa poſada.

Of Marriage.

From this talke, we fell into diſcourſe touching my mariage: He telling me, that I was now of fit yeares for a wife, and that the longer I ſtaid without, if I had a purpoſe to ſettle my ſelfe and my eſtate, I did but loſe ſo much time; for that your elder mariages, vvere but a leauing of a mans children to be fatherleſſe, and to become poore miſerable Orphanes. And therefore, if I vvere not minded to be a Church-man, and to admit my ſelfe into ſome one religious Order or other, it were better for me to marry out of hand, as well in reſpect of mine owne comfort, as the husbanding of my eſtate. For ſervants, though they be never ſo faithfull, do not for the moſt part want conduit-pipes, to convey away thy wealth, ſcattering it abroad like vvater, vpon women, gaming, feaſting, exceſſe in apparell, and divers other things, who ſeeing themſelues neceſſited, and put to their ſhifts, to maintaine theſe their idle expences, rob their Maſters of all that they haue, and afterwards flie their Country. He laid before me the manifold inconveniences of a ſingle life, and on the necke of that, he comes vpon me, making a large relation vnto me of the good parts of this Gentle-woman, vvhom he wiſht me vnto. Who (as I vnderſtood) was his kinſwoman by the mother-ſide, and more nobly, then richly deſcended. But that defect was ſupplyed by her beauty. I ſhould haue had likewiſe with her, but *Ho-there*, (as I afterwards came to diſcover the myſterie) a young daughter, vvhich ſhee had by a miſchance, begotten on her by a young Citizen of *Genoa*, vvho had promiſed her mariage, but afterwards (cozening the poore wench) marryed vvith another. He told me beſides, that ſhee had a mother, that vvas a very wealthy woman, and one that would be a great ſtay and helpe vnto me, eſpecially in the government of my houſe, and the bringing vp of thoſe children, that God ſhould bleſſe me withall. And that I ſhould finde her no leſſe louing vnto mee, then if ſhee were mine owne naturall mother. I did ſet a good face on the matter, and ſeemed to like vvondrous well of all that vvhich hee had ſaid vnto mee; Telling him, that whatſoever came from him, could not but be good; and that his counſell ſhould be a guide to my actions, without farther conſultation from my ſelfe, as conveniencie ſhould offer it ſelfe. But that I might not loſe a certaine Benefice, that vvas beſtowed vpon mee, for the making ſure of that, I muſt neceſſarily reſigne it to a Coſen-Germane of mine, my mothers-ſiſters-ſonne, who liues in *Sevill*. I threw out this bayte vnto him, to nibble vpon, vvherewith

I entertain'd him for that time, hee ſeeming vvell contented vvith my faire anſwere.

Whileſt vvee vvere earneſtly talking of this buſineſſe, in comes *Sayavedra* vnto me, and rounding me in the eare, made ſhow as if he had deliver'd me a very long meſſage. I then (ſeeing my time, ſpeaking out aloud) ſaid vnto him; And what anſwer did you make him? And he anſwering me in the ſame key, replyde; What anſwere vvould you haue me make him Sir, but that it ſhould be done. Marry, beſhrew your fingers for it, (ſaid I) you did not well, in ſaying ſo. Doeſt not thou know, that I am not now in *Rome*, nor *Sevill*; doeſt thou not ſee how raſh and inconſiderate thou haſt beene in promiſing that for me, vvhich I cannot performe? Goe, carry him the great chaine, giue it him, and tell him, that this is all that I haue, and that I can doe no more then I can doe: Excuſe me vnto him, and ſignifie withall, that I haue ſtran'd my ſelfe as farre for him, as my abilitie can reach. You ſay vvell Sir (replyde *Sayavedra*) but how a Gods name, ſhall I be able to lugge along by my ſide ſuch a huge chaine as this, that weighs ſeven hundred Crownes in good gold? I thinke I had need hyre a porter to helpe mee. I preſently made anſwere; No more vvords; Doe as I bid you. Get you to ſome Gold-ſmiths ſhop or other, and take the chaine along vvith you, and make choyce of ſome Iewell there, or what you ſhall thinke fit will ſerue the turne, and leaue the chaine there, or ſome other pawne, which ſhall be worth more then vvhat you haue of him, and pay him intereſt for the lone of it: and this, I take it, vvill be the better courſe. And if the pawne fall out too ſhort, make it out in Crownes vnto him. So ſhalt thou diſ-ingage thy ſelfe of the folly, whereinto thou haſt runne: For I know no other remedy but this.

My Vnckle, who liſtned to all that I had ſaid; What pawnes (ſaid he) vvill you giue him, or for what? To whom I made anſwere; Sir, he that hath fooliſh ſervants, muſt whether he will or no incurre many inconveniences, falling ſtill into a hundred thouſand errours, and as many miſchiefes, and ſleepe-breaking cares. There is a Gentlewoman here of *Caſtile*, that is treating a marriage with a Gentleman of her owne Country, they are both well knowne vnto me, and of my eſpeciall acquaintance, and to whom I owe ſome beholdingneſſe. They haue requeſted me, that I would furniſh them with apparell and jewels for their wedding; vvhich is now ſo neere at hand, that I cannot giue them that ſatisfaction, that I vvould. You ſee Sir, what tree they truſt vnto, and vvhat ſhifts I am driuen to, to comply with them. And the griefe of it is, that this block-head my man, had not the wit to excuſe me, being he knew, how hardly I could doe them this kindneſſe. And I am halfe jealous, that he out of his owne kinde heart invited them therevnto, and vvithout making me privie vnto it, hath promiſed them my beſt furtherance. For it cannot ſinke into my head, that a vvoman of judgement, ſhould of her ſelfe requeſt ſuch a courteſie as this. And if it be his owne act, why ſhould not he make it good vvithout mee? But Sirrah (ſaid I to my man) ſeeing it is as it is, and it cannot now be otherwiſe, goe vvait vpon her, and doe as ſhee ſhall direct you.

The old man, ſeeing me ſo much moued, and that I ſeemed to be much offended with my man, for his indiſcretion, ſaid vnto me; Coſen, let not this trouble you, it is not a thing worth the ſpeaking of, and therefore let it not diſquiet you: you are come into a place, vvhere you cannot want friends for ſo ſmall a matter as this. I know that very well Sir, (ſaid I) and that my noble kinſmen here, will doe me any friendly office that lies in their power, & that as long as they haue it, I cannot lacke. But becauſe amongſt all our kindred, I know not any of thoſe that are married, that can furniſh me with ſuch things as ſhee requireth for this ſolemnity, I dare not intreat them in a matter ſo troubleſome as this cannot chooſe but be vnto them. And yet on the other ſide, being ſo earneſtly requeſted to ſupply this Gentle-womans occaſions, the

very demanding of ſuch a courteſie, is a kinde of commanding of it, and obligeth me (as I am a Gentleman) to make the beſt ſhift I can for her, and to trie all my friends, rather then faile her now at her need. And yet I know vvell enough, that Iewels are not every where to be met withall, which in publike aſſemblies, and ſuch ſolemne acts, as theſe are, can ſhew their faces vvithout bluſhing. Coſen (ſaid he) no more, it is enough; breake not your ſleepe for this, nor take you any farther care; For I, for my part, and other your kinſmen, on theirs, will trie amongſt vs, vvhat we can doe, and doubt not but vvee ſhall fit her in that reaſonable and conuenient manner, as ſhall ſerue her turne, and ſaue your credit. Nay (Coſen) I vvill not haue you ſit out for a little, if I can helpe it. And as for your Trunkes, you may ſend them hither when you pleaſe. I kiſt his hands for this his double kindneſſe, returning him both for the one and the other, ſuch condigne thankes, as either my wit could invent, or my words expreſſe, acknowledging the great and extraordinary favour that herein he ſhould doe me: and ſo taking my leaue of him, as ſoone as ever I came home to my lodging, I tooke order, that the Trunkes, (each of them having three keyes a peece, being vvell and ſurely-lockt, and ſtrongly plated vvith yron,) ſhould out of hand be carried thither without any more adoe.

My Vnckle, when he ſaw *Sayavedra* enter his houſe, and the Porters at the heeles of him, ſo heavy laden, that they were ſcarce able to creepe along vvith them, hauing well conſidered the ſtrength of the locks and barres about them, and the diſtruſt that I had of mine Hoaſt, together with the weight and heaft of them, he did certainly aſſure himſelf, that they were full of treaſure. Whereupon he asked *Sayavedra* what vvas within thoſe Trunkes, that they weighed ſo heavy? Wherevnto he anſwered; Sir, though my maſter hath many things in them of great value, yet that which is vvorth more then all the reſt, is a parcell of ſtones, which he hath gathered together from all parts of *Italy*, the choiſeſt hee could light vpon, whereſoever he came, but for vvhom they are, or whither hee will carry them, I know not. The old man arched vp his eyebrowes, and wiped his eyes, wondring to ſee ſuch great ſtore of wealth & putting them with his owne hands in ſafe cuſtody, vnder the keeping (as they ſay) of ſeven keyes, the Trunkes remained with him, and *Sayavedra* returned home. And there (like Pigeons, when they court and woo one another, & haue done billing, and murmured out their amorous paſſions) we two loving companions fell likewiſe a crookling, and gathering ſtraw, for to build our neſt. We ſpent all that night in deviſing new plots, & in plotting new devices, how we might fetch off another kinſman of mine, that was young, rich, & of great credit amongſt them, reſoluing to goe home to his houſe, and there to pitch another net for him, to the end that vvhilſt others ſhould complaine of the harme I had done them, he ſhould not ſtand by and laugh, whilſt others wept, and applaud his vvit, that he eſcaped my fingers. And therefore I vvas minded to inveſt him likewiſe with this new order of a ſecond S^t *Iago*. And ſo I did: For the Sunne vvas ſcarce vp, and got out of his bed, when *Sayavedra* taking vvith him the two chaines, in thoſe two boxes that vvere ſo like one another, gilded equally on every ſide, neatly cloſed vvith your Dutch claſpes, with alike viſes, or ſprings, that would ſhut of themſelues, bearing them cloſely vnder his cloake, home we came vnto him; where we found him newly vp, & making himſelfe ready. But not thinking that a fit time, I vvas willing to haue defer'd my ſeeing of him, till after dinner. But when it vvas told him that I was there, he tooke it ill, & ſeemed ſomewhat aſhamed withall, accuſing me of ſtrangeneſſe, that I would be ſo dainty with him, as to make ſcruple of comming vp vnto him, as ſoone as I came within the houſe. I told him, I did not doe it out of any niceneſſe, but that I vvas loath to diſquiet him, for that I vnderſtood he vvas taking his reſt. With theſe, and the like complements, vve paſt the time a while, queſtioning each other of our healths, and diſcourſing of ſome things (vvhilſt

Proverbe. Debaxo de ſiete llaues: i. à muy buen cobro.

Another plot of Guzmans.

(whileſt he was dreſſing and fitting his cloathes) about the Cittie. at laſt he brought me downe into a cloſet, or pretty little counting-houſe, that hee had beneath ſtayres, and ſitting downe, after a ſhort pauſing, he demanded of me, what wind had blowne me thither ſo early? Sir (ſaid I) none, ſaue onely that I may giue a good morrow to the day, to the end, that it may thriue the better with me: For the night hath not beene my friend.

The buſineſſe Sir, that I come vnto you about, is to intreat you, that if you haue any ſervant of yours in the houſe, that is an honeſt diſcreet fellow, that you would be pleaſed to call him hither. Which I had no ſooner ſaid, but hee preſently rings me a bell, the ſound whereof was no ſooner heard, but two or three came haſtily running in. And having beckned to one amongſt the reſt, to come vnto him; he ſaid vnto him; here is my ſervant *Steffanello*, who ſhall doe what-ſoever you ſhall be pleaſed to command him. That then (quoth I) which I ſhall intreat at his hands, is, That he will take the paines, to goe along with my ſervant *Sayavedra* to ſome Gold-ſmith, to take the aloy; weight, and value of a chaine that I haue here. *Sayavedra* thereupon preſently delivered me the little boxe, wherein was that which I had cauſed to be made of pure gold; and taking it out, I ſhew'd it vnto him; my kinſman was much pleaſed with the ſight thereof, and was never weary with looking vpon it, ſo handſome a one it was, ſo beautifull, ſo maſſie, and of that extraordinary curious workmanſhip. Inſomuch, that it ſeemed vnto him, that he had never ſeene the like; for it was all of dainty delicate fine linkes, ſmoothly polliſhed, without any ſtones or inammelling at all. When he had taken his fill in viewing of it, I return'd it backe againe to my ſervant, and they two went together to diſpatch this buſineſſe, whilſt we in the meane while continued talking ſometimes of one thing, ſometimes another, the better to paſſe the time. A little while after, they both came backe againe, bringing with them a little ſcrole of paper, with the Gold-ſmiths hand to it, wherein it was there ſet downe, That the chaine of gold, was in fineneſſe two and twenty Carats, and that it was (according to its weight) worth ſixe hundred and three and fifty Spaniſh Crownes, and ſomewhat more. Then I called to *Sayavedra*, and willed him to giue it mee, who delivered mee the counterfeite one, firſt opening the boxe wherein it lay, where once more taking it forth, we fell afreſh to looking vpon it. And putting it anon after into its boxe, which I ſtill kept open, I ſaid vnto him; Sir, that which I am farther to intreat at your hand, is that which followes; Some few nights ſince, I haue beene bitten at play by ſome Gentlemen of this Citie, but they themſelues worſe; for that I haue gotten of them a matter of fiue thouſand Royals: they haue challenged me to play greater game, and I am very willing to follow my good fortune, while it laſts, and to make triall of my good lucke; and it may be, that I may venture little and get much. But becauſe all kind of gaming doth wholly in manner conſiſt in the handſome carriage of the buſineſſe, and that we that are gameſters, may as well loſe as winne, I would not finde my ſelfe ſo limited and ſtinted in play, that if I ſhould chance to loſe, and runne out of my moneys, that I ſhould not be able to come againe vpon them with freſh ſupplies, to recover what I loſt, and (if lucke ſerue) to get vpon them. And albeit (I thanke God) I lacke no money, having at home in my Vnkles houſe ſome fiue thouſand Crownes, yet I may not meddle with them, for as ſoone as certaine Letters ſhall come hither to my hands, which I daily expect from *Sevill*, I cannot, no not for an houre, prolong either their payment or mine owne departure to *Rome*, for the ſetling of a good Benefice either vpon my ſelfe, or a Cozen-germane of mine, as it ſhall ſtand beſt with my Vnkles liking, ſubmitting my ſelfe to his direction, who may diſpoſe of me as he in his diſcretion ſhall thinke fit; ſo that it is neither juſt nor convenient, that I ſhould once breake, or ſuffer but to touch that ſumme, leſt I might then want it, when I had moſt occaſion to vſe it; which I may ſo much the rather for-

forbeare to doe, becauſe (if need bee) I can make vſe of my Iewels, and my Plate,, which like a dead commodity lie by mee, and are good for nothing, but to lay to pawne at a dead lift; and yet for all this, vnleſſe ſome vrgent occaſion, or extreame want ſhould force mee therevnto, I ſhould be very loath to part with them, much leſſe to put them away to loſſe, as many too often doe. You haue here this chaine, you haue ſeene and view'd it, and you know what it is worth, all that I ſhall now deſire of you, is that with all ſecreſie (for I would not willingly incurre the cenſure of an vnthrift, nor if men ſhould talke of it, be forced to giue them an account of ſuch trifling toyes as theſe) you would be pleaſed to furniſh mee with ſix hundred Crownes vpon this chaine, paying intereſt for that ſhort tearme that I ſhall vſe them; aſſuring your ſelfe, that whether I winne or loſe, you ſhall not faile to be paid at your due time. Wherein, if I ſhould chance to faile you, you may pay your ſelfe out of the chaine, for which end I ſhall leaue it with you, that howſoever the world goe, you may be a gainer, though I a loſer. I likewiſe told him, how vpon the like occaſion I had once pawned a certaine peece of new plate, richly gilt, but he that had it of mee, had vſ'd it in that ill manner, that when he returned it vnto me, it was not fit to be ſerued in at any honeſt mans boord, ſo that I was forced to ſell it, hauing not one penny allowed me for the faſhion. And therefore for the auoiding of ſuch another loſſe, I intreated him to doe me the favour, that the chaine might remaine ſtill in his owne hands, without being poſted over from one to another.

Hee made ſhow that hee did not take it halfe well at my hands, that for ſo ſmall a courteſie as this, I ſhould offer them a pawne. But I clapping downe the couer of the boxe, ſhut it ſodainly too, and ſo conſign'd it ouer vnto him, forcing it into his hand; vowing and proteſting, that I would by no meanes receiue this kindneſſe frow him, if he refuſed to accept of the chaine. For, beſides that I did not vſe to weare it oft, becauſe it was too maſſie and heavie for mee, he ſhould do me a courteſie to keepe it for mee; for as long as it was with him, I vvas ſure it would be both ſafe & well vſed. Adding further withall, That being that we are all mortall, and that many things might occurre vnto me, being a ſtranger, it was fit and conuenient, that hee ſhould therein ſatisfie my deſire. Vpon theſe words, and the earneſt inſtance that I made with him, hee accepted of it in the end, and promiſed me, that the firſt thing that he would doe, ſhould (as ſoone as hee put his foote out of doores) be his procuring of theſe moneys for me: vvherein he vvas as good as his word. For the very ſame day, vvhileſt I was ſitting at dinner, in comes *Steffanello* with the ſixe hundred Crownes. I thankt him for his paines, and intreated him to recommend my ſeruice to his Maſter; he ſtaid not with me ſcarce a *Pater-noſter* while, and was but euen new gone, but preſently in comes his maſter, and makes directly towards my lodging. Which ſodaine approach of his did ſo trouble me, that I had not one drop of blood in all my whole body, nor could the beſt Barber of them all, haue found any ſuch thing in my veines. Here I loſt my ſtirrops, and knew not what to doe. For hauing but then, euen newly then receiued the Crownes, and the maſter following ſo cloſe at the ſervants heeles, I did vndoubtedly beleeue that they had opened the boxe, and had found out the falſe chaine, and that he had made this haſte, to hinder his man from delivering the money vnto me. But this doubt was ſoone reſolued, and I was quickly rid of this feare, for he came towards me with a chearfull countenance, making many offers of his loue and ſervice vnto mee, and that if I had occaſion to vſe him in any thing elſe, I would be pleaſed to command him; for whatſoeuer hee had, it was wholly at my deuotion: And that theſe moneys hee had borrowed of a friend of his vpon intereſt, but that it would come to a matter of nothing in the reckning. Then ſaid I to my ſelfe, (conſidering more the future, then the time preſent) I beleeue this nothing will be ſomething to you in the end; and how

light

light you make of it, will light heavilier vpon you, then you are aware. But burying my thoughts within my owne bosome, I told him that was not much materiall, for the pawne vvas worth more then the vse of the money could come to.

But he had not long staid a talking with mee, vvhen loe, vvhilest hee vvas there with me, my Gentlemen gamesters enter the roome, and calling to *Sayavedra* for cards, there was a well ordered battaile begun between vs. My kinsman perceiuing wee meant to fight it out, and to set close to it, tooke his leaue, and went his way. I was so safely intrencht in my moneys, hauing *Sayavedra* then in my favour (for being vpon our departure, it was no time now to stand with our hands vnder our girdle, nor to gather flowers, but to reape the fruits of our labours, and to hoyse sayle, and away) I sallyed safely out vpon them, beating them so shamefully, that I put them to flight, leauing behinde as a prey vnto mee about fifteene thousand Royalls in good gold. I gaue *barato* to those that were present, and to the Captaine who came thither anon after this field was fought, I closely clapt fifty Crownes in his fiste, which was all one, as if vvith them I had bought mee a slaue, and purchased mee such a servant as should sticke to me vpon all occasions.

This quarrell being ended, and the Gamesters gone, my Captaine tooke me aside, and wee two being all alone, hee advised mee that on Sunday night following, being some foure dayes hence, the Galleys were to depart. Whereupon seing my selfe thus straitned by time, I began to strike vp my drumme, to muster my forces together, and sending abroad my tickets, this way, and that way, first to one party, & then to another, advertising my friends, that the wedding was to be solemnized the Munday following, and that they would be pleased to make me beholding vnto them for their promised favour. The Ants doe not come so laden with corne in August, which they gather abroad in the fields, and bring home into their granaries, as they came tumbling into my lodging with jewels, every one striuing, who should send me the most, & the best. Which in a word, were so many and so rich, that I was even almost ashamed to receiue them. But I set a good face on the matter, because me thought they were not deare. My Vnckle sent me in a Collar to grace the Brides shoulders, and a girdle sutable vnto it, and a feather to adorne her head-dressing, vvhich being all of gold, and set thicke with pearles, and pretious stones, the three peeces were valued at more then three thousand Crownes. The rest did furnish mee with rich brooches, buttons, bodkins, bracelets, pendents, eare-rings, tablets, carcanets, vailes, coyfes, and rings, all very curious, rich, and of great value. All which things, as fast as they came in, the Captaine vnwitting thereof, I clapt vp closely within my trunks, which stood in a by-corner out of sight. The next three dayes that were left me, I spent in visitting my kindred, thanking them for the vndeserued grace and favour they had done mee.

When Sunday was come, knowing that the Galleys were to weigh anchor a Munday morning betimes, and to put fort to Sea, I said to mine Hoste: Mine Hoste, I shall be abroad this night at play, at a friends house, where some Gentlemen haue appointed to meet, and if peradventure it shall be somewhat late before wee giue over play, I thinke I shall not onely sup, but lye there too if we chance to breake of before it be day. And therefore (good mine Hoste) haue a care to the chamber, till we returne, though it may be, I shall send *Sayavedra* home vnto you. And so hauing the night to friend, I went out of my Inne, leauing mine host two trunkes to pay for my dyet, and my lodging, during the time I stayed in *Genoa*. True it is that by reason of the great haste we had to be gone, I left them both full, but of fine little pibbles that I had caused to be fetcht from the Sea-side; being in show not much vnlike to your craggy Christall of the mountaine, which did weigh some twenty pound weight a peece.

All

All things being done and diſpatcht as I would haue it, I went aboord the Galley, and cabbin'd with my friend Captaine *Favelo*. I want words to expreſſe vnto you, the great entertainment, the Captaine (that night I came out of *Genoa*) made mee the coſtly ſupper that he had prouided for me, and what a good bed I lay in. He demanded of me, how I had ſped in my buſineſſe. I told him, to mine owne good contentment and ſatisfaction; and that hereafter, I ſhould giue him a more particular account thereof. With this anſwer he reſted ſatisfied, and queſtioned me no farther about it. Wee ſup, wee ſleepe, But I for my part not very quietly, for though I came cleare off, and had not any the leaſt rub, but things ranne as fairely and ſmoothly, as in ſuch a caſe I could haue wiſht it, yet I had a little thing within, that checkt mee, and told mee in mine eare, that I had not done well, which did much trouble mee for the time. I paſt ouer that night, as well as I could; and when the Sunne was vp, hauing not all this while perceiued the Galley ſo much as to wagge, nor hearing any beating of the oares, nor any the leaſt noyſe in the world, as if I had beene in the greateſt ſolitude that the minde of man could imagine; being now fully awakened, and going about to put on my cloathes; my Captaine comes into my Cabbin, and tells mee, that vve had doubled the Cape of *Noli*. So farre vvee had as faire a winde, and as fine weather, as heart could wiſh, but it did not ſtill continue thus favourable vnto vs, but much contrary, and full in the teeth of vs, as you ſhall heare hereafter. For *Fortune* is not alwaies proſperous; but with the Moone, hath her Creſcents, and her Waynings, and by how much the more pleaſing are her ſmiles, by ſo much the more ſowre are her frowns, when ſhe changes the copie of her countenance. Onely I had a deſire, vvhileſt vvee were making our voyage, to know what mine Hoſt thought on, when hee ſaw I returned not the firſt night to my lodging. And what the ſecond, when the reſt could heare no newes of me, thinking with my ſelfe, what lamentation they would make for me. How many cold ſhaking fits of an Ague they vvould haue, for want of a warme blanket, how many coverlets would they caſt vpon them, yet giue none to the Hoſpitall; what diligent ſearch they would make after mee; what ſeverall conjectures, what ſhould become of mee; diſputing with themſelues, whether ſome body had not murther'd mee, to make themſelues maſters of my wealth; or whether I had beene wounded in ſome quarrell. But I imagined with my ſelfe, that they conceiued, and they were in the right) that I was gone along with the Galleys. And then being cleane out of hope of any humane remedy, I began to thinke with my ſelfe, how ſhrewdly the fleas would trouble them for many a faire night after.

Guzman *leaues* Genoa, *and carries away with him his kinſmans goods.*

Now did I begin to conſider, what haſte they made to vnrip my trunkes, that they might by them ſaue themſelues harmeleſſe, every one firſt alleaging the *antelation* of time, and priority of his debt, and ſo by the ordinary courſe of Law in thoſe parts, pretend as he was the firſt Creditor, that he might be firſt paid. Mee thought I did likewiſe ſee, how mine Hoſte did hugg himſelfe, how he did laugh and chucke for joy, to thinke how rich I had left him, by leauing him theſe two trunkes, which being valued according to their weight, might very vvell haue contented him, for a farre longer and larger allowance, then I could poſſible ſpend in ſo ſhort a time. But the vvorth did not anſwere the vveight: For there was nothing in them, but ſtones, which if hee vvere minded to hang himſelfe, might ſerue for the ſepulchre. And vvhat ſay you to my old Vnckle, do not you thinke that he vvas vvell prouided for, with thoſe pretious ſtones, vvhich *Sayavedra* acquainted him withall? But that other kinſmen of mine, vvho vvent away with the chaine, who doubts it, but that hee did laugh in his ſleeue at the reſt of his fellowes, when hee ſaw he had ſuch a ſure pawne in his hands, all pure linkes of gold, that hee might very well pay both the Principall, and the Intereſt. But when he found it was not Gold, but Alchymie, light and falſe Latten, being no better (taking away its guilding, and faſhion) then

Guzmans *conceit of his kinſmen in* Genoa.

then baſe braſſe, courſe copper, or ſuch mettall as you make your candleſticks, what man can imagine, what ſtrange mouthes and faces he made? How hee hang'd downe dis head, fixing his eyes on the ground, then lifting it vp againe, turne vp the white of the eyes towards heaven, not out of any deſire that hee had to bleſſe him, that had made him to ſhine and glitter thus gloriouſly, but to curſe my mothers wombe, for bringing forth ſuch a *Picaro*, ſuch a baſe raſcall, and arrant theefe as I was. In this pickle I left them, and ſo wee parted. A man might then haue ſaid that of them, which one blinde man ſaid to another in *Toledo*, who being to part company, and to go each to his owne houſe, when they tooke their leaues, ſaid each to other; Good night (Goſſip) till wee ſee one another againe.

CHAP. X.

Guzman de Alfarache *ſayling towards* Spaine, Sayavedra *by reaſon of a great ſtorme, growes Sea-ſicke. He falls into a Calenture, or burning feauer. He waxes light-headed, and loſeth his wits. He cryes out that he is* Guzman de Alfarache, *and growing mad, throwes himſelfe into the Sea, where he is drowned.*

WE had ſuch faire weather when we ſet forth of *Genoa*, that the Tueſday following, by Sunne-riſing, wee had (as I told you before) doubled the Cape of *Nolis*. And till wee came to the [a] *Pomas de Marſella*, wee had as fauourable and proſperous a winde, as wee could wiſh. There did we expect that the winde ſhould ſtill blow faire, having all this while ſhow'd it ſelfe ſo friendly and louing vnto vs. For wee had a freſh gale from the Eaſt, which holpe vs ſo well, that the next day towards the Euening, we diſcouered, to our generall joy, the coaſt of *Spaine*. But fortune, hauing not the ſtrength to ſtand firme, nor being alwaies one and the ſame; but weake and various, began to manifeſt vnto vs the ſmall confidence that we ought to haue of her; whereof, too ſoone to our great hurt, wee had ſufficient tryall. And now hearing the Mariners call one to another in thoſe termes and language, which is vſuall with them in ſuch caſes, Heaven was couered all ouer towards the North-weſt, with darke and thicke clouds, vvhich guttered downe vpon vs huge and great drops of raine. Our good winde had bid vs farewell, and our hearts began to be ſo ſad, and ſo heavy, as if all that ſame darkſome blackneſſe had quite over-paſt them, ſuch a cloud of ſorrow, had like a curtaine, ever-ſpred thoſe late lightſome faculties of our ſoules. Which being foreſeene by the Pilots, and thoſe other watry-Counſellors at Seas, they held a Counſell in the poope, debating to and fro, what courſe was fitteſt to be taken, to prevent ſuch fearefull threatnings. Every one ſpake his opinion, delivering what hee in his judgement deemed beſt to be done. But ſeeing the winde begin to lay luſtily about him, beating his brazen wings againſt our woodden ſides, and his forces increaſing more & more, without any other reſolution, before their conſultation could come to a concluſion, they were inſtantly, without any more adoe, inforced to let fall their maine ſaile, which when they had ruffled, and laid as low as the decke would giue them leaue, they tooke another leſſer one, which they call *Marabuto*, (as they doe the other, *la Borda*) which is a kinde of triangulary ſayle, cut out into three corners, after the manner of a womans kerchiefe; (This they call *la Latina*) and this they ſet vp about the middle of the maſt, which ſtood at the end of the laſt banke of oares, fitting themſelues afterwards with thoſe other things, that were needfull on ſuch an occaſion. They faſtned their oares to the vpper deck: The paſſengers, and their ſouldiers, they commanded (ſore againſt

[a] *The word poma, is vſed for a womans paps or dugs, and by way of ſimilitude may be taken for ſome Promontory ſetting out into the Sea, reſembling the forme and faſhion of a womans breſts. If I miſſe of my ayme, I leaue it to thoſe that haue beene in thoſe parts to determine the true ſignification thereof.*

againſt their wils)to keepe themſelues vnder hatches: They fell a caulking of the Galley,from the prowe to the poope,nor were they wanting in any one of thoſe diligences,that were neceſſarie for the ſauing of our liues.

Whileſt they were thus buſie,the night grew on,and a pitchy darkneſſe had (like a pauillion)pitched it ſelfe round about vs, all was clouds, Ægyptian clouds,blacke and darke as Hell; ſo that having loſt the comfort of the light, wee loſt likewiſe with it all hope of ſafety, eſpecially when wee ſaw that the ſtorme was no whit alayd, but rather more and more increaſed vpon vs. Wherefore for the better avoiding of ſo many dangers, whereinto by reaſon of this tempeſt, they were like to runne, they gaue preſent order to hang out the lanterne that they might the better ſee what they did. The Sea, now began to ſwell, and lifted one while its waues as high as heauen, and by and by againe,abaſing that their pride,they tumbled downe ſo low, that they opened the boſome of the Sea ſo wide, that you might ſee the ſand that lay in the bottome. They were faine to appoint another to aſſiſt at the helme, that vvas an expert Pilot indeed, and knew how to guide the Rudder to a haire. The Maſters-mate they cauſed to be tyde faſt in a chaire to the poſt neere vnto the poope, as being reſolued either to dye in that place vvithout remouing from thence,or to keepe the Galley aliue,and ſet her in ſafety.

Whileſt this skilfull Marriner was labouring to put this his deliberation in execution, wee often demanded of him, if wee were in any great danger;and much more often then they were willing to heare. See how blind ſighted vvee were, that we would rather giue credit to that which had proceeded from his mouth,then that which wee ſaw with our owne eyes, which repreſented nothing but death vnto vs. But his lying tongue, ſeemed to afford vs like comfort, as doth that of the Phyſitian to the ſorrowfull and afflicted father, who queſtions him touching the health, and life of his ſonne, and whether hee be likely to dye of this diſeaſe,or whether hee be dead already: Who tells him, That(God be thanked hee is on the mending hand. In like manner,the Maſters-mate,making anſwere vnto vs,for to cheere vs vp, and to put vs in heart would bawle out aloud vnto vs, *Que todo era nada*. Tuſh all this was nothing. And therefore be of good comfort (my Hearts.) And indeed in telling vs ſo,hee told vs but the truth. For all this was nothing,to that which came after. For the winde had torne our ſayles to fitters, there was not one whole peece, all was rents and rags,and it grew higher and higher ſtill, ſo that we were forced to clap on our *Treo*, which is a kinde of round ſayle, which they make vſe of in ſtormes. Fortunes hand did not yet grow weary with whipping vs;but as if ſhee had not puniſht vs ſufficiently already, it was our hap to haue an ill guided Galley to fall foule vpon vs, which ſtriking vs with her prowe on the poope, made her ducke her head into the Sea, and had well-nigh overturn'd her; and to make this encounter the more vnlucky, the blow, and the loſſe of our Rudder(whereon did hepend the hope of our ſafety) hapned both at one and the ſame inſtant. Wherefore ſeeing our ſelues now bepriued both of our hope, and helme, wanting a Rudder wherewith to ſteare, yeelding our ſelues to the mercy of the Seas, as men deſpairing of any remedy to repaire this loſſe, yet that they might not deſiſt to vſe all the meanes they could, vvhich, they thought might make beſt for our good, (making a vertue of neceſſitie) they made as good ſhift as they could, by clapping a couple of oares in the place,guiding therewith the Galley (beſides the danger)with a great deale of toyle, and labour.

And how ſhall I be able here to expreſſe but the halfe, nay the leaſt part of that vnto you,which theſe eyes ſaw ,and theſe eares heard? I doe not know the tongue that can ſpeake it. But ſay I ſhould light on ſuch a tongue: yet,I am ſure,I ſhall hardly meete with thoſe men that will beleeue it. O,how many vowes did they then make! How many invocations to Saints,every one calling

calling on that, vvhich vvas the greateſt and famouſeſt in his owne Countrey? What various devotions, vvhat a generall recourſe to their prayers? And ſome were ſo childiſh and ſo fooliſh, that you ſhould heare no other word come from them, but, O my mother, ô ſweet mother! How many abuſes, and how many abſurdities, vvere committed among them! Confeſſing themſelues one to another, as if they could bee their ghoſtly fathers, and had power to abſolue them. Others in a loud voyce made confeſſion of thoſe ſinnes vnto God, wherein they had offended him; and as if they thought that God vvere deafe and thicke of hearing, they vvould ſtretch out their throats as high as heaven, perſwading themſelues perhaps, by the force of this their breath, to ſend their ſoules packing in that very inſtant vp vnto heaven.

In this deſperate and wofull manner, did our poore weather-beaten Galley endure this miſery, together with thoſe that were in her, till the next day following, vvhen as vvith the brightneſſe of the Sunne, and the clearing of the skie, vve began to recover breath, ſo that now all was joy, and our ſorrow was turned into mirth, cheering, and hartning vpon one another. Certainly, it cannot bee denyed, That of all thoſe dangers, that attend vpon death, that is alwayes moſt feared, vvhich is ſtill neereſt vnto her. For from thoſe other, vve thinke we may well ſcape. But I did not ſo much feare this ſtorme, nor ſo ſenſibly apprehend the danger thereof, as I ſtood in feare by a contrary winde, and the new rigging vp of our Galley, to be carryed backe againe to *Genoa*. It was not the Sea, but the ſhame, that wrought vpon me. This was it, that made me to ſay to my ſelfe, when I ſaw how the winds blew, and the Seas raged, that all the reſt did fare the worſe for my ſake, and that I was that *Ionas*, for whom this tempeſt was rais'd, that it might raiſe me vp to repentance.

Sayavedra became ſo Sea-ſicke, that he fell into a ſhrewd burning fever, and ſhortly after grew beſides himſelfe. It would haue grieved a mans heart, and moved much compaſſion, to ſee the things that he did, and the fooleries which he vttered; and ſometimes, vvhen the ſtorme vvas greateſt, and the danger moſt, vvhile others vvere confeſſing their ſinnes, he vvould cry out in a loud voyce; I am *Guzman de Alfaraches* ghoſt; I am that ghoſt of his, which goes thus vvandring vp and downe the vvorld; vvhereat hee made me often both laugh, and feare. But though hee ſhould haue vented ſome thing vnhappily, they all ſaw that he was mad, and ſo regarded not what he ſaid. Yet for all this, he would not leaue his talking, but by flaſhes would fall a ripping vp of my life, and bolte out by fits, all that which I had formerly recounted vnto him concerning the courſes I had taken, compoſing a thouſand extravagancies. And if by chance he heard any man talke of promiſing to performe a pilgrimage to *Monſerrate*, thither would he leade me; telling, at what ſtations, and weddings he had beene there with me. He did dreſſe me (like a French Cooke) a thouſand ſeverall wayes. But that vvhich vvas moſt to be laughed at, (though it much pittied me to ſee him in that ſtate) and vvherein I tooke much pleaſure, vvas; That hee ſpake all theſe things of himſelfe, as if hee had beene true *Guzman* indeed.

Sayavedra *falls ſicke of a fever, and runs mad.*

In briefe, vve being all ſhrewdly beaten, and growne extreame vveary vvith our late ſtorme, the night following we went in a good houre to take our reſt, to ſee if vve could recover that old debt of our former loſt ſleepe. We vvere all of vs ſo vveary, and ſo drowſie, and our Galley ſo battered, and torne about the poope, that *Sayavedra* riſing vp in his franticke fit, lept at that open place where our rudder was ſplit from vs, into the Sea, on whom we could never after ſet eye; though the Mariner that kept watch, as ſoone as he heard the flownce of the fall, preſently cryde out, *Hombre a la mar*; There is ſome bodie fallen into the vvater. Wherevpon vve began preſently to conjecture, that it muſt needs be he; and vpon inquiry finding him vvanting, vve ſought to recover him, but it would not be. And ſo poore *Sayavedra* was buried in the Sea; all

Sayavedra *drownes himſelfe.*

of them much lamenting his misfortune, and ſeeking all that they could, to comfort me. I made ſhow, as if I had beene exceeding ſorry for him, but God he knowes how true it was. The next day I got me vp betimes in the morning, which I wholly ſpent in receiving the condolings, which they made vnto me, which were done in that dolefull faſhion, as if he had beene a brother, a kinſman, or the neereſt and deareſt friend that I had in the world, bewayling the great loſſe that I had ſuſtained in him; or as if, when he threw himſelfe into the Sea, he had carryed away my trunkes likewiſe with him. God bleſſe me from that miſchance (ſaid I to my ſelfe) as for any other misfortune, I doubt not but I ſhall very eaſily over-paſſe it. They knew not how (more then this) to comfort me, nor what they ſhould entertaine me withall to diuert my griefe; for they did verily beleeue, that I was wonderfull ſorry for him, becauſe I had put on a ſeeming heavineſſe. And the more they ſought to bring me out of it, the more I feigned to bee in it; at laſt they called to one that had beene condemned to the Galleys, who was very ſtudious, and a great lover of curioſities, that he ſhould come where I was, and bring a certaine booke along with him, which he had written with his owne hand, which the Captaine taking from him, and turning ouer the leaues in a careleſſe kinde of faſhion, he lighted by chance vpon a notable ſtorie which hapned in *Sevill*; and returning backe the booke to the owner, he will'd him to reade it vnto me. He therevpon required their attention; which being granted vnto him, hee began to read as followeth; recommending it firſt vnto them, as well for its ſtrangeneſſe, as its truth.

A true and ſtrange ſtorie of a Merchant in Sevill.

There was in *Sevill* (the famouſeſt Citie in all *Spaine*, and the Metropolis of *Andaluzia*) a Merchant that was a ſtranger, well borne, rich, and honeſt, whoſe name was *Miçer Iacobo*. He had two ſons, and one daughter by a noble Gentlewoman of that Citie. They being carefully trayned vp in vertue, in good manners, and in all kinde of learning appertaining to the liberall Arts: And ſhee bred vp to her needle, wherein for curious workmanſhip, ſhee did excell, (all the Gentlewomen in thoſe parts, being meere bunglers vnto her.) And there was ſome reaſon, why ſhe ſhould be ſo exquiſite, and ſingular therein, for that from her childhood, ſhee had beene bred vp in a Monaſterie of Nunnes, by reaſon that her mother dyde in child-bed, when ſhe was borne.

Now in regard that the goods of fortune, are mutable and vncertaine, and more in Merchants then other men, who carry their wealth in other mens purſes, and commit their eſtates to the diſpoſition of the winde and the weather, there being not halfe a foot difference betwixt their making and their marring, their inriching or vndoing. It ſo fell out, that his two ſonnes returning home from the *Indies*, and bringing along with them good ſtore of gold and ſilver, when they were now come within ſight of the barre of *San Lucar*, and thinking them-ſelues as ſafe, as if they had beene (as they ſay) within the doores of their owne houſe, there ariſes a huge ſtorme on the ſodaine, and the Sea inraged with the boyſterous bluſtrings of the windes, begins to ſwell, and looke big vpon them with its billowes; inſomuch, that this poore vnfortunate ſhip, ſet vpon by two ſuch fierce and cruell enemies, was miſerably toſſed to and fro; and ſo violently carried out of its courſe, that at laſt vnable any longer to reſiſt the rage of this terrible tempeſt, ſhee deſperately ranne her ſelfe vpon a rocke, the terribleneſſe of which blow, did not only open her wombe, and cleaue it cleane in the midſt, but did ſplit all the ribs of her in a thouſand peeces; ſo that both men and goods were all caſt away, and vtterly loſt, and never after either ſeene, or heard of.

When the heavy newes of ſo great a loſſe (whoſe nimbleneſſe lyes onely in its wing) came flying to the fathers eares, ſuch a deepe melancholy ſodainely ſeazed on all his vitall parts, that with the griefe thereof, within a few dayes after, he alſo dyed. His daughter that remained in the Covent, having loſt all her wealth, her father, her mother, & both her brothers, remaining thus abandoned,

doned, and left to ſhift for her ſelfe, was wonderfully ſenſible of this her wofull eſtate (which might likewiſe haue much troubled any man whatſoeuer, though never ſo wiſe) vvhen ſhe ſaw, that in ſo ſhort a time, which might in a manner runne in the reckoning (as it were) of one day, ſhe had loſt ſo many reall comforts, and with them, that hope of remedie to allay her miſeries, (for ſhee much deſired to become a Nunne) ſhe wept ſo bitterly, and tooke on ſo pittifully, that it would haue grieved any mans heart, to ſee the ſorrowfull lamentation that ſhe made. Here ceaſed her deſignes, and here began her ſorrowes; Here ceaſed her plenty, and here began her want; Here ceaſed her [b] *regalos*, and here began her troubles. Which went daily ſo increaſing vpon her, that ſhee knew not in the world what to doe, nor how to be able to maintaine herſelfe in the Nunnerie. And albeit all the Nunnes there wiſht her exceeding well, and bare her great loue and affection for the nobleneſſe of her condition and qualitie, her affabilitie, civilitie, goodneſſe of nature, ſweetneſſe of behaviour, and other commendable parts, condoling very much this her preſent neceſſitie, and povertie; and were very deſirous that ſhee ſhould continue ſtill amongſt them, yet could they not poſſibly bring it to paſſe. For their wills being ſubordinate to that of their Superiour, it being in their Prelates, and not their owne choice, neither could they effect what they deſired, nor ſhe continue any longer amongſt them. For very ſhortly after it was notified vnto her that ſhe ſhould either leaue the houſe, or if ſhe had a minde to ſtay, forthwith to aſſigne her dowry. But ſhee not being able (for vvant of meanes) to comply with the ſecond condition, ſhe was forc'd to entertaine the former. This poore diſtreſſed maid was ſo cunning at her needle, and had ſuch a curious hand in all kinde of workes, white or blacke, in ſilke or gold, and in ordering her colours, to giue true life and perfection to whatſoever ſhee tooke in hand, that the fame thereof was ſpread over all the Citie.

To this ſumme, I muſt adde the vertues of the ſoule, and the beauty of her face, both which were in that height of excellencie, (the parts of her bodie, being anſwerable to thoſe of her minde) that hee that had but once ſeene her, would verily haue thought, nay almoſt ſworne, that two moſt cunning and exquiſite Artizans, had in emulation one to the other, ſpent all their ſpirits, and imployde the vtmoſt of their skill, in framing ſuch a ſingular creature as ſhee was, being ſuch a perfect peece of beauty, and goodneſſe, that ſhee might draw off the beholders eyes from all other objects (though not vnworhy the looking on) and attract them to her ſelfe. Yet all this put together, being in that (if the word doe not exceed) exceſſe was nothing, being compared with her retiredneſſe of life, her mortification of the fleſh, her faſts, prayers, and penance. She, not vnwitting, that ſhe vvas now thruſt out into the vvide vvorld, that ſhee had no more any Nunnerie to ſhelter, but lay open to the venues of Fortune, if ſhe did not the better ſtand vpon her guard, fearing the vvorlds murmuring, and thoſe occaſions, which might bring ſome ſcandall vpon her reputation, as one that vvas vvonderfull tender and jealous of her honour, ſhe had got her a lodging, vvhere ſhe had the companie of divers other vertuous and religious young maydens; and there without any ſuſpition, or leaſt ſhadow of any ill intention, having no other helpe or meanes to liue, ſaue the ſweat of her browes, and the labour of her fingers ends, ſhe liu'd there very frugally, keeping her ſelfe within her bounds, and giving a good example of her vertue to all the young damoſels of her time.

The Archbiſhop of that Citie, had a great deſire to haue ſome curioſities made for him, as certaine wrought Chalice-cloathes, [c] neat towels, handſome napkins, dainty handkerches, and the like, to wrap the Hoſte in, bordered about vvith ſome hiſtoricall worke, as ſhould beſt fit with the vſe wherevnto they ſerved, and to haue them done as neere to the life as Art could attaine vnto. After much inquirie made, there being none to be found, that could doe

[b] Regalo, *is a word of a large extent, and ſignifies any thing that may giue a woman content, be it in meat, drinke, cloathes, ſports or whatſoeuer elſe that may delight her.*

[c] *The Spaniſh word is*, Corporales; *which though they ſignifie thoſe things that belong to the body: yet are they more ſtrictly taken for thoſe linnen cloathes which are laid vpon the Altar, whereupon in their Maſſes, they place the body of our Saviour* Ieſus Chriſt *vnder bread and wine; and repreſent vnto vs, that* Sindone *or fine linnen ſheet, wherein they wrapt the ſacred body of our bleſſed Saviour when they laid him in his ſepulchre.* Vide Stephanum Durandum de ritibus Eccleſiæ, lib. 1. c. 22.

theſe things halfe ſo well as *Dorotea* (for ſo was this Gentle-woman called) vpon the good report they had heard of her, they ſought her out, and recommended this worke vnto her care, promiſing ſhe ſhould be well paid for her paines. She conſidered with her-ſelfe, that for ſuch a curious peece of worke as this was to be, ſhe muſt make choyce of the beſt, the pureſt, the brighteſt, and the fineſt gold threed that ſhee could get for money, whatſoever it coſt. And becauſe they that knew beſt how to beſtow it, knew beſt how to buy it, ſhe her-ſelfe, taking ſome of her neighbours and friends along with her, went to ſeeke out this ware amongſt the Gold-beaters ſhops, who in *Sevill* both make and ſell theſe kinde of commodities. It was their hap to come to a young mans ſhop that was a handſome fellow, and well behau'd, who had but newly ſet vp for him-ſelfe, and to get him the better cuſtome, ſtroue to haue his ſhop well furniſht, and indeed, had better and more choyce then the reſt of his neighbours, that traded in that kinde. Of this young man, ſhee was willing to buy all the gold, that ſhe had occaſion to vſe about this worke (as well becauſe ſhe found it was fit for her turne, as likewiſe to excuſe her-ſelfe a labour of going too oft out of doores) if ſhe had had ſo much money, as would haue done the deed: but having no more ſtore, then that little which they had given her to begin the worke withall, ſhe told the Maſter of the ſhop, that ſhee would beſtow a little money with him now, but ſhe would come againe for more, as her worke went on, and her moneys came in. This young Occupyer, when he had beheld the beauty, and compoſed countenance of this young mayden, and had well obſerved her manner of ſpeech, her honeſt carriage, and modeſt behaviour, he fell into that good liking of her, and was ſo farre in loue with her, that the leaſt that hee could haue found in his heart to haue given her, was all the gold that ſhee had occaſion to vſe, which was no great matter, being that at that very inſtant, he had delivered vp his ſoule vnto her. And perceiving, that ſhee forbore to by ſo much, as otherwiſe ſhee would willingly haue done, for that ſhee wanted money, embracing the occaſion, which he had now in his hands, not ſo much to gaine her farther cuſtome, as to expreſſe the affection that he bare vnto her, and to draw her into a good opinion of him, not ſuffering her to part vpon thoſe termes, he ſaid vnto her; Miſtreſſe, if the gold be good, and ſuch as you looke after, and that it be for your turne, picke and chooſe where you like, and carry away with you as much as you haue vſe for, or what you pleaſe, and pay me now what you can well ſpare, as for the reſt you ſhall pay me by little and little, as you ſhall receiue it from their hands that ſet you a worke. The young man ſeemed to them all, to be very kinde and courteous, and for the ware, they could finde no fault with it, being as good, as themſelues could wiſh or deſire. *Dorotea* made him preſent payment of as much as ſhee had, and having made choyce of as much gold, as ſhe thought good and needfull for her, ſhe carried it away with her, leaving with him the name of the ſtreet, whither he ſhould either come or ſend for that which was remayning behinde. That done, they preſently went their way, the poore young man being ſo loue-ſtruken after their departure, and ſo pittifully wounded vvith this amorous arrow, that he was as farre from himſelfe, as from all reſt, being toſſed to and fro with various thoughts, having his braines beaten with many troubleſome and vnquiet imaginations. Loue had almoſt burſt the very heart of him; He did neither eate nor drinke, nor any thing elſe that might ſeeme to beare the name of life: ſo altogether was his ſoule occupied in the contemplation of that rare and incomparable beauty, and that mirrour of all vertue, that this his troubleſome life, was to him as bad as death, not knowing in the world what to doe. At laſt, it ſeeming vnto him, that ſhee was a poore young mayden, and that by meanes of marriage, his chaſte deſires might arriue in the end to ſome happy port, hee reſolued to informe him-ſelfe vvhat ſhee vvas, and alſo of vvhat life, behaviour, and birth.

The reports which were given of her, were ſuch, that hee was now more perplexed, and leſſe confident then before. Deſpairing in a manner with himſelfe, that hee ſhould ever bee able to enjoy ſo rich a jewell, holding him-ſelfe ſtill more and more vnworthy of ſo great a happineſſe, as to obtaine her to be his Spouſe. He vvas now quite out of heart, as knowing himſelfe too meane for her worth: But becauſe it vvas not poſſible for him now to goe backe, nor did it lye in his hands (if he vvould) to haue done it; and for that the paſſions of the ſoule, are no leſſe prevalent in the poore, then the powerfull, and that all are all alike ſubject therevnto, and equally affected with them; howbeit he found himſelfe caſt ſo farre behinde-hand, yet did hee never leaue ſtriving to trie if he could get before, perſevering ſtill in his honeſt purpoſe, for that he put him-ſelfe into Gods hands, who doth alwayes fauour our good intentions, and knowes how to accommodate thoſe things, that tend to his ſervice, according to his divine vvill and pleaſure; preſenting evermore in his prayers and ſupplications vnto him, that his deſire was no other, then to get him a companion, vvith vvhom he might be the better inabled to ſerue him, and more particularly, that he might be linked in lawfull marriage vvith this ſo vertuous a creature, and one that vvas ſo much to his hearts-liking and content; yet not that his, but Gods will ſhould be done, vvhere-vnto he ſhould moſt vvillingly ſubmit himſelfe, and that he ſhould ſo farre grant his requeſt (and no farther) as it ſhould ſeeme beſt to his Majeſtie, and make moſt for his ſervice.

He went likewiſe diſcourſing with him-ſelfe; and amongſt many other, this one preſented it ſelfe to his imagination; That peradventure her great poverty, her wary diſcretion, and vigilant fore-ſight, would force her therevnto, conſidering the ſolitarie kind of life ſhe now led, and the remedy thereof, and laying aſide thoſe vaine points of honour, not meaſuring her ſelfe by what ſhee was, but what ſhe is, ſhe would happely accommodate her ſelfe to the condition of her preſent fortune; and that, when his honeſt deſire to ſerue her, ſhould bee truly repreſented vnto her, ſhe may chance to yeeld to my faire requeſt. Intertaining himſelfe with theſe thoughts & cares, he was minded to call vpon her for the money which ſhe ought him, but not with purpoſe to preſſe her therewith, nor to be troubleſome therein vnto her, but taking occaſion rather one while to ſee this her curious worke, another while, that paſſing that way, hee was of purpoſe come thither to know whether ſhe needed any more gold, and if ſhe did, that ſhe ſhould not want it, whileſt he had any that was fit for her; & ſo fetching many a walke thither, excuſing himſelfe in the beſt manner that he could, and as he thought would make moſt for the performing of theſe his frequent viſits, and the procuring of her good will and acquaintance, for that time he pretended nothing elſe; to the end, that this being firſt obtained, he might the better play his game hereafter, and in the interim mitigate ſome part of that ſorrow which her abſence did continually torment him vvithall. In this the young man ſhew'd himſelfe as diſcreet, as ſolicitous; and as ſolicitous, as truly loving. Going on in thoſe good and honeſt tearmes, that in a ſhort time he gained the good wills of all thoſe that converſed and were companions to *Dorotea*. Being ſo farre from diſliking his often viſits, that they rather receiu'd them as favours and courteſies. Amongſt the reſt, that liu'd there together, there were foure Siſters, to one of which, as being the graveſt and reverendeſt of the company, they did all ſhow a kinde of reſpect, as well for her temper and wiſdome, as alſo for her priority of yeares. With this graue Matron, our young man ſeekes to enter into a ſtricter kind of friendſhip, by reverencing her, and obſerving her, and by preſenting her with ſome ſuch tokens and remembrances, as might ſute beſt with the reſpect (more then loue) that he bare vnto her. So that in the end, time bringing forth occaſion, by degrees he diſcovered himſelfe vnto her, making her acquainted with his deſires, not omitting any thing that might make her fully to vnderſtand the

greatneſſe of his affection, and the faireneſſe of his pretenſion. Earneſtly intreating her withall, that by interpoſing her power and authority, ſhe would be a meanes, that his hopes ſhould not returne home empty, and vnrewarded, her worth, and wiſdome, putting him in good aſſurance of the contrary. And that therefore ſhe would be pleaſed to continue her good favour towards him; and as occaſion ſhould offer, that ſhe ſhould goe working and diſpoſing this piece of waxe, to receiue the impreſſion of his affection; leaue it to her to imprint it in her to the life, that ſeeing the trueneſſe of the ſtampe, ſhe might be the ſooner molded to entertaine the motion: But in caſe ſhee ſhould not finde her plyable, but tough and hard to be wrought vpon, ſhee would ſeeke to mollifie her by her meeke and gentle perſwaſions, and remoue all thoſe difficulties, which on her part might bee a hindrance to theſe his honeſt deſires; for on his part he vow'd and proteſted vnto her that nothing ſhould be able to croſſe it, but that with open armes he would runne to embrace her, ſubmitting himſelfe to be in all things ordered, if not over-ruled by them. Good meanes, ſeconded by good intentions, and which, without any humane reſpects, treat of honeſt things (carrying a ſound heart in their breſts, and a true tongue in their heads) haue alwayes ſuch force and power with them, that they eaſily perſwade, becauſe truly beleeu'd.

This Gentle-woman, ſo wrought with *Dorotea*, ſometimes this way, and ſometimes that, now vſing t'one, then t'other meanes, till at laſt, ſhe brought the buſineſſe ſo about, that ſhee being convinced by reaſon, began to yeeld to her perſwaſions, and to condeſcend to the motion that ſhee made vnto her; and obeying her in all things, as if ſhee had beene her owne naturall mother, ſhe kiſt her hands. In acknowledgement of her thankefulneſſe, putting her-ſelfe wholly into her hands. In concluſion, the match was made vp betweene them to both their good likings, but more eſpecially on *Bonifacio* his part (for ſo was her husband called) for that he was fully perſwaded, that in meeting with this jewell no man was more happy, more fortunate, and more rich then himſelfe; having now got him ſuch a wife, as his owne heart could not haue wiſht a better, being greater in her condition and qualitie, then he deſerved, and ſuch a good creature beſides, that hee could lead a ſecure and honeſt courſe of life with her, without feare or trouble of any jealous thoughts, nor of any other thing that might cauſe his diſquiet. They lived very contentedly together, making exceeding much of each other, and wonderfully well ſatisfied of that chaſte and true loue, which they bare one to another. He did ordinarily attend his ſhop, buſying himſelfe (for both their benifits) in the exerciſe of his Trade, and ſhee abiding aboue in her chamber, either playing the good huſwife, in thoſe things that appertained to the good government of the houſe; or following her needle, ſpending part of that gold threed which her husband ſold, in working goodly borders, garniſhing them with curious flowers in their true and naturall colours, and other the like neat and dainty peeces, vvherein ſhe did excell. Their gaines were great, and to make this their happineſſe the fuller, there was that conformitie in their loue, and ſuch an equall retribution in their affections, that no two in the world could liue more honeſtly, and more lovingly together then they did.

But the Devill, vvho is ſtill waking, and never ſleeps, but ſtill watches moſt how he may breake the bond of peace, and breed brawles in loue, againſt this loving Couple, theſe who agreed ſo well together, that there was never yet any the leaſt difference betweene them, prepares his pit-falls, ſets vp his traps, and ſpreads his nets with all ſecreſie, and all the skill and cunning he could deviſe, to doe them all the miſchiefe he could, and if it were poſſible, to throw this vniforme frame, and ſtrong peece of building to the ground. Hee followed this poore ſoule cloſe at the heeles, watching advantage how he might trip her vp, and overthrow her, and in cauſe he could not doe that, yet at leaſt to giue

her

her a foyle, or make her to ſtumble. Inſomuch, that at her Viſits, vvhen ſhee vvas at Maſſe, or at Sermon, yea in her greateſt devotion, vvhen ſhe vvas receiving the Sacrament, he did ſtill ſeeke to trouble her, preſenting her with the inſtruments of his malice and wickedneſſe, young Gallants, diſcreet in their carriage, neat in their cloathes, and ſweet in there perfumes, who fell a courting her, vvhen ſhe came forth, following and ſoliciting her vvhither-ſoever ſhee vvent: but all theſe tricks vvould not ſerue the Devils turne, he did not reape the fruit he hoped for; for this chaſte vvoman, ſtanding ſtiffely to her tackling, and giving her enemie no ground, did ever more vvith-ſtand theſe lightneſſes, by oppoſing againſt them a conſtant chaſte minde, and a ſetled, and well reſolved honeſtie. And howbeit, for to avoyde all occaſion, ſhe did forbeare, as much as ſhe poſſibly could to goe abroad, and vvhen ſhe did, it vvas very ſeldome, and vvhen ſhe vvas of neceſſitie inforced therevnto, at vvhich time ſhe vvas likewiſe haunted and perſecuted by them. They did round her doore night and day, they ſought inventions, and vſed all the meanes that might be for to ſee her; neither did this alſo profit them any thing.

Amongſt thoſe Gallants, that deſired to ſerue her (for all of them vvere young Gentle-men, of very good faſhion, and the chiefeſt in *Sevill*) there was one, that was [d] *Teniente* of the Towne, a young mann vnmarried, and rich. This Gentle-man liu'd right againſt the houſe vvhere ſhee dwelt, vvhere hee had very faire and goodly roomes, being eſpeciall and principall lodgings, and of ſo many ſtories high, and thoſe goodly open galleries, that they did over-top and looke into thoſe lower ones of *Dorotea*, notwithſtanding that they were diſtanced by a vvhole ſtreet, that interpoſed it ſelfe betweene their houſes. So that from his Turrets, his Terraces, and his high windowes, he might over-looke her, and ſee what ſhe did; and that ſo plainly, that neither her husband, nor her-ſelfe, could ſcarce riſe vp in the morning to make them ready, or at night get them to bed, vvithout being ſeene and eſpyed by him; eſpecially they being careleſſe, and heeding no ſuch matter, and the other with extraordinarie diligence, vvatching and prying what they did. This *Tiniente* then, making vſe of this occaſion, with all carefulneſſe and vigilancie, accompanied with inſupportable paſſions, and ſorrowes, did labour (as if his life had layen vpon it) how he might come to haue ſome ſpeech with her, or receiue any favour from her hands. But finding in the end, that he loſt his labour, and ſpent his time in vaine, he was forced, as the reſt of his fellowes vvere, to giue over his [e] ſute, ſet vp his reſt, and turne backe the ſame way he came, without obtayning any the leaſt looke, of favour from her, not being able to perceiue in her any ſhadow of hope, that either now or hereafter (though never ſo ſmall) ſhe was likely to grant him. For this chaſte woman did liue in that ſober and diſcreet faſhion, and did ſo vvell and vviſely governe her-ſelfe, that ſhee put him quite off from any ſuſpition, which might incourage him to pretend any kindneſſe from her, or but waſh off one haires bredth of gold from this good creatures credit; though it is not to be doubted, he vſed all the Art he could, to haue made her ſome few graines lighter then ſhe vvas.

There went likewiſe along in the ſame dance with the reſt, another Penitentiarie, that was of the ſame brotherhood and companie of theſe fooliſh [f] *Diſciplinantes*, and ſelfe-afflicting lovers. This was a Gentleman of *Burgos*, gallant, young, diſcreet, and rich. Which good parts, favoured by his franke, and bountifull diſpoſition, might (a man vvould haue thought) haue digg'd downe mountaines, and laid them levell vvith the loweſt earth. But the chaſte *Dorotea*, neither by this Gentlemans good parts, nor the *Tenientie's* great power, nor all the paſſions of other her Lovers, could be moved one jot from her honourable reſolution, not having any ſenſe or feeling thereof in the vvorld, as if ſhe had beene no vvoman of this world, or had minded any ſuch matter. Againſt all theſe aſſaults, ſhee ſhow'd her-ſelfe a ſtrong Tower, an inexpugnable rocke, againſt

[d] Teniente, *is one that ſubſtitute to another in an Office. A Lieutenant.* A tenendo. *As having the charge and keeping of ſome Forts or Caſtle, which he faithfully keeps and maintaines.* Covarr. verb. Teniente.

[e] *The Spaniſh word is*, Bolver al pueſto con la caña. *To pitch downe his ſtandard to proceed no farther.*

[f] Diſciplinantes, *are they that laſh themſelues to doe penance.*

againſt which the continuall beatings of thoſe furious waues of their raging luſt and froathy appetite (not being able to prevaile) were broken and daſht in peeces. And it is not to be doubted, but that her honeſtie, continually keeping watch, like the Craine, that with the ſtone of Gods loue, raiſing herſelfe from the ground, and her foot ſtanding faſt and firme on the ſteedy affection that ſhe bare to her husband, did free her from theſe birds of rapine, theſe Eagles of *Caucaſus*, that ſought to make prey of her. And it had beene impoſſible to haue wounded either her, or her honeſtie, if the cunning and crafty Fowler had not ſpred his net, covering and ſhadowing it ouer with the greene graſſe of holineſſe, and ſimulated ſanctitie, to intrap this ſimple, harmeleſſe, and innocent Doue. This *Bargaleſe* (whoſe name was *Claudio*) had to his ſervant a dainty fine ſhee-ſlaue, not ſwarfe and tawney (as others commonly bee) but faire and well-favour'd, of a good preſence, a good garbe, and a graceſull behaviour, borne in *Spaine* of a Mooriſh ſlaue of *Barbary*. She was ſo cunning, ſo ſubtle, ſo nimble witted, ſo dextrous in her tricks and deviſes, ſuch a worker of her-ſelfe into all folkes loues and affections (were it for her owne ends, or others) ſo curious in viſiting Church-yards, ſo charitable in accompanying thoſe that were to be hang'd, that ſhe was able to make[g] water-creſſes to grow on the top of a bed. She was ſuch a one, as for ſuch like affaires, her fellow was not to be found. Her Maſter one day call'd her vnto him, and giving her account of this his Loue-torment, he craved her counſell, how he might come to compaſſe his pretenſion. This his good ſlaue, after that ſhee had beene well informed of the buſineſſe, and knew how the caſe ſtood with him, as if ſhee had beene in jeſt, ſmilingly ſaid vnto him; Why how now (my good Maſter) what mountaines haue you to remoue? What Seas to dry vp? What dead to raiſe vnto life? What great difficultie is there in that which doth thus afflict thee? Or why doeſt thou ſo indeare it vnto me? Sir, Are not theſe, things that I am well ſeene in? Little oyle, and leſſe labour, will ſerue to bring this wheele about then thou thinkſt for. Thou mayeſt now make reckoning that ſhee is thine owne, and that thou haſt her already in thy hands. Let not this therefore trouble thee any farther, but be of good cheare, and plucke vp thy heart; for within theſe few daies, I will deliver this Hare into thy lap. And if I doe not, let me loſe my name for ever, & call me no more *Sabina*, the daughter of *Haja*. From that time forward, ſhe tooke this buſineſſe to taske, and began from that very inſtant, like a cunning Cheſſe-player, ſo to order and marſhall her men, deſigning with her ſelfe how to make her draughts, and within how many remoues, to giue firſt the checke, and then the check-mate. Now does ſhee ſet her-ſelfe roundly to her play, and begins this her game, mouing firſt one of her pawnes, reſeruing her beſt men for the laſt puſh, if the meaner ſhould miſcarry in this battell.

First of all therefore, ſhe makes me a fine delicate little basket, of the greene ſprigs of Mirtles, Pome-citrons, & Oranges, adorning and ſetting it forth with Gilly-flowers, Gecimines, Muske-roſes, & other ſweet flowers, bound in with ſmall tender bull-ruſhes, which were compoſed and ſet together in moſt dainty and curious manner. This basket ſhee takes along with her, and beares it to the Gold beater; Telling him, that ſhee was ſervant to a certaine Gentlewoman that was a Nunne in that Citie, and Lady-Abbeſſe of a Couent; who having notice of the goodneſſe of his ware, and having neceſſary vſe of ſome of his beſt gold, for to floriſh over certaine things, vvhich were to ſerue for ſome ornaments that were to adorne that Monaſterie againſt Midſommer day, which was a great Feſtivall with them, ſhee had ſent him that little basket for a token, intreating him, to ſend her two pound of his pureſt and fineſt gold, that ſhe might make proofe of it, and that if it ſhould be found to be ſo good, as to her it had beene commended, and that ſhee found it fit for her purpoſe, ſhee would pay him well for it, and hee ſhould from hence-forth haue her cuſtome

[g] *When they will note out a witch, or the ſorceries of an old Hag, the* Spaniards *indeare it with this phraſe,* Que hara maçerberros en cima de la cama. *That they will make water-creſſes to grow on the top of a bed. that is; ſhe will do ſtrange things, or worke wonders.* Covarr. verb. Berros.

cuſtome for all the gold that ſhould be ſpent in her Houſe, ſending vveekly for ſo much as they had occaſion to vſe. Beſides, ſhee vvould bee very thankefull vnto him, if he ſeru'd her well, and beſtow now and then vpon him ſuch dainties and curioſities, as thoſe religious places vſually afford. *Bonifacio* vvas much gladded vvith this new occaſion of freſh gaines, and no leſſe with this little baſket of flowres, vvhich he made much reckoning of, being ſo neatly and artificially vvrought, as indeed it vvas. Which he had no ſooner received (having firſt diſpatcht the ſlaue away with the gold) but he preſently carries it vp to his vvife, putting it in her lap vvith great joy, vvhich vvas by her vvith no leſſe received. Shee asked him, of vvhom hee had bought it: And then hee told her all that had paſſed. Then did ſhee eſteeme it much more then before, becauſe it brought to her remembrance the time of her childhood, vvhen vvith other girles of her yeares, and the Nunnes of the Covent, ſhee did buſie her-ſelfe in the like exerciſes. Wherevpon, ſhee intreated her husband, that vvhen ſhee came to him againe, he vvould ſend her vp vnto her, for ſhe vvould gladly be acquainted with her.

The next vveeke following, being ſome ſix daies after, *Sabina* returnes very jocondly, boaſting how good the gold was, and that ſhe vvas come for as much more of the ſame; bringing vvith her a large meſſage in the behalfe of her Miſtreſſe the Lady-Abbeſſe, and preſenting him from her, vvith a little image of the rinde of Limmons, and a *Roſario* ſutable to the ſame, ſo curiouſly cut out, that it vvas vvell worthy much eſtimation. As ſoone as he ſaw it, he vvould not him-ſelfe receiue it of her, but intreated her, that ſhee vvith her owne hands would deliver it to *Dorotea* his vvife. Now the [h] ſop was fallen into the hony-pot. Now had ſhe what ſhe would haue. This fell out as pat for her as a pudding for a Fryars mouth. But making ſtrange of his newes, and as though ſhee had knowne no ſuch matter, ſhe ſaid vnto him. Ah, thou naughty man, doeſt thou ſpeake in earneſt? Art thou marryed indeed? I doe not beleeue it. Thou art bought and ſould with vs for a ſingle man, vve tooke thee to be a Batchelour, and my Miſtrreſſe talkt of marrying thee with a pretty Lay-mayden that vve haue in our Houſe, as fine and as freſh as the flowres in May, and is both beautifull and rich. *Bonifacio* replyde; I haue one already as rich and as beautifull, as you there can giue me any, and vvith vvhom I liue moſt contentedly. And if you will not beleeue me, goe vp, and ſee. *Sabina* then ſaid vnto him; In faith no, not I, you ſhall not get me vp ſtayres, I am afraid you vvill play the vvag vvith me, and that you doe but jeſt. I aſſure you, I doe not jeſt (ſaid *Bonifacio*) and therefore (friend *Sabina*) you may boldly goe vp. Vp ſhee goes, and having entred the roome vvhere ſhee vvas, ſhee no ſooner ſaw *Dorotea*, but ſhee runnes vvith open armes towards her, and throwes her-ſelfe downe at her feet, making a thouſand ducks and reverences vnto her after the *Moriſh* faſhion, admiring much her rare and ſingular beauty, vvhich though ſhee had heard it much ſpoken of before, yet this worke of nature, went farre beyond the words that were vttered of it. For it was ſuch an admirable peece, that report was not able to expreſſe it to the life, but muſt needs fall ſhort in the praiſing of it. But ſhe ſtood like one aſtoniſhed, vvhen ſhee beheld the frames, and thoſe loomes of rich embroyderies, and other the like vvorkes, vvherein ſhe ſpent her time, vvondring at their perfection and curioſitie, ſaying vnto her; How is it poſſible, that my Miſtreſſe ſhould not haue the happineſſe to enjoy ſuch excellent good things as theſe? No, no, it ſhall not bee long (by the grace of God) ere you two know one another, and be better acquainted, and enter into a ſtrict league of friendſhip. O ſweet Ieſus! When I ſhall tell my Lady-Abbeſſe, what I haue ſeene, ô how vvill ſhe envie my good fortune? What a longing deſire vvill ſhe haue, till ſhe ſee that face of yours, and be made ſo happy as to enjoy your good companie? By the life of her, that left me here behinde her, and as her ſoule is there, where thoſe eternal tapers continually burne, let the pocks conſume

proverbe.
h Cayo la ſopa en la miel.

conſume my jaw-bones, if I be not a Bawd to theſe your loues, becauſe I haue a great minde to bring you together, and that yee ſhould dearely loue each other. I will not faile hereafter to viſite you oftner, you are a pearle of that price, that I cannot chooſe but loue you, make much of you, and deſire to ſerue you. After theſe words, and many other full of ceremony and complement, ſhe tooke her leaue, and went away with her gold. And from that time forvvard, every ſecond or third day, ſhe made one errand or other thither, one while for gold, another, ſaying that ſhe paſt that way, telling *Bonifacio*, that ſhe ſhould be guilty to her ſelfe of neglect, & that ſhe ſhould commit treaſon to her owne heart, if ſhe ſhould paſſe that way, and not performe a viſit to that good Angell of his, being the onely Saint of her ſexe, to vvhoſe ſhrine ſhe did owe all reſpect and reverence. At other times, ſhe vvould excuſe her comming, by bringing her ſome rarity or other, and vvhileſt ſhe was talking with her, goe diſpoſing and preparing of her, that ſhe would with one accord goe one day and make merry at the Monaſtery.

Now, when ſhe had moulded things to her mind, and thought that this fine peece of gold was fit for the hammering, ſhe tooke a walke thither on Monday morning, carrying along with her two pretty little baskets, the one having in it ſome Conſerues, and the like toyes; the other, ſome fruits of that ſeaſon, the firſt and the beſt that were to be found vpon their firſt comming. Which ſhe preſented her withall, telling her, becauſe they were fruits of their owne garden, and the firſt they had gathered, her Lady Abbeſſe thought they could not be better beſtow'd on any, then her ſelfe. And that withall ſhe had a double requeſt vnto her; The firſt, that the next inſuing Munday, being the feaſt of the glorious Saint *Iohn Baptiſt*, and the Sunday before it, their firſt *Veſpers*, ſhe would be pleaſed to doe her the favour to ſtay thoſe two daies with her in the Monaſterie, doing penance there with her; which ſhee might the more conveniently doe, in regard that ſhe had no occaſion of buſineſſe during thoſe two Holy-dayes; and beſides, the Nunnes, after they had ended their feaſts, vvere amongſt them-ſelues to repreſent a Comedy; And that the Abbeſſe would take no pleaſure nor contentment in it, if ſhe would not doe her this favour, to come and ſee it acted; and that other principall Gentle-woman, that were of kinne to the Nunnes, were likewiſe to come thither, and that they ſhould goe all along together, bearing each other company: The other, that ſhe might haue three pound of her beſt and fineſt gold, to make tufts and taſſels for a rich cloath that was to be vſed before the Altar; deſiring her if it were poſſible, that ſhee might haue the choiſeſt and the fineſt for that purpoſe, that was to be got. To this of the gold, *Dorotea* made anſwer, ſhe could, and would doe that for her with a very good will; for this (quoth ſhe) is in my power to performe; I could likewiſe be content to comply with whatſoeuer my Lady Abbeſſe ſhall be pleaſed to command mee, but this is not in mine but my husbands hands. You knew (Siſter *Sabina*) that I am not Miſtreſſe of my ſelfe, I am vnder anothers command, and therefore in this, you muſt aske my good-mans leaue; it is hee that can giue you an I, or a No, whether I ſhall goe or ſtay. To whoſe will I muſt, and euer ſhall conforme my ſelfe. This were fine in good faith (ſaid then *Sabina*) if your husband ſhould deny vs ſo ſmall and ſo faire a requeſt as this? Let me never thriue, if I goe out of doores theſe eight daies, vnleſſe hee giue you leaue: Say your ſelfe, doth it ſtand with reaſon (to omit the mentioning of common civility, and good manners) that one onely requeſt which my Miſtris makes vnto you, being (beſides the firſt that euer ſhe made vnto you) ſo earneſt a one, and ſo juſt, that you ſhould loſe all reſpect towards her perſon and her kindneſſe, as to deny her ſo ſlight a courteſie, deſiring (as ſhee doth her ſalvation) to injoy ſuch a paradiſe as your ſelfe? Fie *Sabina*, hold thy peace (ſaid *Dorotea*) be not ſo prophane, nor doe not flout your poore friend, for I am old. Old, (ſaid *Sabina*) yes, yes, you be very old indeed; Let mee die of your

your diſeaſe. You might as well haue told me, that the ſpring is the the end of the yeare, and that Lent is Chriſtmas. But let vs leaue off jeſting; As old as you are, God grant your husband may long injoy you, and giue you the fruit of his bleſſings. And therefore without any more adoe, I pray grant our requeſt; for I meane to goe away with this good bargaine, that my miſtreſſe may con me thanke for it. O how much will ſhe make of this pretty little Rogue? *Boniſacio* and *Dorotea*, fell a laughing to ſee her ſo pleaſant; while he (with a cheerefull countenance) not ſeeing the Snake that lay lurking in the graſſe, nor the ambuſh that was laid for him, ſuſpecting no harme, and the leſſe, in regard of the great confidence that he had in his wife, ſaid: Well followed in good faith; Now (by my life) *Sabina* hath pleaded hard in this cauſe, and hath handſomely beſtirr'd her-ſelfe; ſhee muſt not bee denyed for this once, eſpecially being it is my Lady-Abbeſſes pleaſure to haue it ſo. And therefore I prithee (ſweet Heart) goe and recreate thy ſelfe there thoſe two dayes, for I know thou wilt be well pleaſed there-with, and it ſhall be no ſmall contentment to mee, becauſe it ſhall content thee. And therefore (*Sabina*) you may tell her Ladyſhip that her vvill ſhall bee fulfil'd as vvell in this, as in any thing elſe, wherein I may ſerue her. And when theſe Gentle-women that you ſpeake of goe vnto the Monaſterie, I pray ſo order the matter, that they may paſſe this way, and take my wife along with them. *Sabina*, being a well-ſpoken woman, returned them thankes in excellent good language, vſing ſuch fitting phraſe as beſt ſuted with the accompliſhment of her deſire. She hy'de her home, ſo well contented, and ſo proud of this rich purchaſe that ſhee had made; that the ſteps ſhee ſet forward ſeemed to goe backe againe, and that ſhe ſhould never come time enough to her Maſters lodging. Her heart was ready to haue burſt in her bodie, it was ſo over-ſwolne with joy; and would (had it beene lawfull for her ſo to doe) haue found in her heart, to haue cryde it out at the high Croſſe. A man might haue ſeene her mirth in her lookes, her blood boyled within her, and her eyes did ſeeme to dance in her face for very joy; you vvould haue thought, that through them, and her mouth, ſhee vvould haue vttered the cauſe of this her (more then can be expreſſed) content. When ſhee came into the houſe, no ground could hold her, ſhee fell preſently to plucking off her *chapines*, to vndoing of her mantle, flinging it with all the haſt ſhee could over her head, leaving it trayling at her taile, and holding vp the fore-skirts in her hands, leaſt they might hinder her ſpeed, ſhee runnes mee, as faſt as her legges would carry her (like one that had beene fraid out of her vvits) into her Maſters chamber, vvho attended her comming. And out of meere haſt, that ſhee might tell him all at once, all hung betweene her teeth and her tongue, that ſhee was not able to ſpeake one ready word. She would one vvhile be in the Actiue, another vvhile in the Paſſiue: Well, or ill, as vvell as ſhe could, ſhee deliver'd her meſſage in that manner, that thoſe eight dayes never had an end, ſhee in telling him of them, and hee in asking her of them, at leaſt a thouſand times a-peece over and over. Every moment they returned to treat a-new of one and the ſame thing, re-iterating the ſame, I know not how many times over, and fell to make Comments thereupon, diſcourſing how it could be poſſible, that this buſineſſe ſhould take effect: It ſeemed vnto them, that that vvhereof they talked, had fully contented them, and gone for good payment, their beleefe never comming to an end, never being able to perſwade them-ſelues, that the newes of ſo great a deſired good, could be certaine, or that ever they ſhould come to ſee ſo happy a day.

proverbe.
i La culebra eſta entre la yerva.

Dorotea and *Sabina*, being thus agreed vpon the point, that this buſineſſe might be the more cleanely carried, *Claudio* tooke order, that certaine women ſhould bee provided and fitted vp, that were of his good acquaintance, and friends & well-wiſhers to his houſe, ſuch as he might ſafely communicate any

ſecret vnto, to the end, that by their good care and diligence, they might helpe to bring this his purpoſe to paſſe.

Sunday (the appointed day) being come, ſome of them, apparrelling themſelues like married wiues, others, being in the habit of maydens, and others after the faſhion of graue [k] and matron-like Gentle-woman, went along with *Sabina* to goe fetch *Dorotea*. They come to her houſe, they knock at the doore, her husband comes forth, who ſtaid at home looking for them: Who ſeeing ſuch a worthy traine of women, opinionating them to be principall perſons, preſently call'd to his wife, that ſhee ſhould make haſt, and come downe, that the companie might not ſtay for her. Downe comes *Dorotea*, no leſſe innocent, then contented. All of them did very lovingly ſalute her, beſtowing many kinde words, and ceremonious complements vpon her. And her husband having conſigned her over vnto them, they placed her in the midſt betweene them, and ſo with great joy they ſet forward on their voyage. And as they were walking through the Monaſterie, one of them, that had a vayle on her head, and of more reverend aſpect and ſpeech then the reſt, made a ſtop, and ſodainly cries out; Ay me forgetfull wretch that I am, how hath it ſlipt our remembrance, that we forget to goe for *Doña Beatriz* the new marryed Bride, who ſtayes at home expecting our comming, who alſo is invited to the Nunnerie? Then another of them made anſwer; By the bones of my father, you ſay true. As God helpe me, I did no more thinke vpon her, then I remember the firſt [l] ſmocke that was put on my backe. We can by no meanes goe without her, we muſt needs haue her along with vs, and therefore let vs turne downe here, for it is not much out of the way, and we ſhall be there by and by. Then one of thoſe, which was to the reſt, as the bell-weather, that goes before the flocke, ruffling betweene her legs a large ſided kirtle, and having a *roſario* hanging at her necke, which ſerved in ſteed of a bell, leads the way vnto them, whom all of them follow, till ſhee had brought them to *Claudio* his houſe. They call'd at the doore; A ſlaue, putting her head out at the window, askes, who was there, and what they would haue. One of them made anſwer; Runne in quickly, and tell your Miſtreſſe, that ſhee would be pleaſed to make haſte, and come downe, for we ſtay here for her. She made as if ſhee had gone in to deliver her meſſage, and anon after comes forth againe with this anſwer, That her Miſtreſſe would intreat them to haue the patience to ſtay a little, till ſhe had but faſtened a pinne or two to her head-dreſſing, and had put on her mantle, vvhich would not be long a doing, deſiring them in the meane vvhile to come in, and reſt them-ſelues in the Hall. Wherevpon they entred through a faire Court into a goodly ſpatious Hall, very well furniſht, where the reſt of the women remained, onely two of them paſt forward with *Dorotea*, into a midling ſquare roome, vvhich vvas hung vvith cloath of ſilver, and watchet damaske, vvith a bed ſutable therevnto, full of imboſſed vvorke of gold, the chaires, and cuſhions, and carpets correſpondent with the reſt. Adjoyning cloſe to the bed was a curious [m] *Eſtrado*, where theſe three ſate them downe and had ſcarce vvarm'd their cuſhions, vvhen the two, that were with her, began to complaine, and cry out; Good God, what does this new Bride *Doña Beatriz* meane to make vs ſtay here ſo long? Fie, what a tedious thing is this? I care not (ſayes the one to the other) if I goe in, and ſee vvhat ſhe is a doing, I dare pawne my life, ſhe is not yet out of her bed. I prithee, Siſter, (if thou beeſt a good wench) goe with me, that we may know, when we ſhall get hence. Which word was no ſooner ſpoken, but they both went preſently out of the roome, leaving *Dorotea* all alone. In concluſion, they were all vaniſhed, and not any body living to be heard about the houſe.

When all was huſh, *Claudio* comes in, and ſitting downe vpon one of the cuſhions, that was next to *Dorotea*, hee began to make her many faire offers, diſcovering vnto her the plot that he had laid to get her thither, excuſing this his

[k] *The Spaniſh word is,* Dueña, *and ſignifieth an ancient Gentle-woman that is a widow: now taken commonly for thoſe that weare large vayles like your Nunnes, to difference them from maids. And in the Kings Court, they call thoſe* Dueñas de honor, *that are principall perſons, and become widowes, & your Queenes and great Princeſſes have them ſtill attending vpon them.* Covarr. verb. Dueña. *Proverbe.* I No me acordaua mas della, que de la primera camiſa, que me veſti.

[m] Eſtrado *is a place raiſed halfe a foot from the ground, covered over with carpets, where Ladies and Gentle-women ſit vpon cuſhions, and receiue their* Viſites. Lat. Stratus, a ſternendo: ſed potiùs a Græc. στρωτὸς. Covarr. verb Eſtrado.

his manner of proceeding, with the great torments that for her ſake hee endured. When ſhee heard him ſpeake in this language, and now (too late) perceiued how ſhe was betrayed; poore *Dorotea* was not a little troubled; for ſhee knew him by ſight, and was not ignorant of his pretenſions. Shee ſaw her ſelfe taken in the trap, ſhe knew not what to doe, nor how to defend her ſelfe, and therefore began with teares and prayers, intreating him with all the Rhetoricke thoſe two good Orators could vſe, that hee would not ſpot her honour, nor offer her husband that wrong, by committing ſo grievous a ſin, and ſo heynous an offence againſt God. But all would not ſerue the turne. To cry out, was to no purpoſe; for there was no body there to take her part. But ſay her ſhrikes might haue diſturbed *Claudio*, and haue drawne the people in the ſtreet to come in, whoſoever ſhould haue found her there, would queſtionleſſe haue condemned her for her comming thither, giuing no credit to this tricke that was put vpon her, though ſhee ſhould haue ſworne out her heart to the contrary. Shee defended herſelfe (poore ſoule) as vvell as ſhee could, but *Claudio* courting her one while with many faire and kinde words, & when they would not prevaile, breaking forth another while into actions of violence, with a great deale of reſiſtance, and againſt her will, hee pluckt from her by force ſuch fruits as he could reach to, but not thoſe that he deſired; entertaining himſelfe, and tyring out her, in this his rude wreſtling with her. But in the end, vvhen ſhee ſaw that ſhe could no longer hold out againſt him, and that her breath and ſtrength did both faile her, and that the battaile would be loſt on her ſide, *Claudio* ſtill getting more and more ground vpon her perſon, ſhee yeelded vp the Fort vnto him, for vvant of ſuccours in conuenient time, having fought it out (as they ſay) to the leſt man, and keeping out the enemie as long as ſhee could. They two, were all alone; the doore faſt lockt; the tearme long, (no leſſe then two dayes) *Claudio*, his friends about him, ſhe a lone-woman; hee ſtrong, and ſhe weake; and none can do more then they can do. This might haue very well beene ſaid to haue beene a ſportfull contention, and an amorous combat, befitting S. *Iohns* feaſt, if the heaven of their paſtime had not beene over-caſt with a ſodaine and vnexpected cloud. They fared daintily, did dine, ſup, and ſleepe together. But this their pleaſure laſted but a while, ſhort vvas their content, and their reſt ſodainly and vnexpectedly interrupted. For the Devill never yet made that pye, vvhereof himſelfe did not eate the better part. It is an vſuall thing with him, vvhen he maketh any ſuch kinde of meeting, to ſet vp a tent, or pavillion, inviting them to goe into it, that there they may cover, and hide themſelues, and none may know of their dings, laying a charge of ſecrecie and ſilence on their preſent actions; but afterwards, when they are cloſely ſhut vp, & kept hid from the open eye of the world, in this their greateſt, and ill-conceiued ſecurity, he ſets the doore wide open, diſcovers, & throwes theſe pavillions downe to the ground, manifeſting in publike, their concealed ſinnes; and beating vp his drumme, and ringing out his Alarum-bell, hee calls the people together, that they may come and ſee vvhat they are a doing, leaving them aſhamed and ſad, making himſelfe very merry to ſee them thus caught in his ſnare, and laughing and flouting at them, hee makes himſelfe a Holy-day in Hell, joying and triumphing in his new-gotten victory. Who would once haue thought that ſo ſubtle an invention as this was, ſo well ordered, & in ſo ſhort a time, & by ſo ſtrange a meanes brought about, ſhould come to be diſcovered? Who, from ſuch happy beginnings, and meanes would ever haue expected ſuch adverſe, and Tragicall ends? But I ſay ill, and therefore correct my ſelfe: For wee could looke for no other; conſidering the dance, and who he vvas that led it; and heaven cannot but openly puniſh ſuch vvickedneſſe, and violence. And though the puniſhment vvas not equall to the offence, yet the blow was ſuch that was giuen them, that thereby every good

Proverbe.
z El diablo nunca hizo empanada, de que no quiſieſſe comer la meyor parte.

Diſcourſiſt might come to the knowledge of the fault, and repent himſelfe thereof.

Now whileſt they were thus in their mirth and jollitie, all that day paſſed ſo without account, and order, that there was no heede taken of any thing: The ſervants in their quarter, fill'd their bellies, tooke away the wrinckles from off their guts, by glutting themſelues full, and pulling the faucets out of the hogs-heads, they did eat and drinke ſo luſtily, that they were faine at laſt to creepe to their beds, as a Cat doth ° vp a wall, vpon all foure; or as a ſhip-boy vp to the top of the maſte; leaving the chimney full of fire, and a great deale of dry wood ſtanding by it; The fire takes me hold of the brands, and other dry clefts, and they being tinded, did communicate their flames to their fellowes that ſtood by them, ſo that towards mid-night, all that quarter of the houſe was burnt, and not one body in all the houſe that did perceiue it, ſo faſt were they all a-ſleepe. It was the Veſpers of S. *Iohn*, and that night the *Teniente* (to ſee good order) vſeth to round the Towne, & by the great ſplendor that the flames did caſt a farre off, he ſaw what a light it gaue, and ſuſpected (which was ſo indeed) that ſome houſe was on fire. And ſo following the cleareneſſe of this light, the brightneſſe thereof brought them to *Claudio* his houſe. They call'd out aloud, and knockt hard at the gate; for the houſe was great, and the people that were within, ſome were weary, ſome drunke, and others burnt, but none that did anſwere. There was a gteat noyſe & outcry amongſt the neighbours, every one ſeeking to prevent the threatned danger, & to provide as well as they could to ſaue their goods and perſons; many people of all ſorts, and all parts of the Citie, came haſtning and running thither, who by maine force brake downe the gate, and layd it levell with the ground, and entred the houſe, ſuppoſing all thoſe that were in it, to haue been conſumed with the fire, or at leaſt choaked and ſtifled with the ſmoake, becauſe they could ſee no body ſtirring in it. The noyſe and clamour was ſuch, that *Claudio* awak'd, and ſtartled with this ſo great a rumour, and confuſed a ſound, not knowing what the matter might bee, haſtning with his ſword in his hand, (hee and *Dorotea* being both naked) he opened his chamber doore, and when he ſaw the fire, he returned backe, that he might throw ſome thing vpon him, and ſaue himſelfe by flight. The *Teniente* thought that the people that were without, had broken open that doore, that they might rifle the roome; haſting thither with all diligence, that hee might ſaue it from the ſpoyle and ranſacking of the more vnruly route, hee found theſe two lovers running about the chamber, from one corner to another, to ſeeke out their cloathes, and having them in their hands, neither of them had their owne, interchanging them, through their more haſte then good ſpeed. Now you may imagine in what taking they were, and what they might thinke, ſeeing them-ſelues thus naked, the houſe full of people, and her greateſt enemie, the *Teniente*; who had taken them thus napping. But that vvee may come to him, who ſtreight-way knew *Dorotea*; whereat he was ſo amazed, that of all thoſe three, you could not tell for your life, which of them was moſt aſtonied. For the *Teniente*, had any body told him of ſuch a thing, hee would never haue beene perſwaded to beleeue it; and though he had now his owne eyes to be his witneſſes, yet did hee ſeeme to doubt of it. So troubled were his thoughts, ſo his heart inflamed with jealouſies, and diſdaines, ſo mad and deſperately bent, that to be revenged on them both, without any farther conſideration, hee commanded them to be carryed away to priſon, his ſpleene being more againſt *Dorotea*, then *Claudio*, for that ſhee had rejected him, and admitted of another, and therefore was reſolved to doe her a diſgrace, and to defame her all that hee could, deviſing with him-ſelfe, how he might likewiſe picke an occaſion to commit her huſband. For hee thought it a thing impoſſible, that this ſhould be done without her

Proverbe.
° Yr a las camas gateando

her husbands privitie , and that he had beene witting and conſenting to this buſineſſe , and that he had giuen his wife leaue to beſtow a nights lodging vpon this young Gallant, vpon ſome particular intereſt, that might make much for his profit. Nor it is ſo ſtrange, that the *Teniente* ſhould take this indirect courſe: For a Loue-paſſion, or paſſionate fit of Loue, blindes the vnderſtanding, and makes the minde of man turne cruell and tyrannicall. They carried her away, her face being covered over with her mantle, having given expreſſe order, that ſhee ſhould not be ſeene, or made knowne to any , till information ſhould be made againſt her. And *Claudio*, he likewiſe was committed. And howbeit he had vſed all the meanes hee could to hinder this his harſh proceeding, alledging in excuſe the great and many harmes that might happen therevpon, yet neither reaſons, intreaties, nor all-perſwading Crownes, could allay the rage of this incenſed Iudge, ſo bigge was his heart ſwolne with malice and revenge. They remained in priſon, and the Iudge fomed at the mouth, till the fire was aſſwaged, and quite put out; but that of his heart did burne a-pace. It was now paſt midnight, that he had endured a great deale of trouble , but much more anger and choller. Hee got him to bed, and would haue ſlept if he could; but in him was that proverbe verified, which ſaid, (p) *Aſſi tengays en ſueño:* So let him ſleepe, that troubles another mans reſt. He could not ſleepe in quiet, nor is it to be beleeued, that he ſhould; but rather it is to be ſuppoſed, and true it was, that tranſported with rage, his head was plotting of revenge, dreſſing this his rancorous diſh of poyſon a thouſand ſeverall wayes, that they might not eſcape his hands, at leaſt not come off, with the ſauing of their honour. But hee reckoned without his (q) Hoſte. for his feet were ſcarce warme in his bed, when *Dorotea* was out of his reach. *Sabina* lay in an inner chamber next vnto her Maſters, to the end, that if he ſhould need any thing in the night, ſhee might be ready at hand, whenſoever he ſhould call. And for that ſhee had willingly liſtned to all that had paſſed, ſhee preſently bethought herſelfe of a remedie for this diſeaſe. For your women, vpon the ſodaine, are more quicke, and nimble-witted, then your men; nor muſt you giue them leaue to adviſe any thing long with themſelues, if you meane to haue it ſucceed well and happily. Shee takes me out of her lodging a good fat Capon, which was left vntoucht at ſupper, and a good peece of a gammon of bacon, which being of a wilde Bore, was held to be a dainty diſh, a good flagon of rich wine, a loafe or two of bread, and money in her purſe, and clapping a bed, ſheets, and a coverlet on her head, and bearing a little basket, wherein ſhee had put her commodities, vpon her arme, away ſhe trugs along to the priſon. Shee intreated the Iaylour, that hee would giue her leaue to carry in that her bed and ſupper for one of her Maſters maydes, who becauſe ſhee had ſhew'd her ſelfe too ſlow and negligent, vpon ſo vrgent an occaſion, in bringing a bucket to draw water for the quenching of the fire, the *Teniente* in his heat had committed her to priſon. With this ſlight excuſe, and foure Royals of foure, which ſhee clapt in his hand, he opens the doore, and lets her in, making him a hundred curtſies; howbeit by reaſon of the luggage which ſhee had on her head, hee could not come to ſee her face. In this manner, in ſhee goes to *Dorotea*, whom ſhe found rather dead then aliue: They two ſtood talking alone together, for the reſt of the women-priſoners were all aſleepe, and taking hold on this ſo faire an opportunitie, it ſo fell out, that *Dorotea* was transformed into *Sabina*, by putting on a greene kirtle that ſhee wore, who called to the Porter, that kept the priſon doore, and giving him the ſupper, that was provided for that end, told him, that the mayde would neither eat any meat, nor come in any bed, vntill ſhee were releaſed. Hee was ſo joyed therewith, that he thought he had ſeene the heavens opened, and when hee had taſted of the bacon, and found what a tarte yet pleaſant reliſh it had with

Proverbe.
(p) Aſſi tengays el ſueño.

Proverbe.
(q) Hizo la cuenta ſin la hueſpeda.

it, he takes the flagon of wine in his hands, & giues it a good ſwigge, reſeruing the remainder againſt the next day. Whileſt the Porter was making himſelfe merry with his good cheere, *Dorotea* heaues vp the bed vpon her head, and ſo goes out of the priſon, leauing *Sabina* there in her place, and with thoſe two women that bare her company the day before, and ſtaid waiting for her comming forth, ſhee was conducted by them backe againe to *Claudio* his houſe, where ſhe continued till the next morning, and then accompanied with them, and ſome other women, ſhee returned home to her owne houſe, fayning that ſhee was not halfe well, and therefore made the ſpeedier returne. The *Teniente* growing now proud vpon the matter, thinking the next morning, which was Tueſday, to execute this his revenge, *Claudio* in the meane while was not wanting, (being adviſed before hand that his Miſtreſſe was now out of his danger, and ſafely arriued at her wiſhed haven) intreated a Gentleman a friend of his, to take the paines to goe & ſpeake with the (r) *Aſſiſtente* of *Sevill*, & to craue ſo much lawfull favour of him, that he would be pleaſed to come in perſon to the Court, and free him of that injurie and wrong, which was ſo juſtly done vnto him. The *Teniente* likewiſe, when he was going to ſit downe to dinner in his owne houſe, going aſide to the window, and looking with a diueliſh jealouſie on thoſe of *Dorotea*, he had her preſently in his eye, and knew it was ſhee, and might plainely perceiue, how her husband and ſhee ſate very lovingly together eating of their dinner. He was almoſt beſide himſelfe, and ready to runne mad, wondring with himſelfe, how this might be. Herevpon, he preſently diſpatches one away to the priſon, to know who had freed the woman, that he had ſent thither over night. Anſwere was made; that ſhee was there. Then did he beat his feet againſt the ground, and ſtampt for deſpight and anger, and did verily perſwade himſelfe, that hee was not well in his wits, vnleſſe the other had beene a dreame. So that day paſt on, till the next came, when (at the accuſtomed houre) comes me thither the *Aſſiſtente* himſelfe in perſon attended with his two *Tenientes*, and when he was ſate in the ſeat of Iuſtice, hee will'd that *Claudio* ſhould be called forth, and the woman which was impriſoned with him. Who, when they were brought before him, & had (according to their owne confeſſion, as alſo the Keepers) approu'd themſelues to be the ſame, there was no man there but knew *Sabina* was his ſlaue, and ſo finding nothing to be ſaid againſt them, they were ſet at liberty. Yet were they not ſo freed, but that *Claudio* paid ſoundly for it; for when he came home, he found the greateſt part of his houſe, and his goods burnt, and together with them a ſiſter of his, one of thoſe honeſt ones, that accompanied *Dorotea* from her houſe, who was found dead in the ſame bed with his *Diſpenſero*, beſides ſome three other of his ſervants. This affront to his honour (for that it was generally publiſhed throughout the whole Citie) did ſo afflict his minde, and did in that manner oppreſſe his heart, that with the ſtrong apprehenſion thereof hee fell grievouſlie ſicke. And not deſiring his health that hee might take any worldly comfort in it, but onely that he might liue to doe penance for this heynous ſinne that hee had committed, by corrupting ſo good a creature, hee recovered of his ſickneſſe, and without making any one acquainted therewith, hee retyred himſelfe to the top of a mountaine in a deſert place, where in a holy courſe of life hee ended his dayes, betaking himſelfe to the Religious Order of Saint *Francis*. *Dorotea* remayned with her husband in the ſame peace and loue as before, and the *Teniente*, like a filthy fellow as he was, without *Doblones*, for ought that they gaue him; and without revenge, for ought that hee could take of them. And *Bonifacio* (honeſt man) vntoucht in his honour. For *Sabina*, and moſt of them that knew the affront that was done him, dyed within a few dayes after. So juſt is God in all his workes, and ſo well doth he know how to puniſh thoſe wrongs, that are offered to the innocent.

(r) *The principall Magiſtrate, and chiefe Commander in* Sevill, *is called there by the name of* Aſſiſtente.

With

With this Storie, and other entertainments, to passe away the time, we were brought by a faire winde to *Spaine*, which I had not a little longed for, having lost our Anchors, our Ordnance, our Oares, our Helme carryed away, our sailes rent, and all our tackling torne, having nothing left which the Sea had not swallowed vp, onely I was left aliue, who ought more justly to haue perished. We did dis-imbarke in *Barçelona*, where telling my friend Captaine *Favelo*, that I had made a vow, while we were in this storme, that I would not stay three nights in any part of *Spaine*, till I should come to *Sevill*, and visit the Image of our *Lady del Valle*, to whom I had offered vp my deuotions, and made a certaine promise to consecrate some thing vnto her, if I should be so happy as to escape that tempest. It grieu'd him to the very soule that he should lose my companie, but I could not doe otherwise; for I feared lest they of *Genoa* would come in pursuit of me in some Skiffe, or the like vessell. I bought three beasts for to carry my selfe and my trunkes, I entertained a servant, and giving out, that I was to goe my journey (no man knowing to the contrary) we tooke our leaue for ever.

The end of the second Booke, of the second Part of *Guzman de Alfarache*.

THE ROGVE:
OR,
THE SECOND PART OF THE LIFE OF *GVZMAN* DE *ALFARACHE*.

The Third Booke.

Wherein hee relateth all the reſt of his lewd and roguiſh life, from the time that he returned into *Spaine*, till he was condemned to the Galleys, where we muſt leaue him.

CHAPTER I.

Guzman de Alfarache, *hauing taken his leaue of Captaine* Favelo, *telling him, that he was to goe for* Sevill, *makes for* Saragoca, *where he perуſes the ſtatutes of* Gotam College, *otherwiſe called,* The Hoſpitall of Fooles.

How men uſe to grace their lye

WHen a man (out of ſome particular end knowne to himſelfe) hath a minde to grace a lye, for to bring forth witneſſes to credit his falſhoods, he ſeekes out a fountaine, a lake, a ſtone, ſome mettall, tree, or hearbe, wherewith he proues his vntruthes, and preſently alledgeth for his authoritie, that he hath ſaid nothing, but what ſtands with reaſon, and is made good by all thoſe, that haue any in-ſight in naturall Philoſophie. And in this manner he quoteth a thouſand witneſſes; he being the man that tells the lye, and layes the burthen of it on other mens ſhoulders. But I will runne a contrary courſe to this; for I (my ſelfe not lying) ſhall tell you their lye; not that I affirme it to bee ſo; but becauſe it ſeemes to bee ſo. And ſo it ought to bee taken. For that

The propertie of the ſtone Pantaura.

that *Apollonius Tianeus* takes it vpon himſelfe, and ſayes; That hee hath ſeene a ſtone, called *Pantaura*, which is the Queene of all other ſtones, whereon the Sunne doth worke in that forcible manner, that it hath all the vertues in it, that are to be found in all other ſtones whatſoever that are in the world, and that it worketh the ſame effects: And that as the Load-ſtone draweth the yron vnto it; ſo this *Pantaura*, attracteth all other ſtones vnto it ſelfe, preſerving that partie from all kinde of poyſon, that ſhall beare it about him.

Of riches.

To this ſtone, we may very well, and with a great deale of reaſon, compare riches. For ſee what vertue there is in all other things, the ſame ſhall we finde in riches. It drawes all vnto it ſelfe, and preſerveth the profeſſor thereof from all manner of poyſon. It doth all in all; it bringeth mighty things to paſſe; it is a moſt fierce & cruell beaſt; it overcomes all; treads downe all, that ſtands in its way; and commands all. It makes every thing ſtoope to its power; it ſubjects the earth, and all that therein is. By riches the fierceſt beaſts are made tame; no fiſh, though never ſo great, can reſiſt riches; nor the leaſt of fiſhes, that hide them-ſelues in the concaues and hollow holes of the rocks, though over-whelmed with water, and drowned in the deepe, can eſcape its force; nor can the fowles of the ayre, though of the ſwifteſt and nimbleſt wing, flie from its Empire; it exenterates, and pulls out the very bowels from the profoundeſt parts of the earth, vpon which the higheſt mountaines haue their foundation; and it maketh dry the moſt hidden ſands which the Sea doth cover in her bottomleſſe Abyſſe. What altitudes, hath it abaſed? What difficulties, hath it overcome? What impoſſibilities, hath not it facilitated? In what dangers, hath ihe wanted ſafetie? In what adverſities, hath not ſhe found friends? What things hath ſhee deſired, which ſhee hath not obtayned? Or what Law hath ſhe made, which hath not beene obeyed? And being as it is, ſo venomous a poyſon, that not onely like the Baſiliske, by being beheld by vs, it killeth our bodies; but by a bare deſire onely (being coveted)

Of the vſe of riches.

deſtroyeth our ſoules, damning them for ever to the bottomleſſe pit of Hell; yet ſhe her-ſelfe is a treacle to the harme we receiue from her, and a counter-poyſon, to that venome, where-with ſhe infecteth our ſoules and conſciences, if he that poſſeſſeth riches, can (as of an Antidote, or ſome pretious preſeruatiue) make good vſe thereof.

Of the nature of riches.

Riches, in its owne nature, and in it ſelfe, hath neither honour, nor knowledge, nor power, nor valour, nor any other good, nor any puniſhment, nor glory, more then that, wherevnto, they that doe poſſeſſe it, doe direct it. It is like vnto the *Camæleon*, which aſſumeth the colour of that thing, on which it ſettles it ſelfe: Or of the nature of that water of the Lake *Feneo*; of which the *Arcadians* report, that he that drinketh therof overnight groweth ſicke; but he that takes it after the Sunne is once vp, waxeth well. He that ſhall liue in idleneſſe, heaping vp treaſure by night, that is, ſecretly ſcraping a great deale of wealth together, over-charging his conſcience there-with, he ſure ſhall be ſicke: But he that ſhall vſe them in the day time, and ſhow them to the light, that his workes may ſhine before men, and that he come with a cleare conſcience, having the ſtomacke of his ſoule empty of ſin, and his conſcience not ouer-clogg'd with worldly cares, this man ſhall be made whole. Neither is the rich man condemned, nor the poore man ſaved, for that the one is rich, and the other poore: but onely becauſe the rich man abuſeth his riches, and the poore man his povertie.

The beſt and trueſt riches.

For if the rich man treaſures vp, and the poore covet, neither is the rich man rich, nor the poore man poore; and both are to bee condemned. But that may bee called the beſt and trueſt riches, which being poſſeſſed, is deſpiſed. For riches ſerue onely (at leaſt ſhould) to releeue our owne neceſſities, to communicate with the good, and to diſtribute amongſt our friends. The better and greater part, which rich men haue of riches, is the leſſer part, in regard they are ſo occaſionall in men, inciting them

them (eſpecially if their hearts be once ſet vpon them) to this, or that other ſinne. Ill deſires, beget ill doings. Riches in its owne nature, is a very ſweet thing: To this, mans appetite hath a ſweet tooth, and greedy gaping after it. And as it is in the Prouerb; *La manҫana corre peligro en las pujas del erizo*; that Apple is in great danger, that ſtickes on the prickles of a Hedge-hogs backe.

Proverb. a La manҫana corre peligro en las pujas del erizo.

The Diuine prouidence (for our greater good) being to diuide and diſtribute its guifts, not laying all the weight of them vpon one ſide, thought good to repart them in different manner, and on different perſons, to the end, that all might be ſaued. This Prouidence made both the rich and the poore. To the rich ſhe gaue temporall goods; to the poore, ſpirituall bleſsings: to the end, that the rich man diſtributing his riches to the poore, might thereby purchaſe Gods fauour; and ſo remaining both equall, might equally gaine heaven; which is to be opened with a golden key, to wit, with riches, by vſing them well: And ſometimes likewiſe this doore of heauen is to be opened with a pick-locke; that is, by diſpenſing our goods to the poore: Yet notwithſtanding, doth not man, onely for that he has more, thereby merit more: but becauſe he more deſpiſeth then deſireth. For, without compariſon, much more is the riches of a poore man that is contented, then of a rich man that is never ſatisfied. He poſſeſſeth them, that is not poſſeſſed by them; he is rich that ſeekes not after riches; and he hath moſt ſtore, that is leaſt ſtorer. This is the only man whom we may truly tearme rich, wiſe, and honourable.

Of Gods prouidence.

How heauen gate is to be opened.

And if the wiſe man would vſe his wiſedome well, and would meaſure that which he hath need of, with that which he hath, nature would content it ſelfe with a little; and euen in that little, would he finde an ouerplus. But becauſe the foole inlargeth the cord, and would imbrace that which hee hath, according to that which he deſires, God ſo orders this meaſure, that though he had all whatſoeuer the world containes, yet ſhould he ſtill be poore. To him that is not contented, nothing is enough; To a having mind, all is too little; wanting much, by having too much. The eye of a couetous man, will never ſay, no more then will the Sea, or Hell, *Yame baſta*, Now I haue enough. Rich, and wiſe, ſhalt thou be, when thou liu'ſt ſo within thy compaſſe, that he that knowes thee, ſhould admire the little, that thou haſt, and the much, that thou ſpendeſt: and when it ſhall not cauſe any wonder in thee, to ſee what little meanes thou haſt to liue, and what great poſſeſsions other men injoy.

Nature contented with a little.

The couetous man neuer contented, and therefore neuer rich.

Thou ſeeſt me here now rich, very rich, and in *Spaine*; but farre worſe, then I was before; for if before, poverty made me too impudent; why riches hath now made me too confident. If I could but haue contented my ſelfe, or had I but had the temper of a well govern'd man, I could never haue wanted; but becauſe I neither did the one, nor knew the other, for to get money I endanger'd by body, and hazarded my ſoule. I was never contented, never ſatisfied, never at quiet with my ſelfe. And for that I led an ill kind of life, and was not willing to take any paines, (vnleſſe it were in roguery) I loſt that with eaſe, which I got with much labour. I was like vnto that wheele which conuayes water to your *Aqueducts*, no ſooner full, but preſently empty. I cared little for money, kept it leſſe, but alwayes imploy'd it ill. My money was the price of bloud, it was ſpent vpon Sepultures for dead bodies, on dead workes, and worldly vices. This was the vſe I put it to, and therefore it is no marvell, if it thriv'd no better with me. Eaſily it came, and eaſily it went. And in the end I loſt both it and my ſelfe, as you ſhall heare heereafter.

How it fared with Guzman *now he was rich.*

Flying from that miſchiefe, that might follow me, I went out of *Barcelona*, forſaking the rode-way, going by by-pathes from place to place, betaking my ſelfe to vnknowne tracks. I gaue out that I was to goe to *Sevill*, I framed excuſes, to be the better beleeved. I talkt of the Vowes that I had made, and inuented a thouſand other lyes; and for no other cauſe in the world, then to defeat the Spies of their purpoſe, and that they might not know what was become of me,

Guzman, *how he goes out of* Barcelona.

me, nor find the pricking of the Hare, that was now ſo farre before the hounds. The Mules were mine owne, my ſervant a new-comer, and vnacquainted with my trickes. I travell'd which way it pleaſed me, according as my mind ſerued me, or as it came firſt in my head; here to day, and to morrow in *France*, without ſtaying in any one ſet-place; and alwayes changing my cloathes: for I came not to any place where I might change my apparell, but I did it, being of no great charge, not paſsing a hundred Crownes or there-abouts.

proverb. *b* Oy aqui, mannana en Francia.

Guzman *comes to* Saragoça.

In this manner did I travell over all the Country, till I came to *Saragoſa*, receiving no ſmall contentment, that I was ſafely arrived in that noble and famous Citie. According as my youthfulneſſe did pricke me on, my money held out, and the Dames did incite me, ſo did I continue there ſome few dayes, though all, and many more had beene too little for to view and injoy it's greatneſſe: So faire and ſtrong were the buildings, ſo good the governement, ſo great the proviſion, all things ſo good cheape, and thoſe reaſonable rates, that me thought it had a ſmatch of *Italy*. In one only thing I found it very ſtrange, and to my ſeeming, at the firſt ſight, ſomewhat terrible: which was the harder for me to digeſt, and the worſe to be indured, for that I knew not the cauſe of it. And it was, to ſee, how men, knowing the condition of theſe women, and that euery litle occaſion is ſufficient for them to make their longings lawes, forming bodies of ſhadowes, would put a bridle vpon thē, leſt by loſing that *decorum* & reſpect which they owe to their deceaſed husbands, aſſuming too much libertie vnto them, they were likely to ſtumble on a thouſand blockes, that might be an occaſion of their falling, and cauſe them to runne on headlong to the vtter ruine of their reputation, which in a woman being once loſt, is never againe to be recovered.

His like, and diſlike of Saragoça.

The cuſtome in Saragoça *concerning widowes.*

It was my hap to walke through a ſpatious ſtreet, which they call the *Coſſo*, which though it made a faire ſhow, yet was it much graced by a handſome widow, that was young and well-favoured, and to my ſeeming of good both wealth and qualitie. I made a ſtand to view her; ſhe likewiſe ſtood ſtill, and would not away: ſhe knew well enough of what diſeaſe I was ſicke, but would take no notice of it, nor made any other ſemblance or ſhew vnto me, then as if neither I or ſhee had beene there, or as if wee had not ſeene one another. I made more turnes about her window, then a horſe doth about a Mill; (for they are not a few, that vſe daily the like kinde of fooleries,) yet did ſhee not ſhow her ſelfe either coy or ſcornfull vnto me, or that ſhe was offended with me for it. Nor did I once offer to ſpeake a word vnto her, till at laſt, ſhe ſeeming (me thought) vnto me, to waxe weary of this my fooliſh ſilence: I conceiued that ſhe ſaid to her ſelfe, what painted timbrell is this? what Peece without powder, that hath made me wait here theſe two long houres, and making ſtill proffers, as though he would ſhoot, hath not yet diſcharged his musket, nor ſo much as once opened his mouth. With that ſhe went her way; and I ſtood looking when ſhe ſhould returne: being now fully reſolved to let flye another arrow, to ſee if I could finde the former that I had loſt; but ſhe came no more in play, and ſo I miſt the marke that I meant to haue ſhot at. I went home to my lodging, and demanded of mine Hoſte, what ſhe was; but as it were accidentally, and in a careleſſe kinde of faſhion, without any the leaſt ſhow that I did it of ſet purpoſe, or for any intereſt of mine owne, giving him ſuch markes & tokens, whereby he might gueſſe whom I meant.

Proverb. *c* Perder vn virote, para emendat el aulesso.

This Gentle-woman (ſaid mine Hoſte) is a widow, and that not one, but many wayes, exceeding faire and beautifull. I would needs know of him how. He told me, ſo many, that every particular fairneſſe in her, were a ſufficient beautifying to any other woman. She is faire (as you ſee) in her face, ſhe is likewiſe faire in her Linage, being of the beſt deſcent in this Citie; ſhe is alſo faire in her wealth and riches, having much of her owne, and much by her husband; and aboue all, moſt faire in her diſcretion, for therein eſpecially doth her

her beautie exceed I ſaw the pot [d] was ſo full, that I was afraid, it would run ouer; and therefore I ſaid vnto mine Hoſte, that he might not runne himſelfe out of breath; How comes it then to paſſe, if ſhee be of that rank and qũality, as you ſay ſhe is, that her friends and kinſfolke do giue way, that ſuch a worthy Gentlewoman, ſhould run ſuch a deale of hazard, as ſhe does; for youth, beauty, riches, and liberty, can hardly walke out their ſtations without tripping, if not falling. How much better and ſafer were it, both for them, and her, to get her another good husband, and cauſe her to marry, then to ſuffer her to liue in this dangerous ſtate of widowhood. Wherevnto mine Hoſte replide; you ſay well Sir, but this cannot be done, but to her great loſſe and hinderance; for that very day, that ſhee ſhall betake her ſelfe to a ſecond marriage, ſhee is to looſe all the eſtate, which ſhee had by her former husband, which is no ſmall matter. But continuing ſtill a widow, ſhee ſhall be Vſufructuary of all that he left her, and enjoy it as long as ſhe liues.

Then ſaid I, O how hard a condition, how rigorous a clauſe is this? How much better were it to deale with this Gentlewoman, and ſuch other as ſhe is, as they vſe to do in *Italy*, whoſe husbands, when they dye, leaue their wiues a large legacy, diſpoſing it in that manner, that it be payd vnto them at the day of their mariage, declaring thereby, that they meerly left it them to that end. And this they doe, to the end that they may enjoy ſo great a benefit by a ſecond mariage, whereby their ſtate ſhall not only be advanced, but their honor likewiſe ſecured, which otherwiſe might chance to receiue ſome ſcandall. I was preſſing this argument a little more home vnto him; but he interrupted me & anſwered thus vnto me. Sir, hath not your worſhip oft heard ſay; *En cada tierra ſu vſo*; Every Country hath his cuſtome? This goes currant here, & that in *Italy*. And that other I am ſure is not vnknowne vnto you; *Cada loco, en ſu caſa ſabe mas, que el cuerdo en el agena*; Every foole is wiſer in his owne houſe, then a wiſe man is in anothers. Wherevnto I replyde; If there be no better Law then this, and if people ſhall ſuffer them-ſelues to be governed in this manner, I know well enough what I ſay, I tell you plainly, I like not of it, nor can I by any meanes approue it. And to this end it is alſo ſaid, *Al mal vſo, quebrarle la pierna*. A bad Cuſtome is better broken then kept. The legs of it are to be broken, that it may not ſtand any more in force. A holy good and juſt Law, ought to be grounded on reaſon. I am of your minde (ſayd mine Hoſte) but they that are more learned, then I am, would peradventure giue you better ſatisfaction then I can. Yet in my opiniõ, it ſeemeth to carry ſome force vvith it; and I am verily perſwaded, that that vvhich moued them to make this Law, vvas; not that a vvidow might not marry, but that being a vviddow, ſhee might not liue in want; and to take away all occaſion, leſt for lacke of conuenient maintenance, according to the condition of her qualitie, ſhee might fayle in her obligation, and vſe that ill, vvhich vvas inſtituted for good: ſo that the fault is the womans, though the puniſhment be the mans.

This mine honeſt Hoſte, did not halfe ſatisfie me with this (as he though) his ſound reaſon: vvherevpon, I entred into a diſcourſe, thinking vvith my ſelfe, vvhat kinde of creatures theſe vvomen be; vvho if you lead them by evill vvayes, they turne evill; if by good, vvorſe; and never ſhall you come to know what to make of them. They are the making or the marring of their houſe: The eſtabliſhers, or the deſtroyers thereof. In their running they trip, and in going they fall. And therefore their name ſutes vvell vvith their nature; being for this cauſe, called *Woman*, becauſe ſhe is a vvoe to man. She hath a ſmooth skinne, but a harſh nature; a ſoft tongue, but a hard heart; ſilken vvords, but ſowtage deeds. They ſeemed (me thought) vnto me, (pardon the courſnes of my compariſon) to be like vnto ſtraw, which if you let it ſtand in the field in its naturall place, vvithout laying it in ſuch roomes, vvhere it ought to be kept, it is preſerued by the vvinde and raine; but if you reſtraine and

Proverbe.
d Tan llena eſta la medida, que ha de vertir.

Guzman *argues with his Hoſte about this cuſtome.*

Proverbe.
e En cada tierra, ſu vſo.

Proverbe.
f Cada loco, ſabe mas en ſu caſa, que el cuerdo en el agena.

Proverbe.
g Al mal vſo, quebrarle la pierna.
Bad cuſtomes no: to be kept.

Proverbe.
h Muger, el mal ò el bien de ſu caſa.
Guzman *diſcourſeth of women.*

and ſtraiten it, clapping it vp cloſe in ſome litle private lodging, it will ſhoot it ſelfe out, and breake through the walls; nor ſhall you reape any other good of it, then that ſowre juice which it will yeld you, like vnto that of the ſowre Orange, affording much bitterneſſe, but no benefit. They knovv not hovv to keepe a meane in their actions, and leſſe in their loue or hate: Nor ever yet could they vſe a moderation in their cravings & deſirings. That much which they receiue they thinke it ſtill too little; and that little vvhich they giue, they alwayes thinke it too much. They are generally covetous; yet notvvithſtanding all theſe faults, naked is that houſe vvhere there is never a vvife. All vvill reele vvhere the Reele goes not. Where there is never a vvhite apron, there is no good order, the meate ill dreſt and the table ſluttiſh. As the breath of man doth vphold houſes, that they runne not to ruine and decay; ſo the ſteps of a vvell govern'd huſvvife, doth preſerue and multiply vvealth: And as a good Chine of Bacon doth make glorious porrige; and as a man becomes the ſtreets; ſo doth a vvoman adorne the houſe.

Proverbe. *i* Des dichada la caſa, don de las faldas faltan.

Proverbe. *b* Donde no ay chapines, no ay coſa bien pueſta.

But this is not a place to treat of their vertues. I come vnto mine owne, vvhich at that time vvere more then the vertues of *Tobacco*. I continued a vvhile diſcourſing vvith mine Hoſt, vvho made mee a large relation of many things concerning that City, as of its priviledges & liberties, from vvhich converſation of his I receiued ſo much content, and vvas ſo attentiue to his talke, that I would haue forgotten any other intertainment, to haue injoyed this his pleaſing diſcourſe. I may thanke my ſins that had brought me thither. I had taken an extreame cold in the Galley, which I vvas not yet vvell rid of; and finding my head ſtuft, I pluck't a handkercher out of my pocket, and blew my noſe, vvhich I had no ſooner puld thence, but I opened it, and look't therevpon, as if that Oyſter had afforded me a pearle, it being the manner & faſhion of that Countrey ſo to doe, (contrary to the rule of good manners) being a no leſſe ſlovenly, then common tricke amongſt them.

Guzman, *put into a needleſſe feare by mine Hoſtes meanes.*

The crafty Rogue mine Hoſte, perceiving vvhy I did it, and that I made, as it vvere, a ſcoffe of their cuſtomes, being a good ſpeaker (as he vvas) a proper handſome fellow, and a pleaſant; ſpeaking in a low voyce, & nodding his head towards me, ſoftly ſaid vnto me; Flie, Sir, Flie; Hide your ſelfe as ſoone as you can: Quickly, quickly, I ſay. Poore and miſerable man that vvas, O theſe his vvords, how ill did they ſound in my eares! O how my heart was ſcorcht vvith them, like the Partridge that is firſt ſinged in the fire, and afterwards to be put preſently on the ſpit! My feathers were ſinged and my pride abated. He had ſcarce made an end of his vvords, vvhen at two leapes, I had got me behinde the curtaines of the bed. Hee being ignorant of my villanies, though that I had done this innocently, and out of ſimplicitie as being ſtartled with the ſuddaineneſſe thereof: and ſo inſtantly breaking out into a loud laughter, he merrily ſayd vnto me; I perceiue, Sir, you are not troubled with the Gout: by my faith Sir, you are a nimble actiue Gentleman: your Worſhip may now come forth, if you pleaſe; as God vvould haue it, it is nothing: the ſtorme is paſt, the coaſt cleare, and you may ſafely ſhevv your ſelfe vpon the hatches. I came forth from thence as pale as aſhes, my colour was quite gone, and death appeared in my face; & did much vvonder at my ſelfe, conſidering the great feare and perturbation I then vvas in, that the ſuddaine aſtoniſhment, and the affright it had put me into, had not made me leape out of the vvindovv into the ſtreete.

I came out at laſt, but whether more amazed, or aſhamed, I cannot tell you; but I ſought to diſſemble it the beſt I could, that I might not raiſe vp that duſt which might chance to put out mine eies. Being now come again to my ſelfe, I ask't him what was the myſterie of this, & what he meant by it: I pray Sir, ſaid hee, content your ſelfe, reſt you quiet, & giue me preſently two ſhillings from you. I put my hand in my pocket, and threw him forth a Royall, and when

when I ſaw he was quiet, hauing by this time laught himſelfe weary, I began a-freſh to aske him, why he demanded two ſhillings of me, and what was that, that had paſſed before, when hee bid me flie, and goe hide my ſelfe? Hee falling into a new veine of laughing, louder then before, looking cheerily and merrily vpon mee, ſaid vnto me: Sir, I haue here a *Procuration* ſubſtituted by the *Adminiſtrators* of an *Hoſpitall*, for the recovering of certaine duties and rights of thoſe, vvhich come to my houſe, which I am to challenge of them, if they commit any forfeyture, contayned in the ſaid *Procuration*. From this time forward, your Worſhip may goe over all the world by vertue of theſe my Letters Patent, vvithout any farther moleſtation to your perſon, or your purſe. With this Royall, you haue paid for your entrance, and haue free licence to be gone, when you liſt. When I heard him tell me this, what with that vvas paſt, and what with this preſent gamball, I vvas ſo confounded therewith, that that might be ſaid to me, which was to a Gentle-woman, that is well knowne, who hauing matcht her ſelfe with a new Chriſtian, for that he was rich, and ſhee poore; who being with childe by him, and finding her ſelfe (it being the firſt that ſhee had gone vvithall) out of eaſe, and in much paine, talking vvith another Gentle-woman that was an acquaintance and friend of hers; ſhee ſaid vnto her; In good faith, I finde my ſelfe ſo ill, that I know not what to ſay vnto it. I vvas never in my life, in that [l] Iewiſh taking, as I am now in. No marvell (ſaid the other) hauing a Iew within you; and bearing him about you (as you doe) in your bodie. And in good faith, my ſelfe (like this Gentle-woman) was in that feare at that time, that if mine Hoſts laughing and jeſting with me, had not quickly rid me of this doubt, I verily beleeue, I ſhould haue fallen downe dead for feare. His breath, put breath into me; his liuelineſſe, life: And ſeeing him thus ſet vpon the merry pin, I ſaid vnto him; [m] *Cuerpo de mi*; As I am an honeſt man; ſince I haue paid the penaltie, I will know, by your leaue, what is the fault I haue committed. For that Iudges ſentence is rigorous and vnjuſt, that ſhall condemne me in charges, for that which I never did, and ſhall not giue me a diſcharge for it. For it may be, that both parties being heard, my money may be return'd me backe againe. Becauſe your Worſhip (ſaies mine Hoſt) ſeemes to be a worthy diſcreet Gentle-man, I will reade vnto you a bede-roll of ſuch ſtatutes as I haue here for the recovery of thoſe amercements, & thoſe penalties, wherewith they are to be puniſhed, who incurre the danger of them. This Royall is a fee, that goes to the Beedle for your entrance. Onely I ſhall intreat your Worſhip to haue the patience to ſtay a while, till I ſhall goe runne, and fetch it you. He went his way, and returnes againe in a trice, bringing a great booke vvith him vnder his arme, wherein he ſaid, he did ſet downe the admittance, or matriculation of thoſe that were made free of that Incorporation, and taking out ſome few ſheets of paper, that lay looſe in the booke, he began to reade ſome of their ſtatutes and ordinances, whereof I will repeat ſuch vnto you, as remaine in my memory, with a proteſtation which I make vnto you, to acquaint you with thoſe few hereafter, which ſhall occurre to my remembrance. And they ſpeake after this manner.

A tale of a Gentle-woman, that marryed with a new Chriſtian.

Proverbe.

[l] Tener el Iudio en el cuerpo: *That is*, eſtar con miedo: *To be in a great feare.* Covarr. verb. Iudio, pag 492.

[m] *A common oath, or aſſeveration in* Spaine: Engliſh, *Body of mee.*

The ſtatutes and conſtitutions of *Gotam Colledge*: OR, *The Hoſpitall of Fooles.*

WE *REASON*, abſolute Monarch, and ſole Soveraigne of the vvorld, not acknowledging any ſuperiour, or in any ſort equall vnto vs, for the redreſſing and reforming of mens manners againſt the obſtinate and perverſe wilfulneſſe of folly, & all other her wickedneſſe, which hath taken ſuch deepe root, and multiplyed it ſelfe in that abundance, to our notable hurt and detriment, the prejudice of our Royall prerogatiue, & the great damage of all mankinde;

kinde;for to avoyde thoſe greater inconveniences, which the corruption of ſo dangerous and ſpreading a canker may cauſe, that it may not creepe more and more vpon our louing ſubjects (whoſe welfare and ſafety we tender as our owne)and that it may not dilate it ſelfe any farther,to their vtter vndoing, and finall deſtruction; Wee will and command, haue and doe ordaine, as alſo doe publiſh and proclaime theſe our Lawes,to all thoſe that are already borne, or ſhall be borne hereafter in ſucceeding ages, by the power of our Regall authoritie, and by the generall conſent of our Councell of State, that they be taken and held for ſuch,as are now by vs eſtabliſhed and confirmed,and that they be punctually kept, religiouſly obſerued, and fully complyde withall,both in all, and every the leaſt point or parcell, herein ſpecified,or contayned, as you will anſwere it to your perill,and incurre that grievous puniſhment, which to thoſe that ſhall violate and infringe theſe our Lawes,is in that caſe provided.

Moreover,becauſe the firſt thing that we are in our princely care to conſider of,is, that all due, fitting, and convenient proviſion be made,for the quicke expedition, and good execution of Iuſtice, we in our wiſdome haue thought it meet,to nominate and appoint certaine officers,of good both ſufficiencie, and truſt,ſuch as ſhall be requiſite and needfull for this ſo weighty and important a buſineſſe, And therefore we doe depute,nominate,and aſſigne for Iudges,good *Policie*, *Curioſitie*, and *Solicitude*;to the end,that they, as if it were vs our ſelfe, and as repreſenting vs in our owne proper perſon, may truly and vprightly adminiſter juſtice,giuing them by vertue of our power,full,& plenary authority, to apprehend,ſet at liberty,and puniſh, any manner of perſon,or perſons whatſoever vpon juſt cauſe,referring our ſaid Iudges to be ordered and directed by theſe our lawes and ordinances, and not to differ from the true intent and meaning of them,to the damnifying of the ſubject,and the diſhonouring of vs. Furthermore,both for the preſent,& ever hereafter,do we ſubſtitute as elder Brothers of this Fraternitie,& chiefe Wardens of this Incorporation,all thoſe that be jealous obſervers, every one according to his place and merit, and hee that ſhall be moſt jealous,ſhall be moſt honoured. Our Atturney Generall, ſhall be *Diligence*,and our Bedle,that ſhall warne them to the Court, ſhall be *Fame*.

1 Firſt of all therefore,any perſon,or perſons,that ſhall goe walking & talking to themſelues in the ſtreets, or ſhall doe the like, when they are all alone, or at home in their private houſe, we condemne them for fooles for three moneths, within which terme of time, we will and command, that they abſtaine therefrō, and reforme this their foolery. And in caſe,they ſhall not amend this fault, our pleaſure is, that for the better accompliſhment thereof, they haue a longer and more peremptory time ſet them downe, of ſome three Termes, or more; within which limited time, they ſhall bring in a certificate of their ſaid reformation and amendment, vpon paine of being held for approved, attained, and convicted fooles, and accordingly command our foreſaid elder Brothers, and Ancients of the Company to bring in their evidence,& to finde them guilty,& to ſee thē afterwards ſeverely puniſhed, as violaters & breakers of our Lawes.

2 *Item*. They that ſhall walke through any publike or private place,that is paved with bricke, or with ſtone, and ſhall goe with a great deale of care and ſtudie,pitching either their toes,or their heeles,in ſuch a direct line, ſide, or corner of the ſaid bricks, or ſtones, ſhall be condemned in the ſame puniſhment as aforeſaid.

3 *Item*, They that walke along the ſtreets, caſting their cloake vnder one arme, and ſtretching out their hand, or their finger, ſhall goe as they paſſe along, either patting the wall, or making ſtreakes, and Indentures with their fingers ends,let them be admitted ſchollers of our ſaid Houſe or Colledge;provided alwayes,that they haue ſix moneths of approbation granted vnto them; In which time, we command them to be reformed. Otherwiſe, and in default thereof, we haue already ordained, and doe now ordaine; That the Warden,

Sub-warden,

Sub-warden, or Deane of this our Colledge, and in their abſence, the Senior-fellow, put his coat vpon him (according to the cuſtome of the Houſe) his cap, and his bable, and other ornaments belonging to his degree, and ever afterwards be held a profeſſed foole.

Item, They that ſhall play at bowles, or at billiards, when they haue throwne out their bowle, if by chance it ſhall runne awry, and that they with it, ſhall alſo wry their body; thinking, that which way they leane, the bowle ſhould run inclining to that ſide, and governe it ſelfe, as they direct it with theſe their mimicke geſtures, ſhall dye in this their ſinne; and we muſt declare them for brothers already profeſſed. And we farther command, that the like be alſo vnderſtood of thoſe, who vſe the like Apiſh action, ſeeing ſomething fall downe from ſome high place to the ground, ſhrinking their ſhoulders, wrying their mouthes, or turning vp the whites of their eyes. And likewiſe of thoſe, who hauing vizards on their faces (as in masks & revels) ſhall vnder thoſe, goe making of ſtrange geſticulations, either by frowning, or ſmiling, or biting of the lip, as if in ſo doing, it did really and truly ſeeme vnto them, that theſe variations, and alterations of their countenances, were taken notice of by ſome outward appearance, vvhen as being thus masked, it is impoſſible, that any inward geſtures of theirs ſhould be outwardly diſcerned And of thoſe, who do counterfeit and imitate the like, not knowing whether they doe the ſame or no. Or if in cutting out ſome thing with a bad paire of ſheeres, or with a dull-edged knife, or taking paines with any the like vntoward inſtrument, they ſhall draw their mouth on t'one ſide like a Playce; lill out their tongue, like a Calfe; wrinckle vp their cheekes, forehead and eyes, like a ſcorched peece of parchment, and ſuch Idiot-like poſtures, our vvill and pleaſure is, that they in like manner, ſhall take the degree of fooles. 4

Item, They, who expecting their ſervant, (hauing ſent him forth on an errand) if in caſe he be ſomewhat long a comming, ſhall ſtay wayting for him at the doores, or windowes of his houſe, thinking that by his ſtaying there for him, he will make the more haſte, and come the ſooner, wee condemne all ſuch to retract and acknowledge their errour, vpon paine, that in caſe they ſhall refuſe ſo to doe, they be ſeverely proceeded againſt. 5

Item, They that draw their cards vvith a great deale of leyſure, ſeeking by degrees, by a little and a little, to diſcover at this, or that other corner, firſt whether it colour right, and afterwards, diſcourſing and arguing the caſe, whether it be ſuch or ſuch a card, they themſelues knowing for certaine, that for all this their laborious lingring and delay, they ſhall never a whit the ſooner encounter, or miſſe, then if they had preſently taken it vp, and made ſhow thereof, as ſoone as it was dealt into their hand; we condemne them to the ſame acknowledgment, as aforeſaid. And for ſome cauſes mouing vs therevnto, vve haue thought fit, to giue them free leaue and licence, without incurring any farther penalty, to follow their ancient cuſtome; but with this condition; That as oft, as he, or they, offending in this manner, ſhall ſee an Ancient of the Houſe, or paſſe by his chamber doore, he ſhall make an acknowledgment of this his errour, by putting off his hat. 6

Item, They that are gotten vp into ſome vpper roome, and either ſitting or ſtanding in ſome vvindow, or open gallery, ſhall from thence ſpit downe; whether it be thereby to take (as it were vvith a plummet) the evenneſſe of the building; or to ſee, if he can make his ſpittle to light juſt vpon ſuch a ſtone, or ſome one marke or other, which his eye hath choſen out; we ſtrictly charge & command them, that they retract and reforme this their folly, and that vpon ſhort warning, vpon paine of being taken for publike profeſſors of the ſame. 7

Item, They who travelling vpon the vvay, ſhall enquire of thoſe paſſengers, whom they meet withall, how farre it is to ſuch a bayting-place, or to ſuch a Towne, thinking, that by this their asking, they ſhall the ſooner reach vnto it, 8

we condemne them in the like penalty, injoyning them for penance, the badnes of the vvay, the Carryers jading of them, and mine Hosts cozening of them: Not inflicting any greater punishment, out of the hope of their amendment.

9 *Item*, They who when they make water, goe streaking the walls with their vrine, as if they were busie about some curious delineations, or framing some Antick-figures, or shall pisse in the dust, making I know not what scattering angles, and Circles; or in some chinke in a wall, or little hole in the ground; Wee will and command, that they doe so no more, vpon paine (in case they shall persevere therein) to be punished by their Iudge, and delivered over to an elder Brother, or one of the Ancients of the House.

10 *Item*, They who when they heare the clocke strike, count not the houres, but aske others, what's a clocke; it being more fit and facile for them, to tell it themselues. Which carelesnesse of theirs, proceedeth often times from the abundance of a cholericke kinde of humour; We therefore strictly charge and command all such, that they haue an especiall care of their health; and in case they be poore, and not able to be at the charge of physicke, that then one of the Masters of our Hospitall, cause them to be carryed thither, giuing order that some preparatiues be provided for them of wilde Cherries, or sharpe sowre Orange, lest otherwise they might runne the danger of losing their wits, and quickly turne either fooles, or mad men.

11 *Item*, They who haue but a little meat before them, and many mouthes a going, shall divert themselues from their feeding, to entertaine the company with this tale, or that discourse, taking more pleasure (like a sort of pratling fooles as they are) to fill other mens eares, then their owne bellies; by which meanes they often rise a hunger'd: For as much, as these are dyde in the woll, and come ready drest to our hands, we remit them to be registred amongst your incurable fooles. And therefore command, that there be an especiall care taken of them. For these are in the 7th degree, and are almost in their full height to be taken.

12 *Item*, They who out of covetousnesse, or any other cause or reason whatsoever, so as they be not driuen therevnto of force and necessitie, (for in such cases, Lawes are not to be kept) when they goe to market, buy the worser sort of victuals for the sauing of their purse, and spending the lesse in their houses; as if a Physitian, an Apothecary, or a Barber-Surgeon (who all the yeare long come to your houses, to cure those diseases, which were caused by bad and vnwholesome meats) were not dearer by much, then any the best meat they could buy: Wee condemne them to a generall disgracing of themselues, declaring them (as before declared) to be professed fooles; forbidding them from henceforth to doe the like, vpon paine of being committed over to the Curate, Sexton, or Graue-master of his, or their Parish, to be punished either more, or lesse, according to the hurt that shall grow thereby.

13 *Item*, They who in the summer-nights, as also some in the winter, sit, or stand, till their breech, or their feet ake, in some open Court or Tarasse, gaping and gazing on the heavens, & from the cloudes of the ayre, goe forming the figures of Serpents, and the shapes of Lyons, and so of other beasts, we pronounce and declare them to be brothers of this Fraternitie: But if in this kinde of sort, or the like manner, they shall thus entertaine themselues with these bables, that they may thereby, giue place and time in their owne houses, as some vse to doe for their owne interest and private gaine, that they may see the signe of *Taurus*, *Aries*, and *Capricorne*, which is a most foule and dishonest case, we condemne them (though accounted of the Brotherhood) not to be capable of the priviledges thereof, nor that they be admitted into their Senate-house, nor that they haue any waxe lights allowed them on Festivall dayes.

14 *Item*, They who wearing either blacke shoes, or white, or of any other coloured velvet, shall, for to take away the dust from them, or to giue them a better glasse, make them cleane with their cloake, as if that were not of a more noble

ble and better condition, and much more coſtly, and that for to make them cleane and handſome, they ſhall leaue that foule and duſty, we condemne them for neat fooles. And in caſe they be Noble-men, for their greater honour, vvee vvill haue them to be taken for three-piled fooles.

Item, They who hauing paſt ſome few dayes, without ſeeing their friends & acquaintance, when afterward, meeting one another by chance, they ſay each to other; Are you aliue Sir? Is it poſſible, that there ſhould be any ſuch man vpon the face of the earth? Which notwithſtanding that it be a kinde of indearing of a mans loue, yet muſt we haue them inrolled amongſt the reſt, being there are other more proper formes of ſalutation, vvithout asking a man, whether he be vpon earth, or aliue, when as he vvas never yet in heaven, and ſees him ſtand juſt before him. And vvee farther will and command, that all ſuch haue a ſigne or marke of *Admiration*, ſet vpon them; and that (during our pleaſure) they never goe without it. 15

Item, They who after the hearing of Maſſe, and when they haue made an end of their *Ave-Maries*, at the tingling of the bell, or at any other houre, when a ſigne is giuen in the Church, that Service is ended, ſhall ſay to ſuch a one; I kiſſe your hands Sir, howbeit this phraſe of ſpeech is ſuppoſed to be no other then an acknowledgment of thanks, the other hauing bowed his body towards him, or giuen him the good day, or good night; yet notwithſtanding we condemne them for fooles, and command them to abjure this manner of ſpeaking, vpon puniſhment that they ſhall carry this name with them to their graue, and while they liue, be pointed at for their folly, for that they more eſteeme of a falſe and lying *bezo las manos*, I kiſſe your hands (which they never kiſſe, nor vvould kiſſe them, though they were the Biſhops hands, and much leſſe thoſe of other inferiour perſons, whereof ſome haue them full of ſcabs, of ſcurfe, or leproſie, and other ſome, with nayles either ready to drop off, or full of [n] durt, looking like *Caveary*, that they would be ready to turne a mans ſtomacke) then to ſay God giue you good night, or good morrow. And the like command, vve lay vpon thoſe, who make anſwere with the like ſalutation, at another mans ſneezing, when they may as well ſay, God bleſſe you. 16

Item, They who come to a mans houſe to inquire for him, and asking vvhether he be within, or no; it being anſwered vnto him, or them, that he is not vvithin, but is gone abroad, returne a ſecond time to reply: Is he then gone abroad? we condemne them as rebels, and contumacious people, for repeating that demand, whereof they had already ſatisfaction. 17

Item, They who hauing hit their ſhin, or their toes againſt ſome ſharpe ſtone, by ſtumbling vnawares vpon it, and with a great deale of fleame, and full of choller, returne backe againe to looke vpon it at leyſure with a fixed eye, and a troubled minde, wee condemne them in the ſame penalty, and command them, either to remoue it out of the way, or that they doe not offer to looke vpon it, vpon paine of farther increaſing their puniſhment. 18

Item, They, who blowing their noſe, in the taking away of their handkercher, looke ſteadily vpon it, and pry into it, as if ſome pearles had dropt from thence, and that they would ſafely lay them vp for feare of loſing, we condemne them for brothers of our ſaid foundation, and that as oft as they ſhall offend in this fault, they giue an almes to the Hoſpitall of incurable fooles, grounding our reaſon of this mulct vpon this, that they ſhall hereafter haue others doe as much for them. 19

When he was come thus farre, me thought he wanted onely the bell to toll him off. I was ready to burſt my heart with laughing, and the bede-roll was ſo long, that I would not ſuffer him to goe on any farther, and therefore interrupting him in his reading, I ſaid vnto him; Now (my good Hoſte) ſeeing you haue done me the favour to adviſe me of theſe things, that I may thereby know how to correct my errors; tell me I pray you, where-abouts this Hoſpi-

[n] *The Spaniſh word is*; Vñas cayreladas. *The French renders it*, Ongles ſi lanternes, & ſi ſalement colorez.

tall is, who is the Principall, and what lands and rents belong vnto it. Sir (ſaid mine Hoſte) for that there are ſo many diſeaſed and ſicke perſons, and that the Hoſpitall is incapable, and poore, conſidering the few that are vvell, and the many that are ſicke; it was agreed vpon, that they ſhould change their lodgings and be ſcattered vp and downe in divers other places, ſo that now all the world in a manner appertaines to this Hoſpitall. Where then (ſaid I vnto him) ſhall thoſe diſcreet and wiſe men, that remaine yet vntouched, be ſo conveniently lodged, that they may be out of the danger of this infection? Herevnto hee made anſwere, I heare (Sir) that there is but one onely man in all the vvorld, that is free from this contagion; but as yet I could never learne who that one ſhould be. Every particular man, thinkes that he is this ſound party, but few, beſides himſelfe, will beleeue it.

The certaineſt newes that I can giue you hereof, is, That there is a great Enginer lately found out, that will vndertake to put into an egge-ſhell, as many as ſhall be abſolutely free of this diſeaſe, and does farther make offer, that together with their perſons, he will likewiſe thruſt into the ſaid egg-ſhell, all their goods, lands, and rents, and that notwithſtanding all this, they ſhall haue ſo much elbow-roome, that they ſhall ſcarce touch one another. I could hold no longer, but muſt needs tell him; This (mine Hoſte) is a malicious interpretation, and a matter of meere waggerie, and no leſſe large then the Hoſpitall it ſelfe. But, being well conſidered, I finde that it is very true; in regard we are all of vs but men, and haue all ſinned in our father *Adam*. Our converſation had continued ſomewhat longer, and vve ſhould haue made an end of reading of the ſtatutes of the ſaid houſe, if the night had not haſted away ſo faſt. Beſides, I had a great deſire to haue another fling at the widow, and did long to fetch a turne or two before her lodging, to ſee how the world went there. So leauing the reſt to the next dayes reading, I willed my ſervant to bring mee a very gallant ſute of cloathes, vvhich I had in my trunke, and taking my ſword vnder mine arme, I went out of the houſe, and walkt about the City, ſeeking my fortune. I went ſtalking through thoſe ſtreets in a careleſſe kinde of faſhion, with a minde ſo well pleaſed, and a heart ſo contented, that I would not haue chang'd my preſent ſtate, with any Prince in Chriſtendome; thinking my ſelfe to be ſuch a tall fellow of my hands, that no man was able to ſtand in my vvay.

Guzman goes by night abroad about the City.

At the vvinding of a corner, vvhere two ſtreets met together, and made a croſſe, I met with a couple of young wenches, the one was a reaſonable handſome one, and might very well haue ſeru'd the turne; the other, ſeemed to be her ſervant. I made towards them, and they did not ſtep aſide; I ſtopt them in their way, and they ſtood ſtill. I began to talke and diſcourſe with them, and they with me, & in that kind & courteous manner, that I was as it were raviſhed with their company. I could not put any queſtion to this Gentlewoman, wherevnto ſhee had not a ready anſwere; ſhe would not giue an inch of her ground, nor let any Card that came from me, paſſe without a Vye. There was not any one word, that could come amiſſe to her. I went about to diſ-inwrap her hands of her mantle, that I might come to touch them; but the crafty hyleding, ſeeming ſomewhat ſqueamiſh, ſtrayning courteſie, did in a pretty kind of faſhion faigne a defending of her ſelfe from that friendly violence, yet did ſhee not make any great haſty retreat, but did ſuffer me to come on in that cunning manner, and was ſo nimble finger'd withall, that in that ſhort ſpace of time, that I vvas buſying my hands about her face, and her breſt, ſhe vvith hers was not idle, but putting them into my pocket, tooke thence that little, that I had. I was hot vpon the buſineſſe, and in this heat of mine, I had no feeling of this ache; nor had it beene poſſible for me to haue beene ſenſible of it, had I taken the beſt care that I could. For, at ſuch times, and vpon ſuch fits, our memory, and our vnderſtanding failes vs, onely our will is then occupied. She had

He meetes with two wenches.

His wench cozens him.

had no ſooner made her market,& ſtript me of a matter of ſome hundred Royals,but ſhe ſaid vnto me;enough (good Sir) I beſeech you no more for Gods ſake,leaue off while it is well,and do that (as you loue mee) which I ſhall aduiſe you vnto: Let me then intreat you Sir, that you will haue the patience to ſtay a while at the turning of this ſtreet,through which you ſaw vs now come, for the next houſe ſaue one,at the end of this ſtreet,is mine; we goe but a little waies off here,to fetch a peece of worke,that I haue put forth to doing, I ſhall make no ſtay,but come backe by and by,and be inſtantly with you. Wee vvill not tarry ſcarce the turning of your hand, and then you ſhall goe in with mee into my houſe; for there lodges no body, but I, and my maid, and there you ſhall ſee I will be at your ſervice,as you ſhall be pleaſed to command mee; beſides,you ſhall heare mee ſing,and play in that manner, that you neuer heard a ſweeter voice, nor ſaw a better or quicker hand vpon a Virginall. Get you thither(my deare)whither I haue directed you, that you may not be ſeene to haue come along with me;for I am a marryed woman, of honourable parents, well reported of by my neighbours,& generally well thought of, and I would not willingly looſe this their good opinion; yet you ſeeme vnto mee to be a a gentleman of that quality and nobleneſſe, that I would willingly hazard both my perſon, my reputation, and whatſoever elſe is deareſt vnto mee, for your ſake. I beleeu'd her in all that ſhee had ſaid; and did now thinke my ſelfe as cock-ſure of her,as if I had had her already betweene mine armes. I did as ſhee commanded mee, ſtanding cloſe vpright againſt the corner, where I continued from halfe houre paſt eight of the night, till the clocke had ſtrooke eleuen, and ever now and then me thouggt I had a glimpſe of them, and that I ſaw the bulkes of them afarre of, making towards mee, but I might as well haue ſtaid there till this day,for any comming againe of theirs. The deuill a Miſtres, or maid of them, that I could ſee any more. When I ſaw it was ſo late, and that they ſtaid ſo long, I imagined with my ſelfe,that ſhee had ſome Gallant to her ſervant,and that ſhe being gone to his houſe, hee would not giue her leaue to returne. For the which I did blame her,but not much; for my ſelfe would haue done the like by her, if ſhe had come once within my doores. I perſwaded my ſelfe,that ſhe could not helpe it; and that it was not in her hands to do as ſhe would: and ſaid to my ſelfe; *Aun,ſeran buenas mangas,deſpues de Paſcua*: It is no great matter; A paire of [o] ſleeues will not doe amiſſe after Eaſter. What is not to day, may be to morrow: and as good then as now. There are more dayes in the weeke then one; as there are more fingers then one, on the hand. Thus goes the world;one day followes on the [p] necke of another; but it is the faſhion of it, To be all for the preſent. I tooke notice of the doore againſt another time,and went walking along another vvay, as I was led along by my deſires. Anon after, I returned thither againe,vvhither vvhen I vvas come,all was very huſh and quiet;there was no memory nor ſigne of any one body in all that ſtreet,nor at any doore or vvindow,nor noyſe to be heard, nor any noſe, no not ſo much as of a dogge, or of a cat ,that peeped out. I ſtood prying and watching from one ſide to the other; I fetcht many turnes, I cought, hauk't, and ſpit; I made a noyſe with my feet,but all in vaine,and to no purpoſe in the world. In the end, hauing ſtaid there a great vvhile, and being now growne vveary vvith vvalking,as vvell as vvith expectation, I vvas reſolued to get me home to mine Inne,as diſpairing of any good hopes for that night: Which as I vvas about to do,I might eſpie from a little vvindow a countenance, vvhich by its interpreter,the tongue ſeemed to be a womans, who had thruſt out her head at a little vvindow, vvhoſe face I coold not ſee; or if I had I could not giue you any account thereof,for that it vvas ſo darke. I began to talke youthfully to her,(or rather fooliſhly, for ſuch kinde of parlees are but fooleries,) but ſhe told me that ſhe was none of thoſe I lookt after,marry ſhe had a maid, that I might happely make loue vnto, that was a drudge of the kitchen, and ſcoured

Proverbe.
o Buenas ſon mangas, deſpues de paſcua. *The meaning whereof, is, when that which wee deſire,comes to vs ſomewhat latter then wee could haue wiſht it.* Covarr. verb. mangas.

Proverbe.
p Vn dia,viene tras otro.

Guzman *talkes with a wench from a window.*

ſcoured her pots and her pannes. But be ſhe as ſhe may be; what ever ſhe were, ſhe ſpake ſo well, and intertained mee ſo for the time, that I quite forgot my ſelfe for the ſpace of two houres that we interchanged talke, all that long while ſeeming vnto me but one ſhort minute. But loe, (if it offend not thine eares,) whilſt wee were thus pratling, comes out a deuilliſh curre, one of *Belzebubs* whelpes, which as it ſhould ſeeme, flew eagerly forth of one of the neighbours houſes thereabouts, & fell a barking & balling ſo loud, that it was not poſſible for vs to heare or vnderſtand one another: The window was high, the woman ſpake very low, there was a pretty freſh winde abroad, and the dog did ſo lay on, and ſpend his mouth ſo faſt, that being willing to remedy that fault, I groaped with my feet for a ſtone, that I might throw it at him, and not finding any, I caſt downe mine eyes to the ground, and I might perceiue neere vnto the wall, a little copped blacke thing, which I tooke to be a ſtone. Preſently I catcht it vp in my hand, but it was not a ſtone, nor nothing ſo hard; but had quickly found that I had beſmeared my fingers; ſought luſtily to ſhake it off, and giuing a flirt with my hand to fling it away from mee, I gaue my fingers ends ſuch a ſmart jerke againſt the wall, that I was much payned therewith; & to eaſe the tingling that I had in my nayles, I clapt my fingers to my mouth ere I was aware: but I forthwith repented mee of what I had done. My often ſpitting would not mend the matter, and therefore I ſought for helpe with my other hand from my pocket, thinking to take thence my handkercher; but there was no ſuch thing to be found. This ſtrucke mee in my dumpes, and made me melancholly, to thinke how the ſcuruy harlotry had conycatcht me. And I was ſo angry beſides, to ſee how my mouth, and my hands were inammelled, that with very choller, my eyes were ready to ſtart out of my head; my guts were likewiſe in a good forwardnes to haue leapt out of my mouth, being vpon the point to vomit out of my ſtomacke all that I had within me, as thoſe women vſe to do, that haue a fit of the Mother. And the more to anger me, this ſcuruy curre did ſo perſecute me with his bawling, that my Gentlewoman was forced to with-draw her-ſelfe, and to ſhut to her window, & I driuen to looke out ſome thing, to rid mee of this odious and filthy ſtinke. I rubb'd my teeth againſt the wall, as well as I could, thinking that way to doe my ſelfe good. Well, when I ſaw it would be no better, I returned in a great rage to my Inne, with purpoſe to returne the next night to the ſame place, to ſee if I could by chance meete with that good wench, that had ſold me this Greyhound.

How Guzman *was beſmear'd.*

CHAP. II.

Guzman de Alfarache *goes from Saragoça. and comes to Madrid where he turnes Merchant, and is married. He breakes his credit, and turnes bankrupt. He treats of womens ſubtill trickes. And of the inconvenience of counter-writings; and of their remedy.*

AS ſoone as I came home, I got me to the well, and feigning that I would refreſh my ſelfe there a while, (becauſe I would not haue my ſervant acquainted with this diſgracefull accident) I will'd him to drawe me vp two buckets of water. Which when hee had done; with the one, I vvaſht my hands, and with the other my mouth, hauing almoſt rubbed off the skinne from either, and yet did not reſt contented and fully ſatisfied of my ſelfe, I had taken ſuch a villanous conceit of this filthy odour, or rather ordure. I could not fall aſleepe for my life, nor ſettle my ſelfe to reſt all night; for thinking on that truth which the wench had told mee, that I ſhould never while I liu'd meete with a quicker or a nimbler hand. See now whether ſhe ly'd or no? I am ſure I ſhall never forget her words, ſo

ſo good cauſe haue I to remember them, for that which fell afterwards. The *Grecian Helen* (I aſſure you) nor the *Romane Lucretia*, cannot be more, or oftner remembred by others, then ſhe by mee. And yet, when I was thinking on her, the others converſation would ſeeke to put that out of my head, one ſeeking to thruſt out the other, ſo that I was as it were diſtracted betweene them both. I would haue had them (like nayles) to haue driuen out one another, that I might haue heard no more newes of them. And when I began to ſhut the doore of my remembrance to theſe, this ſame ſcuruy copped pibble ſtone came flying in at a by-window, the very conceit whereof, began a-freſh to turne my ſtomacke. What a bad night muſt we needs make of this, hauing to doe with ſo many? For if [q] *Duero*, did compaſſe mee in on the one ſide, *Peñatajada*, did girt me in on the other. But when my hat was come to its colour, & that I had conſidered a little better on the buſineſſe, I ſaid vvith my ſelfe; If this poore tricke (not for any great hurt that it did doe me) but only for that it was a tricke put vpon me) I can thus hardly digeſt, and that it makes my ſtomacke to riſe, as oft as I thinke vpon it; how will my kinde kindred in *Genoa*, digeſt thoſe gudgeons, that they ſwallowed? how broke that famous jeſt, which ſticks ſo cloſe to their ribs? If ſuch a [r] toy as this, a meere trifle, not worth the talking of, moue my patience ſo much, how would it haue wrought vpon mee, had it beene a matter of moment? Thus did I paſſe away the night, thinking one while on this, another on that; what I ſhould do with my ſelfe the next day, how beſtow my time, what cloathes I ſhould weare? or whether I were beſt to put on my great chaine, which I kept in ſtore for high Holy-dayes, and great Feaſts? what part of the Towne I ſhould quarter out? what words I ſhould ſpeake, to moue her affection? or what preſent I ſhould ſend her, to oblige her vnto me? Then throwing all theſe things out of my minde, as if they had never beene in my thought, I ſhould runne by and by backe againe (like a giddy-headed Spaniel) beating and queſting vpon the old haunt, ſaying to my ſelfe: If it ſhould be my good hap, to meete with this yong crafty harlotry to morrow, what ſhall I do vnto her? Shall I lay hands on her? No: Shall I take that from her, vvhich ſhee filcht out of my pocket? Neither: What ſhall I doe then? Shall I craue her better acquaintance, and deſire her friendſhip? Leaſt of all. Embracing therefore none of theſe, I adviſed with my ſelfe, and ſayd; Why ſhould I trouble my ſelfe to ſeeke after her? To what end? I know the goodneſſe of her hand already, and how quicke & nimble her fingers be, be it for Virginall, Harpe or any thing elſe that you will put them to. Let her go; God be her good ſpeed; and much good may it doe her with them, [s] *Alla ſe lo aya Marta con ſus pollos*: I could wiſh they had beene more for her ſake. Well may ſhee thriue with them. For if ſhee had not ſtood in need of them, and beene in want, I aſſure my ſelfe, ſhee would never put her-ſelfe to ſo much danger. I began to looke a little better into my ſelfe, and when I had vvell conſidered what I vvas, and knew mine owne condition, and the courſes that I had run, I whiſpered my ſelfe in the eare, and ſaid; What complaints will not the butcherly Wolfe frame againſt the poore ſilly Lambe, accuſing him of troubling the water when he came to drinke, that he might picke a hole in his coat? A luſty ſtrong Mule can hardly carry the gold, the ſiluer, the pearle, the pretious ſtones, & the jewels, which I had purloynd, and come cleare away with them out of *Italy*, and yet ſticke not to finde fault with this poore ſoule, for a thing of nothing, that ſhee tooke from mee, being perhaps vrged thereunto out of mere neceſſity. O the miſerable condition of men! how apt, and how eaſie are we to complaine? O how much adoe do vvee make about a little! How take on, as though vve vvere vndone! What a little loſſe, and what a deale of lamentation? O the immenſe and infinite goodnes of God! How much do we offend thy divine Majeſty? How little reckoning doe we make of it? and yet how eaſily doſt thou forgiue vs our offences? What vaſſalage and baſe ſubjection is that, which men yeeld to their owne paſſions?

And

[q] Duero. Rio famoſiſſimo en Eſpaña Por el qual ſe dixo, yo ſoy Duero, que todas las aguas beuo. Couarr. verb. Duero.

Proverbe.

[r] Quando aqueſte aſſi duele, que hara conguindas?

Proverbe.

[s] Alla ſe lo aya Marta con ſus pollos. Los pollos de Marta, piden pan, y dan les agua Marta la piadoſa, &c. Covarr. pag. 548.

And becauſe the beſt of things, is the curbing of them, and to make vſe of them in their time and place; I know very vvell, and am able from thence to read this lecture both to my ſelfe and others; that vvee ought to haue as much compaſſion of thoſe that offend, as vvee haue cauſe to envy thoſe that forgiue. For mine owne part, I will follow this leſſon: Let her make herſelfe merry therefore with the money ſhee got from me; for I forgiue her with all my heart.

Now whileſt I was thus diſcourſing with my ſelfe, the day began to breake. The light, by little and little, had crept in through ſome chinkes of the windowes, when together with it, a little ſleepe likewiſe came creeping vpon my ſelfe, being willing to haue my ſenſes clogg'd with thoſe ſoft lined fetters, in which I lay faſt till nine of the clocke, and ſlept ſo ſoundly, that I could not ſay; This mouth is mine. Nor was I ſo glad that I had ſlept ſo well, as that I found my ſelfe thereby the better diſpoſed to watch the night following, without being bound to pay that debt to nature, when my game was at the faireſt, if fortune ſhould chance to favour me ſo much, as to offer me a faire occaſion to finiſh vvhat I had begun. I roſe vp vvell ſatisfied, vviſhing the houre were come, wherein I might goe to that deſired place. I made me ready and went to Maſſe, and viſited the Image of our Lady of* *Pilar*, which is one of the greateſt devotions, that is in Chriſtendome. I ſpent that day in walking vp and downe; I ſaw my Widow, vvho came to the window, to vvaſh her hands. I could haue wiſht, that theſe drops of vvater, vvhich fell from her ſnowie fingers, would haue trickled downe vpon my heart, to ſee if they would haue beene able to quench the fire, that flamed in my breaſt. I had not the face to ſpeake a word to her: No not ſo much as, God ſaue you.

I ſtood leaning againſt the corner of a wall, putting my ſelfe in a good handſome poſture, looking on her with a wanton eye, a cheerefull looke, and a ſmiling countenance. And ſhe likewiſe ſmilde, and talking with her ſervants, who attended there on her, after ſhee had waſht, they carried away the towell, the baſon, and the ewer, which when they had ſet them aſide, they put their heads out at the window, and lookt vpon me. I having receiued this favour, thought I had now brought my buſineſſe to an end. I ſtrecht out my legs, and my breſt, and lifting vp my head and bearing vp my necke ſomewhat ſtiffe, I made two or three ſhort turnes, throwing one corner of my cloake ouer my ſhoulder, ſetting my hat on t'one ſide, laying my left hand on my ſword, and reſting the right on my ſide, treading my ſteps in ſtate, and turning my rolling eyes vpon her, I vvalk't leaſurely before her window, my eye being never off on her. Whereat they laugh't a good; and I reſted vvell contented. They made themſelues merry and I vvas very well pleaſed. I aſſumed ſo much liberty to my ſelfe, and behaued my ſelfe ſo boldly, as if I had already obtained what I deſired; and as though the doores and windowes of the houſe had of purpoſe been ſet open for me to enter in. And all this vvhile I vvas vſing this Courtſhip, and performing this my Loue-exerciſe, ſhe ſtood me ſtill, and did not once offer to vvagge from the vvindow.

Many Gentlemen paſt that vvay, vvell clad, yong, able, and handſome: yet in my judgement, none of them like to me, neither in apparell nor perſon. In every one of them I could haue found one fault or other; but in me, there vvas nothing to be excepted againſt. One came ſhort in the handſome ſhape and feature of his foot; another wanted a well made legge, the calfe was too little, or the ſmall too big; ſome vvere too tall, and otherſome too lowe; ſome too fat, and others to leane: This, vvent a little limping; that, awry. All had one blemiſh or other; I only vvas compleat; I was *I per ſe I*; I was like a Rule, without exception. All in mee, was in true Mood and Figure; In a full and perfect ſymmetry, hauing a juſt and euen proportion of every particular part, in reſpect of the vvhole frame. And being of beſt both grace and fauour in my perſon, I was

* Pilar de Saragoça, *One of the famouſeſt Churches in the world, for that our bleſſed Lady appeared there to the Apoſtle* S. Iames, *and willed him to build a Church there to her honour.* Padre Pineda lib. 10. Monar. Eccleſ. cap 25. ſect. 4. *The Spaniſh poſture, when they court their Miſtreſſes.*

was graced and favoured more by her, then all the reſt: for ſhee did not ſhew them the like countenance, as ſhe did mee.

Night drew on, ſhe left the window, but before ſhee withdrew herſelfe, ſhe turned her eyes towards mee, and ſo went in. I hyed me home to my lodging, being rich in hopes, and muſing vpon that which in this caſe was fitteſt to be done. Mine Hoſte came to mee to keepe me company; but becauſe I tooke no content in any thing but my contemplations, I intreated him to hold me excuſed, for that I had buſineſſe to goe abroad. I ſupt; and taking my ſword with me, I went out of doores in purſuit of my buſineſſe: you ſhall ſee how evill is mans inclination: For notwithſtanding that I had made, (as you haue heard) that diſcourſe with my ſelfe, in favour of that woman, which had cozened mee of a few Royals, and had put on a reſolution to let it paſſe, and never to thinke more of it; yet my thoughts were much troubled therewith, and like ſo many Bryez or horſe-flies, did make me kick and ſtampe againſt my former determination, and would not let me be in quiet, but that I muſt needs goe and ſeeke her out. Whereupon, I gaue that night a hundred turnes about the very ſelfe ſame ſtreete, hauing a conceit with my ſelfe, that it would be my good hap to light once more luckily vpon her in the ſame manner as before. But not knowing well why, for what cauſe, or to what end I did it, but walked idly there vp and downe, till the houre was come. I had waited long, & when I ſaw to what little purpoſe, I thought to make homewards towards my lodging: and as I entred into the *Coſſo*, by a croſſe-way, right over-againſt my Miſtreſſes houſe, I might diſcerne a pretty wayes off, two ſeverall companies, one on t'one ſide of the ſtreet. and t'other on the other. Thereupon, I returned a little backe, and ſtepping into a porch, I began to thinke with my ſelfe; I am a ſtranger, this Gentle-woman of good ranke and quality, well deſcended, and rich withall. There is generall notice taken of her worth and meanes. This fleſh " need not to haue been hung vp vpon the hookes for want of a Cat. No man will ſay that this was not a woman worth the looking after, but rather that there was a great deale of reaſon, that ſhe ſhould be wooed & ſued vnto, and to be ſerued and obſerued by thoſe that had the happineſſe to ſee her. Theſe (ſaid I to my ſelfe) do not wait here to giue or receiue an almes: I know not who they are, nor what they pretend; whether they be friends & all of one company, or whether any one of them be intereſſed here; if by misfortune I ſhould come amongſt them, and that they ſhould hedge me in in the midſt of them, and make a ring about me, they would not onely muffle me with their cloakes, but make me as full of holes as a Sieue, and pricke me in the body vvith their Rapiers points, as Bulls are ſtucke vvith darts, when they are bayted in the market-place, & perchance leaue me for dead. This Countrey is dangerous, the men bold and inſolent; their vveapons of advantage, they many and I a poore ſingle man. And therefore (*Guzman*) x looke to thy ſelfe. And if they be enemies and haue a minde to goe together by the eares, it is not I that can part them, I ſhall never be able to make them friends, but indanger my ſelfe, and do no good. Goe the world which vvay it vvill, fall backe, or fall edge, the beſt courſe for me, is to get mee home to my lodging, I am ſure that is the ſafeſt vvay. And fitter it were for me to goe to mine Inne, and looke to my trunkes, and to get me out of Towne as ſoone as I can. For I neither know any, nor am knowne by any. Beſides *à quien ſe muda; dies le ayuda.* God helpes thoſe that alter their evill condition. I betooke me to my heeles, and came in a trice to my lodging. Aſſoone I came in, I preſently got me to bed, vvhere I reſted vvith much more ſleepe, and a great deale leſſe paine, then the night before. For indeed, there is not any thing that doth ſooner thruſt theſe loue toyes out of our heads, then to ſee ſuch kind of viſions. Wherevpon I reſolued the next day to leaue the City, and ſo I did; By little and little I drew towards *Madrid*; And vvhen I came to *Alcala de Henares*, I abode there eight dayes, for that it ſeemed vnto me, one of the fineſt and

Proverbe.
u Eſtate la carne en el garabato por falta de gato. *Alluding to thoſe women that are retyr'd, and chaſte; not ſo much out of their owne will, as for want of opportunity, and a naturall reſpect, and ſhamefaſt feare, that the world may not take notice of their incontinency.* Caſta eſt quam nemo rogauit. Ovid. Eleg. 1. *And anon after.* Aut ſi ruſticitas non vetat, ipſa rogat.
Alſo wee ſay; Que alguna dama tiene garabato; *when with her beauty, and other good graces, ſhee draws as it were with hookes, your gallants hearts after her.* Cavar. verb. Garabato.

Proverbe.
x *The Spaniſh phraiſe is,* Guarte, no ſea nabo.

Proverbe.
y A quien, ſe muda, dios le ayuda.

Alcala, an Vniverſity not above a dayes iourney from Madrid.

and pleaſanteſt places of any other that I had ſeene, ſince my comming out of *Italy*: and if the loue of the Court, had not clapt wings to my feete, I am verily perſwaded, that I ſhould haue continued there ſtill, that I might haue injoyed that freſh and delicate Riuer, their plentifull prouiſion, their rare and ſingular wits, and many other good intertainments. But becauſe *Madrid* was *patria communis*, the common mother to vs all, and a large field wherein every man might range at pleaſure, I thought it no diſcretion, to forgoe the Sea, for a Riuer. And for leſſer things, to neglect the greater. In fine, every man may there follow that which hee hath moſt minde to. There no man knowes one another; no not ſo much as thoſe that liue vvithin the ſame doores, and lodge in the ſame houſe. This drew mee thither, and thither I came. The face of the Court, as alſo of the Towne, was quite changed, ſince I left it. There was no Grocer there to be heard of, no memory now, that there was ever any ſuch man. I found the fields peopled with houſes, children become men, young folkes grownes ancient, the ancient old, and the old dead. The high vvayes turned into ſtreetes, and the ſtreetes altered in their bredth and building; finding every thing in good order, and farre better then when I left it. I lighted on a lodging, that liked mee exceeding well; and ſo well that I ſtaid full eight dayes within doores, without putting ſo much as any foot over the threſhold, being only tide thus faſt by the legge, by the good company and ſweete conuerſation of mine Hoſteſſe. Who, beſides her handſomeneſſe, had a good faſhion of behaviour and pleaſing kinde of entertainment. She was diſcreet in her cariage, and at boord knew very well how to demeane her ſelfe. Thoſe few dayes that I ſtayd there, ſhee made me very good cheere, and did with all poſſible punctuality, ſeeke to pleaſe and obſerue mee, fitting my humour to a hayre.

proverbe. ☞ Dexar vn mar, por el arroya.

Madrid *much altered in a few yeares.*

Guzman *takes a lodging in an Inne.*

While I continued there, I went caſting vp of my accounts, plotting and deviſing with my ſelfe, what courſe of life I ſhould runne, how, and vpon what I ſhould liue, and in concluſion vanity weighed downe the ſcales. And firſt of all I beganne my buſineſſe with gallantry and brauery; being every day more fine then other. I made me two different ſutes of cloathes, with long ſilke ſtockings, of the beſt *Naple* ſilke, neate ones they were, and ſtrongly ſow'd to my payn'd hoſe: And I tooke another ſute out of my trunke for change; thinking with my ſelfe, that being thus well clad, and getting me a good horſe, and taking two ſervants to attend me, by ſhewing my ſelfe abroad in this good equipage, I might the eaſier vent my merchandize, and meete with thoſe that would buy theſe my jewels of mee. I put this in execution, and beganne to braue it, and to ſpend liberally. My Hoſteſſe was not ſhort, either handed, or witted, but a gentle courteous dame: ſhe ſought in all things to pleaſe my [a] palate. She had found out the beating of my pulſe, and need not to be taught how to apply her ſelfe to my malady. It happened that among many of thoſe her ſhe-friends that did often come and viſit me, one of them brought along with her in her company a yong wench, wel fauored, well behau'd, hauing a face like an Angell: and though ſhe were in extreame both faire and beautifull, yet was ſhee far more wily and ſubtile; it was a notable crafty carrion. To this wench, did I make loue; ſhe ſhewes her ſelfe coy and diſdainfull; gifts [b] molifie rockes, and breake the hardeſt ſtones in ſunder. The more I did regard her, & the more courteſies I beſtowed vpon her, the more kinde ſhe grew; of a Haggard, ſhe became a gentle Hawke; and though ſomewhat wild and ſtrange at firſt, yet now was ſhe taught to come to my fiſt; I could play with her beake, caſt her, and giue her ſtones, ſo that now ſhee was managed, as I would haue her. I continued this friendſhip with her for ſome few daies, in all which time, (as if ſhe had beene ſome gutter to receiue all the raine that fals; or ſome *Chimiſt*, or *Alchimiſt*, to melt a mans money, and to extract quinteſſences) there was not that day that paſt over her head, wherein ſhee did not begge or craue ſomthing of me;

proverbe. a *The Spaniſh phraſe is* Dauame cañas a las manos.

proverbe. b Dadiuas, ablandon peñas.

He turnes Gallant.

Guzman *makes loue to a young wench.*

mee peeling, and polling me, as much, as possibly shee could; carrying her selfe therein so slily, & so cunningly, as if she had bin a woman of much riper yeares, & well beaten to these kind of businesses; never a Courtizan of them all, could goe beyond her. But she vvas the better Verste (I doubt not) in these things, in that she had so good a tutor of her Mother. Once (amongst the rest) I remēber she intreated me, that I vvould buy her a gowne of crimson damaske, which a Broaker had to sell at the *Puerta* [c] *del sol*, trimmed with gold lace, & richly embroydered; the price no lesse thē 1000 Royals. This seeming in her an excessiue kind of liberty, that she had assumed to her selfe, to dispose of my moneys at her pleasure, (for albeit, I vvas not a little taken with her loue, & though I saw her craving nature, yet I had not dealt so ill with her, but that I had bestowed on her aboue 100 Crownes one way or other, & that if I should suffer her still to [d] vntap my vessell, she would suck me so dry at last, that she would not leaue one drop in all the hogshead) I would not giue it her, but grew somwhat angry with her; she sets light by it, was offēded with my deniall, took it to heart, & thought hardly of me, & that I had vs'd her vnkindly. I would take no notice of it. The mother & the daughter were both displeased with me. I said nothing, but lookt on, to see what would become of this businesse. They came not at me, nor did I send to them. They entred into counsell with mine Hostesse. The Wolfe & the Foxe, had both laid their heads together, how they might entrap the poore harmelesse sheepe; and all three did combine themselues against me. Now here see their roguery, and what a villanous plot they had laid for me. When I vvas set downe to my meat, when I was just in the mid'st of my dinner, not dreaming of any ill, that vvas intended towards me, I might perceiue all *Alguazil de Corte*, make towards my lodging. Who, when he came within hearing, speakes out aloud, Body of me; *Aqui morira Sanson, y quantos, con el son*; Here shall [e] *Samson* die the death, and as many as be here with him. My end (said I to my selfe) is now at hand. I thrust the table from mee, and rose vp much troubled. Then said the *Alguazil* vnto me; Pacifie your selfe Sir, and rest you quiet, we come not to apprehend you for a thiefe. It cannot be for any other thing (thought I vvith my selfe;) for he had nam'd the word thiefe before, and I did verily beleeue that he spake in a frumping and scoffing kinde of manner; and that for this cause he was come thither to arrest me. That word strucke my heart so dead, that I was not able to speake a ready word, much lesse to saue my selfe by flight, but stood as still as a stocke. The Catch-poles had made good the doore, the window was of the least, & too high from the street, from whence I could not get downe so easily, but that they would take hold on me, ere I came to the ground; or if I escapt their hands, it was a thousand pound to a penny, I should breake my necke in the fall. At the last, for all my spirits were thus troubled vvithin me, I did (as vvell as I could) aske him, vvhat was his will vvith mee? He (hauing much adoe to forbeare laughing, and hauing no share of the care that I was in) putting his hand into his bosome, pull'd out a Warrant, by vertue vvhereof the *Alcaldes* had commanded him to apprehend me vpon the breach of that law of theirs, *de* [f] *viciatione virginum*, of cracking of mayden-heads, and the deflowring of a virgin. The devill take thee for a wicked vvoman as thou art, and me for an arrant villaine, (said I) if I know what thou wouldst haue, or what thou dost meane by this: And let me never liue, if she doe not lie like a hundred thousand devils. I sware vnto him, that it was a most sinfull and abominable vntruth, and a testimony as full of falshood, as God is true. The *Alguazil* smiling vpon me, said, I beleeue you Sir, but told me withall, that he might not exceed his commission, nor vvas it in his power to release me. And therefore vvisht me to put on my cloake, and to goe along vvith him to prison. Now I vvas in the bryers; I knew not how to winde my selfe out of them; my finall ruine vvas before my face; I had trunkes; vvhat ones they were, you your selues can imagine; my servants nor knowne, I lay in

c *A place so called, in the high street of* Madrid, *neere vnto* san Felipe.

d *The Spanish phrase is,* No quedarà bolo en hiesto.

Vnkindnesse growes betwixt Guzman *and his wench.*

A plot to cozen Guzman.

Prouerbe.

e Aqui morira Sanson, y quantos con el son; *A kind of* Rodomontado, *or proud menacing.*

An Alguazil *comes to arrest* Guzman.

Guzman *much dismayd.*

f *The Spanish phrase is,* Por el virgo de justilla.

in a lodging where they had made a [g] bed for me, or rather a trap to catch me. I did feare this vvas but the Prologue to the Tragedy, that vvould come after, making this but a colour for the better cozening me of all that I had. If I left my trunkes there, they vvould haue beene as safe in the ſtreet; and if I ſhould remoue them thence, I knew not whither to carry them; And to goe to priſon is like vnto thoſe, vvho goe to play in a Taverne, that is ſeated on the top of ſome cold mountaine; who begin in Cards, & end in drunkenneſſe, falling aſleep with the pot betweene their hands. Thinking with my ſelfe, that though I went thither for a trifle, I could not tell, vvhether theſe mole-hils vvould be made mountaines; and ſmall occaſions breed mighty inconveniences. So that I was at a ſtand with my ſelfe, and knew not vvhich way to take. I tooke the *Alguazil* aſide, and intreated him, as he did honour one onely God, that he would not be the inſtrument of my vndoing. I told him, that vvealth that I had, was like to runne great hazard of being vtterly loſt, and that he would be pleaſed to deviſe ſome meanes, that they might not doe me ſo great a wrong; for that I aſſured my ſelfe they had a purpoſe to rob me, and they were minded to make a ſpoyle and a prey of me, and that this was onely their intent, and nothing elſe.

Hee was an honeſt man (which was no ſmall good fortune, conſidering his calling) diſcreet, and courteous, he knew my innocency, as one that vvas vvell acquainted with the contrary parties courſe of life; and I promiſed to be ſo thankfull vnto him for this his kindneſſe, that he ſhould haue no cauſe to complaine, or repent him of the favour he ſhould afford me in this caſe. Hee told me, that I ſhould not need to trouble my ſelfe any farther in the buſineſſe, for I ſhould find him ready to ſerue me in all that he vvas able. He left his ſervants there to looke vnto me, and went to ſeeke out the adverſe party, that brought him thither, vvho was in my Hoſteſſes chamber. Hee vvent to and fro betweene vs, with offer of ſuch and ſuch conditions, to accommodate the buſineſſe; and in the end, he threatned them, that if they would not come to agreement, and make ſome reaſonable end, he would ſweare the truth in my favour, and diſcover their cheatings, and their rogueries, if they would not reſt contented with that which vvas fitting.

They, vvhen they ſaw how ill their cauſe vvas like to goe vvith them, vvere willing in the end to put it wholly into his hands, and ſo this quarrell vvas ended between vs, for two thouſand Royals. For he hauing put the mother to her oath, ſhe ſwore, that I had promiſed to pay for the gowne, and double the value of it in money, and that if this vvould not content her, ſhee ſhould haue more. But ſhe I know reſted vvell contented, and was glad with all her heart, that ſhe went thus away with theſe two thouſand Royals, becauſe ſhe knew they were not due vnto her. Well, I paid downe the money on the nayle, and vvee vvent to the Regiſters office, and there had the bill daſht: So that the ſute was now at an end. It coſt me in the whole, a matter of two hundred Ducats; & within halfe an houre after all vvas diſpatcht, it was darke night. But I would not ſtay a minute longer in that lodging, nor would not ſo much as haue ſet my foot within the doores of that wicked houſe, had it not beene to haue away my trunkes, and ſuch other things as I had there. Which done, I preſently parted thence, and vvent to ſeeke out another. I vvas not curious, but tooke the firſt that came to hand, till I could fit my ſelfe better, and meet vvith ſome quarter part of a handſome and honeſt houſe, with perſons in it of ſome worth and credit. I bought me ſome moueables and ſuch houſhold-ſtuffe, as was neceſſary for my ſelfe, and my ſervants, and provided me pots and pans for the kitchin. Whileſt I vvas making this proviſion, it vvas my hap one morning to meet vvith the ſame *Alguazil* in the [h] *Deſcalças*, and after vve had both heard Maſſe, at the ſaid Monaſtery, wee talkt together, and I ſware vnto him by the bleſſed Sacrament, that was there vpon the Altar, that I had never made any ſuch promiſe to that vvoman; he told me, Sir, not onely in thoſe things vvhich I know, but

in

g It is an vſuall phraſe in Spaine to ſay; Eſta hecha ſu cama. *Such a mans bed is a making; when there is ſome matter a working againſt him for his hurt.*

Guzman *treats in private with the* Alguazil.

The Alguazil *wrought to favour* Guzman.

Guzman *compounds his buſineſſe.*

Guzman *leaues his lodging.*

h A Monaſtery in Madrid. *The diſcourſe that paſt betwixt* Guzman *and the* Alguazil *at the* Deſcalças.

in thoſe, vvhich I know not, you might haue ſpared this oath vvith me, much leſſe was there need of it in a thing of this nature; for this is well knowne, to be a packt peece of knauery, and a plot laid of purpoſe to picke your purſe. I know this young baggage; who beſides this, which ſhe hath now put vpon you, hath exhibited two other ſeverall bils in the Court in this kinde. The firſt before the Vicar of this towne, againſt a poore[i] Subdeacon, who came hither about a certaine buſineſſe; he was the ſonne of honeſt and rich parents, vvho for quietneſſe ſake, was content (good man) to haue his cloathes torne from his backe by them, and being ſtript of all that he had, went away (as they ſay) in his ſhirt, they leauing him as poore as *Iob*. Afterwards they commenced the like ſute here in this towne, making a grievous complaint againſt a *Teniente*, who was a *Catalynian*, and exceeding rich: They firkt him too, and fleeced him as well as they could; but this man hath deepely ſworne, that hee will be fully revenged on her. And now hath ſhe complayned on your ſelfe to the *Alcaldes*; And had it not beene, that I held it the leſſer inconvenience to pay them that money, then to yeeld your ſelfe a priſoner, leauing your goods (as they ſay) at ſixe and ſeaven, I aſſure you I would not haue giuen way vnto it, but haue executed my office. But of two evils, the leaſt is to be choſen. For albeit you would out of doubt haue beene freed in the end, yet would you not haue procur'd your liberty in haſte; for much time muſt firſt haue beene ſpent in the proofes, and then in the replies to thoſe proofes; vvhereas this way, though you were at an vnjuſt charge, yet haue you by this meanes, avoyded the priſon, your ſhackles, your Viſits, your Atturneys, your Proctors, and your Regiſters, bringing in this relation, & returning that relation, this information, & that information, all which is but vexation of ſpirit, & prolongation of time, trouble, charge, and diſcontent. The bargaine was driuen cheaper this vvay, and with a great deale leſſe diſtaſte. I vow this vnto you, as I am a Gentleman, and an honeſt man, that in all the time that I haue ſerued his Majeſtie with this *Vare* in my hand, which is now going vpon the three and twentieth yeare, and of all the caſes that I haue ſeene in this kinde, I haue not knowne aboue three in three hundred, that haue beene juſtly perſecuted in Court: For he that feeds vpon that diſh, (vnleſſe he haue very ill lucke) ſeldome or never payes for it. But when ſuch things come in queſtion, the accuſer hath commonly the better of the accuſed; the plaintiffe will be ſure to fare well, how e're it goe with the defendant; hee hath that he lookes for, he cares for no more; for it is in this, as at *Beſt be truſted*, amongſt Coſter-mongers. the firſt ſpeaker ſcapes ſcot-free. And theſe kinde of people will never giue over this tricke, till they haue lighted vpon one vnluckie bird or other, whom they may rob both of his credit, and his money, or get them ſuch a husband as may ſupply their wants, and neceſſities. It is like vnto ſome botch or kernell, which firſt begins in the finger, but afterwards breakes out in the arme-pit: And the cauſe of it is, becauſe the delinquent either ſodainly flies vpon the accuſation, or is ſo poore a fellow, that he is not worth the looking after.

Theſe young queanes, either walke the ſtreets, to ſee if they can meet with a good chapman, or drop into ſome friends houſe, or keepe at home at their fathers or their mothers houſe: this, or that other young man, enters within doores, comes into the kitchin, where he hath opportunity to ſpeake vnto her, and ſhe to anſwere him: They are all alone, the doores ſhut, time enough, will they want not, occaſion is offered, and the bargaine driuen. But this is practiſed for the moſt part amongſt the poorer ſort; and the party hath no ſooner the ſent of thoſe raſhers of Bacon, that are making ready for him, but hee preſently gets him out of the houſe, and comes there no more. Now, when their parents come to know it, that they may not loſe the fruit of their labours, they giue her an admonition, or gentle reprehenſion. And afterwards they themſelues ſtand ſentinell, and haue a nearer eye to the buſineſſe, and ſo order

[i] *The Spaniſh word is,* Camallero de epiſtola, *becauſe it is the Subdeacons office to ſing, or reade the Epiſtle of the Maſſe.* Covarr. 358.

The inconveniences of impriſonment and Law-ſuites.

[k] *The Spaniſh phraſe is,* Echar la buena barba, *A ſport whereat one payes for al the wafers that he and his fellowes eate, by asking the ſeller this queſtion, Who is the honeſteſt man of all vs? which is ſignified,* por la barba. *By alluſion, it is ſpoken of thoſe, who with ſet ſpeeches, and flattering phraſes, gull a man of his money.*

The faſhion of your Spaniſh queanes.

the matter for her, that she may fall into such a mans hands, of whom they may make profit of this their merchandize. Whence, it oftentimes comes to passe, that he that is least in fault, smarts most. Then said I vnto him, I pray Sir tell mee, if these things never happen, but in secret, and vnseene, none knowing thereof but themselues, who dare to sweare, or can truly take his oath, vnlesse she shreeke and crie out, whereby it may appeare, that he did offer her force & violence, or that the people came in, and found them busseling together, or in the act it selfe? He told me, such an oath is not necessarie, nor in such cases doe they put the witnesse to proue, that he saw them together in that actuall manner, for this were an impossibility, the businesse being carryed in that secrecie, as you propound it. It will serue turne, that he, or they, depose, that they were seene to talke together, or to haue beene in private together, or that hee vvas seene to kisse her, or to embrace her in his armes, or that he was in some chamber with her, the doore shut vpon them, or that they had seene some such passages, by which it might well be presumed, that such a thing was either done, or in doing. For what with these circumstances, and her owne asseveration, standing stifly vnto it, that he had ravisht her, and forced her against her will, it being found vpon inspection, by a Iurie of women, that her mayden-head is crackt, and that shee is no more a Virgin, this shall be a strong and sufficient proofe against him. I my selfe (said the *Alguazil*) saw in this Court, a very rigorous course taken in this kinde, and one of the strangest Cases, that I beleeue you haue scarce ever heard of the like heretofore.

There vvas once abiding in this Towne a very handsome and beautifull Gentle-woman, a stranger in this place, who came hither (being bayted out of her owne Country) for no other end, then to seeke out some meanes to liue. Shee profest her selfe to be a maid, and in that habit shee vvent a while vp and downe the Towne. A certaine Prince in this Court had a great minde vnto her; he pretends, and procures her loue; he giues her a ticket vnder his owne hand for to pay her eight hundred Ducats, in which vvriting, shee would haue it set downe, that there should be a respect had vnto her honour; specifying therein, that he bestow'd the same vpon her by way of dowry for her advancement in marriage. The Prince did not pay this money at the day, shee put his bond in sute, he answeres not vnto it, shee gets out an execution against him, and recovers the money.

About some foure yeares after (being favoured by a certaine great person) shee provided the like pickle for another, that vvas a stranger, who having had some dealings vvith her, shee picks a quarrell with him, and makes a grievous complaint against him. And howbeit the defendant alleadged against her the originall writing, and the payment of the principall, together with the interest, yet they condemn'd him, and made him to giue her full satisfaction, so that the poore Gentle-man, vvas forced to pay her soundly for her cut Melon, it was argued to and fro, that shee was, and was not a maid; but not to dispute, vvhether shee were or no: Sure I am, that shee recovered twice or thrice in Court, that which she never sold; and in this manner did shee goe away vvith the bucklers. And therefore (Sir) you haue not beene ill serued in this businesse, but haue vvell wound your selfe out of the bryars. For in good faith (Sir) the vvitnesses did threaten you sore, vvere violently bent against you, and spake very bloudy words (though the wench was not so.) And so we tooke leaue one of another, he going his way, and I mine. I did much wonder to heare such businesses to be so carryed. Insomuch, that discoursing thereof with my selfe, I began by degrees to fall into consideration of the sacred Councell of *Trent*, which so holily, so justly, and so lawfully had made provision for clandestine marriages; and by which there was a remedie found out for so many inconveniences, stopping so many gaps, and rearing vp so many walls, to keepe them out, and hinder their entrance. And I did likewise weigh with my selfe, that if the secular power, vvould

Proverbe. (*The Spanish phrase is:* Quien menos culpa tiene, à lavar la lana. *And it is spoken by way of proverbe;* Vos lavareys la lana de aquel, que le ha caydo la suerte mas trabajosa Comolos, que trabajan en los lavaderos; que vnos son apartadores. Otios tienen los mas oficios, que no son pocos: y los que lavan la lana tienen mayor trabajo, por andar en el agua todo el dia, desnudos. Covarr. 513.

A tale of a cunning queane.

vvould (as in iuſtice they ought) doe as much in theſe dayes in ſuch caſes, (as mine was) I verily perſwade my ſelfe, that there would not be the fifth, nay not the tenth part of thoſe lewd and naughty women, as are now (the more is the pitie) every where abroad in the world, liuing to their owne, and others vndoing. For really, & truly, there is no ſuch thing as this *force*, which they ſo much inforce (that we may ſpeake it vnder *benedicite*) but that which they call *force*, is rather an accord and conſent of both parties. Nor is it poſſible, that one man alone ſhould force a woman, if ſhe of her owne vvill, or with a kinde of vnwilling vvillingneſſe, grant him not that which he deſireth of her. And if ſhe giue vvay, and reſt contented vvith it, why doth ſhe queſtion and trouble him for it? And here I ſhall take occaſion, to tell you a true Storie, which hapned in a certaine place within the Signorie, or Iuriſdiction of *Audaluzia*.

A tale of a Country Clowne.

There was a Country-Clowne, a good honeſt day-labourer, that had a pretty young wench to his daughter, with whom a young fellow fell in loue, that was a neighbour ſonne of the ſame Pariſh; & in fine, hauing obtayned what he deſired, vvhen her father came to know of it, and that this young man had pluckt from her the faireſt flowre of her garland, he made haſte to ſuch a Towne (that vvas the Head-towne of that Diviſion) to make his complaint againſt this his neighbours ſonne. The *Alcalde* hearkned vvith great attention to all that hee ſaid, and after that the poore man had informed him at full of the caſe, and had ſaid all that he could, hee ſaid vnto him: Well (my honeſt friend) you complaine here of this young man, that he hath tickled your daughter, & plaid the wanton with her, vvherewith you finde your ſelfe agrieu'd; Is it not ſo (my good friend?) yes (and it pleaſe your Worſhip) ſaid her father, it is as your Worſhip ſayes; you ſay very true Sir. And I am much agrieu'd with it indeed, for that he did diſhonour my daughter by force. Then the *Alcalde*, ſpake againe vnto him, and ſaid; Tell me (I prithee) how old is thy daughter, and how old is the young fellow? My daughter (ſaid the father) will be (next Auguſt) one and twenty yeare old; and the young man (as I take it) is ſome three and twenty. When the *Alcalde* heard him ſay ſo, in a rage he roſe vp from the bench, and frowning vpon him, ſaid angerly vnto him; And comeſt thou vvith this to me now? Haue I nothing elſe to doe (thinkeſt thou) but to heare every idle fooliſh complaint? He twenty three, & ſhe twenty one: Let me heare no more of this (my friend) goe get you home, and reſt you quiet; here's a pretty accuſation vvith all my heart: one, one and twenty, and the other three and twenty, they might very vvell doe the buſineſſe, they could not chooſe, but vvell & vvillingly goe to it. If others, in the like caſe, ſhould receiue the like anſwere, and that there vvere a Law made, vvhereby it vvere enacted, That no woman, from eleven yeares vpwards, dwelling in a Towne, ſhould pretend her ſelfe to be forced; they vvould then be good perforce.

A digreſſion to another ſtorie of the like nature.

But vpon this ſubject, may it pleaſe you to heare a ſingular accident, and a notable caſe in this kinde, vvhich hapned (not long agoe) in one of the principalleſt Cities of that moſt noble Common-vvealth of *Venice*.

There liued in that Citie, an old vvoman, baſe in her birth, and poore in her meanes, vvho had a daughter, that vvas very louely, faire, & beautifull. And becauſe ſhe had not vvherewithall to marry her, this crafty *Gabrina* (being an old cunning Hagge) deviſed vvith her ſelfe to make ſale of the puritie and virginitie of her daughter, & that not once, but many and many times: and theſe her wicked proceedings did proſper well with her. Firſt ſhe would either be ſure to haue that before hand, vvhich they had agreed vpon, and by the favour of ſome principall perſon, this, or that other man, vvas faine to compound vvith her, & to make his peace as vvell as he could. One day amongſt the reſt, this handſome young vvench, being ſeene and well eyed by a young Gallant, and one of the principall Gentle-men of that Citie, a ſingle-man, and exceeding rich, vſed divers meanes to winne her affection, and in the end obtayned his purpoſe, & af-

ter that he had enjoyed her, he did very liberally requite her for her kindneſſe. But the greedy old woman (vvho vvas covetouſneſſe it ſelfe) thinking this Lordly gift too little, made her moane to a particular Gentleman, complayning how ill ſhee had beene dealt withall.

He, as it were in a jeſting kinde of manner (ſcorning and hating in his heart the vile and baſe humour of this wicked & accurſed woman) ſaid thus vnto her; Thou knoweſt *Lena* (for that was her ſurname) that the moſt illuſtrious, and moſt excellent *Segnor Generale*, will ſhortly be here; & thou likewiſe knoweſt, what vpright juſtice he doth indifferently adminiſter to every one, without reſpect of perſons, & more particularly in ſuch caſes that concerne the good and honour of maydens. And therefore the beſt counſell that I can giue you, is, That you & your daughter *Ricciolina* get you both (as ſoone as he comes hither) vnto his Excellency, & plainly deliver vnto him how *Signor Conde N.* hath forced and deflowred your daughter, and falling both a-weeping before him, yee farther declare vnto him, that after he had had his will of her, he was not ſo good as his word with her, nor performed the promiſe vvhich he made vnto her; which was, That he would either giue her two hundred crownes, or get her a good husband. And that therefore, ſeeing that he did not comply with you neither in the one, nor the other, that his Excellency would therefore be pleaſed to take this your wretched and woefull caſe into conſideration, and to doe you juſtice. If you can doe this handſomely (as I know you are not to ſeeke, and can doe it better then I can adviſe you) my life for yours, you will haue the day of him, & the buſineſſe will goe cleare on your ſide. It was not long after, that the Generall his Excellency came, before whoſe preſence theſe women being brought, they opened this their falſe accuſation. Vpon which relation of theirs, his Excellency was much moued, and cauſed the *Conde* to be ſent for by one of his ſervants: vvho, when he came before him, was demanded, whether at any time he had had converſation with *Ricciolina* the daughter of *Lena*? He without any more a-doe, ingeniouſly confeſt, that he had. When he heard him ſay ſo, he beſtow'd vpon him, ſuch a louing and fatherly reprehenſion, that the *Conde* beganne to bluſh, and for very ſhame, could not for the preſent expreſſe himſelfe, as he might, & would haue done in his owne excuſe. Wherevpon the *Generall* perceiuing this his tacite confeſſion, cauſed *Ricciolina* to be called forth (who by his appointment ſtaid in the next roome) and when ſhee was come, he grauely ſpake in this manner vnto him; *Signor Conde*, if we ſhould puniſh faults with rigour, a heavy puniſhment would light vpon you. But we, for that we loue your ſelfe, and all other offenders that come before vs, as our owne children, and taking pitie & compaſsion of your youthfull fervor, and thoſe violencies that accompany ſuch young yeares, we doe pardon you that grievous & moſt heinous offence of forcing this maiden, as farre forth as it may touch your life; but withall, vve condemne you, to pay the double of vvhat you promiſed her, vvhich comes to foure hundred crownes: which before you goe from hence, vvee command that you preſently diſburſe, and giue it to *Ricciolina*.

To this the *Conde*, his bloud now waxing warme, which before was frozen, with that reſpect and decencie, which was fitting for him, replyde thus: Moſt Illuſtrious and Excellent Sir, I haue hitherto held my peace, it beſeeming me ſo to doe, as one that is your moſt true, faithfull and obedient ſervant, & moſt ready to ſubmit my ſelfe to any reproofe or puniſhment, that you ſhall be pleaſed to inflict vpon me, in caſe this their accuſation were true. And if your Excellencie out of the greatnes of your wiſdome, ſhall be pleaſed to diue into the depth of theſe ſubtill womens hearts, & ſearch them to the very bottome, your Excellencie will ſoone diſcover, how wickedly falſe theſe their accuſations haue beene againſt me. And though I haue confeſſed, that I haue had converſation with her, it was vpon covenant and agreement betweene vs, vpon ſuch a price, which I punctually paid, giuing her more out of mine owne bounty, then ſhee could

could challenge of me. Notwithſtanding, if it ſhall ſeeme good vnto you, that I diſburſe this money, I craue no longer time, then that I may goe home & fetch it, wherewith I ſhall preſently returne, and put the money into your Excellencies hand, to be diſpoſed of as you pleaſe; but not as in any puniſhment of any ſuch error by me committed.

The *Generall* having heard what the *Conde* ſaid, replyed vnto him, *Signor Conde*, goe fetch the money, for I ſhall ſtay here till you come. And you *Ricciolina*, ſe you depart not.

Now, whileſt the *Conde* was going home, and returning backe againe, his Excellencie went a farre off, asking this and that other queſtion, one vvhile of the old woman, another of the yong, and ſo talking to and fro of divers things, at laſt, he ſaid vnto her; Tell me (*Lena*) haue you euer carryed a good hand ouer your daughter? haue you alwaies lookt narrowly vnto her? Yes marry haue I Sir (ſaid ſhe.) And did you never (replide he againe) leaue her all alone by day or by night? No Sir, quoth ſhe. How comes it then to paſſe (ſaid his Excellency) that you would ſuffer your daughter to be forced and deflowred by the *Conde*? Why did you not defend her from that violence? And you (*Riccialina*) having your mother in your company, why would you let him force you, & take that from you which (vnles you ſhould in ſome ſort conſent therevnto) it were impoſſible for him to get from you? Both of them, then weeping, ſaid vnto him; That the *Conde* was too ſtrong for them, and that they were not able to reſiſt his violence, and therefore beſought his excellency, that hee would not ſuffer her daughter to be thus abuſed, and both of them to be left open to ſuch a deale of ſcorne and reproach: but that he would be pleaſed to do them juſtice.

By this time the *Conde* was come, and had told out vpon a little table of Iuory foure hundred Crownes; which by the *Generall* were giuen to *Ricciolina*, giuing her this *Item* withall, Take them (daughter) and looke well vnto them, leſt they chance to be taken from thee. And you (*Lena*) haue a care both of her and her money. And ſo God be with you, I haue no more to ſay vnto you.

When they were gone, his Excellency turning himſelfe towards the *Conde*, ſayd vnto him, Goe, get you after them, and ſee you take the money from them, either by loue or force, by faire meanes or foule. And looke that you giue me a true account of the paſſage of this buſineſſe.

The *Conde* hearing this, moued with rage and diſdaine, ſeeing how baſely he had beene vſed by theſe infamous women, (not conſidering the condition impoſed vpon him, nor to what end it was done) made haſtily after them; nor did he goe alone by him-ſelfe, but made choice of a ſervant of his (amongſt thoſe many that he had) whom hee tooke along with him. And ſo walking a good round pace, he ouertooke them a little on this ſide their owne houſe, and comming vnto them after that he had ſaluted them very kindly, and by little and little had inſinuated himſelfe into them, hee continued diſcourſing with them, till he had brought them home. Where, as ſoone as he was come into the houſe, he beganne to demand his money of them. And when he ſaw he could not preuaile with intreaties, he aſſayed to get it by force, and went roundly to worke with them. But *Ricciolina*, who had put her purſe in her boſome, ſtoutly defended both it and her ſelfe, ſcratching the *Conde* with her hands, and biting him with her teeth; who with all the ſtrength that he had, could not come ſo much as to touch, much leſſe to take the purſe from her. To make good this quarrell, the mother ran in, and tooke part with her daughter, and they did ſo helpe and ayd one another, with their nailes and their teeth, and by their loud out-cryes and ſhreekes, that although the houſe were a lone houſe, farre from neighbors, and little frequented, yet notwithſtanding many people vpon this great noyſe and tumult, came running thither, and amongſt the common route, one Gentleman, who preſſing in, and ſeeing the *Conde* all bloody, who fought like a fierce Lyon, ſet vpon by two rather inraged beares, then women, what with his words,

words,and what with his deedes, being assisted by others, hee parted the one from the other. The *Conde* was so overcome with choller, that hee laid about him like a mad man, andhad so lost all patience, that doubtlesse hee had done much mischiefe if he had not beene restrained by the company. Hee washt his face and his hands,and hauing wiped them with his handkercher, he departed thence in company of that Gentleman,threatning those women,that he would be revenged on them: who, no lesse offended then the furious *Conde*, made no long tarrying,but hasted with all the speed they could to the *Generall*. But the *Conde* had got the start of them, and was there before them, hauing fully acquainted his Excellency with all that had passed,shewing the scratches and the bitings which he had receiued from them: who had no sooner told his tale,but in come the women,vnsheathing their malicious & sharp-edged tongues,grieuously complaining of the *Conde*, who was there present, declaring,how first with faire and kinde words, and afterwards by violent and forcible deeds,hee would haue taken their money from them,threatning besides to kill them.

Then said the *Generall* vnto them;Hee hath not taken them from you,hath he?No(and like your Excellency)said they. How came it then to passe (quoth he)that he tooke them not from you?They answered,Sir,we did so well bestir our selues,with our hands,our nailes,our teeth,and the shreeks that we made, to call in company, that he mist of his purpose and could not doe it.

Very good(said the *Generall*)& you *Ricciolina*,if your mother had not come in to helpe you , could you (thinke you) haue made a shift to withstand the *Condes* courage, that hee should not haue taken the purse from forth your bosome?Yes indeed Sir,said she:for I feare him not, nor any thing he can doe, I care not a straw for him,for I think my selfe every way as strong as he;yet is it not meete, that men should come in this violent manner into poore womens houses, to take from them which is none of theirs. Then (said the *Generall*) you did both of you,helpe and defend one another, as well as you could? Yes Sir,said they. It is very well(replyed the *Generall*)I like well of it,and I must needs say you haue borne your selues well in the businesse. But where is the purse?I haue it here in my bosome,said *Ricciolina*. Let me see it,said the *General*. The young wench presently pluckes it out of her bosome. Then said his Excellency vnto her;Poure them out(daughter)there vpon the board,and tell them anew,to see if you haue all,and that the *Conde* hath not taken any of them from you,She did so,and found the number just. Whereupon,she told his excellency they were all there, and not so much as one Crowne missing. Then the *Generall*(who was a very wise and discreete man) perceiuing the *Condes* goodnesse,and these other womens wickednesse,spake and said: *Signor Conde*, Take you your money againe,you haue fought hardly for it;it is yours, put it vp.

Then, turning to this yong queane,looking sternely vpon her,hee said vnto her; Thou lewd and filthy baggage, if thou hadst defended thy selfe as well as thou didst thy money,the *Conde* could not haue forced thee;but it seemes thou was very well content that hee should haue his pleasure of thee, hauing consented to his will,you were not forced (Minion)as both you and your mother haue falsly accused the *Conde*,to whom we justly award his rehauing of his 400 Crownes. And as for you,get you gone,and let mee heare no more of you,and be glad that you scape so,for if you were well serued,and punished according to your deserts, I should send you to Bridewell, and haue you well whipt, and ring your mother out of Towne,for an old wicked bawd. The *Generall* hauing pronounced this so just a sentence, the businesse was ended to the great contentment of all that heard it,and to his owne no small commendation.

Touching Rapes.

But to come into our old way againe: No force of man can prevaile against the woman that is vnwilling. But say such a thing might once in a thousand yeares chance to happen;me thinkes it is no reason, that a businesse of this nature should be compounded withall for money, much lesse injoyne them ma-

riage,

riage,(vnleſſe he had formerly giuen her his word & faithfull promiſe before witneſſes)but that in this caſe,the fitteſt meanes, were,perſonall puniſhment, either more,or leſſe,according to the quality of the delict, and that the cauſe might be handled before the Kings Atturney Generall, that there might be no hope of pardon left,to ſuch boyſterous offenders. Aſſuring my ſelfe that by this meanes,men would haue more feare;and women more ſhame; and would not, ſo often,as now they do,commit ſuch like ſinnes,and treacheries,as theſe. For, this refuge being taken from them, and hauing no hope of remedy, or helpe left vnto them,they would leaue this lewd courſe of life, and not be ſo haſtie, to vndoe both themſelues, and others. If a wench goe to it with a good vvill, why ſhould ſhee vrge, it was againſt her will? Or if perhaps ſhee haue not wherewithall to liue, why ſhould ſhee picke a liuing out of ſuch diſgracefull, and dangerous deceits? There are a thouſand other, and farre more honeſt waies, for a woman to liue by,then theſe.

But here pitie (me thinkes) comes in, and pleads thus; Alack,poore woman, they are weake & ſimple, and ſuffer themſelues to be overcome through their too much facility and aptneſſe of beleefe,and mens too much falſehood in their promiſes; and therefore they ought to be much favoured and pittyed by vs. I confeſſe this plea to be true. But if they were either taught,or knew beforehand themſelues,that this their facility is a fault in them, and that they ought not ſo eaſily to be wonne, they would learne the better to keepe their cabinet cloſe,and not to depart with ſo pretious a jewell,but vpon very good tearmes. And this fooliſh confidence of theirs, hath vndone many a woman, and is like to vndoe more, vnleſſe they looke a little better to themſelues. This deſtroying confidence of theirs,is like vnto faith,without good workes, which hath ſent thouſands packing to Hell. Let no woman therefore (if ſhe be wiſe) depend vpon mens promiſes,be they neuer ſo faire: for they promiſe with paſſion, performe with delayes,and ſeldome or never ſatisfie expectation. That woman therefore,I ſay,that ſhall truſt any mans faith or promiſe, and ſhall vpon ſuch falſe aſſurance,ſurrender vp her Coppie-hold into his hands, let her blame no bodie but her ſelfe,if ſhe be afterwards coozened,and deluded by him.

There is another kinde of injuſtice in the world,ſomewhat neere in this nature, vvhich vvould require ſome reformation. You ſhall (which I haue ſeene oftentimes) haue two fellow ſervants lodge together in one houſe, who being agreed vpon the buſineſſe, and both very willing to enjoy each other, ſhe (like a ſilke-worme) continues her three [m] ſleepes with him, till at laſt their Maſter comes vnawares vpon them,and takes them in the manner: Who,thereupon, layes hold on this his vnfortunate ſervant, who neither taſted the creame, nor the cheeſe of this milk,but only that ſowre whey,which is caſt out to the dogs and the ſwine: he puts them in priſon,where he keeps this poore ſoule ſo long, till at laſt growing deſperate, hee is driuen to marry her; and the more to increaſe his miſery,they condemne him in a pecuniary puniſhment, which hee and all his whole linage, if they were ſold to their ſhirts, are not able to pay. When he ſees himſelfe thus vndone, being firſt forced to marry whether hee will or no, and then to haue all that little that hee hath, to be taken violently from him,and torne as it were out of the very throat of him,he goes one way, and ſhee another: Hee runnes about the Country, and turnes rogue; and ſhee ſtayes at home,and tufnes whore. I pray ſee,what a proper marriage this is, what a wiſe and worthy ſentence,and the great good that comes of it?

O,if there were ſome proviſion made for the reforming of this abuſe, I doubt not but it would doe very much good,and proue profitable for the Commonwealth. I paid the puniſhment of that ſinne, wherein I had not offended;and the price of that meat,whereof I had not taſted: I had provided me a houſe,put all things in order,and withdrew my ſelfe thither,with all that I had;for I was much afraid,leſt I might be ſerued with the ſame ſawce by another Hoſteſſe,as

Women,weake creatures.

Their facile nature, and mens falſe promiſes, haue wrought them much woe.

[m] *Your Silke-wormes make three ſleepes: Awaking after their firſt to feed; then falling againe to ſleepe,till they begin to worke their balls. Neuer leaning off,till they ſhut vp themſelues in thoſe balls, and conſume themſelues,vngorging all that ſlimineſſe, whereof they forme the ball.* Covarr. Pag. 327.

Guzman provides him a houſe of his owne.

I was by this. And becauſe I was likewiſe jealous, that the Choller and Girdle, which my Vnckle had ſent mee, being peeces of that great value, as they were, might, by the fame that went of them, come to be diſcovered, I was the vvillinger to retyre my ſelfe to an houſe of mine own, where I might with ſecrecy all alone by my ſelfe deface the ſame, and ſo alter the faſhion, that they might not be knowne. I did ſo; taking out the pretious ſtones, and the pearles that were in them, with the point of my knife, laying every thing aſide by it ſelfe. I did put all the gold into a great Criſoll, but not all at once, for it would not hold it; ſix or ſeaven ſuch pots, being ſcarce able to containe it, which in the end I made a ſhift to melt; and preparing it with a little ſublimate (for I had ſome ſuperficiall knowledge in that kinde of Art) hauing all my tooles, and moulds in a readineſſe, befitting ſuch a buſineſſe, I did (when I found my ſelfe beſt at leaſure) caſt the whole maſſe into ſeuerall ingots, or little barre of Gold. And I thought I did very wiſely therein, leſt by ſauing their workmanſhip, my ſelfe might haue made worke for the hang-man; and by keeping them in faſhion, beene my ſelfe in no faſhion: and therefore thought it better to ſpoyle that, then that ſhould ſpoile me. With theſe ſtones I began to turne jeweller, firſt informing my ſelf very well of their true worth and value, cauſing ſome of them to be ſet in Crucifixes, ſome in rings, ſome in pendents for the eares, and other ſome in Iewels, as they would ſort and fit beſt, differencing the ſetting and inchaſing of them, as I ſaw cauſe: ſo that of the ſame gold and ſtones, I made diverſe & ſundry peeces: where I ſold ſome for ready money, others I lent out at weddings with good gaines, and others I rifled away at dice; inſomuch, that I loſt little of that which I otherwiſe might haue gained, had I preſerued their faſhion, and with a great deale leſſe feare of danger to mine owne perſon. My ſtocke began to increaſe apace, I knew how to ſell at deare rates vpon truſt, & how otherwiſe to afford a reaſonable good penny-worth: I could tell how to turne and winde my money to the beſt profit; and I vvanted no credit, becauſe I vvas fluſh of money.

Guzman *alters the faſhion of his Iewels.*

There was cloſe adjoyning to my houſe, certaine ground, that was to be ſold for the building of houſes vpon it. I thought good to buy a plot thereof for to build vpon, that I might haue an houſe of mine own to put my head in, making choyſe rather of a little corner of mine owne purchaſing, then to goe every moneth chopping and changing of our lodging, lugging our bedding on our backes, and being at a continuall charge in remouing of our houſhold ſtuffe. Well, I agreed with the owner of the Land, I payd him his full price in good Royals, holding the ſame for ever, the Lord reſeruing only for himſelfe a yearly rent of two Royals. I built a houſe vpon it, vvherein I ſpent before I was aware (and now there vvas no turning backe) aboue three thouſand Ducats: It was a neat pile, handſomely contriu'd, and of good receipt, and ſtood finely for pleaſure and entertainment. There did I liue, vvith that poore trading that I had, like a *Fucar*; and there ſhould I haue ended my dayes like a Prince, if my hard fortune, and greedy ill lucke had not croſt me, by the vnhappy encounter of a crafty knaue, with a couetous wretch. For my houſe being ſo well furniſht, my perſon ſo well reſpected, and my reputation ſtanding on ſuch good termes, as it did, there was not a foole wanting, who had a moneths minde to make me his ſonne in law: Who had a conceit, that I was all good meate, and that I had not (like the grape) ſome ſtony kernels in me, that vvere to be taken out, and throwne away, as good for nothing.

Guzman *turnes Merchant.*

This alſo is another great folly (and I feare me too much in vſe) that men ſhould be ſo ſimple, as to marry their daughters, to the ſons of vnknowne parents. Take heed, take heed, I ſay, how thou beſtoweſt thy childe: Thinke vpon that old, but ſound counſel of our fore-fathers; *Al hijo de tu vezino, metelo en tu caſa*: " Match thy daughter vvith thy neighbours ſonne: Thou knoweſt his breeding, his diſpoſition, his behauiour; what his honeſty is, vvhat his wiſedome,

Proverbe.
" Al hijo de tu vezino, metelo en tu caſa.

dome, what his means: but neuer admit thou a new commer, or receiue him for thy ſonne in Lawe, who is a meere ſtranger vnto thee: For ſuch a one, though thou ſee him to day in his owne houſe, may to morrow be led thence to the gallowes if he chance to be knowne, and found out what he is.

The care a father ought to haue in the beſtowing of his daughter.

Proverbe.

° Acude cada vna à ſu natural

This ſilly foole was a kinde of trucker of commodities as well as my ſelfe; and ° birds (you know) of a feather, will ſtill flocke together. He clung ſo cloſe to me, that he glew'd me vnto him: He married me to his daughter, hauing no other childe in the world: Hee was rich, ſhee was faire, and of a good gracefull behauiour. Hee promiſed mee with her, three thouſand Ducats, and I was well contented with it, He, who was a ſubtle fellow, and knew the dapps of the world, and could winde a penny to the beſt advantage, had no ambition to ſeek any higher, then to finde out a man of my making, that knew how to imploy my money to profit. And in this he had reaſon: For better is a poore ſonne in Law, that is a good husband, and knowes when to ſaue, and when to ſpend a penny, then one that is rich and a great waſter. And there is no wife father (I aſſure my ſelfe) but vvould rather haue a man without money to his ſonne in Law, then money without a man. This man had a vvonderfull great affection vnto me, vve were agreed on the point, the conditions were drawne, the writings ſealed, and the marriage ſolemnized.

Guzman *marries a wife.*

Now I am a married man, now am I entred into an honeſt and honourable calling, I haue a miſtreſſe now in my houſe, well contented with her choice, much made of, and well ſerued. Some dayes paſſed ouer, (which were not many) vvhen as my father in Law, carrying vs home with him one Sunday to dinner, after that the cloath vvas taken away, we three being all alone, hee ſayd thus vnto mee; Sonne, being now growne old, and hauing in my life time paſt through many troubles, and for that thee thou art yet but a yong man, and ſtand'ſt now but at the foot, as it were, of the hill, that thou maiſt get vp to the top, vvith the greater eaſe, and that thou maiſt not tumble downe backward when thou art halfe way vp, I vvill deliuer thee my opinion, as one who is ſo much intereſſed as I am in thy good: otherwiſe I ſhould ſaue that labour, and not giue thee any part of that vvhich I now pretend to doe.

Guzmans *father in law his advice.*

Firſt then I vvould haue thee to conſider, that if thou ſhalt deminiſh one farthing, of thy ſtock, which thou windeſt and turneſt in the world, it will quickly be conſumed, be it neuer ſo great. You muſt likewiſe haue a care to vphold and maintaine your credit; And if you meane to be a Merchant, you muſt carry your ſelfe like a Merchant; laying aſide all that vvhich is not integrity and plaine dealing, for there is no negociating now adayes, but vvith it and vvith money; changing and rechanging as the market goes; making, according as you ſee the times are, either more or leſſe gaine. I ſhall ſtand ſtill by you, and be euer ready to giue you my helping hand, and hold you vp by the chinne, that you may not ſinke, if it be in my power to beare you vp. But if at any time (vvhich God forbid) the Dice ſhould turne, and that luckie chance vvhich vve looke for, ſhould not come, take phyſicke in time, purge your ſelfe vvhile you are in health, of your bad humors, and by a prouident forecaſt, preuent all future ſickneſſe. This ſaid, he cauſed two bils of debt to be brought in, and two counter-bils of credit, and going on in his diſcourſe, hee ſaid thus vnto mee; One of theſe vvritings ſhall be to this effect, that you acknowledge your ſelfe to be indebted vnto mee in the ſumme of foure thouſand Ducats, vvhich I haue lent vnto you; againſt vvhich (to ſaue you harmeleſſe) I vvill make a counter-bill, vvherein I vvill confeſſe a full ſatisfaction and true payment of the ſaid debt, in ſuch ample manner as you your ſelfe ſhall be pleaſed to deviſe it. Both vvhich vvee vvill ſafely keepe to helpe our ſelues at a pinch, if neede ſhould require; though it vvere much better, that no ſuch occaſion ſhould offer it ſelfe, nor come (as I hope it neuer ſhall) vvithin our doores. The other vvriting ſhall be, that I will procure my brother to ſell vnto you an annuall rent that

hee

he hath, of fiue hundred Ducats, *de* [p] *juro*, and it ſhall be done in this manner; There will not one caſh-keeper or other, be wanting vnto vs, who (out of the acquaintance and friendſhip that is betweene vs) will be willing to make ſhow of ſo much money, to the end that the publike Notary, may avow and teſtifie the payment thereof; or elſe wee will take it there, and they ſhall lend it vs in banke, paying for the vſe thereof fifty Royals; and when this bill of ſale ſhall be made ouer vnto you in as abſolute manner as Law can deuiſe it, you ſhall returne the ſame backe againe vnto him, giuing him full power to diſpoſe thereof, and by a writing vnder your owne hand, you ſhall acknowledge that this was but a faigned thing, put ouer vnto you onely in truſt, and that really and truly, thoſe fiue hundred Ducats, are, and were alwaies his, and that you can by no meanes pretend any lawfull claime vnto them. I liked very well of it; ſuppoſing it might doe me much good, but could do me no harme.

I did as hee directed mee, who had beene an old beaten Souldier in theſe kinde of buſineſſes, had taken all the degrees of a cunning dealer, and knew the true tricke, wherein he was to trade, by which trickes and devices, hee had wrought himſelfe into a fortune, and come to be ſo rich as he was.

This foundation being thus layd, I continued my trading a pretty vvhiles, being alwaies in all things, very circumſpect and punctuall: And becauſe I was not ignorant, that the credit of thoſe that are great dealers in the vvorld, doth depend much vpon oſtentation, faire ſhewes and flouriſhes, I did make the world beleeue, that my houſe my wife and my ſelfe, vvere in a fulneſſe of plenty, and wanted nothing that was for ornament or neceſſary vſe. And in particular, my word, in all my dealings, was like a clocke, it ſtrucke alwayes true, and never went falſe. My wife had a hole [q] bored through her hand; all ran out to waſte, that was powred into it; an augre had likewiſe pierced her temples, whereby her hogges-head had taken the vent of vanity. And I (kind foole) ſeeing the world thriu'd with me, and that my gettings were great, began to giue way to her idle deſires, & to humour theſe her womaniſh appetites, giuing her greater liberty, then in diſcretion I ſhould haue done; and ſhe for her part tooke ſo much on the other ſide, ſtretching every inch to an ell, that ſhee ſpent exceſſiuely, and beyond all manner of meaſure in the accompanying and entertaiaing of her friends, in her banquets, feaſts, and other inter-mealary-intertainments, beſides the great pompe of her apparell, jewels, dreſſings, and a thouſand other the like gallantries, with as many bobs, & other dingle-dangles, hanging at every one of theſe, as the *Polypus* hath tales; All theſe things concurring with that dearth and ſcarcity which befell vs in theſe our firſt yeares; and that ſmall correſpondence which we had in trading, it being a dead world, I began at length to know mine owne weakneſſe, and was taken on the ſodaine with ſuch a ſwimming and giddineſſe of the head, that I was ſcarce able to ſtand on my legges, and lackt little of falling like a lumpiſh piece of Lead, flat to the ground: So true is that ſaying;

No man knowes, (ſaue who by proofe doth taſte)
What a good houſe, and a bad wife waſte,

If now in theſe dayes, there were made a law that whereas in Caſtile they allow the halfe of that which a man hath to his wife, in way of dowry; that the husband ſhould not only not giue her that, but ſhould rather take ſome of their wiues dowrie from them; they would then labour to get ſomething, at leaſt, ſeeke to ſaue what the husband gets; Whereas now they take no farther care, then how they may waſte and conſume vvhat the husband painfully brings in.

When I was a ſingle man, I had wealth and trading enough, to haue made my ſelfe a rich man in a ſhort time; but now, by hauing a wife I was growne poore and ready to goe downe the winde. And becauſe my Father in Law was onely acquainted with my booke of Accounts, and knew as well as my ſelfe

[p] Iuro *is a royall rent raiſed vpon Cities, Townes, and other places of the kingdome, ſo called a iure, which the Kings haue to ſuſtaine themſelues withall, and to pay the Miniſters of his Courts of Iuſtice. And from thence it had the name of* juro. *This kind of Tribute is due vnto the Kings of Spaine, for their ayde and maintenance.* Covarr. verb. juro.

[q] Muger de mano horadada. *This phraſe is ſtill taken in the worſer part.* Covarr. pag. 478.

Proverbe.
[r] Traer mas rabos que vn polpo. Covarr. pag. 600.

Proverbe.
[ſ] Nadie ſabe, ſi no es el que lo laſta, lo que ſemejante caſa gaſta.

Guzman *begins to ſinke.*

ſelfe, what was owing to me, and what I did owe vnto others, and was true and truſty therein vnto me. I could not wāt credit; & the rather, for that all men did verily beleeue, that thoſe 500 Ducats of yearly reuenue were mine owne. With this prop I bore vp this burthē of my debts, till my back was ready to break, & when I could endure the weight of them no longer, I ſodainly ſunk like vnto a building that is raiſed on a falſe foundation. Now the time of my paimēts drew neare; & though time of it ſelfe doth naturally ſtill run along, yet to thoſe that owe money, it flies away with a ſwift wing, & ſeemeth ſhorter, then otherwiſe perhaps it would. I ſaw my preſent ruine before mine eyes, & was ſo perplexed with the very thought thereof, that I could not take any reſt, nor knew in the vvorld what to doe. In this perplexity of mind, I got me to my father in lawes houſe, that I might break my griefs vnto him, and communicate my cares with him; He comforted me the beſt that he could, and wiſht me not to be diſmaid, for that vve had a ſalue for this ſore in our owne hands, & that the remedy for this malady, vvas here at home vvithin our owne doores. He takes his cloake, throwes it on his ſhoulders, and away hee and I goe together to one that vvas *Eſcriuano de Prouincia*, the publike Notary of that Province, an eſpeciall friend of his, and carrying him to *Santa Cruz*, vvhich is a certaine Church adjoyning to the Market-place, and ſtands right ouer againſt the priſon, and theſe Offices belonging therevnto, there we made in ſecret vnto him a private relation, how the caſe ſtood with vs. Then ſaid my father in Law vnto him; *Señor N*: This buſineſſe ſhall be many Ducats in your way; you know very vvell how I dealt with you in my laſt troubleſome ſute, and how fairely things were carryed betweene vs on both ſides; and I muſt alſo truly confeſſe vnto you, that by your good meanes, all the decrees and ſentences that vvere publiſhed in that cauſe, came forth in my favour, turning greatly (for the which I muſt euer thāke you) to my profit and credit, which makes me hope (preſuming vpon your wonted loue) for all good from your hands. My ſonne in Law, owes by a former writing to this of mine a 1000 Ducats, & this is already preſented, and diligences vſed therein in another Office; yet we are both of vs very willing, that all this buſineſſe ſhould be brought before your vvorſhip, & that you ſhould haue the ordering of it; in conſideration whereof, we hope you will deale well with vs, & vſe vs friendly, being ſo much your ſervants, as we are; for I ſhall not only my ſelfe requite this your kindneſſe to your own good content & liking; but my ſon, that is here with me, ſhall, when our buſineſſe is diſpatcht, beſtow 200 Crownes on you to buy you gloues; & I will paſſe my word vnto you for him, and ſhall ſee you truly paid. The *Eſcrivano* told vs; All ſhall be done to your mind, & as well as you your ſelues would haue it. Let this bil, ſaid he, of 4000 Ducats be firſt preſented, & we ſhall accord the debt for ten in the hundred, by meanes of a friēd, to whom we will giue an account of this pretenſion, to the end that he may doe it vpon any reaſonable conſideration, that vve ſhall giue him, and for the reſt lay the care vpon me, and leaue it to my charge. My father in Law, preſented his owne bond. In concluſion, I was carried to priſon, al my goods were ſeazed on, my vvife ſhee brings forth the Indenture for her Dowry, taking ſo much cloath to themſelues, that there was a great deale of ſtuffe vvanting to make vp my garment. For both of them, having poſſeſt them-ſelues of my houſe, my bills, and my moveables, there vvas nothing elſe left for me to take hold on with my teeth. And for my Iewels, and my moneys, they were ſold, and ſpent, and that little that vvas remaining, was to farre out of my reach to come at it.

Guzman *committed to priſon.*

When my Creditors ſaw me clapt vp, they came all vpon me, entring their Actions againſt me, preſenting their bils & their bonds before divers & ſundry Notaries: But vvhen this bond of ours was brought forth, all vvere to yeeld to that, as one that commanded all the reſt, and had already paſt the Office, as being the moſt anciēt debt, & therefore ought to be ſeru'd firſt. For the *Alcaldes*, ſeeing it was *res juſtificata*, a good and authenticall bond, and proved ſo to be,

gaue order that ſhould be firſt ſatisfied. When they ſaw what an ill hand they had of it, and that they could not come to finger my goods, they preſently went about to imbarque thoſe my 500 Ducats of an annuall rent, before ſpecified. But the true owner then appeares, & defends his owne right, my wifes Vnckle clayming thoſe as properly belonging vnto him. Then they fell to Law about it, whoſe bills, and anſwers, together with other writings, proceſſiue, juſtificatiue, obligatiue, teſtamentiue, partitiue, acquiſitiue, renunciatiue, and infinite other the like, being as the body of a great Armie, when they were all joyn'd together, came to no leſſe then two thouſand and fiue hundred ſheets of paper. Euery one, that came to demand them, for to carry them to his Advocate, when he ſaw, that he muſt, before he could haue them, pay ſo much money to the Notarie, he did tremble at it. And albeit there were ſome, that were at the charge; yet there were other ſome, who ſeeing that they were like to haue a cold ſute of it, and that they ſhould but throw away their money in vaine, would not be at the coſt to take them out, but did rather deſire to come to ſome indifferent termes of agreement, & to ſit downe with loſſe, then to be at any more charge, and in a cholericke humour, to caſt the* cord after the cauldron. They well perceived, that albeit they had taken out a Copie of the Proceſſe, they were as far to ſeeke of their money, as before; And therefore ſeeing there was nothing to be got by the bargaine, their loſſe remedileſſe, and their debt deſperate, they did helpe to negociate for me, and to come to compoſition with me. I demanded tenne yeares tearme; and ſome of them were well contented with it. Then began my Father in law to ſtirre in the buſineſſe, and becauſe his was the greater debt, he wrougt ſo with them, that the leſſer debts followed the example of the greater, by which meanes I came out of priſon, and was ſet at libertie, the *Eſcrivano* having well lickt his fingers on both ſides: whoſoever loſt, I am ſure he got well by the bargaine. After all theſe ſtormes, my ſhip, and goods ſunke, I made a ſhift at laſt to get a land, I came ſwimming to the ſhore in a paire of linnē linings, being ſtript of all the reſt, yet were theſe linings linde with ſilver. I had a great deale of wealth of divers poore men remayning ſtill in my hands, who had truſted me with all that they had, being deceived by that credit which I had abroad in the world. I did in this, as I vs'd to doe in all the reſt of my actions; I was no changeling; only I proceeded herein with a little more credit, and a better kinde of name, which my other had no colour for. For albeit this was no better then theft (to ſpeake the truth of it) and plaine robberie; yet I continued ſtill with the name of Merchant, and not of Thiefe. By this, I got experience of that, which I knew not before. This roguiſh tricke, till now, did I never vnderſtand what it was, nor did ſo much as once enter into the reckning of it. This ſeemed vnto me *cautelã damnoſiſſimã*, a very hurtfull warineſſe, a caution too too cautelous, which ought narrowly to be look't into, and ſome good remedy in this caſe to be provided. For by theſe their counter-writings, there is no debt certaine, no aſſurance good, nor any true ſecurity to be had, being the moſt prejudiciall thing that can be to a Common-wealth. For, from thence are occaſioned moſt of your Law-ſutes; by meanes whereof, many of poore, cõe to be rich; & many of rich, to be poore; being thereby vtterly vndone, & driven to beg their bread from doore to doore. And it being the intention & purpoſe of a good Iudge, to averre the truth betweene litigant and litigant, and ſuch as wage law one againſt another, & duly to adminiſter Iuſtice to every man aright; yet is it not poſſible for him in this caſe ſo to doe, becauſe things are ſo intricate and ſo intangled one within another, that they which are moſt innocent, are oftentimes moſt deceived, and by conſequence moſt wronged. And the reaſon of it is, becauſe when a man doth plot a deceit or cozenage in this kind, he goes warily to worke, & beates his braines how he may ſecure himſelfe, poſſeſſing him-ſelfe before-hand of the ports and paſſages that lead vnto the truth, to the end, that the way therevnto may be barricado'd & blocked vp, that no body may

proverbe.
* Echar la ſoga, tras el caldero. Caldero, *is commonly taken for a bucket, which ſerues to take water out of a well. Now*, echar la ſoga, tras el caldero, *To fling the rope after the bucket, is, when we haue loſt one thing, to throw the other after it. This proverbe is taken from one, who going to draw water out of a Well, the bucket ſlipping from the rope, and falling into the Well, in a rage throwes the rope after it; wherewith, if he would but haue had the patience, he might haue got vp his bucket againe.* Covarr. verb. Caldero. Guzman releaſed.

Againſt fraudulent conueyances.

may come vnto it. So that this light being taken away, the Iudge remayneth blinde, and that mans falſe play, which is not yet found out by Iuſtice, triumphs over truth, and goes away with the victorie. I know there are ſome, that will not ſticke to ſay, that your counter-writings, for commerce & negotiation, are very neceſſarie; but I muſt be ſo bold with theſe men, as to tell them plainely, that they are not. For he that is willing to help another man with his credit, let him ſtand (a Gods name) as a ſurety for him, & not as a cloaker of his knaverie. That which I learned in *Barçelona*, the firſt time that I was there, & now within theſe two dayes, ſince my returne from *Italy*, is; That to be a Merchant, is a dignitie, and an honourable calling; and no man can haue that title, vnleſſe he be firſt preſented vnto the Prior, & the Conſuls; where he puts in ſecuritie to deale faithfully & truly in the Trading, that he ſhall vndertake. And yet in *Caſtile*, where there is ſuch a *Machina* of merchandizing, ſuch a great Trade driven, where there is Cõtractation for whatſoever commodities, the huge ſtorehouſe of the Vniverſe doth in a manner afford, they take this noble profeſſion vpon them, when as they are neither men of abilitie, nor able to put in good ſecuritie for that which they deale for; but are only rich in ſhifts and tricks, and more cunning in deceiving thoſe, who giue them credit, then skilled in an honeſt courſe of Trading. Every one now, will take vpon him to turne Merchant; whereas in other parts of the world, he that enters thereinto, had need of a good ſtocke to begin withall, & a greater every day then other, if he meane to continue in that courſe. And if perchance it ſo fall out, that (through want of a ſtrong braine, or a ſtrong purſe, or both) their buſineſſes fall out contrary to their expectatiõ, & ſucceed other wiſe then their falſe imagination did ſuggeſt vnto them, making vſe of theſe their counter-writings, they remaine in better and richer eſtate, then they did before. I need not to inſtance in particulars, becauſe it is exemplified vnto vs by daily experience. With their breaking, they pull a great many others after them, eſpecially all thoſe, that haue truſted them with their goods; who conſume that little that is left them in ſuing for their owne. And if peradventure they be Officers, or Husband-men, the Lord with their loſſe, loſeth likewiſe his part; wanting thoſe by this meanes, which ſhould follow his profit, and receiue his rents, and his cuſtome; and the Common-wealth thereby rob'd of the travell & paines of theſe laborious & induſtrious day-labourers, & honeſt husband-men; who being buſied in ſutes of Law, cannot apply themſelues to follow the plough, & to manure & dreſſe their land as they were wont to do. Leſſe harme it were a great deale, that a few, and thoſe baggage-people, ſhould not be rich, then that a great many good & honeſt men, ſhould be overthrowne, and vndone by them. If it were not for theſe Counter-writings, and fraudulent deeds, men might more ſecurely truſt one another, and there would be much better dealing in the world: For then a man might haue certaine knowledge of his eſtate and meanes, vvhom he truſts, without having other owners ſtep forth, and challenge all that he hath to be theirs. And becauſe it may be, that at ſome time or other, there will be order taken for the remedying of this ſo great a miſchiefe, I will onely briefly tell the effects (that I may be as good as my word) of this harmefull cozenage, if they doe not the ſooner leaue off theſe their damnable fraudulent tricks and deviſes. For queſtionleſſe, many men would deale more honeſtly and plainely, then now they doe, if theſe fobs and giggs, were not put into their heads by others. And hence it is, that many things loſe thoſe good effects, which otherwiſe they would take, for that theſe ſtrange owners are not made knowne in time, who do not only invent, but execute what they haue deviſed, cheating the Creditor of that juſt debt which is due vnto him. I cannot chooſe but ſpeake my minde; and if there be no care taken for the reforming of this groſſe abuſe, I cannot doe withall. It ſhall ſuffice me, that I haue herein ſatisfied that obligation and dutie, which in this caſe is required at my hands. Let others likewiſe looke to their obligations; and ſeeing,

The order in Barçelona, that is taken with your Merchants.

ing, they neither want age, nor diſcretion to looke into theſe things, let them not alſo be wanting in their good will, to redreſſe that, which is ſo neceſſarie for the ſeruice of God, and of their King, it concerning ſo much as it doth the generall good of the Common-wealth.

When a poore Merchant is minded to enter into great trading, he intreats (for the increaſe of his credit) ſome kinſman, or friend of his, that he will make ouer ſome land of good value, or other his goods in truſt, for the which hee makes him a Counter-writing, wherein he acknowledgeth, that notwithſtanding theſe parcels of lands or goods ſeeme to the world to be his, yet really and truly it is not ſo, and that he ſhall be ready at all times to reſigne them vp into their hands, to whom of right they belong, whenſoeuer they ſhall demand the ſame of him. And ſo with the credit of this ſeeming ſtocke of his owne, he gets farther credit of others, & takes vp vpon truſt, what he will him-ſelfe. See now, what a kind of people we are, and what true dealing there is amongſt vs! How like vnto thoſe *Moores* and *Negro's* of *Ghinie*, an ignorant and barbarous kinde of people, who with counterfeit beads, falſe eare-rings, bells, and other the like bables, which children weare about their necks, doe with the bare ſound, gay ſhow, and glorious glittering of theſe glaſſie commodities, cozen and deceiue vs. If their trading thriue well with them, it is well; for then the Creditor ſhall receiue what is due vnto him: If ill, they haue a trap, wherein to catch their Creditors, and all goes ill with them. Then he that made over his goods vnto him in truſt, comes by a Counter-writing to recover them, and all the reſt are defrauded of their due.

When a man will not pay what he owes; before the day of payment comes, that this debt is due, the debtor ſelleth, or abſolutely paſſeth away all his whole eſtate in truſt by ſome fraudulent deed, or counter-writing in that kind. And it afterwards ſo falleth out, that before the day of payment come, the debtor, who made this cautelous proviſion, dyes; whereby the true Creditor cannot come to recover his owne. For the party, whom the debtor truſted with his goods, doth cover and conceale this Counter-writing; ſo that the Feoffe in truſt carryes away all his goods, and the divell the deceaſed downe to the pit of hell.

When a man hath a purpoſe to deceiue with his perſon, to get him a wife with a good dowry, the better to cozen both him-ſelfe and others, he runs the like courſe. He gets him-ſelfe to be truſted with a great deale of wealth; and anon after that he is marryed, his debts begin to grow vpon him, and living at a greater charge then before, he is not able to pay what he owes. So the owner of theſe goods recovers his owne, and the new married couple fall into want. This his cozening of her, comming at laſt to be knowne, their loue begins to coole each towards other, and oftentimes they goe together by the eares, for that the wife will not conſent that he ſhall ſell away her dowry, or any way be charged with her husbands debts.

All which inconveniences, would finde a ſpeedy and eaſie remedie, if there were an expreſſe command giuen, that there ſhould be no ſuch kinde of fraudulent deeds, and Counter-writings at all; and if there were any, that they ſhould bee of no force or validitie in Law, and that any Act in that kinde ſhould not ſtand good. And for the preſent, any ſuch deed or deeds, to be publiſhed and made knowne within ſuch a certaine time, vpon paine of taking the others debt vpon him. If this courſe were taken, men might then certainly know, what a mans eſtate were, and whether he were of that ſufficiencie to be truſted, and to take vp vpon credit. And I dare be bold to ſay, that thereby one haife of your Law-ſutes would be excuſed; for that moſt of thoſe, which are here in *Caſtile*, are of this nature, or at leaſt, haue their ground and beginning from thence.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

Guzman de Alfarache *proſecutes the ſucceſſe of his mariage, till ſuch time as his wife dyed. And how her Dowry returned backe to his father in Law. He diſcourſeth of bad wines, and the hurt they doe their husbands.*

READER; Haſt thou by this time conſidered with thy ſelfe, into what a Labyrinth I was willing to put my ſelfe? What good can it doe me? or why doe I ſpend and conſume my time in vaine, baſting ſtones with butter, and annoynting flints with oyle, to ſee if I can ſupple them, and make them become ſoft? Doeſt thou thinke I ſhall make the Blackmoore white, by my often waſhing of him? Or doeſt thou conceiue, that any good will come of that which I haue ſaid? Will it bring forth any profitable fruit? I rather beleeue that I ſpend my breath in vaine, beat my braines to no purpoſe, and loſe both my coſt and my labour, without receiving either profit or honour thereby. For I know I ſhall be tit in the teeth, with that old anſwer; Why ſhould he giue counſell to another, that cannot follow it himſelfe? It would haue ſuted better with me, to haue told them two or three merry tales, vvherewith Miſtreſſe ſuch a one, and my Lady what'you call (who are now quite tyred out, and begin to nod, being brought a-ſleepe with theſe fooleries) might haue entertained themſelues, and paſt away the time. Me thinks I heare him ſay, who is now reading, what I haue written, that he will caſt aſide my booke, and rather get himſelfe into ſome corner, and there take a nap, then endure the trouble of hearing me talke. I confeſſe, he hath a thouſand reaſons on his ſide, to doe as he does; nor can I blame him; for, being truly (as they are) truthes, which I treat; they are not ſo fit for *entretinimiento*, as *ſentimiento*, entertainment, as the vnderſtanding; being to be reſpected more, for the ſenſe, then the conceit: Theſe are not things fit for laughter, and to make merry vvhen friends meet; but are to be weighed with a great deale of ſtudy, and conſideration; and to be ruminated, and chewed ouer, againe and againe. But becauſe the purge, that I ſhall giue thee to cleanſe thee, may not ſeeme loathſome vnto thee, or that thou mayſt refuſe to take it, *propter malum odorem & ſaporem*, for its ill both ſmell, and taſte, let vs guild ouer theſe our pills with gold, to cover them vvith the pap of an Apple, conſerues of Roſe, or ſome thing elſe, that may pleaſe both the eye, and the palate. And ſo I returne againe to the purpoſe, from vvhence I haue made this digreſſion.

Now did I begin to lift vp my head againe, and to enter a-freſh into the vvorld; I had a new ſtocke a going, the beſt I could make, though much leſſe then I could haue wiſht it, and meaner then ſtood conveniently with my preſent both neceſſitie, and occaſions. For to beare a good burthen, a man had need of a good backe; and they who build Towers on the ſand, ſee them quickly fall to the ground. Thoſe that haue a minde to marry, muſt haue wherewithall to make the pot ſeethe. The good man muſt be able to giue his wife a dinner; and ſhee bring vvherevvithall to beſtow on him a ſupper. There is more goes to marriage, then two payre of leggs, in one paire of ſheets. Foure naked walls, ſix carpets, two table-cloathes, & halfe a dozen napkins, are not a Dowry for a wife, vvhen at the firſt entrance into the houſe, I muſt ſpend vpon her in Iewels, and other idle dreſſings, that out of vvhich I ſhould picke my living. My principall was gone, and I was now in want. For (as it is in the proverbe) *Quien compra lo que no ha meneſter, vende lo que ha meneſter*: He that[b] buyes that he needeth not, muſt ſell that he hath need of. What profit can it be for a poore Tradsman, to tricke vp his wife in ſome ſix change of gownes, wherein he conſumeth his maine ſtocke? Can he afterwards continue his Trade with this traſh?

My Gentle-woman, my wife, was ill acquainted, and leſſe exerciſed in miſe-

Proverbe.
a Para grande carga grandes fuerças.
Advertiſements for thoſe that will marry.

Proverbe.
b Quien compra lo que no ha meneſter, vende lo que ha meneſter.

ries. She had liu'd well at home with her father, ſhe knew not there what want meant, but had the world at wiſh, there was not that dainty ſhe deſired, which ſhe had not; but now in my houſe, ſhe had nothing leſſe, though as long as my wealth laſted, ſhe lacked not any thing, that ſhe had a minde vnto. But being not able any longer to hold out, ſhe was forced to worke and ſweat for her liuing, and being not vſed heretofore to take paines, it ſeemed the harder vnto her to endure it. With that little, which was now remayning vnto me, I began to buy at deare rates vpon credit, and to ſell good cheape for ready money, *ſicut erat in principio*. I ſtood ingaged, and my father in Law bought the wares. I could haue wiſht the ballance had weigh'd the contrary way. And theſe commodities that we dealt for, never went out of the houſe. Our ordinary wares, were gold thread, and ſometimes wrought plate, and jewels of gold, handſomely ſet forth, curiouſly inchaſed, and for the faſhion exceeding neat and delicate: Some other things vve had of little or no value, old moth-eaten ware, vvhich lay vpon our hands, and could not be rid away, which were bought at a farre leſſer price. And thus out of thoſe ſmall gaines, that we made, vve rubb'd out, and made a ſhift to liue as well as we could. But all was little enough to bring the world about, becauſe our ſtock was ſo little: & ſo by little & litle, we wēt eating of it out, it cōſuming by degrees. And for all we were brought to this low eb, my w ifes dowry was never ſo much as once touch't or fingred by me, that ſtood ſtill on foot, being laid out vpon poſſeſſions, which my wife would never conſent ſhould be medled vvith: I could as vvell take the Moone in my teeth, as to come to lay hold on them; nay I could not ſo much as haue a ſight of them. Theſe our commodities, we did deliver forth vpon credit for foure moneths, with condition to haue a fifth part of the gaines. And the *Eſcriuano* (whom we had ready vpon all occaſions, to ſerue our turnes) did allwayes make teſtification of the conſigning over of theſe commodities; which goods, a Broaker preſently tooke into his hands, vvho made vp the third perſon in theſe our dealings, and vvas all one as it were with my ſelfe and the *Eſcriuano*. And having them in this manner made over vnto him, within ſome two houres after he would bring the money to its owner, to ſuch loſſe, as he him-ſelfe ſhould ſay they were ſold (as was ordred betweene vs) though they had not ſold one penny-worth of them, but had them ſtill in ſafe cuſtodie, and were never ſo much as once removed out of the houſe. We made vp the money amongſt vs: He received an Acquittance for his diſcharge, and there was an end of this buſineſſe.

Guzman in Spaine *cannot be arreſted for debt.*

It was a common tricke amongſt vs, to make vſe of a moſt cunning aud ſubtill ſtratageme, to the end that none might eſcape our fingers, by alledging his Gentilitie, or any other exception that might beſtead him, or free him from arreſt. When vve vvere to furniſh any man, vve would firſt informe our ſelues, whether he had the meanes to pay vs; and knowing him to be a ſufficient man, and that he tooke vp ſuch or ſuch commodities, only to ſupply his preſent occaſions, we did willingly giue him credit: howbeit it would ſometimes ſo fall out, that we ſhould come ſhort of this our reckning, and thoſe men faile vs, whom we thought to be very good men, and of good wealth. But when vve had no perfect knowledge of the party, & that it did not ſort to our purpoſe, we would demand a Suerty, together with the morgage of ſome houſe, or peece of land, for default of payment. And howbeit we knew well enough, that this houſe, or land, thus morgaged was none of his, and that whatſoeuer he had was extended already for the payment of his debts, and that he had not ſo much as a tyle or bricke that was in it, which was not indebted in a crowne, yet we did not ſtand ſo much vpon that, nor was this the thing that we did much care for, and were vvilling it ſhould be rather ſo then otherwiſe: But that vvhich we did ayme at was this, To draw him to acknowledge by a writing vnder his owne hand, that this houſe or land, was his owne fee-ſimple, free from all kind of incumbrāçes, morgages, ſeſſings, rents, feoffments of truſt, or otherwiſe obliged for any other debt

debt whatsoever. And with this assurance, when the time of paiment was come, if he brake this day with vs, vve had an *Alguazil* still at hand with vvhom we vvere in league, who made him to giue vs so much for every tenth part that we delivered vnto him, and so vve presently came vpon the backe of him, putting our bond in execution.

And if at any time they would oppose the arrest, or did offer to make any resistance for to escape the hands of justice, that he might not pay the debt; then came vve vpon him another way, bringing a criminall action against him, and making a diligent search and enquiry into his estate, we would proue that it was not extended to its true value; that there was some *legger-demayne* vsed therein, and that he had dealt falsly and deceitfull to defeat his Creditors, laying to his charge many other misdemeanours. And thus did wee make sure worke for our selues, whilest the poore man slipt downe the hill, without being able to recover himselfe, or to stay the force of his sodaine falling. Vsing this precaution, we plaid vpon sure cards, and without this prouision made before-hand, we seldome prevailed in our businesses. Whether this kind of dealing were lawfull or no, I know vvhat I know; but vve ranne the same course vve saw others run before vs, we did no more then vvhat others did; our consciences vvere seared, so that we had no great sense or feeling of it. I well wot, that all the while I continued this wicked course of life, I did neuer truly confesse my sinnes, and if I did come to Confession, I did not doe it as I ought to haue done, and performed that duty for no other cause in the world, but to satisfie the Parish, and to avoid Excommunication.

To resist an arrest in Spaine *and to draw his sword against a Sergant, is a whipping matter, besides a condemning to the Galleys; and if he strike or hurt the* Alguazil, *it is punished with death.*

Wilt thou see whether it be so or no? Consider whether I ever promist to make restitution, whensoeuer it should be in my power to doe it? Or whether I had likewise a purpose to amend my lewd and wicked life, when at that time there were fifteene, twenty, or more bonds a foot of the like nature; and yet did I neuer goe my selfe, nor vse any diligence by others, to acquaint those that were thus bound, that such and such a bond vvas vnlawfull, and that I had grated vpon them with a griping and biting Vsury; and that for to cleare my conscience, and that I might worthily receiue the blessed Sacrament of the Communion, I would abate them of the ouer-plus, and make good all that which I had wrongfully and vnlawfully taken from them? And how that I would restore vnto them besides, all that which I had, for that it was all stolne, and had nothing that I could justly and truly say was mine owne. And if afterwards, when they came to pay me, I had no relenting in me, nor did not returne them any thing backe againe, what an intention must this be? Certainly as bad as bad may be. This truly is that which I ought to haue done, but I did it not, nor is it in vse now-adayes to doe such good things as these. God (if it be his will) giue vs a due acknowledgement of our sinnes. And I verily perswade my selfe, that if then at that time I had finished this my life, my soule had assuredly gone downe to hell, and beene condemned to fry in that eternall fire.

O, your Vsurers, they are a wicked generation of Vipers: they haue neither any conscience, nor any feare of God. O what a braue, and what a sure marke is this to shoot at! How neere am I now to the drawing of mine arrow vp to the head? And how doe these traiterous villaines, these Caterpillers of a Commonwealth, stand peeping and watching to see how, and where, I meane to hit. O, what a temptation doe I feele, what a strugling doe I finde in my selfe, & what adoe to pull in this hand and arme of mine, from letting fly a whole sheafe of arrowes at them, and so to wound and gall them on all sides, that I leaue no part about them vntoucht, and no bone in their whole body vnbroken. For, in regard that I am (as they say) *Ladron de casa*, a house-thiefe, one of the same stamp, I know them as well as they know them-selues, & am not only acquainted with their actions, but euen with their very thoughts, & secrets of their hearts. Will you giue mee leaue to giue them a gentle nip, and that I make them to see their

their owne perdition, and put them into ſuch a great couſuſion, that they ſhall not know in the world what to doe with themſelues. I know that ye will not, and I alſo know vvhy you vvill not.

This is a digreſſion. Againſt the greedy deſire of riches.

But if I ſhall ſpeake the truth, I muſt plainly tell you, Riches are the cauſe of all this. But vvhen they are ill gotten, in vvhat miſery liues the ſoule of ſuch a one? Certainly, it is in a very bad caſe. And hence it commeth to paſſe, that covetous men too much devoted vnto riches, incurre infinite troubles, perils, and hazards. And therefore to free himſelfe from this danger, and the better to ſecure himſelfe, *Crates* the *Thebane*, that moſt famous Philoſopher, vvith an vndaunted courage, bound vp in one pack or fardell together all the gold & other ſuch pretious Iewels as he had, & with great fury threw them into the ſea, ſaying: get you gone o ye riches, into the bottome of the ſea, leſt you drench me in the deepe. I had rather drowne you then you ſhould drowne me. But this great Philoſopher (by his leaue) did herein (me-thought) very ill. Much better had he done, if he had diſtributed theſe his goods amongſt the poore: but in doing that which he did, he gaue vs thereby to vnderſtand the great trouble that gold bringeth vvith it; ſo that to him it ſeemed a farre leſſer inconvenience to remaine poore, then to liue in ſo many griefes and afflictions, as riches occaſion in thoſe that poſſeſſe them. What other thing is it to enter with conſideration into the minde of the rich, then to enter into a feare full priſon, where within we ſee men impriſoned, laden with irons, bound with chaines, fetter'd, manacled, and girt about the necke with collars of iron, wherewith they are brought before the Iudge? And how many then are the afflictions, and the torments of theſe, miſerable and wretched men, thus incarcerated, and compaſſed in vvith ſtrong wals, and hard chains? And how much more are they oppreſſed, and how much heavier are their ſhackles, vvho loue riches, and thoſe moſt bound, vvho moſt abound in them? And as there is more compaſſion had of thoſe vvhich are in theſe miſeries, and are thus faſt bound, and painfully laden with bolts, manacles collars and chaines of iron, about their feet, hands, necks, and their whole body throughout: So much more pittie is there to be taken of the rich, and ſee how much the richer hee is, and the more vvealth he hath about him, and all thoſe good things which his heart deſireth, yet for all this are we not to account him a rich and wealthy man, but rather wretched and vnfortunate: For beſides the priſon, vvherein he liues (miſerable as he is) hee findes himſelfe attended and guarded with a barbarous and cruell keeper, which is the *loue* of riches. And if it ſo happen, that thou fall at any time into their hands, there is no getting out of their clutches: but that they may keepe thee ſafe when they haue thee, and that thou maieſt not eſcape from them, they vvill haue three or foure ſtrong doores ſhut vpon thee, and as many great chaines to make all ſure, beſides locks and keyes, with I know not how many double wards and bits, that all the pick-locks in the world, that ever haue beene, ſhall, or will be, ſhall not be able to open theſe doores, and ſet thee free from thence. And yet theſe wretched creatures are ſo blinded in the pleaſure which they take in this their impriſonment, that they never thinke vpon it, nor ſeeke to get out, but are content to continue in it all the dayes of their life.

Bonauenture ſaith, that he who hath once ſet his affection vpon gold, can hardly with-draw his loue from it. King *David* ſaith, That our ſoule cleaueth vnto the duſt, and that our belly trayleth on the ground, and is as it were faſtned and glued to the earth: Vnfolding thereby the affection vvhich vve haue to theſe earthly things. For ſeldome or never are riches poſſeſſed, without a mās ſetling his affection vpon them, it being ſo eaſie a thing to haue it wedged to the things of this world. And by ſo much the more, by how much the more ſtrongly the heart of man is knit vnto them. The *Gloſſe* ſaith, That vvith difficultie we deſpiſe them; and vvith lothneſſe leaue them. But the ſafeſt and ſureſt vvay is, neither to loue them, nor to keepe them. And therefore that Kingly Prophet

ſaid

ſaid, If riches increaſe, ſet not thy heart vpon them. True it is, that they are as hurtfull for the ſoule, as dangerous for the body. And therefore our Saviour Chriſt, much pittying and lamenting thoſe who poſſeſſing them, did heartily loue them; ſaid: Woe vnto you that are rich, for yee haue already receiued your comfort. And S. *Iames* likewiſe with a great deale of griefe and ſorrow, doth bewaile and lament theſe kind of men, ſaying; Goe to now yee rich men, weep and howle for the miſeries that ſhall come vpon you: your riches are corrupted, and your garments moath-eaten: your gold and ſilver is cankred, and the ruſt of them ſhall be a witneſſe againſt you; and ſhall eate your fleſh, as it were fire: you haue heaped treaſure together for the laſt dayes. Behold, the hyre of the Labourers, which haue reaped downe your fields, which is of you kept backe by fraud, cryeth: And the cryes of them which haue reaped, are entred into the eares of the Lord of Sabaoth. Ye haue lived in pleaſure on the earth, and beene wanton; yee haue nouriſhed your hearts, as in a day of ſlaughter. Ye haue condemned and killed the juſt, and he doth not reſiſt you. Bemourne therefore the miſeries wherein you are, for your riches ſhall end in anguiſh and vexation of ſpirit, & all your comforts ſhall forſake you: you ſhall ſleepe your ſleepe, and when you awake finde you hands empty.

David ſaith, Rich men turne fooles through their too much wealth: they become ambitious and vaine, they giue themſelues ouer to a thouſand vices; they ſuffer a thouſand ſharpe journeyes, and as many troubleſome toylings, for to get riches; which when they haue got, they haue a daily fit of feare and trembling, leſt they may chance to looſe them. The imagination of their loſſe cauſeth extreame ſorrow in them: their braines are ſtill working, and their vnderſtanding never taketh any reſt. For, (as our Saviour ſaid) Where a mans treaſure is, there alſo is his heart. O wretched man, thou doſt not any thing in this world, that is ſo bad for thee, as the loue of money. For they, that ſeeke to make themſelues rich, fall into a thouſand temptations, and into as many ſnares, which the Devill hath laid to intrap them. For the root of all evill, is covetouſneſſe. This cauſeth vs to commit ſacrileges, theſts, murders, rapines; it is the author of ſymony, the cauſer of vſuring contracts, of vngodly gaine, and of a thouſand deceits, and frauds, of breakings, both in our deeds, and in our words, of perjuries, and perverting of juſtice. O, what an vnquenchable fire, is the deſire of riches; O how inſatiable is this our luſt, but much more inſatiable our will. Tell me (he that can) who did euer yet ſee the rich man ſatisfied? who, heare him ſay, That hee had now enough? For, when hee hath got what he deſired, he hath no ſooner obtained it, but he is as greedy as hee was before; like vnto your hungry Curres, who vvhen you throw them one morſell, ſtand gaping for another. His end is alwayes on that he deſireth, forgetting how full he is, and the ſtore of wealth that he poſſeſſeth, The eye of a lover is never ſatisfied with looking; And the covetous minde hath never money enough. But (which is a curſe that accompanieth the covetous) he that loues riches, never reapes the fruits of them. Hell is never ſatified with the ſwallowing downe of ſoules; neither the eyes, nor heart of the covetous, with riches. For theſe wicked men haue two horſe-leaches belonging vnto them, which alwayes crye, giue me here, and giue me there; let more and more come in ſtill. By ſo much the more the loue of money increaſeth, by how much the more our money increaſeth. O what a falſe and vnfortunate felicity is that of riches! becauſe it maketh him truly vnhappy, who doth not truly poſſeſſe them.

The poore man liues more contented with that little which hee hath; then the rich man that walloweth in his wealth. O how many haue beene deceived with the deſire of riches! *Balaam*, hearing the ringing and ſound of money, which King *Balack* offered vnto him, fell into deſpaire, and had a miſerable end. *Achan*, being deſirous of a rich rayment, and a wedge of gold, was ſlaine, and ſtoned to death, together with all his family. King *Achab*, out of the

deſire

deſire he had to haue *Nabothes* vineyard, was the occaſion of *Nabothes* death, who by *Ieſabels* order, wife vnto *Ahab*, was ſtoned to death: For which euill fact, *Ahab* was deprived of his life, and his Kingdome; and his wicked wife *Ieſabel*, the inventer of this villany, devoured of dogs. *Gehezi*, out of a deſire to be rich, received ſo many changes of rayment, for which hee was cloathed all his life time, with a moſt loathſome leproſie. *Iudas*, to get thirty pieces of ſilver, loſt his Apoſtleſhip, and his body, together with his ſoule, by becomming his owne executioner. *Ananias* and *Saphyra*, out of greedineſſe of gaine, were ſodainly ſtracken dead. If thou wilt bee rich, thou ſhalt not bee without ſinne: for ſuch is their miſerable and vnhappy condition.

Moreover, it induceth men to embrace vice, and to abandon vertue; it falling out for the moſt part, that vvhere there is abundance of riches, there is aboundance of pleaſures, and ſenſuall delights, and of evill company, which are often an occaſion of infinite infamies, and wicked actions, with great offence to the Majeſtie of God. The rich thinke that God hath no power over them; but they are much deceived; who with open eyes ſee themſelues carried headlong into hell. And this misfortune befals them, becauſe the feare of God is not before their eyes; and for that they loue not their neighbour as they ought: But rather on the contrary, loue their riches better then themſelues, nay more then their owne ſoules. O miſerable and vnhappy men as you are; looke, and diligently conſider that which happened vnto *Lazarus*, that poore beggar, who received more contentment in that his extreame poverty, and in thoſe his ragges and ſtinking ſores, living in the feare of the Lord, then in any other thing in this world; by meanes whereof, he came to enjoy thoſe rich treaſures of heaven, and the continuall and eternall viſion of his God. For a man to make him-ſelfe rich, it is a dangerous thing; for before ever he is aware, hee drawes vpon him an infinite of all kind of troubles and miſeries. It is a wonder to ſee at how deare a rate they buy hell, who pretend to bee rich; ſeeing with how many reſtleſſe travels, they purchaſe eternall torments.

Wicked and wordly-minded men, for a little vaine glory, or rather a ſmoke that ſodainly vaniſheth, care not how many tribulations they vndergo, for loue of this, they ſubmit them-ſelues willingly to infinite ſufferings, toyles, and ſweats, and voluntary ſtoope their necke to the heavy yoake of ſo many woes And why doe they this? Only for a little mucke. So that your rich men take a great delight in ſuffering annoyances, afflictions, tribulations, toylings, turmoylings, travells, troubles, vſing diligences, ſolicitudes, and placing all their care, and their ſtudy, in getting vvealth, and with it, Hell. By which their carke, paines-taking, and ſweats of bloud, they gaine vnto them-ſelues eternall damnation. Doe ye not perceiue (ye wretches) that how much the more care yee take in hoording vp of riches, ſo many the more thieues, and murderers you provide for your ſelues, that may rob you, & cut your throats? whence it alſo commeth to paſſe, that they who did commit theſe outrages againſt you, are likewiſe for this their wickedneſſe whipped, ſent to the Galleys, if not to the Gallowes, and there hanged and quartered.

That man is a foole, that boaſteth him-ſelfe of his riches; For why ſhould any man glory in that, which takes away the ſafety of his life? Riches depriue vs of our liberty. We ſhould be our owne, if theſe were not our owne: And maſters of our ſelues, if theſe were not our maſters. Riches take not away want, but occaſion it; draw not content, but withdraw it from vs. They are maſſed vp with trouble, poſſeſſed with feare, & forgone with ſorrow. The rich man therefore had need of many things, and muſt ſubmit himſelfe to many baſeneſſes, and vile indecencies, being that he is evermore beſieged and aſſaulted with feares, jealouſies, and ſuſpitions. They are full of perturbation, and confuſion; the common ſubject of murmuring and repining. They ſcratch and ſcrape all that they can rap and wring from others. They are daily more and more inflamed

flamed with the deſire of getting. In a word, they will commit any wickednes, or villanie whatſoever, ſo as they may be ſure to get by the bargaine.

A merry tale delivered in the pulpit by a Preacher.

Hearken to that, which was delivered vnto me by a famous Preacher, who diſcourſing vpon this ſubject of rich men, amongſt many other things, I remember he told vs at that time of a certaine picture, the vpper and middle part of which ſquare, or peece, was taken vp by a great rich man, which was there portrayed forth to the life: On his right hand ſtood a roaring boy, to fight for him, if need were; and on his left, a foole, to make his worſhip merry, and to put him out of his dumps: both which were expreſſed in ſuch a poſture, as fitted beſt with them. Vnder this rich man, was drawne a country Clowne; vnder the Clowne, a Merchant; vnder the Merchant, a Counſellor at Law; vnder the Counſellor, a Confeſſor; vnder the Confeſſor, a Phyſitian; and vnder the Phyſitian, the Devill, with a long chaine, whoſe linkes vvere made of vvomens tongues, which kept a horrible ratling. And he farther added, that the rich man had written over his head; Theſe two I keepe: The Clownes word vvas; I maintaine theſe three: The Merchants motto; I rob theſe foure: The Counſellors poſie; I pill theſe fiue: The Confeſſors; I abſolue theſe ſix: The Phyſitians; I kill theſe ſeaven: And the Devill had a labell comming out of his mouth, which ſaid; I carry away all theſe eight with me to Hell.

All theſe and many other the like miſchiefes doe riches beget, whoſe poſſeſſor purchaſeth no other fame, ſaue only; Lo, there goes a rich man: their riches being their totall and eternall diſtruction. But your true riches indeed, are the vertues of the minde; which like invincible forts, defend thoſe that poſſeſſe them. Againſt theſe, neither all the men in the world, nor all the devils in hell can prevaile: They may wage warre againſt them, but they ſhall never overthrow them. O thou, that doeſt either reade or heare me, make vertue the end and center of all thy deſires, and there ſticke in the nayle, that it may ſticke cloſe vnto thee. And here I will ſtop my pen, that I may not runne my ſelfe out of breath in the prayſing of that, which is ſo well able to recommend it ſelfe. But I would haue thee withall to know, that as I haue purpoſely & willingly made this conſiderable digreſſion; ſo in all the courſe of my life, I haue not done any thing more vnwillingly, then to winke at theſe men, and to let them goe by, without leaving ſome pawne behinde them. But becauſe they may not object vnto mee, that I ſpend all my diſcourſe in Reformations, and in prying into other mens actions, I am the more willing to giue way vnto them, and for this once to let them alone. Another motiue, that makes me loth to meddle vvith theſe Vſurers, is; That I may haue one day need of their helpe; and I would not willingly make them mine enemies, whom afterwards I muſt ſue vnto to ſtand my friends. In a word, we are ſo farre forth to keepe ſome kinde of men our friends, as we may haue occaſion to vſe them, and as they may be profitable and beneficiall vnto vs. And as a faithfull friend is knowne in doing good, in time of need; ſo an enemie will never hide him-ſelfe, when he may do thee a miſchiefe.

Onely this one thing I will ſay; Let a man caſt vp his reckonings with himſelfe, and when he findes, that he comes ſhort of his Account, and that he ſtands in need of 200 Ducats to make it vp, let him but take vp ſo much vpon Vſe, and he ſhall ſee them amount in two yeare, to more then ſix hundred. To how much more then, if a man take vp more? And therefore it is good to haue care to the mayne, and to take heed, that we come not within ſuch mens danger. For there is no ſuch Cormorant, as Vſurie; it devoureth houſes, and ſwallowes downe whole Lordſhips, as it were a bit, and makes no bones of it. And if a man cannot get out of this bog, when he is but ouer ſhooes, how ſhall he doe, when he is over bootes? Or how ſhall he ſatisfie a great debt, that is not able to diſcharge a ſmall one. But here let your Vſurers (for me) reſt in peace, and let me returne backe againe to my ſelfe.

I ſay then, that men, by not doing that which they ought to doe, come in the

end,

end, to pay ſoundly for that wh ch they do. What doth it avayle a man to gaine much? What good to get, if he know not how to keepe? Eſpecially, ſeeing vve are daily taught by experience, *Que vale mucho mas al cuerdo la regla, que al necio la renta:* That a wiſe man will goe farther with a penny, then a foole with a pound. His poore pittance (well husbanded) ſhall bring him in more profit, then all the other rents, though never ſo great. Such great odds, hath moderation, of reuenue. He that hath a time of it, let him take time, while time ſerues; and not lye lazing, looking for a better, yet let him not be ſo confident, nor ſo farre preſume vpon his ſtrength, that hee doth not keepe a good and carefull watch vpon him-ſelfe: He muſt looke about with many eyes, & that diligently to, having an eye here, and an eye there; it often-times ſo falling out, that when we thinke our ſelues fateſt, and freeſt from danger, then (vvhen we leaſt dreame of it) we meet vvith a *Martinus contra*, ſome pad in the ſtraw, or ſome Gil to plague vs. I had money in my purſe; I once vvas rich, but now am poore. God he knowes, why, and wherefore. I ſtood looking for a day, to ſet vp my reſt, and how to order the remaynder of my life in ſome ſetled courſe; but this day never came: I did build too much vpon mine owne ſtrength; it vvas ever my fault; I preſum'd I could recollect, and take vp my ſelfe, how, and when I liſted: being verily perſwaded, that though I could cozen and deceiue all others, I ſhould never be ſuch a foole, as to cozen my ſelfe. But here in me, you may ſee how ſelfe-confidence, cauſeth a forgetfulneſſe of God, and by truſting more to our ſelues, then to him, hence it commeth to paſſe, that we loſe not onely our goods, but our ſoules. The greateſt enemie that I had, vvas my ſelfe; Mine owne hands, wrought mine owne woe: And as the good actions of the good, are the reward of their vertue; ſo the bad actions of the bad, are the occaſiõs of their greater tormẽt. Mine owne worke did follow me. They were the furies that did perſecute me: Whereof mine owne naughty dealing, and other mens wickedneſſe, were not the leaſt part of this my miſerie. And God doth therefore permit, that that, which we make the inſtrument of offending him; the ſame he maketh to be our diſtruction. Nor did I ſo much grieue for the loſſe of my wealth; for I knew full well, that the goods of fortune come with her, and vvith her goe their way. And that the more favour ſhe ſhoweth, the leſſe certainty ſhe aſſureth. That which did vex me to the very heart; vvas, That that, which ſhould haue beene my comfort (I meane my wife) ſhe, whom with ſuch earneſtneſſe her father deſired to marry vnto me, and vſed a thouſand meanes to effect it, that ſhe, that was another my ſelfe, fleſh of my fleſh, & bone of my bone, that ſhe ſhould riſe vp againſt me, and proue a croſſe vnto me, perſecuting me without a cauſe, and for no other reaſon in the world, but only for that I vvas now growne poore. And that her hate ſhould come to that height, that contrary to all truth, ſhe accuſed me of keeping a vvench at rack and manger, ſeeking by this meanes to find ſo much favour as to ſue out a divorce, and procure a ſeperation betweene vs, not vvanting a Lawyer to adviſe her therevnto, firming it with his owne hand, that ſhe might lawfully doe it.

This griefe, of all other, was the greateſt vnto me; this wound ſtrooke deepeſt. For as Matrimonie once contracted, cannot be deſolved; ſo when it is ill conjoyned, it is hard to be endured. For a troubleſome wife, is like vnto a houſe, vvhereinto the raine falleth, dripping into every roome and corner thereof. And by how much the more ſhee ſhineth in wiſdome, and good government, vvhen ſhe will apply her-ſelfe vnto vertue; ſo much the more beaſtly ſhe is, the more inſupportable, and the more to be abhorred, vvhen ſhe departeth therefro. What facilitie hath ſhee, in all thoſe things, that ſhee hath a minde vnto? What a cunning *Scotiſt* is ſhee, for to compaſſe vvhat ſhee longs for? Put the judgement of a thouſand men together, yet ſhall they not equall the wit of one ſingle woman, for to frame a lye on the ſodaine. And although it be commonly ſaid, That when a man ſhuns company, and deſires to be alone, he is *aut Deus, aut*

Proverbe.
c Mas vale al cuerdo la regla, que al necio la renta.

Proverbe.
d El que tuuiere tiempo, no aguarde otro mejor.

Proverbe.
e Vn Gil, que nos perliga. *Giving vs to vnderſtand, that eſcaping one thieſes hands, we fall into anothers.*

Of good and bad women.

aut Dæmon; either a God, or a Devill, either ſpending his time in his ſervice, or liuing like a beaſt; yet doe I ſay, that the ſolitude, vvhich he ſuffereth all alone, is not ſo great, as is the puniſhment, which he receiueth, in hauing ill company, and ſuch as are contrary to his liking. I vvas rich, vvhen I vvas not marryed; married, I became poore. The dayes of my Nuptials were joyfull to my friends; but thoſe enſuing dayes of my marriage, ſad & mournefull for me. They vvere jocund and merry, and vvent vvell contented home to their houſes; but I remayned to endure martyrdome in mine owne dwelling; & for no other cauſe, but becauſe my wife would haue it ſo, and for that ſhe was too proud, and preſumptuous. Shee ſpent beyond meaſure, ſhee had a high minde, and a liberall hand; and ſhee had beene vſed to ſee me come home, like the Bee, laden vvith much honey; and that I had ſweet commings in, bringing her ſtill one dainty or other to pleaſe her: Shee could not endure, to ſee me goe forth in the morning, and bring nothing home vvith me at noone: Shee loſt all patience, and vvas ready to runne out of her vvits, vvhen the world did not goe as ſhe would haue it. But now (ay me, poore wretch that I am) vvhen ſhe ſaw that all the oyle vvas ſpent, that ſhould maintaine the vveke, and that alſo quite burnt out; and vvhen ſhee found, that vvee had not vvhere-withall to eat, nor knew vvhere to get meat to put into our mouthes, and that we were faine to ſell our houſhold-ſtuffe to buy vs bread; from hence grew all this miſchiefe, here ſhee loſt her footing, and vvith it her patience; inſomuch, that ſhee could not afford mee a good looke; and (which is worſe) did ever after hate mee, as if I had beene her mortall enemie. Neither my faire words, nor her fathers admonitions, nor the intreatie of her kins-folke, nor the perſwaſions of her friends and acquaintance, could winne her to receiue me into her former fauour, or to recover her loſt affection. Shee fled from peace, becauſe ſhee found it in diſcord; ſhee loued vnquietneſſe, becauſe it vvas her contentment; ſhee vvould be revenged of mee, by retyring and ſeparating her ſelfe from me, both at bed and at bord; and would refuſe many times to eat her meat, for that ſhee knew how vvell I vviſht her, and that it was a death vnto me, to ſee her ſo to doe. I knew not what to doe with my ſelfe, nor how to governe my paſſions, by reaſon of the great difficultie that I found to giue her content, which conſiſted onely in feeding her with the fulneſſe of money, vvhich (God hee knowes) I extreamely wanted. Truly it ſeemeth vnto mee, that there are ſome women, that onely marrie for to ſatisfie their owne fooliſh longing, & to make tryall, what a kinde of thing marriage is, it ſeeming vnto them, to be like vnto an hyred houſe; if they finde themſelues well in it, it is well; if ill, and that it be not to their minde, and fitted as they would haue it, all is nothing, nor will they want one excuſe or other, and two falſe witneſſes to worke a divorce. And beſides other ſo many inconveniences, if it ſo fall out, that a mans wife being any thing faire and beautifull, and that ſome one or other happen to fall in loue with her; but here I will be ſilent, & ſay no more. I could wiſh, that the Advocates, Notaries, & Iudges of ſuch Courts, would open their eyes, and conſider vvell vvith themſelues, that that which they doe therein, is no other thing, then to diſſolue a matrimonie, and to open a doore to the Devill, that he may enter in, firſt to the loſſe of the wifes life, ſecondly to the husbands honor, and laſtly, to both their vndoings. And I dare aſſure them, in the name of that all-powerfull and mighty God of heaven & earth, that a moſt grievous puniſhment ſhall be powred downe vpon them from aboue, vvhich ſhall pay them home, and make the ſmart thereof intolerable. I would haue them therefore to know, that theſe are ſecret ſins, and that the plagues that ſhall come vpon them, ſhall be alſo ſecret. Nor becauſe the husband hath ſlaſht his wife over the face, & giuen her a whores marke, or hath beaten her (like a ſlaue) with a cudgell, let theſe men thinke, that this ſin ſhall eſcape without puniſhment, for the chaſtiſement is then inflicted vpon thē, when another taketh away his wife from him,

God ſo permitting it. When he ſhall ſee his houſe full of diſſention, infamie, & ſickneſſes, let him lay it to his ſoule & conſcience, that theſe come for this cauſe. I ſpeake not to one, but to all; let them put their hand in their boſome, and take themſelues by the ſleeue, as vvell thoſe that are the occaſioners, as they that are the favourers thereof, for they all faile in one and the ſame ſhip; and the fault is alike in both; and therefore are to looke for the like puniſhment. Doeſt thou not ſee, how (on the wedding day) all things goe trim & trickſie, what a troope attends vs at our heeles, what a deale of kind care & paines every man takes from the bridegroome to the gueſts, how contented they are, and how well pleaſed with their entertainment, the table covered with neat and pure linnen, the boords furniſhed with dainty fare, the bed [f] handſomly made vp, the ſheets fine & ſweet, & all the reſt of the furniture anſwerable therevnto; all then was delicate, & delightfull vnto vs. And thus it laſted with vs for a while: But now that my moneys are gone, that our gallantry begins to goe downe, and that things go not ſo well with vs as they were wont to do, the teat withdrawes it's milke, and the loue of many yeares (as if it were a mortall ſin) is loſt in a moment. It is like to ſucceed with them, as it did with me, who was quite vndone, not out of any inſufficiency in my ſelfe, or want of care, and paines-taking, for I had vvit enough, and knew how to manage my affaires with good judgement. But I miſcarried for the reaſons I told you but a litle before. This was Gods handy-work, his chaſtiſement was vpon me. For, as he is infinite, ſo hath he no circumſcription, his power is not bounded, his arme not limited to puniſh this man for this, & that other for that. In ſome things he pronounceth a ſet & determinate ſentence, & for ſuch a particular ſin, ſuch a penalty appointed, beſides others, which appertaine vnto the ſoule, as alſo thoſe that ariſe out of ſuch & ſuch circumſtances. Mine was ill gotté gaine, & therefore could not thriue with me. *Malè parta, malè dilabuntur*: Ill got, ill ſpent. Now when a woman is married to a man, and afterwards findes her ſelfe deceiued, for that her husband proues not ſo rich, as he was reported to be, thoſe goods that he hath, being other mens, and taken vp vpon credit; & likewiſe, that when he was to be married, he ran farther in debt, for the apparelling & ſetting forth of his wife, and that within a few dayes after, the Mercer comes to demand his money for the ſilks he had of him, & the Taylor for the making vp of the cloathes, and that the Sergeants be on the backe of him both for the one, and the other, there is not any thing wherewith to pay them; & if there be, yet meat is more neceſſary, then the payment of debts. For whoſoever goes without, the belly muſt be ſerued; though vve could cozen all the world beſides, the belly will not be cozened. He will daily importune vs, & we muſt daily ſatisfie him. It is a debt of nature, that muſt needs be paid: It admits no forbearance: it is a commandement without controlment; it is a rule without exception. When it comes to this, the peacocke hangs downe his taile as ſoone as he lookes vpon his feet. The pride of his ſtarrie traine begins to flag, and his hoarſe trumpet ſhrikes out his pitifull complaints. The flowers then begin to wither; their pleaſant ſpring is paſt; contentment & patience betake them to their heeles. They preſently ſet a ſowre face on the matter, like him that hath taſted ſharpe vineger. And if you ſhall aske thē then, what they haue, how they doe, how their husbands vſe them, how like of marriage? In ſtead of an anſwer, you ſhall haue them ſtop their noſes; it is [g] fiſh of foure dayes old; it is too ſtale, and begins to ſtinke. They will not endure the mouing of this [h] ſtone; and vvill therefore tell you by ſome ſcurvy ſilēt geſture or other: Speake no more of him for Gods ſake, let the man alone, doe not ſtir the turde, that ſtinks too much already; let vs talke of ſome other ſubject. But how can thy *Lazarus* (deare wife) being dead in his ſins, otherwiſe chuſe, but ſtinke, and lament his hard misfortune, being buried in the graue of thy miſeries, from whence I ſhall never be raiſed vp againe to life? Doth he not lye intombed in the darke and ſtrong ſepulchre of thy vaine thoughts? and in that hollow vault of thy noyſome clamours,

f *The Spaniſh phraſe is*; la cama hecha de lana nueva. *The bed was made of new wooll, or had new wooll put into it. For in* Spaine, *in regard of their beats, they haue no feather-beds*

g *Proverbe.* Quartidiano es, y a hiede.

h No alçen la piedra.

mours, and peſtilent importunities? Is he not ſhrowded in the vvinding-ſheet of thy loue, tyed to thy contents? Which he ſtriues all that he can to giue thee, be it by hooke, or by crooke, with the expence of his purſe, or the hazard of his perſon, hauing my hands bound, ſhowing that I ſubmit my ſelfe as humbly to thy ſubjection, as thou (good vvife, wert thou good) ſhould ſubmit thy ſelfe to mine? He that hath charge of a wife, and familie, let him hold his tongue, hee cannot be at leaſure to talke, hee hath ſomething elſe to doe, hee muſt employ himſelfe in making proviſion to ſupply neceſſarie wants, and perhaps is in want through thee, and is come to all this miſery by thy meanes. Doe not thou then complaine that hee ſtinkes, ſeeing that he is putrified vvith thy impertinencies, finding himſelfe thruſt in amongſt the vvormes of thy waſtefull ryots and exceſſes, which like ſo many devourers, lye gnawing vpon his heart and bowels? Thy boldneſſe in going abroad; thy liberty in converſing; thy exorbitancies in ſpending; thy vvaſtefulneſſe in ſcattering; thy vanity in vaunting thy ſelfe, bragging and boaſting thy birth & parentage, which hath ſo many mixtures, as there are differences of keyes, and variety of ſtops, in an Organ. Haſt thou a huſband that can beare with all theſe, and much more; and yet is he fiſh of foure dayes old? growes he ſtale with thee, and begins he now to ſtinke? Tell me (I prithee) by the life and light (I conjure thee) of thoſe thy faire eyes, and doe not lye vnto me; whether yeſterday thou didſt not viſit ſuch a Hermitage, ſuch a Chappell, & ſuch & ſuch other places of devotion, making there thy vowes, & thy offerings; but to what purpoſe, God he beſt knowes? And is it not likewiſe true, that ſince thou hadſt the vſe of reaſon (nay rather before thou had'ſt it, becauſe thou yet wanteſt it) there was never yet any Midſummer night, or feaſt of *S. Iohn*, wherein, without ſleeping (for they ſay, that ſleep hindereth the vertue and operation of thoſe, you know what I meane) thou betook'ſt thy ſelfe to ſuch a prayer, thou know'ſt well enough what one, but better it had beene for thee, that thou hadſt not knowne it (being ſuch a one as it is, and ſo much reproued) & without opening thy mouth, or ſpeaking ſo much as one word (for they likewiſe ſay, that ſilence is another eſſentiall poīnt of that prayer) thou ſhouldſt ſtay vvayting & looking for the firſt that ſhould paſſe along by thee after midnight, to the end, that by what thou ſhouldſt heare come from him, thou mightſt accordingly judge of thy future mariage, & know him that ſhould be thy husbād, hauing therein a ſtrong confidence & affiance, and giuing the ſame credit & beliefe vnto it, as if it were an article of Faith, or one of thoſe of thy Creed, when as in very deed, they are no other then old wiues tales, the impoſtures of witches, & the meere fooleries of fooliſh women, & ſuch as want judgment. And is it not alſo true, that there is not that *Beata*, nor that devout & religious womā, that thou haſt not either beene vvith her, or ſhee vvith thee, to the ſame effect?

Is it not true, that thou haſt put on thy mantle, walking divers ſtations with them, only for this purpoſe? Haſt thou not forcibly laid hold on their garments, & torne the mantles of theſe Saints, who never throw them off frō their ſhoulders, burning tapers, to thou know'ſt whom? Haſt thou not broken the bounds of modeſty without bluſhing, neither ſetting before thee thine owne ſhame, or the feare of God? Haſt thou left any ſieue, vvithout trying thy ſorceries thereupon? or beanes lye ſtill in their place, vvhich thou haſt not made to leape and dance, by evill meanes, & by vvords, and charmes, hated & prohibited by our holy Religion? Is there any match-maker, or knovvne friend of thine, vvhom thou haſt not bin importunate vvithall, telling them that thou art ſicke, & that thou longeſt for a husband? At laſt, God ſends her a husband (I ſpeake of others, not of my ſelfe) a quiet man, milde-ſpirited, one that is carefull to liue, & an honeſt man, who takes paines, & labours hard to get a Royall wherewith to feed and maintaine her, not ſuffering her to vvant her oyntments, her paintings, & a thouſād other toyes & trinkets, as brooches, flowers, buttōs, aglets, & the like, for the ornament of her perſon; & yet for all this, within foure dayes, this man

alſo growes ſtale, and ſtinkes. If (poore ſoule) he doe all that hee can for thee; vvhy doeſt thou afflict both him and thy ſelfe, and why ſhould it turne thy ſtomacke, and cauſe a loathing in thee, vvhen others ſhall but name him vnto thee? Why doſt thou ſeeke to defame him, by thy obloquies, detractions, deprauings, reproaches, raylings, and revilings? Why doeſt thou grumble at thoſe good offices he does thee? Why miſconſtrue his kindneſſe? Why faſhion his affection according to thy falſe fancy, meaſuring his heart by thine owne? Thou would'ſt not haue him digg'd out of his graue, but that the memory of him ſhould ſleep for ever, and yet thou digg'ſt him vp with thine owne hands, not ſparing the very bones of his Anceſtors, and harmeleſſe aſhes of his whole linage, throwing out lies and ſcandals by ſhovell-fulls to thoſe that giue thee the hearing, laying foule (but falſe) imputations vpon him, proclayming that (as they ſay) in the open market-place of him, which neither doeſt thou know to be true, neither indeed is he guilty of. To what end then is all this outrage? I vvill tell thee; it is onely out of her malice towards him, thinking by this meanes to affront and diſgrace him. But thou doeſt therein, like thy ſelfe, thou ſhoweſt thy ſelfe a right woman; full of change and mutability, fickle and inconſtant; and would to God, theſe thy ſodaine, and vndeſerued alterations, doe not ariſe (taking the courſe that thou doeſt) from the offences, that thou haſt committed againſt thy husband, againſt thy God, and againſt thine owne ſoule.

Now that I am come hither, and brought thus, before ever I thought of it, into this port, I will vnpacke my commodities, ſet vp a boothe, and make ſhow of all my wares, as your Pedlers and poore Mercers vſe to doe, that goe from Fayre to Fayre, and from Towne to Towne, opening them here to day, and there to morrow, without making any ſet reſidence, in this or that other place, and when they haue ſold all their trinkets, returne home to their owne countrey. Let vs here ſet open our ſhop, and ſell you ſome of theſe our goods wares, and let vs in open market make ſhow vnto you of the intentions of ſome kind of marriages; as well, that we may put thoſe out of their errour, who are led therevnto for thoſe ends; as alſo for that they may know, that they are knowne; and it is fit, that vvee ſhould tell them the ill that they doe, becauſe they truly doe ill; and that done, vve vvill preſently returne home againe to our ſelues.

Concerning marriage, and ſeverall ends leading thereunto.

Some take this holy ſtate of marriage vpon them, out of no other conſideration in the world, then to free themſelues from the ſubjection of a Father or a mother, and to be at their owne liberty, it ſeemeth to your fooliſh young girle, (be ſhe Gentle-woman, or otherwiſe) that ſhe ſhall preſently be a free-woman; and that as ſoone as ſhee is remoued from her fathers houſe, and receiued into that of her husbands, ſhe may gad and runne, where, and whither ſhe liſt. That ſhe ſhall haue the Law in her owne hands; that ſhe ſhall command with authoritie, haue wherewithall to giue, and ſervants to waite and attend vpon her, and to be at her becke. To theſe kinde of creatures, ſubjection ſeemes to be too ſharpe and cruell a tye vpon them; and therefore eaſily ſuppoſe, that as ſoone as they are married, they ſhall on the ſodaine, be abſolute in their Empire, powerfull in their will, and ſway all things as they liſt themſelues. They vvill not ſticke to frame this argument to themſelues; that their parents perſecute them, that they are their daily torment, never ſuffering them to be at quiet, and that they ſhall finde their husbands more ſoft and pliable then waxe, and that they will proue kinde & louing vnto them. The growth whereof ſprings from this, That their fathers, in the life that they led with their wiues, liue like bruit beaſts, whereby they raiſe vp vaine deſires in their daughters, inflame their appetites, and cauſe them (by their ill example) to runne a croſſe courſe; for, being (as they are) imprudent, they cannot diſtinguiſh of things aright; they embrace all, that is ſweet and pleaſant, thinking to meet with it, whereſoever they come, nor thinking that there is any tartneſſe or ſowreneſſe in any, ſaue onely in their parents.

Theſe,

Theſe, and other the like idle conceits, diſquiet their mindes, making them not to care which end goes forward, it puts them beſides their wits, and leaues them without any judgement. But as they looke and gaze vpon this, why doe they not alſo with a fixed and ſetled eye, behold that other friend and acquaintance of theirs, who is marryed to a jealous foole, a rough and bitter husband, who not onely giues her not a good word, but will not ſuffer her to ſtep a foot out of doores, to take the ayre, and recreate her ſelfe, no not ſo much as to goe to Maſſe, vnleſſe it be very early in the morning, and that in a cloath kirtle, and muffled vp in a poore mantle, as if ſhe were one of the ſervants of his houſe: And in a word, not vſing her as his wife, but as his ſlaue that had fled, and run away from him. It is not ſo well (my maſters) as you take it to be; and beleeue me, that good marriages are not chickins of every dayes hatching; they happen good now and then by chance, or as it pleaſeth God to ſend them; and it befalleth thoſe that are married, as it fareth with him, that buyes a Melon, for one dainty and delicate one indeed, which he may chance to light vpon, hee ſhall meet with a hundred other, which proues gourds and pompeons in their taſte and relliſh? Haſt thou not obſerued that other familiar friend of thine, who hath marryed a gameſter, who playes away all, to the very ſheets wherein hee lyes, turning them into table-cloathes, at a common dicing houſe? Doſt thou not thinke vpon that other neighbour of thine, whoſe husband keepes a whore vnder her noſe, and never a morning throughout the yeare, but that he ſends her out of the market a good basket full of proviſion, whil'ſt his poore wife is ready to famiſh at home for hunger. Nor haue they heard (as it ſhould ſeeme) of ſome husbands, who are no ſooner entred within the doores of their owne houſe, but that they levell their eyes with their feet, and never lift them vp, vnleſſe it be to chide, and finde fault without a cauſe, and to feed this their peeviſh and froward humour? Doe theſe women haply thinke, that all wiues are as much reſpected and beloued of their husbands, as they are of their fathers? I can aſſure you, that a bad father is to be preferred before a good husband; I haue ſeldome ſeene a father that hath not ſtill ſhow'd himſelfe a father; but few husbands ſo kinde, that they haue ſtill continued kinde. And if any ſuch, hath at any time beene, that hath not beene wanting to thoſe obligations and duties, which belong vnto wedlocke, it may well be taken for a wonder. But I never knew a father ceaſe to be a father, though his ſonne ceaſed to be a ſonne. There is many a good father, that will make much of a bad ſonne; but ſeldome ſhall you ſee a bad husband make much of a good wife.

A ſecond end.

Others doe marry, becauſe (hauing neither father nor mother aliue) they deſire to be out of their Tutors or Guardians hands; thinking that by them they are ſold and rob'd of that they haue. They caſt vp their reckoning, and ſay with themſelues, that a husband would manage their eſtate farre better, and looke a great deale more faithfully vnto it, then a Guardian, who being loath to be diſpoſſeſſed thereof, and to render that vp into her hands, vvhich is her owne, takes no great care to preferre her, but does all that he can to keepe her from marrying, hoping that to morrow ſhe will fall ſicke, and die; and himſelfe haue all.

And therefore, they ſay; How better were it, that mine owne children ſhould enjoy that which I haue, then to leaue it to my enemies, vvho vviſh my death, that they may inherit my goods. I vvill marry, that I vvill, I vvill to this geare, though it be with ſome foule filthy Negro, for my father did not take the paines to get that he did, for my Guardian, nor was it his meaning, that he ſhould licke himſelfe whole by me, cutting himſelfe large thongs, cut of another bodies leather, eſpecially vſing me ſo vntowardly as he doth, ſuffering me to goe all to ragged, and torne, halfe ſtarued for want of good meat, and not ſo much as one poore Royall in my purſe to buy me a few pinnes. This is that that makes them runne headlong downe the hill; and therefore taking coun-

ſaile of the firſt they meet with; they thinke, that this their friend hath adviſed them well, and that what they tell them, is out of loue, and a well wiſhing to their good: and being led thus along in this blind-fold manner, they pitch vpon a dung-hill, where they are ſo bemyred, that they ſhall never come off cleane from thence, while they liue, becauſe they made choice of ſuch a young gallant, that vvaſtes all vpon his backe, and his belly, in good cloathes, and good meat; whoſe maine care is to pamper his body, keepe his horſes fat, beſtow rich liveries on his ſervants, ſpend in feaſts and banquets, leauing his wife weeping at home in a corner; and that which ſhee purpoſed, and deſired to leaue to her children, to wit, the vvealth that ſhee brought vvith her, hauing now a houſe-full of little brats, ſhee hath not one ſingle penny to giue, or leaue vnto them; for hauing matcht with an vnthrift, the vvinde hath blowne it all away. And if ſhee were afraid before, that her kinſmen, for to make themſelues maſters of her eſtate, did deſire her death; ſure her husband now vviſheth it no leſſe, for out of a humour of his that he hath, to ſhift cleane linnen, being now growne weary of ſo much wife, which never miſſes him at bed, and at boord, hee deſireth, and peradventure alſo procureth to put her vnder ground; and ſo this poore ſoule, deceiued by her ſelfe and others, fayles in the obtayning of that, which her falſe imagination propoſed vnto her.

The third end.

Others, of a leſſe ſtayed temper, a kinde of giddy-headed Hobby-horſes, will needs marrie forſooth for pure loue; theſe ſhow themſelues in Churches, and at publike meetings; when they are at home at their owne houſes, their vvindowes ſtand wide open, that they may ſee, and be ſeene; and in the night they lye tumbling and toſſing in their beds, looking ſtill vvhen ſome one gallant or other ſhould come vnder their *Balcone*, who with the *Trin-Trin* of his *ghitterne*, ſhould rouze them vp from their vnquiet reſt.

This or that other young wench, heares him ſing certaine *coplas* or verſes, which *Gerineldos* made to *Doña Vrraca*, and thinkes that they were purpoſely made for her. She is more blacke then the Crow, more foule then the Tortoiſe, more fooliſh then the Salamander, more vgly then the Rat; and becauſe there they paint her forth, to be more faire then *Venus*, not leauing any boxe, or cabinet vnſearcht, from vvhich they take not forth for her, Alabaſter, Rubies, Turkeſes, Pearles, Snow, Ieſmines, and Roſes, even to the vnnayling from heaven, of the Sunne, and the Moone, ſetting her forth with Starres, and comparing her eye-browes, to the Rainebow, that beautifull Arche of heaven, they are taken as truly therewith, as if they did properly belong vnto them, applauding themſelues with theſe their vndeſerued prayſes: Being as an even ſo, or rather farre other wiſe.

Alas poore ſilly foole, get thee gone, and ſooth not vp thy ſelfe vvith theſe glorious (but feigned) gloſſes; for he (I aſſure thee) that made them, did not ſo much as once dreame on thee; he made them not for thee; or if hee did, hee lyde, that hee might deceiue and abuſe thee vvith his flattering of thee; knowing thee to be vainely giuen, and a louer thereof. Take heed, I adviſe thee of ſuch a glozing companion; for he is a meere Empericke, who with one kinde of ſirrop cures all ſorts of perſons, and diſeaſes. He ſayes the very ſame vnto others, as he does vnto thee. He readeth vnto thee (to ſtirre vp thy deſires,) another Lecture, taken out of *Diana*, vvhere he tells thee that he ſaw the burning flames of thoſe faire Shephardeſſes, the Palace of that wiſe Dame, with all the riches & ſumptuouſneſſe thereof, the pearles and precious ſtones wherewith it was adorned, thoſe delicate gardens, and pleaſant groues, wherein they tooke their pleaſures and delights, and the dainty muſicke which they had made vnto them; and as if all this had beene true, or might haue beene, and that the ſame things might one day happen to themſelues, theſe poore fooles beginne to melt, and pine away for loue.

Theſe wenches are like tindar, any the leaſt ſparke that lights vpon them, ſets

ſets them all on a light fire: they are quickly tinded, and quickly ended, no ſooner in, then out; they make a blaze, and dye.

There are ſome others, that are a little more curious, who refuſing to make them-ſelues ready, and to buy other things more neceſſary for them, ſpend their money in hyring of bookes; and becauſe they haue read in *Don Belianis*, in *Amadis*, or in *Eſplandian*, or *Knight of the Sunne*, thoſe dangers, and ill voyages, whereon thoſe vnfortunate Knights went for the *Infanta Magalona*, which ſhould be (as it ſeemed) ſome well diſpoſed Dame, they ſuppoſe, that the horſe is ready ſaddled at their doore, and that there is the dwarfe, and that good old wench with *Señor Agrajes*, to goe and direct them in the way, and to bring them through thoſe thicke forreſts & woods, to the end that they might not touch vpon the inchaunted Caſtle; whence they goe to performe ſome other atchieuement. And a head-leſſe Lyon, encountring with them, as they were on the way, vſing many courteſies and ceremonies vnto them, with a great deale of willingneſſe, brings them, where they are ſerued, and royally entertained with diuerſe daintily dreſt diſhes of meate, which to their thinking, they now feed vpon, and that they finde themſelues afterwards there ſleeping in delicate ſoft beds of downe, not knowing who brought them thither, nor whence they come, for all is inchantment. There they are honeſtly lodged, and well vſed, till *Don Galaor* comes thither, and kills the Gyant, who makes mee to ſhed teares as oft as I heare tell of the cruelties that he vſed towards them. Whereas it had beene much better, that by one of theſe Gentlewomen, hee had beene ſent into *Caſtile*, together with his oppreſſed priſoners, where onely for the very ſight of them, they might haue got ſo much money, that would haue made vp a ſufficient Dowry for to marry them, without running ſo many adventures, and diſadventures. And ſo this inchantment is now wholly come to an end. But let them take heede, who reade ſuch, and the like bookes, leſt that ſucceed vnto them, which happened vnto *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, who thinking himſelfe an errant Knight, came to be an arrant Aſſe. But there is not wanting ſuch another mad rogue as my ſelfe, who told me the other day, That if ſuch bookes as theſe ſhould, like a bundle of fagots, be pitcht round about theſe faire curious creatures, and that fire ſhould be put vnto them, yet were it impoſſible to make them to burne, becauſe their vertues would extinguiſh thoſe flames. But I ſay nothing; and ſo I proteſt, becauſe my ſelfe goes wandring through the world, I know not whither: and if I ſhould ſay this of others, they would ſay the like of mee.

A fourth.

Other wenches there are, who vpon the firſt ſight of ſome ſpruce yonker, with a ſtarcht beard and his whiskers turn'd vp, his body peraduenture being as full of gummes, as a *Valençia* veluet, and as many iſſues in his armes and legges, as *Aranjuez* hath fountaines, yet conceiting him to be another *Adonis* for his handſomeneſſe and his neatneſſe, are taken with the pretineſſe of his perſon, and apparell, and are ready forſooth to runne madde for loue. This dandling, fidling, tender, and wanton young fellow, made of purpoſe (as they thinke) for pleaſure and delight, who makes a profeſſion of neatneſſe, and other apiſh toyes, as conging and kiſſing his hand, a poppet that one may put in his pocket, is the onely man with them: as if theſe curioſities, were not the Veſpers of ſome bone-fire, wherein they are to be burned. Let a woman be like a woman; and a man like a man. Though theſe vanities, and idle ſuperfluities befit neither the one, nor the other, but ſerue onely as Liveries, to ſhow that they are the Devils followers. But if you will allow fore-tops, curlings of the hayre, lyes, paintings, neate dreſſings, a ſoft skinne, and a thouſand other things to beautifie both face and body, let women haue onely this priviledge, who haue neede thereof, and know beſt how to make vſe of their niceties. It ſhall ſuffice man that he expreſſe himſelfe to be a man: it will well become him,

to

to haue a bigge voice,a hard and bushie hayre,a thicke skinne, a manly face, a graue carriage, and a hand that is none of the tendereſt. Yet theſe fooliſh wenches,thinke that ſuch ſpruce princoxes as theſe,are made of ſuch pure mettall, that they haue not any naturall paſſions, nor that they ſpit and cough as other men;and yet for all this their ſeeming fineneſſe, they are ſubject to *Sarſaparrilla*,*China* earth,*Guacum*,*Emplaſtrum Melilotum*, *Vnguentum Apoſtolorum*, decoctions,ſirrops, and electuaries, and many other miſeries, and medicines; for whom theſe fond things are ready to run mad, and are ſo hot in their loue, that if the bridle of ſhame did not ſomewhat reſtraine this their head-ſtrong affection,they would be worſe then any deuill, when hee is vnchained and let looſe. And if you ſhall aske, either all,or any one of them, what they ſee in this finicall fellow,what reaſon they haue to dote vpon him,why conceit him to be ſuch a pretious peece?This accurſed anſwer(as it is common with them) ſo it ſerues then inſtead of all other:That it is their pleaſure forſooth to haue it ſo;it is their humour, and they will not be beaten out of it. And if you lay before them their vnadviſedneſſe in doing ſo, the inconveniences that are likely to follow therevpon, the ill counſell which they take, and the like: their anſwere is;I muſt ſuffer for it,and no body for mee;It is I,and not you,that muſt feele the ſmart of it: and therefore you were as good hold your peace. If it ſucceed ill with mee, I muſt be contented with my bad fortune, and conne no body thanke but my ſelfe,and therefore I pray let me alone, and ſpare your labour to ſpeake thereof any more,for I am of age, and know well enough what I doe. And yet this miſerable maid,neither knowes what ſhee does,or ſayes. but if they finde themſelues obliged by the ſweet-meates, that are ſent vnto them, a gawdy girdle, a neate paire of Twizes, a ſilke paire of ſtockings,garters fringed with gold, perfum'd gloues, or a loue-letter brought her by her maid,or her anſwer therevnto,if ſhee ſuffer him to pinch her as ſhe paſſeth by, or reach forth hand to him from vnder the doore, if not perhaps her foote: when it comes to this,Lord haue mercy vpon her, there is no other medicine for this malady. For ſhee is already toucht[h] with the venome of that herbe, whoſe infection (without divine helpe) is incurable.

Proverbe.
h Tocada eſta de la yerua.

There are other women,that doe likewiſe marry, onely that they may liue as merrily as the day is long, that they may goe whither it pleaſeth them, as well to ſee,as to be ſeene;that they may dreſſe themſelues to their owne liking, weare this gowne,or put on this mantle, either as it ſuites with their fancy,or the faſhion;it ſeeming vnto them, that becauſe they ſaw ſuch a one vpon ſuch a feſtiuall day,or all the weeke long, in her bravery and her gallantry, that as ſoone as ſhee is married, her husband will maintaine her in the ſame manner, and if not better, yet at leaſt as other husbands keepe their wiues:and if ſuch a mans wife trot vp and downe all the day long, hee will not deny her leaue to walke the ſtreets at her pleaſure.

A fifth.

Hence ariſeth the quarrell,this is it which maketh the fray; for if her hopes be croſt, and that things fall not out according to her expectation, or that her husband doth not like of it, and that he will not haue his wife to go either cloathed or naked, for any but himſelfe; telling her, that though ſuch a one let his wife do what ſhee liſt, and to goe thus and thus,hee does not well in it, giuing the world occaſion to ſcandall her good name,wherby hee muſt needes be toucht in his honor;and therefore he will not permit her ſo to doe,for feare of incurring the like cenſure. Whereupon and for no other cauſe in the world, becauſe they will not giue them leaue to weare what cloathes they liſt themſelues,what ſhooes,and what ſtockings,nor to take their pleaſure abroad, and to walke the ſtreetes, as ſome other women doe, nor be left wholly to their owne liberty,not one ſtone ſhall reſt quiet vpon another in all the whole houſe; ſhee plotteth treaſons vvherewith to revenge her ſelfe vpon her vnfortunate husband, who being a wiſe & conſiderate man, knowing what a kinde of woman

man ſhee is, and how affected in her diſpoſition, is afraid, that if hee ſhould grant her this licence, and giue her wings, they would turne to her deſtruction, as they doe to the [1] Ante. So that hee dare not giue her leaue to range abroad, nor to conſent to other her extrauagancies. This only coale is enough to kindle the fire, this ſingle contradiction will ſerue the turne to make her fall a ſcratching of her face, and tearing her hayre, calling her ſelfe the moſt wretched and vnfortunate of all women, and vviſhes that as ſoone as ſhee was borne, it had pleaſed God, that her mother had ſtrangled her, buried her in a ditch, or throwne her into ſome deepe well, rather then to liue to be ſubject to ſo tyrannicall power; that ſhee onely of all other married women, is the moſt miſerable; that ſuch a woman is of this and that quality, and that ſhee liues like a Queene with her husband, in compariſon of her; that ſhee is no whit inferiour vnto her, nor brought a leſſer dowrie with her, nor would ſhee ever haue married, if ſhe had thought her husband vvould haue vs'd her no better. And breaking the bonds of womanhood, ſhee diſhonours him, calling him baſe fellow, dunghill-ſquire, neglectfull villaine, rogue, raſcall, and what not; vpbraiding him, that her father kept better men then hee was; and that hee vvas not worthy to make cleane her old ſhooes. And if her husband chance to ouerheare her, ſhe ſtraines her voice a note higher, crying out, Wreched woman that I am, was I ſo daintily bred vp, to be fed with this courſe faire? Are theſe the delights I am like to haue? Did they leaue me ſo well for this, that thou ſhouldſt vſe me in this ſcuruy manner as thou doeſt? Muſt I be thy ſlaue night and day, to looke to thy houſe and children, and to be made a drudge to thy ſeruants? See, and there be any griefe like vnto mine? God and the world knowes what I am, of what houſe I come, and how well I am deſcended! *Don Fulano*, and *Don Cutano*, ſuch a Biſhop, ſuch a *Conde*, and ſuch a Duke, are of my alliance, leauing out neither beardling, nor ſhaueling, high, nor low, whereof ſhe does not make a Letany, and verball proceſſe.

But poore vnhappy man that he is, if it ſhould fortune ſo to happen, (which God forbid ſhould ever befall any honeſt man) that hee haue his aged mother at home with him in his houſe, his ſiſters that are virgins, or children by another wife; then will ſhee keepe a racket, and cry out; That it was for them, that her father got his wealth; that it is ſpent vpon them; that they eate it out, whileſt I (poore ſoule) who brought him all this, muſt be vſed like a *Negra*; *Negra* (ſaid I) if it were Gods will, would I were no worſe vſ'd then ſuch a ones *Negra*, which paſſeth here daily by our doore, as if ſhe were ſome great Lady; to day in this change of cloathes, to morrow in that. I onely am that vnluckie bird, that continue ſtill in theſe old ragges, ever ſince I was firſt married, and haue not where-withall to mend them, mew'd vp between theſe walls, accompanied with I know not how many ſpindles, reeles, diſtaffes, and hitchels for flaxe: What can her husband (poore man) ſay to all this? What anſwer can hee make her? His beſt counſell will be to let her alone, otherwiſe hee ſhall never bring his purpoſe to paſſe.

[1] *There are diuerſe ſorts of Ants, whereof ſome are borne with wings, but to their owne hurt.* Covarr. verb. Hormiga.

The ſixt.

There are another ſort of women, that marry, to the end that by hauing a husband to cloake their faults, they may not be moleſted by the Iuſtice, nor reproached by their neighbours, or any other perſons whatſoeuer. This is roguery, knauery, villany, beaſtlineſſe, and diſhoneſty in the higheſt degree. What ſhall a man ſay more of them? They are a kinde of kinde wenches, but diſhoneſt and ſhameleſſe. They are like thoſe Gardiners, that clap vp a skar-crow in a fig-tree, that the birds may not come and pecke at their figges: which are only kept for thoſe, whom it ſhall pleaſe the Gardiner to giue leaue to plucke them; or ſuch as ſhall pay him vvell for them: ſo as the birds doe not pecke them, it is all good and well.

Is there none then, that may correct, reproue, or open his mouth againſt theſe kinde of women? no ſurely. They haue a skar-crow in the figtree; a huſband

band of their owne in the houſe. Touch them who dares. They can either giue or ſell, their honour, or their perſons, as they will and liſt themſelues, euen in the ſight of the whole world, and yet by reaſon of this their skar-crow, the Iuſtice dare not offer to puniſh them. For it fareth with them, as it doth with Vineyards, which haue a guard vpon them in their time of fruitage; but when the Vintage ſhall be gathered in, and the grapes carryed away, and put into the wine-preſſe, they are no more looked into, but are laid open and made a common field, for their flockes and heards of cattell to feede on, treading and trampling them downe with their feete.

Siſter, let me tell thee, that theſe are the ſteps that lead vnto hell: God will take away this cloake from thee, this husband of thine for thy diſſolute life and ſhameleſſe luſt, to the end, that this may be the whip to laſh thee, by bringing thy ſecret whoring in publike view, and that balance vvherein thou didſt put his honour, thine owne ere long ſhall be weighed. But I vvere beſt take heed to whom I ſpeake, leſt I may chance to haue my head broken for my labour. She feared not her husband, ſhe was paſt all ſhame towards God & Man: and ſhall I thinke to reclaime her, or ſuch as ſhe is, by theſe my fooleries? (for I know they take them for no other,) I ſhall neuer be able to doe it while I liue, and therefore I will let them alone.

The ſeauenth. Other ſome alſo marry, for that they ſee their wealth beginns to waſte, they know not how themſelues: yet pretend, that the onely cauſe vvhy they marry, is, for that they are young, and are loth to haue their honour lyable to the lauiſh tongues of euill diſpoſed people; as alſo, leſt their perſons might run the hazard of Rapes, and other the like violences. Well, of two euils the leaſt: But becauſe God hath not any part in theſe marriages, and that it may be better ſaid of them, that they be the Devils contracts: and for that all things are to be reputed either good or ill, according to the end whereunto they are directed: and this being knowne, thoſe actions are determined and defined that leade therevnto; bearing more loue alwayes to the end it ſelfe, then to thoſe things which conduce and guide vs vnto it. So that marriage is not loued in ſuch as theſe, for the loue that they beare vnto marriage, but onely vſe it as a meanes, for the accompliſhing of their deſires. And theſe kinde of women doe not walke directly in the right way, but goe ſomewhat about to ſerue their owne turnes, running a by-way to their owne ruine. And therefore I hold it no good marriage, (nor indeed is it) when it hath any other end in it, ſaue only to ſerue God in that holy and honourable eſtate.

God doth permit (I confeſſe) all theſe marriages, but I muſt tell you withall, that in moſt of them the deuill hath a ſhare, and that not the leaſt. It is a good and holy Calling, but thou makeſt it a helliſh Marriage. It was inſtituted for quietneſſe and for comfort, but thou lou'ſt it not; thou neither haſt it, nor art willing to haue it: but thou doſt rather intangle thy feete in it, that thou maiſt the ſooner trip, and fall with it to the ground. Let not a virgin, or a widow make the butt that ſhee ſhots at her lawleſſe liberty, nor the freeing of her ſelfe from her Fathers, or her Gardians ſubjection: let her not be led along vvith vaine loue, let her caſt away from her all ſuch filthineſſe as follows her ſenſuall appetite. Which if they doe not doe, let them aſſure themſelues, that it vvill goe ill both with the one and the other: and if their husbands ſhall not proue ſo good and kinde vnto them, as they themſelues did thinke, and wiſh they ſhould, if they ſhall make ſlaues of them after they are married vnto them; if they ſhall mewe them vp like Hawkes; if they ſhall lead an evill life vvith them; if they ſhall vvaſte away their wealth, and yet leaue a great charge of children vpon them; if their purſe ſhall be ſtill empty; if troubles ſhall come vpon then; if their husband ſhall be a Gameſter, or a whore-maſter; if they ſhall be thus abuſed by them, and ſhall haply dye vnder their hands: all this ariſeth from thoſe evill ends, which they propoſed to themſelues, either by

ſeeking

ſeeking to advance themſelues beyond their quality, and to flant it beyond their meanes: or thoſe other fore-mentioned reaſons, which are the ſole cauſe of their ruine. This Idoll of *Baal*, whom they adored, in him did they put their truſt: this was the God who (they thought) could ſuccour, free and defend them; but in caſe at any time they ſhould haue true neede indeed of his helpe, they ſhall find, that he ought not to be feared, nor that he is able to ſend downe fire to conſume their enemies, or comfort them; for as hee hath it not, ſo can he not giue it them. Thou adoreſt Idols, but thou ſhalt be deliuered by none of them in the day of trouble: for in a word, they are Idols, the workemanſhip of our owne hands, faſhioned out of wantonneſſe, and a longing to be doing of ſomething, and adored onely out of an idle humour, and out of a kinde of pleaſure and delight that wee take in theſe toyes. Fire ſhall come downe from heauen, and conſume the ſacrifice, the wood, the ſtones, and the aſhes, euen to the waters themſelues in the trenches, (like vnto that of *Elias*) though they be filled afreſh, barrell after barrell, yet ſhall all that moiſture be licked vp by the fire. Know yee then, that thoſe are marriages which God ordaineth, and ſuch as you enter into, onely to ſhew your ſelues obedient to his will, and haue conſulted therewith afore-hand; leauing it wholy to him, to worke in the reſt, as hee ſhall thinke fitteſt for his ſeruice, without ſeeking after any ill and foule meanes: and then though you ſhould be dung-wet, and bucketted a hundred times with the waters of perſecutions, of hunger, of cold, of impriſonment, and all other troubles and miſeries, that may befall the life of man, it is no matter: For fire ſhall come downe from heauen, that is to ſay, the loue of God and his charity, which ſhall conſume and dry vp, theſe their many waters of tribulations. This quicke fire makes ſpeedie riddance of all our troubles, preſenting them as a ſacrifice before his diuine Majeſty, who will not onely aſſiſt vs with his grace in this world, but crown vs with his glory in the world to come. And let this ſerue as an end to this my Sermon. Now let vs returne againe to our Marriage, which (and it had pleaſ'd God) would it had neuer beene.

I had now ſeru'd ſome ſix years in the Marriage-galley; in which ſhort time (would it had beene leſſe) I endured (I thanke my wife for it) a great deale of miſery. Howbeit, for the foure firſt yeares, our wedding loaues (I muſt confeſſe) were freſh and new: for as yet, it was but hony-moone with vs; all was of the fineſt flowre and the pureſt wheat. But when we began to goe downe the hill, and were now falne halfe in halfe from that height wherein vve vvere before, and vvanted money to maintaine vs at that ſcantling: vvhen the cloth of gold kirtle, which was both richly bordred and imbroydred, vvas to be ſold and turn'd into gold; and that not any the leaſt thread of it, though no bigger then a Spiders, eſcap't the melting-pot, and yet paſt for a reaſonable handſome kirtle ſtill, as the world went with vs: when all our old ends vvere ſpent and gone; when I could not inch it out any further, when I ſaw that the water was come vp aboue my chinne, and that I could not long hold out, but muſt needes ſinke, for that by no meanes ſhe would conſent, that I ſhould ſell any thing either of hers, or mine owne, and that my credit to furniſh my ſhop vvould not reach ſo farre as one farthing-worth of Radiſhes, I found my ſelfe then in that ſtrait, that adviſing vvith my father in law, I vvas vvilling to take ſomewhat a more rigerous courſe vvith her. God ſend vs a good night of it. She thereupon began to ſet out ſo loud a throat, as if (like a pig) I had offered to ſticke her, or that the matter had beene of more moment then indeed it vvas: inſomuch that the neighbours came running in for to helpe her, vvho were ſo many that the houſe could not hold them. But when they ſaw the truth of the buſineſſe, as God vvould haue it, it vvas a thing of nothing; and vvhen they perceiued I had reaſon to doe as I did, they reſted quiet, and vvent their wayes: yet for all this did not ſhe leaue off her lamentation, vvhich might very well haue ſeru'd her turne for a hundred holy-weekes. I was inforced that I might

might not fall further foule with her, to let her alone, and to leaue her to her ſelfe, that I might not be bound by hearing her, to anſwer her both with words and deeds. I tooke my cloake, threw it on my ſhoulder, and got mee out a-doores, leauing her all alone, and giuing her thereby free liberty to ſay and doe what ſhe would, till ſhee ſhould grow weary, and could no more.

This madded her more then all the reſt, when ſhee ſaw mee ſet ſo light by that which ſhee ſaid, and that I ſeemed to make ſuch little reckning of it. And I may truly confeſſe vnto you, that in all that time that I liued with her, I cannot accuſe my ſelfe, nor did ſhee euer taxe me of any the leaſt injury that I had done her, but vs'd her with all kindeneſſe that a husband could vſe a wife. But when God ſhall beſtow wealth vpon vs; or when he pleaſeth, take it away, this alters the caſe; for man cannot then doe withall, it lyes not in his hands, neither is it in his power, to goe increaſing in riches, neither can hee ſtop them in their courſe, (no more then a man can the tyde) when they are ebbing from him. Hee cannot be termed an vnthrift, or a bad husband, who vſeth his beſt endeavours, as others doe, for to get wherewithall to liue in ſome good and honeſt faſhion, and to prouide, as well as hee can, for his wife, children, and family. But he is a bad husband, who ſpends his meanes vpon women, throwes it away at play, waſtes it in eating and drinking, and prodigally conſumes it in pride of apparell, and other vices of like exceſſe.

Let my young prodigall harken vnto mee, and doe thou to vnderſtand this leſſon, thou that art the onely ſonne and heire of ſome rich merchant: for it is vnto thee that I ſpeake, and thou knoweſt why and wherefore I ſpeake it. And I was alſo about to ſay farther vnto thee, that if thou doe not take heede, thy raſh and vnadviſed courſes, (holpen on by other mens ill couſell) will carry thee hence to hell. Repent thee therefore betime, and haue a care to liue, that thou maiſt not dye.

So that I ſay, it it neither good, nor bad ſucceſſe, that ſhould cauſe any ſeparation betwixt Man and wife; nor ought marryed folkes to fall out and diſagree about the tranſitory things of the world. For a husband hath no more obligation, then to vſe all his induſtry and diligence, and to doe the beſt hee can: The ſucceſſe wee muſt leaue to God. Nor is hee to be condemned for a bad husband, who keepes his wifes dowrie well ſecured, and hath rather augmented, then diminiſht it, without hauing either ſold, or paltred it away. Shee, without doubt could not confeſſe ſo much, or if ſhee did confeſſe it, ſhee did not ſpeake the truth; or if ſhe did ſpeake it, ſhee did adulterate it in that manner, that they might abſolue her vpon it. Thus (poore ſoule) did ſhee deceiue her ſelfe, whileſt ſhee thought to cozen her Confeſſor. Likewiſe there were not ſome wicked people wanting, of baſe birth, vvho vpon vveake grounds, and a weaker vnderſtanding, to flatter and ſooth vp this her idle humour; did helpe to further her fooleries, fauouring them all that they could, not ſo much as once giuing eare vnto mee, nor knowing the juſtneſſe of my cauſe: And theſe were they that wrought my woe, and brought her to hell. For ſhe dyed ſhortly after of a ſharpe diſeaſe, without ſhewing any tokens of repentance, or receiuing the Sacrament.

Guzmans wife dyes.

In two things may I ſtile my ſelfe vnfortunate: Firſt in this my marriage, though on my part I did vſe all poſſible meanes to obſerue the Lawes thereof. Secondly, that hauing done penance ſo long a time with her, and hauing loſt all my wealth, I had not any acquittance or receipt vnder her hand, no not ſo much as a childe by her, whereby I might haue recouered her dowry. Howbeit, I haue no great cauſe to complaine much for this: for the vnhappineſſe of her death, made my life happy. For there is no burthen ſo heavy, as the inſupportable waight of a froward wife. As a certaine paſſenger plainly gaue vs to vnderſtand, who being vpon a voyage at Sea, and a great ſtorme ariſing, the Maſter of the Shippe gaue order that they ſhould preſently lighten the Shippe, and throw

A ſhort tale of one that threw his wife ouer board.

throw the heavieſt commodities over-board for the ſauing of their liues. The paſſenger hearing him ſay ſo, tooke his wife vp in his armes, and threw her into the ſea. The Iuſtice afterwards going about to puniſh him for this his offence, he excuſed himſelfe, ſaying; That the maſter of the ſhip, had commanded him ſo to doe. And that amongſt all the merchandize that he had aboord, there was not any that weighed ſo heavy as his wife, which vvas the cauſe that he threw her into the Sea: And it pleaſed God that they had faire weather after it.

Now, turne your eyes vpon my father-in-Law, who never had any difference with me, but did cheriſh and comfort me, as if I had beene his owne naturall ſonne; and taking alwayes part with me againſt his daughter, and would ever chide and reprehend her; and when he ſaw his fatherly admonitions could not reclaime her, nor worke any good vpon her, he would never come within her doores. But howſoever he did hate her conditions; in concluſion, ſhe was his daughter; and children are thoſe tables that are ſawen and hewen as it were out of the fathers heart. And though they cauſe their ſorrow, yet they loue them dearely. He mourned much for her, but vve remayned friends. We buried this vnhappie woman (for that muſt be her name) and did that was fitting for her ſoule. And vvithin a few dayes after, we parled of parting company; for he would that I ſhould returne that vnto him which he had giuen me with his daughter. I did not ſtand off, but gaue him all that he had giuen me, and in better caſe then he conſigned it vnto me. He kindly thankt me; we level'd our accounts, remayning ſtill as good friends as ever we were heretofore.

CHAP. IIII.

Guzman de Alfarache, *being now a Widower, reſolues to goe to* Alcala de Henares, *to ſtudie the Artes, and Diuinity, that he might make himſelfe fit to ſay Maſſe. And hauing fulfilled all his tearmes, and duely heard his Lectures, hee leaues all and marries againe.*

OR to tumble downe a ſtone from the top of a hill "every meane mans ſtrength vvill ſerue, vvith the touch (as they ſay) of his little finger, hee vvill make it to roule to the ground. But if the ſame ſtone vvere to be drawne out of ſome deepe Well, many men vvould not be able to fetch it forth, and great diligence muſt be vſed for the getting of it vp. For to make my ſelfe fall from that good eſtate, vvherein I vvas, and to runne head-long out of my vvealth and credit, my vvifes waſtefulneſſe vvas enough to turne me going; but to get my ſelfe vp againe, to the ſame height vvherein I vvas before, I had need of the helpe of other the like Vncles and Kinſfolke; ſuch another *Genoa*, and *Milane*; or that another *Sayavedra* ſhould come and liue with me; or that the ſame man ſhould riſe againe; for I never lighted on the like ſervant, or companion for my turne; by whoſe helping hand I might haue beene raiſed vp as high as ever I was, and reſtored to a better eſtate then before: But wanting theſe good helpes, I lay buryed and whelmed-over head and eares in a well of miſeries.

Goods and riches, the ſlower they are in comming, the quicker they are in going. They are gathered with a great deale of leaſure; but are ſcattered away in haſte. All at this preſent (whatſoever it be) in this world, it is all ſubject to mutation; it being fuller of alterations, then any thing elſe. Let not the rich

Riches long a comming, but quicke in going.

man therefore reſt too ſecure, nor yet the poore man deſpaire. For the wheele is as ſlow in comming vp, as in going downe; and as quickly emptieth, as fils the Buckets that it bringeth vp. The exceſſiue expences of my houſe had ſtript me of all, both my jewels and my money; My wife might with a good conſcience (if ſhee had had it) conſidering what I ſuffered for her ſake, and the troubles which by her exorbitancies, lighted vpon mee, haue left mee ſome ſmall part of her portion, (which ſhe might lawfully haue done) wherewith at leaſt I might (had I beene ſo diſpoſed) being a ſole and retired man, haue driuen ſome ſmall trade, attended my old occupation of vſury, or imployed my ſelfe in ſome one thing or other, to haue pickt out a poore liuing, and to begin the vvorld anew, to ſee if I could recover this my weakneſſe, whereinto by her meanes I was fallen, and now brought ſo low. But not onely in this particular occaſion, but in all the reſt, that offered themſelues vnto mee, with my friends and acquaintance, I might ſay that which *Simonides* ſaid; He had two coffers or cheſts in his houſe, and was wont to ſay, (vſing to open them at certaine times) that when he opened that of cares and troubles, from which hee thought, and hoped to reape ſome profit, it fell out contrary to his expectation, finding nothing but his labour for his paines; and of that it was brim-full; but that wherein the Graces were kept, who ſhould haue recompenced him for his good ſervices, hee could get nothing thence, but had the ill lucke to finde it alwayes empty.

Simonides *his two coffers.*

This Philoſopher and my ſelfe, were equally vnfortunate; and it ſeemeth, that the influence of one and the ſame Starre, had lighted on vs both. For albeit, I did evermore labour to helpe and benefit others, not conſidering the good or hurt that might come thereof, and without taking the counſell of thoſe, who ſay; *Haz bien, y guarte*: Doe well for others, but yet looke to thy ſelfe; ſo may I alſo ſay, That I never waſht that head, that I had any other reward for my paines, but ſcabs and ſcurffe, And albeit I had felt the ſmart of it, and paid ſoundly for this my folly, yet I could not hold my hand, but wilfully perſiſted in mine owne wayes; for, being made drunke with the delight, that I tooke therein, I did not ſeeke to repaire the hurt it had done mee. For as it is an eaſie matter to ſtrip a [b] drunken man out of his cloathes; ſo is it hard to doe the ſame vpon him, that is ſober. They may [c] rifle him that ſleepes; but not him, that is awake. I did never ſtand vpon my guard; I did never thinke to ſee the day that I ſhould haue wanted; Whileſt I had wherewithall, I alwayes made this account; But when I ſaw to what poverty I was brought, I then knew the errour I was in. And though I was a naughty man, yet I had a deſire to be good; not out of any true loue to goodneſſe it ſelfe, but for the ſhunning of ſome greater evill, that otherwiſe might enſue. I had throwne aſide my vices, forgetting them for a while, and had applyed my ſelfe to labour and paines-taking; I had tride all the meanes and wayes that might be to worke my ſelfe a fortune, and to come forward in the world; but not any one of them that thriu'd with me. I was an vnfortunate man in all thoſe better courſes, that I ranne. Onely in doing ill was I lucky, I had a happy hand in filching and ſtealing, fortune onely favouring me ſo farre, as to make me vnhappily-happy.

Proverbe.
a Haz bien, y guarte.
Guzman *hurt by his kinde heart.*

Proverbe.
b Facil deſpojar à vn ebrio.
Proverbe.
c Pueden robar, al que duerme, pero no à quien vela.

Guzman *could never thriue by any good courſes.*

This is a cunning tricke, which ſinne ſtill puts vpon vs, to further vs with it's counſell, and to helpe thoſe that are her champions, to the end, that with that heat and warmth they receiue from ſinne, they may be the better incouraged and drawne on with the more mettall, to commit more heynous crimes; and when ſhee ſees that they haue attayned to the height of all villanie, and that they cannot well clime higher, ſhee tumbles them downe headlong with a witneſſe. She makes them to mount by the ladder, but ſends them downe by the rope. Differing herein from God, who workes after another manner. For he never ſendeth vs any trouble, which he doth not accompanie with ſome bleſſing or other; from our greateſt miſeries, groweth our greater

Sinne, how ſhee vſeth her followers.

greater glory: leading vs by a narrow path, to the broad and ſpacious vvay of bliſſe.

God is alwayes at hand to helpe vs.

It ſeemeth vnto vs, that when we are ſwallowed vp as it were with deſperation; and that vvant and poverty lye heavy vpon vs, that he is forgetfull and vnmindfull of vs; vvhen as indeed, he is but like vnto that father, vvho for to teach his ſonne to goe, maketh as if he did looſen his hand from him, faigning to let him goe alone by himſelfe, and for a vvhile to ſee how he vvill ſhift his feete, ſtands in ſome neere diſtance from him, yet not ſo farre off, but that hee ſtill keepes himſelfe cloſe by his ſide, and vvhen vvalking ſoftly, and vvith trembling ſteps towards him, he ſees him ready to fall, he runnes in vnto him, and catching him in his armes, receiues him into them, and imbraces him, not ſuffering him to fall to the ground. But vvhen the father hath no ſooner left him to himſelfe, but that either he makes too much haſte, or vvill not goe at all, nor ſo much as offer to moue a foot, or letting goe his hold, vnfaſtning himſelfe from his fathers hand, he comes to catch a fall, the fault is not in the father, but in the ſonnes either too much dulneſſe, or too much haſte

The naughty condition of mans nature.

We are of a naughty and an evill nature, vvee are not vvilling to helpe our ſelues a jot, vve doe not endevour to doe our ſelues good, we will not vſe our beſt diligence, nor put to any helping hand of our owne, but looke (like little children) to haue our meat put ſtill in our mouthes (being now bigge lubbers) and that all ſhould be put into our laps, vvithout any paines, or care-taking of ours. But God is of that infinit goodneſſe, that he never forgets vs, nor forſakes vs; Hee knowes very vvell how to take away from the vvicked in a moment, many great Lordſhips and Farmes, which they haue beene many yeares a purchaſing; and to enrich *Iob* within a little while, vvith double ſo much vvealth, and thoſe other good bleſſings vvhich before he had taken from him.

How God rewards the righteous.

Guzman *as poore as* Iob.

I never had the grace to be ſo good; but I am ſure I was as naked as *Iob*. For I had nothing to leane my ſelfe againſt, ſaue onely the bare walls of my houſe. If, when I had plenty, I did pamper vp my ſelfe; now I did deſire, to haue only wherewithall to hold life and ſoule together. I was ready to periſh for vvant of food.

A tale of a little boy.

I remember (when I was a youth) that I had knowne in *Madrid* a pretty little boy, that vvas very vvell giuen, and for his yeares, of good vnderſtanding. This little Lad was bred vp by a Gentle-woman, that was his mother, not that ſhee had borne him, but for the loue ſhee bore him; ſhee gaue him good breeding both for his booke, and otherwiſe; ſhee cloath'd him vvell, and handſomely; and for his dyet, if there were one bit better then other at the boord, he was ſure to haue his part of it. This childe was bred in *Granada*, vvhere there are certaine little ſmall grapes, which are very dainty ones indeed, wonderfull pleaſant, and of an excellent reliſh; which in thoſe parts they call *jauies*. Now there being none of this kind in *Madrid*, & for that this litle boy would not eat any other ſaue his owne Countrey grapes, when he ſaw he had none of that ſort giuen him, ſeeing your [d] *aluillas* one day on the boord, hee askt for ſome of thoſe little ones, as hee was wont to doe; To whom his mother ſaid; Childe; Here are no little ones to giue thee. We haue none but theſe: To whom the childe anſwered; Then (good Mother) giue me ſome of thoſe. For I can eate alſo great ones for a need.

d Aluillas: *A kinde of great gray, or whitiſh grapes.*

Hee that cannot liue as he would, muſt be content to liue as he may.

I likewiſe could now feed vpon groſſe fare, no meat came amiſſe, all vvas ſweet and ſavorie vnto mee, nothing did hurt mee, but hunger vvithout meat; any thing, ſo as it were a belly full, it was all one to mee. For the alterations of times, oblige all, and to all; and to content our ſelues with thoſe things, vvhich are quite averſe to our nature, and no way ſuting with our diſpoſition. I vvas driuen to doe that, which I never dreamt to haue done, to the end, that I might alwayes be able to ſay; That neither ſelfe-loue made me doubt; nor feare, dread to adventure vpon any meanes

whatſoever, that might make for my profit. And queſtionleſſe, if I had vvholly bent my ſelfe to ſome one ſet courſe or other, and had ſetled my ſelfe cloſe vnto it, and conſtantly perſevered therein, I ſhould haue done ſome good in it, and made it a meanes of no meane advancement vnto mee. But I was hot and cholericke; I miſ-ſpent my time; and my beginnings being bad, I fayled in the goodneſſe of the ends. I had often reſolued to be good, but I vvas quickly weary of well-doing; I was that rolling ſtone, that never gathers moſſe. And becauſe I could not tame my ſelfe, time had now tamed mee. I ſaw my ſelfe abandoned of all humane remedie, and had no hope of any other helpe, then that onely of my houſe. I began then to conſider, and ſaw with my ſelfe; What haue I now in the houſe, to ſtanch my hunger withall? Shall I bite vpon a brick-bat? that is but tough feeding, and ſomewhat too hard a cruſt to gnaw vpon. Shall I roſte one of my rafters? That vvill be burnt away vpon the ſpit: I found that a naked houſe, vvithout ſomething to maintaine it, could not afford me any kinde of remedie. I could thinke vpon no better thing, then to betake my ſelfe to ſacred Orders, and to become a Church-man: Saying to my ſelfe; I haue humane learning; I vvill make benefit of that, by hearing thoſe Lectures read in *Alcala de Henares*. I haue ſome little ſmackering alſo in the Liberall Arts, and Divinitie, and when I haue ſtudyed theſe a-while, I will take my Degree, then ſhall I be qualified for the Pulpit, and being able to ſay Maſſe, and to preach a Sermon, I ſhall be ſure to haue wherewithall to eat; and if all ſhould faile, I vvould turne Fryar at the laſt, vvhereby I ſhould not onely liue vpon certainties, but ſhould alſo leade a very ſafe and ſecure life. For a *Dominus vobiſcum*, did never yet dye of hunger. But this courſe, I ſhall not onely repaire my life, but I ſhall free it likewiſe from any danger vvhatſoever, vvhich I might haue incurred by my former miſdemeanours. The time, for the payment of my debts, drawes on a-pace, and my wealth goes away as faſt; if by this meanes I did not provide for the ſtorme, that vvas now a comming, I might afterwards ſee my ſelfe oppreſſed, and in great perill to be vtterly loſt.

Proverbe. e Piedra moucdiza, nunca la cubre moho.

Guzman *reſolues to goe to the Vniverſitie.*

I knew that this came not from my heart, for I vvas not ignorant of mine owne evill inclination; but he that hath no other meanes, and is put to his ſhifts, muſt doe as he may. He that cannot make choyce of his game, muſt flie at that which comes next in his way. Now that I am imbarke, I muſt play the cunning Mariner, and ſeeing I cannot ſayle with a fore-winde, I muſt fetch boords, and come about with a ſide-winde. Any one will ſerue my turne, ſo it be not ſuch a contrary winde, as ſhall chop me into the mouthes of my hungry Creditors. This is the key that muſt make all ſure, and keepe them out from comming within me. The money that I ſhall make of this houſe, will ſerue well enough to maintaine me as a ſcholler; which being well husbanded, though I ſhould ſpend yearely a hundred Ducats, or a hundred and fiftie, which will be the moſt, (and is a good liberall allowance) I ſhall haue ſtore of money for that time, that I ſhall need to continue there; ſo that I may liue like a Duke, (if I liſt my ſelfe) and yet haue wherewithall to buy me bookes, and to take ſome honourable Degree. I will make choyce of a good Chamber-fellow, a ſtudent of mine owne profeſſion, that we may follow our ſtudies cloſe together, heare the Lectures, compare our Notes, communicate our doubts, that ſo by joyning our forces together, and ayding one another, we ſhould be able to quit our ſelues like braue fellowes, when vve came to breake a lance in thoſe liſts. In this manner had I made vp my recknings with my ſelfe; this was my conſultation, and this was I fully reſolued to put in execution. But how ill a conſultation, and how worſe a reſolution, that I ſhould determine to ſtudie Divinitie, more for the nouriſhing of this my body, then for the feeding of others ſoules!

What a ſtudent ſhould doe.

ſoules! How a Gods name ſhould it enter into my imagination to be a Maſſe-Officiall, and not a Maſſe-Prieſt? Or that I ſhould once thinke of becomming a Religious man, hauing ſuch a ſcandalous ſpirit? Accurſed I, and accurſed he, who is ſo vnhappie, as not primarily to propoſe vnto himſelfe the ſervice and glory of God. And moſt vnfortunate are they of all others, who treat of their owne profit, of their preferments, of their honours, and of the maintayning of their backe and belly, by this ſo worthy and divine a Calling; and that doe not ſolely and wholly take the Miniſterie vpon them, for no other end, but to be Gods Meſſengers, and to doe him ſervice in his Church; and that ſhall not vvorthily performe that holy function; and that ſhall not deſire learning for any other end, then to be a light vnto himſelfe, and vnto others.

Young Divines, what they ſhould propoſe vnto themſelues.

What their ends ought to be.

Traytor as I vvas, why did I treat, like another *Iudas*, of the ſelling of my Maſter? And I ſpeake it to all, as vvell as to my ſelfe; that hee ſhall be taken for no other then a Traytor, that ſhall treat of being a Prieſt, or a Fryar, hauing no other ayme, but to feed his belly, cloath his backe, and ſpend laviſhly. And that father is a Traytor, whoſoever hee be, that ſhall enforce his ſonne, contrary to his owne inclination and liking, to take the Miniſterie vpon him, becauſe his Grand-father, his Vncle, his kinſman, or his friend, hath left him ſuch a Patronage, or ſuch an Advouſon, if his ſonne ſhall in ſuch a time take holy Orders. When a father caſts about vvith himſelfe to make his ſonne a Fryar, or one, or more of his daughters Nunnes, either becauſe hee hath not ſtore of wealth to leaue them, or that hee may leaue his other children the richer, or for any other vvorldly cauſes, which cannot be but vaine and idle, let him weigh and conſider well with himſelfe what hee doth in ſo doing: For it is a great wonder, if one of a hundred proue good (I ſay nothing of the Nunnes) the moſt part of them, roming and rambling through the world, like a company of vagabonds, and Apoſtata's, diſhonouring their religion, diſgracing their habit, putting their liues in perill, and ſending their ſoules to Hell. It is God that muſt call vs to this holy Calling: For it is hee that anoynted *David*, hee that made choyce of the Prieſts and the Prophets. The religious man muſt be religious, meerely for Religions ſake; for the very loue that hee beareth vnto it. This muſt be the principall end, this the ſubſtance, and all the reſt but matter of dependance. For it is fit and juſt, that hee that ſerues at the Altar, ſhould liue by the Altar: and it were inhumanitie, when thy Oxe hath plowed thy ground, and laboured hard, to tye him to his ſtall, and giue him no meat. Let every one open his eyes, and looke well about him, before hee reſolue as I did. Let him weigh well with himſelfe, what charge he takes vpon him, and what a deale of danger hee runnes. Let him firſt aske of himſelfe, what moues him to take that eſtate vpon him? For by walking in the darke, the eye that ſees not, muſt make the feet to ſtumble. The marke whereat a good Prieſt, and an honeſt religious ſoule ſhould ſhoot, muſt be brighter, purer, and clearer then the Sunne. Let not Parents thinke, that for to fill their ſonnes bellies, they muſt needs make them Church-men: nor let them thinke, when they haue a lame, weake, ſickly, vnprofitable, crumpt-back't, or ill-featur'd ſonne, to offer him vpon Gods Altar, or to make him a Prieſt. For God will haue the beſt, and thoſe that are without blemiſh for his ſacrifice, being that hee offered vp the beſt that ever was for vs, when hee offered himſelfe in his beloued Sonne. Therefore if thou ſhalt make a bad choyce, thou wilt haue the worſt of it. For if thou ſhalt reſerue the better for thy ſelfe, and giue the worſer vnto God, hee will take them both away from thee, ſo that both thy eyes ſhall be put out; hee will bereaue thee of the bad, becauſe hee was not good enough for him;

Fathers ought not to inforce their children to take Orders.

Proverbe.
f Quien ſirve al Altar, como del.

and of the good, becauſe thou thought'ſt him too good. You muſt not change bridles, leaſt you ſpoyle your horſes mouthes: Every horſe muſt haue his owne bit: What need a continent man to marry? Or a laſcivious wanton to be a Prieſt? The one is not ſo fit for a wife; And I am ſure the other altogether vnfit for the Church. There are many habitations in heaven, and every one hath his right place appointed for him. Let every man take that way, that may direct him to his ſalvation; and let him not goe any other way, leſt hee may chance to loſe himſelfe; and thinking hee treads in the right path, never ſees his deſire, nor that which hee pretends. It were a pretty kinde of over-ſight in mee, if being to goe from *Madrid* to *Barajas*, I ſhould take over *Segouia* bridge, and paſſe on to *Guadarrama*. Or being to goe for *Valladolid*, I ſhould make for *Siguença*. Doeſt thou not ſee how thou art out of thy way? Doeſt thou not perceiue thy folly? Let a Virgin, be a Virgin; A marryed man, a marryed man: Let the Continent obſtaine; The Religious, be religious: And let every one goe on in the way that is ſet before him, without turning to the right hand, or to the left.

proverbe.
g No ſe han de trocar los frenos.

proverbe.
h No hai e buen caſado, vn continente.

proverbe.
i Seria malo vn lacivo, por religioſo.

I was reſolued to be a Church-man, and for no other reaſon in the world, but onely to repayre a broken fortune, to fill my belly, and to be free from my Creditors; who, as ſoone as my ten yeares were out, were to come vpon my backe. With this, I finely ſtopt their mouthes, ſhut the gap whereat they ſhould enter, and left them to ſhake their eares. I ſold my houſe for almoſt as much as it coſt mee: For albeit men doe vſually ſell houſes to great loſſe, yet mine yeelded mee little leſſe then what it ſtood mee in. For I did value it at ſomewhat the dearer rate, becauſe it was bettered by the bordering buildings that were round about it, which time had wrought for mee. When the Scriuener had drawne the writings, and that they were ready to be ſealed, and I to receiue my money, I ſaid; That before I proceeded therein any farther, vvee would goe to his houſe, that was the publike Officer for the rating of mens goods, that wee might haue a Licence from him vnder his hand, requiring his confirmation of the Contract that was betweene vs, and that wee might conclude with him touching the ſeſſing of the rent, as alſo the twentieth part that was to goe out, and to be levyed vpon the ſale of the houſe. When wee came thither, and had caſt vp our reckonings, wee found that the ſeſſment came not to aboue ſixe Royals, but the twentieth part to better then a thouſand fiue hundred. Mee thought this was ſomewhat cruell, and beyond all reaſon of policie, that I ſhould giue him ſuch a great ſumme of money, which amounted to more then the Fee-ſimple of the ground, whereon I built it. I ſtood vpon it, and was very loth to pay him ſo much, but becauſe my ſtanding out might haue hindred the ſale thereof, and ſo I might haue let ſlip the occaſion of doing my ſelfe good, I paid thoſe duties; but with proteſtation, to require the ſame againe by courſe of Iuſtice, as a thing which in all Law and Conſcience, hee could not duely challenge of mee.

An abuſe about the rates of houſes in Spaine, *ſet downe here at large by* Guzman.

The Maſter of the Office began to laugh at me, as if I had vttered ſome famous fooliſhnes. And it might very well be ſo; but as then it did not ſeeme ſo vnto mee. I askt him, why hee laught: Hee told mee, at my pretenſion. And that hee would returne me all my money againe, on condition, that I would but giue him halfe a Royall every day, till I had ſentence on my ſide in this ſute. I was about to haue accepted of it; it ſeeming to my vnderſtanding, that an ill cuſtome ought not ſo farre to over-ſway reaſon, but that vpon diſcovering the cunning and deceit vſed therein, it would eaſily be abrogated, and broken. Nor would this which I ſpeake of, beene my caſe alone, but all the whole Kingdome would haue put in their plea into

into the Courts of Iuſtice; and as well for their priuate profit, as the publike good, vvould haue declar'd themſelues in my fauour, to the end that there might be ſome order taken for the redreſſing of ſo great a vvrong. I vvas not ſo vvide of the marke; nor did I goe vpon ſuch weake grounds; but that with that vvhich I then knew, I thought I ſhould be able ſtrongly to maintaine my opinion; it ſeeming vnto mee *ſcientiam certam*, a ſetled knowledge, the certaintie whereof could not be gaine-ſaid.

It might haue ſo falne out, that I might haue defended it vvith a little coſte, and peradventure I might haue ſpent much in it, and ſo much, that not onely this one, but all others of this kinde, might haue beene vtterly overthrowne. As it did once happen with certaine Seſſings, that vvere a-foote in thoſe dayes, for that it was found out at laſt, that there was in the ſetting of thoſe rates a certaine kinde of Vſury which our State doth not allow. The cauſe which moued mee to this Defence was, becauſe I ſaw it grew out of the diſcourſe of naturall Reaſon: conſidering with my ſelfe, that onely from thence, all Lawes had their beginning.

But becauſe this buſineſſe crept in by degrees, and was not ſo currant and common in the world, as now it is, it was not much ſtood vpon. But if vvee ſhall a little more curiouſly ſearch into it, and the abuſe thereof vvere vvell lookt into, I doubt not but it would appeare ſo harſh and ſower to moſt mens taſtes, that it would in ſome great part, if not wholly, be reformed. For ſuppoſe a thing not to be worth any more then that which is giuen for it; and that this vvhich is giuen, ought to be limitted, finite, and certaine. Now, if to mee they ſhould ſell that plat of ground for a thouſand Royals, with two Royals of perpetuall rent vpon it, and that there is not any man that will giue more for it, nor indeed is worth any more; and that I haue ſpent in building a houſe vpon it, three thouſand Ducats at leaſt in good money: If it be a true, and a Rule in Law, that no man ought to make himſelfe rich with another mans wealth; why ſhould this prolling Officer inrich himſelfe out of my monies. For that this, vvhich giues this valew, and inhances the price of the ground, is mine owne peculiar purſe, and thoſe moneys I layd out my ſelfe, is a cleare caſe, and cannot be denyed. So that if the ſame building, vvhich I had reared, ſhould be taken downe and carryed away, the ground it ſelfe would remaine vpon the very ſame termes, as it did before that I had bought it: So that this twentieth peny to be leuied out of it, ſeemeth in my poore vnderſtanding to be rather *pœna delicti*, a puniſhment for the offence that I had committed in building mee an houſe, then *debitum juſtum*, a juſt and due debt; becauſe it hath its being from a bad cauſe.

And ſo true is this, which I haue already told you; that in caſe euen that very day, that I ſold this houſe, I ſhould haue placed a pillar in it, or a *Statua* of ſtone, of ſome great value, and that buying the ſame together with my houſe hee ſhould giue mee in the whole ten thouſand Ducats, out of which ſumme, this office will haue a twentieth part; if I, to excuſe this intollerable taxe, may take away, and haue taken away the *Statua*, and afterwards ſell the houſe for onely one thouſand Ducats; I may well juſtifie the doing of it, and they can demand no more of me, then what accrewes vnto them out of the price of the houſe. But that we may proceed a little farther; If I ſhould afterwards carry away all the yron-worke, the timber, and the glaſſe; If I ſhould demoliſh the wals, and ſhould make it, of a houſe of ten thouſand Ducats, ſcarce worth a hundred, I may likewiſe doe it. And I may lawfully ſell all that I thus tooke away, and ſeparated from the houſe, without being charged with the twentieth part.

How then can this hang together, that the parts, euery one of them being taken

taken ſeuerally by themſelues, doe owe no ſuch taxe, but in whole, and in groſſe, ſhould be lyable to this debt? If the maſter of this office ſhould ſay vnto me, you are to pay me the twentieth part of that price, wherat you firſt bought this plat of ground, for the which you paid a thouſand Royals, and that the charge wherewith he charged me, ſhould ſtill runne on in this ſet and certaine kinde of manner there were ſome reaſon for it; as being grounded vpon *Dominium rectum*, a true and lawfull claime; for that it was ſold with that condition, at ſuch a ſet price, with ſuch a reſervation of a perpetuall rent vpon it, vvhich I voluntarily and willingly did accept of. But how can he oblige me, or I conſent to pay that which I my ſelfe doe not know what it is, nor how much it may come to, & which peradventure may amount to ſuch an exceſſiue ſumme, that onely with that twentieth part, I might buy a whole Towne. And as thoſe that I beſtow'd vpon my houſe were but three thouſand Ducats, they might as well haue beene three hundred, or thirty thouſand, and that houſe might hap to haue beene ſold thirty times in one yeare, which would haue come to an exceſſiue and exorbitant ſeſſment. And ſuch vnreaſonable rates as theſe are neither ratified in the *Ciuill* nor the *Canon* Law; nor hath any other ground or foundation for it, but that which ariſeth from that which vvee call *jus Gentium*, or the Law of Nations. And that, not *commune*, but *priuatum*, not common but priuate: for it is impoſed as it pleaſeth the impoſer, nor doth it paſſe generally in all places but in ſome particular parts; & within foure leagues compaſſe, in ſome townes they pay it, and in ſome, not. Eſpecially in *Seuil*, and in almoſt all *Andaluzia* they know no ſuch thing, nor ſo much as euer once heard of it. The perpetuall Seſſement, that was firſt ſetled, this, I ſay, is euer more truly paid, without any other taxes or tallages, though the ſaid poſſeſſion or houſe ſhould be ſolde a hundred thouſand times ouer.

Now, for to make the carrying away of the twentieth part lawfull, it muſt be by the vertue of a *Common-Law*, ratified and confirmed by the approbation and conſent of the whole Kingdome, but this neither is ſo, nor euer was, but onely approued by the ignorant; and ſuch mens errors, cannot make this good. There is no man but knowes the nature and quality of your Seſſings, as alſo how and which way they are to be raiſed, and with what reaſon and moderation, and how much is to be paid out of every hundred: And if theſe be lyable to the Lawes, and ſubject to their cenſure; why ſhould not theſe perpetuall ſeſſings, as they call them, ſubmit themſelues in like manner to the Lawes? What ſtrange kinde of taxes are theſe? What new kinde of devices to wrong the ſubject? What reaſon is there, that they ſhould be paid in this manner? What ground haue they for it? They haue but two prices to worke vpon: Either that, for which I bought it; or that for which I ſold it. And why ſhould they not rather pitch vpon the price for which it was bought, then for which it was ſold? Will they oblige mee to pay theſe duties out of mine owne particular moneys, out of my proper expences, out of mine owne improuing of my eſtate, and out of mine owne proper induſtry?

So that euery way this caſe being nakedly laid open, and duely conſidered, there being no greater either Law or Reaſon on their ſide, then I can ſee as yet it ſeemeth vnjuſt, that they ſhould take that my wealth from mee, which I had *bona fide* ſpent vpon it, or from my Wife and my Children, being that the one halfe thereof is ordinarily loſt, that is laid out in building. Why then ſhould it be permited, that my principall, by the benefit of that peece of ground, ſhould not onely become leſſe then before, but that I muſt afterwards alſo pay and loſe that which they take from me, and carry away with this their twentieth part?

And in caſe it muſt be payd, as paid it is, and that to a peny; let it be lookt into, treated of, and determined: for it being defined and ſet downe, wee vvill reſt ſatisfied, becauſe it hath beene conſulted on, and that good heads had the

the handling of it, who would not willingly do any thing but what is juſt and honeſt; and therefore ought to like of it. But till that courſe be taken, the people take great ſcandall thereat; not a man but talkes, and that liberally too of the great wrong and injury which they receiue thereby. Some, holding it for a great peece of injuſtice; and others, not able to containe themſelues, ſtyling it with vvorſer names.

This paſt vvith mee at that time with the Receiuer of theſe Seſſments. But hee and I were well met, wee were ene as wiſe one as another; I knew little, and hee not over-much. Hee would needs reply vnto mee, ſaying; That, was the condition of the Contract, and therefore was of force: for a man may oblige himſelfe as farre out of his owne free-will, as if hee had beene otherwiſe bound. This did not ſatisfie mee, vvherefore I anſwered that truly, That it were likewiſe a Condition of Contract, if I ſhould lend an hundred Ducats, which were to be paid vnto mee within ſuch a time, wherein if he failed, hee was to pay mee euery day eight Royals, till hee had paid mee the principall. But this is not lawfull: So that to juſtifie a thing, it is not enough, that it is a Condition contracted, and agreed vpon; but wee muſt ſee whether it be alowable and lawfull.

Then he turned vpon mee againe, and told mee: This, Sir, is but a matter of hap-hazard: for, that a houſe be ſolde, or not be ſold, is a meere venture: and if it be not ſolde, there is uothing due vnto mee. O what a good reaſon (quoth I) is this? As ſoone therefore as the houſe is ſold, the twentieth part muſt be as a puniſhment of the contract. And if it be, why do you binde my hands, and prohibit, that I may not ſell it to ſuch and ſuch perſons? You your ſelfe, by your owne confeſſion, condemne the Contract. You open the doore to all that may pay you, you ſell the thing for that it is worth, and you will haue the *Indians* to giue you the ſweat of their browes, and take paines for you, and for no other end, but to better your owne ground, and by ſecuring you of a good round ſumme of money, they augment your wealth by diminiſhing their owne: And when they muſt liue thus by the loſſe, wilt thou haue one out of twenty? But ſay ſuch a thing ſhould be done *mala fide*, yet you may pretend your right; but of that poſſeſſion wherof you are now depriued, and haue made me Lord thereof in your roome, ſhall I out of thoſe things, which I may, as it pleaſeth mee, either remoue thence, or bring thither; will you haue a penſion out of that, which I haue ordained for my pleaſure? Of the *Statuas*, the *Pyramides*, the *Fountaines*, of whoſe conduits & waters, I alwaies am Lord and Maſter, and can alienate all this from thee, without letting thee haue any part therein? wilt thou hane it adjudged vnto thee, becauſe thou ſaiſt it muſt follow vvith the whole, as a thing that is founded on they ground?

That *totum* of yours, I do not vvell vnderſtand (ſaid hee) vvhat it is, neither can I beleeue that it can be brought within the compaſſe of juſtice, and that you can carry it away by Law. And I am verily perſwaded, that they who know and vnderſtand theſe things, and are able to determine of them, vvill not incline not to your part.

I paid him that which he call'd his due, though ſore againſt my will, & hauing made my proteſtation againſt it, I began to follow the ſute: but becauſe the Schooles at *Alcala* were now ſhortly to be opened, & that the time drew neere for the reading of their Lectures, I gaue that ouer, that I might goe about that which did more neerely concerne me. And ſo committing the care of this and ſome other buſineſſes to a Solicitor, a friend of mine, and to my father-in-law, I prepared for my journey. I got me my money together, & put it out to profit, which yeelded me a moderate gaine, purpoſing to ſpend vpon my ſelf ſo much as was needfull & neceſſary for me. I made me a cloak, & a *Sotana*, provided my ſelf of bedding & ſuch other implements as were fitting for a ſtudents chamber, and ſo preſently got me to *Alcala de Henares*, where I had ſo often wiſht to be.

When

When I came thither, I vvas doubtfull with my ſelfe, what I were beſt to doe, not knowing as yet what to reſolue vpon, and whether it would be my better and more profitable courſe, to take a [k] chamber by my ſelfe, and to be all alone, or to be vnder pupillage, and common with others. I had knowne already what it was to keepe and gouerne a houſe, to be chiefe commander of it, to pleaſe mine owne taſte, and to enjoy mine owne liberty. Yet notwithſtanding, hauing reſpect to the leſſer trouble of the two, I was content at laſt to take my fortune in the Common, amongſt the reſt of thoſe Pupils that dyeted altogether in one houſe, though it went ſomewhat againſt the haire with mee, (I muſt confeſſe) to ſubmit my ſelfe to the poore and ſlender pittance of a Maſter ouer Pupils, who was to command in the houſe, to ſit at the vpper end of the table, to diuide the Commons, and to giue euery man his portion vpon his plate, with thoſe his filthy, and perhaps mangy fingers, and thoſe his foule and dirty nailes, as crooked, and as long, as thoſe of an *Oſtriche*, tearing, rather then cutting the fleſh, out into threads and ſtrings, like the rending of the barbes, from the roote of ſome plant, or young tree, diſtributing the porrige in Lettice leaues, to make it ſtretch the farther, cutting the bread eauen, and giuing euery one his ſlice for the auoiding of waſte, allowing vs no new bread, but that which was ſtale and hard, that we might eate the leſſe of it; our [m] *Olla*, was nothing but the fat of bacon, whence onely it might take its name, which made a very glorious both to ſee to, and more cleare then the light, at leaſt ſo bright that a man might eaſily diſcerne the leaſt Louſe that fell frō our ſleeues in the bottome of the porringer. Which if we did not ſwallow downe in ſtead of a crumme, wee would take forth with our fingers, and cracke it betweene our nailes. And of theſe kinde of repaſts, we had ſome foure and fiftie every month; for on the Saturdayes, we alwayes made our meales of [n] *Mondongo's*. In fruit time we had ſome foure Cherries, three ſowre Plummes, one or two little Apricocks, halfe a pound of Figges, and now and then a whole pound, according to the number of thoſe that ſate at table; but in that minced and curtall manner, that there was none of vs ſo nimble finger'd, that wee could come to vye it the ſecond time.

Our grapes were diuided by little ſprigs or bunches, ſuch as they giue little children to their Beuer, being no more in the whole, then would lye vpon a poore little plate, and hee that had moſt, had not aboue ſixe Grapes that fell to his ſhare.

And of theſe, you muſt vnderſtand, that we had not all of all ſorts every day, but in one onely kinde: for when wee had Figges we had no Grapes, and when we had Cherries wee had no Apricocks. Our Tutor would tell vs, that too much fruit would breed tertian Agues, and therefore for our healths ſake, hee would not haue vs to eate any more, for feare we ſhould be ſicke.

In winter time, vpon a little plate, thinly ſcattered, wee ſhould haue a few Raiſins laid out, as if they had meant to dry them in the Sunne, ſo farre off were they ſundred the one from the other.

For our laſt courſe, to cloſe vp our ſtomacke, we had a thinne ſlice of cheeſe, which ſeemed rather to be a Spiders web then any thing elſe, or like thoſe thinne ſhauings which your joyners planiſh away vvith their plainers when they ſhaue their wainſcoat; alleaging that thoſe thicker ſlunchins would dull our wits. Beſides, it was ſo full of eyes, and ſo tranſparent, that whoſoeuer had ſeene it, would haue judg'd it to haue beene the *diaphragma*, or that thinne and ſlender caule of ſome young little Kid, or ſome Lambkins mid-riffe; and for a need might haue ſeru'd in ſtead of ſpectacles, ſo eaſily could wee ſee through them.

Other whiles we had halfe a Pompeon amongſt vs all, and a little thinne cut of a ſmall Melon, nothing ſo bigge as a mans head, but about the bigneſſe of my fiſt, or a well growne Peare. And vpon fiſh-dayes, wee had a meſſe of lentill

[k] *The Spaniſh word is camariſta, which is one that hath no houſe for himſelfe, nor keepes company with any other, but hyres him a chamber in ſome houſe, where he lodgeth and locks himſelfe vp, without conuerſing with the reſt of that houſe.*

[l] *In your vniuerſities in Spaine, they are called Pupils, that are vnder a Tutor, for their diet, and their gouernment. And this houſe where they diet, and lodge, they call* Pupillage. Couarr. verb. Pupilo

A Student that puts himſelfe in Commons with a Tutor and his ſcholler, what things he muſt be ſubiect vnto

[m] Olla, *is all that meat, what ſoeuer is ſod together in a pot.* Cauarr. verb. Olla.

[n] *The tripes or intrals of any beaſt.*

lentill porrige, ſuch as *Æſope* was fed withall, being no better then Duckes-meat; and if at any time we had peaſe porrige, (which was very ſeldome, that we had ſuch Gau-dies) I aſſure you, that the beſt and cunningeſt *Indian* diuer of thē all, that fiſhes for pearles, muſt haue bin forced to haue dined foure times at leaſt, to the bottome of my porringer, before he ſhould be able to bring vp one of theſe pearles; which how ſcarce they were to be met withall, you may judge by this, that the peaſe had not giuen ſo much tincture to the porrige as would ſerue to giue a colour to a wenches coyfe. One day in the Lent, and no more, hee did vſe to giue vs cheſſe-nuts for an Antipaſt to whet our ſtomackes, but no honey with them, for that they were ſweete enough (he ſaid) of themſelues; and of thoſe too, we haue but a few, for he would tell vs, we vvere as good eate ſo much wood, they were ſo hard of digeſtion.

What ſhall I ſay vnto you concerning our fiſh, which was poorer then the worſt poore-*Iohn*, of our withered and rotten ropes of Onions, our purple-fiſh, our dride pilchards, that had hung I know not how long in the ſmoake, and a man had as good almoſt be hang'd as to haue eaten of them, being ſo drye, and ſo ſalt, as if they would haue fretted out our very guts and bowels. We had every one a piece, and had the head alſo in to the bargaine, if it were a faſting-day; but on other dayes, we had but halfe a one, and that was ſlit aſunder head and all, and equally diuided betweene two of vs.

What ſhall I tell you of that other fiſh, which the Abbot would not meddle with, becauſe it was ſo rammiſh and ſtunke ſo vilely? yet they ſet it before vs, and wee muſt be contented with it. As alſo of our fride egges, that wee had now and then, like vnto thoſe in ſome baſe Inne, or poore victualling-houſe, or little better, if not ſometimes worſe; for they would buy a great many of them together, that they might haue them the better cheape, keeping them in a tub of aſhes, or in ſome great heape of ſalt, that they might not grow ſtale and addle; and in this manner would they preſerue them ſome ſixe or ſeauen moneths, whole and ſound.

What ſhall I ſay to our benediction and giuing of thinkes both before and after our meales, and how neceſſary wee vvere tide to a ſolemne grace? In ſo much, that a certaine Student, who tooke his diet, in ſuch another kinde or Ordinary, as I did, comming late to dinner, and being very hot with the haſte that hee had made before they ſhould haue dined, fell to vnbuttoning of his doublet, and to vnbrace himſelfe for cooleneſſe, and when hee was about to fall to his meat, hee might heare them beginne to giue thankes: vvith that hee ſtrucke his hand againſt the boord, and with a loud voyce ſaid vnto them; Silence (my maſters) I know not what I ſhould giue thankes for, let them giue thankes that haue cauſe ſo to doe, for I ſee none. *A tale of a Student.*

At ſupper wee had a ſallat, but a very poore one, and a great deale of chopt greene ſtuffe, (I know not what) amongſt it; for they would not loſe ſo much as the greene leaues of a Radiſh roote, or the blade of an Onion, whereof they would not make vſe, powring a little vnſavory oyle into it, and a little vinegar, whereof the one halfe was water, the Lettice vvere only thinnely ſpred vpon the top, with two or three ſlices of Carrets, vvith a little Marjoram, or Pennyryall mixed vvith it; they vvere wont ſometimes to intermixe with it (but alvvayes all the Summer long) a hodge-podge of boyled mutton, that was nothing but mammockes.

They vvould buy of the reffuſe-bones, which the Cookes had left out, when they made their pies: they did coſt but little, and tooke vp much roome. The ſhow being greater then the price. And vvhen vve had not whereon to gnaw, vve vvanted not yet vvhereof to ſucke; and the hungry ſauour of our porrige, vvas a ſhooing-horne to draw downe the hardneſſe of our bread. Wee had alſo certaine wild Oliues allowed vs, becauſe vve ſhould not eate too many of them, for feare of ſetting our teeth on edge. Our vvine vvas like that vvhich they

they gaue our Sauiour vpon the Croſſe, compound ſtuffe, that taſted worſe then ſowre beere.

What ſhall I tell you of the care that our Tutors wife had, to notifie vnto vs the faſting-dayes that were in every weeke, to the end, that wee might not looke for our Collation; nor call for our breake-faſt; and for the more ſurety, that ſhee might not erre, ſhee would vſually ſay there were two, when there was but one. What ſhall I tell you of the commutations of our ſuppers into dinners, which being put both together would not make vp a reaſonable nunchions. Which when they did giue it vs, vvas weighed out as juſt, and as euen, as you would weigh out Saffron, allotting to euery one his foure ounces, and not a penny-weight ouer; as if this ſame *Caſuiſt*, who did thus ſize vs, did know our neceſſitie, and how much would juſt ſerue our turne; or as if in regard of our long ſtudies, and ſhort dinners, (and thoſe none of the beſt) wee had not reaſon to finde fault, ſeeing wee were vs'd all alike, and were now entred like fellow-labourers into one and the ſelfe ſame Vineyards, where every man muſt haue one and the ſame allowance, not one hauing more then another. Or, if the food that they gaue vs, were well fitted and proportioned for our ſuſtenance; being that was ſo limited, ſo ſcanted, ſo little, and ſo ill dreſt, that your ſchoole-boyes, and poorer ſort of ſchollers could not haue their dyet in a worſe faſhion, who haue their ſtomacks pin'd to their backbone, who haue more minde to a good meale, then a good lecture, and a greater will to eate, then to ſtudie.

Marcus Aurelius *his ſaying.*

This our Tutor that boorded vs, would now and then tell vs, that *Marcus Aurelius* was wont to ſay; That Sots and Fooles onely had poore ſtudies of bookes, and tables plentifully furniſht with meats; ſtinting their mindes more then their bellies; but that a wiſe man (ſhowing himſelfe therein moſt wiſe) doth abhorre full diſhes, and will feede very ſparingly that he may the ſooner and the better retyre himſelfe to his ſtudies: That hogges and horſes, fatneſſe did well become them, but that it was more commendable in men, to be leane and ſlender; for that your groſſe men are commonly groſſe witted; beſides, they haue a filthy vvallowing gate; they are vnfit to fight either for themſelues, or their friends; they are a kinde of vnweldie lumpe, an vnprofitable maſſe of fleſh and bone, being not able to vſe any manly exerciſe; vvhereas wee ſee it is quite otherwiſe in thoſe that are leane, and not laden with fat.

I was willing to graunt him this, to the end that hee might not deny mee a more manifeſt truth then the other; to wit; That a little meate, and that naught, quickly ſhortens the life of man. And if I may not liue to thriue by my ſtudies, it is but loſt labour to drudge at my booke. What Falcon I pray, was euer brought into the field to flie, which was not firſt fed before ſhe came there? What Greyhound, or other dogge, was euer put to courſe, or to hunt, before they had put victuals into their belly? They muſt both be kept reaſonably high, and not come hunger-ſtaru'd into the field; for then will neither the one maintaine her flight, nor the other her courſe. They muſt be kept in good ſtate; and ſo muſt we Students. There is a meane in all things; and that meane is the beſt. Wee will grant to theſe meat-moderators, theſe gut-mathematicians, That it is not fit to feed to fulneſſe, nor to cram the belly as full as it will hold: ſo as they will yeeld againe on the other ſide, that wee are not to faſt, till we grow ſo feeble therewith, that our legs are not able to ſupport our bodies. And we had one ſtudent there amongſt vs, who was well knowne to haue his guts ſhrunke, and his excrements grown mouldie through the penuriouſneſſe of his dyet. Yet notwithſtanding I thought good to make choice, as of the leſſer inconuenience, to enter into penſion: it ſeeming vnto mee, that being (as I was) a man of ſome yeares, if I ſhould take a chamber-fellow vnto mee, I muſt conſort my ſelfe with one that was mine equall, and ſuch another as my

I am; conſidering with my ſelfe, that as our countenances muſt be differing, ſo wee might differ in our conditions; whereby it might ſo come to paſſe, that whereas I had a purpoſe to profit my ſelfe by learning, my ſtudies might end in the harmefull exerciſe of Vices, frequenting them more then the Schooles. Of two evils, I choſe the leſſe; and ſo became a Pupill: Though I knew they would play vpon mee, and laugh and ſcoffe at mee, to ſee ſuch a Gyant as I was, in regard of the reſt, with ſuch a bigge muzzell, and ſuch another great beard, as the good wife of *Peñaranda*, to ſit and converſe with boyes. Yet it was ſome comfort vnto mee, that there were likewiſe ſome boorders amongſt vs, that were as bigge Lubbers (almoſt) as my ſelfe; ſo that (to ſay the truth) wee, and thoſe leſſer frye, vvere mixed one amongſt another, like peaſe and beanes. And this benefit I had by boording my ſelfe, that I was free from all manner of care and trouble, not being put to make mine owne proviſion, nor to take thought either for my dinner or my ſupper, but remayned free and at full libertie to follow my booke, and ſuch other things as I had moſt minde vnto. For hee that will attend his ſtudies, muſt firſt ſtudie to remoue all impediments, that may be a hinderance vnto them; and he that will not doe ſo, may goe ſhooe goſlins, for any great good hee ſhall get thereby. I did ſeeke all that I could to avoyd your Innes-of-Court wenches, thoſe your ancient mayds, or more elderly matrones, that make a liuing of ſweeping chambers, making of beds, emptying of piſ-pots, and other the like ſeruile offices; for they are worſe then fire, burning and conſuming whatſoever is before them.

What vve ſay of theſe, may likewiſe be meant of our Miſtreſſes, our Tutors wiues; vvee may put them all into a packe, and ſhuffle them together; Miſtreſſe and mayd, mayd and miſtreſſe, all is one; there is not a halfe-penny odds betweene them: O, how my fingers ends doe itch at them! How much better were it to boxe them about the eares, and to tugge them by the hayre of the head, then to doe them any the leaſt kindneſſe, or courteſie in the vvorld. I ſpeake of theſe Governeſſes over your young Students, vvho will ſeeme to take all the care vpon them of guiding the houſe, and ordering all things in good faſhion, as if nothing could be done well without them, when as there is not a more raſcall, or roguiſher kinde of people in the world. O how quicke and nimble in filching and ſtealing! how dull and lazie to doe any labour! O how cleane would they make our cheſts; but how foule would they keepe the houſe!

Our Maſter had one Governeſſe amongſt the reſt, who did commonly ſteale from vs a third part of that which ſhee ſhould haue giuen vs: And when ſhee could not come to the fingring of our money, or to pilfering this or that other thing out of our coffers, or our trunkes; ſhe would rob vs of our coales, our ſpices, our peaſe, and whatſoever elſe ſhee could cleanely lay hands on, and theſe commodities ſhe kept apart by themſelues, and when they were growne to ſome pretty quantity, ſhee would ſell that vnto vs, which we had payd for already; faigning to haue bought that, which we well knew ſhee had ſtolne. If ſhee were to waſh our linnen, ſhee would cozen vs of our ſope, and vvhat with the boyſterous blowes of her beetle, ſquaſhing and beating them vpon ſome ſtone, or waſhing-blocke, and renſing them in river water with I know not how many lavers, ſhee made our cloathes reaſonable white, though ſhee tooke away two thirds of the life of the threads, which wee were forced, through ill handling, to turne into tinder, ſooner then (had it beene well vs'd) vve needed to haue done. So that vve were not onely damnified by that which ſhee purloyned from vs, but ſhe marred and quite ſpoyled that which remayned vnto vs. Now if you would faine know, how ſhee ſpent that which ſhe had thus got, hearken vnto me, and I ſhall tell you.

This Gouerneſſe, mayd, ſeruant, huſwife, kitchin-drudge, or vvhat other name ſuch a vile creature can be capable of, when ſhee did not ſell that vvhich ſhee had ſtolne, ſhee kept it for ſome poore Scholler, or Seruitor, that vvas her ſweet-heart, on vvhom vvith all care and diligence ſhee attended, furniſhing him vvith all ſuch things as hee had need of; hee could not lacke that, vvhich ſhe vvould not preſently helpe him to. For him would ſhe ſteale our bread; for him vvould ſhee skimme our pot, reſeruing the very beſt, and at it vvere the very creame and flower of all that vvas therein for him. And if by chance he vvere in the houſe, ſhee vvould be ſure to giue him of the fatteſt of the porridge, vvith ſippets of bread throughly ſoaked in it, and fleſh vvithout bones, and his linnen cleanely and handſomely vvaſht vvith ſope; and in a vvord, ſhee maintayned him vvell out of our meanes; for it was our, and not her purſe, that payd for it.

Tricks of a knaviſh wagge.

In concluſion, ſuch kinde of vvomen, as theſe, are prejudiciall, vntamable, notable lurchers, arrant theeues; farre worſe then that ſouldiers boy, vvho playd the wagge-paſty vvith his Maſters paſty; and of eight *Maranedis* made twelue. For hee opened the lid of the paſtie, that it was not to be perceiued, and ſupt vp all the ſirrop and ſweetneſſe that was in it. Afterwards, his Maſter ſending him for wine, he kept the eight *Maranedis* that were giuen him, to himſelfe, and ſold the Iarre for foure, preſently comming crying home vnto him, and telling him, that the Iarre brake by the vvay, and all the vvine vvas ſpilt.

There never came a quarter of mutton into the houſe, but that by little and little, vvee loſt a fifth part of it, and vvith it the kidney, ſaying; That for the deuotion which ſhee bare to the bleſſed Saint *Zoilo*, ſhee would not boyle that part; ſo that the kidneyes never came to our ſhare; they fell to her ſweethearts lot. But he vvas not ſo deuoted vnto her, as to offer her all that he had. There vvas not any thing that we had, vvhereof hee had not a part, nay ſometimes all: ſaying, I put it here, it ſtood there but now, the Cat hath eaten it, ſome body or other hath taken it away, and a thouſand ſuch excuſes to ſerue her turne, ſtealing and filching from vs at her pleaſure. But will you peradventure ſeeke to reſtraine theſe theeues, to limit them, to keep them within their bounds, or to hinder them in any thing contrary to their liking? It is impoſſible to doe it. Speake but a vvord vnto them, that doth not pleaſe them, there is not a houſe in all that ſtreet, not a ſhop, a taverne, nor an oven, vvhere ſhee will not make a large relation of your life, reckoning vp all the miracles done by you, painting you out to be a wretched and vnfortunate man, baſe-minded, a crib, a hunger-ſtaru'd whore-ſonne, a miſerable wretch, of an ill condition, a grumble-ſeede, one that is ſtill murmuring, that a Hen cannot lay an egge, but you muſt be prying into her neſt, that you muſt haue an eye to the skimming of the pot, that you will tye your bacon to a ſtring, and put it into the kettle amongſt other meat, a fourth part whereof ſhall ſerue you a whole weeke, taking it out one day, and putting it in another, making thy meale of one poore morſell, to make it hold out the longer. Will you turne her out of doores, and take another, you ſhall not finde any that vvill come at you; and ſo you muſt be forced to ſerue your ſelfe: for ſhee that is gone from you, will tell her that is to come vnto you, vvhat a manner of man you are, what an ill life ſhee led with you, and for what cauſe ſhee quit her ſelfe of your ſervice. In a word, hee that will be ſerued by them, muſt vvinke at all their faults, muſt make no replyes, and beſides, muſt let them doe what they liſt, let them haue their owne will, and yet that will ſcarce content them.

I remember, that before I was marryed, I receiued a maid-ſeruant into my houſe; and for that ſhee was a beaſtly filthy ſlut, an idle drone, and altogether vnfit for ſervice, I turn'd her away after ſhee had beene

ſome

ſome three dayes with me: Then I tooke another, who ſeemed to be in good health when ſhee came vnto me, but falling ſicke of her old diſeaſe, ſhee onely continued with mee two dayes, and went backe againe to the Hoſpitall, from whence ſhee came. Preſently after I had a third, a neat ſervant, but a great thiefe; for, willing her to roſte me a Conie, ſhee cuts it in peeces, and ſtues it, and brought onely to the table the head, the legges, and the wings, diſpoſing of the reſt as ſhee thought good; for which roguery of hers, ſhee ſtayd with mee onely thatday, and the next morning I put her away.

When my neighbours ſaw that I had three ſervants in ſix dayes, and that every one of them went away mumbling their mattens, and murmuring at mee, a bad report went of mee, they layd a hundred faults to my charge, and did diſcredit my ſeruice in that ſhamefull and vile manner, that for ſome twenty dayes after, I was faine to take my dyet in a common victualing houſe. For no woman would be drawne to my houſe, by reaſon of the evill ſpeech that was giuen of mee, till ſuch time, as a friend of mine, brought me one, that was worſe then all the reſt: for ſhee would be in loue vvith every body, and denie none that would aske her the queſtion: Not any Stallion that came amiſſe to her: Shee vvas a wheele, that was eaſily to be turned with every hand. I would preſently haue put her away, but I durſt not, for feare of being ill ſpoken of by my neighbours. And I tell you the truth: For this cauſe I held it the leſſer inconvenience of the two, to leaue my houſe, and to hyre me another in ſome other ſtreet that was farther off, keeping her till then with mee, before I would diſmiſſe her. And ſo I did. If you were at home, ſhee would be abroad; if you were abroad, ſhee vvould be at home. If ſhee haue nothing to doe, ſhee will call to you for ſiaxe; and if you giue it her, ſhee will ſay you are miſerable, and too great a husband. And neither of theſe, are without their myſterie. But this I leaue to your conjecture.

And how can you imagine them to be otherwiſe then ill diſpoſed in their perſons, vvhen as there is not any Governeſſe, eſpecially amongſt theſe your Schollers, vvhich is not branded vvith the like baſeneſſe? Theſe kinde of creatures, vvould not converſe with all, nor yet filch from all, they vvould haue little or nothing to doe with your young idle fellowes, that lye loytring in the market-place, nor with your Lackayes, nor ſteale frō ſome, though they found it lying before them vpon the ground.

I did not make any reckoning of it, nor did it trouble me ſo much, to ſee that they rob'd me of my goods, or that they were never without one ſweetheart or other, that ſtill haunted their company, though I was not vvilling to giue vvay to any ſuch things in my houſe; as that they went about to rob me of my judgement and my vnderſtanding, and to depriue me of my ſenſes; for with lyes and teares they would ſeeke to grace and countenance their villanies; ſo that though the truth thereof appeared vnto me as cleare as noone day, and that with theſe eyes I plainely perceiued their rogueries, their knaueries, and all their wicked ſhifts and devices, yet they would force mee whether I would or no, and contrary to mine owne knowledge, to hold their converſation, and their carriage to be good and honeſt. A man muſt ſuffer much at their hands, even at all times, and in all ages. If they be old, they are ſtarke naught; if young, farre worſe. And if one be ſo troubleſome, what will two be? Happie, is that man, that can excuſe himſelfe of them, and ſerue himſelfe with leſſe; for no man is worſe ſerued, then he that is moſt ſerued.

Notwithſtanding, I proteſt, that I doe not ſpeake this of our Miſtreſſe Governeſſe, or with purpoſe that ſhe ſhould heare me, for I know her to be a good woman, and of that kinde nature, that ſhee will forget and forgiue all, if you will but begin to her in a cup of wine.

I vvas now ſetled in my Pupillage, vvhich I patiently ſuffered, that I might not ſuffer: What was amiſſe I ſought to amend, by ſome proviſion of dainties, which I kept ſtill in ſtore in my chamber, vvith which I paſt the better, entertayning my ſtomacke with them, when I ſaw it was needfull. Wee thought it good diſcretion ſo to doe, and our Maſter was well content with it, that we ſhould roſte a good lunch of porke, or boyle vs a friendly peece of bacon, and onely out of the hope that he had, that we would invite him vnto it. And I doubt not but all Tutors, by a generall conſent, would yeeld to accept of ſuch conditions as theſe, foure dayes in a weeke.

Liuing in this manner, as I haue told you, after I had ſtudied the Arts, and the Metaphyſicks, and had duely obſerued thoſe publike Lectures that were required of mee, they gaue mee the ſecond place; when I vvas preſented to take my Degree, the whole Vniverſitie crying out, that they had therein done mee great wrong, in taking the firſt place from mee, that they might conferre it on a Gentle-mans ſonne of good ranke and qualitie, but my *Iunior*.

Hauing taken my Degree, I began now to fall to my Divinitie, and to frequent thoſe Lectures. I entred into it with a great deale of delight; for I tooke much pleaſure in following my booke, the bayt that drew me on, being that moſt ſweet entertaynment of the Schooles, becauſe it was a kinde of life, that was ſomewhat neere a-kinne to that, which I had alwayes led. Where doth a man enjoy more liberty, then in the Vniverſitie? And who liues ſo merry and ſo quiet a life, as your ſchollers? What entertainment of all ſorts whatſoever, haue not your Students amongſt them? There is not the thing you can name, that they vvant. In a word, they haue what they will; and doe what they vvill. If they will be civill and retyred, they may fit themſelues with company that ſhall jumpe juſt vvith them: If looſe and diſſolute, they ſhall meet with as mad wagges as themſelues. There every birde ſhall finde ſome of his owne feather, ſuch as ſhall equally ſute with them in their diſpoſition. The ſtudious ſhall haue thoſe that will conferre with them about their ſtudies, that will keepe their ſet houres, write out Lectures, compare their Notes, and punctually performe all thoſe laudable exerciſes, that appertaine to a good Student: And if they are diſpoſed to walke abroad, they are like vnto your *Biskayners*, thoſe women that liue in the mountaynous Countries; who, whereſoever they goe, carry their diſtaffe along with them, that a man may truly ſay of them, That they plow, ſpinning. Whereſoever you light vpon a Student, though he be out of his Colledge, and walkt abroad, with a purpoſe onely to recreate himſelfe by the Rivers ſide, in thoſe ſweet and pleaſant fields, yet even then doth his wit and his memory alſo goe a-walking, calling to minde what he hath read, arguing and reaſoning vpon this, or that other point, and conferring with himſelfe on thoſe things, vvhich he hath ſtudied, being never leſſe alone, then vvhen he is thus alone. For men that employ their time well, though alone, cannot be truly ſaid to be alone. If once in a yeare, hee will take his liberty, and ride into the Countrey, ſlacking for a while the ſtring of his bowe, fetching ſome vagaries abroad to make merry with his friends; what ſports, or vvhat paſtimes can be equall'd with theirs? How by their Art will they make a Paſtie to runne of it ſelfe vp and downe the table? A Melon, to roll from one end of the boord to the other? Your biskets, and other diſhes of ſweet-meats to dance as they vvill haue them? Who can ſo featly doe theſe tricks as they? If you will giue your Miſtreſſe muſicke at her vvindow, if you will beſtow a poſie on her, ſome fine embleme, or the like device, entertaine her with pretty jeſts, and witty conceits, will you haue them with a *ſtentorious* voyce to deliver an Oration *ex tempore*, to maintaine Paradoxes for pleaſure and entertainment, to preſſe an Argument to the proofe, to invent a thouſand merry toyes, to paſſe away the time, to make

The commendation of a Scholler's life.

make ſomething of nothing, onely to ſhow their wit, without any reaſon or ground that they haue to maintaine it: Who, vvhere, or how, can theſe things be done ſo handſomely in all the world, as in the Schooles of *Alcala*? Where haue you brauer, or more flouriſhing wits in the Arts, in Phyſicke, and diuinitie? Where haue you Colledges better ſeene and practiſed in the three principall Languages? Whence doe there daily proceed ſo many and ſo good Students, as from thence? Where is the like concourſe to be found of ſo many well skill'd in the Arts, who converſing together like friends and brothers, yet as if they were enemies, are alwayes one againſt another in the exerciſe of learning? Where ſo many, ſo good, and ſuch faithfull friends to be had? Where ſuch good faſhion, ſuch good fellowſhip, ſuch good diſcipline, ſuch good skill in Muſicke, in Armes, in dancing, running, leaping, and throwing the barre, making their wits able, and their bodies agile? Where doe concurre ſo many good things together, beſides the pureneſſe of the ayre, the clearneſſe of the skie, the temperateneſſe of the heaven aboue, and the fertileneſſe of the ſoyle beneath, and aboue all, ſuch a Cathedrall Church, which may juſty be called the *Phœnix* of the world, for the rare and ſingular workemanſhip in that moſt ſtately and vnmatchable fabricke? O my deare Mother *Alcala*, what ſhall I ſay of thee, that may ſufficiently expreſſe thy worth? Or how, without wronging thee, ſhall I be ſilent in thy praiſe? I ſhall doe thee wrong, and yet I cannot doe it. Though it were better for me to hold my peace, for therein I ſhould leſſe offend. It was a rare thing, if not a wonder, to ſee any Scholler ſo debaux'd, or ſo wholly giuen over to Vice (were it of gaming, or otherwiſe) that vvould omit the principall end for which he vvas ſent thither, or neglect thoſe good ſtudies, vvherevnto hee vvas to apply himſelfe; for with vs, no greater infamie could befall him, then to be accounted an idle loyterer, and miſ-ſpender of his time. O the ſweetneſſe of a Schollers life! You cannot imagine the many pleaſures and delights that they take: O how merry doe they make themſelues vpon S^t *Nicholas* day, vvhen they meet to make choyce of ſome petty little Biſhops amongſt them! What ſport doe they make vvith your freſh-men? how doe they play the wagges with them, putting them vpon a vvheele, and twirling them downe into a hollow pit, bring them vp againe laden with ſnow? How put a little round rolling pinne betweene the lid of their cheſts, and the locke, taking forth what they can finger, challenging it as a fee for their entrance? not a booke of theirs that can eſcape their hands, no nor their very cloakes that are vpon their ſhoulders. What a pleaſure is it to ſee them labour and canvaſe for voyces, to make vp a major part at the election of their Generall? How cloſe doe thoſe that are Country-men cling and ſticke together, how doe they ſtickle to make their owne man, every one ſtriuing to preferre him that is of their owne Shire or Province? How ſtiffely and how faithfully will they labour in the buſineſſe? What a quarter and a racket doe they keepe, poſting away meſſengers to this friend, and that friend; impawning all that they can rappe or wring, till the next returne of the Carryer; ſome of their bookes lye in lavander at the Cookes; ſome at this Inne, and ſome at that: *Scotus* his workes are in pawne at the *Bunnoleros*, or thoſe that ſell Frittars: *Ariſtotles*, lye ingaged in the Taverne; *Bartolus*, at the Bakers; *Baldus*, and all his fellow *Civilians*, ſome in one place, ſome in another: So one thing after another, all goes away; not ſparing ſo much as the lacke of male, that lyes betweene our mattreſſes; the ſword, that is vnder our bed; the pot-lid, that hangs in the kitchin; the covers of the powdring-tubs, of the pans, and what not? In what Comfit-makers ſhop, had not we a pawne and a ſcore, vvhen our credit began to faile?

In this manner, and with theſe entertainments, did I merrily paſſe my time, till I vvas ready to profeſſe Divinity. And when I was vpon my laſt yeare, and

How Guzman *was withdrawne from his ſtudies.*

ready to proceed Bachelor therein, my ſinnes carried me one euening towards *Santa Maria del val*; there are ſome kinde of Pilgrimages, and other the like places for deuotion, that a man were better breake his legge, and abide at home, then to gad thither. For we often goe thither, not with any intention to giue an almes to the poore, or to powre forth our prayers vnto God, and to praiſe and thanke him for his benefits; but all cleane contrary. There we commit a thouſand offences againſt our Lord God, that it were better for vs not onely to breake our legge, but our necke too, and to die in the ſtate of grace. I know, and ſo doeſt thou too, why I ſpeake it. This perambulation or ſtation of mine, was the chiefe cauſe, and principall occaſion of my vtter vndoing. Hence roſe that terrible ſtorme of my tempeſtuous life, the deſtruction of my wealth, and the finall overthrow of my credit.

I went out of my lodging, with a purpoſe onely to viſit this holy Houſe: I did ſo: And at my entring into the Church, I eſpy'd a company of women, and amongſt them ſome very beautifull and handſome; according to my wonted cuſtome, I made towards the Font, where the holy-water was: I dipt in my right hand, and that little I tooke out on the tops of my fingers, I ſprinkled on my forehead: But hauing my eyes and my feet tending towards that faire herd which you heard me ſpeake of. Not ſo much as once offering to looke towards the Altar, nor once dreaming or thinking on the Sacrament, I kneeled with one knee on the ground, putting forth my other legge in that manner of poſture, as your Fowlers vſe to doe, when they lye cloſe to make a ſhoot. And in ſtead of croſſing and bleſſing my ſelfe, I made a hundred loue-ſignes; and that I might the better driue theſe Conies into the net, I went directly towards them; but before I could come at them, the game was riſen; and going away from thence, they tooke downe through a groue of Alder trees, towards the River ſide; and being come to a pretty little greene meadow, they made the graſſe their cuſhions, and ſo ſate them downe. I followed them afarre off, to ſee where they did quat, and perceiuing that they had there taken vp their reſt, and meant to ſit by it, for they had now taken out of their ſleeues ſuch junkets as they had brought along with them. And as they were thus preparing for their bever, faire and ſoftly, & in a ſober and civill faſhion, I drew neerer & neerer vnto them: This good company conſiſted of a widow-woman, a good honeſt Hoſteſſe, and two of her daughters, that were more faire and beautifull then *Caſtor* and *Pollux*, beſides ſome other their friends and acquaintance, that were not much inferiour vnto them, as being likewiſe endowed with thoſe gracefull gifts of nature; but ſhee whoſe name was *Grace*, (for ſo was the elder daughter to my Hoſteſſe called) did ſo farre exceed the reſt, that they ſeemed rather her attendants, then her companions; they were Starres, but my *Grace* was the Sunne.

I was a man generally well knowne, I had reſided in *Alcala* ſome ſeaven yeares and better; was accounted one of the beſt Students amongſt them, and held to be rich, which was no ſmall addition to my credit; Attributes, that haue the power to draw the hardeſt hearts to loue. And theſe wenches were the buxomeſt and the wittieſt in all the Towne. Now they were beginning to fall to their *merendar*, or inter-mealary repaſt, when jeſting with them, I began to inſinuate my ſelfe, and to cloſe with them; wherein I was not ſo crafty, but they were as cunning.

But before I proceed any farther, leauing this buſineſſe on theſe tearmes you ſee, I muſt giue you to vnderſtand, that what with the charge I was at, for bookes to furniſh my Study, for the taking of my Degrees, and for apparell, I, and my moneyes, had in a manner made an even reckoning. I had ſome left, but ſo little, that I was not able therewith to take my farther Degrees, and ſo enter into holy Orders. And becauſe, before I was to proceed Bachelour of Diuinitie, I muſt neceſſarily take Orders, and this was impoſſible

for

for mee to doe becauſe I wanted an Eccleſiaſticall Benefice, or ſome Chaplainſhip to qualifie mee; I had no other ſhift to helpe my ſelfe vvithall, but to haue recourſe vnto my father-in-law, and to requeſt his helping hand, with whom I did alwaies communicate my neceſſities, whoſe friendſhip had neuer yet failed mee. Hee did incourage mee on in my good courſes, by affording mee at once his beſt both advice and helpe. For little doth hee (that is able) vvho doth not as vvell afford vs his hand, as his head; his helpe, as his counſell.

proverbe. a Quien puede, poco haze, quando a conſeja, ſino remedia.

Hee told mee, that hee would make a Donation vnto mee of the poſſeſſions of my wifes Dowry, ſaying; That he vvould beſtow the ſame vpon mee for the maintaining of a Chaplaine to ſay Maſſe for his ſoule: and that I on the other ſide, ſhould make a Declaration of the truth, obliging my ſelfe by bond to returne the ſame againe, vvhen and as oft, as hee ſhould require it at my hands. Euen in theſe things alſo are theſe Counter-bonds ſtarke naught, being that they take place againſt that which is eſtabliſhed by the Holy Councels, running on ſo inſolently and ſo impudently, devoid of the feare of thoſe grieuous penalties and cenſures, which they incurre by theſe their Symoniacall Contracts. O good God, how is it poſſible to cut off the thread whereat this ſo great a miſchiefe hangs, ſince I cannot reforme this abuſe in my ſelfe.

I kindly accepted of his offer, and gaue him many thankes for that his good vvill vvas ſuch vnto me, that hee would hand in hand walke with me to Hell, to keepe me company.

Shall I here ſay any thing vnto you concerning this point? Mee thinkes I heare you ſay, No: And that I ſhould meddle no more with matters of Reformation, vnleſſe they might doe more good, and worke more amendment then (for ought you ſee) they yet doe. I can doe no more then I can doe. But ſay (Friend *Guzman*) I could, put that to thy account; for what is this to mee? Nothing, I aſſure thee. Doeſt thou thinke, that thou art the onely man, that is ſenſible of theſe things? that thou art the firſt that hath found fault vvith theſe abuſes, or that thou ſhalt be the laſt that ſhall complaine of them? Doe thou talke of that, which concernes thee a little more neerely, and makes more for thy preſent purpoſe: For (if you be remembred) you left thoſe pretty vvenches with the meat in their mouthes (feaſting, and making merry) and expecting the words that ſhould come from yours. Bring vs backe againe therefore to thy former diſcourſe, and let theſe things alone, for there will a day come, vvhen my Lady *Symonie* ſhall haue her doome.

Thou ſayeſt well, thy demand is reaſonable, and I cannot deny it thee. And ſince that I am ſo willing to yeeld to thy requeſt, do me likewiſe the favour to pardon this my fault, in falling afreſh vpon this ſubject.

I ſtood vpon theſe termes which you haue already heard me tell you, I had paſt ouer all my Lectures, and in a manner ended all my Exerciſes, a Chaplainſhip ſetled vpon mee, to qualifie me for the taking of Orders, being within three moneths after to take my Degree. This was in *February*, I was to take my Orders the firſt Ember-weeke following, and my Degree about the beginning of *May*.

This pretty Soules Sayings and Doings, name and actions, were all compact of *Grace*: and all the Graces being put together, (ſhould they come vpon compariſon) muſt fall ſhort of this *Grace*. For her wit, ſhee was a Cabinet ſtored with all manner of pleaſant and merry conceits: for her beauty, I know not how to expreſſe it better then by ſilencing it: ſhe ſang delicately, plaid daintily on the Violl, was wonderfull diſcreet, had a nimble apprehenſion, but quicker eyes, wherewith (me thought) ſhee formed a pretty kinde of chearfull laughter vpon him, towards whom ſhe was pleaſed to turne them, ſo ſparkling and cleare were they, and ſo full both of life and loue. Glancing with them to and fro, hers and mine met, it ſeeming on the ſodaine, that the viſiue beames

in

in both, reconcentrating themſelues, in this encounter, by a reciprocall repercuſſion, ſtrucke home vpon our ſoules. I knew it was affection in her, and ſhee vvas fully perſwaded of the like in mee. Shee had rob'd mee of my ſoule; and ſo I told her then, ſpeaking aloud vnto her by my lookes, but not a vvord of any ſuch matter that came from my mouth. All that I then vttered, was onely this; That they would be pleaſed ſo farre forth to grace mee, as to make mee worthy their company, by inviting mee to be their Gueſt. They did ſo, euery one of them did offer mee a part of their junkets, and did in a manner inforce mee to receiue this courteſie from their hands.

When I had giuen them thankes for this vndeſerued kindneſſe they had ſhowne mee, commending much their faire carriage, I beganne (vvith a very good will, though ſeeming to be conſtrained by their command,) to ſpread my cloake vpon the ground, and ſitting downe therevpon, I tooke my ſhare amongſt them, (which was none of the leaſt) for they did all ſtriue, who ſhould make moſt of mee, and bid me moſt welcome. I did gratefully acknowledge this their loue, the wine went round, wee tooke and gaue healths one from another, as they came about to our turne, and made ſo good a beeuer, that I might very well excuſe my ſupper.

When vvee had made an end of eating, a maid-ſervant, that vvaited vpon them, tooke out a Violl, vvhich ſhee had brought along vvith her vnder her mantle; and *Grace* putting it vvith a very good grace vnto my hand, intreated mee to ſhew my skill therevpon, for that they vvere minded to dance: Which they did in that manner, vvith ſo much comelineſſe and arte, and every way ſo excellently well, but *Grace* beyound them all, ſo gracefully, that I was exceedingly taken therewith, and more inflamed now, then before.

When they were now growne weary, and were willing to reſt themſelues a while, deliuering vp the Violl into her hands, from whom I had receiued it, I beſought her to grace that Inſtrument with a Song: vvhich without any kinde of nicety or coyneſſe, when ſhee had tuned it, and accorded the ſame with her voyce, ſhee performed both ſo ſweetely, as vvell for the ayring of her notes, as the vowelling of her words, now towring, then melting them at her pleaſure: that for the time, ſhee ſeemed to haue arreſted *Time*. For before ever wee were aware, ſhee had no ſooner made an end, but *Time* went away; and haſtning to recouer that he had loſt there, it was inſtantly night.

And now was it high time for them to hye them home, homewards they goe; and I in kindeneſſe would needes accompany them all the way, leading my Loue by the hand. I was ſomewhat abaſht at the firſt, not knowing how, or where, to beginne to ſpeake vnto her; till ſhee taking notice of this either my daſtardlineſſe or feare; I cannot ſay, whether careleſly, or of ſet-Purpoſe, ſhee tript with her Chapin, but to ſaue her from falling, I preſently opened my armes, into which I louingly receiued her; and as I was raiſing her vp, my cheekes hapned (as if it had beene done by chance) to leane a little vpon hers: But hauing ſet her now vpon her feete, (taking my ſubject from thence,) I ſodainly flew backe, beſeeching her to excuſe that exceſſe, and that if either my ſelfe, or mine eyes had offended in preſſing ſo neere vpon her, they were for their owne vnmannerlineſſe, moſt willingly ready to receiue ſuch puniſhment as ſhee ſhould be pleaſed to injoyne them. ſhee anſwered mee in that manner, that I was forced to reply. And leading her (as before) by the hand, I did gently ſtraine it with mine, wringing it ſoftly hard, that I might not hurt it. Whereat ſhee ſmiling, ſaid; For all your wringing it ſo hard, you ſhall neuer ſqueeze any juyce from thence.

This

This put a little more mettall into mee, and added farther boldneſſe to my words: So that faigning wee ſtaid behinde, becauſe we were not able to goe any faſter, wee went diſcourſing together of our Leues; I ſpeake onely of mine owne; for ſhee laught at all that I ſaid, making her ſelfe merry therewith, the better (as ſhee would haue it ſo to ſeeme) to intertaine and paſſe away the time.

Her mother was a crafty ſlye ſubtill thing; ſhee ſought after ſonnes-in-law, and her daughters were deſirous of husbands, nor did they miſlike of the man: They gaue me line enough, till they had led me along by the noſe within their owne doores: whither when wee were come, they made me enter into their priuate chamber, which was very well furniſht; they brought mee a chaire, and would needes haue me ſit downe, that I might reſt my ſelfe a while; and taking out of a Cupboord, neere there at hand, a boxe of Conſerues, they brought me with it a jarre of water, which was no more then needed for to quench the fire of that poyſon which had ſo ſcorcht my heart: but all would not doe. It was now time for mee to take my leaue; I did ſo: deſiring them to giue mee leaue, that I might now and then receiue the like fauours againe from them: They told mee, that they ſhould eſteeme it as a great courteſie, that I would be pleaſed to command this their houſe, and to make my ſelfe no ſtranger, & that in ſo doing, they ſhould thereby know that my words did correſpond vvith my workes.

Well, now haue I left them, and am gone. Not ſo. I am neither gone, nor yet haue left them. For my heart ſtaid ſtill there with my deare, that ſhe might the better imprint in it the liuely image of her matchleſſe beauty. I had already bid them good night: But what a night (trow you) was this to mee? How long were the houres? How ſhort the ſleepes? What a confuſion of thoughts? What diſtractions of minde? What a generall warre? What a battaile of cares? What a cruell tempeſt riſen on the ſodaine, euen in the very port and Hauen where I thought my ſelfe ſo ſurely anchored, the skie being ſo cleare, the weather ſo faire, and the ſea ſo ſmooth, as heart could wiſh? This made me ſay to my ſelfe; How in ſo quiet a calme, could ſuch a ſodaine ſtorme come vpon me, without perceiuing its approach, or knowing how in the world to provide any remedy againſt it? I am vtterly loſt, and vndone for euer; ſo vncertaine is my hope of recouery. But now that morning was come, and that I had got me to the Schooles, when I came thither, I knew not whether I were there or no; nor did I vnderſtand any one word that was read vnto me all the while that the Lecture laſted. That done, I returned home, the cloath was laid, dinner brought in, I ſate downe, and offering to eate, my meat would not goe downe, my morſels remained as it were frozen within my mouth, and ſeemed ſo careleſſe in all that I did, that it wrought amazement in all my fellow Students, and admiration in our Tutor, who thought with himſelfe, that this was but an induction to ſome moſt grieuous inſuing ſickneſſe. Nor was he therein deceiued, for this was the diſeaſe that afterwards wrought my death. Hee askt me what I ayled? I knew not what anſwer to make him; only I told him, That my heart did fore-bode ſome great mis-fortune, that was comming towards me; for euer ſince yeſterday, my thinkes I feele it ſunke downe as it were into my body, and ſo ſhrunke together, that I finde my ſelfe in a manner without a ſoule. All is Lead and lumpiſhneſſe with mee, that I know not what to thinke of it.

He told me that I muſt not be a *Mendocino*, nor be ſo ſuperſtitious as to admit ſuch idle toyes to my imagination, nor to let ſuch abuſing alluſions to come within me, but to keepe them at armes-end; for this ill (ſaid he) which you preſage vnto your ſelfe, is nothing elſe but the abundance of ſome ill humour in the body, which will quickly be remoued.

Now, for that I already knew that my malady, *Nullis erat medicabilis herbis*, was not to be cured by any herbes, or other medicinable drugges, I diſſembled

the

the businesse, and that I might not manifest the misfortune that was likely to befall mee, I said unto him, it may be so Sir, and I hope it shall be soe; but in the meane time it paines me much.

I rose from boord, but not from dinner, for I had eaten nothing: And thence got mee to my chamber, where I was so oppressed with sorrow, that suffering my selfe to fall downe vpon my bed, wrapping my mouth and eyes in my pillow, I powred forth teares in abundance, burying my sighes within the stuffing thereof. What with this and the desire that I had to see the Physitian of my soules health, I found my selfe somewhat eased: So putting on my cloake, and putting off my Lecture, I went home to her house. I may not omit onely in two words to tell you, That there is not any exercise, but desires a continuance thereof, wherein to faile, though never so little, more then ordinary, is like to the breaking of a stich in a mans stockin, which if it be not taken vp in time, will rauell out all the rest.

With this Lecture that I lost, I lost the benefit of all my former termes, and with them my selfe. For one after another I left off to continue them, not caring a rush for them. *Loue* had now matriculated me in his Schoole; *Grace* was my *Rector*, her grace my *Tutor*, and her will my exercise. I did now desire to heare no other Lectures, but those shee read to mee, nor any other directions, saue what her eyes taught mee. I beganne in joy, but ended in teares. I beg'd in jest of them a bit of their beuer, but I found in earnest, how (going crosse my throat) I was choaked with this contrary morsell. Besides, I was poysoned therewith, for it had quite taken my vnderstanding from mee, hauing now beene bereft thereof for the space of three moneths and more, it being much pitied, but more condemned in me, that one that had beene heretofore so studious, and so famous a Scholler for his time, as there were few better in the Vniversitie; should now when he is come to the vp-shot, roue thus at randome, losing both himselfe, and that good opinion vvhich the world had of him.

The *Rector*, when he had notice thereof, taking compassion of mee, sought to apply some remedy to cure mee of this my disease; but therein he rather did me hurt then good; for seeing my selfe so hardly set vpon on all sides, but much more oppressed with mine owne proper passion, not hauing any power of resistance, I burst forth into open rebellion, fellowing my vnruly appetite. The bones of reason, which like so many props, should haue seru'd to strengthen my weaker vnderstanding, were all broken, and so strangely split and shiuered in sunder, that there is no hope of ever setting them together againe.

Now our Loues went on amaine; the favours afforded me, great; the hopes, not small; for it was left to my choice, whether I would haue her to vvife, or no. Let vs now (my masters) change places; and let him that is the wisest amongst you take mine: let him be shut vp, as I was, in *Loues* strongest prison; let him haue such just cause as I had, to yeeld my selfe captiue vnto him; let him be crost and thwarted in his designes, all things conspiring together, to hinder the execution of his desires; then let him sit downe and giue mee counsell. For that is the man that I would hearken vnto. I knew no better meanes for my good, I left all other for this; for that I thought this would be my best remedy. Her mother offered mee her house, and with it all that shee had. Shee was a woman that had good credit in her kinde of trading, and had good and quicke returnes, she gained wherewithall to maintaine both the backe and the belly; shee made exceeding much of mee, shee was ready vpon all occasions to serue me, I could not imagine more kindnesse then she was willing to doe me; she kept me neat, sweete and handsome, and made that reckning and respect of mee, as Lord and Master of all. I thought this world would still haue lasted; I sought to avoid the venome of evill tongues, but all in vaine; for they had raised that already of mee, which if it had beene true, perhaps I might not haue miscaried.

miſcaried. Pardon me (Gentlemen) I am now a married man, and there is no more to be ſaid of it. Is not this an ill account which I haue giuen you of ſo many yeares ſtudies, ſo much good learning, and being vpon the point of taking Orders, and to attaine to ſome degree in Schooles, that I might at leaſt haue beene able to haue read another day Lectures in the open Schooles, as publike Profeſſor, and Doctor of the Chayre: which might haue beene eaſie for me to haue done, conſidering the good conceit they had of mee. And being come now to the height of all my labours and pa[illegible]king, and when I was to haue receiued the reward of them, and to take ſome eaſe after all this toyle, the ſtone rolled downe, and I was forced like *Siſiphus*, to beginne the world anew, and to fall afreſh to my worke. Do thou therefore conſider that now, which I then ſo often thought vpon.

O how often doth God put a ſpoake in our wheele! How doth hee croſſe our deſignes, making them to proue vaine and fruitleſſe! For the Altar being now made ready, the wood laid vpon it, and vpon it *Iſaac*, the ſword drawne out, the arme lifted vp on high, and now letting it fall, to ſtrike the ſtroke; even then, and not till then, was it hindred in its execution.

O *Guzman*, why didſt thou ſit vp ſo late anights to thy booke? Why waſt thou ſo diligent at thy ſtudies? Why didſt thou riſe ſo earely in the mornings? Why didſt thou continue ſo long in the Schooles? So many Acts, ſo many Degrees, ſo many pretenſions, as thou haſt now on foot, what is become of them all? what good will they doe thee?

I haue already told you, that the courſes which I tooke in my childhood, came to end in the carrying of a basket; and now theſe of my more manly years, to make their manſion in an Inne, or common Victualling houſe. And God grant my troubles may here haue an end, and that my foot may be once fixed.

Chap. V

Guzman de Alfarache, *leaues off his ſtudies; hee goes to liue at* Madrid; *hee carries his wife with him; from whence they were both baniſhed.*

HAuing leapt from Bachelor of Diuinity, into the degree of a Maſter of prophane Loue; it is now to be ſuppoſed that I am become a *Licentiat*; and hauing already ſo farre proceeded therein, I may with your good licence (as a true profeſſion thereof) be permitted to ſpeake ſo much as I know concerning the ſame. For, out of the good experience that I haue had thereof, I dare boldly boaſt my ſelfe to be one of the beſt Proficients that was euer bred vp in the Schoole of *Loue*. If wee ſhould goe about to define it (ſo many hauing ſaid ſo much of it) it were but to repeat the Leſſon, which had already beene ſaid ouer a thouſand times and more. *Loue* then is, *Totum in toto*, all in all: And ſo contrary in its effects, that the more we ſay thereof, the leſſe wee ſhall be vnderſtood. Yet will wee ſhoote one arrow amongſt the reſt that haue endeauoured to hit this marke, and ſay ſomething of that whereof ſo many haue ſpoken.

A diſcourſe of Loue.

Loue is the priſon of Folly, borne of idleneſſe, bred vp by Selfe-will & Money, and maintained with Filthineſſe, Vncleanneſſe, and Diſhoneſty: It is the exceſſe of a bruitiſh and beaſtly deſire; moſt ſubtill in piercing, making its way through the eyes to the heart: It is that poyſoned ſhaft, delinered from the hand of the Archet, which neuer ſtayes till it come to its Center. It is a gueſt, whom with a great deale of earneſtneſſe, we our ſelues inuite, but being once

once receiued into our house, is not so easily put out. It is a child that longs for euery thing it sees, fantasticall, and full of Apish trickes; it is an old doting foole, feeble and decrepit. It is a sonne that will not helpe his owne father; and a father which will mis-vse his owne sonne. It is a God that hath no mercie, a secret enemy, a feigned friend, a blind but sure shooter, weake to vndegoe any paines, and yet as strong as Death. He obserues no law, nor is he governed by reason; he is impatient, suspitious, jealous, revengefull, and a sweete tyrant. They paint him blind, because he keepes neither meane nor measure, distinction or election, order or counsell, constancy or modesty, but evermore erres. They giue him wings, to show his lightnesse, in apprehending that, which is beloued by vs, by which hee bringeth vs to an vnfortunate end. So that only he that goes blindly to worke, speeds best; and he that lightly wooes, likely winnes the wench. And though these, and such as these, be the effects of *Love*, yet for to bring them to passe, ere euer wee can execute them, he will, that we shall want patience in our hopes, feare in the hazarding of our persons, wit in our words, modesty in our demands, judgement in making our choice, a bridle to restraine our inconsiderate actions, and consideration to free vs from dangers.

I fell in loue at the first sight, I was taken with a looke, the darts that flew from forth those their eyes, comming so thicke, and with that force vpon mee, that I presently yeelded therevpon, and became her Captiue. Nor was transcursion of time, needfull in this case, as some would necessarily inferre, which affirmation of theirs, I hold to be an errour. For, euer since the fall of our first parents, with that Leauen of theirs, was the whole lumpe and masse of mankind made sowre and corrupted with these their hereditary vices; the frame of this humane horologe, was so broken, and put out of order, that there was not one vvhole wheele left, to answer one another, nor any spring remaining, whereby to giue it motion: But was vtterly so spoyled, so rent and torne in pieces, and so wholly out of all frame and order, as if it had beene a cleane contrary thing, so differing was it now from that first setled estate, wherein God had created it; the alteration of this its truer course, arising from mans disorderly disobedience. From hence, grew that blindnesse in his vnderstanding, that forgetfullnesse in his memory, that defect in his will, that disorder in his appetite, that deprauednesse in his Actions, that deceit in his senses, that weaknesse in his strength, and those paines and torments, in his greatest delights, and pleasures. Acruell squadron of sore and fierce enemies; who as soone as God hath infused our soules into our bodies, incompassing vs on every side, violently set vpon vs; and so hotly assaile vs with the sweet enticements of sin, faire promises, and the false appearances of foule and filthy pleasures, that they over-throw all goodnesse in vs, and so taint and corrupt our soules, that they put them quite out of that good course, for which they were created. So that it may be said of the soule, that it is composed of two contrary parts, the one rationall and diuine; and the other, of naturall corruption. And forasmuch as the flesh on the one side whereto it inclines, is weake, fraile, and so full of imperfection, (sinne hauing so wholly infected it cleane throughout) hence is it come to passe, that imperfection and disorder, is as it were naturall vnto vs. And such and so great is this extreame, that man cannot account any conquest greater then the subduing of his passions. Great is his courage, whosoeuer hee be, that can resist them, and bring them vnder, in regard of that mortall warre, and infernall enmity, vvhich is, and still will be, betweene our *Reason* and our *Appetite*. For our *Appetite* perswadeth vs vnto that, which is most agreable to our nature, to that which doth best like and please vs, and to things of that quality, which we take pleasure to treat of, and haue a desire to obtaine them. Whereas on the contrary, *Reason* is like vnto a Schoole-master, who, that shee may the better correct vs, goes alwaies with a rod of reprehension in her hand, condem-

Fortior est qui se, quam qui fortissima vincit mœnia.

condemning the ill which we commit. But we, like little children, play the Truants, and flye from this Schoole, for feare of correction when wee doe amisse, and runne a mouching either to our Aunts house, or our grandfathers, where we are made much of, and suffered to play the wantons.

Reason many times made subject to our sensuall Appetite.

Thus often (if not alwayes) *Reason* remaineth (which ought not so to be) in vassallage and slavery to our Appetite: Which when it hath once gotten so great a power and dominion over vs, that of filthy Loue, being so vehement, so violent, so powerfull, so proper to this our beeing, so solely, and wholly ours, so sutable to our disposition, so glewed and wedged to our nature, that to breathe, or liue, is not more proper vnto vs; it must of necessitie follow, that it is the hardest passion to represse, the terriblest enemy that wee haue to deale withall, and who with most strength and greatest force comes vnto vs, assaults vs, and subdues vs.

And albeit, it be true, that *Reason* holding (as shee doth) her ancient place of preheminence, is wont sometimes to hinder, by her great wisedome and valour, the suddaine working of a looke (although it haue the power of potent causes, to assist and further the same) that it may not easily, and as it were in a trice, rob vs of our will, before we are aware, putting a man in an instant besides himselfe: yet (as already hath beene said) for as much as the *Appetite* and the *Will*, are such sure marke-men, so free, so Lord-like, being never yet taught to obey, nor acknowledge any Superiour, it is an easie thing for them, having *Loue* on their side, to worke whatsoever effects, and in such forme and manner, as shall seeme best to stand vvith their owne liking.

And because likewise there is not any thing, which doth not naturally *appetere bonum*, desire that which is good; and that every action which wee vndergoe, is in regard of that good, which represents it selfe vnto vs, or that happinesse wee finde to be in it, vvee evermore desire to obtaine the same, and joyne it vnto vs, side (as they say) to side: nay, wee vvould (if it were possible out of this our earnest desire, convert it, and incorporate it into our owne substance.

Men may suddainly fall in loue.

From hence then, this Conclusion may be gathered; That for a man to fall in loue, there is no such force or necessitie in it, that there should some distance of time interpose it selfe, that some discourse ensue therevpon, or that there be any election or deliberation had in the matter; but that vpon the very first view, that onely, sole, single, and primary sight, there may jointly concurre in both, a correspondencie, or consonancie, or (as wee here in *Spaine* commonly vse to call it) *Vna confrontacion de sangre*, a confronting, or conformitie of the blood, wherein the starres by a particular influence, are vvont to worke, and do often moue vs therevnto.

For, being that these beames doe dart themselues by the eye from the heart, they take infection from that vvhich they finde before them, especially if those they incounter withall, be like vnto their owne, and returning presently backe againe to the very selfe-same place, from whence they vvere sent forth, as they draw these in with them to the heart, so do they portrait and ingraue therein that fayre object, which they saw and desired. And because it seemeth to the *Appetite*, to be a noble pledge, and well vvorthy the buying at any rate or price whatsoever, esteeming it as a thing of infinite value; it presently enters into treatie, how he may come to injoy the same, freely offring for it, and with a very good will, the greatest treasure and riches, that he hath, which is his Liberty, his heart being made prisoner by that Lord, whom himselfe admitted into his bosome.

And in that very instant, that this *bonum*, or this thing, be it what it vvill be, comes to be beloued, and entertained by vs, it is likewise to be considered, that man doth forthwith apply his vnderstanding to esteeme it as its

ſummum bonum, or chiefeſt happineſſe: and ſo deſiring to haue it converted into himſelfe, is himſelfe converted into that which he ſo much deſireth.

Whence it commeth to paſſe, that thoſe very ſelfe-ſame effects, which may be wrought by length of time, getting ground vpon vs by continuation, conſideration, and converſation: ſo alſo they may be occaſioned in that inſtant, that this contentment, or pleaſure, that wee take in that good, which vvee in our imagination, figure and faſhion to our ſelues, is cauſed in vs. For, in regard that wee know not, or (to ſpeake in a truer kinde of language) will not hinder the couſe thereof, nor make any reſiſtance againſt it; as alſo in reſpect of the curruption of our nature, debilitie of our reaſon, captivitie of our liberty, and the weakneſſe of our forces, dazled, if not blinded, with this light, wee want wings to flye from it; and like men that are hood-winkt, runne headlong on to our owne ruine: it ſeeming decent and fitting for vs; to yeeld our ſelues preſently therevnto, as to a thing that is naturall vnto vs.

And this is ſo proper vnto man, as light is to the Sunne, Cold to Snow, heat to Fire; as it is to heavy things to deſcend, and to thoſe that are ayrie to aſcend; without giuing way to the vnderſtanding, or any power to free-will, who injoying their priviledges, might exerciſe their office; which are now in ſubjection to the Will, which remaines now no more free, ſo that inſtead of making reſiſtance, wee furniſh the enemy with weapons againſt our ſelues. Iuſt ſo doth it ſucceed with *Reaſon* and *Vnderſtanding*, in regard of the *Will*. For whereas in the firſt age, whileſt wee ſtood in the ſtate of innocencie, they were abſolute Lords, and like Kings, had all things vnder their ſubjection, and did conſerue and keepe in peace all that faire and goodly fabricke. After mans firſt ſinne, they remained ſlaues, and were made obedient to the *Will*, and forced to become the miniſters and executioners of this her cruell Tyranny. So that now, our paſſions and affections having got the vpper-hand, and wee being furthered and led along with a blinde and depraued vnderſtanding, and hungring and thirſting after our owne luſtfull appetites, wee do inconſiderately debaſe our manly breſts, bowing them to the ground, to lappe of thoſe waters, which may pleaſe the palate of our luſtfull pleaſures.

Of reaſon, vnderſtanding, and the Will.

Wee flye like hooded Falcons, one while towring to the vppermoſt Regions of the ayre; another while taking through the thickeſt woods, ignorant of any future danger, nor fearing the aſſured miſchiefe that muſt light vpon vs. So that few do ſtand vpon this diſtance of time, which is ſet before them, neither do they previſe, and provide for after-claps; or if they would, *Lone* will not ſuffer them ſo to do, ſo impatient is this little-great-God, of delayes. And theſe the like effects did he worke vpon mee.

I was now turn'd marryed man the ſecond time, and ſo well and happily to mine owne liking and content, that I did verily perſwade my ſelfe, *Que nunca por mi ſe començara el toçino del parayſo*, That I ſhould never haue fallen from ſo great a happineſſe, and that I ſhould ſtill haue continued the happieſt man in the world. I did not then conſider with my ſelfe, nor did it once enter into my imagination, that this holy Ordinance, ordained by God in *Paradiſe*, I ſhould ſolely and wholly haue ſought after it for the ſervice and glory of God, the augmentation of his Church, and the contiuation of mine owne *Species* or kinde, by a lawfull kinde of ſucceſſion. But theſe, were the leaſt of my thoughts, I did meerely intend mine owne pleaſure and delight. It was her beauty, and not my duty, that I minded. Much leſſe, did I giue place to the *Vnderſtanding*, that hee might adviſe mee to to that which hee knew was beſt for mee: nor indeede was I willing to hearken to his good counſaile. I did ſhut mine eyes againſt thoſe things, that ſhould haue done mee good. I did put *Reaſon* away from mee: I ill intreated *Truth*, for ſhee told mee, that marrying with a faire woman, many

Proverbe.

cares

cares muſt neceſſarily offer themſelues vnto me, for feare ſhe ſhould become common.

In concluſion, being ill adviſed, I purſued to pleaſe mine owne humour, an ill-deſired-good: I was blinded with thoſe her naturall gifts, and bewitched with her grace and beauty; things as proper to my Spouſe as they were without any artifice or dawbing. Hee erres, who thinkes that any thing can ſeeme well that is an artificiall compoſition, or a borrowed beauty: for this faire tincture that is giuen to the face, is but a falſe and counterfeit playſtring; and when that dawbing is taken off, that foulneſſe that was there before, returnes a-freſh, and becomes more foule.

I liu'd as merrily as the day was long: And he, (a) that is not bleſt with a Mother-in-law, knowes not what a bleſſing he wants. Shee vs'd mee as if I had beene her owne ſonne, ſeeking by all meanes poſſible how ſhee might pleaſe mee, and giue mee content. There was not any Gueſt, that brought a good morſell of meat into the houſe, whereof I had not a part. And if it came not in my wayes, why then her purſe ſhould pay for it, buying the beſt the market would afford.

proverbe.
(a) Los, que no gozan de ſuegro, no gazan de coſa buena.

And as my wife brought me but a ſmall dowry, ſo did ſhee take vnto herſelfe the leſſe liberty of ſpeech, and had the leſſe cauſe to put me to vnneceſſary and ſuperfluous expence, and to demand a thouſand idle toyes of me; which chargeable fooleries, your wiues that bring great portions, too-too often put their husbands vnto. Shee was young, and ſo young, that I eaſily wrought her to mine owne will, and could bowe and bend her which way I liſt my ſelfe. It was a pretty flexible foole, and was willing to be rul'd by mee.

Wiues with great portions looke for large maintenance.

I had got me kinsfolke, who thought themſelues much honoured and graced by my perſon, becauſe they knew I was every way ſuperiour vnto them. For hee that ſhall linke himſelfe in allyance with thoſe that are of greater ranke and qualitie then himſelfe, ſhall never lacke Lords, to ſerue; Iudges, to feare; and Princes, to whom he muſt pay perpetuall tribute. But my mother-in-law was tributary to me, and my Siſter-in-law was my ſlaue, my Spouſe did adore me, and all the houſe did ſerue me. Never at any time, as now, was I ſo free from taking thought for any thing, or from the troubles and cares of the world. For I thought vpon nothing, but eating, drinking, and ſleeping, and to paſſe away the time merrily, without being ſubject to anothers controlment, nor lyable to any payments, not ſo much as the value of one farthing, either for houſe-rent, or to the King. All did dance after my pipe, & did foot it as I would haue them. But this dance was the blinde-mans Meaſure, and my ſelfe that led them, was the blindeſt amongſt them.

Guzman *his happineſſe.*

They ſay of *Circes*, that inticing ſtrumpet, that with her wicked ſorceries, and diuelliſh inchantments, ſhe turned thoſe men into beaſts, with whom ſhee converſed. Some ſhee turned into Lyons; others, into Wolues, Boares, Beares, Serpents, and other the like brutiſh ſhapes: but withall, left them their vnderſtanding quicke and ſound; for in that particular ſhee did not touch them. But this other whore (which is our blinde Will) takes a cleane contrary courſe; for, leaving vs the formes of men, ſhee beſtowes on vs the vnderſtanding of beaſts. And (as I haue ſaid heretofore) I never ſaw any alteration of fortune, which was not accompanied with ſome diaſters, which were never preſuppoſed, or once dreamt of before. And alwayes at the firſt ſhee makes ſhow of a great deale of loue and kindneſſe, that to our great griefe ſhee may tumble vs downe, from that height of happineſſe, wherein wee now ſuppoſed we ſafely ſtood. For that which grieues vs moſt in theſe our worldly loſſes, is the recordation of the poſſeſſion of them. So that the more (in enjoying them) was our happineſſe, the more ſenſible (in loſing them) is our miſery. Shee turn'd her wheele, againſt mee, my wife, and all our whole houſe.

The mutable effects of fortune.

My father-in-law (whoſe ſoule is now in heaven) though he were an Inne-

Guzmans *father-in-law, what manner of man he was.*

keeper, yet I can assure you he was a good honest man: for they are not all of the knaues, they doe not all picke their ghests pockets, rob their mailes, nor peruse their cloak-bags: and there are many of them that doe not will their Ostlers to cozen the beasts of their provender; nor will themselues pinch their guests in their dyet, and make them pay deare for it. For these are things which appertaine more properly vnto women, for that they are naturally more sparing and solicitous about these things, then men, and more curious in the ordering of their provision. And if there be any such false dealing amongst them, the fault was none of theirs, nor was any such thing to be presumed from my father or mother-in-law; for they were good honest plaine people, bred in the mountaynous Country, as good Gentle-folke, & as well descended as *Cid* himselfe, saue that through their mis-fortune and poverty, they were forced to follow that course of life: which shall plainly appeare vnto you by that which ensueth. For he being so honest a man as he was, such a friend to his friends, and naturally giuen to doe other men good, he trusted one of his acquaintance with a certaine rent of Tithes: some would say, that he spent all this Barley and Wheat in his house, but I doe not beleeue it, being it fell out so ill with him; but did rather lose thereby, preferring his credit before his profit. For as it was afterwards told me, both by my mother-in-law, my wife, and my Sister-in-law, he was a man that lou'd to fare well, and that his table was alwayes well furnisht, his vessels were fill'd with rich Wines, he made much of himselfe, and led as merry a life as cup and kan could make him: for there are a certaine kinde of men, whose God is their belly.

A tale of a poore fellow in Sevill, *that lou'd to fare well.*

I knew a good-fellow in *Sevill*, that was just such another for all the world as hee was, though hee liu'd not in that credit as hee did; who pickt out a poore liuing by copying out of Sermons, every sheet that he wrote, yeelding him halfe a Royall. This mans helpe my selfe had occasion once to vse, for to copie out a certaine Processe for mee at home in mine owne house, and hee hauing staid somewhat long after dinner, before he returned againe to his worke, I demanded of him why he came no sooner: And he told mee that he was faine to goe a great wayes off to fetch his dinner. But looking a little better vpon him, and beholding him to be a man, made of Taylors shreds, compoted of a company of patches, and those all to be tatterd and torne, not having a ragge to his taile, a shoe to his foot, a cloake to his backe, nor a hat to his head, but as poore as poore might be; I imagined with my selfe, that for his owne ease hee might or ought to haue dined in some poore victualing-house, or the next Taverne, that was at hand. Wherevpon, I said vnto him, Are there no Cookes shops, or victualing-houses here-abouts, that you are forced to goe so farre? Hee told me; Sir, I am a poore man; I eate that I get, and I get what I can, that I may liue the better. To that *Bodegon*, or victualing-house whither I goe, they are acquainted with my dyet; and know that I will haue to my dinner a pound of the best mutton that is to be bought in the market, and another of Kid: the sawce therevnto being Rocket and Sugar. And this is my fashion of feeding for the winter: for the summer a little thing contents me, a morsell of veale, or a chicken, or some such light meate.

Guzmans *miserable estate.*

But to goe on with my former discourse, This friend & acquaintance of my father-in-lawes, beginning to sinke in his estate, and dying within a few dayes after, when the day of payment was come, they came vpon my mother-in-law with an Execution, by vertue whereof they ceazed on all that was in the house, and carried away with them whatsoever they found there, & I was afraid that they would haue taken me and my wife along with them, as reckning vs a part of the houshold-goods. But though they did not, yet was it little better, and in a manner almost all one: for they tooke vs by the shoulders, and thrust vs out of doores, that we might not hinder them in the execution of their office, or keepe a coyle and stirre with them about the carrying away of the goods.

Wee

We ſaw our ſelues, like thoſe that are rob'd by pyrates, rifled of all that we had. We made ſhift to with-draw our ſelues, as well as we could, to a neighbours houſe; and becauſe the creditors would make the beſt benefit that they could of the Inne, being willing that they ſhould haue it, that would pay moſt for it: there were not thoſe wanting, that did ſeeke to out-bid one another; for there is no man ſo great an enemy vnto thee, (*b*) as he that is of thine owne trade. In theſe kinde of men, there is no envy wanting; they doe repine at anothers proſperity, and ſeeke to cut each others throat.

(*b*) *Prouerb.* (*b*) Quien es de tu officio eſſe es tu enemigo.

This Inne, had beene heretofore in very good credit; ſo that they went out-vying one another, (every one ſtriuing to haue it) ſtill out-bidding my mother-in-law, who was likewiſe a ſuter vnto them, that ſhe might rent it of them, for that ſhe and her daughters, had beene there bred vp, and had continued therein ſo long, which made her the more deſirous to hold it, and to offer more for it then it was worth. In concluſion, we had poſſeſſion againe of the houſe, in deſpight of all our enemies, but ſo inhaunced in the rent (for the which we may thanke others malice) & other by-payments, that were to goe out of it, that we were ſcarce able to finde our ſelues bread and pilchards. For the Rent, like a Sponge, did ſucke vp all our gaines, and drunke vp ſo much of our commoditie, that we were ready (being thus over-rented) to periſh for want of food.

When I ſaw my ſelfe brought to ſo low an ebbe, I beganne to bethinke my ſelfe, purpoſing to make vſe of my Philoſophy, & apply my ſelfe to the ſtudying of Phyſicke, thinking to thriue by that courſe, and to picke a good living out of it; but it would not fadge with me, nor was it poſſible for me to doe my ſelfe good that way; howbeit I had ſpent ſome time therein, to make tryall what I could doe: Some little profit I made of it, by reaſon of thoſe good grounds which I had from the Metaphyſicks: For it is a vſuall ſaying with vs: That, *Vbi deſinit Philoſophus, ibi incipit Medicus; & vbi Medicus, ibi Theologus*, Where the Philoſopher ends, there the Phyſician beginnes; and where the Phyſician, there the Divine. The maine drift of my deſire was, to ſee if I could make a ſhift to rub out, and by ſome meanes or other to ſuſtaine my ſelfe; but all was loſt labour, howbeit that I might the better bring the world about, I permitted gaming, viſites, converſations, and other impertinencies in my houſe, all which did me more harme then good. I (*c*) ſought to ſhunne *Charibdis*, and fell vpon *Scilla*. And thinking to mend, I mar'd my fortune. So ſeeing mine owne errour, and perceiuing at laſt, that none of all theſe would come to take fire, I beganne to conſider with my ſelfe, that ſome dainty pleaſing bayte, that was ſweet to ſwallow, would doe the deed, and proue like vnto your Comine-ſeeds, which being hung vp in a little linnen bag in ſome Doue-houſe, will only with the ſent thereof, cauſe the Pigeons to flocke vnto it. But herein that happened vnto mee, which commonly befalleth your Comfit-makers; when as the Flies with the very ſauour of his ſweet meates, reſort in ſwarmes to his ſhop, and there glut themſelues with feeding vpon theſe his pleaſing confections.

Guzman *ſtudies phyſicke.*

(*c*) *The Spaniſh phraſe is,* Huy del peregil, y nacia me en la frente.

The property of Comin-ſeed.

At the firſt I diſſembled it a little, & would not ſeeme to take notice of any ſuch thing; for, giue you but never ſo little way to a woman, ſlaken but the line that holds her in, and nothing in the world will laſh out more, or aſſume more liberty to it ſelfe. Lay but the raynes on her necke, and ſeeke not to hold her in, there is no ho with her; then ſhall you ſee what friskals ſhee will fetch, leape, fling, and flie out, that no ground ſhall hold her. She will take hedge, or ditch, or any thing; nothing comes amiſſe, though it be to the breaking of her owne, and her riders necke.

Women apt to take too much liberty.

All things (as it is with old cloathes) grew worſe and worſe with vs, we did eate, but (God he knowes) how little it was, to ſo hard a ſcantling, and to ſuch a poore allowance, were our hungry bellies limited. But there was no

Guzman *driuen to baſe courſes, and vpon what reaſon.*

limitation put to our lawleſſe liberties, they had now broken all bounds of modeſty, they had loſt their former ſure footing, & had runne themſelues out of all order, without any feare or reſpect, either to God or man; ſo that my reputation lay now in the ſuds, our honour gone to ruine, our houſe, all on a flaming fire; and all this were we faine to ſuffer, for want of food. My mother-in-law was content to winke at it, my ſiſter ſhee ſolicited the buſineſſe, my wife was a willing worme, and theſe three playing booty, they made their game the ſurer. My mouth was bung'd vp, I durſt not ſpeake, becauſe it was I that had ſet open the doore to three, and entertained all occaſions; which if I had not done, we might all haue ſtarv'd.

Want, a great enemie to goodneſſe.

I paſt a while with this, (ſtill ſeeming ignorant of what was done) and taking no notice of the meale, that fell into the Mill-cheſt) but the tolle was ſo poore, that wee could not liue by that kinde of grinding in *Alcala*. The Students were able to part but with a little; for their allowances were ſo ſmall, that they could not maintaine themſelues and another; and there was not one amongſt them all, that was capable to be made a Nominatiue to rule a Verbe in order of Conſtruction, and whereunto a man might haue reference and recourſe, when things are neceſſarily required to be joyned together. But to fare ill, to eat little, and that late, and to part with ſo much pleaſure, for ſo little profit, that I ſhould ſee my ſelfe (like a perſon that ſuffereth) put ſtill in the Accuſatiue Caſe, I could by no meanes endure it; nor was I willing to giue entertainment in my houſe to theſe needy Schollers, who are more for the Vocatiue then the Datiue. I had caſt vp my reckoning, and found, that the (*d*) Crow could not be blacker then his wings: The harme is already done: The greateſt Gudgeon is already ſwallowed downe: Things cannot be well worſe, then they are. My honour is already impawned, the leſſer evill is to ſell it outright; the profit here is ſmall, the infamie great; the Students crafty, and full of tricks; and victuals hard to come by: So that now it was not onely fitting to change our bowles, but to doe the ſame ſpeedily. It goes ill with vs one way, and worſe another; and therefore wee muſt apply our ſelues to that, which may make moſt for our profit. And being that ſomething muſt be loſt by the bargaine, let vs not be like the botcher, that dwells at the corner of the ſtreet, who workes all day for nothing, and then throwes away his needle and thread in a rage. We muſt not hurle all away with a curſe, but carry things in that manner, that we may haue ſomething remaining to helpe vs at a pinch, at leaſt as is neceſſary for our *victum*, and *veſtitum*; our food, and apparell. Let vs leaue this valley of teares, before the long vacation come, when all is in a calme, and no winde ſtirring, to blow vs any good. Let vs leaue this vnhallowed people, from whom the greateſt things of value, that can be gotten, is a ſix-penny pye, or two rolls of *manjar blanco*, and when they doe beſtow theſe things, they goe not out of the houſe, till they haue eaten the better halfe thereof themſelues. If their Mothers ſend them a barrell of *Cordova* Oliues, they thinke they doe vs a great kindneſſe, if they giue vs a little plate-full of them, and that they make our eyes water, if not cleane put them out, with two ſmoakie ſauſages of the mountaine. No, no, there is no ſuch matter, it coſts vs more then ſo. I will not ſell mine honour ſo cheape to Schollers, where there is nothing to be got, but halfe-penny loafes, and hat-bands.

proverbe.
(*d*) No puede ſer el corvo mas negro, que las alas.

Wenches haue better trading in Court, then in the Vniverſitie.

I knew well enough what had paſt in Court, and how the world went there: There had I ſeene many men, who had no other trade to liue by, nor any other in-come to maintaine them, but a faire face, and that they would often take in ſtead of a Dowry; for with them it was held to be a myne of infinite treaſure, labouring and ſuing to marry with women of ſuch worth and credit, that were cunning in their Art, and knew what did belong to the

buſineſſe,

buſineſſe; and could tell without teaching, where their ſhooe did wring them. I was alſo acquainted with thoſe their ſubtle and cunning tricks which they made vſe of, that they might not bee obliged to that, which was vnbeſeeming them. For when the chamber was occupied, and that they had a friend with them, whom they were willing to entertaine, they would either take downe the Lettice, or ſet a jarre in the window, or a ſhoe, or ſome one thing or other, whereby their husbands might know that they were to paſſe by the doore, and not to come in for feare of interrupting their ſport. But at noone, the field was left open vnto them, they might then freely enter into their owne houſes, where they ſhould finde the table well furniſht, the meat good, and neatly dreſt, and needed not to take any great care to keepe the chayre warme; for he that ſent this proviſion, would come thither in perſon to paſſe away the time and to make merry a-while with them. And a-nights, when the *Aue-Mary*-bell had gone, and that devotion ended, they would returne home againe they had their ſupper ready provided for them, then would they goe to ſleepe alone by them-ſelues, till that the houre was come, that their wiues were to come to bed to them, it ſometimes ſo falling out, that they would ſtay away till it were broad day, for that they had occaſion to goe forth to viſit ſome of their neighbours.

In a word, theſe good men, and their wiues, did liue in that cunning faſhion, that without ſuffering them-ſelues to be vnderſtood, either by word, or by deed, they both knew very well how to play their parts, and what each of them had to doe. And theſe kinde of kinde husbands, were well reſpected by their wiues, and honoured with many Viſits, in another gates faſhion, then they were, who did walke without this diſguiſe: Nay, their wiues would be earneſt to haue them abroad with them, calling and carrying them along with them to thoſe feaſts and bankets, whereunto they were invited, eating together at one boord, and ſleeping together in one bed.

I knew one, who becauſe a Gallant, that lou'd and maintained his wife, had ſetled his affection vpon another woman, made no more adoe, when he heard of it, but goes preſently in all haſte to looke him out: And when nee had found where he was, he comes vnto him, and asks him, what fault hee could finde in his wife, that he had forſaken her companie: Which queſtion hee had no ſooner put vnto him, but hee ſodainly claps within him, and ſtab'd him twice in the bodie, but (as God would haue it) he did not die of thoſe his wounds.

A baſe part of a Wittall.

Such as theſe goe to a *Bodegon* for their dinner, for their wine to a Taverne, and to the market with a basket. But thoſe that are of a more honourable and noble diſpoſition, it will well agree with them, that they leaue the houſe free for all cõmers, going them-ſelues in the meane while to ſee a Comedie, or to get them abroad to play a bout or two at billiards, or ſome other the like paſtimes, eſpecially when their Commiſſions are out. I would not for any thing doe that which ſome doe; who, when in the preſence of their wiues, others begin to commend theſe and theſe good parts, in ſuch, or ſuch a courted Dame, will neuer leaue till they make their wiues diſcouer theirs there before them, preferring and prayſing them to be farre better then any that they can ſhow. But for a tacite permiſſion, without any kinde of ſubmiſſion, or yeelding thereunto of mine, I did no way diſlike it, but was well contented with it.

I got my bagge and baggage together, made vp that little that I had into a fardle, all which a man might in a manner haue put vp in a Snailes ſhell; for one little olde worme-eaten cheſt contain'd all the houſhold ſtuffe and wealth that I had; which being put into a Cart, my wife and I ſitting thereupon, we marched on to *Madrid*, ſinging all the way as wee went, *e Tres anades madre*. Before we came thither, I began to caſt vp my reckonings with my ſelfe, and when I had well thought vpon the buſineſſe, and made vp my account, I ſaid to my

e Tres anades madre, paſſan por aqui, Mal penan à mi.
It is an ancient and common ſong in Spaine: And when men travaile merrily on the way, and laugh and be loviall, we vſually ſay, That they go ſinging, Tres anades madre, *Three ducks &c.* Couar. pag. 67.

my ſelfe; I carry here along with me a morſell for a King, new fruit new, freſh ware, freſh, never ſeene, nor handled before: And therefore I will ſell deare, and ſet what price on't I liſt my ſelfe; I will make mine owne market: I ſhall not faile to meet with ſome one or other, who that he may ſupply my turne, will employ mee abroad in ſome profitable buſineſſe; and a ſecret moleſtation may well be diſſembled, and fairely borne withall, eſpecially when it ſhadowes it ſelfe vnder the cloake of friendſhip: So that, what with ſparing the expences of my houſe, and what by getting other wayes, I ſhall quickly grow rich; I ſhall once more come to be a Maſter of a Familie, and to haue an honeſt houſe of mine owne, wherein I may be able to lodge ſixe or ſeaven good gueſts, which will yeeld mee ſuch reaſonable profit, that wee ſhall not want where-withall to liue, but bee ſupplyde with all ſuch things as are neceſſarie for vs. I am privie to mine owne good parts, and know how fit I am for any imployment of importance, wherewith they may truſt mee, and how ſurely they may relie vpon me. In buſineſſe abroad, I ſhall be carefull and diligent; and at home in my houſe, patient and quiet. I will vſe all the meanes I can to gaine my ſelfe credit, and to grow into a good opinion with the world: And when the meaſure of my deſires ſhall be full, and come to its height, I will bend my courſes to matters of greater moment, and leaue off my trading; nor ſhall any other by-occaſions neceſſarily with-draw me from theſe my deſignes.

My wife entred into *Madrid* in the beſt cloathes ſhee had, having a gallant hat on her head, ſet forth with a faire plume of feathers of divers colours, but the devill a jot of any thing elſe that wee had, that was worth any thing, excepting onely our Ghitterne, which wee ſtill carryed with vs whereſoever vve vvent.

We vvere no ſooner come to Court, but preſently in an inſtant, before vve could ſet our feet on the ground, the fame of our vvelcome to Towne had ſpread it ſelfe abroad, her beauty had muſtered together a great number of Voluntaries, that offered their ſervice vnto her, and vvere vvilling to hazard their liues and fortunes fighting vnder her colours; vvhere ſhe vvas, there was their *rendezvous*. The people flockt apace, vvhere ſhee had pitcht her ſtandard; but the only man that ſhow'd him-ſelfe moſt forward at that time to accommodate vs being thus newly arrived, was a rich Fripper or Broaker in the high ſtreet, vvho asking vs, vvhence we came, and vvhither we vvould: vvhen I had told him, that vve vvere bound for this place, and had no farther to goe, and that vve had no knowne lodging, nor any acquaintance, vvhither to direct vs; he forth-with made profeſsion how willing he was to further vs, and how deſirous to expreſſe him-ſelfe a friend vnto vs; and therevpon brought vs to a womans houſe, a friend of his, where we were kindly entertain'd, and with a great deale of reſpect, not for the Aſſes ſake, but the Goddeſſe, that was borne by the Aſſe.

A Broaker inſinuates him-ſelfe into Guzmans *and his wifes acquaintance.*

This good honeſt Broaker, when he had ſeene vs in our lodging, told vs, that vve could not chooſe but be vveary vvith our laſts nights ill reſt, and our hard journey: And for that vve had not any, that could on the ſodaine make fitting proviſion of ſuch things, as vvere needfull for vs, that wee ſhould not trouble our heads therewith, nor take any farther care; for we ſhould be ſupplyde by a ſervant of his, whom hee vvould ſend vnto vs. And ſo that day hee ſent vs in good ſtore of meat ready dreſt by one that kept a Cookes ſhop, and had alwayes good victuals in a readineſſe. And after that he had furniſht vs with all things fitting, towards the euening hee him-ſelfe came to viſit vs, and after that a few of complements and ceremonies had paſt too and fro betweene vs, I askt him how munh he had laid out for vs: But hee ſeemed to make light of it, and told mee (as one that was willing not to heare on that eare) that it was a trifle, a thing of nothing; telling mee farther, how much

he

he did desire to serue mee in things of a higher nature then these were, vvhensoever occasion should offer it selfe; and that this was not vvorthy the talking of, and therefore I should speake no more of it, seeming as it were to be ashamed of him-selfe, that I should touch any more vpon that string; yet notvvithstanding I did presse him to receiue the cost hee had beene at; Telling him, That friendship is friendship, and money is money; and that I should not esteeme the lesse of his loue, if he would giue me leaue to discharge it, it being enough that I had put him to so much trouble. So at last (to satisfie my importunitie) he told me, that the whole came to a matter of eight Royalls, vvhich I presently paid him: But because I vvould not haue him goe out of the house, I began to vse my old occupation, and putting on my cloake, I tooke my leaue of him, telling him, that I must needs goe visit a certaine friend touching some businesses, that did much concerne mee, and that therefore hee would hold mee excused, and pardon this my vnmannerly proceeding. having thus made my vvay, I left him in good conversation in mine Hostesses lodging, and got me abroad a walking vntill it vvas night.

When I came home, I found the cloathes laid, supper ready, and all things in that good order, and in that plentifull manner, as if I had left store of money in my wifes hands for to make this provision. I spake not a vvord of it, nor did so much as aske vvhence shee had it, or vvho had sent it in; as vvell because it vvas not fitting for mee so to doe; as also for that mine Hostesse had told mee, that vvee vvere that night to bee her guests; as also this honest man the Broaker. And from that suppers acquaintance, hee and I remained ever after very great and kinde friends. Hee did often come to visit vs, and vvould carry vs abroad to vvalke, and merrily to passe the time, inuiting vs sometimes to goe downe to sup by the riuer side, to dine at such and such *quintas* and gardens of pleasure: In the euening he would carry vs to Comedies, and bestow a boxe vpon vs, and there make vs a good [f] Collation; vvherewith vve past away the time the better.

And albeit I must truly confesse, that this honest man did all that he could, and that nothing was wanting vnto vs, yet notwithstanding, all that hee did, seemed little or nothing vnto me; for I must tell you, there were some, who to haue had a taste of these savory fruits, would haue past the bounds of honestie, and come to a higher price, and given much more money for a standing in such a Faire. For I knew very well, that women that are faire, and of a good presence, are like vnto your meale, vvhich is made of the best wheat; for from the flower, the purest and finest part thereof, that white and delicate bread is taken forth, whereon Kings and Princes, your *Grandes*, and Gentle-women of qualitie doe feed; but that which is not of the choysest flower, but is browner, as it comes from the mill, is bread for the houshold, for Servingmen, travellers, and persons of meane account: and the bran, or reffuse part thereof, serves for dogs-meat, or for the feeding of swine, making lap of it for the one, and washe for the other. But a woman of a beautifull and cheerefull countenance, shee no sooner comes into any place, though she be there vnknowne, but all are ready to grace her, the chiefest and principallest person, offering, the first thing they doe, to rise, and giue her respect, the gallantest and richest amongst them, even to the very Lords, and greatest Peeres of the Kingdome, vayling their bonnets, giving her a faire and civill salutation, desiring to injoy such a dainty peece, whom Nature hath so adapted for noble conversation. But anon after (when these are glutted, and will no more) the common route rushes in, first our neighbours sonnes, then those that come to the Vintage with a tankard of [g] *arrope* in their hands; a burthen of wood vpon their backs, to make a Christmas fire; or a basket of figs, according to the season of the yeare; these pay

f *In* Spaine *they vse as their Comedies to entertaine the women they bring thither with good wines cooled with snow, and sweetmeats.*

g *New sweet wine.*

pay a penſion all the yeare long for their pleaſure, as duly as they doe to their Phyſitian or their Barber. But when theſe will nible no more, but refuſe to bite at the bait, the dogges will beginne to barke at her; not a knaue ſhooe-maker, nor poore old Cobler, that will not ſet vpon her, and raile at her; nor a ſiue-maker, that will not make her dance to the ſound of his bels.

This kind hearted Broaker had already beſtow'd on my wife a gowne of black ſaten, trim'd with veluet, and a ſcarlet mantle, which was daintily ſet forth with a broad parchment lace of gold, which made a glorious ſhow; we had a maruelous faire bed, a neat little table, and a handſome ſute of chaires ſutable thereunto; but how, or which way we came by them, I knew not. We had foure good pieces of leather-hangings, richly gilt. In a word, the furniture of our houſe was now ſo well increaſed: that with the helpe of a little more houſhold-ſtuffe, we might very well ſet vp for our ſelues, and kill our fleſh within our owne doores, and make our market within our owne liberties, which could not chooſe but be much more gainfull vnto vs. On the other ſide our hoſteſſe did fleece vs, it ſeeming vnto her, that ſhe had good reaſon to licke her fingers, and to dip her [h] ſop in our honey, and onely forſooth for her permiſſion and connivencie. But this was not a thing that I ſought after, I did not ſo well like of it, nor did it make for my profit. And I did as little like of my Broaker, for that a better and more beneficiall *Opponent* ſought to ſit in that chayre, which he now occupied. And although I knew well enough, that hee proceeded in his dealing like an honeſt Broaker, yet the cauſe was now otherwiſe with me, it was quite altered, and come about another way. For I would part with that to day for three, for the which to morrow I would not take tenne. Men muſt ſell [i] according to the ſeaſon, and make their market as the time ſerues. Nor is it materiall that ſuch a one be an honeſt man in this or that particular, if I haue more need of another for my purpoſe. For it little importeth, that a Taylor, who is to make me vp a handſome ſute of cloathes ſhould be a good Muſitian; nor that a Phyſitian, who is to treat of my health, ſhould be a famous player at Cheſſe. Money, more and more money, was that which I lookt after, and not honeſty, and greatneſſe of alliance, or good acquaintance.

That which was not of much profit, was to me tedious, and diſtaſtfull. For I could not content my ſelfe with onely neceſſary food and apparell; I muſt liue like a King; I was to be courted with extraordinary kindeneſſes; and that they ſhould buy at its weight in gold, the chaire wherein I ſhould giue them leaue to ſit, the ſweet converſation that they were to injoy, the good lookes that were caſt vpon them, our permitting them to come into our houſe; and aboue all, the liberty which I left vnto them, by going forth my ſelfe, to giue them the free acceſſe. And this our honeſt Broaker could not doe. He was willing to lead vs ſtill along by that plaine ſong, which hee beganne withall, when hee grew firſt acquainted with vs: as if it had beene an impoſition of ſome perpetuall tribute, which was to paſſe for ever, after one and the ſelfe-ſame forme.

I had now found out one, who did farre ſurpaſſe him both in wealth, and in merit, and was much more for my advantage; onely that difference did preſent it ſelfe to mine imagination, which there is between Hauing and Wiſhing; the preſent poſſeſſion of a thing, or the deſiring to poſſeſſe it. As alſo that I knew not how to goe to this amorous Gentleman, to giue him to vnderſtand, that I ſhould be very glad to embrace his friendſhip. And better is one [k] bird in the hand then two in the buſh. I knew full well, and it plainely appeares vnto me, that he did much deſire her, and had a moneths mind to haue a fling at her; but he was a ſtranger, and durſt not adventure on the buſineſſe. And for me to animate him on to this geare, had beene to make him the leſſe to eſteeme of it. And to leaue the other, that was taken already in the net, had beene folly, if not madneſſe. For better is ſtale [l] bread, then none at all. So that

proverbe.
h Auia de meter ſopa, y mojar en la miel.

proverbe.
i El tiempo es el que lo vende.

Proverbe
k Tienes, a qui eres.

Proverbe.
l Mejores, pan duro, que ninguno.

that I durſt neither take nor leaue. Thus did things paſſe for a while, waiting ſtill when that happy day would come.

I did vſually frequent your Ordinaries, and houſes of gaming, one while playing my ſelfe, another while expecting ſomething to be giuen me for good lucks ſake, by thoſe that had a good hand, asking now and then, ſomething of thoſe that haue beene my ancient friends and acquaintance. And what vvith that which they gaue me, & that which my ſelfe had ſcraped together, I took occaſion, when the Broaker was with vs at our houſe, to giue it to my wife to ſpend as ſhe ſaw cauſe, becauſe he ſhould not know the weakeneſſe of my eſtate; or to conceiue, that I willingly gaue way to his Viſites out of meere want, and to maintaine my ſelfe at his coſt; but hee was no ſooner gone from thence, but I preſently demanded the ſame money againe of my wife, to goe to play. And ſhe did not onely returne mee that, but much more. So that alwayes before him, I bare my ſelfe like a Lord of mine owne will, without leaving any gap open vnto him, whereby he might haue entrance to looſe his reſpect towards mee.

This ſtranger on the otherſide, went for his part ſucking-in the ayre, and (as it is the Proverbe) drinking [m] downe the windes; vſing extraordinary diligences to gaine our good will; and every one of vs on all ſides, working vpon all advantages, to effect our ſeverall intents. But I for my part, being very carefull to avoid all diſaſters, eſpecially that might fall out in mine own houſe; and for the better preventing of diſ-order, was much afrayd, and wonderfull loth that two ſhould tread together in one & the ſame path; as one that knew by experience, that one Kingdome would not admit of two [n] Heads; nor two birds [o] make their neſt together in one hole. Nor durſt my wife likewiſe conſent therevnto, being vnwilling to haue more ſacks brought to her mill, then ſhe could well grinde, it going much againſt her ſtomacke to be put in the Grammer rules for a *common of three*. Till at laſt, we perceiving that this would make well for vs, and that by how much the more the broaker did ſlacken his ſtring, ſo much the more the ſtranger did ſtraine to ſhoote home, drawing his bow for that purpoſe to a good round compaſſe; for preſents, jewels, monies, and banquets, like ſo many arrowes, came thicke one vpon another, in hope at laſt to hit the marke. I began now to looke bigge vpon the matter, and to talke in a higher ſtraine, ſaying; That I was not minded to pay a rent any longer for my lodging, being that I was able to keepe houſe of my ſelfe. So the ſiege was raiſed, my old Hoſteſſe and I parted, and began to ſet vp ſhop wholly for my ſelfe.

The ſtranger made me a thouſand duckes and congies, ſaluting me, whereſoever he met me, with a great deale of reſpect; and on the contrary I lookt on the Broaker with a ſcornefull and diſdainefull eye ſhowing as dogged a countenance towards him, as I could poſſibly put on. And by how much the more the one did ſeeke to draw me after him; ſo much the more I ſtroue to ſhake off the other.

Till at laſt, grovving vveary of him, I came and told him that if I had now taken a houſe of mine owne, and had left that vvhich hee vviſht mee vnto, I had onely done it, that I might be ſole Maſter of mine owne houſe, that I might goe and come at my pleaſure, and be either cloathed or naked, as I ſaw cauſe, vnſeene or over-looked by others. And that hee ſhould doe mee a favour to come now and then and ſee mee, vvhen I ſhould be at beſt leiſure to receiue him, and not vvhen I had earneſt occaſion of buſineſſe. For neither I, nor my vvife could alwayes be in diſpoſition to receiue Viſits.

The poore man was ſo out of countenance with this anſwer, and tooke it ſo ill at my hands, that never after would hee offer to put his foote within my doores, except by the mediation of his friend, ſhe that had beene our Hoſteſſe, and

[m] *Proverbe.* Beuer los vientos. *To drinke in the winde, is to deſire a thing with great earneſtneſſe. And becauſe the wanting of it, till wee come to attaine vnto it, cauſeth anguiſh and vexation to the heart, a man muſt of force fetch his breath thicke, inſomuch that he ſeemeth to ſup in the aire, and to drinke downe the winde.* Couarr. verb. viento.

[n] *Proverbe.* No ſufre dos cabeças vn-gouierno.

[o] *Proverbe.* No ſe anidan bien dos paxaros juntos en vn agujero.

Guzman *ſhaken off the Broaker, to intertaine a new Gallant.*

and that alſo very ſeldome, ſome once (as wee ſay) in a thouſand yeares, when he could do it handſomely, and my wife vvas beſt at leaſure, neither my ſelfe, nor any body elſe, being then at home.

Now our ſtranger being open-handed and liberall as hee was, I was forced to carry my ſelfe fairely towards him, for he was well able to go through thicke and thinne, and if hee held on that round pace that he beganne, there was great hope that he would quickly bring vs out of the mire, and that vvee ſhould happely arriue to our intended journey, and ſo it fell out. For my wife, ſhowing him but a good looke, when they two were alone, hee did ſo highly eſteeme of every ſlight favour that ſhee afforded him, that he would requite her kindeneſſes with their waight in gold.

We entred into a great league of friendſhip; he invited me to his houſe, and vvhen I had taken my leaue of him, hee vvould ſend home after me many, and thoſe very good, diſhes of meat, which ſerved very vvell to furniſh our owne table, taking ſecret order with thoſe his ſervants, that carried them thither, that they ſhould not bring them backe againe, but leaue them there, though they vvere all of ſilver.

Proverbe. I vvas not offended at this, but it did ſomewhat trouble me, that hee ſhould doe it ſo openly; for there is no man ſo blockiſh, that doth not perceiue, when ſuch things as theſe are done, it is not *à humo de pajas*, for Moone-ſhine in the water, nor for a mans good lookes.

It is a braue thing, when a rich Gallant ſhall entertaine my wife with great preſents, and vvhatſoever elſe that may giue her content, and that may not know the end vvhy he does it. But I vvas vvell enough contented therewithall, and all other Witals do the like. Hee ſayes not true, vvho ſayes it grieves him; for if it did grieue him; hee vvould never giue vvay vnto it. If I vvere glad thereof, and gaue my conſent that my wife ſhould kindly intertaine him; If I ſuffered her to goe abroad, and was well pleaſed when ſhe return'd, to ſee her come home laden with jewels, or with a new gowne; or with ſome delicate ſweete-meates, brought from the banquet that was made for her; and if my ſhame vvas ſo little, that I could fall heartily vnto them, and eate my part of them, and could diſſemble all this, and much more; they likewiſe doe the like; neither will they, nor can they clap the hornes on my head, and think to goe vvithout them themſelues. For I muſt aſſure them, that I vnderſtand them, and they vnderſtand mee.

But this was the miſchiefe of it, that when they ſaw me vvalke the ſtreets ſo vvell clad, with a jewell in my hat, and a hat-band ſutable vnto it, garniſhed vvith ſtones of good value; they vvould ſay as I paſt by them; and that ſo loud, that I might very vvell heare it; What rich ſtones hath *Guzman* in his hat? O vvhat a glorious ſhow they make; but do you marke how that ſame *Cornix* doth out ſhine all the reſt? And perhaps ſome of theſe which ſaid this of me did envie my good fortune, and others like your Goates did not ſee their owne hornes, though all the vvorld beſides did ſee them.

This ſtranger of ours, did purchaſe our libertie, and hee had ſuch ſtore of vvealth, that now my houſe was for no body elſe, but him. But I had alwayes a care to keepe a *decorum*, entertaining his friendſhip, and maintaining mine owne credit. The goods in my houſe, did like froath, gather dayly more and more increaſe. I had both vvinter and ſummer hangings, peeces of Arras, vvrought in *Bruxells*, others of branched Damaske interwoven vvith tinſell, beds of Damaske, Canopies, & Quilts of the ſame, Turkie carpets to tread vpon, pillow-cuſhions for my wifes *eſtrado*, when ſhe was pleaſed to ſit in State; & many other moveables, that might vvell beſeeme ſome great Lord. The table that I kept; and the houſe that I maintainde, did not (I aſſure you) ſtand mee in leſſe then tvvo thouſand Crovvnes a yeare. And vvhen I vvas diſpoſed to make my good Maſter almoſt ready to runne madde, (vvhich I vvas

ſometimes

ſometimes wont to doe, eſpecially vpon feſtivall dayes) I vvould, as ſoone as vve had din'de, command the Gitterne to bee brought in, and laid vpon the boord, and then looking cheerefully vpon my Wife, I would ſay vnto her; I prethee (good *Grace*) if thou beeſt a good Wench, doe vs the kindneſſe to beſtow a Song vpon vs, it is a Holyday to day, & therefore I prethee do not ſtick with vs: but let vs haue it quickly, and with a good-will. For otherwiſe, it was a wonder to ſee her take her Inſtrument in her hand. And ſtill in my preſence, when-ſoever I caus'd her to ſing, (howbeit ſhe knew, that I knew all, and that nothing vvas hidden from me) ſhe vvould carry her ſelfe very ſoberly and decently, keeping alwayes a ſettled and compoſed countenance, and was as carefull (as if her life had layne vpon it) that I might not perceiue any thing to come from her, either in her lookes, or her geſture, that might giue me any the leaſt cauſe to interpret it as an affront, or ſhould otherwiſe force mee to make demonſtration, that I tooke any diſlike at it. Each of vs did vnderſtand our ſelues; and both one another; though vve would not ſeeme to vnderſtand any thing, or make any ſhow thereof to the vvorld. With this Shooing-Horne ſomtimes we drew on our good Maſter, which coſt him many a faire Crowne.

I liu'd like a young Prince; Silver diſhes did runne vpon vvheeles round about my houſe; one tumbled heere, and another there. My Coffers could not containe thoſe rich imbroyderies, and the reſt of my wardrobe; ſome of ſundry ſorts of Cloth of Gold, and others of Silkes, that were full of variety: my Cabinets were cramm'd full of Iewels, pretious Stones, and other curioſities; I neuer wanted money to game, I did triumph in plenty, and had good Cards in my hand to trumpe about; And for this cauſe, our friends did injoy their liberty; for I perceiving, that it was not fit for mee to enter into mine owne houſe, (which I knew, as oft as I found the doore ſhut) I paſt by it, and went abroad a walking, vntill a more convenient time did offer it ſelfe, and ſeeing, when I returned home, that the doore was open, it was a ſigne vnto me that the coaſt was cleare, and that they had paſt the time away in good converſation: wherevpon I boldly went in, and ſitting downe, we all fell a talking of ſome one thing or other, as occaſion offered.

Thou ſeeſt all this my happineſſe; the faireneſſe of the weather; the freſhneſſe of the winde; thou ſeeſt how favourable Fortune was vnto mee; how ſhe ſmil'd, and laught vpon me; how franke, and liberall ſhe was towards me. But it ſucceeded in the end no leſſe vnhappily with mee, then all things elſe which I vnder-went by evill meanes. Nor doe I thinke, that any man can eſcape ſuch flawes as theſe, whoſoever hee ſhall be, that ſhall ſayle in the ſame Ocean.

The Courtiers court Guzmans *wife.*

Vpon the fame of this ſo rare a piece of beauty, and the large licence that I had given her, ſome Princes, and Gentlemen belonging to the Court, aſſumed the more liberty to themſelues, who had ſmelt out what a hungry and ſavoury ſent this raſher on the coales had with it; they walke their Stations before my houſe, meſſages are ſent to and fro; howbeit I am verily perſwaded, that there was never any friendſhip ſtrooken with them, nor any juſt cauſe given, whereat our yong Maſter might deſeruedly take offence. Yet notwithſtanding, ſeeing himſelfe thus perſecuted, and as it were out-brau'd by others, that were mightier and more powerfull then himſelfe in wealth, linage, and gallantry; he grew ſo exceeding jealous there-vpon, that hee was ready to runne out of his wits, and had almoſt vtterly loſt his judgement. Hee went about at the firſt to ſtraine himſelfe to ſtand in competition againſt them all, exerciſing to this end, extraordinarie liberalitie towards vs; preſenting vs with gifts of great price, amounting to thouſands of Ducats; but when he ſaw, that hee could not conteſt vvith them, nor bee able to reſiſt ſo great force and power as theirs was, vn-conſtrained, without cauſe, or any other juſt exception in the vvorld, ſaue onely what his owne jealouſie did ſuggeſt to his

weake conſideration, hee by little and little fell off, and began to retire himſelfe, frighted thus from vs onely with a vaine ſhadow.

And ſometimes I went conſidering with my ſelfe, what a ſtrange kinde of foole this was, that in his heatfull humour, ſet on fire with filthy Luſt, hee ſhould ſo eagerly follow the chaſe, and hunt with that violence after ſuch diſhoneſties as theſe, to his both ſo great coſt, and vexation of minde. I laught at him, as alſo at the pooreneſſe of his wit and judgement. For if one of the Maids of my houſe had come vnto him, craving ſomething of him that vvas of good worth, hee would very willingly and freely beſtow it vpon them; but if by chance a poore man ſhould come vnto him, and begge but halfe a Royall of him for Gods ſake, hee would not ſticke to deny it him. All of vs received the reward vve deſerved, vve were paid in our owne coyne: The Maſter whom we ſerved, for to inrich vs, had made himſelfe poore; and we, through our ill government, could not continue rich; ſo that like ruinous buildings, wee fell altogether to the ground. Our firſt man had left the field and was fled, and now thoſe other Gallants come on amaine: for the greater thoſe perſons are, who are privy to their greatneſſe, and truly vnderſtand their owne ſtrength and vvorth; ſo much the more free they are in that which they pretend, and thinke that all other men muſt giue way to them.

The condition of great men.

I could haue told them, or demanded of them; Sir, vvhat ſervice doe I owe you? What haue you throwne vpon mee, vvhereby to binde me vnto you? What good did you ever doe me? Why then ſhould you expect, that I ſhould wait vpon you with my workes, words, and thoughts? And which is worſt of all; beſides that they are bad Pay-maſters, they vſe vs harſhly, and beare themſelues ſo proudly, as if we were in debt to them, and had an execution to enter by force vpon my houſe, my wife, and all that I had. So lawleſſe vvas this their liberty, ſo vncivill their proceeding, that vvithin a few dayes after we fell into the hands of the Iuſtice.

A fable of the Lyon.

A graue Miniſter of the State came to know vvhat had paſt amongſt vs; You may haply haue heard, how the Lyon once vpon a time, having admitted all the other beaſts into his Company, and having in a generall hunting kill'd a Hart, when they came to the diſtribution and ſharing of it, he out of his abſolute authoritie, and Princely prerogatiue, adjudg'd it wholly to himſelfe.

A Iudge falls in loue with Guzmans *Wife.*

Iuſt ſo did this Miniſter deale with me. And that hee might haue ſomewhat the better colour to doe as hee did, he began (Lyon-like) with a little roaring, as if hee had meant to quarrell with vs. When I knew the courſe where-vnto hee tended, I preſently had recourſe vnto him, complaining of ſuch and ſuch wrongs that were offered vnto mee, boaſting my ſelfe to bee a Gentleman, and one that vvas anciently deſcended of the *Gothes*. And hee (cunning as he was) who deſired nothing more, then that I ſhould thus come vnto him, gaue me kinde entertainment, and cauſing me to ſit downe ſide by ſide with him, he began to aske of me what Country-man I was? I told him that I was of *Sevill*. O (ſaid hee) of *Sevill*? The beſt Countrey in all the world.

Then began he to treat of that Citie, indearing it very much vnto mee, as if, by his commendation of it, I ſhould haue received a great deale of honour, or profit thereby. Hee demanded of mee what my Parents were, and how they vvere called? And when I had named them vnto him; he told mee, that they had beene his very good friends, and acquaintance, making a long diſcourſe vnto me, how when hee was Iudge there, he had ſentenced a certaine ſute in his favour. And he farther told mee, that he did aſſure himſelfe, that my Mother was ſtill living, to vvhom hee vvas vvell knowne in her yonger dayes. In a word, hee proceeded ſo farre with me in theſe and like kinde of complements, that there was nothing wanting to make it full and complete,

but

but his acknowledging himselfe to be my neere Kinsman. Which I did still looke for, especially when I saw him come to such particulars, and that hee could tell me such and such tokens; which made mee to say with my selfe, *Omnia possunt potentes.* What cannot your great men doe? And now I am falne vpon this Theame, I cannot but call to minde a certaine Iudge, who having most faithfully vs'd his Iudicature, and exercised his Office with a great deale of integritie, his time of residencie being expired, and that hee was to render an account (as the custome is) of his Government, they could not charge him with any thing, saue only for his wenching, and for being a little too much subject to this humane frailtie; for which, being sharpely reprehended, he made answer; That when he was recommended by them to this Office, they had only given him in charge, that hee should deale vprightly, and truly administer Iustice, which hee most faithfully performed, and that no man could taxe him of the contrary. Would yee therefore be pleased to peruse my Letters, and to looke vpon the Contents of my Commission, and if there (amongst other my instructions) you shall finde that I was by vertue of them, injoyned Chastitie, I shall most willingly submit my selfe to your censure, and indure such punishment as yee shall bee pleased to inflict vpon me. So that, because this clause was not expresly specified in his Commission, nor any particular mention made thereof; it seemeth vnto these kinde of men, that they doe not faile in their dutie, nor doe any thing contrary to their Office, though they sweepe (as they say) a whole street before them, and doe otherwise vndoe a Countrie: As did a certaine Iudge, who having deflowred about some thirtie Maidens, and amongst those, the daughter of a poore woman, vvho when shee saw what wrong he had done her, shee vvent vnto him, and besought him, that since he had done, or vndone her daughter, that hee vvould bee pleased to returne her home vnto her, to the end that her dishonour might not be divulged.

Of a Iudge that was given to wantonnesse.

Of a Iudge that was a deflowrer of Virgins.

Wherevpon, hee taking a Royall of (*a*) eight out of his Purse, said vnto her: Good woman, I know nothing concerning your daughter; Lo, here be eight Royals for you, take you these, and get you some Masses to be said to S. *Antonio* of *Padua*, that he may doe you the favour to recover her lost maiden-head. A very good amends. I doe not know to whom this may seeme to bee well done. Doe thou tell mee if thou canst. I am almost at my wits end, to thinke on the small punishment, that is inflicted vpon such great faults.

(*a*) *A peece of foure shillings.*

He commanded me to get me home to my house, proffering (out of his loue vnto me) to doe me many favours, and that hee should count himselfe very happy, if at any time it should lie in his power to doe mee a courtesie. For it was a sufficient motiue vnto him, to binde him vnto me, that I was of *Sevill*, and the sonne of such parents; and that as well in this, as all other occasions, he would assist mee all that he could, and afford mee his best favour.

With this faire answer I got me home. And within a few dayes after, when I and my wife were all alone, and thought our selues secure, not thinking on any thing in the world, much lesse dreaming of his comming thither, behold, one night, when he walked the Round, he came to our doore, and commanding one of his people to knocke thereat, vpon answer given, they ask't for me; intreating a Iarre of water of me for his Worship. I vvell knew vvhere his thirst lay; Wherevpon I earnestly besought him, that hee would doe me the honour to come in, that he might sit, and take his drinke, and not (like beggers) to take it without doores. He desired nothing more, this vvas that which he lookt for. Hee comes in, and when hee was sate, some Conserues wee brought him to sweeten his mouth, which having tasted, hee tooke the Iarre and dranke. Then began he to enter into Discourse, telling vs. that he had walked himselfe weary, and that hee had seene that night many faire women,

Of a Iudge that was in authority.

but none that came neere my wife. He ſaid farther, that he had heard her exceedingly commended for her good voyce. I then will'd her to take her Violl, and ſeeing his Worſhip was pleaſed to giue her the hearing, that ſhee ſhould ſing ſome one ſong or other, which ſhe thought fit. Which ſhee did without any coyneſſe, or ſtraining courteſie; it ſeeming vnto vs both, that it would much aduantage vs, to get ſo great a perſon to bee our friend, vvho might be ready to ſtead vs vpon all occaſions. The man was aſtoniſhed, as well with the ſeeing, as the hearing of her; & when he was to take his leaue, he willed me to come now and then to ſee him, and that I ſhould make my ſelfe no ſtranger. With that, hee went his way; and I and my wife began to talke as well of this, as other things that had paſt; and how farre forth this his favour might be a meanes, to make vs hereafter bee more both reſpected and feared. I did viſit him ſometimes: and one day amongſt the reſt, careleſſe of any thing that might befall me, he ſaid vnto me; How happens it (*Guzman*) whileſt I am yet living, (for men are mortall, and I may die before I ſhall bee able to doe thee any good, if it bee not done the ſooner) that thou doeſt not make vſe of my favour, and ſue vnto me for ſome Commiſſion, that may bee both honourable and profitable vnto thee? I told him, that I held my ſelfe much bound vnto him, and that I ſhould ever reſt thankfull for this expreſsion of his loue and favour towards me, but becauſe I was loath to bee troubleſome vnto him, as alſo for that I had not as yet ſerved him in any thing, vvhereby to deſerue any the leaſt kindeneſſe from him, I had forborne to moue him in things of this nature. Hee then telling mee the friendſhip of my father and mother, (though this his kindeneſſe towards me, proceeded more from his loue to my wife then my ſelfe) he offred me a Commiſsion; telling me, that it would bee very beneficiall vnto me. I thank't him for it, though this was the Induction to all my future mis-fortunes. For within two dayes after, hee puts thoſe papers into my hands, vvith order for the recovery of certaine debts that were due to the Exchequer. The which he had procured (begging it for mee) of an eſpeciall good friend of his, a great man in his place, and one that aſsiſted in that Court; telling him that I was a friend of his, and a well-deſerving Perſon, vvorthy to be imployed in waightie matters, as ſhould appeare by that good ſatisfaction, which I ſhould giue both of my perſon and imployment.

Guzman *imployd in Commiſsions, for the Councell*, de la hazienda.

The Councell de la hazienda *is of the ſame nature with the Barons of our Kings Exchequer.*

When I had my Diſpatch, I went from home, but (I muſt confeſſe) ſore againſt my will; I carried along with me eight hundred *Maranedis*, which I had by vvay of ſalarie, or ſtipend; and for that I had ever beene accuſtomed to fare well, I knew not how to begin to frame my ſelfe to liue vvith this poore allowance, much leſſe to be able to put money in my Purſe, or to hoord vp to carry, or ſend home any thing to my houſe. But I ſaw now, that there was no other remedie, and muſt of force doe as I did: and ſo for avoyding of farther miſchiefe, I held my peace, and accepted of it. *Partime, y perdime*, My departure was my deſtruction. And vvhen I vvent away, all went awry. For it ſeemed vnto this kinde Maſter of mine, that he might get himſelfe ſlaues at other mens coſt to doe him ſervice, and that with theſe eight hundred *Maranedis*, I might part ſhares with my wife, and maintaine two houſes, and that this would be a ſufficient recompence for vs; out of vvhich reſpect, he was not only willing to be exempted from all other taxes and tributes belonging vnto vs; but alſo, that my wife ſhould not looke out to ſee the Sunne, nor to receiue any Viſits, but only his. He ſought to be ſo abſolute a Iudge over any thing that was mine, and ſo did wring and pinch vs, that I and my familie were ready to ſtarue for hunger, ſo that we were driven dayly to goe ſelling ſome of our houſhold-ſtuffe, for to put bread in our mouthes.

Guzmans *Wife likes not the Iudges miſerable proceeding.*

My wife (who was now become his Hoſteſſe) could not liue by theſe reckonings, it was no good account for her, to indure ſo much ſubjection, and to be

tyed

tyed to ſo ſhort proviſion. Shee firſt began to ſhow ſome diſlike of this his imperious, yet baſe dealing; and alſo many times of purpoſe refuſed to ſee him; hiding her ſelfe out of the vvay, vſing the helpe of a great friend of hers, who ſtill made her excuſe, when ſhee was diſpoſed that hee ſhould not come at her: For ſhe thought ſhe ſhould haue made her ſelfe by this market; but it proved otherwiſe.

But vvhen this new Maſter of mine perceived the evill correſpondence which ſhe held with him, thinking with him-ſelfe, that my preſence vvould quickly remedy all this, and bring the bowle to its old bias, he preſently gaue order, that there ſhould bee no more Prorogations granted vnto me, and that I ſhould bee commanded to giue an accout of that which I had done. They put me to it, and I did it; more willingly reſigning vp my Office, then I tooke it vpon me; for I found my ſtate thereby much inpawned, and my houſe much waſted and conſumed. He thought that my preſence ſhould haue beene the only remedie to giue him content, and that hee might the better injoy all things to his owne liking; but it fell out farre otherwiſe, for by my preſence, his expence increaſed, and wee had the better meanes to make it riſe. Hee vvas much troubled here-with, and knew not in the vvorld how to mend himſelfe; and conceiving with himſelfe, that nothing would worke vs better to his will then rigour, then to put vs to our ſhifts, that wee might come Cap in hand, crouching vnto him, and that with our armes acroſſe, and teares in our eyes, we ſhould come and cry him mercy, and intreat his favour; he treated with his Colleagues and fellow Officers, to baniſh vs the Court; and ſo accordingly it was notified vnto vs. I began to caſt vp my recknings, and made this account with my ſelfe; This Lord Iudge takes himſelfe to bee ſuch a great man, that hee thinkes, hee does me a great favour, in putting mee to maintaine his Houſe, and procure his pleaſure, ſelling him that for a ſong, which I haue bought with ſo many affronts, and ſcraped together with ſuch a deale of toyle.

Guzman *baniſhed* Madrid.

Againe, it will doe me no good to ſtay here, if I may not haue free leaue to make the beſt of mine owne Commodities. It will be the leſſer evill (thought I with my ſelfe) to obey this baniſhment, and to be packing, then to tarry here to no purpoſe. For though it were hard meaſure that vvas offered vnto vs, and did pinch vs ſomewhat; yet I knew it would wring him much more, nay gall him to the very heart. For, though we loſt one of our owne eyes, yet we had put out both his. For he miſt of his marke; hee had taken the wrong Sow by the eare, and all went kim-kam, cleane contrary to his expectation. So this poore ſilly aſſe, thinking to bang vs, had made a Cudgell for his owne ſides. Beſides, at the end of that yeare, thoſe ten yeares were to be expired, wherein I was to giue my Creditors ſatisfaction.

All theſe things haue I laid together, and thorowly weigh'd them with my ſelfe. I knew likewiſe that my Mother was aliue; ſo on the ſudden I hired a Coach for our owne perſons, and two Carts, for to carry our ſtuffe, and our people, leaving the Court and the Courtiers to themſelues, bidding them farewell for ever. Thinking with my ſelfe, that thoſe that came from *Peru*, fluſh with their gold and ſilver, would proue a great deale more profitable for vs. And ſo we went quietly along to *Sevill*.

Chap. VI.

Guzman de Alfarache *and his Wife come to* Sevill; *Hee findes his Mother to be now ſomewhat ancient, and well ſtrucken in yeares. His Wife gets her away to* Italy *with one of the Captaines of the Gallies, leaving him alone to himſelfe, and exceeding poore. Wherevpon he falls to his old trade of theeving.*

HOr that they, who eſcape out of ſome great danger, as oft as they thinke there-vpon, it ſeemeth ſtill vnto them, that they are yet ſcarce free from the perill they vvere in; I did often call my life to remembrance, but never to amendment; and more particularly, that of my late lewd courſes, that bad eſtate wherein I found my ſelfe, the little honour that I had to mine owne credit, and the ſmall, or no reſpect at all vvhich I bare towards my God, all the vvhile that my feete vvalked in theſe evill ſteps. I beganne to vvonder at my ſelfe that I vvas become ſuch a beaſt, as amongſt men, none could be greater. For none of all thoſe, that are created on earth, vvould ever haue permitted that vvhich I did vvinke at; making my ſelfe a living, out of my vviues lewd and filthy gaine, putting her into the occaſion of ſinning, giving her tacit licence to trade, nay, expreſſely commanding her to turne Whore: And which is as bad, (if not worſe then all the reſt) that I ſhould require from her, my food, my raiment, and the maintaining of my houſe, whileſt I my ſelfe ledde an idle kinde of life, holding (like the ſluggard) my thumbs vnder my girdle. It is a fearefull and terrible thing, that I ſhould thinke my ſelfe to bee an honeſt man, and to haue honour in mee, being ſo farre from it, and ſo deprived of true good. That for to haue crownes to play, I ſhould crowne my ſelfe with infamy; and that by not vſing theſe armes of mine, to labour for my living, I ſhould blot thoſe Armes of my Anceſtors, and the nobleneſſe of that houſe, whereof I was deſcended; Loſing that, which is one of the hardeſt things to be gotten: to wit, a good name; and opinion in the world; That I ſhould prophane ſo holy a Miſterie; That I ſhould vſe it in that ill and vile manner, that being I ſhould haue made it to ſerue as a meanes of my ſalvation, I made it the high-way to bring mee to hell, and onely for food and apparell, to nouriſh, and cloath this miſerable carkaſſe, That I ſhould oppoſe my ſelfe to ſuch perill, when as behinde my backe, and even face to face, they might haue put an affront vpon mee, obliging mee thereby rather to loſe my life, then to indure ſuch diſhonour; That a man ſhould not be able to doe more then hee can doe; that hee ſhould know it and diſſemble it, either out of his too much loue, or his too much griefe, or that he may not proclaime himſelfe a Cuckold to the world: I doe not ſo much wonder at this. And this may not onely bee a Vice, but a Vertue, and a goodneſſe, in caſe hee conſent not there-vnto, nor affoord any favour or entrance into it. But to doe as I did, vvho did not onely take pleaſure therein, but as if it had beene neceſſary for mee ſo to doe, did (as they ſay) caſt my Cloake over it; I doe not vvell know, whether I were blind, or mad, or bewitcht, that I did not conſider better there-vpon; or if I did, that I did not vſe ſome good remedie againſt it, but did further it all that I could. O foole, foole that I vvas! and giue me leaue heare to be-foole my ſellfe a thouſand times, that I was ſo wretchleſſe as I vvas; that I did not ſo much as once dreame on this miſchiefe, and ſeeke to prevent it; knowing, how incompatible companions theſe

Guzman *diſcourſeth of thoſe Wittols, that willingly make their Wiues turne Whores.*

theſe two are, *honra, y mugerguſt arrera*; *Honeſtie*, and a woman that playes and ſings to her Inſtrument; and that I did not weigh, what hurt it had done others, and that it might likewiſe ruine her and mee, beſides the diſhonour that muſt thereby redound to vs both. Men, for to oblige their Miſtreſſes vnto them, are vvont to beſtow muſicke on them vnder their windowes, and to ſing vnto them in the ſtreets; but my Wife was ſuch a one, that ſhee made theſe men fall in loue with her, by going abroad to ſing and play at their houſes. And it is a cleare caſe, that ſuch graces are appetible in their owne nature, and much deſired.

Muſicke in a Woman, a bewitching thing.

Now then, if men were invited, nay, incited there-vnto, why ſhould they not deſire, and ſeeke after my Wife? What wit or judgement hath that man in the world, who will make ſhow of his treaſure to theeues? What quiet ſleepes can hee take? with what eaſe can hee reſt; living (as hee cannot chooſe) in in a continuall feare of being robb'd? How was it poſsible, that I ſhould bee ſuch an Aſſe, that ſince I had given my ſelfe over to ſuch ſhame and reproach, which haply might be occaſioned by my too much weakeneſſe, I ſhould (for mine owne private intereſt) incurre another farre greater? To wit, to fall in company, into the commendation of my Wife, extolling to the skies, in the preſence of thoſe that pretended loue vnto her, thoſe louely qualities, and commendable parts that were in her, intreating alſo her, nay, ſometimes, commanding her, that ſhee ſhould diſcover and make ſhow of ſome illicit part of her perſon, as her breſt, armes, feet, and likewiſe (but I will heere hold my peace for ſhame, for I bluſh to thinke on it) that they might ſee whether her fleſh were fat, plumpe, and ſoft; white, browne, or ruddy? So that all grew worſe and worſe with me. For that which heretofore I did hate and abhorre with my heart, and was as it were a death vnto me to indure it, was now by vſe and cuſtome become eaſie and familiar vnto me, and I grew at laſt to take great delight in it. That I ſhould conſent, that ſhee ſhould receiue Viſits, and that I my ſelfe ſhould bring Cuſtomers to my houſe, and leaving them with her, ſhould get mee out of doores, and vvalke abroad; and aboue all, that I ſhould faine ſimplicitie, and make my ſelfe ignorant, as if there were no ſuch matter in the winde; and that I ſhould thinke withall, that they did verily beleeue, that this was a good and lawfull thing, being indeed a moſt depraved and wicked Act? That I ſhould ſet her a-worke to ſollicite Commiſsions, and to follow buſineſſes at ſuch great Miniſters houſes, as had a minde vnto her, and deſired nothing more, then that ſhee ſhould come vnto them, and that I ſhould make, as if I knew nothing, ſo ſlight reckoning of that infamie, which returning with them, or without them, ſhee brought home with her? That they making her ſo many feaſts and banquets, giving her ſo many Iewels, ſo many Crownes, and ſo many coſtly Gownes, that they could thinke, that I ſhould beleeue, that they beſtow'd all theſe things vpon her for nifles in a bagge, for meere ſmoke, for her faire lookes, for very pure loue, and honeſt affection, ſimply and plainely, without any doubling, or other by-pretenſion? What can I anſwere for my ſelfe? Or what can bee expected from mee, who not only gaue way there-vnto, but did alſo worke for her to runne that courſe? That fellow had good reaſon to ſay that he did, who ſeeing how well I began to thriue in *Madrid*, himſelfe being then in priſon, hee ſaid in the preſence of my ſelfe, and others. You ſee in what caſe I am heere, it is now ſome three yeares ſince that I was apprehended for a Thiefe, for a Forger, an Adulterer, a Slanderer, a Murderer, and a thouſand other crimes, which they layd to my charge; all which being heaped vpon mee, I ſinke vnder the burthen of them, and am ready to periſh for want of food: whereas *Señor Guzman*, onely by giving his wife leaue to take her liberty, liues free, takes his eaſe, and groweth rich.

What a Priſoner ſaid to Guzman.

What think'ſt thou, could I think, when I heard this? O accurſed riches, accurſed

curſed eaſe, accurſed freedome, and accurſed alſo bee that day, vvherein I conſented to any ſuch thing, whether it were for loue, neceſsitie, favour of great Perſons, or any other intereſt of mine owne. But becauſe the end may be knowne, vvhich that man muſt come to, who gaines by ſuch vngodly meanes, and that ye may ſee the vnfortunate ſucceſſe of ſuch baſe delights and pleaſures, I will recount my mis-fortunes vnto you, and entertaine you with the diſcourſe of my ſharpe and bitter life, which was ill beſtowed on mee, as it was ill imployed by me.

Guzman *leaues Madrid, and goes for* Sevill.

We traveld to *Sevill* (as they ſay) *al paſſo del buey*: with the foot (*a*) of an Oxe; That is, faire and ſoftly, and with a great deale of leiſure. For my wife was afraid of the jogging of the Coach, leaſt it ſhould make her little foyſting-Dogge ſicke, which ſhe carried along with her in her lap, in which was all her happineſſe, it was her onely jewell, and her deareſt delight. For one of theſe fizzling-curres in a maine peece of a Ladies Eſſence, and the proper paſsion of a Gentle-woman. Nor can they any more goe without them, then a Phyſician without his Gloues and his Ring, an Apothecarie vvithout a Cheſſe-boord, a Barber without a Gitterne, a Miller without a Kit, or a Spaniſh *Don*, without a Tooth-pick

(*a*) *Proverbe.* Al paſſo del buey.

When we were come thither, out of the deſire that we had to draw profit from thoſe that returne from *Peru*, and to ſee our houſe to become ſuch another, as the Contractation houſe for the *Indies*; whither and from whence, barres of gold and ſilver dayly come, and goe; and that it might bee all built of Plate, and pau'd with Gold; mee thought it ſeemed vnto mee, that I ſaw them already entring in at my doores, their backes bowing vnder them with the burthen of their Barres, ſo maſsie is that kinde of mettall; and that their ſtrong-ſowne pockets were ready to rip and rend in ſunder, with the weight of their double Piſtolets, and Royals of eight, and all to offer them vp to that their Idoll, my Wife.

The ſooliſh conceits, which vaine men flatter themſelues with all.

With this golden conceit, and glorious imagination, I ſought to revenge my ſelfe vpon him that had baniſht vs the Court; and ſaid with my ſelfe; O thou Traytor; thou thought'ſt to put a tricke vpon mee; but if any bee coozen'd, it is thy ſelfe; for all fell vpon vs for the beſt. The affront that thou offered'ſt me, hath lighted on thine owne head. I am now comming into the Country of *Cucaña*, or the Land of *Xanxa*, where is Gods plenty of all things, and where the ſtreetes are ſtrowed with Silver, where wee ſhall be no ſooner arrived, but they ſhall come forth to receiue vs with a rich Canopy of State, where we ſhall all liue like Kings.

With theſe, and the like thoughts, I call'd to remembrance, whatſoever had ſucceeded there vnto me, in that my firſt departure from *Sevill*. S. *Lazaro* his Church vvould not out of my minde; I ſaw the Fountaine vvhere I drunke; the Stone, vvhereon I ſlept in the Church-Porch; the ſteppes, by which I went vp and downe; I ſaw his ſacred Temple, and that holy Chappell, where I ſo devoutly ſaid my prayers; And though I vvas farre off from it, I ſaluted the Patron thereof in this manner:

O glorious Saint; when I tooke my leaue of thee, I vvent away vvith teares a foot, poore, all alone, and a childe. Now I returne to ſee thee, rich, attended, merry, and a married man.

Touching theſe things, ſee the firſt part, Chap. 3. & 5.

Then was repreſented vnto mee from the very beginning all the diſcourſe of my life, ripping it vp even to that very inſtant. I remembred my ſelfe of my Hoſteſſe that kept a victualing houſe by the High-way ſide, and of the Inne, where they gaue me that good froyze of Egges, and the Muleter of *Cantillana*; but I had now left that on the right hand. I entred by that Royall Cauſey, we turn'd about by the Field, rounding the Citie, till wee came to the Inne where our Carts were, where, of neceſſitie my people were to ſtay; And for that all thoſe were ſteps vvhich I had often troden, vvhen I was a boy,

boy, & that place was well known vnto me, becauſe I was there bred & borne, my bloud began to riſe as cheerefully, as if I had ſeene mine owne Mother. We lodged there that night, but not very well. But in the morning I roſe vp with the Sun, for to ſeeke out a new Lodging, and to free my goods from that *Magazine*, as alſo to make inquirie, if any one could tell me tidings of my Mother. But for all the good diligence therein vſed by me, all was to no end; I could heare no newes of her, no, not a word. I thought I ſhould haue found all things as I left them; but they were ſo farre from being in *ſtatu. quo priùs*, in the ſame caſe, wherein they were before, that there was not ſo much as a ſhadow or any memoriall thereof remaining. For ſome vvere altered, others abſent, and moſt of them dead, inſomuch that there was ſcarce one ſtone left vpon another, vvhereby a man might be able to ſay; This is ſtill the ſame *Sevill*. I forbore for the preſent to make any farther ſearch after her, deferring it till ſome fitter ſeaſon, in regard of the great haſte that I had at that time to accommodate my ſelfe; and going about to ſee how I could fit my ſelfe, I might perceiue a bill, newly ſet vp over the doore of a certaine houſe, that vvas to be let in the (a) *Barrios* of S^t *Bartholmew*, being vvithin the precincts of the ſaid Pariſh. I made meanes to ſee it, I view'd it, I lik't it then vvell, I hyred it for ſome moneths, and paying my Rent before-hand, I caus'd all my ſtuffe to be carryed thither.

(a) *A Ward. A libertie. A ſtreet. A neighbourhood.*

We reſted our ſelues ſome two dayes, eating and ſleeping our fill, till my *Grace* began to thinke vvith her ſelfe, that it was not fit, that ſhe ſhould come to ſo noble a Citie as that vvas, and ſo much famouſed thorowout the vvhole vvorld, to mue her ſelfe vp within doore, and not once offer to vvalke abroad. I got me to the (b) *Gradas*; for her, I had hyred a Squire, to vſher her thorow the ſtreets, for that theſe kinde of people are beſt acquainted vvith them; and that ſhe might goe ſee thoſe things, that ſhee had moſt minde to, vvithout roving vp and downe at randome, or loſing of her ſelfe, or vvithout aſking vvhich vvas the vvay to ſuch, or ſuch a place. And ſo for fifteene dayes together, ſhee never folded vp her Mantle. For every morning and evening, ſhe duly all that while walked abroad, and was never weary, nor fully ſatisfied vvith ſeeing ſuch Greatneſſes, as did offer them-ſelues every vvhere to her view. For albeit, although that ſhe was in *Madrid*, ſhe liked it very well, and ſo well, that ſhee then thought, that that Court had the advantage of all other habitations of the vvorld for it's State and Majeſtie, the greatneſſe and great number of their Dukes, Marqueſſes, Condes, and other *Titulados*, for it's concourſe of Embaſſadours from all forraine parts, for the good Trading, that is in it, for their temperate carriage, their diſcretion in generall, and their liberty without compariſon, for the earth affords not a freer place to liue in: Yet ſhee found in *Sevill*, the ſavour of a Citie, another I know not what, other Greatneſſes, though not in the ſame qualitie, for there vvanted Kings there to keepe their Courts, nor ſo many *Grandes* and men of Title, at leaſt in quantitie; yet had they great ſtore of wealth amongſt them, and were in no leſſe eſteeme; for ſilver was there as common amongſt the vulgart ſort, as Copper money in other places, and they made ſuch ſmall reckoning of it, that they ſpent it farre more freely.

(b) Gradas de Sevilla. *A place like our Exchange in London, where men meet to walke, & talke.*

Within a few dayes after we came thither, Lent was come, and we ſaw the Holy Weeke in that manner, as it is there ſolemnized, vvee ſaw the liberall almes that were there, and at that time beſtowed on the poore, the ſtore of Waxe which was ſpent in Taper-lights. My wife was ſtrooken with wonder, and as a vvoman beſides her ſelfe, not vvell imagining how this could poſsibly be: ſo farre did it out-ſtrip in workes, that vvhich had beene vttered of it in words.

Now in this meane time, vvhich was not long after my arrivall in this Citie, I had, by the great care that I had taken, and by ſome circumſtances, got

to

to the knowledge of my mother, and if I may ſo ſay, had found her out by the tracke of her bloud. For my wife entring into ſpeech with ſome other faire Gentle-women, that were of her acquaintance, as they were diſcourſing of divers things, falling by the way vpon her, ſhee came to know, that ſhee kept company with a handſome young Wench, to vvhom ſhe vvas ſuſpected to be Mother, for the good vſage, wherewith ſhe treated her, and for the due reſpect which ſhe bare vnto her. But in truth it vvas not ſo; for ſhee had no other childe but my ſelfe. But the true cauſe thereof only was this; that ſeeing ſhe was left thus all alone, poore, and growing now old, ſhe had bred her vp of a little Girle, to doe her ſervice hereafter, vvhom ſhe now made profit of, vvhereby they made a ſhift to liue as vvell as they could. I, vvhen I had notice of her, vvas very inſtant vvith her, to haue her come liue vvith mee; but I could not vvinne her to it, being vvondrous loth to leaue this young Wench, as well for that ſhe had bred her vp; as alſo, for that ſhe was vnwilling to haue any difference vvith a daughter in Law, which, her diſcretion told her, could not well be avoyded. And as oft as I intreated her therevnto, ſhee would ſtill anſwer me, (a) *Que dos tocas en vn fuego, nunca ençienden lumbre à derechas.* That two white Kerchiefes in one Kitchen, did never yet make good fire: Themſelues being apter to kindle one another, then to kindle it. For the ſorrow is not ſo great which a woman ſuffers, when ſhee liues alone, by, and of her ſelfe, as is the torment vvhich ſhee indureth, when ſhe is inforced to keepe Company contrary to her liking. And ſeeing that there vvas never yet any daughter in Law, that could liue peaceable and lovingly with her Mother in Law, ſhee was of the minde, that my wife vvould liue more merrily alone by her ſelfe with mee, and reſt better contented with it, then if ſhe ſhould liue with her. But in the end, the loue of a ſonne prevailed ſo farre with her, that I had perſwaded her to yeeld to my deſire. Shee vvas my Mother, I deſired to cheriſh her, and to make much of her, and that ſhe might now take her eaſe in her old age. For albeit to me ſhe did ſtill repreſent her ſelfe with the ſelfe-ſame beauty, and the ſame freſhneſſe of colour, and cleareneſſe of skinne, vvith the vvhich I left her, when I parted from her; yet was ſhee now quite altered from that ſhee was, that it vvas hard to ſay, This is ſhee. I found her leane, old, tawny, toothleſſe, her face (like an old Apple-*Iohn*) all ſhriveled, and altogether another kinde of creature. I ſaw in her the ruines of Time; and how yeares conſume every thing. Where-vpon turning my ſelfe about to my Wife, and looking wiſtly vpon her, I told her; This faire face of thine muſt runne the like Fortune one day; beauty will not laſt for ever: And if at any time a woman chance to eſcape that deformitie, which age layeth vpon her; yet at leaſt ſhee muſt fall at laſt into the hands of death, which will diſfigure even the youngeſt body, and claw all the fleſh from the bones. I did figure the like vnto my ſelfe. But as well in this, as in all other thoſe good conſiderations, which had offred themſelues vnto me, I did juſt as he doth, who comes to drinke in an Inne, that ſtands in the High-way, who as ſoone as he has drunke, ſets downe the glaſſe, and goes his way. They ſtayed but a little while with me; I kept them ſtill going, but never proffer'd them a chaire to ſit downe and reſt them-ſelues; for thoſe that I had in my houſe, were occupied and taken vp by Appetite, and Senſualitie. At my earneſt intreatie, the Mother and Daughter in Law came to houſe together. My Mother, you knew her well enough before, though not by ſight, yet by report, and thoſe famous things you had hard of her. She was able to over-maſter the beſt of them, not any of them all that could goe beyond her for her wit, and her vnderſtanding; as well beauſe theſe things were ſo naturally and truely her owne; as alſo for that ſhee had beene ſchooled and trained vp in them; and aboue all, having the advantage of ſo many yeares experience.

Guzman *beares newes of his Mother, and how ſhe got her living*

Proverbe.
(a) Dos tocas en vn fuego, nunca ençienden lumbre à derechas.

A mother in Law, and a daughter in Law, ſeldome agree well together.

Beauties frailty.

Guzman *vnſetled in his good reſolutions.*

See the firſt booke the firſt part. Chap. 1. & 2.

She

Shee gaue my wife very good counſell, adviſing her, that ſhee ſhould not admit into her company the young men of that ſtreet wherein ſhe dwelt, but (like the Fox) ſhould fetch her prey farther off; for beſides the infamie and diſhonour that ſhee ſhould get thereby, ſhee told her; that they are *(como agua de por San Iuan; (a) quitan el prouecho, y ellos no lo dan;* Like vnto your Mid-ſomer raine, vvhich quits all profit, and yeelds no gaine. They vvill rather draw from you then bring any benefit to you. They dine and ſup ſtill at home, and when they know not what to doe, or how otherwiſe to beſtow their time, then will they come to our houſe, and looke to be entertained by vs in good converſation; there will they ſtay all that evening; *Tres neçios en plata, (b) y vn majadero en menudos;* Three fooles in one diſh, and a block-head cut out in Sippets. Having no other ground for their acquaintance, but this vveake foundation, that they are (forſooth) of the ſame ſtreet or Pariſh, vvhere in you dwell.

The inſtructions of the Mother in Law, to her daughter in Law.

Proverbe.

(a) Aquas de por San Iuan; quitan el prouecho, y no lo dan.

Proverbe.

(b) Tres neſios en plata, y vn majadero en menudos.

Of your Court Pages, your ſtudents at Law, and your Vniverſitie young Frie. ſhe read the like Lecture vnto her; telling her, that they were like vnto Crowes, vvhich would ſmell out fleſh a farre off, and were good for nothing elſe but to pecke at it, and when they had done, get them gone.

Pages. Students. Schollers.

Shee wiſht her to ſet a Croſſe vpon her doore, to keepe all married men out; for, from no enemie that ſhe had, could ſhe receiue greater harme. For wiues that are jealous, commit a thouſand outrages, and cauſe millions of inconveniences to come vpon you. And vvhen they cannot come to miſchiefe you, and vvorke their will vpon you themſelues (for not one amongſt a thouſand of them, but will ſcratch out your eyes, if ſhee doe but imagine, you draw the cuſtome from their Mill) they vvill get them to this, or that Iudge, and with foure teares, two ſighes, one wry mouth, and a wringing of the hands, they will put all the Towne in an vprore, and vtterly overthrow your credit. In a word, ſhee gaue in this kinde, many true, wholſome, and ſound Inſtructions, as one that from the very wombe of her Mother, proceeded Doctreſſe in her Art, had all her Leſſons that ſhe had learn'd, at her fingers ends, and knew how to make vſe of them. Shee carried her alwayes along with her, whither-ſoever ſhe went, omitting no ſtation, that ſhe did not goe vnto; no Feaſt, that ſhee did not viſit, nor no ſtreet, that ſhee did not vvalke thorow.

Married men. Ielous wiues, their condition.

When then they came home, they would one while returne with Taffel-gentles, amorous Knights, like *Amadis de Gaule*, that would eaſily be man'd, and quickly brought to ſtoope to the Lure; and other-whiles vvith fierce Maſtiffes, roaring Boyes, and ruffian-like Swaggerers, ſuch as would ſweare and drinke, and throw the houſe out at the Windowes; And out of theſe my Mother did cull, and picke out ſuch, as ſhee thought vvould make moſt for our profit: for, having traded ſo long as ſhee had done in that Countrie, ſhee knew which tracke to take, there was not that path, vvhich ſhee had not beaten; nor that thing vvhich ſhe did not know; and knowing all, ſhe knew beſt how to goe beyond them all.

Kinde Lovers. Rough hewne Hackſters.

For your beardleſſe young Gallants, and Sattin-cheekt boyes, ſhee vvould not haue her to haue any thing to doe vvith them; nor to be beholding to them for ſo much as a ſticke of fire, vvhich is a common courteſie betwixt neighbour and neighbour. For ſuch as theſe vvill not ſticke to tell you, that their penny is as good ſilver as yours; their Sugar-pellets, are as ſweet as your Conſerues; that their gay cloathes, their curl'd Locks, and ſtrong Perfumes, deſerue your perſon, and that you ſhould kindely (vvithout any other retaliation) entertaine their loue: And they vvill alſo thinke (being vvell conceited of themſelues) that you ſhould rather vvooe them, then they you; and that you ſhould make them a curt'ſie, and cry, I thanke you Sir. She tooke a great deale of paines vvith her in theſe, and the like; but aboue all, ſhee bid her take

Young Gallants.

take heed, that ſhee held no commerce or correſpondence vvith thoſe of the Place of *San Franciſco*, and that ſhe ſhould be afraid how ſhe did meddle with them, for if ſhe once begin to haue any thing to doe with your Officers of the Court of Iuſtice; as your Clerkes, and Regiſters, the vvhole rabble of them will runne in vpon you, even to thoſe that vvrite at the Deske, and will copie you out a ſheete for a groat. And being they follow the Law, they thinke, that all that is yours, is theirs, and that of right it belongs vnto them. For if you once fall into their hands, there is no ſcaping from them; for either by faire meanes, or by foule; by intreaties, or by threatnings, being ſo abſolute, and ſo diſſolute, as they are, (I meane ſome of them) they exerciſe more Tyrannies, and more cruelties, then *Totila* or *Dionyſius*, as if there were not a God for them, as well as for other folkes.

Lawyers and their Clerkes.

The Fleete was not come; the Citie was in great want, their purſes were ſhut and our mouthes open; and we were ready to dye for hunger. We fell a ſelling, and then a eating; and which was worſe, we paid a great rent, and had little commings in. All went ill with vs, wee had brawling and ſcolding at home, and the poore Maid that was in our houſe, ſhee paid for it; off goes her Kerchiefe, and with it her haire, tugging her thereby vpon every light or ſlight occaſion, keeping a great deale of ſtirre about toyes and trifles, that were not worth the talking of. There was not that Rogue, or baſe Raſkall, but would dare to doe vs wrong, and not ſticke to gybe and Fleare at vs; one ſaluting mee in ſcorne, vvith the ſtile, *Señor Don Fulano*, and another with that of *Don Cutano*. My wife liu'd in a continuall feare, and was now growne weary, and ſicke of the Mother-in-Law; For in regard that with me, ſhee had liu'd ſo long at her owne libertie, and had taken ſo much head, and now finding her ſelfe ſome-what reſtrain'd of it, and that ſhe could no longer bee Miſtreſſe of her owne will; and that if the one did but ſpeake, the other vvould begin to grumble; of every gnat, they made a Cammell; and of Mole-hils, Mountaines. And ſuch a cruell ſtorme & tempeſt would ariſe between them, that becauſe I would not be Stickler betweene them, or ſeeme to take one part more then another, I would take my Cloake, and throwing it on my ſhonlders, vvhen I ſaw theſe *Dolfines* once begin to play aboue water, and hye me (vvith all the haſte I could) out of the houſe, and get mee abroad, leaving them together by the eares, tugging one anothers head-geare off; fight Dogge, fight Beare; take them off vvho vvould for mee. For I vvould haue nothing to doe with them.

Proverbe. Don Fulano, y Cutano: *Words of ſcorne, men not deigning to call vs by our owne name. Intimating that we are baſe fellowes, and not worthy to be made any reckoning of.*

The Mother-in-Law, and Daughter in Law, fall together by the eares.

My wife hereat was ſo mad, and grew ſo angry with me, that I would not ſhew my ſelfe on her ſide, that by little and little ſhe grew to hate mee; that whether it were right or vvrong, ſhe thought it fit, that Man and Wife, ſeeing God hath joyn'd vs together, vve ſhould cleaue each to other; or whether vvith, or without reaſon, I had great reaſon to take her part againſt my Mother: but that on the other ſide I held not to be ſo lawfull.

Guzmans *wife begins to hate her husband.*

Wherevpon her hate grew to that height, and ſhe did ſo abhorre my company, that meeting with an occaſion by meanes of a Captaine of the Gallies of *Naples*, that lay there in the rode, ſhe exchanged my loue for his. And gathering all the money together ſhee was able to make, and thoſe Iewels of Gold and Silver, which we were ſtored with at that time, ſhe hoyſed ſayle, and went for *Italy*, I not knowing then for the preſent, vvhat vvas become of her.

Guzmans *wife goes away with a Captaine of the* Neapolitane *Gallies.*

I haue heard it ſpoken, That he is a Mad-man, or a Foole, that vvill ſeeke after his Wife, when ſhe is once gone: And that a man ſhould make a golden (*a*) Bridge, for a flying enemy: And be glad, that he can be ſo rid of him.

(*a*) *Prou.* Al enemigo, hazer la puente de plata, por donde huyeſſe.

I thought with my ſelfe, That I ſhould better be (*b*) alone, then ill accompanied. For, although it be true, that I gaue way to all her deſires, and ſo had all my maintenance by that meanes; whereas otherwiſe I ſhould haue vvanted

(*b*) *Proverbe.* Mejor ſolo, que mal acompañado.

ted meate to put in my mouth; and cloathes to put on my backe; yet I grew weary of it, becauſe every one had one ſling or other at mee.

See the force of vſe; for being that I was alwayes bred vp to baſeneſſe, and was ever accuſtomed to heare affronts, vvhen I vvas a childe, and afterwards when I grew ſomewhat bigger, I could the better beare them, vvhen I came to be a man. *The force of vſe.*

My Wife was gone from mee, and therein ſhe did mee a favour; for beſides that I was now free from that obligation of giuing way, that ſhe ſhould leade that kinde of life, which ſhee did; I was likewiſe free from that dayly ſinne, which might haue lyen vpon my conſcience; For I did not caſt her off; but ſhe for to ſatisfie her owne wilfull humour, abſented her ſelfe from mee. And it was impoſſible, that I ſhould follow her, and hunt her out, for the hazzard that I ſhould runne, if I ſhould returne backe againe into *Italy*. Theſe difficulties therefore offering themſelues vnto mee, I led a retyred life with my mother. And not having wherewithall handſomely to maintaine our ſelues, we fell a ſelling ſuch houſhold-ſtuffe as was left. But there being more dayes in the yeare, then wee had implements in the houſe, all was gone vvithin a very ſhort time. Saint *Iohn*, (*a*) *& Corpus Chriſti*, hapned to mee all on a day. I had now brought both ends together: I wanted goods to ſell, and money to buy. I found my ſelfe out of reparations, not hauing wherewithall to cloath my backe, nor to feede my belly; nor any thing elſe, whereby to gaine a penny, vnleſſe I ſhould fall againe to my old trade. I got mee forth a nights into thoſe ſtreetes, where there vvere diverſe turnings or croſſe-wayes, and when I had made my purchaſe, I would come home laden with two or three Cloakes, ſuch as I could compaſſe with leaſt trouble, and perill to my perſon. Guzman *ſels all he hath.* (*a*) *Proverbe.* San Iuan. y Corpus Chriſti, cayeron para mi, en Vn dia. Guzman *fals to ſtealing of Cloakes.*

The next morning, one of theſe two courſes I tooke vvith them, that I turn'd them in a trice either into Mandilians, Doublets, and Hoſe, altering the propertie of them, or elſe ridde my hands otherwiſe of them as handſomely as I could. But commonly vvhen I had chang'd the faſhion of them, in the duske of the Evening I would get me vnto the *Gradas*, and there barter them away, either for other ware, or ready money, as others did.

This kinde of trading my Mother was not ſo well pleaſ'd with, ſhee did not like vvell of it; as vvell, for that ſhe had never vſ'd it in all her life; as alſo, for that ſhee would not willingly now in her old age, runne the hazzard of ſo foule an affront. *His Mother and he part.*

Wherevpon ſhee reſolued vvith her ſelfe, once more to ſet vp ſhop, and ſee vvhat good ſhee could doe by her old Trade; ſhee, and the yong Wench, (which ſhe liu'd withall before) being agreed to become partners, and equally to ſhare all gaines betweene them. O how glad vvas ſhee, when ſhee ſaw my mother come within her doores, how did ſhee hugge and imbrace her, as if ſhee had brought in the *Indies* vvith her; or vvere the onely Phyſician to recover the ſicke and decayed eſtate of her low-brought fortunes, having no ſuch vtterance of her Ware, nor nothing the like doings now, as vvhen ſhee liu'd with her! I (my Mother being now gone from mee) quickly brought my ſelfe acquainted with ſome other good fellowes, with whom I might merrily paſſe my life, till fortune ſhould change, and the time grow better. Theſe my Camerades, I fitted them with Invention, plotted their buſineſſes for them, aſſiſting them in all occaſions with my perſon, vvent along vvith them to the Towns and Villages neere adjoyning. And whatſoever elſe wee did chance to light vpon by the way, vvee did never likely miſſe, in ſome of the backe Courts belonging to their houſes, a good Buck of cloathes, which together with their Flasket, vvee made to vaniſh and diſ-appeare in an inſtant. *She followes her old courſe and he his.*

Wee had in the Suburbs, and the *Triana*, certaine knowne houſes, places

Theeues, & their cunning carriage.

of purpoſe for receit, vvhere, vvithout entring into the Citie, vvee did pitch our Pikes,and make a Stand. There did wee dry our cloathes, and being cleane vvaſht, and handſomely folded vp, by little and little wee convay'd them into the Citie, one while through the gates, another while over the walles, after mid-night was paſt, when the Iuſtice had done walking the Round,and was retyred home. For thoſe garments of Cloth and of Silke, which by our induſtry wee had purloyned here and there,as wee could come to lay hands on them,vve had knowne Brokers for them, to whom wee ſold them at a reaſonable good price, loſing little or nothing of what they were worth, which being once delivered into their hands, they vvell knew that they would paſſe for currant, as goods that had beene gotten in a juſt warre, and vvere their crafts-maſters in altering the forme and faſhion of them, to the end that they might not be knowne, for feare of after-claps. For we had no other obligation,but to giue them good wares for their money,dry, and well conditioned, putting it within the doores of their houſes free from taxe and tallage, and all other paiments, leaving them to be freely injoyed by them. Your cleane white linnen had quicke diſpatch, in regard of the good conveniencie that was offered vs to come eaſily by it; as alſo that it was very good chaffer, to trafficke away with ſtrangers. And in this manner did we maintaine our ſelues brauely, and went well and cleere away with it.

One time (I remember) in the Winter, there was ſuch a continued raine without intermiſſion,that none did dare to goe out of doores;ſo that the owners of thoſe houſes keeping themſelues within, all commoditie of viſiting them was taken away from vs; whereby money beganne to grow ſcant with vs. It was my hap at that time, as I was paſſing along through a certaine ſtreete, that I eſpide all the fore-part of a houſe quite falne downe to the ground. I askt whoſe houſe that was? They told mee it was a Gentle-womans that was a Widdow. I vvent and ſought her out, and deſired her, That ſeeing there was no body dwelt in her houſe, ſhee would giue mee leaue to goe in,and lodge there,promiſing her to looke carefully vnto it. Shee (good woman) being afraid leſt the whole houſe ſhould come tumbling downe about my eares, told mee; That I were beſt take heede what I did, leſt the houſe ſhould chance to fall. As for that, I anſwered againe, it made no great matter, for that there was an vpper roome, which (as I conceiued) was ſtrong, and ſure enough, where-into I might ſafely retire my ſelfe: telling her beſides; that ſuch as were poore (as I was) had no cauſe of feare, or loſſe: life being to them rather a burthen, then otherwiſe; and was the thing, which of all other, they could beſt ſpaire. Where-vpon, very willingly ſhe gaue mee leaue ſo to doe. And I preſently, without any more adoe, got mee in, and within ſome foure dayes after, there was not a doore, which I had not vnhindged, nor a locke, which I had not ripped off.

Guzman robs a Widdow of her Tyle-ſtones; and how?

The next day after, I got mee into the ſtreete of *San Saluador*, and there I cauſ'd it to be openly cry'de at the Croſſe, that whoſoever would buy foure or fiue thouſand Tyle-ſtones, he ſhould repaire vnto mee; for I had authority to ſell them vnto them. At that time, there was not a Tyle to be got in all the whole Towne for any money. Anon after came poſting vnto mee three or foure Maſons and Brick-layers,and happy was hee that could come firſt,all of them earneſtly ſtriuing, which of them ſhould haue the bargaine out of each others hands, and were ready to goe together by the eares about it.

Well, they came to agreement with mee for fiue *Maranedis* a tyle; and bringing them to the houſe, I made ſhow of them vnto them; telling them that I was the *Mayor-domo*, or Steward of the houſe, and that my Miſtreſſe was minded to pull it quite downe to the ground, and build it all new after another manner. Beſides theſe of mine, which I made my ſelfe Maſter of for

the

the time, I shewd them others of our next neighbours, joyning house to house with vs, being so neare the other, as they seemed to be fellowes, which likewise they were to haue away with them. They gaue me six hundred Royals in good ready coyne, vpon condition, that I should make vp my tale of Tyles, to the full number of fiue thousand; telling me, that the next day they would come and fetch them away.

When I had my money, I hasted away to the Mistresse of the house, and said vnto her; that it was great pittie, that she had giuen leaue to her *Mayor-domo*, to make sale of all the doores, and tyles that covered her houses. Wherevpon she grew into a great rage, & kept a foule coyle about it, saying, She had no *Mayor-domo*, nor yet knew, who had any such authority to doe it. Therevpon I told her; That your Worship then may know, who it is that takes this vpon him; I haue beene already commanded to get me out of the house, and that I must haue nothing to doe there any more. Wherefore I must be inforced to looke out a lodging else-where. For to morrow very early, those that haue bought the Tyles, will come to carry them away. Your Worship may be pleased to send some body thither, or to take the paines to goe your selfe, and then you shall see what hath passed. This said, I tooke my leaue of her; and the next day following, standing aloofe off, leaning against the corner of a Wall, I kept my selfe close, to see the stirre that would be about this businesse; and I can assure you, it was sport alone, and was able to make as many as beheld it, to breake their hearts with laughing, to see how busie the Tylers were, in vntyling the house, and how the poore Gentlewoman bestirr'd her selfe, to defend her owne. In conclusion, shee exhibited a Complaint against the poore Tyler, and did not onely take away the Tyles from him, but also made him pay the price of her doores and lockes. This caus'd me for some few dayes to keepe my selfe close within doores, hauing a good fire, and laughing in my sleeue, till the storme was ouerpast; and that they had given over looking after mee.

One day, there was a great feast in *San Augustin*; and because such kinde of meetings made for vs, I got me thither. Where I perceiu'd, that a Gentleman had good store of money loose in his left Pocket, on that side where his Rapyer hung. Now, when he came into a place, where there was a great presse of people, and that there was much thrusting and crowding one another, I did gently lift vp his Hangers, and thrusting in my hand, did nimbly diue to the bottome, letting not so much as one Royall escape my fingers. But the vnquiet motion of those that were about me, hindred my hand, being so full as it was, to carry it away cleanly, by meanes whereof a great deale of it fell downe vpon the ground. And for that the Cloyster was pau'd, it made a great gingling; With that I let all goe, and putting my hand into my pocket, in a trice I tooke out my Haidkerchiefe, and crying to the people, that they would for Gods sake giue backe, and make a little roome, for that in pulling forth my Handkerchiefe, I had shed all my money. All very kindely did as I desired them; and the good honest Gentleman, whom I had thus rob'd, moued out of charity, hearing the pittious moane that I made, crying out, that I was with these moneys to pay my Merchant, stooped downe with me to the ground, and holpe me to gather it vp, till I had all to the last Royall. I gaue him thankes for his paines, and getting out of the throng, I went home well contented. This was that Knife that cut my throat; this poore little theft, was my finall perdition and vtter vndoing; being the last that I did; and for the which I paid dearer they all the rest. For albeit heretofore I had beene taken in the like manner, yet, for all those stormes, I arriued at last in a safe Haven. With money I could negociate what I list my selfe; and there, and in every place, there is no other talke, then how a man may make a shift to liue, and to get where-withall to maintaine his port; this was, is,

Guzman *picks a Gentlemans pocket.*

and will be the practice as long as the world is the world; Iudges haue hands to take; and Malefactors money to giue. Every man (you know) would faine liue by his place. But now thoſe Trumps would doe mee no good, for I had renounced them long agoe. When I was fluſh of money, I would ſeeke to furniſh my ſelfe a-freſh, before they were ſpent, for preventions-ſake. I would make new proviſion; for as long as I could out of mine owne abilitie, ſupply my neceſſities and wants, I did not ſeeke after incumbrances, or to draw ſorrow vpon my ſelfe. I had in a corner ſome Purſes, that I had cut, and ſome pretty little ſtrange pieces, that I had met withall. I made choyce of one that I lik't beſt of, and caus'd it to be handſomely trim'd vp, and putting into it ſixe Crownes, in three Doblones of gold, fifty Royals in Plate, a ſilver Thimble, and foure Rings; I carryed it to my Mother, and ſhew'd her every thing particularly by it ſelfe, vſing therein a great deale of leiſure, pawſing well betweene every parcell: I likewiſe did ſet downe the ſame in writing vnto her, to the end that ſhee might learne it without booke, and not miſſe one letter of the leſſon that I taught her: for a good memorie is all in all; and that which in this buſineſſe did moſt of all import vs. And hauing well inſtructed her in that which ſhee was to doe, when ſhee was to come afterwards to repetitions, I got me to the Cell of a certaine famous Preacher, who was a good man, and a holy, and reputed and reverenced of all men, as if hee had beene ſome Saint, and ſaid vnto him:

Guzman craftily coozens a Preacher, and gets a good almes, and how he did it.

Reverend Father, I am a poore ſtranger in this place, I am come hither to this Citie, and am at this preſent in great want and neceſſitie; I deſire to accommodate my ſelfe, if I could light vpon ſome honeſt houſe, where I might liue peaceably and quietly for my ſoules health; this is the onely thing that I deſire in this world; as for any ſet wages, I ſhall not ſtand much vpon that. For ſo as I may haue honeſt cloathes to my backe, (I care not how meane, ſo they be whole,) and ſome ſet Commons, (though never ſo poore) to paſſe over this miſerable life, I ſhould well content my ſelfe there-withall, without either hope, or deſire of any farther profit. And albeit I am in this wretched eſtate as you ſee, and that I am nothing but rags; in ſo much that for lacke of decent and ſeemely cloathes (being ſo ill clad as I am) I ſhall not happely light vpon any, that will take me into his ſervice; and albeit I could for the preſent be able to helpe my ſelfe, and ſupply this my neceſſitie by an occaſion, that is now offred vnto me to relieue my wants, yet I hold it better to ſuffer penurie, and to relie vpon a hopefull expectation of Gods helping hand (who will at one time or other pittie the diſtreſſed ſtate of the poore) then by offending his divine Majeſtie, in vſurping vpon the goods of my neighbour. God forbid that other mens Purſes ſhould free mee from my corporall labour, leauing to my ſelfe a guiltie and condemning conſcience.

I got me this morning out of my lodging, for to ſeeke ſome worke, whereby I might gaine me bread to put in my mouth, and it was my good hap to finde this Purſe in the midſt of the ſtreet: I tooke it vp, and went to looke what was in it. And when I perceiued it was money, I preſently ſhut the Purſe, fearing leſt mine owne weakeneſſe might draw me to doe an vnlawfull Act. I ſhall intreat your Fatherhood, to take it into your hands, and being that you are next Sunday to preach, that you will publiſh the ſame to the people. It may be, that the Owner thereof may be preſent there, or by others report chance to heare of it, who peradventure may haue as much, if not more need of it then I haue. Much good may it doe him with it, for I will not enjoy any other goods, ſaue onely ſuch, as his divine Majeſtie may be beſt ſerved by mee.

The honeſt Fryer, when he had heard me out, and ſaw the heroicall diſpoſition that was in me, tooke me rather to be a Saint, then a man. And he did

ſo

ſo much honour and reverence me for it, that there onely was wanting the kiſſing of my garment: and in a heavenly kinde of language, hee thus ſpake vnto mee:

My deare brother; giue hearty thankes to almighty God, that hee hath conferr'd vpon you ſo cleare an vnderſtanding, and the knowledge of that little eſteeme which we are to make of the goods of this world, and aſſure your ſelfe, that hee, that hath communicated vnto you this his holy Spirit, will (as he hath promiſed in his holy Word) provide for you, and miniſter ſuch things vnto you, as his divine wiſdome ſhall thinke fit and needfull for you. He, who to the poore leaſt little Wormes, and all your ſmall fleſhleſſe and bloudleſſe Vermine (as your Ants, Flyes, Caterpillers, and the like hurtfull creeping things, that crawle vpon the earth) is not wanting, but careth for them, ſhall much more be mindefull of you, and ſupply you with all thoſe things, that he ſhall ſee you ſtand in need of: not onely freeing you from theſe your preſent miſeries, but farther increaſing your joyes, and his bleſſings vpon you. This action of yours, is a ſupernaturall and divine worke, which ſtrikes admiration into men, and ſtirres vp thoſe Angelicall ſpirits of heaven, to ſing forth a thouſand Hymnes of praiſe and thankes-giving, that ſuch a noble creature was borne for the glory of God, and the good of the world. This is his gift, and none but his, acknowledge it, and magnifie his praiſe by ſpeaking good of his holy Name, and perſevering in vertue.

I ſhall doe as you would haue mee, and ſee you returne againe vnto mee ſome day in the next weeke; for I hope in God, I ſhall be able to doe you much good, and procure ſome favour to be ſhewne vnto you.

When this good man had made an end of theſe his holy words, my heart there-with (me thought) was quite pierced thorow, and began to bleed within mee; for conſidering the greatneſſe of his Sanctitie and ſinceritie; and on the contrary, of my roguery and villanie, who by ſuch vile and wicked meanes, ſhould goe about to make him the inſtrument of my thefts; and the more to colour the buſineſſe, I let fall a few feigned teares; this holy Frier, thought I had ſhed them for Gods ſake, and therevpon began likewiſe himſelfe to grow ſomewhat tender.

This matter reſted thus till the next Sunday following, which was *All Saints* day; and when hee came to preach, hee ſpent the greateſt part of his Sermon in this buſineſſe of mine, indearing that Act ſo much the more, for that it had proceeded from a ſubject ſo much neceſſited; and did exaggerate it ſo to the heighth, that he moued all thoſe that were there to compaſſion, and made them the willinger to doe me good. So they repayred vnto him with their almes, which they powred forth in a plentifull manner.

On Munday morning, my Mother came to the (a) *Portaria*, and askt for that holy Father; ſaying, that ſhee was to ſpeake with him about an earneſt piece of buſineſſe. The Porter, who perceiued how deſirous ſhee was to come to the ſpeech of him, went in to call him, and preſently brought him vnto her. Whom ſhe no ſooner ſaw, but taking hold of his hands, and his Habit, kneeling downe before him, and offring to kiſſe his feete, told him; That the Purſe was hers, deſiring him for Gods ſake, that ſhe might haue it againe. She acquainted him with all the outward markes of it, as alſo with the particular and remarkeable pieces that were in it, as one that had well ſtudyed the Caſe. Wherevpon the fryer, without any more adoe, did deliver it vnto her, knowing the tokens to be true.

When my mother had the purſe in her owne hands, ſhee opened it, and taking out one of thoſe three *Doblones* that were in it, ſhe gaue it to this holy Father to bewow vpon me for the finding of it: As alſo foure *Royals*, for two Maſſes to be ſaid for the Soules in Purgatorie; and for that purpoſe ſhee recommended them vnto him. Thus did ſhee recover her purſe,

(a) Portaria *in your religious houſes, is that gate or Porters lodge, belonging to the Couent.* Couarruuias.

and brought it presently home vnto mee, not wanting so much as a pins-head of all that was in it;for I had likewise of purpose wrapt some of those pieces in little parcels of paper, that it might the sooner seeme to be some womans purse, who vse such kinde of fiddling and fooling with their money.

After this businesse was thus over-past, about some two dayes after, vpon Wednesday towards the Euening, I went to visit my Fryer; who against my comming thither, had provided mee a Coffer full of cloathes, which might very well out-weare ten yeares, and spending money besides for some dayes. Hee gaue it me with a cheerefull countenance, and willed mee to returne againe vnto him the next day: For he had something else to say vnto mee, and hee did not doubt, but it should be much for my good. I did so; repairing vnto him at the time appointed: Then did he aske mee, whether I could write or no? I inform'd him of my sufficiencie in that kinde. Whereupon he told me, that there was a certaine Gentlewoman, whose Husband was in the *Indies*, who did much desire to haue such a one as I was, to follow her businesse, and to haue a care to husband her estate both in the Citie, and in the Country, and to be true and faithfull in those things that shee should commit to his charge; and that therefore I should deale plainely with him, and truely tell him, whether I could like of this course or no? for that, according to my answere, he should seeke, or not seeke to settle mee there, as hee saw I stood affected.

I (after that I had giuen him thankes) said vnto him; My good father, that which appertaines to my personall paines, to my sollicitude, diligence, and fidelitie, where-with I ought to serue her, this I am able to tender vnto you; but I must tell you withall, that I am not of this Countrey, nor haue any knowne acquaintance in these parts. And therefore, if this Gentlewoman shall put her goods into my hands, and that I must haue the disposing of them, shee will expect that some body shall be bound for my truth; but I am not able to giue her any securitie; and this is likely to be the onely rubbe that I know. I leaue it therefore to your fatherly consideration, what is to be done in this case, crauing your advice therein. He told me, that hee would be my Surety; and that if that were all that I stood vpon, that stoppe should not damme vp the way, wishing me not to forgoe so faire an offer. I accepted it very willingly. For I saw, that by this meanes, my businesse was in a good forwardnesse, and would finde legges to goe well on with it. For there is not any thing, that doth sooner deceiue a just and an honest-minded man, then the simulated sanctitie of a wicked and counterfeit Rogue.

CHAP.

CHAPTER. VII.

Guzman de Alfarache, *being preferr'd to a Gentlewomans ſervice, robs her; Vpon this theft he is apprehended, and condemned to the Gallies during life.*

Of Cuſtome, and the force thereof.

SO great is the force of Cuſtome, as well in the roughnes of troubles and afflictions, as in the ſmooth waters of happineſſe and proſperitie, that ſome eaſe in the miſeryes, doth lighten the loade, and doth in ſome ſort helpe to make them ſeeme more facill in their ſufferance; but the greater burthen lights vpon thoſe that haue liu'd well and happily; there is no griefe to this; comfort hardly takes hold on them: Fortune cannot doe a man more harme, then when ſhe hath inveſted him with a habit of Happineſſe, to diſ-robe him thereof, and that diſgracefully: for this vn-expected privation makes it the more inſupportable.

This Cuſtome is that vncontrouled Lord, that preſcribes, and proſcribes Lawes at his pleaſure; infirming ſome, and confirming others; ratifying this, and diſ-annulling that. He (like a powerfull Prince) prohibits heere, and eſtabliſheth there; and conſequently, to that ſide, where-vnto he leanes, hee carries all after him, as well in the perſuit of Vice, as in the practice of Vertue. So that, if he apply himſelfe to goodneſſe, he eaſily runneth the danger of loſing it; and adhering to that which is evill, it will hardly afterwards be rooted out. There is no force that can ſubdue it; but hath power and command over all humane actions.

Some haue called Cuſtome a ſecond Nature; but experience teacheth vs, that its power is greater then that of Nature; For Cuſtome will overthrow Nature with her little finger. She is no body in her hands: if ſhe affect ſowre and bitter things, with ſuch artifice doth ſhee conſerue and ſweeten them; that as if they were not bitter at all, ſhee makes them to become ſweet and pleaſant. But if ſhee clap in cloſe with Truth, and linke her ſelfe in a League with her, ſhee is then the mightieſt Monarch that is, and her Fort is inexpugnable. Who but ſhee makes the poore Shepheard to liue alone by himſelfe in the ſolitarie fields, in the depth of the low Vallies, and on the tops of high Mountaines, amidſt Buſhes, and Thorns, Woods, and Rocks, oppoſing himſelfe againſt the vnmercifullneſſe & cruelty of a ſharp and rigorous Winter, ſuffering terrible Stormes, continuall Raines, bitter Windes, and piercing Ayres? And in the Summer, a parching, and ſcorching Sunne, which doth as it were roſt, and ſindge the Trees, burne Stones, and melt Metals? And its force being ſo great, that it tameth the fierceſt and wildeſt beaſts, and thoſe that are moſt venemous, bridling their fury, and allaying their poyſon, Time at laſt overcommeth Cuſtome; it is he, and none but he, that works vpon it, and to him onely it is ſubject.

Cuſtome muſt yeeld to time.

For comparing Cuſtome with Time, her long and ſtrong preſcriptions are but as Spiders webs, made to catch an Elephant: For, if Cuſtome be powerfull, Time is prudent and wiſe. And as wit goes beyond Strength; ſo Time ſubdueth Cuſtome. After night, comes day; after light, darkeneſſe: They tread one vpon the heeles of another; and the ſhadow that followes after the body, and growing greater and greater, conteſts with him for ſuperioritie. The Fire wageth warre with the Ayre; the Earth, with the Water, and all the Elements goe together by the eares, and are at a perpetuall enmitie one with another. The Sunne generates the Gold, it giues it it's

eſſence, and its life. In like manner, Time purſues, proſecutes, and fortifies Cuſtome. It makes and it marres, working wiſely with ſilence, according to the ſelfe-ſame order, as ſhe is wont by continued drops, to hollow the hardeſt ſtone.

Cuſtome is of others, not ours; but Time is our owne. It is hee that diſcovereth the thread, manifeſting what is moſt ſecret, and by the fire of occaſion, maketh an eſſay and tryall of his Art. By experience, hee teacheth vs the quilates and aloy, of that gold, & ſheweth vs the end where-vnto his pretenſions tend; And declar'd himſelfe at laſt to bee one, that never tooke any pitie of me. For, in a very ſhort ſpace, he made that publike, which I had laboured with all diligence to keepe hid and ſecret. All that which hath beene ſaid was verified truely of my ſelfe in its proper termes and caſes. O how often treating of my buſineſſes, trading of my wares, putting money out to vſe, framing nets to catch fooles, by raiſing of my price, ſelling my commodities farre dearer to him that went vpon truſt, then him that paid ready money, carrying alway my Beads in my hand, my countenance compoſ'd, and ſtill the ſame; with a Truely, and a Verily in my mouth (from whence never any truth yet came) I did openly (according to my old Cuſtome) coozen and ſteale from as many as I had to doe withall! but Time did diſcover all my roguerie.

The common courſe of Tradeſmen.

How often, and by how many, haue I beene heard to ſay; I promiſe you Sir, that it ſtood me in more, I cannot affoord it you at that price, I vow and proteſt vnto you, that I get not a Royall by you, in all this whole parcell of Wares that you haue bought of me? I may goe ſhut vp my ſhop, if I make many ſuch markets. And if I haue let you haue it better cheape then I could affoord it; it is becauſe I am to make ſome payment of moneyes, and if it were not for that, you ſhould not haue them at this rate. And the ſame courſe I tooke in a thouſand other things of the like nature, not having any other vſe then for moneys, more then from their hands to mine, to gaine a hundred in a hundred.

Guzman *delivers ſome things worthy our conſideration, but to be avoyded by vs.*

How often likewiſe, when I was in my proſperitie, during this my good fortune, and ſtudying dayly to grow greater and greater (onely that I might get my ſelfe a good opinion in the world, meerely for vaine-glory, and not for the loue of God: for I did not ſo much as dreame vpon him, nor thinke vpon any thing elſe, ſaue onely to be well thought of, and to haue the peoples eyes vpon me, who taking me to be a charitable minded man, and a giver of almes, would gather there-vpon, that I was a man of good Conſcience, and that I had a care of my ſoules health, and therefore might the better truſt me) did I cauſe a great number of poore, morning after morning to come to my doore, and keeping them there two or three houres, that there might be good notice taken of them, and ſeene over and over by thoſe that paſt along by my houſe, did I afterwards ſend away with (God hee knowes) a poore ſlender almes, whileſt with that *no nada*, that thing of nothing, which they received from me, I did gaine my ſelfe a good reputation, which like a ſtalking horſe, I made vſe of, the better to get other mens goods into my hands? How often haue I divided a loafe of bread in twaine, (when I was no whit hungry, but as full as my belly could hold) and of that which remained, as if it were a thing to be loſt, or to be caſt away to the dogges, did I part in a thouſand pieces, and beſtow it afterwards on the poore? Nor did I giue it vnto thoſe, who, I knew had moſt need of it; but to thoſe, by whoſe mouthes, I knew, it would be moſt ſpoken of, and divulged to the world. And how often (having a bloudy heart, and a damnable intention, being naturally cowardly, timorous and feeble) did I pardon, and put vp injuries, putting them in publike to Gods account, mine owne thoughts ſecretly condemning me, did I in ſecret diſſemble them, not ſticking to ſay in publike, God be thanked for it;

when

when as I was truly inwardly offended, and that no other thing in the world did hinder my revenge, but that I was fearefull, and found my ſelfe vnable to put it in execution? But the coales thereof were aliue, and did burne within my ſoule, whoſe flames I had much to doe to ſuppreſſe. How often at other times, did I ſhew my ſelfe an abſtinent and orderly faſter, not for any other thing in the world, then to ſeeme to bee ſuch a one, and that I might ſpend leſſe, and ſpare the more? But when I did eate at another mans coſt, or ſpend vpon another mans Purſe, I did then ſwallow downe my victuals like a Cormorant, then I had a Wolfe in my belly, and was ſtill afraid, that I ſhould neuer haue enough. I did continually viſit the Churches, I would often both goe and ſend to the Priſons, only to get my ſelfe credit amongſt the Officers there, and ſuch other Miniſters as belonged vnto them, and not for to doe any good offices for the Priſoners, or any gratefull worke vnto God. But rather to the end, that if it ſhould bee my ill hap at one time or other to come thither, being formerly knowne by them, they might vſe me the more kindely, and beare me the better reſpect. If I repaired to the Hoſpitals, if I went vpon Pilgrimage, if I did frequent places of Devotion, kiſsing, nay, gnawing as it were the Altars, out of a hungry zeale; if I would not loſe a Sermon, nor a Iubilee, nor any publike devotion, all thoſe ſteps that I trod, and all that paines that I tooke, were only directed to the getting mee a good name, to the intent that vnder the colour thereof, I might the better coozen my neighbour, and take his cloake from off his backe.

Moreover, I muſt not forget to tell you, that divers things were now and then told me, and thoſe very ſecret ones, touching ſuch, or ſuch a perſon; the which were kept ſo cloſe, that afterwards, when I did chance to talke with thoſe perſons, whom they concerned, counſelling them to leaue off ſuch and ſuch courſes, or rather correcting and reproving them for it, they imagined of me, that I had come to the knowledge of them by ſome divine revelation. And ſo by indirect wayes, and a ſeeming kinde of holineſſe in mee, I gaue them to vnderſtand their faults; by which meanes, I got my ſelfe a great deale of reputation, eſpecially amongſt the women, who after theſe things, and Gypſies, runne as ſwift as the winde; being facill in beleeving, and nimble in publiſhing. Out of whoſe mouth, my praiſe and commendation went ſpreading it ſelfe abroad.

Many a time and oft, when ſome poore body was willing to vſe my helpe, making eſpeciall choyſe of me, as one that was well eſteemed and reputed of all men, I would ſtand in the open ſtreet with a Diſh in my hand, publikely begging Almes for him, of thoſe that I was acquainted withall: and having got a pretty round ſome of money, I gaue him the leaſt part of it, and kept the reſt to my ſelfe. I lickt vp the Creame and left him the Whey.

When I was minded to doe ſome notable Villanie, the firſt thing that I went about, for the better effecting of ſuch a buſineſſe, was to get me a very faire and goodly large Ieſuiticall cloake, where-with to cover it; and for the better diſſembling of it, I would put on all the geſtures of outward Sanctity, and ſubmiſsion, mortification, and good example; having the true turning vp of the white of mine eye, a ſober looke, a graue vtterance, ſeldome ſpetting, but when I was to ſpeake to the purpoſe, a broad-woking Hat, a little Band, and a leſſe paire of Breeches. And with this kinde of habit, and poſture, I bore the Ball before me, and tript vp the heeles of all thoſe that ſtood in my way. Which if in nothing elſe, yet was it plainly to be ſeene in this; that I had there-with ſo eaſily deceived this holy man, this good honeſt Frier, that wiſht me ſo well, nay had already done ſo well for mee. Nor did I only doe him this harme alone, but a greater miſchiefe followed vpon the necke of it. That he by my meanes loſt that good opinion, which the world had of him: But ſay hee had not loſt it; and admit, that hee kept it whole and ſound, as before;

before; yet, what a villanous inſtrument was I, and what juſt cauſe had I given of prejudicing, and that in no Meane meaſure, the credit and reputation of ſo honeſt and innocente a creature as he was?

Guzman *entertained into ſervice by a Gentlewoman.*

Well he had now placed me with this Gentle-woman, being verily perſwaded of me, that I would doe her all true and faithfull ſervice as he might very well preſume by thoſe particular Actions, which I had made ſhew of vnto him, of this my rare and ſingular (ſhall I ſay knaverie, or) perfection? Well, what ſo e're I was, I am ſure he tooke mee to be a very honeſt man. He gaue his word for me, and truſted me with much of his owne: I could not lacke any thing, if it lay in his power to pleaſure me, ſo good an opinion had he conceiued of me. She willingly (vpon his recommendation) receiu'd me into her ſervice. Shee truſted me with her wealth and her familie. Shee had ordained a very good lodging for me, provided a delicate ſoft bed for me, and all other neceſſaries that were fitting for me. Shee vſed mee in all things elſe, not as a ſervant, but as a Kinſman, and as ſuch a one, for whoſe ſake ſhe did verily beleeue, that God would throw many favours vpon her. Sometimes ſhe would intreat me, to ſay an *Ave-Mary* for the health and good ſucceſſe of her Husband. I made anſwer to all her demands, as if I had beene ſome Oracle, and with ſuch a deale of mortification, that I made her many times to ſhead teares. By this meanes I came to coozen her, to rob her, and which was worſt of all, to injure her, by wronging her houſe. For you ſhall vnderſtand, that this Gentle-woman had a certaine faire white ſlaue (none I wiſh of theſe blacke Moores, but a handſome well-favoured Wench) to her Maid-ſervant, whom for a long time, I tooke to bee free-borne, and ſhe likewiſe ſeemed to be a good, and holy creature. But in very truth, ſhe was ſuch a one, that ſhe and I might very well ſhake hands; of vs both, there was never a barell better Herring: Well, were ſhe better or worſe then my ſelfe, be ſhe what ſhe will be, let it ſuffice you, ſhe and I had tumbled together vpon one bed. I know not how we did ſmell out one another, that in ſo ſhort a time, we had growne to be ſo well acquainted. For within ſome few dayes that I had beene in the houſe, there was no ho with her, I could not keepe her out of my Chamber, would I never ſo faine, but ſhe would come in whether I would or no. To all the reſt of the ſervants, ſhe ſeemed to be a Saint, and looked as though butter would not haue melted in her mouth, but with me ſhe ſhewd her ſelfe moſt looſe and diſſolute, as if ſhe had beene bred vp in ſome Brothell houſe, or trained to this geare in the publike Stewes, yet ſtill carryed her ſelfe with that wiſdome and diſcretion, that none of the houſe, except my ſelfe, no not her Miſtreſſe could come to know, or the leaſt way to ſuſpect, that there was any ſuch ſecret buſineſſe betweene vs. Beſides, ſhe did ſo cheriſh me, and make ſo much of me, that my Cheſt was never without good ſtore of Collations, and other ſweet-meats. So that my Chamber, was like a Comfit-makers Shop. She furniſhed me with a great deale of fine Linnen, as white as the curd, neatly folded vp, neat and ſweet it was. And her Miſtreſſe was glad to ſee it; for ſhe tooke vs both to be Saints. She likewiſe gaue me money to ſpend, not knowing whence ſhe had it, nor how ſhe came by it, or from whoſe hands ſhe received it.

Guzman *lies with his Miſtreſſes maid.*

I had a glimpſe of ſome things: but becauſe I would not fall from thoſe good tearmes wherein I ſtood, I would not be too curious in the ſearch of them; as well that I might not loſe her company, while I continued there; as alſo that I might thereby oblige her the more vnto me: I went entertaining her with faire words, and good hopes, telling her, that when time ſhould ſerue, I would ſeeke to redeeme her out of her captivitie, and afterwards make her my Wife. This ſeaſoned the pot, made her rowze vp her ſpirits, and like a Spaniell, to wait diligently vpon mee, and to ſerue mee in any thing that ſhe thought would pleaſe me. For, conſidering the loue which I

feigned

feigned to beare vnder her,(though ſhee were a crafty ſubtill Wench)ſhe did evermore make ſure account of mee, as if I were not a free-man, and ſhee a Slaue. And yet not ſo free,as you thinke neither, having a Wife (for ought I knew to the contrary)ſtill aliue.

My miſtris knew nothing concerning her owne eſtate and wealth, nor did finger any other moneys, then what I gaue her. All things that were in the Citie, went through my hands;I likewiſe had the command of all her ſtocke abroad in the Country, and did take and gather in all the fruits and profits thereof. For my deſigne was to make a reaſonable good round booty, and ſo get mee gone, to ſeeke out a new world. I had a great minde to goe to the *Indies*, and did but watch for an opportunitie to imbarke my ſelfe,howſoever it ſhould afterwards fall out with mee. But I could not handſomely put this blow home. For my Miſtris fore-ſeeing her certaine ruine, for that her Farmers and Tenants had told her, that they had paid in their rents to mee; the Shepheards, that I had ſold her flockes; the Baylife of her Vineyards,that I had convaid all her Wines out of their Vaults and Sellars,where they were wont to be kept; and that of all this,one penny-worth thereof was not come to her purſe; ſhe reſolued with her ſelfe to communicate this matter in private onely to one Gentleman that was her neere kinsman. Shee then acquainted him with all that had paſſed, and what an ill account I had made her, intreating him to apply ſome convenient remedie for the ſame. Hee, without ſpeaking ſo much as a word thereof vnto mee, vvhen as I vvas going one evening to caſt vp my reckoning,and to deviſe with my ſelfe,how I might make cleane worke of all that my Miſtris had, not thinking (God wot)on any ſuch thing,being devoyd of all care, and free from the leaſt ſuſpition of any ſuch matter, the weather being hot,and my ſelfe very drowzie,I fell faſt aſleepe.

Guzman *arreſted and carried to priſon.*

Now,whileſt I was thus taking my reſt, and thinking no body any harme, an *Alguazil* comes in ſuddainely vpon mee, takes hold on mee,and without telling me why,or vvherefore;(for that (ſaid he) I ſhould know hereafter at better leiſure) hee carried mee away to priſon. The buſineſſe was thus carried, that neither our houſe, nor the ſtreete, ſhould be in a hurry and tumult,by any ſtirre or coyle that I ſhould make, when I ſhould come to know by vvhoſe order I was apprehended, and committed. I went along very ſad and heavy, and knew not in the world what to thinke of it; one while deviſing with my ſelfe, whether this my Commitment were by vertue of ſome *Requiſitoria*, or commiſſion come out of *Italy*? Whether it were at the ſuite of my Creditors in *Caſtile*? Or for ſome of my new thefts, that I had ſo lately committed in that Citie, which perhaps for want of good carriage, were now come to light? And albeit every one of theſe had weight inough to preſſe downe my heart, and to make it ſinke vnder ſo many, and ſuch heavy burthens;yet did it grieue mee more then all the reſt,that I ſhould now lye no more at racke and manger, as I was wont to doe; and that together vvith my good name, I ſhould likewiſe loſe my credit and eſtimation, and that men vvould not truſt mee,as they had done heretofore. But vvhat remedie but patience? But ſeeing it vvas no better, God be thanked it vvas no vvorſe. For this mis-fortune befell mee juſt at ſuch a time vvhen as my Crowne vvas ſhauen and had not any thing vvorth the ſpeaking, that vvas to be found either about mee,or at home in my lodging. For in regard that my Mother vvas a ſingle vvoman, and liu'd alone by her ſelfe, by a little and a little,I carried all that I had ſcrap't together,to her, and ſhee kept it for mee. Afterwards they broke open my Cheſt, but found nothing in it, but a Bull of the laſt yeare,and a fevv of old ragges. Where-vpon,they came to priſon to take an account of mee; giuing them ſo bad a one, as might vvell be preſumed from ſuch a one as I vvas,vvho vvould alvvayes receiue, but never pay.

I did

I did not giue them ſuch a Bead-roll, as they doe, that pray vpon their Beades. They laid great ſummes to my charge, but could meete with nothing but Blankes. They made ſtrict inquiſition to finde them out; They looked here, and they looked there, but they could not light vpon any thing, for I had not ſo much as one farthing of it in my cuſtodie. When they ſaw that, they got them to the Frier, and gaue him a large account of the caſe how it ſtood vvith them.

Hee (like a wiſe man) did neither condemne, nor abſolue me, till he ſhould heare, what I could ſay for my ſelfe, that hee might the better judge thereof, vvhen hee had heard both parties. Hee came to the priſon to viſit mee, and talking with mee about this buſineſſe, I deny'de all, and ſtood ſtiffely to it; affirming, that they had ſuborn'd falſe witneſſes againſt mee; and that I vvas as innocent as the child that was new borne; and that no man knew leſſe thereof then I did. And therefore my hope was in God, and that hee vvould helpe mee; and that, as hee had freed *Ioſeph* and *Suſanna*; ſo would hee defend the juſtneſſe of my cauſe, and would not ſuffer the vprightneſſe of my dealing to periſh: Acknowledging vvithall, that this, and much more chaſtiſement my ſinnes had deſerued, for many other my former offences, which I had committed againſt his divine Majeſty.

The good religious man knew not what to doe, nor to vvhich of vs hee ſhould giue moſt credit. Hee was much perplexed within himſelfe, and ſtood doubtfull to which ſide hee ſhould leane. But for the preſent, hee inclined to that part that was falling, ſeeking to ſupport the weakeſt. Hee gaue mee comfortable vvords, promiſing his beſt care and paines in my defence, recommending my buſineſſes vnto God, who would (when hee ſaw fit) free mee out of my troubles, and afford mee his helping hand. Hee tooke his leaue of me; from thence hee went to the *Eſcriuanos* office, for to *abonar*, and make good my Cauſe, deſiring him for charities-ſake, that hee would haue an eſpeciall care of it, and looke vvell into it, telling him that hee vvas verily perſwaded, that I vvas a religious honeſt man, one that feared God, and vvas a Saint vpon earth.

But vvhen the *Eſcriuano* heard him laſh out ſo farre into my commendation, laughing heartily thereat, hee pull'd forth ſome *Proceſſes*, that had beene put in againſt mee, and making a relation vnto him of the particular points therein contained, laying there before him, vvhat a lewd kinde of fellow I was; the thefts that I had committed; and the coozening trickes that I had vſed; the poore Frier vvas aſhamed of himſelfe. Therevpon this good holy Father, vvith all the ſinceritie and ſimplicitie in the vvorld, vp and told him, vvhat had paſt betweene him and mee, and by vvhat meanes hee came to the firſt knowledge of mee, and how and for vvhat cauſe, hee gaue mee ſo much truſt and credit; not thinking (good man) thereby, to doe mee any harme; but did onely tell him this, that hee might be the better perſwaded of mee, and that he himſelfe had ſome reaſon to ſpeake for mee, and to doe mee all the lawfull favour he could.

When the *Eſcriuano* had heard this Tale, hee grew heart-angry, and his ſoule vvas vexed at this my villany, to ſee that I had no more grace vvith me, but to make ſo graue a perſon a ſtale for my roguery; and that I ſhould put ſo groſſe a jeſt vpon ſo good a man. He vvas herewith ſo incenſed againſt me, and his choller did riſe in that abundance, that if hee had had the Law in his owne hands, I had preſently beene hang'd out of the vvay, vvithout any more adoe. Hee left the office, and vvent preſently to the *Teniente*, or Deputy Lieutenant, to vvhom hee made a large relation of all the vvhole matter, and ſet it downe all vnder his owne hand, and finding himſelfe as much affronted vvith this vvrong I had done the Fryer, and that the parties aggrieued had paſt over all their power vnto him to proſecute it for them, as if it had

had beene his owne cauſe, they laid more and more to my charge, forming another new proceſſe againſt mee of farre greater aggravation then the former; and commanding me ſtricter impriſonment, vvilling the Iaylor to put me downe into the dungeon.

This vnfortunate day did not catch me ſo naked, that I vvanted money to be able to draw out my thread to it's length, and to wage Law vvith them. But the Priſon is of the nature and qualitie of fire; it conſumeth all that come vnto it, converting it into it's owne proper ſubſtance. Large experiences had I made thereof, and by my account I found it to be a Winde-Mill, and a May-game for children. There is not any one that comes thither, but is a Miller, and grindes there; crying out, that his impriſonment is but for a thing of nothing, a toy, a trifle; vvhen as ſometime it ſo falleth out, that they are committed thither for three or foure murders, for a robbery vpon the High-way, or for ſome other the like foule and odious offences. It is a place where fooles ſet vp their reſt, a forced tryall of a mans patience, a deare-bought experience, a too late repentance, a prouall of a mans friends, and a revenge-ment of his enemies, a confuſed Common-wealth, a ſhort Hell, a long Death, a haven of Sighs, a valley of Teares, a houſe of Mad-men, a very Bedlame, where every one cryes out, and loues to heare himſelfe talke of his owne fooliſh and wilde prankes. And all of them being guilty, not a man of them that will confeſſe he is faulty, nor that his crime is any thing heynous.

They that are priſoners, are like vnto your Grapes on a Vine Bower, which as ſoone as they waxe ripe, there is not a ſprigge or bough of them vvhich is not laden with Waſpes, who inſenſibly (they hauing no feeling of it,) ſucke all the juyce and ſweetneſſe of them, leauing onely the Caskes and Husks of them empty, hanging vpon the Arbour; And as are the Grapes, ſo is the ſwarme; if great and more, the more Waſpes; if few and ſmall, the leſſe. As it is with this Vine, and it's Grapes; ſo it is with thoſe that are led to Priſon.

The Officers and Miniſters, that belong therevnto, come thicke & threefold about him, clinging ſo cloſe vnto him, and ſucking ſo hard from him, that they never leaue him, till they haue drawne him drie, and taken all his pyth and ſubſtance from him. And when the poore Priſoner hath not longer wherewithall to feed his hungry maw, and that they haue ſqueez'd all his ſweetneſſe out of him, they flie away from him, and forget him, as if there had never beene any ſuch man, leauing him to himſelfe poore, and comfortleſſe. And this is as it were but a flea-biting, and a little evill, in compariſon of a greater, which is too vſuall and common amongſt them. For if the priſoner be poore, and haue no money, they preſently pronounce ſentence againſt him, leauing him ſtarke naked, and vndone.

Touching Iaylors, and Keepers of Priſons.

As ſoone as they conſigne and deliver him over to the Maſter Keeper, or head-Iaylor, who hath the keeping and diſpoſing of the vpper-Wards, and the beſt lodgings, they giue him that entertainment as his purſe ſhall deſerue. For that Keeper or Iaylor does like him that buyes; who has no reſpect to the qualitie of him that ſels, but to the thing that he ſelleth: ſo to him it matters not, whether the priſoner be more one, then another; Noble, or baſe, Gentleman, or Clowne; all is one for that: He lookes onely vnto that which hee giues him. When his Commitment is not a matter of importance, nor meriting corporall puniſhment, and is not of that heynous nature, as murder, theft, the foule ſinne, and other ſuch like, they leaue him at large to take the pleaſure of the priſon, alwayes provided, that they pay him well for this his liberty. I was well vſ'd at the firſt, (for my cauſe was not criminall) and handſomely lodg'd, before that I had giuen ſecuritie either to ſatisfie, or anſwere to that debt, wherewithall I was charged. By this time they all knew me, and all of vs vnderſtood one another well enough, we were all Camerades, and

hayle fellow, vvell met, one vvith another. I gaue them content, and ſtayd below amongſt them, talking and paſſing away the time vvith them,. but had evermore an eye, to ſee if I could ſafely get to the doore, and ſtood ſtill, watching an opportunitie, vvhen I might conveniently doe it, and ſo giue them the ſlip.

The faſhion of Attourneys, and Sollicitours, and the like Officers of your Courts of Iuſtice.

But vpon my firſt apprehending, as ſoone as I vvas come vvithin ſight of the priſon; as alſo, after that I vvas committed, there preſently flockt about mee twenty ſeverall Proctors, Attourneys, and Sollicitours, (who liu'd by the ſinnes of the people) vvho vvith their pen and paper, (vvhich they never vvent vvithout) tooke both my name, and the cauſe of my impriſonment; all of them making it a matter of nothing, and an eaſie ſuite to goe through vvith. One of them would tell me, that the judge vvas his very good friend, and did favour all the cauſes that hee brought before him; another, that hee had a great intereſt in the publike Notary; a third, that vvithin two houres he vvould get me bayled; a fourth, that my buſineſſe vvas a toy, a meere trifle, a thing of no conſideration in the world, and that for ſixe Royals, hee vvould inſtantly vndertake to free mee. Every one of them vvould make himſelfe Maſter of my cauſe, ſaying, that it did properly belong vnto him, for that hee had accompanied me, & come along with me, from the time of my Arreſt. This man I entertayned, for his plea of prevention, being vnwilling to croſſe that Proverbe; of *Firſt come, firſt ſerv'd.* Wherevpon I entreated him, that hee vvould call ſuch an *Eſcriuano*, a friend of mine vnto me. Another, for that hee vvas the firſt that put pen to paper, and had drawne my Petition for mee to the *Teniente*. But to my ſelfe, I laught at them all. For I knew them vvell enough, and the manner of their proceeding. For they onely liue by vvhat they can get and wring from a man before-hand; but afterwards you ſhall not draw them along, with two yoke of Oxen, they will ſo hang the Arſe. And there was one of them that hauing a Power or Warrant to free a Thiefe, was not aſhamed to aske him money for to make his Interrogatories, after that he ſhould be condemned to the Gallies.

Thus, all of them ſtriuing, which of them ſhould be imploy'd in my buſineſſe, there comes me ruſhing in violently thorow the midſt of them, a very bold and confident fellow, that thought to rule the roſte, and to carrie all away before him, one that had beene my Proctor heretofore in criminall cauſes, and ſaid vnto me; What, Sir, are you here? I told him, yes. Which queſtion he might haue ſau'd; for he ſaw I was ſure enough. Then he askt me, What was the cauſe of my impriſonment? When I had told it him, hee replyde: Tuſh, Laugh and be merry, Sir, take no care for this, it is a toy, a trifle, I vvarrant you Sir, wee will take order for this, and therefore let it never trouble you. Haue you any money, Sir, that I may carry it to the *Eſcriuano*? I vvill poaſt preſently vvith a Petition to the *Temente*, that you may put in Sureties to anſwere the matter, and in the meane time to haue your libertie to follow your buſineſſe. And if he ſhall refuſe to grant you proviſion in this Caſe, we will haue a Writ of remoue, to bring the matter into the open Hall, and thoſe that aſsiſt there in Councell, ſhall preſently giue order for your releaſe. I ſhall ſpeake to one of them, who is my ſingular good Lord, and I dare pawne my vvord to you, that you ſhall not tarry here aboue halfe a day.

When the others heard this, they ſaid, Ha? how now? what's this? is the winde in that doore? Heere is a pretty kinde of forme of framing a Petition with all my heart. Is this the courſe you meane to take? Wee haue beene ſome twenty of vs and vpward, theſe two long houres and better, taking paines in this buſineſſe, and vvill you now take the ſame out of our hands? Shall the hindermoſt dogge beare away the Hare? Muſt he now follow the ſuite?

My Proctor therevpon, made them this anſwere; My Maſters, had you beene

beene writing and labouring about this buſineſſe theſe two moneths and more; yet notwithſtanding vpon my comming vnto him, I am the man that muſt goe thorow with it. For this Gentleman is my very good friend, and I am to diſpatch all his buſineſſes. And therefore a Gods name yee may be gone; and let my Clyent alone.

When they heard him ſay ſo, they replyde vnto him; O what a ſweet and ſeemely manner of negociating is this? What a faire flouriſh does bee make? Where has he waſht his hands, that hee ſhould ſhaue vs on this faſhion, and carry away this cauſe ſo cleanely? You may be gone, Sir, and it pleaſe you; for this Gentleman knowes reaſon, and will entertaine him in his cauſe that hee hath moſt minde too: and therefore vvhat need ſo many words? In concluſion, one ſaid yea; and the other ſaid no; and in the end, they differr'd ſo long about it, that they grew at laſt ſo hot and ſo angry one with another, that they began to rip vp each others faults, and to tell (without any other bodies helpe) who they were; there was not that ſpot in their practice, vvhich they did not lay open to view; nor that ſtaine in their life, which they did not diſcover; ſhewing how, and in what manner they did cozen the poore priſoners, and picke their money out of their purſes. Which was a Dialogue (for thoſe that heard it) of excellent entertainment, and paſſing good mirth; for that they were truthes, repreſented to the life. And this (I aſſure you) is a common Trade amongſt them, and this cozening courſe they take at all houres, and with all perſons, as well priſoners, as others.

Now, when this heat was over-paſt, and all was quiet; I came to my old Proctor, intreating him to doe what was fitting, and I would ſee him well contented for his paines. I gaue him foure Royals to begin withall: vvhich when he had fingred, I could ſee my friend no more in fifteene dayes after. I knew well enough before, what hee meant to doe; and that he had no other errand vnto me but this, to licke ſomething from me, though it were never ſo little, the better to ſecure the ſeething of the Pot, againſt the next day following, and to haue where-withall to goe to the Market-place. But I was driuen perforce to make choyce of him, becauſe I ſtood in feare of him: Who, for that he was well acquainted with all my old cauſes, if I ſhould haue refuſed him, or ſhew'd him any but the leaſt vnkindneſſe, & that he ſhould haue taken a ſtitch therevpon againſt mee, hee would haue diſcovered the pot of Roſes, and throwne open the cloake that covered all my knaueries, and would in two houres haue heapt vpon me a hundred ſeverall accuſations. So that partly chooſing him, (by refuſing the reſt) and partly leauing him, (in the pooreneſſe of his Fee) as well to haue him hold his peace, as to get him to follow my buſineſſe; for I muſt haue paid ſome body; I held it the beſt courſe to make him my *Proctor*, though this were not a buſineſſe that required much following; but did mainely conſiſt on matter of money. But afterwards when I began to be examined, and thorowly ſifted of that my audacious deluſion, and impoſture, vvhich I had put vpon that good Religious Fryer, and that they came to compare cauſe with cauſe, then did I need a *Proctor*.

Now things began to goe on in good earneſt; they call'd mee vp, and vvent about to clap bolts on my legges: but thoſe I redeem'd with my money. I paid the Keeper, who had the keeping of them, and the young fellow, that vvas to put them on, had his Fee likewiſe of me. My *Eſcrinano* now often viſits mee; my Petitions runne vp and downe from place to place; Giue me thus much, ſayes my Sollicitour; Where is my Fee, quoth my Advocate? Thus by little and little, like ſo many Horſe-leeches, they went ſucking all my bloud from mee, till they had ſcarce left me one drop. So that now I was like a cluſter of Grapes, that was quite dry'de away, and withered to nothing. Yea notwithſtanding all theſe miſeries, it is not fit, that I ſhould paſſe over in ſilence, that which paſſed betwixt my Wench, and my ſelfe. For as much that every mor-

ning, as ſoone as it was day, ſhee rayned downe Manna vpon me; in her I found ſome helpe, for that ſhe furniſhed me with all things that were neceſſary for me; and when the rigour of my impriſonment was vpon mee, being ſentenced by the *Teniente* to the Gallyes, ſhee ſent me a letter: which, for that it is a pleaſant and a witty one, I thought good to make it knowne vnto you; as alſo, becauſe it is not amiſſe, to ſlacken the ſtring, and vnbend the bowe, by recounting of ſomething, that may ſerue for entertainment. Which letter ſpake after this manner:

To *Señor Guzman de Alfarache*, my hearts-joy, and my hopes comfort.

A letter of Guzmans wench lamenting his misfortunes.

MY deare Loue; *(though now to my great griefe, a poore condemned Slaue) I write theſe lines to no other end vnto thee, ſaue onely to perſwade thee to caſt away ſorrow, and to take comfort vnto thee. Let it ſuffice (ſweet-heart) that I haue none; and let me alone mourne for thee: for ever ſince Saint* Iames *his day, about two of the clocke in the after-noone, when thou waſt firſt apprehended whileſt thou lay'ſt quietly aſleepe, who (hard-hearted as they were) would not let thee take out thy nap, my Soule hath much ſorrowed for thee. But that which farther increaſeth my affliction, is; that this ſad newes is brought to day to my teares, that the* Teniente *hath adjudged thee to two hundred ſtripes, and tenne yeares continuance in the Gallyes. God laſh his ſhoulders for it with whips of wyer, and the knottieſt, and ſevereſt ſcourges of his wrath; Let him liue a ſlaue all the daves of his life in the Gallies, and then rot, and dye. It well appeares, that hee wiſhes thee not ſo well as I doe; nor knowes the bitternes of thoſe teares that I ſhed for thee. Little does hee thinke how deare thy loue coſts mee.*

Iuliana *wiſhes me to tell thee, that thou ſhould'ſt forth-with appeale from him. Appeale twenty times, and more (if more ſhall ſeeme fitting vnto thee) and take care for nothing; for (by the grace of God) I doubt not, but all ſhall goe well enough in the end: And then, this Tyrannicall* Teniente *ſhall ſee (though it grieue him) that thou ſhalt not for ever remaine a priſoner to his pride: for I ſweare and vow vnto thee by this my (a)* Mulata *face, that I will make him to remember as long as hee liues, the teares which hee hath drawne from mine eyes; which haue beene ſo many, that I had much adoe to keepe them from the worlds knowledge; And I ſhould haue powred them forth, till they ſhould haue growne to be great rivers, had I not feared, I ſhould haue beene drowned in them, and ſo never haue enjoyed thee more. By the faith that I owe vnto thee, I will never ceaſe weeping, till the fountaines of my teares ſwell ſo high, that I may come ſwimming vnto thee, and drawe thee out of that dungeon, where-vnto my Soule is chayned, and remayneth there priſoner with thee.* Iuliana *can tell thee, how I tore my hayre, when I heard this bad newes. By her I haue ſent thee twenty Royalls, that thou may'ſt follow thy ſuite, be as merry as thou may'ſt, and that thou would'ſt thinke on me, howbeit I knew the time, when ſuch ceremonies needed not betweene thee and mee: For had I beene but a minute of an houre from thee, ſtaying no longer away, then while I had put a few coales vnder the pot, thou didſt thinke it a thouſand yeares. Remember (my ſweet Slaue, my pretty Cage-bird) that I both loue, and adore thee: And receiue this greene girdle from my hands, in token of the good hope which I haue, that mine eyes ſhall quickly ſee thee ſet fr[illegible] And if for to ſupply thy wants, it were needfull that I ſhould be ſold, brand this my face with two hot yrons, and ſet a Slaues marke in eyther cheeke, and make ſale of me in the open market: for aſſure thy ſelfe, I ſhall eſteeme it the greateſt happines that can befall me, that my bondage may worke thy freedome.*

Thou tell'ſt me, that Soto, *thy* Camarade *is ill, and was never well, ſince the Hang-man dealt ſo roughly with him, and ſtraind the ſtrings ſo hard, that he made him change his note; racking as much from him, as there needed no farther confeſſi-*

(a) Mulata, *is a maid-childe, that is borne of a Negra, and a ſayre man; and ſo on the contrary. And becauſe it is an extraordinary mixture, they compare ſuch a one to a Mule*

on;

on; it grieues me to the very heart, that a man of his ſpirit, ſhould be ſo cow'd by ſuch a vile and baſe fellow, that for very feare, he ſhould be forced to confeſſe, not onely his owne, but other mens faults. Commend me vnto him (though vnknowne) and tell him, that I am heartily ſorry for him; ſhare part of theſe Conſernes with him, which I ſend you, which (my deare Loue) I haue made a ſhift to ſaue for thee.

To morrow is our kneading day, wherein wee muſt mould vp our bread, and put the loaues into the Oven; then ſhall I make thee ſuch a friendly cake, and butter it ſo finely for thee, that thou ſhalt not be aſhamed to bid thy beſt friends to the eating of it.

Send me your foule linnen, and ſhift daily, that you may keepe your ſelfe cleane and ſweete. For ſince that theſe mine armes cannot imbrace thee, they ſhall tyre and weary out themſelues in thy ſervice; as being moſt willing to doe any thing, that may giue thee content. My Miſtris ſweares that ſhe will hang thee, becauſe ſhe ſayes, you haue rob'd her, of you know what; but I am ſure, you haue rob'd another of more then ſhe; of I know what you know; To a wiſe man (a) a word is ſufficient.

If Vſher Gomez *ſhall come to ſee thee, talke not with him, or if thou doeſt, be very circumſpect, what thou ſay'ſt vnto him: For he is a man, that carries two faces vnder one hood; He ſeekes to inſinuate himſelfe into other mens boſomes, onely to ſift them: And beſides, he is a great friend to a cup of wine; And a drunken tongue (which I need not to tell thee) will blab out all it knowes. I advertiſe thee of all: And becauſe this is for no other end, I heere end: yet never end to pray vnto God, that he will preſerue thee for me, and that he will free thee out of this filthie dungeon. From this thy chamber, about an houre before mid-night, my contemplation (ſweet heart) being ſolely and wholy beſtowed on thy beſt-beloued ſelfe.*

Thy Slaue till death.

Proverbe.
(a) A Buen entendedor, pocas palabras.

This vvenches oyle maintayned the weke aliue, all the time of my troubles, which otherwiſe would haue gone out. For I liu'd at a great charge, my expences vvere many, and though I had made my harveſt, and gathered a great deale together, yet all was melted away, like ſalt in water, or butter againſt the fire. My Mother likewiſe, vvhen ſhee ſaw in vvhat bad tearmes my ſuite ſtood, told mee; That ſhe was rob'd of all that ſhe had; but as I did conceiue (and I thinke truly) her meaning was to hold that faſt which ſhee had, vvhen ſhe ſaw it was to no purpoſe to let it goe. Wherevpon, I vvas inforced to doe as the reſt did, and to follow the currant. My plea ſtill vvent on, and I wanted money to maintayne my cauſe. I could not corrupt the *Eſcriuano*, (for I had nothing vvherewithall to bribe him) The Iudge, he was ſo highly incenſt againſt me, that there was no hope of working him; My Proctor, hee ſlept in the buſineſſe, and would not ſtirre a foote; and my Solicitor fled as farre from me, as his legges would carry him. There was now no more juyce in my bunch of grapes, the Waſps vvere now gone their vvay, and had left mee all alone; they had pronounced Sentence againſt me, the effect whereof vvas, That I ſhould be ſet vpon an Aſſe, and ſo ride ſtript to the waſte, round about the Towne, receiue ſo many ſtripes; the Cryer proclayming my offence before mee; and this done, to remaine for ſix yeares in the Gallyes.

When I ſaw I muſt be made a Galley-ſlaue, and that there vvas no redemption of this my puniſhment, I put on a brazen face on the matter, and grew careleſſe of any mans either ſight, or cenſure. I playd my part vvithout feare, or ſhame, as being now the Kings Slaue, and out of all other mens reach and danger, they hauing nothing more to doe with me. Yet was it ſome comfort vnto me, that my *Camrade Soto* was condemned to the like puniſhment, and that we ſhould, like a couple of louing Curres, be ty'de together in one payre of couples. And as vve vvere fellowes and Companions in one Priſon,

and in one and the ſame Dungeon, and had runne both of vs one and the ſame Carreere; ſo was I very willing, that there might haue beene that good amitie betweene vs, and that true loue that ought to haue beene; which if he had beene the ſame man he ſhould haue beene, it had gone better both vvith him and mee, then now it did. But (as you ſhall ſee hereafter) he playd the Traytor vvith mee.

Hee was a notable ſqueeze-grape, a huge quaffer, his glaſſe ſhould be alway brim-full, and he would vp with it *de profundis*; his vſuall draught was a large pinte and a halfe: and hauing drunke liberally before hee came to the racke, thinking that would haue made him leſſe ſenſible of his paine, he confeſt at the firſt, whatſoever they would haue him. Seeing I had now receiu'd my doome, and that there vvas not any remedy, nor the leaſt hope thereof, for my redemption, I was willing to trie my fortune; but I never had her yet to friend: So that it had beene a miracle, if ſhee had not fayl'd me now. I feigned my ſelfe ſicke for ſome fifteene dayes, never came out of the dungeon, nor roſe from my bed.

Guzman ſeekes to breake priſon.

At the fifteene dayes end, hauing provided my ſelfe of womans apparell, and hauing ſhau'd my Beard cleane away with a Razour, putting on thoſe cloathes, caſting a Mantle over them, and painting my face, dawbing it firſt with white, and then giuing it a little tincture of Red; now when night vvas in, I paſt thorow the two vpper doores, that belonged to the Galleries, and neither of thoſe Porters ſaid a word, but let mee paſſe quietly, yet were they both of them quick-ſighted enough, and had their eyes cleare and ſound.

Guzman prevented of his purpoſe.

But vvhen I came downe to the doore that opens to the ſtreet, and was ready to put my foot over the threſhold, a blinke-ey'd Porter, that had but one eye (would to God he had beene blinde on the other) claps his arme athwart the Poſterne, kept me backe, lookt vpon me, and preſently knew me: Whereupon, he ſhuts to the doore. I had provided my ſelfe of a good ſhort arming ſword, one, that if need had beene, would haue done the deed, which I carried cloſely about me, if I ſhould chance to be put to my ſhifts, and haue occaſion to vſe it. But as ill lucke would haue it, I bore it about me at ſuch a time, when as it could doe me no good, nor ſtand me in any ſtead in the world. This was ſuch an aggravation of my fault, that my accuſation was now made criminall.

Guzman condemned during life to the Gallies.

Well, they turn'd me vp ſtayres, and fulminating a new *Proceſſe* againſt me, they condemn'd me to the Gallies, during life. And it was no ſmall courteſie, that they did me, that they did not make me ride in thoſe cloathes vp and downe the Citie, as they had heretofore done the like diſgrace vnto others. I thought to haue avoyded danger, and fell vpon my death.

CHAP.

Chap. VIII.

Guzman de Alfarache *is taken out of the Priſon of* Seuill, *to be carried to the Port, to be put into the Gallies. Hee recounteth that which befell him on the way; as likewiſe in the Gallies.*

Am a Gally-ſlaue, and am now come to the end, for which I was ordained, wherevnto my lewd courſes were the means to bring mee. I muſt now leade that life, as the reſt of my fellowes doe, who indure the like fortune. I muſt pull at a Rope, tugge at an Oare, & content my ſelfe with ſuch poore fare, as others of my wretched condition are allow'd. I was one of the Band of the Braggards; *de los, de Dios, es Chriſte*; one of that company, who confeſſe Chriſt to be God, and haue no other Cognizance of their Faith; for their workes march vnder the Colours, and conduct of the Devill. I put on my white linnen breeches, my colour'd Stockins, my cut Doublet, and my Holland Night-Cap; all which my kinde and louing *Mulata* had ſent me; liuing in hope, that in time the Dice would turne, and that ſhee might one day ſee me againe at liberty. What with the helpe that I had from her, and what with thoſe my fees, that I recouered (as due vnto me) from thoſe new Priſoners that came in, I led a fine gentle life, as alſo the life of a Gentile; for ſuch is the quality of ſuch as I am, when they are admitted into ſuch a famous Schoole as that is, where ſuch a deale of Roguery is profeſt.

I had now got ſome oyle to my Lampe, ſome money in my purſe, partly out of other mens deuotions, and partly out of mine owne indeuours; I did lend vpon pawnes, of euery ſingle *Royall* I made dayly a (*a*) *Quarte* profit; I did filch from thoſe that were freſh-men, and newly come in amongſt vs; not one of them that ſcap't my fingers, all that came vnder my hands paid ſoundly for it. When they were aſleepe, I would play the wagge with them, putting the ſnuffe of a Candle on the top of their ſhooe, and holding matches of brimſtone vnder their noſes, or rolling a Card, let the ſmoake runne vp into their noſtrils, till it was ready to choake them; and a thouſand other the like knauiſh tricks. For albeit God is there knowne, yet is he not feared. They haue no more reſpect vnto him, then if they were ſo many Pagans. And for the moſt part, thoſe that come to the like miſery, are Ruffians, and High-way robbers, a brutiſh and beaſtly kinde of people. And it muſt be either a great wonder, or mis-fortune, that ſuch a one as I ſhound come thither; and when it ſo falleth out, the reaſon of it is, becauſe God blindeth their vnderſtanding, to the end, that by leading them this way, hee may bring them to the acknowledgement of their ſinne; and that they may in time come to a clearer knowledge of him, learne to ſerue him, and be ſaued.

There was a Ruffian, a notable ſhauer (in my time whileſt I vvas there) who being condemned to death, and put into the *enfermiria*, or that quarter, where the ſicke are cured; whence he was to be taken forth the next day to be executed, ſeeing ſome of thoſe that had the guarding of him, playing at three-hand *Primera*, he roſe from his banke, he made to them as well as hee could, crawling along, with his two paire of fetters, and a great chaine; and they asking him, whither hee would? Hee told them; I come hither to paſſe away the time a while.

The Guards that had the charge of him, told him, that it was fitter that hee ſhould betake himſelfe to his prayers, and recommend himſelfe and his Soule

(a) *Eight* Quartos *make a* Royall: *ſo that hee made a halfe penny and better of euery ſixe pence.*

The wicked condition of the Gally ſlaues.

A Tale of a Ruffian.

Soule vnto God. Whereunto, hee answered, I haue pray'd already all that I can pray; I haue not one prayer more left mee. I haue no more to doe, then what I haue done already; and therefore shuffle and deale about, and fill out some Wine, and let the Cup walke; that wee may wash away sorrow, and rid away that care, which is ready to choake my heart. They reply de, it was very late, and that the Tauerne doore was shut, and there was no getting in. Goe tell then (said he) the fellow that keepes it, that it is for mee, and that's enough; I warrant you he will not deny mee. And therefore no more words, my Masters, but play on, and follow your sport; for I sweare vnto you, that I know not what will become of this businesse, nor what the issue thereof will be.

They dance all to this Tune. Others there are, that will haue their Head and Beard neatly trimm'd, that they may seeme the handsomer when they come to the Gallowes, and be said to be proper men, and well fauour'd; and will likewise take order to haue a fine cleane starcht-Ruffe, daintily and curiously set; it seeming perhaps vnto them, that the wearing of that, and the bearing their *Bigotes* high, turn'd vp with hot yrons, and stiffened with gums, should be their saluation, and bring them to heauen. And as in good Philosophy, mens complections follow generally the goodnesse, or badnesse of their meats; so may it likewise of the good or bad company that wee keepe. Whence grew that proverbe: (a) *No conquien naces, si no conquien paces.* Wee must not judge of men by their birth, but by their breeding. It is their conuersation, that must giue them their denomination.

(a) *Proverbe.* No con quien naces, si no con quien paces.

Now I was one of these, and like a barbarous and ill bred fellow, would faine imploy that little money which I had in renting one of those (b) *Bodegones* belonging to the Prison; but fearing a day, that they would on the sudden strike vp an Alarme, and so I might chance to lose all, I did not doe it; And I thinke I did well in it. For now that wee beganne to make a number of some sixe ond twenty Gally-slaues, & were grown so vnruly in the prison, that there was no ho with vs; the Keeper was halfe afraid, that wee would make some hole or other in the Meshe, and finde a time to get out of the net; and therefore laboured all that he could to be discharged of vs.

(b) Bodegon *is a poore victualling house.*

One Munday morning wee were called vp, and giuing every one of vs a Testimoniall of his Sentence, wee were all chained one to another: And being thus threaded as it were vpon foure chaines, wee were deliuered ouer to the Commissary, who was to convey vs by little journeys to the port: faire and softly, foot after foot, and as wee could haile our haltred legges after vs; our pace; like our yrons, being very heavy.

Guzman *and the rest of the Gally slaues deliuered ouer to the Commissary.*

In this manner went we out of *Seuill*, to the great griefe and sorrow of our Parents and Kinsfolke, and other our good friends, who went tearing their haire, as wee past along the streetes, and scratching their faces with their nayles, every one according to the loue and respect which shee bare vnto her friend. And they on the other side pulling their Hats ouer their eyes, went along like so many meeke and gentle Lambes, and not with that Lyon-like looke, and haughty carriage, as they were wont heretofore; it was not any brauing now, or out facing of the matter, that could doe them good. Arrogancie was out of request with them, and would not serue the turne. I cannot deny, but it did touch me for my part to the very quicke, it went to the heart of mee: especially when I called to minde the merry life that I had led, the good state wherein I had liu'd; if I had had but the grace to keepe my selfe well, while I was well; and to see the misery, wherevnto now I vvas come.

Then did I begin to thinke with my selfe; if this be so painfull vnto mee already; if this chaine doe so much torment mee, that I can scarce indure it; if I feele such trouble now, and if this befall mee while the wood is greene, what will

will it doe, when it growes old and dry? What torment will they feele that are condemned for ever to perpetuall paine? Muſing vpon theſe things, I paſt along thorow the ſtreetes of *Sevill*, for my mother did not come to accompany mee, nor was ſhee willing to ſee mee. And I was the onely man amongſt them all, that was *Solus cum ſolo*, left alone to my ſelfe.

We walkt along very leiſurely, which (God wot) was ſlowly enough, yet as faſt as wee could conveniently; for when my chaine was ſlacke, and I was offering to goe forward, my next fellow would often times pull mee backe, which hee could not ſometimes doe withall, and ſometimes againe would ſtop of ſet purpoſe, as his neceſſary occaſions did require. Another, hee was foundred with going bare-foote, and all the reſt ready to ſinke, they were ſo weary. Wee were men ſenſible of paine, as other men are, and being in that caſe as wee were, none had more cauſe to ſorrow then wee; yet amongſt our ſelues our griefes were ſo equall, that wee had but little advantage one of another.

O the wreched and miſerable ſtate that wee liue in, and to how many various and vnfortunate chances are wee neceſſarily obliged! Wee came to a place called *Las Cabeças*; and as wee went on a morning from thence, vvee had ſcarce gone halfe a League, but that one of our company had eſpide a farre off, a certaine yong fellow, who was going towards *Sevill*, with a great many fine little young Pigges, and giuing the word one from another, wee did preſently battell-wiſe caſt our ſelues into a Wing, as if wee had beene the Turkiſh Gallies; and marſhalling our ſelues after the manner of a halfe Moone, wee did in ſuch an orderly faſhion ſet vpon them, that the points of the Hornes meeting as it were before, and in a kinde circle-wiſe inclining each to other, wee had ſhut in the Pigges on a ſudden, and incompaſſe them ſo, that they could not get out from amongſt vs, and in ſpight of the young fellowes teeth, doe what he could for his life, every one of vs made purchaſe of a fat Pigge.

The Gally ſlaues rob a poore fellow of his Pigges, that he was carrying to Market.

The fellow began to cry out aloud, making great exclamations, and intreating the Commiſſary, that for Gods ſake, hee would take order that hee might haue them againe. But hee ſeemed to be deafe and would not heare of that eare, as one that was to haue the greateſt ſhare in this booty; and ſo wee paſt on along with our prey, leaving the poore clowne to goe ſeeke his remedy elſe-where. We knew the worſt of it already, ſo that our care, and our pitie were much about one.

About noone, when wee came to our Inne where wee were to reſt our ſelues, and with a little ſleepe to paſſe ouer the heat of the day, the Commiſſary called to vs for the ſhare that hee was to haue of this our theft: for, being that hee was conſenting therevnto, the Acceſſary was to haue as much as the Principall; the Aſſentant, as the Aſſaylant. Hee commanded one of them to be roſted for him; vvherevpon there aroſe a great ſtirre and tumult amongſt vs, being ready to goe together by the eares, whileſt wee were arguing the Caſe, which of vs was to part with his Pigge. For amongſt vs all, there were ſcarce three of vs that had the vſe of reaſon.

The Slaues mutiny about their Pigges.

When I ſaw the Mutiny, that was amongſt them, and that in the carriage of this buſineſſe, he might (and that juſtly) blame me the more, becauſe my vnderſtanding was more then theirs: I ſaid vnto him; Maſter Commiſſary, my Pigge is here ready at your ſervice, diſpoſe of it as you pleaſe: And if you ſhall ſo thinke it fit, ſeeing here is Guard ſufficient vpon vs, may it pleaſe you to command them to vnchaine mee, and I will take the paines to dreſſe it for you with mine owne hands: for I haue ſome reliques yet remaining of a good Cooke. He thankefully accepted of this my ciuill Complement, and ſaid vnto mee; Of all this company, that is here vnder my charge, I muſt truely confeſſe vnto thee, I haue, ſince my firſt knowledge of thee, obſerued in thee

Guzman offers his to the Commiſſary.

thee a certaine kind of nobleneſſe, and free nature, which cannot but proceed from ſome good blood. I therefore thanke you for this your preſent, and take it kindely at your hands, and ſhall be very glad to eate it, as you ſhall order it for me. I was taken from the chaine; and being recommended to the Guards, I call'd for ſuch things as were neceſſary: but becauſe the Inne was ill provided of ſuch things as I would haue had, to ſhewe my Cookerie, I could ſhew my skill no farther, then in the well roſting of it, with a fewe egges battered together, and ſeaſoned with a little pepper, and ſalt: I would haue made a pudding in it's belly, but I wanted neceſſaries. I minced the liuer, and of that, and ſuch other things as I could for the preſent, I made him ſauce for his Pigge, which I knew well how to doe.

He dreſſes it for him.

At the ſame time ſome Trauaylours came in, to take their eaſe, who were not a little ſorry to finde vs there: for that they were halte afraid that their eares were ſcarce ſure on their heads amongſt ſuch a company of Rogues as we were. The Table whereat they were to ſit, was a long planke, neere adjoyning to a bench of ſtone: they were to eate altogether. The Commiſſary kindly ſaluted them, and they him; and after a fewe Complements were exchanged betweene them, they ſate three in a file, and one of them taking his Port-mantua vnto him, and putting it betweene his legges, vnder the boord, he there likewiſe lay'd his *Alforjas*, or wallet, wherein he had Cheeſe, a Bottle of Wine, and a piece of a Gammon of Bacon; and that hee might the better take it out, hee did thruſt his Port-mantua a litttle forward, leauing the *Alforjas* in the midſt betweene his legges. I, when I ſaw that hee was ſo wary, began to ſuſpect, that it was not without cauſe, and calling to the Hoſteſſe for a Knife, I cloſely clapt it in betweene my arme, and my ſleeue: And puting a great earthen Iarre full of water, vnderneath the boord, and in it, a Bottle of Wine; that the Commiſſary might haue it freſh and coole, when hee ſhould call for it; as oft as I ſtoopt downe to powre out his wine, by little and little, I fell to fingering of the Port-mantua, till at laſt, hauing made a ſhift to vndoe all the Buttons, and giving it a gentle ſlaſh cloſe where the Chaine ranne along, that made all faſt, I nimbly tooke out two little bundles, but ſomwhat weighty withall, which I preſently convay'd very handſomely into my Gally-ſloppes, where there was Sea-roome enough for them; and afterwards buttoning it vp juſt in the ſame faſhion as it was before, it was cloſe and well, and not any ſigne to be ſeene of this theft that I had made.

Guzman *filches two Fardles out of a Trauailours Port-mantua: And the manner how.*

When they had made an end of their dinner, the cloth was taken away, and hauing paid their reckoning, away went theſe Travellours; and we likewiſe began to provide to be packing: for wee all were to be gone. *Soto*, my *Camerade*, was faſtned to another chaine, ſomewhat farther off from mee, then I could haue wiſh't it, which did not a little grieue mee, becauſe this diſtance did hinder our more private talke; but before they brought mee backe againe to my Chaine, I came vnto him, and ſecretly deliuered vnto him thoſe two bundles, deſiring him to keepe them ſafe for mee, till wee ſhould meete with ſome better occaſion, to know vvhat was in them. Hee receiued them with a great deale of joy, and killing his Pigge vnknowne to any, hee thruſt them both into the body of it placing the intrals before the mouth of the vvound, as vvell that the bundles might not droppe out, as alſo to hide them thereby the better out of ſight.

Soto Guzmans *Companion a notable Thiefe.*

Now vvhen they vvere going to put mee to the Chaine, I intreated the Commiſſary to doe mee the favour, that I might be filed next to this my old friend and acquaintance. Hee willingly granted my requeſt; ſo one was taken out of that file, and hee and I were ranked together, that other and my ſelfe exchanging places.

Soto *his cunning in the cleanly conuayance of this theft.*

Wee went lazily on along as the faſhion is, & as wee were pacing theſe our leiſurely ſteps, I rounded *Soto* ſoftly in the eare, and ſayd vnto him; How now

now (my Camarade) what hast thou done with that which I gaue thee to keepe? How hast thou diſpoſ'd of it? But hee, as if hee had not knowne mee, or had not giuen him any ſuch thing at all, made ſo ſtrange of it, that hee made mee to ſuſpect, that according to the cuſtome of that Country, hee had drunke a cup too much, and ſo might happely haue forgot it. Whereupon, I went putting him in minde, when and where I gaue it him. But hee ſtill denyde any ſuch deliuery. And in the end grew ſomewhat hot and angry with me, asking mee, whether I were drunke, or well in my wits, that I ſhould demand any ſuch thing of him, or make him beleeue, that I had delinered him either this, or that? I vnderſtand you not, I neither know you, nor it, nor haue any thing of yours, and therefore all that I can ſay vnto you, is; That for me you may goe looke it. Nothing I had of you, and nothing are you like to get from mee.

You cannot inagine, nor am I able to expreſſe the great both anger, and ſorrow that I had, That I ſhould be ſo vnthankefully dealt withall, and receiue ſuch hard meaſure from one, to whom I had done ſo many good offices, and lou'd ſo truly, as I did him. For there was not that morſell of meate, that went downe my throat, whereof hee had not his ſhare; nor that money in my purſe, whereof I did not diuide halfe with him. And my purpoſe was that hee ſhould likewiſe ſhare with mee in this. But that hee ſhould thus breake the bonds of friendſhip, and deny, (and that ſo inſolently, and impudently) that I had ever giuen him any ſuch thing; This was it that troubled mee; this was it that vext mee to the very heart.

Soto *becomes an enemy to* Guzman.

He was a man of an ill condition, his concoction was not good, and hee was ſo moued vpon thoſe words of mine, and ſo out of all patience, that in a thundring voice hee began to bolt out oathes and blaſphemies, inſomuch that the Commiſſary was inforced to correct him with a Cudgell. I, relying on the favour he had ſhowne mee, intreated him to beare with him, becauſe he was angry, and in choller, which was the cauſe of this his intemperancie. And hee being deſirous to know the cauſe of this his diſtemperature; I began to apprehend with my ſelfe, that *Soto* would reſerue all this for him; And I made this reckoning with my ſelfe; If I ſhould acquaint the Commiſſary with that which had paſt betweene vs, it may be, that though I ſhould not haue all, yet at leaſt, ſome part of the booty might fall to my ſhare.

How Guzman *cryes quittance with* Soto.

This thiefe (thought I) ſhall not carry it away ſo; hee ſhall not haue all the thankes, and laugh at mee when hee has done. I will not be thus gull'd by him. And therefore I reſolued with my ſelfe, to acquaint him with the whole ſucceſſe of the buſineſſe, who, I preſumed, would not be a little glad of it, out of the greedy and covetous deſire that hee would haue to take that bone from vs, which wee two ſtroue for.

Herevpon (being informed by me) he commended *Soto*, that he would preſently giue him that which I had giuen him. Hee ſtoutly denies, that hee had any thing of mee. The guards are will'd to ſearch him; they doe ſo; and when they had done the vtmoſt of their diligence, they could finde no ſuch thing about him, nor any the leaſt ſigne or token thereof. Wherevpon I gathered, that he had done as I did, delivering the ſame over to ſome other body, to keepe it ſafe for him.

I told the Commiſſary, that there was no queſtion to be made of it, but that he had ſecretly convay'd it away to ſome one or other of this our company, for that really and truly he receiued it of me, who gaue the ſame vnto him with mine owne hands. When hee ſaw, that neither by faire meanes, nor by foule, by perſwaſions, nor threatnings, nor any other courſe that hee tooke with him, he could be brought to manifeſt the truth, and to bring theſe things to light; the Commiſſary commanded they ſhould take him aſide, and put him to the Racke, till they ſhould make him to confeſſe. And for that they had

had no other inſtrument there, ſaue Cords, they applide them to thoſe his lower parts;and when vpon their twiſting, they began to ſtraine ſome-what hard vpon the fleſh, which was too delicate and ſenſible to indure any torture, being likewiſe a faint-harted fellow, and of little or no courage, hee forth-with confeſſed, whither hee had conveyd them. Therevpon they preſently tooke his Pigge from him, (ſo that hee loſt that too by the bargaine) and taking out the entrals to ſee what was there, they quickly lighted on the two little bundles, in either of which was a *Roſario*, or ſet of beads of the perfecteſt, and the daintieſt pure Corall, that ever mine eyes ſaw; euery Bead at both ends, hauing his Cap of Gold, which was much graced by the neat cutting and enameling that was beſtowed vpon them, which (it ſhould ſeeme) were ſent as tokens to two ſeverall perſons.

The Commiſſary makes no more adoe, but preſently claps them vp in his pocket, promiſing to befriend mee for it, and to giue mee, vvhat I my ſelfe ſhould aske for them. *Soto* was herewith ſo madded, and ſo extreemly incenſed againſt me, that they were forced to change our chaines, and ſet vs farther aſunder then before; for though wee were thus divided, and parted each from other, they did afterwards fall to manacling of him, faſtning both his wriſts together with bolts of yron, becauſe when he came where any ſtones were, he would take them vp and throw them at mee.

In this troubleſome manner we came at laſt vnto the Gallies, juſt vpon the very nicke, when they were calking, and rigging, and making all ready to put forth to Sea, and to goe in chaſe. And before they brought vs aboord, they carried vs to a priſon, where we paſt over that night, with the like incommoditie and trouble, as at other times. Nay rather, it was worſe with vs now, then heretofore, for that the priſon was little, and cramm'd as full as ever it could hold. But be it better or be it worſe, ſuch as it was, wee were forced to take all in good part, and to make as good ſhift as wee could. For vve could not doe as wee would, nor make choice of any part to out liking.

The Commiſſary had talke in the meane while with the Kings Officers; who came with thoſe other of the Gallies, and the Kings *Alguazil*; and hauing now aſſigned and appointed vs our Bankes, where vve were to ſit and rowe, they gaue the Commiſſary a diſcharge for the delivering of ſo many Slaues into their hands, who told mee that hee vvould come and ſee mee; and that hee vvould ſtand my very good friend; ſo hee betooke him to his Mule, and from that day forward, I did neuer more ſet eye on him.

Now, before that they tooke vs out of priſon, to lead vs along to the Gallies, they had ordered how wee ſhould be devided, and it fell out, that vve vvere to goe ſixe and ſixe in a fyle; in which diviſion, it was my ill lucke (thankes to my ſinnes, that laid this puniſhment vpon me) to haue *Soto* to be my Camerade.

This done, they preſently deliuered vs over to certaine Mooriſh Slaues, vvho vvith their halfe pikes came to guard vs along, and tying our hands vvith tough thongs, which they had brought with them for that purpoſe, away vve goe vvith them. Wee come aboord the Gally, vvhereinto being entred, vvee vvere vvilled to retire our ſelues to the poope, till that the Captaine and the Maſters-Mate ſhould come, and call vs out one by one, playcing every man in this, or that other Banke, as they thought fit; now, vvhen they vvere come amongſt vs, they vvent vvalking vp and dovvne on the *Courſey*, or the Gallerie-like ſpace, on both ſides vvhereof, the Slaues Bankes are placed: and vvhileſt they vvere looking on the bankes, and aduiſing vvith themſelues vvhere it vvere fitteſt to diſpoſe of vs; the other Gally-ſlaues began to ſet out throats, and to cry out aloud vnto them, deſiring that they vvould diſperce vs amongſt them; ſome complaining that they had an vnprofitable member amongſt them; others, that all in their Banke

vvere

were weake and feeble perſons, vnable to doe any ſervice.

But the Captaine, and the Maſters-Mate, not giving eare to their clamours, but governing themſelues by their owne diſcretion, having conſidered what was fitteſt to bee done, placed vs here and there, as they ſaw cauſe: in which partition it fell to my lot, to be ranked in the ſecond Banke, juſt before the Cooke-rome, neere vnto the Maſters-Mates Cabbin, at the foot of the Maſt; having placed *Soto* in the *Patrone*, or Maſters Banke. It grieu'd me very much, that he was ſeated ſo neare vnto me, in regard of the late quarrell that had beene betweene vs; for wee could never afterwards indure one another; and he, me leſſe, then I could him; for he was a malitious minded man, & had intertained in his heart a deep hatred againſt me; though I (for my part) never did deny him my friendſhip, nor was ever wanting vnto him, whenſoever he had occaſion to vſe me: but hee, like the Commiſſary, would haue all to himſelfe, if I ſhould haue let him alone. And all he ſhould haue had, and that vvith a very good vvill, if I had but once thought, that hee vvould haue cry'de quits vvith mee, and paid mee home in mine owne coyne. When they had brought mee to the Banke, thoſe that were there, bade mee welcome; in requitall whereof, I could haue wiſht, that I had beene able to ſay vnto them; Excuſe me, that I cannot come.

They inſtalled me in my ſeate, and put on the Kings Robes vpon me, two Shirts, two paire of linnen Breeches, a colour'd Waſtecoat, and a red Cap. I was ſcarce warme in my ſeat, when a baſe vnder-Barber comes vnto mee, a better Shaver, then a Cutter, and with his Razor, makes my head and Beard: as bare as my hand, which I tooke to heart, for the great account I made thereof. But re-collecting my ſpirits, I beganne to comfort my ſelfe, that this was the fortune of the world, and that others, that had beene in farre higher place, had falne into farre greater miſeries.

What Guzman indured in the Gallies.

I removed mine eyes from thoſe that were before me, and looked towards thoſe that were behinde me: not conſidering ſo much with my ſelfe how many were more happy, but how many were more wretched then I was. O this looking downeward is a comfortable thing to a man in miſery. And albeit, it bee true, that there is not any life almoſt ſo miſerable, as that of a Gally-Slaue, yet was it not halfe ſo bad as that which I indured vvith my firſt Wife. And it was ſome comfort beſides vnto mee, that I was not a lone man in this my afflictions, but had many fellowes that ſuffered the like torment.

A young fellow that belonged to the *Alguazil*, made preſently towards mee, to clappe fetters on my feet, and manacles on my hands, chaining mee, and other my companions, that ſate together on the ſame Banke, ſo faſt, and ſo ſure, that wee could not ſtirre from thence. Then did they giue mee my allowance, which was ſixe and twenty ounces of Bisket; it ſo fell out, that that day vvas (as wee call it) *dia de Caldero*, the Caldron day, for the boiling of fleſh, and making of pottage: And becauſe I was but a new-comer, and was vnprovided of a woodden diſh, I tooke my part of thoſe mammocks that were ſhared amongſt vs, with one of my fellowes that ſate by mee. I would not offer to ſoke my Bisket in it, but chew'd it downe dry, as all your freſh-men doe at the firſt, till time had taught mee the vſe of my armes.

The paine wee were put to for the preſent was litle or nothing; for the Gallies being then a trimming, and a calking, wee that were the ghing, the baſe rout, and raskalitie of the Gallies, ſeru'd as then for no other vſe, but to row towards the ſhore, when wee were ſo commanded, and to make proviſion of boughes, or ſomething elſe for ſhade, leaſt the heate of the Sunne ſhould melt the tallow. All the cloathes that I brought aboord vvith mee into the Gally, I made ſhow of them, and ſold them; which yeelded

mee ſome money, though not much, adding that, to that other little ſumme, which I brought with me, when I came out of Priſon. Nor did I know in the vvorld how, or where I might ſecretly lay it vp, and keepe it ſafe, either to relieue mee in ſuch neceſſities as vſually offer themſelues, or to imploy it in ſome one thing or other, that I might haue a penny in my purſe at a pinch. And for that I had neither Coffer, Cheſt, nor ſo much as a Deske, that had a Locke and Key to it, vvhere I might ſafely lay it vp, it did ſome-what trouble me, not being able to deviſe with my ſelfe, vvhat I were beſt to doe with it. To carry it ſtill about mee, were to runne the hazzard of being robb'd, or coozen'd if it by my owne Camerades: And to commit it to another bodies keeping, I had already too late experience of the ill correſpondence in that kinde.

All I ſaw, was ill, it concern'd me to looke well vnto it, and to be-thinke my ſelfe how I ſhould diſpoſe of it. At laſt (after long conſideration) I reſolved with my ſelfe, that I could not giue it a better or more ſecret place, then to clappe it in my boſome, and to lay it as neere to my heart as I could poſsibly bring it. Others put their hearts there, where they put their treaſure: but I tooke a cleane contrary courſe, putting my treaſure where my heart was.

Well, I got me a needle and threed, and clapping my Thimble on my finger, I fell to worke, and made mee vp a little Purſe, about the bigneſſe of a Wax-kernell, which being ſtrongly ſowed, and quilted with many a ſure ſtitch vpon that part of my ſhirt, which toucht vpon my heart, I bare it there, never ſuffering it to bee out of my ſight; and having ſtill an eye vpon it, that it might bee ſafer from its friends, and my enemies, vvho vvould bee ever and anon leering that way, caſting a ſneepes eye towards it; but hee, whoſe mouth watred moſt at it, and had a months minde to bee doing with it, was a notable famous Thiefe, that was my Camerade, and ſate next vnto mee, who could never come to filch it from mee, neither at mid-night, nor at at any other time, ſo ſurely did I guard it on that ſide. Yet was hee not wanting to doe his beſt; for, when hee perceiu'd that I was aſleepe, hee would goe groping heere and there, viſiting every part about mee with his hand; and for that the roomes were but few, and the houſhold-ſtuffe that belong'd vnto them, not much, they were eaſily and quickly runne over. He had paſt over in a trice, a little Satchell that I had by my ſide, my Gabardine and my Breeches, and was now come at laſt to my Waſte-coat, which I might more properly haue termed my Soule: for that with its warmth, it did viuifie, and quicken the bloud, whereby it ſuſtained it ſelfe, and was kept aliue. We both labour'd hard, he to robbe, I to keepe. He was not ſo crafty, but I was as carefull. And if at any time I did ſtrip my ſelfe naked, I vvould order the buſineſſe ſo, that it ſhould be impoſsible for him to take it from vnder me, vnleſſe he tooke me away with it. He continued a long time in this his care to come by it, watching all opportunities to rob me of it.

Now, in the meane while, foraſmuch as I did conſider with my ſelfe, that whereſoever a man liues, hee had need of an Angell of guard to attend him vpon all occaſions; I beganne to bethinke my ſelfe whom I ſhould make choyſe of to bee my Protector. And after that I had thorowly thought there-vpon, I could not finde out any fitter for my turne, then the Maſters-Mate. For albeit it be true, that the Captaine, as Lord, and chiefe Commander of all the reſt, is to bee accounted the onely Protector of vs all; yet, out of his authoritie and greatneſſe of his Place, hee vvill not trouble himſelfe with this raskall rabble.

They are for the moſt part principall perſons, and men of qualitie; they will not vouchſafe to looke ſo low; they reckon not of ſuch poore ſnakes as

we

we be, nor take any notice who, or what we are. And I was the willinger to make this choyce, for that the Masters-Mate was my neere neighbour, his Cabbin was close to my Banke, by meanes whereof, I might the easier and more conveniently serue him. And so much the rather was I desirous to settle vpon him, because hee carried the Cudgell, and had the possession of the salt Eele, which hee distributed amongst vs, either more or lesse, according as he favour'd, or dis-favour'd; paying some soundly, and letting others goe scot-free.

Thus by little and little, I went scruing my selfe into his service, getting more ground still vpon him, and striving to out-strip the rest: As well in my attendance at his boord, as in having him to bed; I trickt vp his Cabbin, brusht his Cloathes, kept them neat and handsome, lookt to his linnen, and was in every other respect so diligent about him, that within a few dayes I was the onely man in his eye. Nor did I account it as a small favour, that hee would deigne mee a good looke: It seeming vnto mee, as oft as hee lookt vpon mee, that hee had bestow'd a Bull (I meane not the Pizzle) vpon mee, and a free Indulgence from stripes, and that hee did thereby absolue mee both *à culpa, & pœna*: From my fault, and the punishment thereof. But therein I was deceived; for that they beeing naturally severe and cruell, and that commonly such kinde of sterne and austere men are put into such places, they never haue an eye to consider courtesies, not seeking to requite good, but to punish ill.

They are a people, that will not acknowledge any thankefulnesse, because all that wee doe for them, they thinke to be due vnto them. A nights I did ridde the Dandruffe out of his head, rubb'd his feet, fann'd his face, destroyed the Gnats, and waited on him with that obseruance and punctualitie, that the greatest Prince in the vvorld could not bee better serued. And if they serue their Prince for loue, I did the like to the Masters-Mate for feare; lest the Hoope of a Hogs-head, or an Eeles tayle should twine it selfe about my shoulders, vvhich kinde of vveapons they never goe vvithout. And howbeit it bee true, that this manner of service is not so perfect, nor so noble as the other; yet feare makes men to take more heed. And now and then vvhen I saw hee vvas vvaking, and had no minde to sleepe, I vvould entertaine him with a merry Fable, or pleasant Historie, to passe away the time the better. And I was never vnprovided of a company of witty jests, and fine conceits, to make his Worship laugh: It being no small comfort to mee, to see him looke cherefully. I grew in grace vvith him, and was very happy in this particular; yet am I so much privie to mine owne worth, that it was no more then my good service did deserue. So that now, hee would not that any other, saue my selfe, should serue him in those things, which gaue him the greatest content. And I had more especiall reason to esteeme of this his favour towards mee, in regard that hee had a Gally-slaue, before hee entertained me, that attended on his Person. Whom, though hee vsed well, yet hee went dayly pyning and consuming away, that hee was very sorry to see it. For, though hee led a better life then the rest, and that hee lou'd him so well, that hee fed him from his owne trencher, and bestowed the best morsels vpon him; yet was he like your *Gaeta*-colts, which the better you feed them, the worse they proue.

One day, vvhen vve vvere both together with him, waiting at the table, he said vnto me; I prethee (*Guzman*) tell me (for thou art a Scholler, and an vnderstanding fellow) vvhat should bee the reason, that *Fermin* being, at his first comming into the Gallies, of a very able body, strong, fat, and lusty, and I having sought to continue him still in the same estate, by entertaining him into my service, and doing other friendly Offices for him, not eating that good morsell, whereof hee hath not a part, should, the more I make of

him, fall (as thou ſeeſt) the more away? Wherevpon I made anſwer; Sir, for to giue reſolution to this your queſtion, it will bee needfull for mee to relate vnto you another caſe, like vnto this, of a new Chriſtian, who had paſt thorow the hands of the Holy-Houſe, or (as wee commonly call it) the Inquiſition.

A ſhort tale of a new Chriſtian that had one of the Inquiſition to his neighbour.

This man was rich, and powerfull, liu'd honourably, and in a plentifull faſhion, led a merry life, waxed plump, and fat, had all things neat and handſome about him, and tooke much content in the houſe vvherein hee dwelt. Now it ſo fell out, that one of the Inquiſitors came and tooke a houſe, that was the very next doore to his; vvho for no other reaſon in the world, ſaue only that he was ſo neare a neighbour vnto him, grew ſo meager, and ſo leane therevpon, that within a very ſhort time, he was brought ſo lowe, and pined ſo faſt away, that hee was nothing but skinne and bone. So that to both theſe, I ſhall giue Solution, by another the like accident, which I ſhall deliver for truth vnto you, and thus it was.

A Storie of the King of Granada, *and his Favoritie* Buferiz.

Muley Almançor (vvho was King of *Granada*) had a great *Primado*, or principall favorite of his, who was called *el Alcayde Buferiz*; a very wiſe man, punctuall, truſty, and having many other good parts, worthy the great loue that his Lord and Maſter bare vnto him; for the which his King lou'd him ſo dearely, as alſo for the truſt and confidence that hee had in him; (for there was not any difficulty in the world, which he would not wade thorow, ſo as it might make for his Majeſties ſervice) And for that thoſe, that deſerue theſe kinde of honours, are evermore enuy'd by thoſe that are vnworthy of them, there were not ſome wanting, who heareing the King ſpeake of his loue and affection towards this his Favorite, ſaid vnto him; Sir, that your Majeſtie may ſee, whether that bee true or no, for which you ſo much commend your *Alcayde*, vvould you be pleaſed to make proofe of him in ſome buſines of importance, and wherein there is ſome difficultie; and then ſhall you finde, whether he be that manner of man, that you take him to be: For by the diligence that he ſhall vſe therein, your Majeſtie ſhall truly knowe, whether his heart be with you or no. The King liked exceeding well of this motion, and ſaid; I will not only command him in a buſines that is difficult, but ſuch a one, as is impoſſible to be effected. And cauſing him forth-with to be called in, he ſaid vnto him; *Alcayde*, I haue a thing to giue you in charge, vvhich you muſt accompliſh out of hand, vpon paine of my diſpleaſure, and the loſſe of my favour; And this it is that I ſhall deliver vnto you, a good fat Weather, which you ſhall keepe at home in your owne houſe, you ſhall giue the ſame allowance of meat, as hee was wont to haue heretofore, and more, if more hee will eate; and within a Moneth, you muſt returne him back vnto me, poore, and leane as a rake.

This poore Moore, whoſe deſire was never other, then to ſerue his King, & punctually to performe whatſoever hee ſhould be pleaſed to command him; howbeit he did beleeue, that he ſhould never be able to bring ſuch an impoſſibilitie as this, to paſſe; was not therewith diſmayed a whit, but readily, and with a cheerefull countenance receiving the Weather, he cauſed it to be carryed home to his houſe, according as the King had commanded: And there ſitting downe, and deviſing with himſelfe, how he might bring this buſines about, and giue ſatisfaction to his Maſters deſire; he began to ſet his wits aworke, and at laſt lighted vpon a ſtrange, yet a naturall conceit, which, he preſumed, vvould make much for his purpoſe, and comply vvith the Kings command.

Hee cauſed two woodden Cages to bee made out of hand, both ſtrongly barr'd, and of equall bigneſſe, the which, he gaue order ſhould be placed very neere each to other; in one of the which he puts me the Weather, and in the other hard by him, a Wolfe: To the Weather, he gaue his full allowance; but the

the Wolfe, he kept ſo ſhort, that he was ſtill exceeding hungry; And being almoſt famiſhed for want of meat, he did labour all that he could (thruſting his legges within the gates) to reach at the Weather, and to trie if he could come at him, and eat him. The fearefull Weather, being much troubled, and ſorry at the heart, to ſee himſelfe ſo neere his mortall enemie, although he did eate that which they gaue him, he did thriue ſo ill with it, out of the continuall feare that hee was in, that hee did not onely not waxe fat, but pin'd away, till he was pure skinne and bone. By this courſe that he had taken vvith him, he returned at the time appoynted, the Weather backe againe to his King, not fayling in that he was commanded, nor falling from his accuſtomed grace and favour.

Now that I may apply this Story to the purpoſe wee haue in hand; It ſeemeth vnto mee, that *Fermin* is growne leane and feeble, by being ſo nere about you, and by liuing in that grace and favour with you, as he doth: And it is onely the feare which he hath of you, whom he ſo much deſires to ſerue, that makes him to thriue no better then he does.

The Maſters-Mate was ſo well pleaſed with this tale of mine, becauſe it fell out ſo pat to the purpoſe, that hee preſently gaue order to haue me removed from my Banke, receiuing me into his ſervice, and giuing me the charge of his Wardrobe, and of his Table, for that he had alwayes found me ſutable to his deſires. Nor, (for all this favour that he ſhewed vnto mee, which was very great in releaſing me from the obligation of a Slaue, and exerciſing ſuch duties, as were required in the Galley) vvould I forbeare (for mine owne pleaſure) to come ſometimes amongſt them, and to doe as they did; but would now and then, of mine owne accord, fall to my labour, that I might not be to ſeeke, if out of neceſſitie I ſhould chance to be put vnto it.

The exerciſes of your Galley-ſlaues.

There did I learne to knit Stockins, to make falſe Dice, as your High-men, and your Low-men, ſetting two Aces one againſt another, or two Sixes on one Dye, for your Coggers and Cheaters, who, for the vſe that they made of them, would pay well for them. I likewiſe there learn'd to make Buttons, both of Silke, and of haire; as alſo dainty delicate Tooth-picks, of divers ſundry inventions, and colours, and neatly guilded; which none in the Galley could doe beſides my ſelfe. My poyze being put into this ballance; that is, ſtanding vpon theſe even termes, we were forced to goe with our Galley to *Cadiz* for Maſts, and Main-yards, Sayles, Pitch, Tarre, Tallow, and the like neceſſaries; and this Voyage was the firſt, wherein I was put to any paines: For, being ſo much friended by the Maſters-Mate, as I was, they did not force mee to doe any more worke, then what I would my ſelfe.

And for that this did not ſeeme to me, to be a matter of any great labour, that I might not ſhew my ſelfe an idle ſpectator, or that I did ſeeke to avoyd paines-taking, eſpecially, being that wee were not to giue the chaſe, or forced to betake our ſelues to flight; where, and in which caſes, we were to rowe for our liues, and to tugge with all the ſtrength and force that wee had, at the Oare; And for that, when wee were once in the Port, and had a good Haven to friend, we did vſually lye quiet, and were never whipt, and had our entertainments, and paſtimes, preſuming that betweene Port, and Port, eſpecially being ſo neere, there needed not the ſinewes of an Oxe, to hale and pull; I would needs ſet my ſelfe to the Oare, onely to trie what manner of thing it was: But it was not ſo ſlight and eaſie a thing, as I tooke it to be: for (becauſe wee were forced to goe towing the Maſts, and Main-yards) when wee came to caſt Anchor, I was nothing but wearines and ſweat, becauſe I would not leaue my Oare, nor giue occaſion to others to murmure, withdrawing my hand from that, which for mine owne pleaſure I had voluntarily vndertaken. And this was the onely, and ſole cauſe, why ſo ſoone, and ſo ſoundly, (after I had had my Maſter to bed) I fell aſleepe, falling like a ſtone, flat to the

ground; giuing very good ſignes and tokens thereof to my Camarades, vvho heard mee now to doe that, vvhich they had never heard me doe before; to wit, to ſnort like a young ſucking Pigge. That Traytour of mine owne Banke, vvas the firſt (as being neereſt vnto mee) that heard me rout; and calling ſoftly to another of my fellowes that was his Conſort, one that was his very good friend, and whom he might beſt truſt, acquainted him with his deſire, and the good occaſion that was now offered, to robbe mee of that little money that I had. They joyn'd both together, as vvell in the manner of ſharing it, as of taking it from me. Which they had gone cleare away with, if I had not had the *Alcalde* to friend. They tooke it as eaſily from mee, as they could wiſh; paſſing it preſently from Banke to Banke, to the farther end of the Galley; perſwading themſelues, that becauſe it vvas night, and not perceiued by any, both of them ſtiffely denying it, they ſhould, without any more adoe, carry away the prey, and divide the ſpoyle betweene them.

Guzman rob'd by the Galley-ſlaues.

Now, vvhen it vvas day, they all began to wake, and I amongſt the reſt, got vp, heavie of ſleepe, but light of purſe: for that vveight vvhich I was wont to feele lying vpon my heart, I felt no more; and it did much trouble me, that it did not trouble me. I lookt about, and found my money gone; I was ſtrooke as dead as a doore-nayle; death was in my face, and I knew not what to doe. If I held my peace, I ſhould heare no more newes of it, but muſt giue it for loſt; and if I ſhould ſpeake thereof, I ſhould roaſt all my part thereof (as the Proverbe is) vpon my finger, and put all in mine eye, that I ſhould get by the bargaine. Now was I put out of the poſſeſſion of that which I had injoyed ſo long; Wherevpon I ſaid with my ſelfe; If he that hath taken it from mee, will giue me no thankes for it, much leſſe ſhall I reape any benefit from him; better it were notwithſtanding, that hee ſhould keepe it, that has it, for it may be, that at ſome time or other, he will not be wanting to make ſome acknowledgement thereof; and he at laſt may come to be puniſhed, who did me this wrong: at leaſt, he will eate his meat with ſorrow, when he ſees he ſhall reape no profit by it. But this Counſell did not pleaſe me.

Now, vvhen the Maſters-Mate was ready to riſe, I brought him his cloathes, and while he was making himſelfe ready, I made him a long relation of my mis-fortune, making him (to my coſt) to know, and to touch, as it were with the hand the miſerie of thoſe men, who hauing purſt vp a few pence with a great deale of labour and paines-taking, earning it very hardly, are, either by miſchance, or by a pilfering hand, depriued thereof in an inſtant: Telling him moreover, that I had brought thoſe moneys from *Sevill*, amongſt which, I had likewiſe put thoſe other, which I had made of my cloathes that I ſold, when I came aboord the Galley, which I kept as charily as I could for my life, that I might there-with either releeue my neceſſities, when occaſion ſhould ſerue, or elſe imploy it on ſome one thing or other, that might yeeld me profit. And as I was opening my minde thus vnto him, I likewiſe opened my boſome, and ſhew'd him the falſe ſtuffing, wherein I had put it, the mold, or indented marke vvhereof, theſe Theeues had left behinde them, being for all the world, ſuch a kinde of print, as a Hare leaues in her Forme, when ſhe is newly gone out of it.

It ſeemed to the Maſters-Mate, that this that I told him, was an evident truth, and giuing credit vnto me, ſtrengthened the more in his beliefe by this empty Forme, where the Hare vvas vſ'd to ſit, as alſo, out of the loue that hee bare vnto me, he commanded the two fore-Bankes, and ſix other that were in in the rere, to be had in *Coram nobis*; vvherevpon, the *Alguazils* ſervant, comming amongſt them with a good Ropes end, (which your Sea-faring men call a ſalt Eele) gaue every one of them fifty ſound blowes a peece, which made the wheales to bunch out vpon their backs, leauing the skinne clinging cloſe

The manner of the beating of your Galley-ſlaues.

cloſe vnto them: Examining firſt every one by himſelfe, whether he had ſeene or heard of this ſtolne money? And after they had beene well laſht, they waſht them with ſalt, and tart Vineger, rubbing their woulds therewith, leaving their backes and ſidés ſo rent and torne, as if they had not beene men.

When this theft hapned, there was by chance a Gypſie that was not then aſleepe, vvhen my purſe was ſtolne, and when his turne came to receiue his payment, hee confeſt, that hee had ſeene his Companion, the night before, riſe from his owne Banke, and to goe to mine, but why, or wherefore he knew not.

When that Slaue perceiu'd that hee ſpake of him, and that hee had charg'd him in this manner, he ſtarted vp on his feete, and ſaid; That he was intangled in that chaine, which belonged to the other Banke, and that hee had ſprained his foot thereby, it being wrung and wrenched by it, and that hee was faine, (for to giue himſelfe eaſe) to clamber over thither, to diſ-intangle himſelfe. But becauſe this reaſon was to weake to hold water, and carried not that faireneſſe with it, as to be taken for a juſt excuſe, and much leſſe with thoſe, who knew well enough on which foote hee halted, they tooke him preſently to taske, and had many more ſtripes beſtowed vpon him then any of the reſt. And the Maſters-Mate was ſo angry with the *Alguazils* ſervant, becauſe hee did not lay them on ſo ſoundly as hee would haue him, that hee gaue order, that hee ſhould preſently haue as many beſtow'd vpon him; beſides a great many more which hee himſelfe with his owne hand laid vpon him with the Hoope of a Hogs-head. And in this his cholericke humour, (for hee was now mightily moued) hee forthwith commanded, that they ſhould take the delinquent in hand againe, and baſte him as long as they could ſtand over him; who (poore man) had more then enough before. But when hee ſaw that hee muſt goe to this geare againe, hee then began to thinke with himſelfe, that the Maſters-Mate would neuer giue him ouer, till he had confeſt the truth and therefore held it to be his beſt courſe, to deale plainly and truly with him, who had the money, by what meanes they came by it, and the plot that they had laid to get it from mee, excuſing himſelfe the beſt that he could, as that he had no purpoſe of himſelfe to doe it, and that he had never entred into the buſineſſe, had hee not otherwiſe been drawne into it.

Guzman *recouers his loſt money.*

Well, hee was well laſht, afterwards for his offence, and my money was returned backe vnto mee, which I receiued with a very good-will from my Maſters hand, adviſing mee withall, that I ſhould imploy it, making profit thereof, for hee ſhould be well pleaſed vvith any thing that were for my good.

My good fortune (like froth) beganne to increaſe more and more, in regard that I gaue my Maſter ſuch good content. And the Gallies beeing to goe forth, which were to joyne with thoſe of *Naples*, vpon a certaine imployment at Sea, I got mee a-ſhore, hauing a Souldiour of guard to be my keeper, and to my ſafe returne, where I imployed all that little money that I had, in matters of victuallage, which preſently from my ſetting forth from thence would double the coſt, and it ſucceeded well with mee. Out of that gaines, (with my Maſters leaue) I made mee a ſute after the faſhion of an old Gally-ſlaue, or one that had beene of ancient ſtanding amongſt them; Hoſe and Waſtecoat of blacke Buckram, liſted and welted handſomely in the ſeames, which (it being then the Summer ſeaſon) was cooler and freſher for me, and fit for my turne.

Now (thinking vpon my former mis-fortunes) I beganne to haue a glimpſe of that light, which they injoy, who follow Vertue, and proteſting with a firme reſolution, and ſettled conſtancie, rather to dye, then doe a baſe

a baſe action; I did onely ſtudy, how I might ſerue my Maſter, how I might pleaſe his humour, and giue him all content, how I might keepe his cloathes, his Cabbin, and his table cleane and neat.

Guzman *diſcourſes, and tels vs that it is onely Vertue & Goodneſſe, that brings a man to Heauen.*

And as I was thinking and conſidering on theſe things, I ſayd one night with my ſelfe; *Guzman*, thou ſeeſt here the top of that Mountaine of miſeries, wherevnto thy filthy ſenſuality hath brought thee: now art thou come to the higheſt part of it, and muſt either make a ſpeedy leape downe to the bottomleſſe pit of hell, or which thou mayſt more eaſily doe, by lifting vp thy armes, take hold on Heaven. Thou ſeeſt now the care that thou haſt to ſerue thy Maſter, for feare of a fewe ſtripes, which being giuen to day, are not felt to morrow. Thou doeſt watch late, riſe vp earely, thou art diligent, carefull, and ſolicitous in ſeeking out new Inventions, wherewith to delight him, and to purchaſe his favour, which when thou haſt obtained, is but of a man, and a Maſters-Mate. And this is the moſt thou canſt make of him.

Now thou well knoweſt, and canſt not be ignorant of it, for thou haſt beene a profeſt Student, and haſt ſtudied that point; how much leſſe God requires at thy hands, and how much more hath hee to conferre vpon thee, and how farre a greater friend hee is, then any man can be vnto thee.

Rouze vp thy ſelfe therefore, and awake from thy heavy ſleepe, which oppreſſeth thy ſoule; Returne home vnto thy ſelfe; and conſider that though it be true, that thy ſinnes haue brought thee hither, yet ſo apply this thy puniſhment vnto thee, and lay it ſo neere vnto thy heart, that thou mayſt make good vſe of it, and that it may turne to thy good. Thou haſt ſought after a ſtocke to imploy it for thy profit; ſeeke now to obtaine eternall happineſſe, and lay out all that thou haſt, that thou maiſt buy it. For it is a Iewell of ineſtimable worth, it cannot be valued. Theſe thy troubles, theſe thy miſeries which thou indureſt, this thy care which thou takeſt to ſerue this thy Maſter, put it all to Gods account, and be as diligent in ſeruing him. Charge him alſo with that, which thou art to loſe hereafter, and hee will beare the burthen of that charge; hee will leſſen thine, and adde it to his owne account. With this thou mayſt buy grace, which if heretofore it bore no price with thee, (for euen the beſt deſeruings of all the Saints that euer were, cannot raiſe ſuch a ſtocke, whereby to be able to buy it, till their merits meete with thoſe of our Sauiour Chriſt) now make much of it; and the rather ſeeing that Chriſt, that hee may communicate this his grace vnto vs, is willingly become our brother.

What brother did euer forſake a good and a louing brother? Serue him but with a ſigh, with a teare, or with a true heart-ſorrow, grieuing for thy ſinnes; and being angry and offended with thy ſelfe, that thou haſt offended ſo good a brother: and ſo by giuing him that which thou haſt, hee will joyne thy ſtocke with his owne, and making it of an infinite price, not by thine, but his merits, thou ſhalt enjoy life everlaſting.

Guzmans *conuerſion.*

In this diſcourſe with my ſelfe, and in other, vvhich roſe out of this, I ſpent a great part of the night, ſhowring downe teares in abundance, and vvaxing now heavy for the griefe for my ſinnes, I fell aſleepe; and when I awakt, I found my ſelfe another manner of man then I was before. I had caſt off my old heart, and put on a new one in its place. I gaue thankes vnto God for this my regeneration, and that hee had renewed his ſpirit aright in mee, humbly beſeeching him, that he would vphold mee with his holy hand, and ſtrengthen mee with his grace.

Preſently vpon this, I treated of the frequent Confeſſion of my ſinnes, and of the reformation of my life, and of the cleanſing of my conſcience; in which good deliberation, I continued many dayes; but I was fleſh and blood. I did ſtill ſtumble, almoſt at every ſtep, and now and then tooke a fall.

fall. But for any proceeding in my accuſtomed evill actions, I was much amended, and went from that time forward reforming my former courſe of life. Howbeit, for that I had exerciſed my ſelfe ſo much in my fore-paſſed ill deportments, I was ſtill pointed at with the finger for a vvicked man, which name I could never claw off, but did ſticke cloſe vnto me. For this is an evill, that followes evill men; that even thoſe good actions vvhich they doe, leaue a jealouſie and ſuſpition behinde them, and occaſion, as it were, ſcandall to ſuch as ſee them. For, though we doe them never ſo well, & with an vpright heart, yet are wee held to bee but Hypocrites. We haue a common Proverbe amongſt vs; *Que ſe ſacan por las Viſperas, los dias Santos:* That by the Veſpers, we come to know the Feaſts of the Saints. So they by my precedent actions, would judge of the future.

proverbe. Se ſacan por las Viſperas, los dias ſantos.

But to giue the vvorld leaue to cenſure things as they liſt, let him that vvould faine know vvhether hee ſtand in the ſtate of grace, or no, and liue in Gods loue and fauour, looke, and conſider vvith himſelfe, how God vvorketh with him, and he ſhall eaſily come to know it. Vſe thy beſt indeavours; doe that, vvhich (as a good Chriſtian) thou art bound to doe: ſo ſhall thy vvorkes be acceptable in his ſight, and thou ſhalt know (like *Abel*) that God is vvell pleaſed vvith this thy ſacrifice, and that hee hath ſet his eyes vpon thee.

Marke and obſerue, whether hee vſes thee no vvorſe, then hee vſes himſelfe; for this is a ſure and infallible ſigne, that thy Lord loues thee, vvhen of the ſame bread that he eateth; of the ſame cloathes which hee vveareth; of the ſame table, vvhere he takes his meales; of the ſame ſeat, vvhereon hee ſitteth; of the ſame Wine, whereof he drinketh; of the ſame bed, whereon he lyeth; hee makes no difference betweene thee and him, but is as it vvere all one. What did God injoy? What did God loue? What did God ſuffer? Troubles.

Troubles, the ſignes of Gods loue towards vs.

Now then, vvhen God ſhall ſhare theſe vvith thee, hee ſhewes that hee loues thee. Thou art his Minion, he feaſts thee, and makes much of thee; Be thou ſo vviſe as to receiue theſe things thankefully, and to make profit of them. Nor doe thou thinke, that God refuſes to giue thee thine owne hearts deſire, thy pleaſures, thy contentments, riches and large poſſeſsions, or what elſe may delight thee, for that he is cloſe fiſted, niggardly, or covetous; for if thou art vvilling to ſee the vvorth of theſe vvorldy comforts, turne but thine eyes aſide, and looke vpon thoſe that poſſeſſe them in greateſt aboundance. But who are theſe? Even Moores, Infidels, and Heretiques. But God runnes a contrary courſe vvith his friends, vvith thoſe that are his elected, and beloved children; the cheriſhments, and blandiſhments, that hee beſtowes vpon them, are poverty, afflictions, and perſecutions. O had I but knowne ſo much heretofore, as I doe now, and that God would haue beene pleaſed to haue inlightened my vnderſtanding, that I might haue truely ſeene, and lookt into my former errours, I might haue benefited my ſelfe in another kinde of manner then I did at that time.

I am the willinger to deliver this vnto you, for that when I made this Diſcourſe with my ſelfe, I did doe it truly, and with all my heart. And albeit I am not worthy to merit thereby any reward, (being ſo great a ſinner as I am) yet notwithſtanding, this little crumme, this poore drop, this ſmall ſparke, had its reward at that very inſtant, that ſlender repentance of mine, that my reſolution (though weake) to doe good, and that good beginning which I had put my ſelfe into, was not without its payment.

As ſoone as I had re-gained my moneys, new perſecutions, and new troubles beganne to grow vpon mee. Would to God that I had beene ſo conſiderate, as I ought to haue beene. He ſtript me of that contentment, vvherein I now liu'd; and hee beganne to touch mee to the quicke, and to beat me

me with many ſtripes. That ſmall ſhade of Iuy, (which like *Ionas* Gourd, did keepe mee from the ſcorching of the Sunne) vvas loſt, and quite taken from mee; it was dry'de vp, and withered, there was a worme bred in the root of it, which had vvaſted and conſumed it; ſo that I vvas forced to lye open to the heates, ſuffering new calamities, and new troubles, and ſuch as I never thought on, without any cauſe given by mee, or any the leaſt ſigne of offence, having no way deſerved ſuch hard meaſure. But ſtay the Pen, and ingeniouſly confeſſe, that ſuch miſeries and afflictions as theſe, are that hidden treaſure in the field, ſo highly commended vnto vs. And ſince thou haſt patiently heard mee hitherto, for thine owne pleaſure, heare mee now another while for mine; and hearken a little to the remainder of my misfortunes, where-vnto I ſhall giue an en end, in the next enſuing Chapter.

CHAPTER IX.

Guzman de Alfarache *proſecutes that which hapned vnto him in the Gallies: And by what meanes he came to be freed from thence.*

A ſhort Story of a Painter, with it's application.

THere was a famous Painter, who vvas ſo excellent in his Art, that hee had not his fellow in all the world. Vpon the fame and report of vvhoſe admirable peeces of vvorke, there came a Gentleman to his houſe, and going into the roome, vvhere hee drew his pictures, hee agreed with him, that hee ſhould paint for him in a Table, a very faire and beautifull Horſe, with rich furniture, and gracefully ſet forth, who being looſe, ſhould ſeeme to runne away as faſt as his legges could carry him. The Painter performed this piece of worke with all poſſible perfection, and ſhew'd therein the vtmoſt of his skill. And having fully finiſht it, he placed it there where the colours might grow dry?

Now, vvhen the Gentleman came to ſee how this his vvorke vvent forward, and to know how farre hee had proceeded therein, the Painter made haſte to ſhew it him, telling him hee had already ended it. And for that, when hee ſet forth this Table a drying; the Painter did not greatly care (as a thing that was nothing materiall) to ſet it after this, or that other manner, more one then another: So that the horſe ſtood (as he had then placed the Table) with his feet vpward, and his Saddle downeward.

The Gentleman when hee lookt vpon it, it ſeeming vnto him not to bee the ſame, which he had be-ſpoken, ſaid vnto him; Sir, the Horſe that I wiſht you to make me, was to be drawne running away; and this rather ſeemes to lye tumbling on the ground. The diſcreet Painter, mildly made anſwere; It ſeemeth, Sir, that you haue no great inſight in painting; the Picture is the ſame, that you pretend, if your Worſhip will bee but pleaſed to turne the Table. Wherevpon, that part that was downe-ward, was turned vpward; Which done, the Gentleman viewing it againe, reſted very well contented there-with, as well for the goodneſſe of the workmanſhip, as that thereby he was taught to know his owne errour.

If wee conſider the handy-workes of God, they will oftentimes ſeeme vnto vs like this Horſe, that lyes tumbling and wallowing on the ground; but if wee ſhall but turne this Table, wrought by the penſill of that ſupreme Artizan, that painted to the life both Heaven and earth, beautifying the one with Sunne, Moone, and Starres; the other, with all variety of colours, in

Flowers

flowers, fruits, and the like; we ſhall finde, that this is the piece that vvee would haue, and that the worke is done to its full perfection.

Troubles (as I told you a little before) ſeeme harſh and ſharpe vnto vs: we haue not (no more then had this ignorant Gentleman) the true diſcerning of them aright; there are few that vnderſtand them as they ſhould; but when he that ſends them vnto vs, ſhewes that mercy vnto vs, which is laid vp in them, then we ſhall ſee them in their true ſhape and colours, and ſhall take great pleaſure and delight in them.

Amongſt all the Slaues that were in the Galley, there was none of them like vnto me, either in their good vſage, or in the knowledge of giving ſuch good content as I did, to my Maſter. But the pinne in Fortunes wheele ſlipt out, & vp came I in ſuch a ſtrange kind of manner, as the like was never ſeene.

It hapned at that time, that there came a Gentleman into our Galley, who bare our Captaines name, and was alſo of kinne vnto him, to learne experience, and to ſee ſome ſervice. He was rich, well clad, better behau'd, and ware about his neck a maſsie chaine of gold, Soldier-like, being juſt ſuch another for all the world, as I was vs'd to haue heretofore, Hee dieted in the Poope; hee had a good garniſh of Plate; and ſervants, that waited vpon him, well and handſomly ſuited: But it ſo fell out, that the very next day after his imbarking, there were eighteene linkes of his chaine miſsing, vvhich vvere no leſſe worth, then fifty Crownes. Sure, ſome of his owne ſervants muſt needs haue them: for there were none, that came into the Poope-roome, but ſuch as were knowne perſons, and free from all ſuſpicion: Yet notwithſtaning, for the better cleering of this doubt, all the Captaines ſervants were put to the laſh, yet for all that, vvas there no newes to bee heard of them, they could never heare of them more, nor get any the leaſt inckling thereof in the vvorld, nor is it knowne till this day who ſtole them, or what became of them.

And for the better excuſing hereafter of the like misfortune, the Captaine came to his kinſeman, and told him, that his beſt and ſureſt courſe was, that for the time that hee ſtay'd there, hee ſhould commit the charge of his apparell and Iewels, to ſome truſty Galley-Slaue, who might take care of them and keepe them neate and handſome; aſſuring him, that what-ſoever hee ſhould deliver to any one of their cuſtodies, they durſt as well be hang'd, as not giue him a true account of it, and that there ſhould not bee ſo much as a haire miſsing, of any thing that he ſhould truſt them withall.

This Gentlewoman liked very well of his counſell; and making afterwards inquirie, who in all the Galley might be the fitteſt man for him, and the moſt ſufficient, I was the only man they made choyce of, as being recommended vnto them, for the good ſatisfaction that I would giue him in my vnderſtanding, my diligencie in attending his perſon, and for my cleanlineſſe about my ſelfe, as alſo any thing that was my maſters. When the Gentleman had heard of theſe my good qualities, and how I was likewiſe able to entertaine him with witty jeſts, and merry conceits, he thought the time long, till he might ſee me in the Poope. So in all haſte, they called the Maſters-Mate vnto them, and being intreated to part with me, hee could not deny them their requeſt, although it grieu'd him much, for the good ſervice that hee received from mee; They clapt a long chaine to my legge, which I trailed after mee; and I was no ſooner come vnto him, but he was very glad to ſee mee, and ſpake very kindely vnto me: and I thinke the rather, for that my feature, my face, and my actions, were anſwerable to that which he had heard of me. It did ſomewhat grieue him to ſee me (like a Monky) ty'd thus to a chaine, and to draw it after me. He intreated the Captaine, that hee would favour me ſo farre, that I might walke vp and downe with one only fetter; which vvas graunted: By which meanes, I was inabled to doe him the quicker and nimbler

bler ſervice, as well whē he ſate without at his meales, as when he was within his Cabbin, as alſo, in going to & fro in the Gally, when occaſion was offered. I had an Inventorie delivered vnto me, of all his apparrell and Iewels; whereof, I ſtill gaue him a very good accompt; But that which hee and I, had leaſt affiance in, and were moſt jealous of, was, of his owne ſervants: For now that I had the charge of his *recamera*, his Wardrobe, or whatſoever elſe was appertaining vnto him, they might eaſily excuſe themſelues of ſuch things, as they could ſteale cleanely from me. They cabbin'd with the Chaplaine, neere to the maine Maſt: and the Gentleman, he had his cabbin vvithin the Poope; and I, in a little Diſpenſe, or Pantrie, where I kept ſome *regalos*, and dainties, beſides other neceſſary proviſion.

I liked very well my ſervice, though I tooke a great deale of paines, but it was a pleaſure vnto me, and gaue me much content, that I had now the power, by thoſe things that paſt thorow my hands, to performe many kindneſſes towards ſuch Slaues as were my friends and acquaintance: and albeit I was willing to haue done the like towards *Soto*, my old *Camerade*, yet I could not get within him, nor come to faſten any kindnes vpon him; I wiſh't his good as mine own, but he did me all the ſpight that he could, diſcrediting and diſgracing mee, telling ſome things truly of mee, and inventing other-ſome, like vnto thoſe, at what time we were taken, and committed to priſon, defaming mee, as much as did lye in him, broaching whatſoever hee knew of me, not leaving any one thing vn-ript vp, for the manifeſting of his malice, and my ſhame: ſo that, albeit I, for mine owne part, were privy to my ſelfe, how much I was now reformed; yet thoſe that heard him thus exclaime againſt mee, would make interpretation of them, as they ſtood affected, and comment vpon them, as they themſelues liſted. And though God, at that inſtant, ſhould haue given mee the power to haue wrought Miracles, they would not haue ſtik't to haue ſaid, that I had done them in *Belzebub's* name.

Soto, was the knife, that ſought to cut my throat; the point or edge thereof, was ſtill towards me: yet never did any man heare me ſpeake ſo much as one foule word of him, or ever open my mouth againſt him, or make ſhow of any the leaſt choller, at this his abuſing me: I made no reckoning of it, but let it paſſe as lightly as I could, all my whole care being now taken vp, in the diligent attending of my new Maſter, and in doing him all faithfull ſervice, that I might procure his loue and good liking towards me; hoping that it might one day ſo fall out, that either by him, or by ſome other, in recompence of my good ſervice, I might chance to purchaſe my liberty.

When he came out of his Cabbin, I was ſtill at hand to receiue him; when he ſet his feet to come downe the ladder, I lent him my hand, at his entring, and returning out of the Cock-Boate; I made him Tooth-picks for his Table, putting them vpon a plate, when he ſate downe to his meate; which, being many, & marvellous curious; hee would often ſend for tokens to his friends. His Trencher-plates, and thoſe his other veſſels for the cooling of his wine, his Cups, and his Glaſſes, were ſo cleanly kept, ſo neate, and ſo in every point as they ſhould be, that it was a pleaſure to the eye to behold them. His bottles of Wine, and his iarrs of water, freſh and ſweet; the wooll of the Matreſſes whereon he lay, kept vnknotty, and ſoft; his whole bedding ſo well look't to, that there was not a Flea to be found in it, nor any the like troubleſom vermin: for as my leaſure would giue me leaue, it was my daily exerciſe, to goe a hunting after them, ſtopping thoſe holes and chinkes, where there was any the leaſt ſuſpition of their breeding, that my Maſter might not only be free from Fleaes, and *Chinches*, but the bad ſent which they haue with them.

So great was my diligence, and ſo pleaſing the whole manner of my proceeding vvith him, that my Maſter had now left off converſing with his other ſervants, and would at large diſcourſe with mee of graue and weighty matters;

ters; but dealt therein with mee as your Diſtillers vſe to doe; hee did Limbecke mee, and ſqueeze what he could out of mee; and vvhen hee had exhauſted from mee that juice and ſubſtance, vvhich vvas for his turne, and as much as hee deſired at that time to draw from mee, he would pauſe a while vpon the matter, or to ſpeake more plainely, was halfe jealous of mee, that I vvas not ſo compleat, and perfect as I ſhould be, nor had not that true touch and reliſh, which properly appertaineth to your purer diſtillations. And all for the ſmacke of one Herbe, vvhich vvas that evill report, which *Soto* had giuen of mee. But his virulent tongue could not make mee wrong Vertue: I went as faſt in doing well, as hee did in ſpeaking ill: as well, that my actions might giue him the lye, as alſo for that I now minded no other thing, then to runne on ſtill in that good reſolution which I had propoſed to my ſelfe.

When I waited on him at Table, I would out now and then vvith a merry Tale, or ſome odde conceited jeſt or other. And a-nights, or at other ſuch times as hee was diſpoſed to take a nap, I vvould chat one thing or other to him that I might keepe him ſtill cheerefull and merry. And the rather, for that of late hee was growne ſomewhat melancholly, vpon a Letter that hee had receiued but a few dayes before from a graue perſonage, to whom hee vvas much obliged, who all his life-time could never be drawne himſelfe to marry, and vvas now vvonderfull inſtant with this Gentleman my Maſter that hee would get him a Wife. Perceiuing therefore how ſadde hee was, I made bold to aske him the reaſon, vvhy hee vvas ſo penſiue. Hee told it me; and did likewiſe aske my advice, what hee were beſt to doe in this caſe? I told him; Mee thinkes (Sir) that the fitteſt anſwere, which is to be giuen to ſuch a one, who hath beene ſo averſe from marriage himſelfe, and would now inforce others therevnto, at leaſt ſeeke to perſwade them vnto it, is, That you are well content to do ſo, if hee vvill giue you one of his daughters to Wife. My Maſter was well pleaſed with the Counſell I gaue him, reſoluing vvith himſelfe to take that courſe which I had preſcribed vnto him. And continuing talke till it was dinner time, hee vvill'd me to tell him, being I had beene twice married how I liked that kinde of life.

I told him, Sir, a good and peaceable marriage, where loue and, and condition of the parties ſtand vpon equall termes, it is a glory; it is an enjoying both of earth and Heaven; it is a ſtate for thoſe, who make choice thereof, out of a deſire to be ſaved thereby, of ſo great perfection, and of ſuch exceeding both content, and comfort, that for to treat of ſuch a ſubject, it will require the relation of ſuch a tongue, as hath taſted the true happineſſe thereof. But for my ſelfe, who made Matrimony a matter of money, and more for pleaſure then propagation, as I did, I know not what to ſay vnto it; I haue deſervedly paid the price of that ſinne, by this my preſent puniſhment, which I now indure. *Touching Marriage.*

There are ſome women (I muſt confeſſe) who by their wiſedome, and diſcreet carriage, haue reduced to very good order and conformity, as perverſe and wicked men, as any are in the world. And there are other ſome againe, that vvill make the beſt tempered, and the holyeſt men aliue, to loſe all patience, though hee be able to ſuffer never ſo much. Looke but vpon *Iob's* vvife, and ſee into what a deſperate humour ſhe would faine haue put her Husband; how did ſhee perſecute him, and how much did it import him, to haue recourſe vnto God, and onely to defend himſelfe more from her, then from all other his perſecutions, and afflictions? *Worthy Wiues, who are they?* *Wicked Wiues, and who are they?*

And therefore three friends being together in converſation; the one ſaid; Happy is that man that hath the good hap to match with a good wife. But more happy (ſaid the other) who buries her quickly, if ſhee proue vntoward. And the third ſayd; Moſt happy is hee, that hath neither t'one nor t'other. *Opinions of marriage.*

A tale teaching a man how to be rid of a bad Wife.

How much an importunate Wife and of an ill condition, doth torment and vexe a man, let that *Provenzall* tell it you, who being quite wearied and tyred out with a shrewd Wife, and being vnable any longer to indure her harsh behaviour, and not knowing in the world, how to correct these her malignant humours, that hee might without scandall rid himselfe of her, hee was resolued to goe and make merry with his Wife and all his Familie, at a house that hee had in the Countrey, that vvas not farre off, it lying in his way, to passe by the skirt of a Mountaine, adjoyning close vpon *Rodanus*, a great and swift Riuer; which in that very part of it, for that it vvas narrow, and past along betweene two mountaines, vvas very deepe and ranne with a furious Currant. Hee tooke order that the Mule vvhich his Wife vvas to ride on, had not for three dayes before, one drop of vvater giuen her; so that, when she came to the place afore-said, and that shee saw the water, there was no holding of her backe, but hastning downe the hanging of the Hill, from one ridge to another, she got to the Riuer; from whence, it being impossible to turne her about, and to get vp againe against the steeppinesse of the Cliffe, nor being able with all the force shee had, to reine her in, they both rushed into the riuer, vvhere the woman was drowned, & the Mule vvith much adoe escaped; but came out so weake, and so weary that shee was scarce able to stand vpon her legges.

A Tale of certain Thrushes.

For those which never knew what marriage meant, and yet desire to be informed vvhat manner of thing it is, I may for a patterne set before their eyes, that vvhich passed betweene those Thrushes the Summer following that they were hatcht, and ready to fly abroad and shift for themselues. There vvas a great Shole of them gathered together, as if all the Thrushes in the world had joyn'd in one muster, and were such a cloud of them, vvhen they vvere vpon their vvings, that they seemed to darken the ayre, and by their interposition betwixt the Sunne and the earth, to make an Eclipse.

And when all this jolly company were assembled, and met together, they rait'd their Campe, and marched away together, to seeke out some better place to liue in, (for that yeare, their owne Countrey failed them of that plenty which it vvas wont to afford them;) so at last they entred into a very goodly Countrey, that vvas full of Gardens and orchards, and fresh Fields, and where there were many pleasant Fruits, and other delicate feeding for them; vvhere they vvere very willing to set vp their rest, it seeming vnto them, to be a place not onely of much recreation and delight, but of sufficient sustenance and maintenance for them. But when the Inhabitants of that Countrey saw how they flocked together, they spred their nets, made ginnes, and pit-fals for them, and by little and little vvent taking and destroying of them.

The poore Thrushes, seeing themselues thus persecuted, and that they could not safely feede there, nor rest in quiet, they sought out another place that might make better for their purpose, vvhich they found as pleasant, and as plentifull as the former; but they tasted here of the same sauce, as they did there; vvhich made them likewise to fly for feare from that danger which hung over their heads.

Thus did they trauell vp and downe from place to place, till that they being in a manner almost all destroy'd, those few that vvere left aliue, agreed to returne home to their owne Couotrey. When their fellow-Thrushes that stayd at home, saw them returne so faire, and fat, they said vnto them; O how happy are you, and how vvretched are vvee? Wee staid here behinde, and you see how vveake, and how poore vvee be; but you are come home in that good case, your feathers so smooth, and so sleeke, that it is a pleasure to looke vpon them; and your bodies so plumpe, and so vvell fed, that yee can scarce fly, yee be so fat; vvhereas vvee through pure hunger, are scarce able

to

to ſtand vpon our legges, and when we are on our wings, are ready through faintneſſe to fall to the ground.

Whereunto theſe welcome-home Trauellers returned this anſwere: The eyes of your conſideration reach no farther, then to this our fatneſſe; but if you would be pleaſed to weigh with your ſelues, how many of vs went from hence, and how few of vs are returned home aliue, you would rather reſt contented with your poore, but ſecure fare; then with this our fatneſſe, and full feeding, ſo full of dangers.

They who looke onely on the pleaſures of Marriage, and goe no farther, where they may ſee ſcarce ten of ten thouſand, to come off cleare, and eſcape the danger of it, will thinke better of a ſingle life, then of Marriage; and that it is farre better and ſafer to be alone, then ill accompanied.

Whileſt vvee vvere in this Diſcourſe, dinner was ſeruing in, and the cloth being laid, I waited as I was wont to doe; hauing my eyes ſtill fixed on my Maſters hands, that hee might not wagge a finger, but I might be in readineſſe to apprehend and execute his thoughts. But whileſt I was thus watchfull about my Maſter, *Soto* vvas not ſleeping in the meane while to worke me a miſchiefe.

And when hee ſaw all his former malice could not worke me out of favour, nor doe me any harme, with ſheere money hee went about to purchaſe out his revenge vpon mee. He grew into a League of friendſhip with my Maſters Page, ſuch another Bird as himſelfe, for that bribes had corrupted him, and private intereſt drawne him to be thus diſhoneſt towards mee. Hee promiſed him a dainty fine payre of Stockins of his owne knitting, and told him, that he would beſtow them vpon him, if (as hee wayted at the Table) hee could handſomely ſteale a piece of Plate from thence, and hide it in ſome ſecret place in my Pantry, that I might not know of it. For, in ſo doing, he ſhould effect two good things. Firſt, he ſhould gaine a good paire of Stockins by the bargaine. And ſecondly, himſelfe, and his other fellow-ſervants, ſhould by this meanes be receiued againe into favour, and I caſt out.

Soto his malice towards Guzman.

His plot to diſgrace him.

The Page did not like amiſſe of this motion; and taking occaſion that day to goe downe, he tooke vp a Silver Plate, which (by lifting vp a little boord) he hid in one of the ſides of the Gallie.

Now vvhen the cloth was taken away, going to gather vp my Plate (as my manner was) that I might make them cleane, finding one of them vvanting, I made diligent ſearch for it; and when I had ſearcht every corner, and could not finde it, I preſently gaue notice, that I miſt ſuch a Plate; to the end that ſome diligence might be vſed, for the ſooner recoverie of it, vvith thoſe his ſervants that appertained to the Poope.

The Captaine and my Maſter did beleeue what was truth at the firſt; but becauſe my enemy *Soto* bare witneſſe againſt mee, it was voiced out amongſt them, that my ſelfe, abuſing the favour that I had with my Maſter, had ſtolne it, and convayde it away, that I might lay the fault vpon others, and ſo goe away with it my ſelfe. This roguiſh Page, did put a helping hand therevnto, and did all that he could to diſgrace me; So that now the doores beganne to be ſet open to ſuſpition, and had made ſome little entrance; and ſtepping farther in by degrees, my Maſter was often earneſt with mee, to confeſſe the truth, before the buſineſſe ſhould grow fouler. But becauſe I knew mine owne innocencie, and that I vvas as cleare thereof, as the childe that is new borne, I could giue him no other ſatisfaction ſaue good words.

Hatred, what effects it produceth.

Then this Traytor the Page ſtood vp, and ſaid; Methinkes, Sir, it were not amiſſe that you would cauſe his Diſpence, or Pantry to be ſearcht. For it is not poſſible, but that he muſt hide it ſome where or othere there-abouts. For, being that I had not gone out of the Poope, it was very likely they might finde it in my lodging. This courſe tooke beſt, and vvas of all very vvell

liked, and approued; And ſo getting them downe, and rummaging all that little roome; firſt this place, and then that, they lighted vpon it at laſt where the Page had put it; and taking it forth, they came vp with great joy, and proclaim'd, that now they had found it, and that I had hid it there; for that it was not poſſible, that any body elſe ſhould doe it.

Now, becauſe this carried with it a ſhow of truth, and that they had caught me in the Negatiue, this confirmed them in their ſuſpition, and this crime was laid to my charge.

The Captaine commanded the *Alguazils* ſervant, to giue me fifty ſtripes; from the which my Maſter did free me, intreating my pardon, for that it was the firſt fault that I had committed; adviſing me withall, that if hereafter I ſhould be taken with the like, I ſhould be ſoundly puniſht, and pay both for the old, and the new. After this, I held not vp my head any more, my heart was never truly merry, nor did I enjoy my ſelfe, as before; not for that which was paſt; but fearing that which was to come; Thinking with my ſelfe, that hee, that had done mee this wrong, would (hauing ſcap't this ſo well) watch his time to doe me a greater miſchiefe. And being jealous of ſome farther foule play, I earneſtly beſought both the Captaine, and my Maſter, that they would quit me of this charge, and that I might haue their good will to deliver over thoſe things that were in my cuſtodie to ſome other, and I ſhould take it from them as a favour, that they would returne mee backe againe, laden with my irons, to my Banke. They thought, that the ground of all this, was the deſire that I had to goe backe againe to ſerue my old Maſter, the Maſters-Mate: And howbeit I did importune them very hard, and was very inſtant with them; they, for the ſame reaſon, were more earneſt and vrgent vpon mee; and that I ſhould (though it grieu'd mee) ſerue and attend there all the dayes of my life. Miſerable man that I am (ſaid I) I know not in the vvorld vvhat to doe, nor how to defend my ſelfe from Traytors; who, it ſeemeth, haue ſet themſelues againſt me, onely of purpoſe to vndoe me.

Argo's eyes are not ſufficient to keep a man from the malice of his enemies.

I did all that I could poſſibly doe for my life, no man liuing could be more carefull, watching (like *Argo's*) with a hundred eyes, whatſoever was committed to my charge, not neglecting thoſe things that were ſcarce worth the looking after, being but trifles, and not to be reckoned of: yet all this my care would not ſerue my turne; it hath done mee, you ſee, no good; I vvas now in my riſing, but Heaven hath thought it fit that I muſt firſt fall.

One enening, as my Maſter was comming forth, I went out (as I vvas wont to doe) to receiue him as hee was to aſcend the ſtayres, I gaue him my hand; he comes vp: I tooke off his Cloake, his Sword, and his Hat, and gaue him his Sea-Gowne, & Cap, which was of greene Damaske; for theſe things I had ſtill in a readineſſe.

When I had done, I carried downe thoſe other things, putting them in their right place. That very night, not knowing, how, who, or by what meanes (vnleſſe it vvere the Devils doing, for I could not conceiue otherwiſe of it) that the Hat being falne downe from the place where it hung, I found it without a Band, which was ſet with gold Buttons. Whip, Sir *Iohn*, it vvas gone in a trice; ſo that in the morning, when I ſaw how it lay, and the Hat-band gone, I ſtood like a man amaz'd.

Well, I ſearch't as diligently for it, as if my life had layne vpon it; but to no purpoſe in the vvorld. The Hat-band vvould not appeare, nor vvas there any ſigne, or marke thereof, how it ſhould be gone.

When I told my Maſter of it; Ah (ſaid he) now I know thee to be a thiefe; I wot well what thou art, and why thou doeſt it. But ſet your heart at reſt, it ſhall not ſerue your turne, for the Hat-band muſt not be ſo loſt; I ſhall make you fetch it out, & yet faile of your purpoſe beſides. I know your fetch well enough. Doeſt not thou thinke, that ever ſince the Plate was miſſing, I haue

lookt

lookt into your water; and found out the diſeaſe thou art ſicke of, and that thou goeſt ſeeking new occaſions, that thou mayſt be quit of my ſervice? But thou ſhalt ſerue me ſtill in ſpite of thy teeth, if it be but to vexe thee the more, and thou ſhalt haue a thouſand baſtonado's walke daily about thy ſhoulders: Nor ſhalt thou ever ſerue any other Maſter in the Galley, but my ſelfe; And in caſe I ſhould goe hence, I will ſo farre befriend you, that thou ſhalt be rank't, like a Rogue, according as thy Villanies deſerue, and thy lewd and naughty dealings, ſince my good vſage towards thee, will not make thee leaue off, to be that which thou art, and ever wilt be *Guzman de Alfarache*; that's enough, I need ſay no more vnto thee.

I know not what to ſay vnto thee, nor to indeare the griefe that I conceiued herevpon. Finding my ſelfe cleare and innocent, and yet charged with a juſt (as they would haue it) and lawfull crime; I reply'de not ſo much as one word, nor had I the power to ſpeake; And if I ſhould haue ſought to juſtifie my ſelfe, had it beene Goſpell, that I ſhould haue delivered vnto them, comming out of my mouth, no more credit would haue beene giuen vnto it, then to *Mahomet*. I therefore was ſilent, and held my peace. For, when words will not profit a man, it were better that his tongue ſhould be dumbe, and his heart tell it's griefes vnto God. Inwardly to my ſelfe, I gaue his Majeſtie thankes for this his affliction, beſeeching him, that he would free mee from this mans hands; for I knew not, wherein I had offended him. For I was ſo truely become another man, and ſo quite altered from that I was before, that I would rather ſuffer my ſelfe to be torne in a thouſand pieces, then to commit any the leaſt crime in the world.

When they had vſed many diligences, and ſaw that by no meanes they could bring his Hat-band to light; the Captaine commanded the *Alguazils* man, that hee ſhould beat it out of mee, and never giue me over, till I had confeſt the Theft.

I was preſently taken vp, they did what they could, and I endured it as well as I could. They would haue me to acknowledge that, which I never knew, whileſt I with my ſoule powr'd forth ſuch prayers, as I knew; invocating heaven, that that torment and bloud, which thoſe cruell ſtripes did draw from mee, might be joyned with thoſe innocent droppes, and vndeſerued tortures, which my good God both ſuffered, and ſhed for me, and that they might be availeable for mee to ſalvation; ſeeing that there was now no way but one with mee: For dye I muſt vnder theſe their tyrannous hands, if they did not leaue off the ſooner. They ſaw all of them in what a pittifull caſe I was, and there was nothing elſe wanting betwixt me and my death, but the breathing forth of my Spirit. And albeit it ſeemed to my Maſter, that my crueltie, in ſuffering my ſelfe thus to be whipt, was greater then his, in commanding it to be done; yet at laſt taking compaſſion vpon me, and pittying the great torment that I was put to, cauſed me to be taken away.

Then did they chafe my body with Salt, and Wine Vineger, vvhich vvas of greater torment vnto mee, then the other. The Captaine would haue had them to haue giuen me as much more vpon my belly, ſaying; Little doe you know, Sir, the condition of theſe Theeues, who are of like nature to your Foxes; they will counterfeit themſelues to be almoſt dead, and will lye, as if there were no life in them; but if you let them alone, and ſuffer them to take breath, they will runne from you, like ſo many young Colts: And other ſome are ſo hardy, that for a peece of ſixe pence, they will let you flea the skin from off their backes. But let this Dogge aſſure himſelfe, hee ſhall not carry it away ſo; for I vvill never giue him over, till I haue either the Hat-band, or his life. He commanded me to be carried away from thence to my *Diſpenſilla*, or little Pantry, where they did lye at mee (I know not how often) with perſwaſions and admonitions, ever and anon notifying vnto mee,

that I ſhould either deliver vp the Hat-band, or arme my ſelfe with patience; for it was reſolued, that I muſt be beaten to death, rather then I ſhould enjoy what I had ſtolne. But, as no man can reſtore that which hee never had; no more could I comply with that which they commanded me.

Then I knew what it was to be a Gally-ſlaue; and how that the loue, which ſome made ſhow to beare vnto me, and the good lookes that they gaue mee, proceeded onely from the pleaſure that they tooke in my merry jeſts, & witty conceits, and not for mine owne ſake. And the greateſt griefe that I did feele in theſe my miſeries, was not ſo much for the paine which I did endure, nor for the falſe witneſſe that was giuen againſt mee, as that all of them did verily beleeue, that I did juſtly deſerue this puniſhment, and therefore tooke no pittie of me.

Some few dayes (after this my rubbing and being waſht with Salt and Vineger) paſt over my head, when loe, they came a-freſh vpon me, commanding me to make reſtitution of the Hat-band; & becauſe I would not, or (to ſpeake more truely) could not giue it them, they pull'd me out of the Pantry, being very weake and ill, faſtening Cords to the wreſts of mine arme, and haling me vp with a pully, I hung (I know not how long) in the ayre, which vvas a terrible torment vnto me, where I thought, I ſhould haue breath'd my laſt. For my heart was ſo afflicted, that I had ſcarce any feeling that there was any ſuch thing in my body, and my breath began to faile me. At laſt, they let mee downe, not to giue me eaſe, but to lay me downe vpon my backe athwart the Cannon, that lyes betweene the Fore-caſtle, and hinder Decke; where when my belly lay fit for their purpoſe, they laid thereon ſuch cruell blowes, as if it had beene for ſome heynous crime, charging the Officer to be-labour me even to the death.

But the Captaine, beginning now to feare, that I was ready to giue vp the Ghoſt, and that hee ſhould be accountable to the King for mee, if I ſhould through this his cruell vſage periſh in my puniſhment, hee held it the better option of the two, rather to loſe the Hat-band, then me. Whereupon hee commanded they ſhould take me away, and carry me to my wonted lodging, there to be cured.

When I began to recover, and had got a little ſtrength, they yet thought themſelues not ſufficiently revenged of me; for they had ſtill this ſtedfaſt beliefe of me, that I was ſuch a notable Villaine, & ſuch a ſtubborne Rogue, that I would rather ſuffer all that rigour of this their whipping and ſcourging of me, then loſe the intereſt of this my ſuppoſed theft: Inſomuch, that they commanded the Maſters Mate, that he ſhould never pardon me, when I did offend, but that he ſhould be very carefull to puniſh ſtill in me, thoſe ſinnes that were veniall, as if they had beene mortall:

And he, who could not otherwiſe chooſe but fulfill his Captaines command (for he durſt not for his life doe otherwiſe) did chaſtiſe me with vnaccuſtomed crueltie, one while for that I did not get me to ſleepe at my due houres; another-while, for that I did not wake in time; if to ſupply my other wants, I did ſell my allowance, ſparing the meat out of my belly, to relieue my neceſſities, I was ſure to be laſht for it; vſing me ſo extremely ill, that I was weary of my life, and did deſire with all my heart, that I were out of this wretched world. And, that they might haue the better colour to doe as they did, and that they might picke occaſion to pay me ſoundly, and yet ſaue themſelues harmleſſe; they committed to my charge the trouble of the (a) *Corvilla*; with proteſtation, that if any thing therein ſhould be wanting, I ſhould be ſure to pay well for it. I was likewiſe vpon all occaſions, like the reſt of the Gally-ſlaues, put to tugge at the Oare; My Banke was the hindermoſt, and therefore the more painfull, as being ſubjeſt to the inclemency of the weather; in Summer, to heates; and in Winter, to colds; being ſtill ty'de to haue a care to keepe

(a) *The Italian will haue this to ſignifie* tutta la robo del Rey. *The French renders it*, Connille.

keepe vp the Beake of our Gally in the windes mouth, and to goe snugge and tyte. To my cuſtody, were committed all the iron implements that were aboord her; as likewiſe the Cables, to caſt or weigh Anchor, as need ſhould require. When we did ſayle with the winde, I was faine to looke to the fore-ſayle, as alſo to the ſheate that was to the Lar-boord; ſayle, or not ſayle, I had ſomething ſtill to doe, either before, or behinde. I did ſpinne all the Hempe, whereof your ſmaller cordage, and leſſer Ropes were made, which were ſpent and imployed on the Gallies. It was put to my account to tye vp the Yards, to ruffle the Sayle, to drie them, and then deliver them to the Ship-boyes, to hoyſe the Fore-ſayle, and ſee every thing fit about it. I did mend thoſe ends of the ſayles that were torne and rent with the winde, I did patch and lengthen out thoſe that were grown too ſhort; I did ſtrengthen the old tacklings with odde ends, that I had in ſtore for that purpoſe; but the Cables I ſupplyde ſtill with new ſtuffe. I did keepe the Gunners to plant their Ordnance, remoue their Carriages, and to winde and turne their Artillerie, as they would haue it. The care was laid vpon me, to ſtop the touch-holes, and to ſee them well cover'd, that no wet ſhould come at them; to looke to the ſcouring ſticks, and the Spoones to powre in the powder, to the Rammers, the Spunges, and the Lin-ſtocks that belong to the Artillerie. And vvhen the Maſter-Mates-man was out of the way, or otherwiſe occupied, it vvas injoyned me to ſweepe and make cleane the Gally, and to bee the common Swabber, cauſing the Ship-boyes to bring Mats and Ruſhes, to make Maps where-withall to rub it, keeping it alwayes neat and cleane from all kinde of filthineſſe. And of old ends of Ragges, or of Flax and Tow, to make wads and wiſps for thoſe that goe to the Long-houſe (you know what I meane) and this was the vtmoſt of all miſeries, and that went moſt againſt my ſtomake, as being of all others the meaneſt and the baſeſt Office; for being to ſerue them with theſe, for ſo beaſtly (that I may not giue it a worſe word, for feare of turning thy ſtomake) a piece of buſineſſe, I muſt firſt be forced to kiſſe it, before I giue it into their hands, ſo that by an Attourney, I muſt kiſſe, you know what.

He, that ſhould haue ſo many things committed to his charge as I had, and had not been accuſtomed vnto them, it muſt haue been almoſt impoſſible for him not to haue failed in the performance of them; but through the great care that I alwayes tooke, I did ſtudy to doe all things well, and did ſeldome or never miſſe in doing of my dutie, and with vſe, they grew every day leſſe difficult then other. Even from hence alſo vvould Fortune haue throwne mee downe if ſhee could; but becauſe her force cannot extend it ſelfe againſt the goods of the minde; and that adverſitie makes men wiſe and prudent; I ſtill bare vp ſtoutly, and continued firme and conſtant, withſtanding all the power that ſhe could make againſt me. And as he that is rich, and lives happily, is evermore afraid of falling; ſo on the contrarie, was I in good hope of riſing, becauſe it was impoſſible for me to fall any lower. And as my minde gaue me ſo it fell out.

Soto, my Camerade, came not to the Gallies, either to giue Almes, or to preach Faith in Chriſt to the Infidels. It was his ſins that had brought him thither; for he had beene the greateſt, and moſt notorious thiefe, that ever vvas heard of in his time, either in all *Italy*, or in *Spaine*. He had ſometimes beene a Souldier, and knew every part of the Countrey, as one that had travell'd it to and fro many a time. Hee perceiving that our Gallies did ſayle along the Mediterranean, and that wee went touching now and then vpon the coaſt of *Barbary*, ſeeking reprizals, it entred into his imagination to treat with ſome Moores, and other Gally-ſlaues, that were of his faction, to make purchaſe of this our Gally, and to goe cheere away with it. For which purpoſe, he and they were already provided of ſome weapons, which they had hid in by-

corners,

corners, and vnder their Banks, to make vſe of them, when time ſhould ſerue. But becauſe he could not bring this his deſigne to paſſe, without having me to bee of his Party, in regard of the place that I had in my Banke, where I was behinde at his backe; and for that the ordering of the Tacklings and Cables were committed wholly to my charge, he thought fit to make me acquainted with this his intention, caſting and conſidering with himſelfe, that this buſineſſe would be better welcome to no man then my ſelfe, as well for that I was condemned to ſerue there as a Slaue all the dayes of my life; as alſo, that I might free my ſelfe from that Hell, where-into they had thruſt me, and did ſo ſeverely puniſh me. *Soto* would haue broken the Ice himſelfe, and did much deſire to conferre with mee about it, but hee could not finde the meanes. Where-vpon, he ſent a Meſſenger vnto mee, (one that hee might truſt) deſiring my reconciliation, and favour, and that I would joyne with him for the better effecting of our freedome from this cruell bondage and ſlavery wherein wee now lived. I returned him anſwere, that this was not a buſineſſe ſo eaſily to bee vndertaken as hee ſuppoſed; but ought to be well weigh'd, and thought vpon, before we did reſolue thereon; for we muſt needs runne a very great hazzard in the vndergoing thereof; for that there was no *medium* betwixt theſe two; either to come off cleere, or to loſe our liues. To the Moore, who had brought me this meſſage, my Counſell did not ſeeme amiſſe; Telling me, that he would goe with my anſwere to *Soto*, and finde a time to come againe vnto me, and talke farther of it.

In the *Interim*, while theſe meſſages paſt to and fro, I conſulted with my ſelfe; and for that I had put on a full reſolution, not to doe any thing that was infamous, or ill, no not for any profit or benefit that ſhould accrue thereby vnto mee, I knew that it was now no time for mee to adviſe farther vvith them; as well, for that I ſaw how they were reſolued; as alſo for feare, if I ſhould fall off from them, or otherwiſe miſſe of their purpoſe, they might chance to diſcloſe me, and ſuborne ſome falſe witneſſes againſt me, the better to excuſe and ſaue themſelues: Giving out, that I, to free my ſelfe from the miſery, wherein I liv'd, had incited them there-vnto. Well, I gaue them good words, and made my ſelfe to be of their party, they beeing reſolved to put this their plot in execution vpon Saint *Iohn Baptiſts* day, betimes in the Morning.

Now when the Eue was come, and that one of the Souldiers was going to vntruſſe a point, when he came to me for ſome Ockame to wipe his poſteriors, I roſe vp, and whiſpering him in the eare, ſecretly ſaid vnto him, Sir, tell your Captain, that it imports both his life, and his honour, to heare two words from me, which tend to his Majeſties ſervice: and therefore let him preſently giue order that I may bee brought to him into the Poope. He did ſo, and the Captaine forthwith commanded me to come before him, where, in his preſence, I revealed vnto him this their conſpiracy: whereat he bleſt himſelfe, and would ſcarce giue credit vnto it; it ſeeming vnto him, that I had invented this of mine own head, that I might be eaſed of thoſe troubleſome labours, and great miſeries which I indured, and that by this meanes, I might procure ſome mercede or favour from him. But when I told him, where he ſhould find their Weapons, and why, and how they were brought thither, hee rendred many thankes vnto God, that hee had delivered him from ſo great a danger; promiſing, that he would ſee me well rewarded for my labour.

Hee commanded one that was a Captaine of a Squadron, that hee ſhould make diligent ſearch about thoſe Bankes, which I had pointed forth vnto him, and looking there for their weapons, at laſt they lighted vpon them. Preſently there-vpon, was a Proceſſe fulminated forth againſt all the Offendours: And becauſe the next day following was a great Feſtivall day, and very ſolemnely obſerved by vs, their puniſhment was deferr'd till the next day following.

God

God, (and my good fortune) who was well pleaſed with this my ſervice, and did guide theſe buſineſſes of mine, by his owne divine hand, would needs haue it fall out ſo luckily for mee, that opening a Cheſt to hang out the Streamers that belonged to the Main-Maſt, the Miſne, and other fitting places for them, as well in acknowledgement of their thankefulneſſe vnto God, as the honour and ſolemnitie of that day, they found therein a neſt of Rats; and amongſt other trinkets my Maſters Hat-band.

Soto conceiving how the world was like to goe with him, was very deſirous to haue his ghoſtly Father come to him, that (like a good Chriſtian) he might make confeſsion of his ſinnes, and craving pardon and forgiueneſſe at my hands, for the falſe witneſſes, that he had ſuborned againſt me about the Hat-band, hee did together declare, how, and wherefore hee had done it, and howbeit he had made ſhow to be reconciled vnto me, and to enter into a new League of friendſhip with me, yet his purpoſe and reſolution was, when they had made themſelues Maſters of the Gally, to haue ſtab'd me, his hatred being ſuch towards mee, that nothing could ſatisfie it, but my death. From whoſe revengefull hand, my good God, that day, was ſo gracious vnto me, as to free me from this his implacable malice.

Soto, and one of his Companions, who were the Ring-leaders of this rebellion, were condemned to be drawne in pieces with foure Gallies; and fiue other to bee hang'd: Which ſentence was executed. And as many as were found to haue a finger in this buſineſſe, were confined to the Gallies for terme of life, being firſt publikely whipt, paſsing from Gally to Gally, till they had rounded the whole Fleete. As for the *Moores*, moſt of them had their noſes and their eares cut off, that by this marke, they might be knowne, where ever they came, to be Rogues vpon record.

This exemplary Iuſtice having paſt vpon theſe Offenders; when all was ended, and things ſettled as before, the Captaine ſends for mee, and highly extolling the goodneſſe of my nature, my innocencie, and my loyaltie, craving pardon of me for my former ill vſage, hee commanded my irons to bee ſtrooke off, and gaue me leaue to goe at libertie vp and downe the Gally, till his Maieſties Royall *Scedula* ſhould be ſent for my abſolute diſcharge. For ſo the Captaine had ſupplicated for mee; and being conſulted on by the Councell of Warre, the Petition was ſigned; which was no ſooner ſent downe, but I was ſet at liberty.

And heere (gentle Reader) doe I put a full point to theſe my mis-fortunes, I haue given thee a large account of my lewd life; it is truely ſumm'd vp vnto thee. What it was hereafter, thou ſhalt ſee in my third and laſt Part, if God ſhall giue me life: and that I doe not firſt exchange this tranſitorie one, for one that is eternall, which is the hope and life of the faithfull.

FINIS.